

大聖經

The Holy Scripture of Cheon Il Guk

(Foundation Day Edition)
Cheon Seong Gyeong



FAMILY PLEDGE

1. Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges to seek our original homeland and build the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven, the original ideal of creation, by centering on true love.
2. Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges to represent and become central to heaven and earth by attending the Heavenly Parent and True Parents; we pledge to perfect the dutiful family way of filial sons and daughters in our family, patriots in our nation, saints in the world, and divine sons and daughters in heaven and on earth, by centering on true love.
3. Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges to perfect the Four Great Realms of Heart, the Three Great Kingdoms and the Realm of the Royal Family, by centering on true love.
4. Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges to build the universal family encompassing heaven and earth, which is the Heavenly Parent's ideal of creation, and perfect the world of freedom, peace, unity and happiness, by centering on true love.
5. Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges to strive every day to advance the unification of the spirit world and the physical world as subject and object partners, by centering on true love.
6. Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges to become a family that moves heavenly fortune by embodying the Heavenly Parent and True Parents, and to perfect a family that conveys Heaven's blessing to our community by centering on true love.
7. Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges, through living for the sake of others, to perfect the world based on the culture of heart, which is rooted in the original lineage, by centering on true love.
8. Our family the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges, having entered the Era of Cheon Il Guk, to achieve the ideal of God and human beings united in love through absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience, and to perfect the realm of liberation and complete freedom in the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven, by centering on true love.

CHEON SEONG GYEONG

PREFACE

As a Korean youth with a vibrant Christian faith, Sun Myung Moon often prayed in the hills near his village home in the northern reaches of the Korean Peninsula. Feeling deeply the plight of his own people who, at that time in the mid-1930's, were struggling under the domination of a foreign power, he called out to God, asking why the world was filled with so much pain and sadness. God's answer came through Jesus Christ, who told him of the deep grief of our Heavenly Parent over the suffering of humankind and asked him to accept a mission to relieve that suffering. Rev. Moon testifies that he at first refused due to the enormity of the task. Yet he was so moved by Jesus' sorrowful heart that he began a desperate struggle to train himself spiritually so that he might understand the root of humankind's separation from God and become a conduit for God's healing love.

Sun Myung Moon's early efforts to teach about God in North Korea ultimately led to his being sent to a forced labor camp to die of over-work and starvation. Yet He saw this course as training to discipline his mind and body, to grow in his love for God, and thus to overcome the cruel circumstances. Fellow prisoners have testified that Rev. Moon survived by focusing not on his own suffering, but on relieving that of those around him. Once he was freed, Rev. Moon began to teach again, his heart full of urgency to inspire change in the world. It is the recorded words from the many hours Rev. Moon spent speaking with followers and at public events that form the body of text from which this volume has been compiled.

'*Cheon Seong Gyeong*' presents carefully selected extracts, drawn from sermons given over almost six decades, from the earliest known recorded sermons (1956), to the most significant ones from his final years. These are arranged according to themes that reflect the essence and diversity of Rev. Moon's thought and discourse with Heaven. Although the written word may inadequately capture Rev. Moon's passionate and exuberant speaking style, the seriousness of his heart is unmistakable as he describes the beauty of God's original plan for us as His children, God's profound sorrow that this is still to be realized, and His work, visible in history's course, to see the human potential in love finally fulfilled. (PAGE 4)

The volume also includes extracts from talks given by Rev. Moon's beloved wife, Hak Ja Han Moon, who stood with her husband throughout their fifty-two years

together. Given during the months following Rev. Moon's ascension, her words illuminated the path ahead for the worldwide Unification movement.

'*Cheon Seong Gyeong*' concludes with a selection of Rev. Moon's prayers, the intimate words of a son to his Heavenly Parent. These reveal much about the mission he has striven to fulfill and reveal aspects of his teachings not expressed elsewhere.

Unificationists testify that God sent Rev. and Mrs. Moon as the True Parents of humankind, with the mission to raise up ideal families and open the gates to God's kingdom of goodness and true love, which they refer to as 'Cheon Il Guk.' True Parents commissioned the creation of this new edition of '*Cheon Seong Gyeong*' as part of the Holy Scripture for this time. It contains God's guidance for our role in actualizing Cheon Il Guk in this world.

This work has been translated from the original Korean, and contains many passages that have not previously appeared in English.

Accompanying this volume is a booklet listing the dates on which the words contained in each extract were spoken and the page number in the source from which they were drawn. This permits the reader with an interest in the original language to read and understand the True Parents' words in context.

Much gratitude is due to the translators and editors, who have striven to produce a work that conveys the soul of the original teachings. Truth from God does not pour forth in the convenient linear form of human language. Moreover, Korean expression and nuance do not always flow easily into the logical structure of English. For both these reasons, the translation of this work presented a formidable challenge and the reader may at times need to meditate over the content in order to grasp its intended meaning. The life-giving power of God's Word as revealed herein will surely be greatly enhanced when the reader invites the presence of the Holy Spirit.

May God bless you in your course of discovery as you read the text.

'Family Federation for World Peace and Unification'

BOOK 1 GOD

CHAPTER 1 God's Existence and Attributes

- Section 1. The Existence of God ...23
- Section 2. God as the Root and Original Being ...34
- Section 3. The God of the Word ...41
- Section 4. The Attributes of God ...45

CHAPTER 2 The God of Heart and True Love

- Section 1. The God of Heart ...53
- Section 2. The God of True Love ...62
- Section 3. God Is Our True Parent ...67

CHAPTER 3 God the Creator

- Section 1. God's Work of Creation ...74
- Section 2. The World God Created ...81
- Section 3. God Created with Love ...88

CHAPTER 4 The God Who Needs Liberation

- Section 1. God's Bitter Sorrow and the Providence of Restoration ...93
- Section 2. The God of Re-Creation ...117
- Section 3. We Must Liberate God ...128

BOOK 2 TRUE PARENTS

[Chapter 1 True Parents](#)

- Section 1. The Identity and Role of the True Parents ... 137
- Section 2. The Emergence of the True Parents ...144
- Section 3. Proclamation of the True Parents and the Three Great Subject Partners Principle ...154

[Chapter 2 True Parents and the Messiah](#)

- Section 1. The Hope of Humankind ...163
- Section 2. The Second Coming of Jesus and the True Parents ...169
- Section 3. The Messiah Becomes the True Parents ...175
- Section 4. True Parents and Family Salvation ...180

[CHAPTER 3 True Parents and Rebirth](#)

- Section 1. The Path of Rebirth and Restoration ... 184
- Section 2. Our Rebirth and Change of Lineage ...190
- Section 3. Restoration of the Right of the Eldest Son, the Right of the Parents and the Right of the King ...198

[CHAPTER 4 True Parents and True Children](#)

- Section 1. The Life Course of the True Parents ... 208
- Section 2. The Responsibility and Authority of the True Parents ...215
- Section 3. True Love, True Life and True Lineage ... 220
- Section 4. The Way of a True Child ... 224
- Section 5. Learning and Inheriting the True Parents' Heart ...226

[CHAPTER 5 Inheriting the Victory of the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind](#)

- Section 1. The True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind ...232
- Section 2. Representative Families of the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind ...238
- Section 3. Inheriting the True Parents' Realm of Victory ...242
- Section 4. Inheriting the True Parents' Tradition ... 245
- Section 5. Inheriting the Teachings of the True Parents ...250

[BOOK 3 TRUE LOVE](#)[Chapter 1 .The Origin of True Love..](#)

- Section 1. The True Love of God..... 263
- Section 2. The Origin of True Love 271
- Section 3. The Characteristics of True Love 280
- Section 4. The Power of True Love 286

[Chapter 2. The Realms of True Love](#)

- Section 1. Grandparents' Love..... 301
- Section 2. Parents' Love..... 304
- Section 3. The Love of Husband and Wife 309

Section 4. Childrens' Love	320
Section 5. Love among Brothers and Sisters	325

[Chapter 3. The Practice of True Love.](#)

Section 1. The True Way of Life	327
Section 2. The Practice of True Love.....	334
Section 3. The True Parents' Practice of True Love	351

[BOOK 4 TRUE PERSON](#)

Chapter 1. The True Human Beings that God Created

Section 1. True Human Beings Are the Embodiments of God ...	363
Section 2. The Mind and Body of a True Person ...	368
Section 3. The Purpose of Our Creation and the Three Great Blessings ...	378
Section 4. Our Value in Unity with God ...	384
Section 5. Our Position in the Created World ...	387

Chapter 2. Our Portion of Responsibility and the Fall

Section 1. Our Growth and Portion of Responsibility ...	390
Section 2. The Human Fall ...	402
Section 3. The Results of the Fall ...	414

Chapter 3. The Path of Restoration toward God's Original Ideal

Section 1. Restoration through Indemnity ...	423
Section 2. The Path of Restoration through the Blessing ...	431
Section 3. The Life True Person ...	437

Chapter 4. The Life Course of True Men and Women

Section 1. The Way of Our Original Nature ...	447
Section 2. The Path to Individual Perfection ...	451
Section 3. True Love between Man and Woman and True Marriage ...	456
Section 4. The Path of a Life of True Love ...	466

[BOOK 5 TRUE FAMILY](#)

[CHAPTER 1 True Families from the Viewpoint of God's Will](#)

Section 1. What Is a Family? ...	475
Section 2. The Original Family of God's Creation	478
Section 3. The Family Is the Training Ground of True Love	483
Section 4. The Family Is the Base of Happiness	489

[CHAPTER 2 Blessed Marriage and Original Love between Man and Woman](#)

Section 1. Coming of Age and the Love between Man and Woman ...	498
Section 2. The Significance and Value of Blessed Marriage	503

- Section 3. Rebirth through Blessed Marriage 511
- Section 4. The Significance of the Blessing Groups 515
- Section 5. Registration and the Responsibility of Blessed Families 527

CHAPTER 3 Principles and Order in the Family

- Section 1. Family Harmony Makes All Go Well ..532
- Section 2. Ideal Couples and the Parent-Child Relationship 538
- Section 3. Ideal Parent-Child and Sibling Relationships 544

CHAPTER 4 The Education of Children and the Kingdom of Heaven in the Family

- Section 1. The Meaning of Education ... 549
- Section 2. The Family Is the Textbook of God's Kingdom 553
- Section 3. Parents' Love and Responsibility 560
- Section 4. Children's Education 563
- Section 5. The Path that Children Must Follow 569
- Section 6. The Kingdom of Heaven in the Family 573

BOOK 6 TRUE CREATION

Chapter 1. The Significance of the Creation

- Section 1. Learning from the Creation 585
- Section 2. The Meaning of the Creation of All Things 590
- Section 3. Nature and the Lessons It Offers 599

Chapter 2. The Essence and Order of the Universe

- Section 1. Love Is the Essence of the Universe 607
- Section 2. The Principles of Existence and Action 609
- Section 3. Order and Law in the Universe 618
- Section 4. Creation and Evolution 622

Chapter 3. The Creation's Lament and True Stewardship

- Section 1. Our Relationship with the Creation 628
- Section 2. The Creation's Lament and Our Response 632
- Section 3. True Dominion over the Creation 637
- Section 4. Our Attitude toward the Creation 643
- Section 5. Restoration of the Original Eden 647

Chapter 4. A Vision for Nature and the Ocean

- Section 1. Returning the Creation to God and the Pursuit of Leisure Activities 652
- Section 2. The Original Museum of Creation 654
- Section 3. The Era of the Ocean 659
- Section 4. The Deep Meaning of Ocean Fishing 668

BOOK 7 EARTHLY LIFE AND THE SPIRIT WORLD

Chapter 1. The Nature of Life and Death

- Section 1. The Three Stages of Life 677
- Section 2. The Dual Structure of Human Beings 686
- Section 3. The Meaning of Death 539
- Section 4. What Is Heaven? 695

Chapter 2. The Nature of the Spirit World

- Section 1. Understanding the Reality of the Spirit World 702
- Section 2. Life in the Spirit World 713
- Section 3. Angels and the Angelic World 720
- Section 4. The Path to the Kingdom of Heaven 724

Chapter 3. Earthly Life Prepares Us for Eternal Life

- Section 1. Eternal Life 733
- Section 2. Preparation for the Spirit World 738
- Section 3. Developing Our Spirituality 752
- Section 4. Blessed Families and Eternal Life 758

Chapter 4. Returning Resurrection and Divine Spiritual Works

- Section 1. The Last Days and Returning Resurrection 767
- Section 2. Divine Spiritual Works and Spiritual Phenomena 772
- Section 3. The Returning Resurrection of People in the Spirit World 777

BOOK 8 LIFE OF FAITH AND TRAINING**CHAPTER 1. What is a Life of Faith?**

- Section 1. A Life of Faith ... 793
- Section 2. The Purpose and Goal of a Life of Faith ..801
- Section 3. The Path of Faith ... 810
- Section 4. Stages in a Life of Faith ... 817
- Section 5. Experiences and Challenges on the Path of Faith ... 823

CHAPTER 2. Training the Mind and Body

- Section 1. What is Training ... 828
- Section 2. The Goal of Training ... 834
- Section 3. Training in Faith ... 840
- Section 4. Training the Body ... 856
- Section 5. Life with the Goal of Mind-Body Unity ... 861

CHAPTER 3. Our Life of Faith and Course to Emulate True Parents

- Section 1. Our Life of Faith and the Providence of Restoration ... 868
- Section 2. Our Course to Meet True Parents ... 871
- Section 3. Our Course of Rebirth through True Parents ... 871

Section 4. Our Path of Growth by Following True Parents ... 880

Section 5. Our Way to Perfection through True Parents ... 884

CHAPTER 4. The Believer's Path in Relation to True Parents' Course

Section 1. Our Life Mission ... 889

Section 2. A Life of Accomplishment ... 896

Section 3. A Life of Caring for Others ... 903

Section 4. A Life of Inheritance ... 906

BOOK 9 HOME CHURCH AND THE TRIBAL MESSIAH

Chapter 1. Home Church

Section 1. The Providential Significance of Home Church ... 913

Section 2. The Purpose of Home Church ... 920

Section 3. The Completion of Home Church ... 926

Section 4. Hoondokhae and Home Church Activities ... 934

Chapter 2. The Tribal Messiah

Section 1. The Declaration of Tribal Messiahship ... 942

Section 2. The Responsibility of the Tribal Messiah ... 953

Section 3. The Role of the Tribal Messiah ... 958

Section 4. The Return to the Hometown ... 968

Chapter 3. The Mission of a Church Leader

Section 1. The Mission and Responsibility of a Church Leader ... 976

Section 2. Public Life of a Church Leader ... 981

Section 3. A Church Leader's Devotional Life ... 992

Section 4. Giving Sermons that Move Hearts ... 1001

Section 5. Witnessing and Pastoral Care ... 1013

Section 6. The Providence of Cain and Abel ... 1019

BOOK 10 THE PHILOSOPHY OF PEACE

Chapter 1. What Is Peace?

Section 1. The Concept of Peace 1029

Section 2. Peace Is the Hope of God and Humankind 1037

Chapter 2. How Will Peace Be Realized?

Section 1. Steps Toward a World of Peace 1042

Section 2. Peace between Mind and Body 1045

Section 3. Peace in the Family 1054

Section 4. Peace in the World 1060

Chapter 3. The Means to Realize World Peace

Section 1. World Peace through Religion 1073

Section 2. World Peace through Ideal Families 1076

Section 3. Culture and World Peace 1078

Section 4. Korean Unification and World Peace 1083

Chapter 4. Strategies for World Peace

Section 1. The World of Peace that True Parents Envision 1095

Section 2. The End of Communism 1100

Section 3. The United Nations and World Peace 1108

Section 4. Worldwide Sharing of Technology 1113

Section 5. Organizations for World Peace 1121

Section 6. The International Peace Highway, the Korea-Japan Tunnel and the Bering Strait Project 1128

Book 11 CEREMONIES AND HOLY DAYS

Chapter 1. The Etiquette of Attendance

Section 1. A Life of Attendance 1139

Section 2. Living in Attendance to God 1143

Section 3. Attending True Parents in Daily Life 1152

Chapter 2. Church Services

Section 1. Church Service and Prayer 1157

Section 2. The Meaning of Tithing 1167

Section 3. The Practice of Hoondokhae 1170

Chapter 3. Ceremonies and Rituals

Section 1. The Blessing Ceremony 1175

Section 2. The Seonghwa Ceremony 1185

Chapter 4. The Daily Life of Blessed Families

Section 1. Proper Conduct for Blessed Families 1190

Section 2. The Standard of Love in the Family and Respect between Husband and Wife 1199

Section 3. Blessed Family Practices 1205

Chapter 5. The Holy Days and Anniversaries

Section 1. Holy Days 1213

Section 2. Anniversaries 1233

BOOK 12 CHEON IL GUK

Chapter 1. God's Homeland and Cheon Il Guk

Section 1. God's Kingdom and Gods Homeland 1259

Section 2. The Background and Proclamation of Cheon Il Guk 1264

Chapter 2. The Structure and Settlement of Cheon Il Guk

Section 1. The Nature of Cheon Il Guk 1271

Section 2. The Three Requisites of Cheon Il Guk 1274

Section 3. The Constitution and Teaching Materials of Cheon Il Guk 1280

Section 4. Registration and Settlement in Cheon Il Guk 1289

Section 5. The Universal Peace Federation and the Abel UN 1301

Chapter 3. The Path of Cheon Il Guk Citizens and the Family Pledge

Section 1. Purity and a Life of One Heart, One Body, One Mindset and One Harmony 1308

Section 2. High Noon Settlement and a Life of Resonance 1310

Section 3. Embodying God through Love and Living a Life of Attendance 1314

Section 4. The World of the Culture of Heart 1318

Section 5. Living as an Owner of Cheon Il Guk and the Family Pledge 1323

Chapter 4. The Vision of Cheon Il Guk and Our Responsibility

Section 1. The Background and Proclamation of Foundation Day 1351

Section 2. True Parents, who Have Fully Achieved the Will 1355

Section 3. Our Responsibility in the Era of Cheon Il Guk—True Mother's Words 1357

BOOK 13 PEACE MESSAGES

Chapter 1. The Ideal Family in Cheon Il Guk

Section 1. The Essence of the Universe and the True Lineage 1371

Section 2. Gods Model Ideal Family 1378

Section 3: Absolute Sex and the Cross-Cultural Marriage Blessing 1382

Chapter 2. True Owners of the Founding of Cheon Il Guk

Section 1. The Spirit World and the Heavenly Kingdom 1388

Section 2. The Life of the Citizens of Cheon Il Guk 1394

Section 3. The Three Great Subject Partners Principle from the Providential Viewpoint 1402

Chapter 3. True Parents and the Era of Cheon Il Guk

Section 1. True Parents' Life and Accomplishments 1407

Section 2. God's Providential View of History 1418

Section 3. The Providence of the Cheon Il Guk Era 1425

Chapter 4. The Settlement of the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind

Section 1. The Three Stages of Life 1437

Section 2. One Family under God 1441

Section 3. Proclamation of the Era of the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind 1445

TRUE PARENTS' PRAYERS

[Chapter 1. God](#)1451

[Chapter 2. True Parents](#) 1465

[Chapter 3. True Love](#)..... 1481

[Chapter 4. True Person](#)..... 1498

[Chapter 5. True Family](#)..... 1513

[Chapter 6. True Creation](#)..... 1528

[Chapter 7. Earthly Life and the Spirit World](#)..... 1542

[Chapter 8. Life of Faith and Training](#)..... 1556

[Chapter 9. Home Church and the Tribal Messiah](#)..... 1568

[Chapter 10. The Philosophy of Peace](#)..... 1582

[Chapter 11. Ceremonies and Holy](#)..... 1594

[Chapter 12. Cheon II Guk](#)..... 1608

[Chapter 13. Peace Messages](#)..... 1622

[True Father's final prayer](#)

BOOK 1 GOD

CHAPTER 1 God's Existence and Attributes

- Section 1. The Existence of God ...23
- Section 2. God as the Root and Original Being ...34
- Section 3. The God of the Word ...41
- Section 4. The Attributes of God ...45

CHAPTER 2 The God of Heart and True Love

- Section 1. The God of Heart ...53
- Section 2. The God of True Love ...62
- Section 3. God Is Our True Parent ...67

CHAPTER 3 God the Creator

- Section 1. God's Work of Creation ...74
- Section 2. The World God Created ...81
- Section 3. God Created with Love ...88

CHAPTER 4 The God Who Needs Liberation

- Section 1. God's Bitter Sorrow and the Providence of Restoration ...93
- Section 2. The God of Re-Creation ...117
- Section 3. We Must Liberate God ...128

BOOK 1 GOD

CHAPTER 1 God's Existence and Attributes

- Section 1. The Existence of God

1 Through my life of constant prayer and meditation from an early age, I finally encountered God and received His absolute truth. This truth contained astounding content, which revealed the workings of the universe, of life and of history, as never seen before. If we apply this truth to society, we can resolve all social problems. If we apply it to the world, we can resolve all global problems. Furthermore, we can resolve deep religious problems and stalemates in philosophy. This is an unprecedented new worldview, new cosmology, new view of life, new view of God's providence and new view of history. Divine Principle is an integrated thought system that embraces all religious doctrines and philosophical tenets as one whole, while preserving the unique characteristics of each. (135-347, 1985.12.16)

2 The phrase "God exists" is not an empty one. It is not that we deduce the necessity of God's existence by understanding the subject-object partner relationship through the Principle. It is that God existed before we came into existence, that He existed before we could think, and that He leads our senses and our whole beings. This awareness is more important than anything else. The basic point is that awareness precedes knowledge, not the other way around. If we are cold, we feel cold before we know we are cold. Likewise, since God exists, we should be able to feel His existence in our very cells. Achieving that awareness is what matters. The issue is how we achieve that awareness, the ability to experience these things. (058-291, 1972.06.25)

3 The most serious issue in human life is to know whether or not God exists. If God really exists, the greatest of sinners is the one who denies His existence. For example, if a son denies his parents' existence when they are truly alive and well, would we call him a filial son or an unfilial son? We would call him an unfilial son. Then, what will happen to the person who denies God's existence, even though God exists? That person will come to ruin. Hence, there is no greater sin than the denial of God's existence. There are even those who say God is dead. There is no sin greater than the utterance of such words. (039-168, 1971.01.10)

4 We should not perceive the existence of God only vaguely and conceptually. It is impossible to understand the existence of God through logic alone. This is because God's existence, while within the realm of logic, also reaches beyond logic. Can a religious belief in which we know God only through logic guide our lives? Can such a belief perfect us as substantial beings of eternal life? There are many problems with that idea. With only that foundation, how can we expect to stand before God, our true Lord? Our coming to God has been the hope of humankind and also God's providential objective throughout history. (003-010, 1957.09.08)

Human beings are resultant beings

5 There is no one who was born because he or she wanted to be born. No man or woman was born out of his or her own desire. We were born because of our parents, not because we desired to be born. The same is true for our parents, their parents, and all our ancestors. It is the same all the way back to Adam and Eve. Even the first human ancestors did not come to exist out of their own desire. Their existence sprang from the desire of someone before them. When we speak of human beings, we refer to men and women. Man needs woman and woman needs man. However, no man chose to be born as a man, nor did any woman choose to be born as a woman. We discover that we are a man or a woman after we are born, and after we grow up we recognize that we need each other and desire to become husband and wife. Knowing this, it is plain to see that human beings are not the fundamental cause, and that if there were no God, neither would there be human beings. (67-267, 1973.07.22)

6 The vast human race came into existence through the process of men and women meeting each other and living together. Humanity is composed of numerous nations, the nations are composed of numerous tribes, the tribes are composed of numerous families and the families are composed of numerous individuals. Each of us is one of those individuals and a member of a family. The family and blood relationships that bind us were not forged according to our own wishes. God gives us our birth, our family and our relatives. Without God, relationships between teachers and students, or between parents and children, would not be possible. God is the cause and all of these relationships in the world are the result. (67-268, 1973.07.22)

7 In order for anything on earth to exist, there has to be a cause. The world in which we live is a resultant world; the society and country in which we live and the environment we see around us are in a resultant position. There must be a motivation behind the existence of an environment of relationships. We cannot deny that. We can see that human beings are certainly behind the development of societies, nations, and the world. However, human beings cannot be the fundamental cause of human beings. We are undeniably in the position of resultant beings, behind whose creation there must be a motivation, a purpose and a reason. (028-282, 1970.02.11)

8 We have to unite mind and body with God at the center. When mind and body unite with God completely, they form a trinity. The reason we need to become one in mind and body centered on God is because God is our cause. God and human beings relate as cause and effect. The mind and body have a reciprocal relationship; this is a basic principle of the universe. Unity between cause and effect, and

between subject and object partners, is a fundamental and universal principle. Unless there is oneness between God and humankind as cause and effect, between this subject partner and object partner, there cannot be an ideal environment, nor can we become ideal beings. (89-152, 1976.11.07)

9 Human beings are by no means causal beings. We are resultant beings, brought about for some reason. There is no way for a result to come about without any relationship with its cause. No matter how tortuous its course, the result needs to relate to and fit with the cause. Human beings are the way they are because they resemble some causal being. If we say that this causal being is God, we can draw the conclusion that human beings resemble God. (77-102, 1975.04.01)

10 God is the causal being of the universe. He is the causal being behind all action, the causal being who exerts force, the causal being who gives direction, and the causal being who endows purpose. We call Him a God of personality because He always acts with a clear motive, a sense of direction, and a purpose. Therefore, everything in the world advances in the direction of the purpose that is based on the cause. This is what we mean when we say that God is the being that causes everything. (89-075, 1976.07.11)

The mysteries of the human body testify to God's existence

11 To a greater extent than we can ever fathom, human beings are the masterpiece of creation. If human beings have a subject partner, an absolute God who created them, would that God have rendered them incapable of knowing what He says, sees or feels? Let us compare God to an artist. To create a masterpiece, an artist conceives it in his or her imagination and designs it with his or her intelligence. The artist aims to create a unique work of art, the best in the world. If the masterpiece turns out perfectly, as envisioned, the artist feels infinite joy. If the work is even better than planned, no artist in the world would say, "This isn't what I intended," and then destroy it. If a piece of art is better than originally intended, he or she will cherish it as the treasure of a lifetime, and will want to display it with pride to others. Such is the heart of an artist. If human beings have a tendency to always desire something higher and better, God must have the same tendency. If He had that mindset when He created human beings, how wonderful they must be! We can conclude that God wanted to create us as His greatest masterpiece. (053-051, 1972.02.08)

12 Consider the structure of the human body, which is truly a palace of wonders. It is amazing that while each of the numerous cells is a separate entity, each cell

cooperates with the other cells, without conflict, to form each of us as freely functioning individuals. We can conclude that this vast world moves and acts to perfect each of us individually. We can conclude further that everything is in motion for the purpose of fulfilling God's Will. (211-021, 1990.12.28)

13 The most important part of a person is the face. The most important part of the face is the eyes. If we think about it, we can say that our eyes came from our parents. Then from where did our parents' eyes come? Tracing back through our ancestry, we come to our first forebears, Adam and Eve. When the very first eyes came to be, do you think they knew of the sun's existence? No matter how much we analyze it, we can only conclude they did not. The eyelids could not have known that on Earth, moisture evaporates in the sun's radiant heat. The eyelashes did not know of airborne dust, even though one purpose for which they were created was to protect the eyes from it. We can understand that the eyes by themselves are a palace of infinite mystery, in that even before they were formed, the being who brought them into existence designed them with the sun, the airborne dust, and evaporation in mind. "God" is the name by which we know this subject partner who gave us birth. (77-258, 1975.04.14)

14 Consider your ears. They face the front. What if they were positioned to face the other way, or what if they were missing? We would not be able to pick up sounds from in front of us. We would also not be able to hear voices from a distance. The ears were formed to catch the sound of voices coming from in front of us. Why? It is because people face each other when they talk. No one talks to the back of your head. The ears face forward because when we meet people, we talk face to face. The fact that they face front means that someone knew in advance that the ears were to hear the sounds that come from in front of us. (38-247, 1971.01.08)

15 Why were the ears created? It was to capture the vibrations that pass by in the air and to harmonize them. Look at the ear carefully. It has a large auricle and a small auricle, providing the ability to screen sounds appropriately. When a loud sound is caught, the large auricle cleverly reduces the volume. If a loud sound were to enter the ear straight, it would shock the eardrum. That is why the large auricle lowers the volume, buffering it to the small auricle. Without this, the ear would have a problem. The ears did not know anything about this, but the causal being, who had a purpose for them, knew it from the beginning. That is why the ears were made the way they are. Someone knew and shaped them like that. We do not know whether this is the Creator or not, but there is someone or something there. (38-248, 1971.01.08)

16 When you see the bushy eyebrows on your face, you may be displeased with them and wonder, “Why do I have these bushy things here?” Without them, wouldn't you have a cleaner, better-looking face? So why are they there? If the human face were covered with fur, would we need eyebrows? Animals, which crawl on the ground, do not need eyebrows, although they have a brow line. Yet human beings, who walk upright, absolutely need eyebrows. The eyebrow area usually protrudes slightly, like a sculpted mountain range. It is the spot most likely to indicate good fortune. Why is it made like this? Because someone knew that human beings would walk upright. (38-248, 1971.01.08)

17 If human beings crawled, they would not need eyebrows. It is truly good to have them. The hair of the eyebrow grows in one direction. Why is that so? It is to send raindrops that land on the forehead off in one direction. Since the eyebrows grow in one direction and are curved slightly sideways, when water flows, it is bound to flow to the side and down. What if we had no eyebrows? Sweat and raindrops would go into our eyes and irritate them. Wouldn't that be difficult? If you look carefully at the eyes, you will see that the Creator considered that the eyebrows alone were not enough, and so equipped the eyes with eyelids to protect them. Tears are designed to flow to the side through a carefully molded channel. Safety measures are in place. I do not know who designed all of this, but it must have taken tens of thousands of years to do the research. (38-248, 1971.01.08)

18 What if the nose were upside down? A shower would cause a big problem. Think how serious this would be. It is not a laughing matter. The nose symbolizes the unique position of human beings in all creation. Human beings have to observe the heavenly law. That is, they have to honor the order of relationship between high and low. So why does the nose become wider the lower down you go? If it did not, it would be a big problem for the mouth, because things like raindrops would flow into it. For this reason, the nose widens at the bottom. It is marvelous to think about this as we look at the human face. (38-249, 1971.01.08)

19 If you look at the lips, you will find they are amazing. The lips and teeth work well together. How far apart are they? Not more than a few millimeters. This is very dangerous; even a small mishap could create a big problem. But do we worry about this? When we are eating, we just think about eating and don't give it a second thought. Isn't the tongue awesome as well? Inside the mouth, the tongue pushes and pulls, moving in and out between the upper and lower teeth while they are working together like a thresher. Yet the tongue and the teeth work in accord, without running into conflict. They fit together like a magic box. I speak very quickly. Even though I speak so fast, and it is the first time for us to meet, I can

resonate with you well and we can become very close through words. Truly the tongue is an amazing instrument of harmony. What if the tongue only worked like a finger? It would cause a serious problem. (38-250, 1971.01.08)

The original mind testifies to God's existence

20 How can we know whether God exists or not? We know air exists, even though it is invisible. How do we know? We know because we live by breathing it. Does the air have any taste? It has no taste and it is invisible; still, we know without a doubt that air exists. Similarly, we have a mind. Even though it is invisible, we know with certainty that we have it. You cannot use its invisibility as a basis to say there is no mind. Yet we do not know what the mind looks like. It is indeed a mystery. (39-158, 1971.01.10)

21 Where would God's dwelling place be? God would nestle in the most precious place of all—love. Speaking of a man and a woman, where would God be? He would be at the point that stands perpendicular to their deepest love, based on their complete and unchanging unity. Where man and woman come into oneness, that place becomes the central point. If you reach a mystical state in prayer, enter the realm of spiritual experience, and call out to God, “Heavenly Father,” you will hear the answer from deep inside, “Why are you calling me? I am right here. Here!” “Here” refers to the center of your heart. It is the central point of love where you are totally united in mind and body, the perpendicular space where God can dwell. Where is the center of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos? That center, no matter how small, is the conscience. One's conscience upholds the place where the axis of universal love resides. Such is the conscience of one who has attained unity of mind and body. (224-148, 1991.11.24)

22 God is the root of love, the root of life, the root of lineage and the root of conscience. This is an undeniable fact. If there is such a God, why can we not feel Him? It is because He and we are one. He is one with love, one with lineage, one with life, and one with conscience. God is the root. If you want to manifest God, you have to spread your love in all four directions. That is, you must invest your love. If you sacrifice everything, even your life and love, and return to the zero point, then God will take ownership. At the zero point, centered on God, everything connects horizontally. As a result of the Fall, this vertical aspect was suppressed. However, once you enable the horizontal connection, God becomes the Lord of your conscience. (275-325, 1996.01.01)

23 Try as hard as you may, you will never disprove that each person has a conscience. No one can deny having one. Fallen people generally do not know whether God exists or not. However, God does exist. He is the Creator and we are His creation. If this is so, we must have some part that functions to unite us with our Creator based upon a shared purpose. There must be a certain force that urges us to align with, move toward, and achieve God's purpose of creation. Without such a force, human beings could not have come to exist. Since God is the Absolute Being, there must be a primary foundation upon which He and His creation can come into contact, an initial base upon which the two can unite. Therefore, God had to create human beings with something that functions within them to drive them toward their intended purpose and goals. Without that, there is nowhere that both God and human beings can be happy. (56-137, 1972.05.14)

24 The standard according to which God, the Absolute Being, created human beings could not be different from the standard He expected us to pursue as created beings. God and we human beings can be happy only when we share a single standard. Within us there must be a function that drives us to seek the absolute God. Without such a function, we would not be able to reach Him. There must be a force to stimulate us and push us forward. That force is the conscience, which we cannot ignore. The conscience wants to elevate us, so it urges us: "Become better! Do better!" We cannot deny this force. The conscience never urges us to be worse; it always pushes us to go higher, to be better tomorrow than today, to be better the next day than tomorrow, to be better next year than this year. The conscience is the force that urges us to become a better, more valuable individual. (56-138, 1972.05.14)

25 The human conscience is always in the position of the object partner rather than the subject partner. There is always a subject partner, even though we may not know who or what it is, that spurs us to take action according to certain principles. The subject partner and object partner work not to harm each other, but with the hope of common benefit and betterment. The conscience always works to lead us toward something better, bigger, more valuable and more universal. Therefore we can conclude that the conscience does not function on its own; it integrates the shared purposes of the subject and object partners. (56-139, 1972.05.14)

26 The subject partner and object partner interact based on the conscience. It is a heavenly law and principle that the conscience cannot work without a subject partner. When we see that our conscience is working constantly in pursuit of something higher, we can conclude that there is a subject partner on a higher dimension. We cannot deny the existence of the subject partner of our conscience,

whom we call God. God absolutely exists. If you say God absolutely does not exist, you have to deny the functioning of the conscience. As long as you clearly recognize the existence of your conscience, you have to recognize the existence of God. (56-166, 1972.05.14)

27 The conscience is working every moment within every human being. If you wake up from a deep sleep, open your eyes and start to conjure up an evil scheme, your conscience, acting as your guardian, will say, "You scoundrel!" You cannot deny the working of your conscience. Humans are resultant beings, each with a conscience. When we admit this, we have to openly acknowledge that we surely have a subject partner, because all actions stem from a relationship between subject and object partners. The conscience always urges us upward toward higher things and never urges us to go downward. Why is that so? It is because of an overriding aspiration that compels it to unite with a higher subject partner and attain a higher value. (053-159, 1972.02.19)

God guides the providence in history

28 God did not just come into existence at this moment in history. He does not only relate to one's personal emotional life. God has existed from the past to the present; that is, He has existed all throughout history. But in passing down His work from generation to generation, His intention is not to remain in the background of time, traipsing after people who pursue their private purposes, immersed in themselves. God will surely continue to advance the providence and pursue His Will through those who first become aware of the providence, and who brighten history based on the foundation they build in their lives. These are people who take a position that is public, not private. (59-020, 1972.07.02)

29 By what means can we hold on to God? It is through our sincere devotion. Nowadays we enjoy freedom of religion, with no persecution. God brought about this time in which we enjoy freedom of speech, freedom of assembly, freedom of the press and freedom of religion. This is preparation for the Last Days. That is to say, religious freedom has been bestowed thanks to God who willed it. Thus, in this age, we can put our lives on the line and devote ourselves to God without limit and we will not be persecuted. As the time of persecution has passed, we must become people of heart. We must treasure within us the heart that God experienced throughout history. God is not the God of one particular time period; He is the God of history. He is the God who has toiled hard through countless saints and sages who represented Him throughout history. To save all of you, to this day He has

allowed many people to walk a path of persecution, even to the point of martyrdom. That is why I say He is the God of history. (10-349, 1960.11.27)

26 When we look at our history, we see that the world's cultures are being absorbed into larger cultural spheres based on religion. We witness the Christian cultural sphere in the democratic world, the Far Eastern cultural sphere of Confucianism, Buddhism and Zen, the Hindu cultural sphere in India, and the Islamic cultural sphere. Over thousands of years, human cultures have been gradually absorbed by these religious spheres. This is similar to a situation where all the component parts are gathered in a repair shop to be assembled into a whole. Through this we can discern the presence of God and His work. (56-166, 1972.05.14)

The incorporeal God

27 There is no place in the universe where God is not present, and yet we live unaware of His presence or absence. Air surrounds us, but ordinarily we do not feel it; it is only when we are suffocating that we realize that air exists. Further, right inside of us, our heart beats about seventy times a minute, but we are usually unaware of it. If we were forced to match our steps or the blinking of our eyes with the rhythm of our heart, we would collapse within three days from nervous exhaustion. So, it is good that we are unaware of such things. Suppose that God, who is omnipotent, omniscient, and in total control of heaven and earth, were right here with us. With His power, He could blow away mountains and put a hole through the earth. Seeing such things, do you think we could survive in the visible presence of such a God? It is good that God is invisible. If He were visible, we would have a nervous breakdown and pass away within an hour. We should therefore be grateful that God is invisible. (053-159, 1972.02.19)

28 We live every day under the rays of the sun, but we do not feel grateful. We do not greet the sun with gratitude, saying, "Thank you, sun." We tend to take such magnificent things for granted. What if God decided to remove all the air in the world, leaving only one gallon? If God were that mischievous, world unification would be easy. It would be done in five minutes. If God took away all the air and asked, "Will you unite or not?" all people would shout in unison, "Well unite!" God could unify the world in an instant this way. That God does not do this is something for which to be thankful, because without the air we would die. Air is absolutely necessary for life. (59-020, 1972.07.02)

29 The wise, all-knowing and almighty God thought it most convenient to reign as an incorporeal being who could move around freely in the midst of things. Since God has no form, He can pass through things at will without causing any problem. God can come to your body and pass through it without your awareness. When you doze off, God can step onto your body and walk on it as He pleases, and you will not even notice. How convenient! So it is logical to say that, after much consideration, God chose to remain invisible because He felt it would be most convenient. (10-349, 1960.11.27)

30 We know that air is circulating around us, but we do not feel it. If we are unaware even of the air circulating around us, how can we expect to be aware of God's presence? For God, it is most convenient to remain without form. At the same time, He has to be more than big enough to govern and wrap Himself around this huge universe. Although the incorporeal God can be as big as He wants, the universe is too small to contain His heart; He desires something even larger. (041-022, 1971.02.12)

31 You do not keep your most precious things in a place where people can just see and touch them. You secure them in a place where no one can steal them. If you had a most precious, prized and unique treasure, you would secure it where no one could take it. You would keep it in the deepest part of your heart, the place to which you alone had access. Your heart is the only place where you can meet God one-on-one. God too does not want to meet you in an exposed place. He seeks a unique place where He can meet you as an individual with unique character, thinking and feeling. That is the reason God made the conscience incorporeal. (38-244, 1971.01.08)

32 Let us imagine the world contained one treasure such that, if it were lost, on that very day the world would turn upside down. Would you keep that most precious treasure on the surface of your heart, or at the very center of your heart? I am sure you would keep it at the center of your heart. Still you would not feel at ease, and you would wrap it up, not only once, but many times over. You would not want just anyone to walk in and look at it, so you would cover it, layer upon layer, so that others would never set eyes on it. The human heart has this kind of desire. If God were visible, all the diamonds in heaven and on earth would pale into insignificance by comparison. Where would you house this God, the Absolute Being who is unique in the universe, who is of infinite value, who is the infinite source of life, and who is priceless beyond imagination? You would keep Him in your heart. You would hide Him where no one could find Him, even after seeking for tens of thousands of years. So it is good that God is invisible. (38-245, 1971.01.08)

33 God is a being without form, so the question arises: how can the incorporeal and the corporeal come together? How can the incorporeal world and the corporeal world become one? Logically, this is difficult to answer. A physical being cannot become the center that binds a spiritual self and a physical self. Then how can there be unity between the spiritual Parent and the earthly parents, that is, between God, who is spirit, and the unfallen human ancestors of the original standard, who have substantial form? Further, the vertical and the horizontal have to unite, but how? It is through love, the true love between them, traveling by the shortest and most direct route. (138-168, 1986.01.21)

The omnipresent God

34 God's heart exists not only in the Word but also in everything He created. God's heart is everywhere throughout heaven and earth. Thus we say there is nowhere that God does not exist; that is, God is omnipresent. Since God's heart is in all things of creation, if you want to be in His heart you should embrace everything that exists in heaven and on earth as your own. Our heart desires to go beyond our people, the world and all created things and be with God. In our heart we yearn to go to the place where we can even claim that God is ours. A person who has such a heart is with God. (138-169, 1986.01.21)

35 How can we feel God's ubiquitous presence? We should feel the air as God's breathing, and when a storm hits, we should feel as if He were sneezing. When we see flowing water, we should perceive it as the sweat God has shed as He overcame His course of suffering for the sake of the world. When we look at the sun, it should bring to mind the life elements of the entire universe, and teach us God's love. God created nature as a textbook for us, His beloved sons and daughters, to provide us deep experiences of His heart and bring us joy. (052-260, 1972.01.02)

36 The words, "In heaven and earth, I alone am the honored one" and "I am omniscient, omnipotent and omnipresent, and nothing comes into existence except by me" were spoken with love. Through love, we can be omnipresent. In love, there is nothing to hide. Everything is obvious. The moment you love, everything is open. God wants to be omnipresent, omniscient and omnipotent, with love at the center. (39-157, 1971.01.10)

37 If God did not exist in the universe, the universe might as well be empty. But since God exists, the universe is completely full. It is full of love. Hence, once we come to know that God exists, we feel that the universe is full even when we are alone. God is everywhere. We come to feel that He is everywhere. In the midst of

such love, God's omnipresence deeply moves us. But if we do not know God, everything is empty. (185-013, 1989.01.01)

42 If you ask whether God exists, I will answer that God definitely exists. Where is He then? He is in the place nearest to us. That is why we cannot see Him. He is so extremely close to us that we cannot see Him. Can you see your eyes? They are too close to you to allow you to see them. Likewise, we cannot see God because He is so close to us. (209-136, 1990.11.28)

43 Man and woman each represent God. God is not somewhere else; He is in our hearts. So prayer is a conversation with the heart. God is the root of the heart. As we go deeper into the heart we will find God at the deepest root of our conscience. Next, God is the root of love, the root of life, and the root of lineage. Thus we need to be grateful whether we are at home or out in public. Wherever we go, in the country or in the world, we should always be grateful. Even when we go to heaven the same principle applies; if we follow this rule, we will pass freely wherever we go. It is the same whether in the kingdom of heaven on earth or the kingdom of heaven in heaven. (254-199, 1994.02.06)

Section 2. God as the Root and Original Being

1 If the Absolute Being created us with the intention that we practice His love, it is clear that He had a motive and a purpose in creating us. In order to clarify that motive and purpose, we need to know the nature of this Absolute Being; that is, we first need a correct view of God. A correct view of God will reveal His purpose and motivation for creating us. It will also clarify why we have to practice absolute love for the sake of peace. (110-253, 1980.11.27)

God the First Cause

2 In the world there are two kinds of people, men and women. They do not change their position. We were born as one or the other not by our own desire. Even though we did not think about this or want it, and did not understand the process or the result, we were born as we are. No matter how successful a person is, no one can deny that he or she is a resultant being, not the causal being. This implies that there has to be a first causal being. Whether called God or something else, that causal being must exist. (279-104, 1996.08.01)

3 Human beings certainly are not the first being, but secondary beings. In order for a secondary or resultant being to exist, there must be a first, causal being. Ultimately, no force can separate these two beings. The first and second beings

engage in a relationship. They each desire to become one, as cause and effect. If God, the causal being, becomes the center of all human beings, they, as resultant beings, need a process through which to fulfill His ideal. That is the process of life by which they mature, and from a broader perspective, the process of history. (185-148, 1989.01.08)

4 All of creation is composed of things existing in pairs. The mineral world comprises positive and negative ions that engage in give-and-receive action. Flowers have stamen and pistil, and the animal kingdom has male and female animals. Recently it has been discovered that even bacteria are male or female. If in the microscopic world, invisible to our eyes, there are male and female, what about the world that we can see with our eyes? Did all these male and female entities in this vast, limitless world come into existence by their own will? Or was it by another will? It was by another will. Hence, I repeat: no matter how great we are, we are resultant beings, not the primary causal being. Simply put, we are beings occupying the object-partner position. (232-012, 1992.07.01)

5 Human beings originated from the first cause. What is the first cause? It does not matter what name we use; that being is absolute and has an absolute ideal. We are not “primary” beings, but are resultant, “secondary” beings. For each of us, our immediate primary beings are our mothers and fathers. Our parents' primary beings are our grandmothers and grandfathers. If we keep going back we come to our first ancestors. If God is behind our first ancestors, we go all the way back to God. (196-308, 1990.01.12)

6 God is the motivation within our hearts. He is our original source, and the root of our ideals. Without a cause there can be no result. Therefore, the universe cannot exist apart from God. Dwelling on this earth, we are like orphans who have lost our parents. Imagine the joyful shout of someone who finds his or her lost parents. That joy would be incomparably greater than the joy of a general who conquers the world and gains a material fortune. The heart is what is important. No matter how praiseworthy your successes, if you do not go before your father and mother, you cannot stand as a true child. (026-227, 1969.10.02)

God the Original Being

7 History began on the individual level and has unfolded throughout the world. Where will it conclude? It will continue until we establish an eternal relationship with the Absolute Being of the highest goodness. The highest goodness is eternal and unchanging. There can be no higher level. When we look at the current world,

we see that people of different nationalities are gradually coming to share the same attitudes and feelings about life. Also, many who are seeking truth based upon their own beliefs are coming together and moving in the same direction. The root is the same. History as a whole is marching toward the one point of absolute value. We can say that the worldly values people pursue are in reality only relative. (10-127, 1960.09.18)

8 God is the Original Being of heart, intellect and will. As such, what is God's sense of purpose? God must have been conscious of His purpose before He began His creation, not only afterward. Were this not so, He would never have been able to guide human history. Behind history lies a force that we cannot consciously perceive or feel. But for this, God could not lead us toward the world He intends to see. God has a purpose for the world, which He holds in the depth of His heart. Even though we have fallen, He is determined to find human beings who can be instilled with this purpose, which has nothing to do with the Fall. (9-311, 1960.06.19)

9 God created human beings because of love. Yet love cannot be experienced by one person alone. Therefore, the only thing that God absolutely needs is an object partner to whom He can give His love. In other words, God needs His beloved object partner. He can love only when He has a partner to love. God is the origin of love and heart, and His motive in creating the universe was love. As Genesis 1:27 reveals, God created human beings in His own image, as His substantial object partners. (135-010, 1985.08.20)

10 God is the ultimate being of love and the origin of heart, which is deeper than love. God's Word, deeds and philosophy are rooted in His heart. None of these can exist by itself. Each stems from God's vertical heart. We therefore need to share God's heart toward history, toward the present, and toward the future. (11-267, 1961.12.14)

11 It is said that God is the origin of truth, the origin of goodness, the origin of love and the origin of life. What do these phrases mean? They all refer to the same thing. For there to be truth, there must be love and life. To become a person who can speak the real truth, you must have the will and desire for truth pulsating within your own life. As the origin of life, love and truth, God is the Father and also the Mother of all humankind. The core is that God is the Parent. Seen in this way, it is easy to understand God. (021-184, 1968.11.20)

12 No one can change the fact that True Parents were born in this country. How precious it would be to be one with the people of the nation that will remain for all eternity the nation that gave birth to the True Parents! All resultant beings want to be united with these original beings, who are eternal and unchanging. To be in an intimate relationship with these original beings is the highest hope in the world of heart. (249-328, 1993.10.11)

13 God, for whom we seek, is the origin of hope. At the same time, He is the origin of glory, encapsulating the value of the universe. Therefore, to restore God's dominion over the entire creation, we have to possess God within ourselves. We should be able to welcome and attend God. He is the Creator of all things, the one who has been toiling to exercise His dominion over all creation. When you say that you possess God, He is your God. As He is eternal, so are you. As He is the governor of all things of creation, so too can you govern them as His substantial embodiment. If you cannot be such a person, do not say that you possess God. (001-121, 1956.06.27)

14 We have to eliminate the elements of sin onto which we have held until now. We have remained in the grip of the power of death, but we should attain a standard of faith that liberates us from that. To do this, we have to find the path of life that eradicates doubt. If there were no such path in our world, God would not be able to come to us. God is an actual being. He can stimulate our conscience to make us aware of our mistakes and repent for them. This being so, we should fulfill God's desire by attaining the highest standard of hope, of life, and of human ethics. Such a time, the historic Last Days, must come in the end. This destiny involves the whole universe, but how seriously have you thought about it? We live in an environment in which we can nurse doubts about the universe, about society, about the world, even about ourselves. God is the central being who can provide solutions to all these questions. God is also the only one who knows everything we are pondering, and the only one, the Absolute Being, who can solve our fundamental problems. (3-012, 1957.09.08)

The Lord of heaven and earth

15 God is the central being of the cosmos. He is the Parent of the universe, the Parent of all creation. God is the Creator who will surely bring His purpose to pass. The True Parents on earth are the ancestors of humankind. They are the ones who inherit the parental heart of the Creator and give birth to humankind on this earth. From this perspective, we find three sets of parents in the cosmos: the eternal Heavenly Parent, the True Parents on this earth, and the parents in our families.

What do these parents pursue in their public life? Not money or material things, not knowledge or power. They live with love as their center. God, True Parents on earth, and the parents in the family are the owners whose governance is based on love. (199-231, 1990.02.21)

16 To humankind, God is the Parent and King of kings, as well as the center of all things of creation. Hence, He is to lead and guide filial sons and daughters, patriots, and saints who represent the world. When this takes place, God will reach the highest position. God can be the Parent as well as the King. These positions are not separate; God is the central being who combines them. If it were possible, a person should combine the highest qualities of filial piety, loyalty and holiness, and attend God. Surely God would like to be attended by persons with the qualities of a filial child, patriot, and saint of saints. (062-033, 1972.09.10)

17 The Creator, standing at the center of the universe, protects it with a strong sense of responsibility. He protects and nurtures the universe well. Not only that, He takes responsibility for all things, good and bad. He never runs away from that responsibility. As the great Lord of the universe, God takes responsibility, protects and nurtures it. Thus all beings desire to create unity with God at the center. (200-020, 1990.02.23)

18 God has boundless blessings to give. He is the central being of all blessings. His blessings are the most valuable benefits. You cannot purchase them and you would never exchange them for anything in the world. He is in possession of everything that you could want. What He possesses is more precious than your beloved wife, more valuable than your father and more precious than the sons and daughters whom you love with your life. Therefore, the person who can call God his or her own is the one who can claim to be the most victorious and successful person on earth. (154-060, 1964.03.23)

19 God is the Lord of heaven and earth. He possesses the highest ideal; He is the standard around which our motivation and purpose converge. Therefore, God is the motivation for and purpose of our existence. Then where do this motivation and purpose lead? God's motivation is to have a family that centers on His Will, a family that can fulfill His purpose for the world. (025-083, 1969.09.30)

20 God is absolute, omniscient and omnipotent; hence, space and time do not restrict Him; He transcends them. Circumstances do not bind Him; He is able to break through them. If such a God still has an unresolved hope that He has been pursuing until now, that hope cannot be for Himself. His hope is for nothing other

than to recover humanity as His children. He cannot fulfill that hope by Himself. Human beings have to resolve this and then return to God. (047-149, 1971.08.28)

21 We are not the origin. Our life did not originate with our parents, society, people or nation, but with the one transcendent origin, namely, the Absolute Being, God. Hence, we need to connect our life to the transcendent and absolute cause. This connection should not derive from a particular time, environment or social condition. In order to make a leap and go beyond these particulars we must link our origin to that transcendent cause and transcendent purpose. We have to link our life to the transcendent motive, for life did not begin from us. It began from the absolute God. When we link our life to the transcendent motive, even if we die, it will be according to His Will, through a course that is transcendent of us. This is not a purpose swayed by the environment or based on worldly relationships. This Will moves toward a transcendent conclusion. It has a transcendent motive in transcendent relationships. The transcendent motive is God, the transcendent process is His Will, and the transcendent purpose for which He advances is the good of the world. (036-064, 1970.11.15)

22 God is the vertical Father and vertical subject partner, and human beings are the horizontal subject partners. Only when the vertical and horizontal become one is a being perfected. A three-dimensional being must unite in relationships of vertical, horizontal, and front and back. The vertical relationship is the parent-child relationship. The horizontal relationship is that between east and west, husband and wife. The relationship of front and back is that between brothers and sisters. Connecting relationships in this way establishes the spherical form of the ideal of love in each family, which is the ideal of creation. Where is God in this sphere? He is at the center. God's ideal of creation is the father, husband, mother, wife, son and daughter, older sibling and younger sibling, each representing God, who stands as the central being. (267-224, 1995.01.08)

23 God always takes the position of subject partner to those who dedicate their lives for a public purpose with a loyal heart. Thus, when we struggle and shed tears, God, as our subject partner, struggles and sheds tears more than we do. When we walk a public path with a burning heart of love, we stimulate God, who is the subject partner and center of love, and He always comes to us as our partner. God is also the subject partner who, as the source of energy, provides us the energy to achieve these purposes. In this world, it is hard to find a partner with whom to work in order to fulfill the purpose of love. How happy we would be if God were our partner! Partnership with God would be better than with our parents, our siblings, our teachers, or anyone else who loves us. (098-013, 1978.04.02)

24 Our subject partner is God. We should be happy together with God; we should sing with God and dance with God. If we could, how wonderful that would be! Our purpose is God. What are we looking for in our journey through life? We are looking for God, the real God. (021-345, 1969.01.01)

25 God is the owner of each individual, the owner of each couple, the owner of each family, the owner of each nation, the owner of the world and the owner of the cosmos. From the very core of His being, through His own love, He wants to take the role of the owner. In the position of subject partner, He wants to establish the world of peace through His object partners. Christianity teaches that the Creator is holy while humans are sinful. Yet they say this because they do not know the value of human beings. This is what I would like to teach: God created human beings as His substantial form; that is His first purpose for creating us. (286-126, 1997.08.09)

26 God is the most public-minded of subject partners. Then, what is God's most important lesson for us? It is that we should devote ourselves at the risk of our lives for His sake. That is even better than working for a public mission for the world. The one who puts his life on the line is the superior person. Therefore the Bible says: "You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind. This is the first and greatest commandment." (Matt. 22:37-38) In light of this, what kind of being is God? He is the owner of the whole cosmos. Therefore, love God. The whole world will belong to the one who loves God. (033-324, 1970.08.23)

God, the subject partner of love, life and the ideal

27 God is the subject of life. Where there is life, there must be love that is maintaining it. You were born through the love of your parents, but someone with love, life and purpose is behind them. He is the subject, but not a subject partner like you. He is the root of the whole. As His counterpart you can think of yourself as a cell, and He is like the root of everything, the nucleus of all beings in the universe. He is the nucleus of all life force. If there is a love force, He is its nucleus. If there is a purpose, He is the cause and the nucleus of that purpose. (110-072, 1980.11.09)

28 When the sun rises, the buds of each tree face the sun. What is it in the sunlight to which the buds respond? It is life elements. For us human beings, love is our life element. God is the sun of love. You have to engraft to the ideal of love and harmonize with it in order to develop your love and life, and to cultivate your character in harmony with the eternal world. Otherwise you cannot assume the position of counterpart to God; you cannot live in the realm of love partnership.

Human beings are that precious. God created us as His partners of love. (144-214, 1986.04.24)

29 God is the subject partner of love, subject partner of life and subject partner of the ideal. Therefore, we can conclude that human beings are the object partners of love, object partners of life and object partners of the ideal. Because God is absolute, we also seek an absolute position. Because God is unchanging, we seek to be unchanging. Because God is unique, we seek to be unique. Because God is eternal, we seek to be eternal. From this point of view, it is human destiny to have an eternal life; we inevitably arrive at this conclusion. No matter how much love God has, no matter how much life He has, and no matter how high His ideals are, if we do not also possess these it is all in vain. (069-074, 1973.10.20)

30 God is the subject partner of our life. Because He is the subject partner of our life and love, we should appreciate the force of life and the force of love within Him. However, due to the Fall, we do not live in a world where God's force of life and God's force of love are valued. Hence, we ought to again seek such a world and recover it. The world we are living in now is not the world God desires; nor is it the one we desire. (086-293, 1976.04.11)

31 God is the subject partner of all living things, of all things in which there is action. He is their subject partner, not only today but all throughout time. Thus every living thing, whatever it may be, has an original nature that desires to be with God eternally, to live with Him and even share death with Him. God has to maintain His position as the subject partner. But He is beyond doing it as a duty; He is working passionately to govern all things through relationships of love based on heart. (006-274, 1959.06.07)

32 Until now we have called upon God based only on a concept. We have referred to God as our subject partner only in a religious sense. Yet God is the subject partner of our very existence. Furthermore, He is the subject partner of our daily life and the subject partner of our philosophy of life. However, no matter how deep and wide our philosophy and view of Him as our subject partner may be, if we cannot explain and experience God in daily life, emotionally and practically, what good is it? If there are people whose philosophy of life enables them to experience the value of God as their subject partner in daily life and to be so united with God that they would not exchange Him for the world, they must be the people for whom God is seeking. (11-087, 1961.02.12)

33 God is the foundation of happiness. Among all seeds, He is the seed of life. It is because life comes from God that life is great. God is the seed of a life that manifests the ideal. What is it that enables us to connect from the base of God's happiness to God's ideal? It is true love. God is the origin of life and the origin of love. He is also the origin of man and woman. He is the origin of the mother and father, of brothers and sisters. (174-248, 1988.03.01)

34 God values life, because He is its root. God values the Word. Also, God values action and love. When a person recognizes Him as the root of his or her existence and speaks His Word, God loves seeing that Word bear fruit as He has spoken it. Once that Word is spoken, it bears fruit. Then God does not leave the fruit of that Word alone, but continues to love it. In this way, God speaks the Word, a person puts it into action, and through action that person emerges as the embodiment of the Word. Then it is for God to develop that person into the embodiment of love. (105-073, 1979.09.23)

Section 3. The God of the Word

1 God's Word is not spoken blindly. Because God's Word is based on the Principle and because it is to create beings of limitless value, no one can dispute it. Everyone absolutely will have to unite with it. God Himself has faith in the Word, which contains principles and laws, and He made it into substance, the embodiment of Himself. It is through this substance that God's children emerge with the infinite value of His object partners. Then, through an explosion of love from that point, the bond between God and human beings is formed. It is the same whether referring to God creating His children, or to those children looking at God. (68-136, 1973.07.29)

What is God's Word?

2 God existed before the creation. Out of His existence, God conceived of the Word. The Word is that through which substance is created. God did not intend simply to create something and leave it alone; He wanted an eternal relationship with His creation. God intended an ideal of total oneness, an inseparable relationship that no one could break, that even He Himself could not break. Therefore, from the time the first human beings were created, God and human beings were meant to be together, not separate. From that starting point, God and we human beings were meant to stay together for eternity. (68-127, 1973.07.29)

3 God did not create human beings without having a clear idea. In creating them, God had conviction: "It will surely be like this." His faith contained a concrete plan. That plan was based on the Principle with its laws. God had faith in His creation

according to the Principle. The moment of creation was to be when His faith united with His Principle to form the substance of His creation. The moment of creation came when His faith, the Principle and the substance were in complete accord. With faith and the Principle together, the purpose of God's Word was to create the substance. (68-135, 1973.07.29)

4 God's Word is a covenant between God and human beings. A covenant states, "If you do this, I will do this for you." The Bible teaches us that everything is given in a covenant. If you do your part, God will do something for you. If you fulfill the covenant, God will make you prosper. If you fail to do so, God will not interfere if you go to ruin. (44-339, 1971.05.30)

5 The Word has provisions for judgment. The law is the standard of judgment, the standard that distinguishes good from evil. Thus, the truth should explain the origin of good and evil and define the standard of good and evil. That standard should be the Unification Principle. Do you accept it as absolute? If you defy or go against the Word, the Word itself will restrict you. It is a principle that the Word benefits you. If you are aligned with the Word, you ultimately will achieve the perfection of your character. However, this achievement must not be centered on yourself. Even if you do everything in your daily life in accordance with the Word, you should not hope that the result will be yours. It belongs to God. This means that you should center your life not on yourself, but on the whole. Your perspective must change. (45-225, 1971.07.01)

6 Since we can call God our Father, we should be able to speak His Word. God's Word, wherever it is heard, leads to good results, resurrection, and the miracle of re-creation. Thus we should become people who can eradicate evil, bring about the work of resurrection and wield the power of re-creation. The place where such people reside is the kingdom of heaven. (3-034, 1957.09.15)

The Word of heart, love and law

7 The purpose of our life is to connect to God's love. We who live on earth are the ones who can proclaim God's Word, the Word that connects us to God. Because the Word we convey on earth is God's, human beings can be created anew through that Word. You can reach the standard of perfection through giving and receiving. This is the viewpoint of the Principle. Because God is there, the one who hears His Word can resurrect. When we unite with that person as our counterpart, we can form a substantial base; on that foundation we can experience God's heart. Depending on the depth and breadth of our preparation, our capacity to experience God's heart

grows. Within the Word, God's heart is beating. Therefore, once we hear the Word, even we fallen people feel God's heart beginning to bud within our heart. When our hearts thus begin to bud, we acquire the strength to love our enemy, and the power to subjugate Satan's world is activated. Thus you must never keep God's Word to yourself; you need to gain the ability to activate God's heart within you. (027-337, 1970.01.01)

8 We are not speaking of secular truth, but of God's words of love. God's truth is delivered to the earth through specific providential figures. God's truth is absolute. Absolute truth is like an all- powerful master key. By applying it, we can solve any difficult problem. (135-347, 1985.12.16)

9 When you receive God's Word, you should recognize it as the true eternal law and the truth for your own life, and be able to say, "This is the Word for my life." Further, you should have the experience of that one point in time in the beginning when God created human beings with the Word. Unless you experience it, unless you feel God's Word touching your skin, you cannot become God's son or daughter. (003-267, 1958.01.12)

10 If you really want to find the truth, do not pay attention to just anyone's words. You have to listen only to that which is true. Then what are the words of truth? Words of truth are those that stir a feeling of repentance in your heart, that move you so deeply that you become completely immersed in them, and that remain in your mind no matter how much you try to forget them. When you discover such words, you have found the words of truth that convey the principles of heavenly relationships. (2-137, 1957.03.31)

11 God has to re-create in accordance with the Principle. What should He do with human beings, who are like lumps of clay fallen into an unprincipled realm? God's position is the same as when He created Adam and Eve from clay. He has to do the work of bringing them to unite with the Word. The Word is not ambiguous; it is given in the Principle and its laws. The Word is like a blueprint with laws and regulations, instructing that human eyes should be like this and the nose should be like that. Human beings should follow this blueprint. (68-139, 1973.07.29)

12 God's Word is the root of all truth; hence it is the absolute truth. Further, it is the internally coherent truth. Due to the Fall, we lost God; we lost absolute truth and absolute values. We lost both the internally coherent truth and the internally coherent values. An absolute view of value stems from absolute values and absolute truth. "View" refers to viewpoint, opinion and theory. The establishment

of a correct view of absolute values is the step that will resolve today's worldwide confusion. (122-299, 1982.11.25)

13 Why do we need God? It is because God has the unchanging truth. God's Word never changes. The Word that He spoke one thousand years ago will still apply one hundred million years from now. Human words, no matter how eloquent and flowery they are, wither away and fade from view. But God's Word transcends all changes wrought by time. (162-262, 1987.04.17)

The Word as the truth for creation, growth and perfection

14 God created everything through the Word. Unless the Word, the truth, is perfect, its substance cannot be perfect. It is inevitable that if the truth is imperfect, the creation will be imperfect. Our life of faith is the same. Unless we stand in a place that is perfect, our life of faith cannot be perfect. Therefore the perfect truth that God and the cosmos desire must emerge. (016-252, 1966.06.19)

15 God began His creation with the eternal and unique Word. He wanted Adam and Eve to fulfill the purpose of His Word, their bodies becoming temples where He could reside substantially forever. This was His purpose in creating Adam and Eve. When God breathed life into Adam and Eve, He wanted to reside in their hearts as the subject partner of their eternal life, and create for them the resting place of the Sabbath. God created Adam and Eve for this great purpose, to form an unbreakable relationship with them. (3-259, 1958.01.12)

16 When God speaks through the Principle, He is not speaking arbitrarily. God speaks in perfect accord with the Principle. This supports unity with His object partners. That is why we need faith. As God believes in us, we have to believe in Him. We should not be vague about this. We must center on the Principle and unite with it. We should not leave the Principle on the shelf, but should keep faith in it and substantiate it. By perfecting ourselves as the substance of the Principle, we become sons and daughters whom God can love. (68-135, 1973.07.29)

17 For what purpose did Jesus Christ proclaim the Word, as he came to the earth, shed tears, and followed a path of suffering for more than thirty years? First, it was to recover the relationship between God and human beings. Next, it was to introduce the kingdom of heaven. Jesus introduced the kingdom of heaven through his words. That is, he introduced the kingdom of heaven through truth. Through Jesus Christ, God gave us the Word, to establish an eternal, unchanging relationship with us and to realize the kingdom of heaven on earth. God revealed the real truth through Jesus. Jesus Christ came to build the relationship between God and human

beings, and to testify to the real truth. He introduced and proclaimed the truth in order to build the kingdom of heaven for which God, humanity and all creation had been longing. Jesus proclaimed the truth in order to recover the relationship between God and human beings, but the people of Israel, who should have believed the truth Jesus brought, distrusted him. The Word was proclaimed but its purpose was not accomplished. (002-126, 1957.03.31)

Section 4. The Attributes of God

1 God is absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal. These are His four attributes. Accordingly, every one of His creations is absolute and unique. Because each entity is absolute, God wants to place it in its own absolute position. That is why all entities are unique and do not randomly intermix. The way of love is unique and, therefore, unchanging and eternal. (279-147, 1996.08.04)

God's main attributes

2 God is absolute, unique and unchanging. Based on this, one should become the subject partner of absolute love, unique love, unchanging love and eternal love. Such a person becomes a representative of God. One who reflects God's attributes can become His representative. With what did God endow His partners when He created them? He endowed them with creativity that is absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal. He gave them absolute creativity rooted in love. God's love is absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal, and through that love we share His suffering and His joy, and participate in everything with Him. We thereby inherit everything from Him. If we have the love of the absolute God, we become the object partners of the absolute God. (303-261, 1999.09.09)

3 God is absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal. To unite with Him, we likewise have to be absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal. Then and there, eternal love can begin. We can be perfected as men and women only through a life relationship that is eternal. We become eternal true men and eternal true women only when we go through a process of growth and settle in the position that is absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal. Then we become the unchanging owners of love. This is where love is perfected, where the life of a man and a woman unite. At the same time, they come to create a new life, connecting to a new relationship of lineage. (280-192, 1997.01.01)

4 God exists centered on love. Therefore, God's absoluteness is centered on love, His uniqueness is centered on love, and His constancy is centered on love. All of them are centered on love. The attributes of love are also absolute, unique,

unchanging and eternal. All people want such love, absolute love. "Absolute" means there is only one. So we know that God's nature is absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal. (224-133, 1991.11.24)

5 Love unfolds in mutual relationships. Therefore even God, who is absolute, has to be absolutely obedient in front of love. Otherwise He would not be able to teach human beings about the core principle of relationships. God wants to teach Adam and Eve, "Your conjugal love is absolute; you cannot change it for eternity" Why? It is because they are the manifestations of God's attributes. God is one, absolutely not two. Adam is the manifestation of God's attributes, and therefore he is an absolute being. Adam manifests God's male attributes; Eve manifests God's female attributes. These attributes themselves are absolute. Love brings together internal and external attributes. As such, love is absolute, and that is why even God absolutely has to obey absolute love. Hence, the couple that appears with this absolute love is one and only one, not two. It is absolute, and at the same time, unchanging and eternal. (226-170, 1992.02.04)

6 The goal set up by God, the Creator, cannot change. God is the center of each person's conscience and the objective of all people's hope. No matter how much time passes, no matter what course history takes, He can never change. Before eternity and after eternity, God cannot change. That is why God said, "I am the Alpha and the Omega, the first and the last, the beginning and the end." (Rev. 22:13) (010-156, 1960.09.25)

The root of true love

7 God is the root and origin of love. God is also the root of life. God is the root of lineage and the root of conscience. We know that love, life, lineage and conscience exist, even though we cannot see or touch them. Likewise, we cannot see or touch God, but we can come to know that He exists. Then where is God, who is the root of life and the root of love? He is not up in the air. He dwells in the root of our love and life. That is why we cannot feel Him. (275-013, 1995.10.30)

8 God is the root of true love. Elements from the root reach the shoots through the trunk. Then the branches stretch out in all directions, east, west, south and north. The further the branches stretch, the more the shoots, the trunk and the roots grow. This symbolizes God, the vertical Father of true love, and the human world. God, the Creator, is our Father centered on vertical true love. (203-352, 1990.06.28)

9 The root of love is God. God is the root of all roots. We have to engraft ourselves to that root of love. When we unite with it, we can connect to the root of love and

new shoots can emerge and grow into a tree that eventually will flower and bear fruit. There, the Lord's hope can bloom. New shoots have to come out and grow into branches. A shoot by itself will perish. A shoot wants to grow into a branch. Multiple branches have to grow from the main trunk and then, after a proliferation of leaves, flowers will blossom. This is the order of growth. This process leads eventually to the stage of perfection. (231-274, 1992.06.07)

10 God is the Lord of love and the root of love. Among all roots, there is one central root. We need to seek the love that reaches to that main root. To do this, we have to become just like God. As God's mind and body are absolutely united, we should become sons and daughters whose minds and bodies are absolutely united. (272-260, 1995.10.06)

11 The God of goodness is a God of sacrifice and love. Love cannot exist apart from the essence of sacrifice. When we sacrifice for the one we love, we do not think of it as sacrifice. The more we sacrifice, the more we feel enriched. Love has that unusual quality. When we reflect upon our level of love, we find that we can measure it only on the scale of sacrifice. Big or small, high or low, the extent of our sacrifice is the measure of our love. Great sacrifice reflects great love; little sacrifice reflects little love. (063-025, 1972.10.01)

12 God is the being of absolute love. God created human beings as His object partners, desiring to pour His love into them. In doing so, God expected that, through man and woman, His love would return naturally. If that had occurred, God would have felt infinite joy. Adam and Eve would have become the perfect object partners of God's love only when the two achieved perfect unity in their love. But Adam and Eve had to go through a period of growth in order to become a mature couple, resemble God, receive God's love, and finally return love to Him. (201-205, 1990.04.09)

13 God created heaven and earth for love. Who are the object partners of His love? They are human beings. This shows us the value of human beings. As the King of love, God desires to possess the love of parents, the love of couples, and the love of brothers and sisters. God is the King of love. As the subject partner whose original nature encompasses east, west, north and south, and front, back, right and left, He is ready to meet any counterpart who desires true love. (219-017, 1991.08.25)

The God of emotion, intellect and will

14 What is the nature of God's relationship with human beings? To have a relationship with human beings, He has to be a personal God. And in order to be a

personal God, He should be like us. Human beings have mind and body. We can deduce the concept of God's dual characteristics from the premise that God, as our Creator and original being, in order to share with us a common purpose, has to resemble us human beings. (167-244, 1987.07.21)

15 God, the Creator, would not create without purpose. Since human beings have emotion, intellect and will, it follows that God, our Creator, has to be the original being of emotion, intellect and will. (155-288, 1965.11.01)

16 God is a personal being. As a personal God, He has emotion, intellect and will. Thus, God and we can communicate with each other. For instance, when we laugh, God should be able to laugh. Then does the absolute God, who can do whatever He wants, shed tears? Yes, God also sheds tears. (203-221, 1990.06.26)

17 Today many Christians have the view that since God, the Creator, is a unique and absolute being in the position of the Most High, a being of supreme goodness, He cannot have a relationship with human beings, that is, beings that He created. In other words, they say that His creatures are profane, whereas He is absolute and divine. On the other hand, from the viewpoint of love, no matter how lofty and righteous God is, and no matter how lowly His creatures are, in order to share a love relationship they need to have the same qualities of character and heart. That is, God and human beings must be able to share the same heart. It means God naturally must have the same qualities as human beings. Hence human beings resemble Him, and we believers say, "God is our Father, and we are His children." Saying this means that human beings resemble God. How does resemblance come about? It comes through the bloodline, the lineage. The fact that we are bound to God through lineage means that we bind to Him through love. (138-246, 1986.01.24)

18 God is a personal God, having emotion, intellect and will. Above all, this personal God desires love, so He created human beings as His object partners of love. Christian theology states that the Creator is sacred and His creatures are lowly, but this cannot be the whole story in light of the ideal of partnership, for the fulfillment of which God absolutely needs to find an ideal object partner of love. Since God is divine, the object partner of love whom this divine being is seeking also has to be divine. This is the basis for the privilege and authority of human beings. (143-151, 1986.03.17)

19 The final destination of philosophy is to find God. What God? The God who is absolute, unique and unchanging. But most of all He must be a personal God,

because this is the kind of God that human beings need. In order to relate to us, God has to be a personal God who shares all our thoughts, ideals and desires, including both internal and external aspects. He has to be the One who can relate with us deeply in all dimensions—emotional, volitional and intellectual. Unless He can form a complete relationship with us, even though He exists He would really have nothing to do with us. From the perspective that God has to be a personal God, philosophers have been ignoring the most essential meaning of God. (138-142, 1986.01.21)

20 Love is what God needs, and He will love those who resemble Him. Therefore, to share love, God needs a partner with whom He can be pleased. If human beings are indeed God's partners, it follows that God must have a personality that can harmonize one hundred percent with the attributes of human beings. God must be the One who can harmonize with all the elements of the body and mind. Hence, God must have emotion, intellect and will. (162-274, 1987.04.17)

21 When we look at God, we can see He is a personal God. Since He is the subject partner of human beings, He has the character to perfectly relate to us. If God is like this, He surely has His own views about morality in human relationships and the rules of conduct by which we should live. Just as we have views about morality that are based on human relationships and the human heart, God must have views about morality that are based on our relationship with Him and on His heart. God, as the subject being, has His own love and His own rules of conduct. Accordingly, human beings should possess love and uphold rules of conduct appropriate to being His object partners. It makes no sense to believe that human rules of conduct, morals and heart exist but divine rules of conduct, morals and heart do not. (065-025, 1972.11.13)

22 The I Ching says, "The cycle of change is the law of heaven; benevolence, righteousness, propriety and wisdom are supreme in human nature," showing that benevolence, righteousness, propriety and wisdom are important. The I Ching explains the constant changes in nature, the cycle of the seasons, and the cyclical path of change in the universe. But it makes no mention of a personal God. Further, the book explains the law of yin and yang in the natural world, but falls short with respect to love, lineage and perfection. It does not explain the being who, while existing as the harmonization of subject and object partners, and of internal character and external form, brings east, west, north and south into balance. (410-040, 2003.06.30)

23 The God who governs heaven and earth is a personal God. This personal God wants to become the Parent of an ideal family and, in the position of a husband and wife, lead the children to form a tribe, lead the tribe to form a nation, and then unite the world as one great family of God. Then the world will become one single people. Jesus' proclamation that he was the Son of God was amazing. He also spoke of the bride and bridegroom. He taught us the highest standard that a person is to attain. John 14 explains the essence of this. Jesus also said he would come again. He must come again to find the bride and the bridegroom, form the family, tribe and nation, and unify the world. (370-063, 2002.02.19)

24 We cannot talk about love unless God is a personal God. God needs to have the same qualities of emotion and character as human beings. Christianity, alone among religions, reveals this God. Christians call God "Father" and "Jehovah." That we can call God "Father" was a great discovery. (139-240, 1986.01.31)

God of the Principle and the law

25 God is the God of the Principle. Conversely, Satan stands in an unprincipled position. Therefore, if you are unprincipled, it puts Satan in charge; if you are principled, it puts God in charge. When we consider the positions of the beings at the time of God's creation, God came first, next were Adam and Eve, and then the archangels. This is the view based on the Principle. (55-296, 1972.05.09)

26 What is the purpose of a religious life? It is to realize one's original nature. Original nature is the core of the Principle. Since God is the owner of the Principle, He can govern by the Principle. But God can govern only what is within the original nature. Since the original nature and the absolute God are one, the original nature also strives to stand in the absolute position. Because of this, the mind can command the body absolutely, and this is principled. The Principle determines the core of everything. The more principled something is, the closer its position will be to the center. (56-303, 1972.05.18)

27 A good and upright person represents the whole. In measuring goodness, the closer a person is to the position of the Principle, the better he or she is. Our original nature inclines us to engage in actions that move toward oneness with God, because He is the center of the Principle. This inclination toward oneness with the center results from the action of the conscience. Had our ancestors not fallen, the conscience would have directed and disciplined the body. That is the Principle. But due to the Fall, the body became an unprincipled base. Thus, the Principle

inevitably engages us in action to fight against that which is not of the Principle. This is the action of the conscience. (56-303, 1972.05.18)

28 All that is true is necessarily centered on God. All things become true if and when we human beings lay the fundamental foundation upon which to bring forth order and good governance. Absent such a foundation, nothing is really true. God is the source of what is true; trueness is possible because God exists. When God departs, so does trueness. In that void, the origin of evil emerges. True results can only come from truth. In other words, the fulfillment of God's desire comes from the existence of the true God. Please understand that concepts such as truth and goodness are established in relation not to human beings, but to God. (024-315, 1969.09.14)

29 What is truth? To man, the greatest truth is woman. To woman, the greatest truth is man. To God, the truth is human beings; to human beings, the truth is God. Truth is not found elsewhere. Since God is true, and is the truth, all that stems from Him is true, and is the truth. How can truth reach perfection? When man and woman become one and, as a couple, unite with God in true love, perfection is attained. There can be no perfection without true love. Seen in this way, man represents the perfection of truth and woman represents the perfection of truth. Thus, for man and woman to become one is to perfect God and the universe. (201-222, 1990.04.22)

30 God is the subject partner of the truth and the original essence of the truth. Accordingly, it is said that all things are possible through Him. This basic principle is effective because God is the truth. As the subject being and the subject partner, God is in the position to take responsibility for all things, whether under His or another's dominion. Because He takes responsibility, He has been the center of history and will remain the central being forever. (087-041, 1976.04.25)

31 If God ignored His own law, with which He created everything, He would not be able to govern His creation. Because He established the law, God takes dominion over His creation by observing that very law. Thereby, He becomes the God who makes the law His own. If he were to oppose it, He could not own it. By observing it, God becomes the God of law. Because He is one with the law, He can judge according to the law. He can forbid things and give commandments. Otherwise, He cannot judge according to the law or pass sentence by the law. (112-073, 1981.04.01)

32 Christianity describes God as the omniscient and omnipotent Father, but His omniscience and omnipotence do not function apart from a basic principle. God does not act arbitrarily. The law established by the eternal God is eternal. The fact that He is the One who established it does not justify His being arbitrary and changing it. (162-184, 1987.04.12)

33 Christian ministers may think, "The omniscient and omnipotent God, with the power of creation, can do whatever He wants, even now." But that is far from the truth. All things existing in heaven and on earth operate by the fundamental law, the Principle. Even God cannot act in violation of His law. Even the president of a nation has to respect the constitution and the laws the legislature passes according to it. Since God is the being who is absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal, His law is also absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal. He needs a partner who conforms to this law. For Him this is the highest necessity. He needs a partner who, representing the world, abides by the law and liberates the people. (166-101, 1987.05.30)

CHAPTER 2 The God of Heart and True Love

Section 1. The God of Heart

1 God is the subject partner of heart. For this reason, God experiences the emotions of deepest sorrow and greatest joy. It is not true that God has only joyful and pleasant emotions. When He is sorrowful, His sorrow is deep and wide, beyond what any human being can fathom. (11-089, 1961.02.12)

2 God, who created us, is not only the Lord of our mind and body. He can also stand in the position of the Lord and subject partner of our thinking and of the world of our emotions. Furthermore, He is also the Lord and subject partner of our inner heart. We absolutely need God to be like this. In our consciousness and emotions we need Him absolutely, not just conceptually. The fact that we have lost this Lord, our God, is our sorrow. (7-048, 1959.07.12)

God is the Lord of our heart

3 God is the eternal Lord of our body and our heart. In the original world, if a husband and wife say that no matter how much they love each other, they love God even more, neither will feel resentful. The kingdom of heaven is the world in which we can rejoice that our spouse loves God more than us. God, who is in the position of subject partner transcending any kind of love and any circumstances, is the eternal Lord of our body. Therefore, if we are embraced in the bosom of God, who

owns our body, and thus dwell in His garden, we will be happy even when we die. (7-255, 1959.09.20)

4 God stands in the vertical position based upon true internal heart. He is our Father. Then who are True Parents? Through horizontal heart, they are one man and one woman who become Father and Mother, the supporting beings whose relationship supports the perpendicular line. This perpendicular line should not be bent. There is, however, a way by which Satan can invade. To protect against this, the central line should be reinforced by the bone and flesh of love. Heavenly Father, the vertical God, is in the position of the bone of love, and True Parents are in the position of the flesh of love. The supporting beings, the True Parents, are determined centered on the core entity, God. (177-072, 1988.05.15)

5 Works based on heart are not related with the physical body but spring from the heavenly heart: They arise from Heaven's heart in their origin, in their process and in their result. Therefore, unless we become like unfallen Adam and Eve, people who can inherit God's lineage, who are created as the body of God, and who connect to God's love, we cannot attain a victorious foundation of heart. (043-187, 1971.04.30)

6 Originally, Adam and Eve should have been people who were content to be in God's embrace and grateful for everything, communicating with God in daily life and overflowing with God's hope. When God saw that they were not going this way, His inner pain far exceeded their inner misery. Our ancestors were unaware of this. (15-102, 1965.10.03)

7 Today, with what heart do we venture out? With what eyes do we observe the world? With what senses do we feel? Before you think about this, you should pray, "God, as I lead my life I am dealing with these kinds of sensations. Yet I want to lead my life understanding the heart of Adam and Eve toward You prior to the Fall, the heart they had at the time of the Fall, the heart You experienced when You had to expel Adam and Eve, the heart with which You toiled hard for humanity for 1,600 years until You called Noah, and Noah's heart as he worked for 120 years bearing ridicule and persecution, holding on to Heaven in order to build the ark on top of a mountain. I want to know Your heart throughout all the twists and turns of history, and hold on to that heart." (5-175, 1959.01.18)

8 The question is how we empathize with God's feelings in our daily life. When you are alone, you should be able without forethought to call out to God, "Father!" Then you will feel God's reply, "Yes, I am here!" If you are one with God, that's how

it will be. It seems that no one is around, but someone is leading and guiding you. If you live such a life, you never question God's existence. When you face difficulties, you know God will protect and guide you. Knowing this, you cannot desert Him. (59-321, 1972.07.30)

9 Even God has emotion, intellect and will. If human beings, whom God created, have emotion, intellect and will, God undoubtedly has these attributes as well. We earthly human beings are the descendants of fallen ancestors. However, we originate from God's lineage, as His direct children related by blood. For this reason, God's heart toward us has intensity greater than that of any parent looking for his or her lost child. God sees us weeping bitter tears for the earth, collapsing and dying in pain and lamenting in deep grief and sorrow, and all these images are etched into His heart. Any individual, family or nation that ridicules, oppresses or kills virtuous people will not last long, because God will remember their deeds. Hence, whenever we shed tears, we should know that God is also shedding tears. We also should know that whenever we feel furious and bitter towards an enemy, God is shedding tears of forgiveness. God does not take revenge upon an enemy and say, "You scoundrel, I'm glad you are dead." God does not strike us, because He does not consider us His enemies. (10-243, 1960.10.16)

10 God is struck first and then claims what is His. You should be the same. Because of us, God has had to endure the miserable course of the providence. We need to understand God's heart in history, always wanting to say to us, "I want to talk to you; I want to work with you." God does not forget us; He waits for us. So we have to think to ourselves, "God, when can I participate in Your providence of restoration?" We have to find the platform upon which we can live together with God. We have to find the way to think like God, speak like God, and act like God. (12-059, 1962.10.07)

11 God is the Creator of all things, but He is also our true Father. That true Father will come to find us. No matter what difficulties we face, we have to keep on going. We have to persevere as we overcome the twists and turns of destiny to grasp our true Father's hand. We have to persevere until we call out, as our last words, "My Father!" with our hearts overflowing with the hope that He maintained throughout history and we maintained throughout life. We have to march on, even if we face the path of death. In the Last Days, when a group of people appears among all humankind that runs excitedly to the Creator and absolute God, calling Him "my Father," God's new providential work will begin. (11-089, 1961.02.12)

12 What is the ultimate purpose behind our striving for higher goodness, greater beauty and deeper love? It is to build a relationship in heart with God, our Creator. As we do, we need to examine whether agreement exists between God's heart, which moves based on relationships in accord with heavenly law, and the human heart, which moves in accord with human morality. We find that they are often in conflict and discord. Morality in today's society is going in a different direction from that taken by heavenly law, which manifests according to the path of providence. This is a result of the Fall. We must comprehend the sorrowful fact that, because of the Fall, the heart of God, the heart of heavenly law, and the heart of human morality are in conflict. When we grasp that this is the real situation besetting us, our society and our world, we have to halt on the path on which we have been walking. We need to envision a world of creation revived, envision the heart of the Creator, take a second look at the reality of our society, and review our own mind and body. Otherwise the world based on a new teaching and a new heart will not appear in human history. (5-341, 1959.03.08)

13 If you want to be a brave soldier for God, you have to know God's heart. After all, if you want to be a patriot, you have to know the king's heart. If you want to be a son or daughter of filial piety, you have to know your father and mother's heart. Naturally you have to know God's heart if you want to be a brave soldier for God. You have to know the heart of God before creation, His heart during the process of creation, and His grieving heart after the Fall. You have to understand the sorrowful heart with which He has been leading human history toward restoration, and His heart of hope for a new world after restoration is completed. (14-174, 1964.10.03)

14 God's heart, as we in the Unification Church understand, is long, wide and deep. We need to understand God's heart before creation, His heart at the time of creation, and His heart after Adam and Eve fell. We need to understand the huge nail driven into God's heart at Adam and Eve's Fall. We need to understand how deeply God has grieved since the Fall, and how plaintive His heart has been as He walked the path of restoration. We need to understand how brokenhearted our Heavenly Father has been as He sent His own children along the tragic path of death, leading them through a course requiring much endurance in order to restore the world. Guided by God's final central figure, we must ultimately clean up the sinful world and liberate God from His heartfelt pain and sorrow. Only then will God's Will be accomplished. (14-176, 1964.10.03)

15 The history of the providence of restoration shows us that God has been bringing fortune to the world. In the beginning, God created the vast universe and placed Adam and Eve at its center. When God created Adam and Eve, He made

them with all the elements of His creation, and then He bestowed even more upon them. The most important gift that He gave them was heart. Heart is the center of the four-position foundation, and its core is love. Heart is the core and most important base for all beings. (19-075, 1967.12.29)

16 What is the difference between heart and love? We usually think of love as a feeling like floating in the air, and we think of heart as related to the soul. But in fact, heart extends in four directions. Therefore heart, more than love, is central to everything. Heart manifests as the result of having gone through the process of love. Heart is thus the center of the multidimensional world. That is why the Unification Church envisions and strives to create a world of heart more than a world of love. The center of everything is heart, and the family is absolutely necessary for cultivating it. We cultivate the four realms of heart in the family, and they must connect and unite centering on God. This connection and unity expands from the levels of the individual and family to the community, nation and world. Thus restoration cannot be completed without heart, because without it, no one can establish the central position. (19-075, 1967.12.29)

The God of heart

17 The God of heart has been sorrowful throughout six thousand years of history. He felt wronged by the disbelief of our ancestors. Now we should offer prayers that comfort God, who feels so wronged and sorrowful. This is why God is saddened when He faces the attitude of the people of the Second Israel, who are scattered around the world. In this time, God needs a group of people to emerge who can grab Him by the sleeve and say, "Father, is it true that You have come to be so woeful and to feel so wronged in heart?" God will grasp their hands and respond, "Yes, my sons, my daughters!" (010-350, 1960.11.27)

18 The Bible includes the epistles written with symbols and parables that refer to the bridegroom seeking the bride. Why has this symbolic message been so difficult to decipher? It is because it is from the God of heart. Not everyone can comprehend the meaning of the Bible. Only the bride and bridegroom themselves can decipher it. Only those who are ready to attend God wholeheartedly can understand. Those who are not prepared will not grasp it. What is the true meaning of this embedded message? It shows the passage to the door through which the bridegroom enters the heart. Parents' heart for their child remains the same from the time the mother nurses her baby to the time the child has grown old and gray-haired. The heart does not change. (8-305, 1960.02.14)

19 Christians say, "Oh yes! Christ must come again on the clouds." How awesome that would be! If it were true, people like us would not have to suffer. If that were the kind of faith we were supposed to have, our faith would surpass that of any minister or church elder. As for offering devotion, we would offer more than anyone else. But if the Lord were to come on the clouds, what would he do? When we examine Christian history, we see that Christians have focused on spiritual matters, and many willingly gave up their lives for Christ. Because Christianity had no earthly foundation, Christians had to suffer tribulation and death at the hands of sovereigns in many nations. Looking at this alone, we could feel wronged and angry. Nevertheless, if the Lord were to come again spiritually, on the clouds, what would he do? Would he save only the Christians, secreting them away, while abandoning the non-Christians? God is not that kind of being. As in the biblical parable of the prodigal son, God celebrates His prodigal son more than his dutiful first son. Such is God's heart. (021-040, 1968.09.01)

20 Let us understand clearly that although God is the great Lord and King, He has been starved in heart for six thousand years. We have to comfort God. Although God really has felt like destroying this world with one stroke of judgment, He has held on to His purpose, His hope and His desire for the earth. Keeping that in His sights, He has persevered as He suffered again, again and again. This is the God we must call our Father. We must call Him our Father not as a name or title, but because we feel that way about Him in our heart. A new teaching must emerge on this earth that will move people to relate as blood kin, parents, and brothers and sisters on a global scale. As they do, they can learn loyalty to God, creating a bond with God in heart that enables them to act centering on Heaven's heart. This heart is beyond time and space, beyond peoples and nations. Without such a teaching, this world will break apart. (9-075, 1960.04.10)

21 Now human beings have nowhere to go. But we have to face a final showdown, so we cannot just wallow in despair. Now a movement of truth has to arise, inspiring us to advance into a new heaven and earth with the genuine truth. We need a standard bearer who can guide us on this one and only path of life, to clean up our deplorable environment, which we face with hopeless despair, and to pursue the true way. We have been following this or that ideology, looking for the truth. It is only when the complete truth emerges that this world can be united completely. Once we learn this truth, we can and must perfect our character and our heart. (16-253, 1966.06.19)

22 Through heart, we need to understand God throughout history. God was a God of heart when He created all things of creation. We need to understand God's heart

at the time of creation, after the Fall, and during the course of history. You believe in God, but do you understand His heart? You absolutely need to. Next, you have to understand God's hope in each age as well as His heart in each age. In this way you can come to understand God's heart for the future. (16-253, 1966.06.19)

23 We have to feel the sorrowful heart of God. He had to watch Jesus dying on the cross after striving to fulfill his mission with such intense devotion and dedication. Jesus came for the sake of humankind and the universe. He came to dissolve God's sorrow, complete God's Will, and subjugate Satan. But disbelievers hounded Jesus from one corner to another, and in the end he had to carry the cross on Golgotha. Can you imagine Jesus' heart at that time? Yet even when he understood that God's promise and desire, of which he was the center, would be shattered and his life would end on the cross, Jesus did not betray God. He remained loyal and devoted to God to the end. No one believed in Jesus, but he paid no heed to this. He kept moving forward, bonded to Heaven on the path toward his life goal. Ultimately, Jesus' historic life became the path of hope for humankind. (3-174, 1957.10.25)

24 If God feels bitter sorrow toward the fallen world, it is because there are no true parents, true couples or true children. This is God's lamentation. That is why Paul said that human redemption is as adopted children. They are only adopted. So, no matter how good you are, you still are an adopted child. This you need to understand. Then what is God's sorrow? It is that the children of His direct lineage were degraded to be merely adopted children. Thus human history has been a sorrowful course to restore fallen children to the children of God's direct lineage. You can attend God closely only when you grasp His heart. This begins with grasping God's sorrow throughout history. When you love and raise your children, as a parent, you can come to feel God's heart. Also, when you feel true love between husband and wife, you should be able to feel God's original love. Then, your children should feel it through loving you, their parents. We need a teaching of goodness, and when that standard appears on earth, we should embody that standard of goodness. Today, we live according to our relative viewpoints; but based on the true parental heart of love we will be able to stand as subject partners who can become the center of value, the center of life, the center of thought and the center of love. (4-310, 1958.10.05)

God, the True Parent, True Teacher and True Owner

25 God's perfection was to have come through Adam's family, centered on love. That is, human beings perfect God. However, God's love is what perfects human beings. This is the ideal of oneness between God and human beings. A parental

heart is the heart of living for the sake of others. Where their beloved children are concerned, the parents' way of life is to invest everything and forget what they have given. There is a Korean expression that the king, the teacher and the father share the same value. We call this oneness of king, teacher and father the "three great subject partners principle" God is the owner of the three great subject partners principle. In other words, God is the Father of all fathers, Teacher of all teachers and King of all kings. (259-279, 1994.04.10)

26 God is the True Parent of parents, True Teacher of teachers and True King of kings. God is the eternal True Parent, eternal True Teacher and eternal True Owner. To become a child of God, we first have to become a true parent like God. We have to go the way of a true teacher, like God, and then the way of a true owner, like God. This is the three great subject partners principle. God is the ultimate exemplar. (299-114, 1999.02.07)

27 Who is the center of the three great subject partners principle? It is the Parent. You have to become a parent-like teacher and a parent-like king. God is the Parent of parents and King of parents. This means you have to become God-like parents and teachers. This is the three great subject partners principle, which will remain in heaven and on earth to the end. (213-046, 1991.01.13)

28 The three great subject partners principle means that fulfilling any one role leads to fulfilling all three subject partner roles. Since the three great subject partners principle implies that each of the three can be in the position of subject partner, when you are a true parent, it follows that you are also a true teacher and a true owner. Similarly, when you become a true teacher, you also become a true parent and a true owner; and when you become a true owner, you will find that you are a true teacher and a true parent as well. This is inherent in the three great subject partners principle. The three have equal value. God is our True Parent and, at the same time, our True Teacher and True Owner. What kind of teacher is He? He is one who teaches us while caring for us, over and over again. What kind of an owner is He? He does not try to possess everything and make it His. Rather, He gives us everything, even Himself. He tells us, "You will become the owner." If we were to sum this up in one sentence, that sentence would be: "I will give birth to you, raise you and make you an owner." In short, God gives us birth, nurtures us and establishes us as owners. So it begins with God. Having created us, God's intention was to nurture us and elevate us to a position higher than His own, as children who would love on His behalf. As the Owner of the cosmos, His intention was to make us owners. (204-222, 1990.07.11)

29 God's ideal of creation is the ideal of the family. He intended to build His family. In order to form a family, you need to give birth to children, nurture them, and help them establish themselves in life. This is what parents do. God is the same. God is in the position of the True Parent; from this the three great subject partners principle emerges. The first role is to be a true parent, the second is to be a true teacher, and the third is to be a true owner. We should take this as our creed for daily life. (204-045, 1990.06.29)

30 God is the owner of the three great subject partners principle. God is the Parent. We absolutely need our True Parents also to be our True Teachers. In this confusing world, you can find your way in life if you relate to them even as just one of the three great subject partners. They are True Mother and True Father, of course, but if you relate to them as your True Teachers you also will not fail. Even if you meet them as True Owners, you will be able to live and go to the place of eternal life. Why is that so? It is because you are taking a position to live for the sake of others, in accordance with the heavenly law. Since God is like this, I want you to embody the three great subject partners principle. Do so by being the parent, teacher and owner in your own family. Then you will complete everything. Starting from the highest level, God, you manifest everything in your family, where the three perpendicular axes intersect. Then, because unity arises from the origin, everything that belongs to God becomes yours. That is what comes about when you resemble God. This is the teaching of the three great subject partners. (204-050, 1990.06.29)

31 Look at your body and mind. Isn't your original mind to be pitied? It stands in the position of God. It represents all of your ancestors, your forebears. Your original mind represents your teachers as well as your nation's sovereigns. Yet how long have you disrespected and mistreated it? As the center of the universe, your original mind stands in the position of the subject partner of true love as your true parent, true teacher and true owner. It has sacrificed over and over to save you as one person living on this earth. Isn't this so? Though it sacrificed so much, it has not once complained. Yet we drag it around and treat it continually with contempt, presuming it to be dead. Yet whenever you harbor an evil thought, for example, going out in the early morning darkness and stealing something, it comes alive and calls you to your senses, alerting you, "Don't do that, you scoundrel!" Haven't you constantly manipulated your mind? Despite your having done so, it is in the position of your parent, teacher and owner. (209-154, 1990.11.28)

32 In the original homeland we attend God as the King. God is the King of the universe, the nation, the tribe and the family. God is the Teacher of the universe, the nation, the tribe and the family. God is the Parent of the universe, the nation,

the tribe and the family. This is the teaching of the three great subject partners. This principle includes the original essence of love, which is living for the sake of others, and giving love without expecting anything in return. Therefore the three great subject partners themselves represent Heaven. If you could embody the teaching of the three great subject partners, that would be ideal. Yet even if you are unable to embody them all, if you can stand only in the position of a true parent, the teacher will stand on your left and the owner on your right. If you fulfill just one of the three, everything will be all right. Whether you become a true parent, a true teacher or a true owner, if you stand in one of these positions, you will have no problem registering in the kingdom of heaven. Each one of them unites all three. (209-154, 1990.11.28)

33 If human beings had not fallen, within Adam's family God would have become the Parent, Teacher and Owner. He would then have gone beyond that to the tribe, becoming the Parent, Teacher and Owner of the tribe. Then He would have risen to the position of Parent, Teacher and Owner of the nation. What does this perspective teach about a nation's president? The president is the nation's parent, so you should attend your president as your parent and your teacher. The president's actions should embody a standard representing the national spirit and historical tradition. And as teacher and owner, he or she should pass on the system of governance by which to continue managing and leading the nation. That is how governance should expand to the world and to all of heaven and earth. If God governs this way, no one will resist, because God is the origin of our life, our Parent who gave us birth. He is the origin of our knowledge, our Teacher who has given us an environment of freedom throughout history, in which we can live based our own self- realization. As our Owner, He has prepared and provided everything for us and has bequeathed everything to us. This principle is eternal and unchanging in the heavenly realm. This is the teaching of the three great subject partners that we honor. In conclusion, let us be a true parent, true teacher and true owner, as God is. (205-274, 1990.10.01)

Section 2. The God of True Love

1 God is omniscient and omnipotent. He can obtain everything He desires and do everything He wishes. It seems ideal, and that there is nothing God could need. Nonetheless, there is still one thing that He needs: love. Even though He is absolute, even God cannot have love by Himself. This is because love can be had only in a mutual relationship. No matter how all-knowing and all-powerful God is, He cannot possess love on His own. Of course He has love's attributes, but love's

signals and love's stimulation can come only from another person, not from within oneself. Such is love. That is the power of love. (138-246, 1986.01.24)

2 For what purpose did God create us? He created us and established the standard for our perfection based on love. Hence, love is the standard. In other words, becoming a perfect person is based on God's love, not on our ability or level of leadership. Once we become a perfect person centering on God's love, we can unite with God in love, play with Him and enjoy everything together with Him forever. The perfect person, the one who meets the highest standard of God's desire, is the person who is one with God in love. (138-246, 1986.01.24)

God governs by His love

3 True love began from God. Love started from Him, is sustained by Him, and has to return to Him in the end. God is the King of kings. Since God is absolute, His love is eternal. Therefore, if you stand in the position of object partner to that absolute love, you are bound to have eternal life. This is what God intended from the very beginning of creation. It is for this reason that we want to live eternally. It is natural that we have such hope. (224-127, 1991.11.24)

4 You can realize true love only through a mutual base with another person. But true love is not only about husband and wife. Your husband-wife relationship has to be centered on God's ideal of creation. The absolute Owner of true love is God. When you desire to unite with your partner in true love, the true love of the absolute God will abide with you. Thus a true couple moves toward the future world with one hope, cherishing God's true love. Upon this foundation true children can be born, and the family will enjoy prosperity. Our ultimate hope is to transcend the sphere of a couple's life through true love, and form a family in harmony with God's ideal of true love. (294-066, 1998.06.11)

5 If there were no God, living on earth would be no fun. What do you want to see with your eyes? You want to see good things. When you go to a movie, you want to see a good movie, not a bad one. You want it to move you and inspire you. You also want to hear good things; you do not want to hear bad things. Among all good sounds, you want to hear the best. People want to see, hear, smell and touch the best of everything. What is the best thing of all? It is love. Then who is the owner of love? Who is the King of kings of love? It is God, who created heaven and earth. (037-021, 1970.12.22)

6 The omniscient, omnipotent and omnipresent God, the King of wisdom, uses His power to transform the worst things in the human world into the best things. While

doing this, God inevitably finds Himself making absolute demands on people based on love, as appears most fitting to Him. But being such a boss, what should God do? In that position, it seems as if God sometimes uses His power to make things as He likes. But even if He does so, He is making these demands out of love, because He takes this position not for Himself but for others. For this reason, those who live for themselves have nothing to do with God. To have a relationship of love with God, you cannot live for yourself. If you do so, you move far away from God. But if you live for others rather than for yourself, you too may sometimes have to act like a boss. Nevertheless, if you do so for the sake of others, you absolutely will become the owner of love. That is God. Therefore, we can say that in essence, God is the One whose existence as the absolutely unique being is based on love and caring for others. (175-155, 1988.04.16)

7 God is a loving ruler. He is a loving ruler who eternally lives for the sake of others. He is such a God. Therefore, if you want to have a relationship with Him, stay together with Him and enjoy His reign in the realm of love, you too have to assert yourself through a life of loving and caring for others. Otherwise, you are neglecting your relationship with God. (175-157, 1988.04.16)

8 Even the absolute God wants to obey true love absolutely. This view is not to be found in Christian theology. In the history of Christian civilization, people seeking after power caused much bloodshed. They believed that everything could be achieved through power. They also believed that God could do whatever He pleased, but this is wrong. Even the God of absolute power is looking for a place where love can settle, a place where love can be secured. God absolutely adores love. How much does He adore it? He adores it more than He likes exercising His absolute power, more than He likes being omniscient, omnipotent and omnipresent. What does this mean? For the sake of love, God absolutely obeys love, even if He has to abandon everything else. Only then does it all make sense. We say God is the Father of all humankind, don't we? If He is, could He, as the Father, tell His sons and daughters that they must absolutely obey the law of love if He did not live in obedience to it Himself? It is an indispensable root principle that God can teach His children to live in absolute obedience to love only because He Himself does so. He can affirm that they should live that way because He Himself is doing so. (207-261, 1990.11.11)

9 If you ask what is true, I would answer, "absolute love." Even the absolute God must absolutely obey true love. When a man and a woman love each other so much that they cannot live without each other, they can each go beyond their own life. Each can sacrifice his or her life for the sake of the beloved. To become one

with their beloved, they are willing to sacrifice everything, the past, the present and the future. If this is true of love even in this fallen world, how much stronger is perfect love, the love God wanted, in the original world? Life is not the issue. God can deny even His own life for true love. That is the power of true love. If God could do whatever He pleased with love, the world of peace could not come about. By the arbitrary use of His power He could bring about one unified world, but without harmonious giving and receiving between people who love and care for one another, it would not be a world of peace and unity. (289-274, 1998.02.01)

We are born for true love

10 Why did God create all things? It was to have object partners whom He could love. He wanted to create a realm of object partners with whom to share love. He wanted people to be able to live on earth and then return to the original world and dwell in His eternal, original homeland of love. Man was born for woman, and woman was born for man, all because of love. Why do men and women desire love? It is for the sake of God's love. This is the truth. (142-076, 1986.03.01)

11 God is absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal; these are His attributes. Therefore, His love is absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal. If you are seeking the path of love while leading a self-centered life, you will come to a dead end. When a man and a woman love each other with absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal love, God's attributes manifest as absolute love, unique love, unchanging love and eternal love. We are born resembling the eternal God so that we may attain eternal life; hence, we ought to live our lives based on eternal true love. True love is not two, but one; it is unique. But no matter how unique and absolute love is, there would be serious problems if it were changeable. Therefore love also must be eternally unchanging. (400-067, 2002.12.27)

12 The ownership of absolute love, which is one of God's main attributes, develops in an unbroken line from the individual to the family, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos. This is how it develops. Upon achieving this, the ages of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation and world will lead to one extended world of which they will all be a part, connected to the one center, God. If we had grown up naturally as we should have, we would have reached a vertical position centered on the internal attributes of the incorporeal God, which we originally should have possessed. Our center would have been God, the original absolute Owner, whose position is that of the masculine subject partner. This is as it would have been in the world without the Fall. (404-246, 2003.02.05)

13 Adam and Eve are the body of the absolute Creator. They were made to be His body. The substantial world was meant to stimulate Him, but God, being an incorporeal existence, cannot relate to it directly. So God, who was dwelling in the minds of Adam and Eve, hoped that they would grow to maturity. However, while God was waiting for them to mature, Adam and Eve fell. If they had not fallen, their children would have been God's sons and daughters, inheriting His direct lineage. God was to have been the root of our lineage. He was to have been the root of love. But due to the Fall, the root based on God's love was not secured. (141-039, 1986.02.16)

14 After He created our first ancestors, Adam and Eve, what standard did God want to uphold for them? He absolutely did not intend to keep them in a milieu of sorrow, pain and unhappiness. God created Adam and Eve as the base of His work, the nest for His heart and the object partners of His love. God is naturally the God of goodness. Since the God of goodness created this world, He created it to be good. The environment in which Adam and Eve dwelt should also have been good. This was God's purpose and idea at the time of creation. (8-173, 1959.12.13)

15 What was God's attitude when He created Adam and Eve as His object partners of love? It was to invest everything for them and then forget how much He had done. This is the basic spirit behind the origin of the cosmos. However, when Adam and Eve fell they reversed this principle. God sacrificed Himself and invested Himself completely to create them as His second selves and His object partners. He wanted His object partners to be even better than Himself. But human beings, ever since the Fall, are inclined to sacrifice others for their own sake. That is why this fallen world promotes selfish individualism. It brings about destruction, and a hell on earth that has spread worldwide. This is our present world. (254-028, 1994.02.01)

The ideal of creation, which is fulfilled through love

16 God is incorporeal. From the origin, He divides Himself to such an extent that He becomes invisible. That is, since He divides Himself infinitely, He becomes invisible. Then, when these divisions come into union, God is born again, grows up and reaches the zenith. Then how can God perfect Himself? This may be the first time you have heard such a question, but it actually makes sense. God too has to reach perfection. I am not talking about the perfection of knowledge, for God is omniscient. The ideal of creation is not about the perfection of wealth or power, but the perfection of love. (222-316, 1991.11.06)

17 God is the Absolute Being, but He also absolutely needs love. God also exists because of love. He lives for love. Each human being was born to embody the internal quality of one of God's dual characteristics. Adam resembles half of God's character and Eve resembles the other half. Therefore, neither can reach perfection alone. A man cannot reach perfection on his own and a woman cannot reach perfection on her own. A man has to meet a woman, and a woman has to meet a man. (166-206, 1987.06.07)

18 How can human beings reach perfection? There is no way that, on their own, a man can perfect himself or a woman can perfect herself. This is because each is only half complete. They can only be perfected fully through total unity in love. Furthermore, to reach perfection Adam and Eve absolutely need God. They need a vertical relationship with Him. That is, for their perfection Adam and Eve need both vertical and horizontal relationships of love. Otherwise, they cannot engage in the circular and spherical motions of love. For this reason, Adam absolutely needs his horizontal relationship with Eve. By the same token, Eve absolutely needs Adam. (145-321, 1986.06.01)

19 For the sake of love God divided Himself into man and woman. The invisible God, as one united being, cannot experience the stimulation of love. It was to feel this stimulation that He divided Himself into man and woman, manifesting His incorporeal substance into corporeal substance. He manifested His incorporeal internal nature and external form in the substantial realm of corporeal internal nature and external form. These must become one if they are to return stimulation to the realm of incorporeal substance. Since God exists as the incorporeal substantial being, corporeal substantial beings must become one with God through the love of their incorporeal internal nature and external form. So when a man and a woman become substantial object partners by becoming one with each other, they finally become the partners of God's love. (253-255, 1994.01.30)

20 The creation of human beings, God's manifestation in substance, reflects God's own growth. God finds this process interesting and stimulating. Human beings feel the same way. An artist paints with the idea of creating a masterpiece that can express his or her inner attributes fully and substantially. In order to do this, the artist has to wrench the essence and energy from deep inside his or her bone marrow, and invest that into the work. (225-200, 1992.01.20)

Section 3. God Is Our True Parent

1 As God's substantial object partners, a man represents God's yang characteristics and a woman represents God's yin characteristics. The Principle of Creation divides God's characteristics into two genders and then brings them into union again as one body. Through union they come to resemble God's original characteristics. When they are born, a man and a woman each resemble one facet of God's dual characteristics. Accordingly, the union of one man and one woman is the union of God's yang and yin characteristics. In other words, by uniting they become a harmonious being that resembles God. Thus the two people as husband and wife form a union that resembles all facets of God. The man becomes the second self of the True Father by representing God's yang characteristics, and the woman becomes the second self of the True Mother, representing God's yin characteristics. In addition, the man and woman are each an individual representative of God. (9-083, 1960.04.16)

The parent-child relationship is the center of the universe

2 God is the Father of humanity. We are the sons and daughters of God. If God is the first generation, we are the second generation God. The first generation God is plus, and the second generation God is minus. Plus and minus automatically unite as one; that is the Principle of Creation. (275-316, 1996.01.01)

3 What is the center of heaven and earth, and what is the root of the universe? When I entered into a mystical state and prayed to God about this, He told me that it is the relationship between the Father and his sons and daughters, that is, the parent-child relationship. If you think this refers to the relationship between a physical father and mother and their sons and daughters, you do not understand it fully. I am talking about the relationship between God and human beings. (19-160, 1968.01.01)

4 God and human beings have a parent-child relationship. How do we come to this conclusion? When you enter a mystical state in your prayer and ask, "If human beings are the center of the created world, what is the center of the universe?" you will receive a simple answer: "It is the parent-child relationship." You may think that the parent-child relationship here refers to the relationship between your physical mother and father and yourself, that is, a relationship centered on human morals and ethics, but that is not what I am talking about. The parent-child relationship between God and human beings united in heart is multidimensional. It is that point that is the center of the universe. (048-209, 1971.09.19)

5 From the viewpoint of love, we are each the fruit of a mother's love, of a father's love and of God's love. Vertically we are the fruit of God's love; horizontally we are each the fruit of a mother and a father's love. Because we want to follow this love forever and unite with it, we can never betray it. We want to stay and live in that love forever. That is why even though mothers and fathers are fallen, they still want to live with their children forever. (191-230, 1989.06.25)

6 God too has a mind and a body, which are absolutely united in a relationship of subject partner and object partner. Because they are united, God can rest there in peace. God dwells eternally at the place where mind and body are united. They are united centered on true love. God created human beings to be His object partners, united with Him in mind and body. The parent-child relationship is one of lineage. Children inherit every element from their parents. From their father and mother, children inherit their internal nature and external form, which relate as subject and object partners. Taking after their mother and father, children inherit these plus and minus elements. There is nothing else they can inherit. The oneness of God is like the oneness of all the bones that constitute one body. It is from that point that our mind and body become one. After that, we come to need a partner. Man needs woman, woman needs man, and they need their children and family. (266-222, 1995.01.01)

7 God is the Father who represents the mind, and the first ancestors centered on true love, which has nothing to do with the Fall, are the Parents who represent the body. Having uncovered this truth, which had remained hidden throughout history, the Unification Church uses the name "True Parents." In the original view, the ideal of creation was the horizontal True Parents, God's son and daughter. These were to have been Adam and Eve. (177-338, 1988.05.22)

8 God is the God of love. Where is it that God truly loves human beings? It is in the place where people would most wish to be, and God too surely loves that place. That place, where God's heart and the human heart are bonded in unity, is the parent-child relationship. The parent-child relationship is the root of the universe. It is the relationship between the absolute God, who created heaven and earth, and unfallen, original human beings. The place of original value, where we are meant to arrive, is the place where God stands as the Father and we stand as His children. (053-286, 1972.03.04)

9 What is the root of the universe? The beginning is love; the result is a father and son. God created the universe in order to have a relationship of love between parent and child. The root of the universe, therefore, is the parent-child

relationship. Since you are connected to the root of the universe, you need to become a parent and also a son or daughter. (118-290, 1982.06.20)

10 The root of the universe is the parent-child relationship. When we ask our original mind what our life's destiny is, it will no doubt reply that it is to make God our own and to win God's love. Even if parents have ten children, their love for each one is absolute. When all people, with one accord in mind and action, call God, "Father!" the long withheld love of our Father, so deserving of sympathy, will flow forth. When the parental love in the father's heart and mother's heart flows forth from their bone marrow and enters their children, they all feel the beginning point of utmost happiness. We can dwell there; it is the homeland of our heart. (023-129, 1969.05.18)

11 People like what resembles them. Thus, the ideal world should resemble God. How did God create heaven and earth in the beginning? Genesis 1:27 reads: "God created man in His own image; in the image of God He created him; male and female He created them." That God created man and woman in His image means that human beings resemble God. We like what resembles us, and because we resemble Him, God also likes us. God created all things in the universe. Looking at them brings Him happiness because they resemble Him. (26-167, 1969.10.25)

12 God is the Absolute Being; He is omniscient and omnipotent. But whom does God resemble? Since we are created in God's image, God resembles us. God is a personal God and it is in that way that we say He resembles human beings. It is stated that human beings were created in God's image, and certainly the Father God resembles His own children. If God resembles human beings, whom does that mean He resembles? God resembles woman and God resembles man. (070-047, 1974.02.08)

13 Whom do we resemble? We resemble God. From God's vantage point, we resemble God; from our vantage point, God resembles us. In other words, in a father's eyes, his son resembles him; in the son's eyes, his father resembles him. God resembles us, and we resemble God. Whom do we resemble in terms of our desire? Our desire resembles God's desire. Because our desire resembles God's, we desire to own the best. God as the Absolute Being is the highest of all beings, so He does not want to settle for anything inferior. He wants the best. This is also true of our desire. (39-171, 1971.01.10)

14 God is omniscient, omnipotent, omnipresent and eternal. Which point should we resemble? If we resemble Him, what does that mean for us? Since God is

eternal, we should be eternal, and since God is omnipresent, we should be omnipresent. That is why we desire to live anywhere and everywhere in the world. We want to rule the entire world with almighty power. The fact that we desire such things shows that we resemble God. (26-167, 1969.10.25)

15 Consider the relationship between God and human beings, with God as the Father and we as His children. If someone were to say, "Your children are more handsome than you, God," God would not feel bad. If He felt bad upon hearing such words, God would be no better than fallen human beings. This is why love is necessary. (40-343, 1971.02.11)

God is our True Parent

16 God is the vertical True Parent. Our Creator, God, stands in the position of the vertical True Parent based on true love. Yet if God were the owner of vertical love only, His love would touch only a single point. Thus He would ask how He could expand His love horizontally. True Parents, not God Himself, are the ones who give birth to children. True Parents are a couple standing as the parents of horizontal true love. They possess horizontal love at a 90-degree angle to the vertical love of God, the True Parent. You need love from the parents in both positions. One is the Parent who is the Creator. The other is True Parents, whom God created in the position of the body, as His object partners, in pursuit of the ideal. Thus God is the Parent in the position of the mind, and True Parents are the parents in the position of the body. (182-259, 1988.10.23)

17 God is the vertical Father. He is the Parent of vertical true love. Had Adam and Eve grown to maturity and fulfilled God's Will, they would have become the horizontal parents. They would have stood in the position of the parents of horizontal true love. These two sets of parents would meet at a 90-degree angle, the crossroads of love. (183-104, 1988.10.15)

18 God, the Creator, is the vertical Father. Adam and Eve, had they not fallen but reached perfection, would have become the horizontal Parents. If they had become one centered on love and had given birth to children, those children would have resembled their vertical Parent and horizontal Parents. They would have become the embodiments of the love of these Parents, who are true. These children would have represented both God and True Parents. (183-187, 1988.11.01)

19 God is the vertical True Parent of true love. He is the vertical axis. There is only one such position; it is eternal and unchanging. God is in the position of the vertical True Father of true love, the True Parent. Without true love, we have nothing to do

with God. In relation to the True Parent of vertical true love, Adam and Eve are the horizontal Parents of true love. The True Parents' position is that of horizontal Parents of true love. (184-250, 1989.01.01)

20 From the viewpoint of love, God is the vertical Father and the True Parent of vertical love. He is the True Parent who can endow vertical life and vertical lineage. God is the vertical Father who can give us vertical true love, life and lineage. The fruit of that Father is your mind, which stands in the vertical position. That mind is your vertical self. (231-078, 1992.05.31)

21 God is the vertical Parent, and Adam and Eve are the horizontal Parents of true love. Originally, human beings should have been born as descendants of these two united sets of parents, and, without falling, should have inherited their lineage. But Eve, before she was twenty years old and while she was still immature, paired with Satan. According to the Principle, no matter how devout your faith, unless you have a chance to attend true parents on earth there is no way for you to go to the kingdom of heaven. Then who are the True Parents, who have overcome the Fall? God is the True Parent of vertical true love, and the mature Adam and Eve are the Parents of horizontal true love, the horizontal Parents. With what can the vertical Parent and the horizontal Parents be bound as one? With the explosion of love that occurs at the 90-degree angle. Through this explosion, Adam and Eve become heavenly people as they give birth to children to create a family, a tribe, a people, a nation and the world. (185-187, 1989.01.08)

God has to attain His kingship

22 Who in the world is God? People say, "God is absolute. As the Creator, He is the Holy One, while human beings are profane." This is an incorrect understanding, however. If God is absolute and holy, then that which He created according to His ideal should also be holy. Long ago, during their course in the wilderness, the Israelites worshipped the Tabernacle, which contained the Holy Place and the Holy of Holies. Yet, can you compare the Holy of Holies fashioned by human beings with the Holy of Holies and the Holy Place that God created as the original nature of unfallen Adam and Eve? What was the Tabernacle, composed of the Holy of Holies and the Holy Place? It was nothing but a transitory symbol that prefigured the substantial being— the original Temple and the original Holy of Holies. Its symbolism compounded, expanded and elevated the ideal of the one who was to come. It represented the union of Adam and Eve in their ideal restored form. The symbol in and of itself is not holy, but since people revered the Holy Place and the Holy of Holies made by fallen human beings, then how much more should we

revere Adam and Eve, who were made by the absolutely Holy Being? God is at the center of the Holy of Holies, which corresponds to the minds of Adam and Eve, and in the Holy Place, which corresponds to their bodies. Adam was to have become God's body and Eve too was to have become God's body. Adam was to resemble God's masculine nature, and Eve God's feminine nature. The marriage of these two, Adam and Eve, was to have been the ceremony to set up the cosmic kingship, the kingship of love. (143-236, 1986.03.19)

23 Adam and Eve are the bodies of God. Adam becomes the king and Eve the queen of the future, with God as their center. They are one in body with God. This is referred to as origin-division-union. Division occurs from the origin for the sake of love. If you were asked, "Why did the absolute God divide them? Couldn't He just as easily have done whatever He wanted, without dividing them?" what would your answer be? He divided them because, although God created the physical world, He cannot reign over it as an incorporeal being. He therefore needs a form. God's purpose of creation is to acquire a substantial body and substantially become the Parent. Who were the substantial beings to realize this purpose? They were Adam and Eve. Had Adam and Eve reached perfection, God would have entered their minds and they would have attained God- centered kingship. (214-040, 1991.02.01)

24 Why did God create human beings? God did so in order to manage and lead the physical universe. He intended to do so through Adam and Eve, who were to become the substantial lords of the universe. Because God remains without form, even in the spirit world, He cannot reign directly over the universe. Thus, He created human beings in order to assume a physical form and, through that embodiment, become the King who could govern His descendants, His children born into the world. Then, whose face was meant to be the face of that king? It was Adam's face. Once God created a king, He needed a queen. Eve was meant to be that queen. Together they were to become the ancestors of humankind both on earth and in the spirit world. Hence, if the traditions set up during the lifetime of these Parents had extended throughout the world and been bequeathed for thousands of years, there would have been only one kingship, the kingship of the physical world as well as the spirit world. (199-144, 1990.02.16)

25 God is incorporeal. Hence, even when you go to the spirit world you will not be able to see Him. God created Adam out of love. Because the created world has form, God also needs form in order to become the Father. When He assumes physical form and becomes the Father, the incorporeal and the corporeal become one. This represents the unity of the cosmos. I am saying that God created Adam and Eve in order to dwell within their bodies. That is why Adam and Eve were to

resemble God in His external form. When Adam and Eve were enthroned in heaven, God would have dwelt in their hearts as King and Queen and governed the earthly world and the incorporeal world. This is how God's kingdom, the kingdom of love, was to have been established. (143-093, 1986.03.16)

26 God is the King of kings and Parent of parents, so Adam and Eve were to be the prince and princess of God's true love. But due to the Fall, they lost their positions as prince and princess. Further, they lost the right of the eldest son, the right of parents, and the kingship. (222-139, 1991.10.28)

CHAPTER 3 God the Creator

Section 1. God's Work of Creation

1 Heaven and earth did not simply originate from matter, nor did they emerge spontaneously or by chance. God, the Creator, exists. He is the first cause of the cosmos. He is absolute, eternal, unchanging and good. He made all things in the universe according to His purpose of creation, His basic design. God is the origin of heart and emotion, and His purpose is to create joy. However, one cannot feel joy alone. In order for a subject partner to feel joy, an object partner is absolutely necessary. The greatest joy comes from the exchange of love between subject and object partners. (190-320, 1989.06.23)

2 Heaven and earth originated from the Will of the One. Because God, our Heavenly Parent, exists, the created world came into existence. God, the Parent of heaven and earth, is the central Being. That is why God is one with all beings of this world, and why God and I are one, not two. God desires, on one hand, to come down to earth from above along a vertical line, in order to stand at the center. On the other hand, He desires to connect everything on the horizontal plane with that center. (166-202, 1987.06.07)

3 In the beginning, when God created heaven and earth, He had a design for the cosmos, an ideal and a purpose for it. Through it, He wanted His creation to correspond to His own internal standard so that He could relate to it forever. The center of it all was God's heart of love. The origin of the cosmos was God Himself, and it was God's heart that provided the original impulse that set in motion the phenomena of creation. From that heart of love springs the ideal realm where all things come into oneness. (15-045, 1965.02.07)

God's plan for creation

4 Adam and Eve are God's body. They are God's visible body and they are in the position of the visible God. God is the originator of energy; He cannot be seen even in the spirit world. He has no form. Hence, in order to guide and govern the physical world, He has to assume an external, physical form. If, instead of falling, Adam and Eve had reached perfection while living on earth then gone on to the heavenly world, they would have become the visible form of God. The invisible God and visible Adam and Eve would have been one. Then, since Adam and Eve's laughter would have been God's laughter, it would have been the laughter of heaven and earth. God created this world so that He, who is incorporeal, could emerge on earth in substance. In other words, this world was created so that the incorporeal God could emerge as the substantial God. (105-193, 1979.10.21)

5 God is the womb of human beings and the nucleus of all things in the universe. Then why did God, the nucleus of all things, have to create the heavens and the earth? It is because if a nucleus exists alone, it will perish or disintegrate. Consider electricity. No matter how perfect a positive charge is, without a negative charge it will disappear. There are no exceptions to this. If a plus wants to survive, it has to align with the principle that sustains its life. Therefore, through the plan of creation, there will emerge a perfect minus. It is because existence depends upon the interaction between the two. (035-055, 1970.10.03)

6 God, who made all things of creation in heaven and on earth, established His perfect substantial object partners in the external world to reflect His feelings, the inner world of His mind. He did this so that He could fully interact with them. He created human beings as object partners who would take responsibility for this, endowing them with a foundation that would allow them to engage in perfect giving and receiving. That is why, of all His creation, God loves human beings the most, and why they appreciate God the most. They respect God. Therefore, they go in search of God and God comes in search of them. (151-212, 1962.12.15)

7 When we say, "God is the Lord, the Creator who made heaven and earth," we mean that He is the origin and subject partner of all things. Hence, all things of creation are His object partners. An artist who wants to create a masterpiece will first plan it in his or her mind. The artist expects the work to unfold according to plan and that the result will be pleasing. What does it mean to be pleasing? It means that the work of art should be pleasing to the eyes, the ears, the mouth and every cell in the body in a harmonious way. Then it will be pleasing to the mind, which represents the body. Seen in this way, the original standard is unity of the mind and body. Our spirit selves have five spiritual senses; our physical selves have five physical senses. These two should be in perfect harmony. This doesn't happen

simply by enjoying a meal. Harmony between the mind and the body begins with true love. (185-153, 1989.01.08)

8 God is the subject partner who created the universe. Even though God is the subject partner of human beings, and we are His sons and daughters, He follows the principle: "I exist for human beings." Because of this, we can be happy people. There is nothing more we would want. Originally we should have had this status, but we failed to attain it. That is why we hunger to possess the very best thing. The very best thing is God's love. (062-219, 1972.09.25)

9 God created for the sake of those with whom He intended to form a relationship. He invested tremendous energy at the outset, but not for Himself, not for His own pleasure. He invested everything to create partners with whom He could build a relationship. In the pursuit of ideal partners, God invested Himself totally, creating everything in heaven and on earth. (086-116, 1976.03.14)

10 What comes first, existence or life? Philosophy places the question of existence first. It does not deal with life. Then from where does life come? Life does not come from itself; it comes from parents' love. God governs the world of life and the world of love. In fact, life precedes existence, but philosophy deals only with questions that come after existence. It is life that moves all existing things. Then what is the cause that moves life? Love moves life. Because life comes from love, the natural way of life is to seek relationships of love and to attain the outcomes of love. This is the heart that lies behind the creation of heaven and earth. (050-279, 1971.11.08)

11 No matter how great God is, He is lonely if He cannot feel love. He would want to hug even a cat and say, "I did such a good job making this cat. When I made its ears, I felt good. I made its paws like this so it could easily catch mice. It gives me such a good feeling." This good feeling toward everything He made is related to God's inner heart and motivation. (141-026, 1986.02.16)

12 God is still striving to use His power of creation to build a new environment for us. He has that power. However, as long as we are in the fallen realm, it is not possible. It cannot be done unless we meet certain conditions. It is not because God lacks power that He has not done this. When the conditions are ripe, when the arrangements are in place for God to move, then a new history and a new environment can emerge, no matter the time, no matter the age. God has the same power and authority today that He had in the beginning when He created all things. He has possessed that power throughout the course of history; He possesses it

today and He will possess it in the future. He is the eternal Lord of Creation. (147-172, 1986.09.21)

13 When God began the creation, He had His Will, He had an idea, and He had a master plan. Thus, God's original Will went along with a plan to create human beings, and based on that plan He built a world correlative to us. That is why, despite the human Fall, we who live in the realm of God's providence of salvation in this day and age have to stand at the center of His Will, that is, within the realm of His Will and plan. The time has come. That is why God is preparing the conditions by which we can enter the realm of His Will and plan. Over the course of history, numerous religions have emerged with the purpose of pioneering the environment, setting the conditions so that we can enter the realm of His plan. (076-092, 1975.02.01)

God's total investment in the creation

14 When God created heaven and earth, why did He create human beings? As long as God was without a partner, He had no stimulation. He made human beings as His partners, who would allow Him to feel love, life and hope. God did not create human beings as the Bible seems to imply, simply by saying, "Let there be you!" In reality, God put all His life, love and hope on the line to create human beings. We can say in short that God invested everything into the relationship between Himself and human beings. His was an unconditional, total investment. This reveals to us that God's intention is to realize true love. For love, He invested in His counterparts one hundred percent. The process of God investing Himself requires Him to deplete His energy, but because He invests everything totally, the outcome is not depletion. When He invests one hundred percent and completes His work, the counterparts into whom He invested one hundred percent, after they perfect themselves one hundred percent, return to God and infuse their love into Him. They emerge with everything God invested in them coalesced together with their own power of love, their value, and their honor as His partners. Possessing all of this, they stimulate God, and God can finally feel joy. (69-061, 1973.09.10)

15 Parents instinctively invest everything for their children. God is the same. God does not invest Himself for His own sake. He exists not for Himself but for His counterparts. If God were to exist only for Himself, He would not be the God of true love. Love, life and hope are realized when parents sacrifice themselves completely for their children with the desire to be together with them. Accordingly, the true God of true love, true life and true hope wishes to give His true love, true life and

true hope to human beings. He gives these things not to please Himself, but to please those who receive them. (69-062, 1973.09.10)

16 In creating His partners, the true God completely invested Himself to fashion them into the most valuable, ideal and perfect form. This means that once He created Adam and Eve, God lived for their sake, not His own. God moved from the time of living for His own sake to the time of living for the sake of His partners. An ideal being does not live for his or her own sake. An ideal being lives for the sake of others, for the sake of the object partner. This is the core principle of the universe. (69-083, 1973.10.20)

17 The Bible gives the impression that since God is omniscient and omnipotent, He brought everything into being by merely saying, "Let there be heaven" and "Let there be earth." But this is not the case. God invested everything, all the energy He had. By investing the full power of His love, He created all things as offerings and gifts for His beloved sons and daughters who were to come, His beloved future family. (112-307, 1981.04.25)

18 Creation entails the investment of energy. Every artist in the world desires to create the greatest of masterpieces. He or she invests everything, spirit, heart and soul, with the utmost devotion. It is not partial investment, but total investment that gives birth to the perfect masterpiece. Perfection finally comes when the created object needs nothing more. Can you fully love an object of hope that you made while withholding something of yourself, withholding your flesh and blood? It is only when you have given everything, your bones, your flesh, your ideas and everything you possess, that you can bond with what you have created as the object of your hope. That is why I am saying that the beginning of the process of creation itself could have been possible only through investment. There has to be the investment of energy. Nothing can be made without the investment of energy. Committed to the principle that a perfect object partner is created from an infusion of all one's energy, God invested everything He had as the subject partner in order to create His object partner. God's work of creation was the beginning of His movement toward the state of existing not for Himself, but for His object partner. (078-111, 1975.05.06)

19 In order to create all things, God had to pour out His very essence. That is, He invested a great deal of energy. This could have depleted His energy and resulted in God suffering a loss. Yet He created the world with love, to be His object partner, and He devoted Himself to fulfilling this purpose. His investment was not to bear fruit in Himself but rather in His partner. Since God created with love, even though

He fully invested Himself, He did not feel diminished. Rather, He felt satisfied. This became a principle, and this essence of parental love became the tradition. God's total self-investment meant that He was not conscious of Himself as He worked. He was so immersed in pursuing the purpose of His partner that He completely forgot Himself. In the end, God wants to live for the sake of the human beings whom He created. This is the basic principle of creation. (60-086, 1972.08.06)

20 In the world of physics, the input is greater than the output. But in the world of love, the input is less than the output. Because this principle applies on the horizontal plane, the universe exists forever. Consumption depletes everything. But because of its constant motion, the energy of love that is invested without limit is not consumed or depleted; rather it is expanded. Thus, God's existence is perpetuated based on love. The universe maintains its existence eternally through this continuous circular motion. Therefore, from the family to the tribe, from the tribe to the nation, and from the nation to the world, everything expands on the same basis and with the same value. Thus all people in the universe will be in agreement, like unto a single human brain, and we will be able to build the ideal world, the realm of total oneness in unity and peace. (289-098, 1997.12.30)

God created through principle and law

21 God gave Adam and Eve the commandment as a condition of faith, when they were in the position of His object partners. However, from now on, God will seek something more substantial. Therefore, we must unite our minds and bodies in order to embody God. We must become more than someone whom God can relate to as only His object partner. By adhering to the laws of creation, we must become His substantial self. (002-331, 1957.07.28)

22 The Bible describes God's creation of heaven and earth in simple terms, saying that God created heaven and earth through the Word. The impression is that when He spoke the words, "Let there be...", that entity appeared with a snappy "Here I am!" When God said, "Let there be light," the stars appeared. When God said, "Let dry ground appear," the earth simply formed itself. However, please be aware that in this process God maintained the principle of progression, starting with the lowest and simplest things and going on to create higher and more complex things according to an all-encompassing order and law. (65-021, 1972.11.13)

23 In people's lives, true love for the sake of others is the foundation for mutual relationships. We experience this first in the true love of parents. Parents' true love, rooted in God's true love, can perfect individuals. Perfected individuals, who then

become husband and wife and build an ideal family, can bestow true love upon their children. That is the order of creation. The ideal world on earth expands from the perfect individual to a family, society, nation and world of true love. Our present world, however, emerged from a beginning very different from this ideal and expanded according to the results of the Fall. This world is separated from the proper order of true love, the essential dynamic of God's creation. The world today, which ignores the order of God's creation and follows man-made structures, social forms and laws, cannot give rise to ideal individuals, families or nations. (219-009, 1991.08.24)

24 When God created the heavens and the earth, He first made all things and then He created human beings as His object partners. The dynamic of giving and receiving is a basic law, so until you give everything, nothing will return. This is a principle. A husband has to love his wife completely before she will say, "I completely love my husband." Only when she has received his complete love will she begin to give back completely. This is a principle of heaven and earth. Thus, only when you receive completely from your subject partner do you reciprocate completely. If you were to reciprocate before you received completely, what you returned would not be perfect and complete. This is give-and-receive action based on love; it is a law of the universe based on the Principle. (60-232, 1972.08.17)

25 We can see that the process of God's creation follows a principle of three stages. First God has an idea, then He completes that idea in His mind, and finally He manifests that idea. He formed all things of creation through these three stages. Of course, God cannot substantiate His Word in His mind alone. For this, He too had to unite His mind and body. That is how He could finally bring about His creation when He spoke, "Let it be! Let it be created like this!" (60-261, 1972.08.18)

26 God's process of creation began from the concept of creating His counterparts and the motivation to do so. He began with extremely tiny entities. When they were complete, He added a higher motivation and purpose and advanced to larger entities. He continued this process to achieve stages ever more complex, adding new design elements and higher purposes until He came to create human beings. (66-243, 1973.05.15)

27 Based on the principle, God the Creator substantially developed all things from the beginning of creation, throughout history and until now, through a process of growth. He created Adam and Eve to go through the same process. Where did this begin for them? In the same way that tiny cells combine together to form bigger things, a baby is formed through ten months in the womb to emerge as a male or

female child. If this were not the case, we would have no way to explain the logic of the inheritance of life. In other words, the realm of the object partner must correspond to the realm of the subject partner. In Divine Principle terms, there has to be an external form that corresponds to the internal nature. (225-199, 1992.01.20)

28 The internal nature has the innate capacity to unite and communicate with the external form in every fundamental respect. As a result, the birth and growth process of human beings allows the invisible, incorporeal God to see Himself in their substantial forms. Because His every intrinsic aspect is expressed and manifested through them, God cannot help but love them. That is so for each of us. We are God's embodiments, His substance. To transpose invisible substance into visible substance, God has to invest everything. (225-200, 1992.01.20)

God's dwelling and manifestation

29 Where does God want to dwell? If Adam and Eve had not fallen but had grown to perfection, and true love had united them in total oneness, that oneness is where God would have dwelt. On their wedding day, God wanted to meet them at the center of their first love. Where else would God plant His blood, His love and His life? In that love, internal and external, plus and minus would have united in harmony. For that reason, we treasure first love the most. God is the owner of vertical eternal love and the husband is the owner of horizontal eternal love. (347-166, 2001.07.04)

30 God's intention and purpose went beyond perfecting the vertical subject- object relationship with human beings in love. After perfecting vertical love, He wanted Adam and Eve to bear the fruit of their horizontal love. That moment was to be the very moment when the internal Parent, God, and the external parents, Adam and Eve, would achieve the ideal of love in complete union. Then the incorporeal Parent, through the form of Adam and Eve, would have become the eternal Parent in this corporeal world. At that moment Adam and Eve would have become the True Parents and true ancestors of humankind. (135-012, 1985.08.20)

31 When God created heaven and earth, there was no need for restoration. His hope when He created the original world, with human beings at its center, differed fundamentally from the hope He has for the world of today, which is in need of restoration. His genuine hope in creating Adam and Eve, surpassing everything else, was to manifest Himself. In other words, through Adam and Eve, God aspired for the day when His internal attributes would become external substance. God's hope

for restoration is to bring human beings into alignment with this majestic hope He had at the time of creation. (029-292, 1970.03.12)

32 God's purpose in creating the world was to live together with His creation, but today there is no realm in which people, the things of creation, and God can live together. God lost His dwelling place as a result of the Fall. From the day He lost Adam and Eve until today, God has been roaming about looking for His people. Why is this? It is because when we become God's temple and God's body, united with Him as substantial beings representing heaven and earth, our joy will become God's joy, and God will connect His joy to all things through us. It is because we will become the mediators connecting God with all things of creation. (5-140, 1959.01.11)

Section 2. The World God Created

1 In the Bible, Genesis 1:27 states, "God created humankind in His image; in the image of God He created them; male and female He created them" Therefore, we can deduce that male and female exist within God. God is the one subject partner who manifests these two beings as one. Adam and Eve are the ones who were to resemble His dual characteristics. (054-091, 1972.03.20)

God is a harmonious being of dual characteristics

2 God exists as the subject partner with dual characteristics. He manifested His internal masculinity to become substantially visible through Adam as His counterpart, and He manifested His internal femininity substantially through Eve. In other words, human beings represent the investment and substantial embodiment of all that is within God's internal nature. (143-081, 1986.03.16)

3 The Unification Principle defines God as the incorporeal, absolute subject partner, the subject partner with dual characteristics in harmony. As a being with dual characteristics, God created Adam and Eve as His substantial second selves to reflect His characteristics individually. He intended to become the center in the vertical position when they fully matured and became one flesh with each other horizontally through love. What this means is that when Adam and Eve reached full maturity, God's masculinity was to reside in Adam's heart and mind, and His femininity in Eve's heart and mind. This, however, does not mean that God is divided. He is the subject partner of these dual characteristics. He can dwell in the heart and mind of both Adam and Eve. (138-247, 1986.01.24)

4 From where do subject partner and object partner arise? There must be a base for their existence. In the Unification Church we call this base the “dual characteristics.” Human beings themselves do not create the subject and object partners. Energy is always in motion. Yet in order for energy to be in motion, there must be a circuit through which it can flow. Energy cannot continue without a circuit of giving and receiving. For instance, the heart operates within the circulatory system, made up of veins and arteries. All action requires a reciprocal relationship between a subject partner and an object partner. Before energy can exist, there must be a subject partner and an object partner. All subject and object partners must have a base for their existence. (033-036, 1970.08.02)

5 When we look at the cosmos, we see that all beings exist in order to participate in relationships of love. In the mineral world there are plus and minus; in the plant world there are stamen and pistil; in the animal world there are male and female; in the human world there are man and woman, and there are heaven and earth. All of this is because God is a being of dual characteristics, who exists as the harmonious unity of plus and minus within Himself. When God relates to His creation, this harmonious being of dual characteristics takes the masculine position. (400-065, 2002.12.27)

6 Adam and Eve are the fruit, the visible substantial image, of God's internal nature. When they form a union, it becomes the base on which God's internal character and external form are united in substance for the first time. This is where the realm of heart begins. Based on this family realm of heart, the realm of heart opens and expands to the tribal level. Hence, Adam and Eve were to become the representatives of the individual realm of heart, family realm of heart and national realm of heart. The model for all these roles was to have been established in Adam's generation. (316-248, 2000.02.15)

7 Why did God create human beings? In order to answer this, we need to answer the fundamental question of why we were born. God is the subject partner of love. The Divine Principle refers to Him as a harmonious being of dual characteristics, but it does not explain that He is a unified being of love. It should add that He is a unified being of love. (223-268, 1991.11.12)

8 The Unification Principle sets forth that God exists as our subject partner, with dual characteristics in harmony. We base this on undeniable facts drawn from scientific analysis. When subject and object partners are totally united, God's power will be with them eternally. A place where subject partner and object partner do not exist is void of power. Then how does God exist? He exists forever by

the power that is generated by the giving and receiving between the subject partner and object partner positions within Himself. This is how we can explain God's existence logically. (039-168, 1971.01.10)

9 Consider God's dual characteristics. All the ideal elements of His first characteristic, everything that God imagined and planned, are substantiated in each man. When each man reaches maturity according to the ideal of love, then the male realm of the universe reaches maturity. So who can bring this male realm to maturity? It is Adam, who should have become the True Father of humanity. This is something that Adam could have made possible. Likewise, through Eve, the female realm could have come to maturity. Then these two should have become one. For this reason, a man has to relate with a woman, and a woman has to relate with a man. The two have to make a relationship and become one. On this foundation, they should bear children. Only then can God finally dwell on the horizontal plane. (140-316, 1986.02.14)

Adam and Eve as the body of God

10 What was God's-purpose in creating all things? First, since God does not have a physical body, it was to assume a substantial form. Before the Fall, God intended that Adam and Eve become perfect in love and manifest His inner image. That was His ideal for the perfection of Adam and Eve. God needed their forms in order to govern the physical world. Second, God needed a body as a base for multiplication. Once we go to the spirit world, which is the vertical realm, we cannot multiply. In the spirit world we can only connect to a point oriented at ninety degrees based on vertical love, and multiplication is not possible on the perpendicular vertical axis. In order to multiply, a horizontal plane—a substantial space—is required. With the horizontal plane expanding in all directions, love can form a sphere, which creates the vastness of space. Within this sphere, entities can multiply without limit. This includes human beings, who are to multiply while on earth and then transition into the spirit world. In summary, in order to multiply and raise heavenly people, God created the physical Adam and Eve. Third, God wanted His partners of love to propagate forever. Do you think it would be sufficient for God to create Adam and Eve and love only them? His love relationship should not end just with the people of one generation. God needed their forms in order to propagate the object partners of His love through their lineage. (223-024, 1991.11.07)

11 God's purpose in creating human beings was to exercise the dominion of love over both the incorporeal and corporeal worlds, through Adam and Eve. Accordingly, to express Himself as a personal God, He had to have a relationship

with substantial persons, Adam and Eve. Through the perfection of Adam and Eve, God's image, namely His external form, was to have been perfected. Standing at the center of the incorporeal world when He created Adam and Eve, God envisioned that their form, appearance, character, and other attributes would resemble His own. Without possessing an external form within the world, He cannot have a dominion of love. (035-157, 1970.10.13)

12 The incorporeal God does not have a body. Without a body, God cannot govern the spirit world and physical world. In order to manifest Himself, He has to dwell in a body. The ones in whose bodies He would dwell, His representatives, were to have been Adam and Eve. If they had not fallen, God would have manifested Himself in them. Therefore, Adam and Eve were to have been the first good ancestors of humankind and were, at the same time, to have become God, who reigns over heaven and earth. They were to have been God in substance. That is, they had the responsibility to govern the world in the position of the Parents by assuming the image of God who dwells in the eternal incorporeal world. God intended to integrate the spirit world and the physical world according to the form of Adam and Eve. (133-091, 1984.07.10)

13 God has no form. Even when you go to the spirit world, you cannot see God. He has no form, but He needs one. He created all things with form, and therefore to become the Lord and Ruler of all things, He should have a form. That is why God must incarnate in True Parents. Only then can God be the center of both the visible world and the eternal world, and be the Parent, the King and the Owner of Peace. (395-069, 2002.10.16)

14 God is incorporeal and has no visible form. In order to manifest Himself, He needs to assume a form. That is why, in order to govern humankind and all things that have form, God needs to manifest Himself in the form of Adam and Eve. Adam, Eve and God were to be one in the flesh, and God was to be the mind of Adam and Eve. Had God and Adam become one, and had God and Eve become one, then once Adam and Eve became husband and wife their marriage would have been one with God internally and externally. When, by loving each other, Adam and Eve gave birth to children, those children would have been connected to God's direct lineage. Love would have bound them together. The reason God created this world is because He wanted to experience such love. God created in order to love. (090-195, 1977.01.01)

15 Adam and Eve are God's body as well as God's object partners of love. You cannot love by yourself. Even the Absolute Being cannot experience love alone.

Therefore God's purpose in creating the world was to prepare the realm of His beloved object partners. The world of creation is the museum of love and the garden of love. (138-133, 1986.01.19)

16 What good would it be for the incorporeal God to remain apart from His creation? For God to remain invisible is of no use to Him. To be the Parent of human beings, God should be able to feel with a body as human beings do. For the purpose of assuming a body, it was necessary for God to create Adam and Eve as beings of dual structure, of mind and body. Why was this? In order to be the same as the incorporeal God, they had to be able to achieve mind and body unity during the course of their life on earth, before departing for the other world. Without having done so, when they appeared in the spirit world, they would not be able to unite with God as His image. God created Adam and Eve with dual structures so that they could attain parenthood and substantial kingship in the physical world, and then become one with God, the incorporeal Parent, and manifest substantial kingship in the eternal heavenly world. In short, God created Adam and Eve so that through them He could take physical form. (133-092, 1984.07.10)

Human beings were created as the temples of God

17 Even though God is God, He has no way of relating to the world other than through Adam and Eve. God's relationship with Adam and Eve serves as a base for Him to relate to their sons and daughters. This relationship forms naturally. God's purpose in creating human beings was to assume a form, and also to place them in a position where they could stand together with Him, as the Parents. Therefore, Adam and Eve were to be the external God. God made Adam and Eve male and female to represent His dual characteristics of masculinity and femininity. Thereby they would become His temples, and he would enter and dwell within them. Adam and Eve can act in an ideal way only when God comes, dwells within them and guides their actions. If God does not act within them, they know nothing of His Will. And without them, God has no foundation on which to form a relationship with human beings. (133-093, 1984.07.10)

18 Since God is incorporeal, He can go anywhere, through anything. There is no place He does not go. He penetrates everything. Where does God live? God's home is in the core of our hearts. God's masculine nature dwells in a man's heart and God's feminine nature dwells in a woman's heart. Thus Adam and Eve, the original human ancestors, were to be the visible God. That is why whatever Adam called each creature became its name. Whatever Adam wanted to do, all things cooperated with him. (128-326, 1983.10.02)

19 Had Adam and Eve not fallen, God would have dwelt in their hearts. Adam and Eve would have been a couple externally and God in Adam and God in Eve would have been a couple internally. When children were born through their bodies, bodies united completely with God inside and out, whose children would they be? They would have been the children of the external God and at the same time the children of the internal God. First Corinthians 3:16 says, "Do you not know that you are God's temple and that God's Spirit dwells in you?" We human beings are God's temples; it means that God's Holy Spirit dwells in us. When we are in this position, God is our direct Father. The fact that we are not like this is a result of the Fall. (41-032, 1971.02.12)

20 The human body is God's holy temple. It is Gods dwelling place. You will know this when you enter a mystical state, call out, "God!" and He replies, "Here I am" from within you. When you ask in this way, the answer comes not from the sky but from your heart. Originally, had Adam and Eve not fallen, God would have dwelt deep in the core of their hearts and guided them. That is why the Bible says, "Whatever the man called each living creature, that was its name." (Gen. 2:19) (211-147, 1990.12.30)

21 Adam is the substantial body of God. God said our bodies are His holy temples. God is the invisible Father dwelling in Adam's heart. These two fathers become one; they are united into one. Adam's original nature was to have been the meeting point of the incorporeal world and the corporeal world. That standard of original nature has nothing to do with money or greed. As he entered into manhood, all of Adam's cells would have mobilized and his senses would have intensified and served as an antenna. Then God would have settled and dwelt in that place. God would have entered Adam's heart as the internal Father, and with Adam as the external father, the incorporeal and corporeal worlds would have entered into a harmonious union based on that one individual. Then, when such a man met a woman who was likewise God's substantial body, and entered into union with her in the horizontal world, the spherical motion of love would have occurred. (120-090, 1982.10.03)

The relationship between the Creator and His creation

22 Human beings resemble God. Since God is the absolute subject partner, He can become one with His absolute object partners through love. That is why God, the subject partner of harmony between subject and object partners, created human beings, Adam and Eve. Nothing is forbidden within the power of absolute omnipotent love. God also gave human beings the power of creation that He

exercised when He created Adam and Eve. Since we receive the power of creation from God, we too are in the position to create our own sons and daughters. When all is said and done, just like God, human beings can stand in the position of creating human beings. (057-113, 1972.05.29)

23 God is omnipresent, and we aspire to imitate His omnipresence. God is omniscient and omnipotent, and we also want to be omniscient and omnipotent. God is unique, and we also desire to be unique. This is our resemblance to Him. Then, what is the point of resemblance over which God rejoices the most? More than omnipresence, omnipotence or uniqueness, He is most joyful when we resemble Him in love. Love is where we most resemble God. Thus, although we may lose everything, if we resemble His love, everything will follow us wherever we go. (26-168, 1969.10.25)

24 We did not know that everything that exists around us, in heaven and on earth, exists as one body in God's love. If you enter into a mystical state, you will recognize that the principle of the universe is contained within a single grain of sand. You will see even within a single atom the endless and inexhaustible harmonies of the universe. Although we may not understand it well, we can never deny that all existence results from a complex of forces. Within molecules there are atoms, and within atoms there are elementary particles. Yet even these entities are not without consciousness. Each exists with a specific consciousness and purpose. We thus can state that all existing beings have come about through God's loving hand and are surely tied to God's heart. (9-168, 1960.05.08)

25 All things in heaven and on earth resemble God. All the things of creation symbolize God, whereas human beings are made in the image of God. God is the reality. Based on this reality, human beings should resemble Him in image while all things of creation should resemble Him in symbol. Since God is the Creator of all things, that is how it should be. Based on His law, God is omniscient, omnipotent and omnipresent, and exists in eternal love. (26-167, 1969.10.25)

Section 3. God Created with Love

1 What is the foundation of God's existence? Is it His omniscience? Is it His omnipotence, or His absolute authority? If He were alone, what would be the point of absolute authority? The important question is, what is God's essence? It is love. It is not love that seeks to be served, but love that seeks to serve. (218-264, 1991.08.19)

2 As an omniscient, omnipotent and omnipresent being, there is nothing God wants to keep for Himself. He lacks nothing and has everything, but if there were one thing He valued most and took the most pride in, what would it be? It would be love. God does not need anything except love. Love is the only thing He needs. (108-225, 1980.10.16)

What God needs absolutely

3 What is it that God likes the most? What do human beings like the most? The answer is true love. No one can dispute that. It is written in the Bible: "For God so loved the world that he gave his only begotten Son, that everyone who believes in him should not perish but have eternal life." (John 3:16) So what does God like the most? It is love. God's wish was and is to bind together all humanity as brothers and sisters and have them become sons and daughters of filial piety, who are fully devoted to Him. That is why in the Bible, the first commandment that we as human beings should follow is "You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind." (Matt. 22:37) Again, what does God like the most? It is not money, knowledge or power. It is love. The first commandment is to love God with all your heart and soul and mind, and with all your strength. The second commandment is to love your neighbor as yourself. (143-065, 1986.03.15)

4 Even God the Creator, who is the Lord and Ruler of all things in heaven and on earth, absolutely needs love. He absolutely needs true love, and when He has it, He will not give it up for the whole universe. But where can He find this love? God cannot find it in Himself. Even if He possesses it in His heart, as long as He is a solitary being He cannot find it. Then, where does love come from? It does not come from oneself, but from one's partner. If we have no partner we cannot find love. In order to find love, we need to live for the sake of our partner. Without living for the sake of others there is no way to find the path of love. (141-251, 1986.02.26)

5 To find the greatest joy, what does God need to do? He does not want money, knowledge or power. He never lacks for these because He is omnipotent and has the power of creation. Nonetheless, even He needs one thing; but one thing only. That is love. He needs love, but He cannot have love by Himself. To have love, He needs a partner. On this basis, we can conclude that God created the universe because of love. (229-269, 1992.04.13)

The reason God created the world

6 Why did God create? Even God needs love; that is why He created. God created the heavens and the earth because of love. He needed partners of love, so He created in order to have partners of love. That is also why He does not demand that others serve Him absolutely, and why He does not seek love for His own sake. God wants His partners to surpass Him. If He has one thousand percent, He fully invests that one thousand percent in His partners. Love's original nature and quality is to want one's partner to exceed oneself. (201-115, 1990.03.27)

7 God created human beings because He needed others to love as His object partners. You cannot love by yourself. Love cannot come into existence without the realm of the object partner. Even God absolutely needs love. That is the reason He created all things of creation, and then created human beings as their lords who represent them. Because God absolutely needs human beings, He attributed to them the value of His object partners with the absolute rights of love. He created human beings as His object partners in order to share love with them. Hence, human beings are the very bodies of God. (138-212, 1986.01.21)

8 Why did God create Adam and Eve? God is an incorporeal being, so unless He becomes the Parent in substantial form, He cannot directly love His children. Hence, He created them so He could have a form. Thus, the incorporeal God's purpose in creating Adam and Eve was, first, to assume a form. Second, by assuming a form, He could experience jolts and vibrations. For instance, lyrics alone are not sufficient to make music. Along with lyrics, there should be melody and there should also be rhythm. God wanted to enjoy the stimulation of such sensations. Third, since God is the vertical Father on the central axis, He occupies no space. If God looks at Himself, He sees that He occupies just one point, on an axis. He needs space for multiplication. So, why does He need a body? It is because for reproduction to occur He needs space; He needs to see extension in all directions, through 360 degrees. (232-210, 1992.07.06)

9 God exists as the origin of true love. But in order to experience love, even God needs a partner. Love is an experience and a joy that is possible only through the relationship between subject partner and object partner, that is, through a partnership. No one can ever feel love by himself or herself in isolation. God's motive for creating was to realize true love through object partners of true love. God created human beings as object partners who can have love relationships freely with Him. He created us as His partners for total love. Hence, we human beings are God's sons and daughters and God, the Creator, is our True Parent. God hoped that Adam and Eve would remain pure and grow up to become true persons based on true love. (279-205, 1996.08.20)

10 God is the Absolute Being. Then, what did He lack that led Him to create human beings? He is the all-knowing, almighty God. He does not lack for gold or knowledge; in fact, there is nothing that He does not possess. Nevertheless, He created human beings, and for what? What was His fundamental motivation for creating them? God had power, knowledge and money, but He did not have a partner for love. Even God cannot realize love alone. Thus, the fundamental motivation behind the creation of the heavens and the earth was love. (149-150, 1986.11.21)

11 Why did God create heaven and earth? What did the almighty Absolute Being lack, such that He needed to create human beings? He created them because of love. Love cannot arise without a partner. Love activated without a partner only suffers loss. Everything is made to protect itself; nothing moves if all that can be expected is loss. Nevertheless, once a partner of love appears, a previously hidden love springs forth. Love is the primary essence within God. Nonetheless, if God, who is in a masculine position, is alone, His love cannot manifest. Human beings are the partners who enable God to manifest His love. (60-076, 1972.08.06)

12 God created human beings in order to realize love. However, God cannot realize love by Himself; He can do it only with partners. Without a partner, love is not to be found. Therefore, in order for God to attain the most precious thing, He needs a partner. Accordingly, God seeks partners in order to realize absolute love through them. Therefore, we can say that God exists for love. That is the reason love is so amazing. God exists for human beings, and human beings exist for God. That is why true love begins from the point where one lives for the sake of others. (143-310, 1986.03.21)

13 From what were human beings born? We began from God's love; we were born because of love. Love is the origin. Human beings inherited life, but life is not precious in and of itself. We treasure life because it arose from God's ideal of love. Therefore, love precedes life. That is, our life has its root in love. That is why we are meant to be born in love, grow up in love and find our partner of love. (143-310, 1986.03.21)

Creation for the purpose of joy and love

14 God is an absolute and unique being. But no matter how high He is, as long as He is alone, He can have no joy and no fun. Living alone can never be joyful or fun. Consider, for example, a legal scholar without parallel in the entire world, or a man who possesses the power and authority to control the world with his every word.

Even in such positions, people are not happy if they are by themselves. They have nothing to feel joyful about. (039-224, 1971.01.15)

15 Why did God create heaven and earth? "I want a man like me and a woman like me, with substantial forms, so I can watch them running about. It is fun to watch them, and that is why I created them." Do you like Him saying this? Or, "Watching the two run about is good, but more than that, I want to see them embrace each other and frolic together." Which one do you prefer? After all is said and done, God wanted to see men and women loving each other. Do you think that God would rather see men and women competing against each other or loving each other? He wants to see them love each other. From the beginning, love was the original motivation behind the creation of the universe. Therefore, it is perfectly logical to conclude that God will show Himself to this created world as the original being of love. (086-082, 1976.03.07)

16 God is absolute and unique in Himself, so why did He create the universe? Even though He is the being of absolute love, life and ideal, He cannot fulfill any of these by Himself. No matter how great, God cannot realize His love and ideal by Himself. Hence, He created the universe to realize that love and ideal. Again, why did God create human beings? It was to experience joy and happiness. He cannot experience joy and happiness on His own. If He were alone, He would not find joy or happiness in anything. He created so that He could have a relationship with His object partners. (070-069, 1974.02.08)

17 Why did God create heaven and earth? Why did He create Adam and Eve? It was to experience joy. It was for Him to be happy. He wanted to enter into Adam and become the incorporeal Father, and to make Adam the corporeal father. Therefore, Adam had to become God with a substantial form. It was the same for Eve. Why does God need a substantial form? God needs it because without a form He cannot directly govern the substantial world that He created. That is why, as God, He needs to assume a substantial, form. Thus, God created Adam and Eve to become His substantial forms. So Adam and Eve must become one in body with God. (19-159, 1968.01.01)

18 Just because the things of creation were made by the Absolute Being, they are not automatically endowed with absolute value. They only attain that by becoming God's inseparable partners. As human beings, we must recover the absolute position of His partners by centering on the Absolute Being. The fact that the one and only Absolute Being created us human beings as His partners means that our

position too should be absolute. The Absolute Being cannot experience joy alone. This is because joy cannot be realized on one's own. (038-152, 1971.01.03)

19 In order to create human beings, God first created all other things along the way. From the first day through the fifth day of creation, when God looked at all the things He had created, He felt boundless excitement, hope and immeasurable joy. Then He created Adam and Eve, our first ancestors, as the lords of all creation. He blessed them with a heart of infinite joy, saying, "Be fruitful, multiply and fill the earth" (Gen. 1:28) These words of blessing, to be fruitful, multiply and fill the earth, mean that God created human beings for the purpose of joy. Furthermore, God blessed human beings to fulfill this purpose. (5-090, 1959.01.03)

CHAPTER 4 The God Who Needs Liberation

Section 1. God's Sorrow and the Providence of Restoration

1 God, who created all things, poured His utmost love into the creation of human beings. God invested his sincere heart into the creation of human beings, more than anything else He had created in the preceding five days, so that they would manifest His glory and His hope. He wanted human beings to grow up and fulfill His hope, to sing with joy and establish a peaceful family with whom He could dwell. Prior to the Fall, God was delighted with the original Adam and Eve, His creations. God watched them grow with a heart of sincere anticipation, waiting for the time when His great hope would come to glorious fruition in them. As He surveyed His creation, God thought, "I am pleased with all the things I made for you, Adam and Eve. Yet, I am even more pleased to look at you, who will govern all these things." Such were the heart and mind of their Heavenly Parent for Adam and Eve. They were indeed the central beings. God placed His cherished hope in them, for they were to be the foundation of His happiness. Moreover, they were essential to the whole created world. They should never have experienced the Fall; they should not have known even one day of sorrow. Yet one day Adam and Eve made a tragic mistake and the word "Fall" appeared. At that moment the word "sorrow" also came to exist, and a dark force invaded the world for which God had had such hope. This is truly something to lament and regret. (154-253, 1964.10.03)

2 Since it was our first ancestors who committed the Fall, it was natural that they would suffer sorrow. But the Fall brought sorrow even to God, who had created them with such great hope. That is, when human beings fell into sorrow, they wronged God and brought Him to a miserable and painful state. This should never have happened on the earth; it should never have occurred under the sun.

Nevertheless, the mistake of our first ancestors led to the unimaginable incident that we call the Fall. (154-254, 1964.10.03)

Why is God the God of sorrow?

3 God's ideal of creation should have brought Him boundless joy and delight in the garden of love, based on His love and truth. But God's joy was frustrated as a result of the Fall of Adam and Eve, and He has had to toil in history for thousands of years. You need to experience the sorrowful heart of God, who suffers to this day even as He fights Satan in order to fulfill the ideal of creation, which Adam and Eve did not fulfill due to the Fall. You must also experience God's intense grief at the loss of Adam and Eve, when they betrayed Him and fell. Unless you first understand what God's love is all about and experience how much God loves human beings, you can never fathom the depth of His sorrow upon losing them. (003-168, 1957.10.25)

4 God was supposed to have emerged as a glorious being. Our joy should have been God's joy, and God's joy should have been our joy; this would have been the ideal of creation. But due to the Fall that ideal was lost, and God ended up miserable. The God who appears to us is not the God of glory. He is incomparably more wretched and deserving of pity than anyone in all of history. God originally should have been the God of glory, but since the day of the Fall His situation has been the opposite. God should have been able to entrust everything to human beings, and we should have been able to entrust everything to God; but this sort of open relationship with God became impossible. How deeply painful it is for parents if their children see them in deep misery. Accordingly, God does not want to reveal His painful heart and situation to His children. Though He is toiling endlessly, He does not want to show His sad face. (11-281, 1962.01.03)

5 To this day, we human beings have thought of God as the God of glory, not the God of suffering or pain. Many religions in history have taught this, and believers have led their lives of faith with this idea. But the truth is that God is in the situation where He has lost His family, His children, His property, His nation and His world. Our Father is in that kind of situation. We have thought that once we meet our Father, all our pain and suffering will be dissolved and all our wishes fulfilled. However, when I came to meet our Heavenly Parent after seeking Him for so long, I discovered that everything He owns—His children, His property, even the whole world—was in the hands of the enemy. (030-011, 1970.03.14)

6 You must become filial sons and daughters who can attend the God who has suffered in sorrow throughout history, who can comfort Him, and offer Him joy and

glory. Even now, God laments in disappointment. Hence, you must reach the point where you can welcome the day of God's victory; and not only you but all humankind with you. To comfort God's heart of bitter sorrow, you must attend Him, beyond your own people and beyond the world, to advance with the full authority of the cosmos. You need to devote yourselves to becoming children of God whom God wants to bless rather than judge. You have to become a group of people who can endure. No matter what cruel situations or adverse circumstances you suffer, you should be able to say, "Even if no one else remains, I will survive." Only with this kind of heart can you connect your life to God. If you have this kind of relationship with God, even though strong winds and mighty storms may come against you, nothing can destroy that bond of heart, which holds the power of life. (16-256, 1966.06.19)

7 God is not seated upon a throne, receiving praise and glory. Instead, God is weeping bitterly every day as He works to save fallen human beings. This has long been God's situation, even as He guides humankind God is in such pain as He tries to save people from the pit of misery into which they have fallen, to awaken them, shouting, "Come! Come to Me!" But even though God does all that, He cannot force people to come to Him. We must fulfill our portion of responsibility. God cannot do our part for us, though He may want to. How difficult this is for God! (20-222, 1968.06.09)

8 God is the Lord of sorrow and the Lord of pain. Our Father, whom we are supposed to attend, wants to experience joy and glory, yet He has never had the chance. God is in bitter sorrow due to the Fall, yet He carries still more grief and suffering. We think that heaven is a garden of happiness, but in reality that is not the case. I have thoroughly searched in every corner, looking for anything to rejoice over, but I could not find anything. God is supposed to have the power and authority to rule the world; He is supposed to experience glory and honor, and to sing in happiness. Yet the elements of joy, glory and goodness are all gone, while all that remains are sorrow and pain. This is God's lament. In heaven and on earth, there is no greater suffering than this. (007-118, 1959.07.26)

9 God is the most sorrowful being. He is more sorrowful than a son who weeps in front of his dying mother. He has been treated more unjustly than a person wrongfully sentenced to death as a traitor to his people when they should have recognized him as a champion of goodness. God is the Lord who holds the title as the most wronged and most miserable. Religions should be teaching this to the point that people's hearts are deeply moved. God does not wear a robe of glory; His robe is soaked in blood and sweat. That robe was made by the bloody hands of

sons and daughters who desperately tried to hold onto Him but could not. God's feet are scarred from walking the thorny paths of His children's struggles throughout history. When individuals sought Him and fell down on the way, God took the blows on their behalf. He chose one people even as other peoples fell away, but when even that people betrayed Him, He allowed Himself to be struck on their behalf in order to continue the fight. The God in whom we have believed is, in fact, a being deserving of sympathy. (151-126, 1962.10.28)

The God who deserves sympathy

10 God exists in a state of confinement. He has been living with a painful heart as the Parent who long ago lost His only children, His son and daughter Adam and Eve. He is the God of bitter sorrow. He has been endlessly shedding tears, beating His chest. God, while following after human beings, has experienced countless deaths. He has endured this over and over again, even to this day. There are so many nails driven into His heart that they could cover the whole world. Nowhere in the world can there be found a sorrow as profound as His. (297-017, 1998.11.15)

11 God is the Lord of the world, but He has never been able to wield His authority as the Lord. He is the subject partner of love, but He has never been able say to us, "I love you." Even though He is in the position to own everything, He cannot say to us, "You are mine," and hold us as He wishes. Among the countless human beings on earth, God never had His own son or daughter, not even one brave soldier who could totally defeat Satan. Even though there are countless Christians on earth who believe in Jesus, among them God has not had even one commander-in-chief who could order a total offensive against Satan. God tried to relate to the earth by having Jesus give orders to the angelic world, but this did not succeed. God also gave a vision for the ideal of the bride to the people on earth and searched everywhere for her. Yet He never met even one such woman whom He could proudly present before Satan. Indeed, as a group of people, we ought to feel deeply repentant before God. (7-068, 1959.07.12)

12 God is a being who truly deserves sympathy. God is in the difficult position of having to embrace sinful human beings and call them His beloved ones. God comes to the world where His sinful children are living, only to be mistreated—torn, wounded and cornered. He weeps bitterly; His heart is scarred and broken in pieces. His heart was in pain and desperation each time He raised up a people only to have them fall away. (8-283, 1960.02.07)

13 God carries bitter sorrow in His heart because of the Fall. The twists and turns in God's story of relating with human beings are beyond description. He is out of breath, running after people and trying to save them. How miserable God is! Even a beggar on earth is better off. For God, this is what it has come to. If God could simply sit on a throne and order everyone in heaven and on earth to do as He wished, why then has He struggled to deal with sinful humankind for the past six thousand years? Truly, God is the being most deserving of sympathy. He is the Lord of all, and our Father, yet He could never assume those roles. Nothing could be more frustrating. Although God created everything, He could not do as He pleased with His creation. He could never call us His sons and daughters even though we were created as such. God has led His providence for six thousand years in order to break down these walls. (10-134, 1960.09.18)

14 Of the beings in this world, none is more deserving of sympathy than God. God has labored harder than anyone; He is the King of hard work. From the moment God created human beings He had to relate with them, even if He did not want to face them. God could not avoid this destiny, because He is their Father. Throughout history God has struggled to relate with human beings. For six thousand years He has been unable to separate from them, even for one second. At the same time, God has to relate to people who believe that He destined them to a life of screaming and moaning. How miserable does that make God? (43-334, 1971.05.02)

15 God has been the God of sorrow throughout history, in every age. God was sorrowful in the past and remains so in the present. Those who do not recognize and respond to our grieving God will face judgment. If you truly love God, how can you ask Him to take away your pain and sorrow? God has taken responsibility for all the pain and sorrow throughout history, and we should feel indebted and grateful that He has done so. Yet without recognizing this fact, we bring our own pain and sadness to God. For this, we are bound to face judgment. God will recognize the person who weeps alone over his or her own sorrow, unable to pray to God about such personal pain, knowing that God has already endured so much pain and sorrow through all the ages of history. We must be the sons and daughters who can say, "God, Your pain is so great compared to mine! I will manage my own situation. Please let me do Your work, even if I have to face death." If you constantly ask God for blessings, you will not be able to raise your head before God. You should recognize how sinful that attitude is. The more deeply you go into the realm of God's love, which is full of grace, the more you will realize that you are a sinner who cannot lift your head in front of God. (7-281, 1959.09.27)

16 God, the eternal being, sheds tears for us. His tears are to eliminate the way of death, the way of pain and the way of sorrow. God sheds tears to eliminate all of these paths. We need to understand that God is shedding blood, sweat and tears for us to eliminate the ways of sorrow, pain and death. Then, it is only right that we take His Will upon our shoulders so that He does not have to keep going to the point of death on our behalf. Thus far, God has placed our ancestors in positions where they had to shed tears, shed their blood and sweat, and confront death. It was not because God had no love that He did this; He did so in order to ultimately eliminate such situations. Yet God Himself experienced much greater suffering than they. How painful it is for a father and mother to see the death of their beloved child! How their heart is grieved to watch their child suffer! It is more painful than if they were to die themselves. With such a painful heart, God has been suffering throughout human history. We may have to endure path, but it is just within our one generation; then we are done with our responsibility. But God had to endure that kind of indescribable pain every time our ancestors went the way of death, the way of tears, the way of blood and sweat, and the way of sorrow and suffering. (14-244, 1965.01.01)

The Parent whose position was usurped

17 God's original position was as our True Parent. Yet something occurred that had nothing to do with the original ideal of creation, and His position as the True Parent was usurped. Although God is the Creator, He was unable to intervene and prevent this from happening. Nevertheless, He has been taking responsibility to deal with it ever since. (240-164, 1992.12.13)

18 God's enemy deprived Him of His throne. Unable to become the God of glory, He was left to preside over a history of sorrow. Although God most certainly is the King of His kingdom and King of the universe, He has been treated with contempt, as if He were dead. Meanwhile, all His beloved children were violated and the planet Earth became the enemy's playground. (105-199, 1979.10.21)

19 As a result of the Fall, God became the Parent who lost His children. Is there any father or mother who delights in his or her own glory while their children are in prison? It is the same for God; it fills Him with endless pain. Further, God created everything in the universe for human beings, but as a result of the Fall, God had to hand his children over to Satan's authority. From the moment He lost His beloved object partners, God, the Lord of true love, became infinitely lonely. Moreover, God could not exercise His authority as the Lord of all things, not even once. Even fallen people can boast, but God has never had the chance to demonstrate His full

authority and stature as the Creator. Even though He is the Lord of all living things, God could not assume His majesty in front of them, not even once. (343-197, 2001.01.29)

20 What was lost as a result of the Fall? First, the ideal world of true love was lost. Second, the ideal family of true love was lost; in particular, the husband and wife of true love were lost. Third, their sons and daughters of true love, the first grandchildren of God, were lost. These are God's three kinds of sorrow. (349-013, 2001.07.13)

21 God's era, in which He hoped to complete His Will, disappeared without a trace because of the Fall. The Fall brought fundamental destruction to the place where He had created all things in hope. Everything that He had planned, the realm of His ideal object partners of eternal love, was violated and destroyed at the root. How sorrowful God must have been when Adam and Eve committed the Fall and disappeared from His presence. They were to have been God's ideal partners, embodying God's pure original love. How bitter God's grief must have been over losing them. (127-019, 1983.05.01)

22 Christians say that God is the glorious judge who consigns people to hell or to the kingdom of heaven. Yet in fact God is the most miserable being in the world. When the Fall turned the brilliance of heaven and earth into the darkness of hell, God went through the most unimaginable and bitter pain. It was as though God Himself plummeted into hell. Yet when He opened His eyes, came back to consciousness and regained His composure, He became intent on recovering His children who had died. (232-114, 1992.07.03)

23 God and human beings should be together for eternity. Can we imagine God's pain and indignation when the first human beings separated from Him? Can we comprehend His bitterness and sorrow? They should have grown to maturity while building a foundation of love for God that they would not have exchanged even for the entire universe. This would have established a single axis, so that vertical and horizontal could meet on a level plane. Had the first human beings done this, they would have become the standard of love for all existing beings and for all things of creation in heaven and on earth. Then, any being that connected to their love would have been able to reach that standard. (149-240, 1986.11.23)

24 God wants His partners of love to be better than Himself. His beloved partners are none other than us, human beings. Nonetheless, we lost that privileged value and instead came to struggle throughout our lives. How miserable God must feel

when He looks at us! He thinks, "They were meant to be My direct children, inheriting My love, My life and My lineage. But now they are struggling as victims who moan and lament in pain and wander in despair until the end of their lives." How miserable God must feel, looking down at this. He is such a sorrowful God. (211-209, 1990.12.30)

25 When you are comforted by someone who has more reason to be upset than you, you can find some consolation in that. However, God has no one to comfort Him, because He has more grievances than anyone in the world. God is the alpha and the omega. A knot of bitterness remains in the depths of His heart. How can He resolve it? This has been God's deep, inner anguish. Under these circumstances God has carried out the providence of restoration to this day. The spirit world transcends time and space; hence, even the sorrow of six thousand years ago can persist forever throughout the realms formed by the ages of history. If you have ever experienced the joy of devoting yourself as a true offering, you will never forget that experience for the rest of your life. With the passage of time, more and more people will recognize and respect you for your offering. The breadth and depth of your offering will increase, and you will be ever more deeply connected with the infinite Origin. When you have such mystical experiences, you will recognize that God's sorrow has not been merely momentary, but has continued up to the present day. (29-294, 1970.03.12)

26 We should not thoughtlessly insist on our own desires, putting ourselves first. How can we simply assert our own views if we understand even a little about the heart of God? God is immersed in bitter sorrow as He labors behind the scenes of history to lead the providence of restoration, trying to find His lost children who can express their true selves. Day and night, we have to live to build the ideal family. If only we can build the ideal family that God has awaited for six thousand years, that is precisely where the original peaceful world will begin. The ideal family is the starting point of the kingdom of heaven on earth. It is from that point that God's bitter sorrow will begin to dissolve. (356-302, 2001.10.21)

God's unchanging Will

27 God is the Absolute Being. Therefore, He must accomplish what He has purposed, and He must bring His Will to pass. In order to rectify the situation that arose after the Fall, God must put Adam and Eve into a repair shop, remake them into people who can receive God's original love, and place them in the ideal positions they had prior to the Fall. Then, having restored them as the Parents, God

must connect all His children to them. Because God is in the situation where He must do all this, He had to begin the providence of salvation. (114-014, 1981.05.14)

28 God's Will cannot change. Although there are countless people in the world, there is only one way to advance toward the accomplishment of God's Will. There is only one way because God is absolute. There cannot be two ways. You cannot just go this way and that as you please. God's way is one straight line. (71-271, 1974.05.05)

29 The absolute God must have His own view of history, and His view of history is revealed in His providence. As He pursues the course of His providence, there are some people who follow the providence and others who do not. In short, there are two kinds of people: those who lead a life of faith and those who do not. The Will of God is seen in His striving to bring all the cultural spheres, east, west, north and south, into one world. His ideal is definitely one. God's Will, and His purpose in having us pursue it, is not to lead us on the path to destruction but to guide us on the way to liberation and peace. Therefore, He must be directing human history toward the final destination of peace, the world of unity. (173-079, 1988.02.07)

30 What if you and I loved each other based on God's love and in alignment with God's Will? How beautiful it would be! It is our cherished hope to constitute such a family, such a clan, people and nation. What if we belonged to such groups, where we were welcomed, where we could breathe, and where we could interact, giving and receiving with the heart of subject partners? Would it not be exciting? Suppose you, in the position of a subject partner, could expand yourself to the infinite world, shrink yourself to the minutest of worlds, and bring these two worlds together in harmony? Suppose by doing that, you could make God's heart beat with excitement—would that not be marvelous? If you were like that, God would follow you wherever you go. If you were to hide out somewhere, God would be in trouble. At such a height of awareness, unity becomes possible. (51-083, 1971.11.01)

31 Even if the external providence is completed, unless we also complete the internal providence that goes along with it, the whole purpose cannot be fulfilled—This is the viewpoint of the Principle. Then, which is more important: the internal or the external? Between the two, the internal is more important. This is because the internal issues are for God, while the external issues are for human beings. From this point of view, we cannot help but regard God's Will as of paramount importance. God's Will is to raise up one person who is internally united with Him, and through that person to form an internally united family, through that family an

internally united tribe, and through that tribe an internally united people and nation. This is God's plan. (52-226, 1972.01.01)

32 Salvation is the process of changing the sinful world into a sinless world. We need to understand that this is what salvation means; it is restoration. Originally, God's Will was not salvation. Therefore, we have to return to God's original Will. The purpose of the Messiah's coming is to fulfill God's Will. Then what is God's Will for the Messiah? It is to save humankind from Satan, the devil, and then eventually to cast him out. Satan is on this earth today, ready to accuse you whenever you commit sin. He must be expelled. Satan has violated and devastated humankind. God intends to save all people by eliminating him from the planet Earth forever. (70-314, 1974.03.10)

33 If anything is important to God, surely it is to fulfill the Will. And to fulfill the Will, nothing is more important than fulfilling God's ideal of creation. But God cannot fulfill the Will and the ideal of creation by Himself. The fulfillment of the Will is not only up to Him; its success or failure depends ultimately on His counterparts. These counterparts were Adam and Eve. Before God created them, He made all things of creation. After He created Adam and Eve He made them the center of the creation. God desired that these central beings become the fruits of victory. However, whether those human beings would fulfill this could not be determined by God, but only by each person. (65-169, 1972.11.19)

34 Since human beings were born from fallen, that is, false, parents, they cannot relate directly with God, no matter how great their effort. That is to say, they have no base upon which to build an internal relationship with the Creator of heaven and earth. However, we human beings have a bond with God, who created us not to fall but to attain perfection according to the standard of the Principle of Creation. Based on this bond, God had us fulfill our responsibility again through a second course, the providence of restoration. Its purpose is to raise us up to the position we had prior to the Fall. As a result of the Fall, human beings had plummeted into a realm devoid of the Principle. In other words, we fell into a world outside of the Principle where God, even though He wanted to, could not intervene. (42-276, 1971.03.27)

35 Human beings are trapped in a pit of bitter sorrow that has nothing to do with God. It stands to reason that they cannot escape from it unless they make God their subject partner and the driving force of their life. God knows that originally, according to the Principle of Creation, He and human beings should be joined in a parent-child relationship. Therefore He tries to bring them back to the position of

His children. But it is not an easy task. Compared to the process of creation, the course of restoration is far more difficult. God has had to walk a path of tribulation many times more difficult. God has been working through history to provide a ladder for human beings, who fell into the realm devoid of the Principle, and pull them up. (42-277, 1971.03.27)

36 After the Fall of Adam's family, God started His providence centered on Abel. Because the parents made a mistake, God began the providence with the children. The purpose of His providence is to fulfill the Will. What, then, is the purpose of the Will? It is to complete the ideal of creation, the purpose of creation. Completing the purpose of creation means to realize the ideal of unity in love. This ideal of unity in love was not realized in Adam's family. This is what we call the Fall. Thus, the Fall was not only the Fall of the Will but also the Fall of heart. In order to restore, that is, to recreate this, God called Abel and began His work. Abel's will was not to have remained separate from God's Will; they were to have become the same. But was Abel's viewpoint the same as God's? Of course, Abel's position as an individual was different from that of God, who deals with the Will in its entirety. Nevertheless, as he proceeded for the Will, he should have moved in the same direction as God with respect to the Will. In this regard, Abel was supposed to unite with Cain to complete the providence of salvation. The challenge for him was to become one with Cain. (109-013, 1980.10.26)

37 To this day, fallen human beings have not attained eternal value. Their value is nothing that the world can approve of, either on earth or in heaven. Therefore, fallen human beings still have the mission to restore the value of their life on the individual level, and going beyond that to the world level, and finally to recover eternal life in heaven. In this way God established His providential Will, and to this day He has been seeking to fulfill His purpose to have all human beings realize their life to the fullest value. Where is the conclusion in this? It will not end with you as an individual, or even with the world. We must recover life of such value that God can rejoice in it through the unity of heaven and earth, life in which the entire world can rejoice and in which every individual can rejoice. Only then will God's providence of salvation finally come to an end and Satan's world come to an end, and relative concepts of morality would come to an end. All fallen human beings have the responsibility to pioneer this course, to recover the original value of life. (2-009, 1957.01.06)

38 The struggle to eliminate the original sin started in Adam's family. Providential history began with the separation of Cain and Abel in Adam's family. God loved Abel and had him offer a sacrifice. In making that offering, he had to be absolutely

obedient to God's Word. If Satan came against him, he would have to overcome Satan's opposition as well. Abel prevailed over all the challenges in his environment and properly made his offering with the utmost devotion in accordance with God's desire. In doing so, Abel surpassed fallen Adam by being absolutely obedient to God's word. Next, Abel was supposed to become a substantial being that would have nothing to do with Satan for eternity and be permanently one with God. Then he would have attained the position to receive God's love totally. He would have been liberated from the evil sovereignty and would have entered the sovereignty of goodness. (53-041, 1972.02.06)

39 When will the day come when a special human being emerges who will substantially manifest as the Lord and realize God's Will? Unlike any other created being in heaven and on earth, the Lord will fully manifest anew on a higher plane all of God's hidden internal character. It has been God's objective to welcome this one astonishing and exciting day. Having determined it, God has toiled endlessly throughout history to accomplish it through the providence of restoration. (1-228, 1956.11.11)

40 In order to save human beings, God has suffered through a history of unceasing indemnity, filled with incredible hardships. Although God has the power to reclaim human beings by destroying the devil, He will not do that. It is God's original Will to raise human beings in true love and have them build families, tribes, peoples, nations and the world with love. Therefore He has to keep forever the heart that He had prior to the Fall. Even though, through their fall, Adam and Eve left God's heart, God cannot force them to return to Him. It is because they already had formed a love relationship with the devil. A love relationship, once engaged, determines ownership; it determines the right of inheritance. It determines the right to live together, the right to share the same position, and the right to participate in each other's work. With respect to all these rights, Adam and Eve came totally under Satan's ownership. (211-300, 1991.01.01)

41 As a consequence of the Fall, God was unable to have a day of joy, the ancestors of humankind were unable to have a day of joy, and all things that God created for Himself and for human beings were unable to have a day of joy. It is only natural that if their owners are sad and suffering, those who follow them cannot experience joy either. Because God and human beings fell into a place of sorrow, the things of creation could not avoid the same fate. In the Bible, Romans 8 says that the whole creation is groaning. Not only is the creation groaning; all people are also groaning. God, who is the subject partner of humankind and of the creation, is also groaning. Human history started not in joy but in sorrow. God's providence is

His effort to restore this sorrowful history to a joyful history. That is salvation. (58-207, 1972.06.11)

The providence of restoration leading toward the original world

42 God has been toiling throughout the providence for the sole purpose of realizing His Will. What is the final destination of God's Will? It is where God and human beings live together, sharing joy and sorrow. When we fulfill God's long-cherished hope and Will, and when we come to have a relationship with Him such that He and we can eternally share each other's joys and sorrows, then God will become our true Father and we will become His true children. When this happens, we will desire what God desires and we will live in harmony with all creation, offering glory to God and forever singing hymns in praise of His wisdom, benevolence and grace. God, humankind and all creation are waiting for the coming of this day. The Will is the ideal of God's creation, and it is also the everlasting ideal for fallen human beings. Hence, once the Will is fulfilled, God and human beings will become one body. Then, we will rejoice when God rejoices, and God will rejoice when we rejoice. God's desire will be our desire and our desire will be God's desire—the two will be one, in harmony. We will give God the joy of the eternal ideal, and we too will experience eternal joy. (2-315, 1957.07.07)

43 God should have become the owner of this world. If human beings had established a relationship of love with God and formed the family of His children, they would have gone on to form a tribe, a nation and world. Needless to say, that would have been the world governed by God and the nation governed by God, families governed by God and individuals governed by God. However, due to the Fall, everything, from the individual to the family, the tribe, the people, the nation and the world, is opposing God. This is the fallen world that has resulted from fallen history. If God were to leave the world as it is, He would not be able to establish the world of eternal love that He desires, in accordance with the ideal of creation. Furthermore, for God to restore His authority as the Absolute Being, He must consummate the ideal of creation that He originally intended. He keeps this standard, even as He has been rectifying the world's evils and leading this world toward the ideal world He originally planned. This is God's providence for the fallen world. (63-152, 1972.10.14)

44 To this day, God's hope is that human beings will connect with all things of creation and with Him. That is why God has been working to raise up fallen people from the servant's position to the adopted child's position, the direct child's position and the parent's position. This is in order to sever our painful connection

with the Fall and enable all things, human beings, and God to form relationships of total oneness. Then God's joy becomes our joy, and our joy becomes the joy of all things. God wants to proudly present His sons and daughters to the natural world and even to the world of angels, and to live for their sake. We human beings are not in the original state in which God created us to live. Yet we still have an emotional nature, experiencing emotions such as sadness and joy. In particular, we can feel joy and sorrow by relating with our counterparts. It is human nature to be proud of our joy. When our counterpart's joy becomes our own, we want to show it off. The same is true of God. God feels delight when He sees us filled with joy, and we human beings are happy when we experience God rejoicing with us over our joy. That is the joy of giving and receiving. (11-280, 1962.01.03)

45 It is not possible to return to the original world by human effort alone. Therefore God is working to raise us up—this is the providence of restoration. The providence of restoration would be easy if we human beings cooperated, but up till now we have not cooperated with God's providence. Despite this situation, God managed to expand His providence from the individual to the family, tribe, people, nation and world. The internal and external difficulties God has encountered in the course of this are beyond description. From an external perspective nations and peoples may have suffered, but in front of God they cannot speak of it. This is even more so for individuals. Except for a handful of human beings, there has been no one, either on earth or among those who lived and then went to the spirit world, who can declare in front of God that they suffered in order to cooperate with Him. This is an undeniable fact. Given that people are like this, God Himself took responsibility to lead them. He personally took up the fight, and He labors hard to this day. (11-280, 1962.01.03)

46 For six thousand years God has been working hard for the sake of the multitudes of humankind. After six thousand years of toil, we hear that we are now in the Last Days. What, then, are the Last Days? In this world, there are people who live in the position of a true servant, people who live in the position of a true adopted child, and people who live in the position of a true child. Upon the foundation of the birth of a group of people who are in the position of true children, the True Parents will come. This is the concept of the Second Coming. That is why the Bible speaks of the day when the bride has made herself ready for Jesus. One Father and one Mother must appear on earth. The Marriage of the Lamb is the moment when we can finally start building on earth our lost original home. In order to build that home, we must have the Parents and we must have brothers and sisters. Upon this foundation we can propagate children, and from them will unfold the original tribe, people, nation and world. Then, finally, the existing evil world will be vanquished.

This is how the providence of restoration progresses toward the world of goodness. (156-037, 1965.12.07)

47 Due to the Fall, human beings fell into the realm devoid of the Principle. Angels are God's servants; in comparison to them, how far did human beings plummet? They plummeted into a realm lower than that of angels, lower than servants. They were to be princes and princesses, and as such, the lords of the angels, but they fell to a position lower than servants. Hence they have to climb back up. From the position of a servant of servants, they must climb to the positions of a servant, an adopted child, a stepchild, and a child of direct lineage; and then through the mother to reach the position of the father. This is restoration. The providence of salvation is to bring human beings back to the standard of health they enjoyed before they became sick. That is why the providence of salvation is the providence of restoration. The providence of restoration is not carried out at random. (222-145, 1991.11.03)

48 In order to recover the world defiled by the Fall, God has been leading the providence of salvation by building relationships with human beings through the angels that remained on His side. God has been pursuing the providence of salvation in order to once again relate to human beings, even though they betrayed the glorious God through the Fall and fell to such a miserable state, lower than the things of creation. Human beings are under Satan's dominion and subject to his accusation, yet God has worked to bridge the gap between Himself and us so that He might govern us. He has continued this work through the Old Testament Age and the New Testament Age, even to this day. (1-282, 1956.12.16)

49 Why has God endured a path of suffering through the many millennia of the providence of restoration? Is it simply because He has a kind heart? Why has God continued His providence of salvation for the tens of thousands of years of human history without becoming exhausted? It is not because He is all-knowing and almighty. It is because He is on the path of love, seeking His beloved sons and daughters. Love has the great power to triumph over all the tribulations in its way. With love, we feel as if a thousand years are but one day. (109-282, 1980.11.02)

50 God's true love is such that He gives and forgets what He has given, and gives and forgets again. Because of this, God has been able to continue the providence of salvation until now. Centering on true love, God continues to lead history by repeatedly investing and forgetting how much He invested. Even in the world today, God keeps on giving. He continues investing, through individuals and through organizations. God created the universe based on His essential love. In recovering

the universe after it fell, God has to unceasingly maintain that original standard of investment in order to realize the ideal of true love. Otherwise, He cannot regain His authority as the Absolute Being. (210-230, 1990.12.23)

51 Even though people commit sin, God does not just say, "Hey, you! Why did you sin?" He knows well the situation of people who sin. He cares for them more than for Himself. To sorrowful people He comes with a heart of sorrow; to suffering people He comes with a heart of suffering; and to people feeling wronged He comes with a heart of indignation. Yet, how much have you empathized with the heart and circumstances of God? He comes into our life empathizing with our situation. Moreover, He comes to us with a heart that affirms, "Although you betrayed me, I am still your Father." Because He has such a heart, He has been reaching out to us for six thousand years. (9-232, 1960.05.29)

52 Children inherit their parents' flesh and blood. That is why when their mother sheds tears, they should be able to connect with her and weep with her. When their father sheds tears in sorrow, they should naturally be able to sympathize with him. And yet, how difficult it has been for God to raise and nurture His children to feel that way toward Him! No matter how much God weeps, human beings ignore His tears. No matter how sorrowful He is, human beings do not feel His sorrow. This is because human beings were born from the flesh and blood of Satan. Satan rejoices to see God in sorrow and exults when he sees His ruin. With human beings linked to such a being, God has to go through so much trouble to guide them and teach them the direction of the path they must forge! God could not have led the providence if He did not have a heart to live for the sake of others and a heart that is caring and compassionate, whether for a single individual or for a hundred, a thousand, ten thousand or more. (42-257, 1971.03.21)

53 A dismal history of pain and sorrow began on the earth from the day of the human Fall. This was not God's original plan or purpose. God did not want a world like this, nor did we want to be born in such a world. Therefore, God wants to eradicate this miserable, sorrowful and painful history. He is taking steps to deal with this fallen world, with the purpose of restoring the world that He originally hoped to create, a world of peace, happiness, freedom and goodness. This is the way of restoration and the way of salvation. (14-047, 1964.05.03)

Why God established religions

54 54 God has been seeking to recover His relationship with fallen human beings and the lost ideal garden. Through the course of restoration, He is striving to rebuild

the garden where once, prior to the Fall, He joyfully related to Adam and Eve. From that state of joy, He wants to create and build a world through which He can realize His ideal. This is the history of the providence of salvation that God has been leading, and this is the history of restoration we must pass through. Therefore, as you go through the course of restoration, surrender yourself to the ways of Heaven. Examine yourself objectively from that standpoint and then reflect seriously about where you stand and the situations in which you struggle. God established religions out of His love. It is through religions that God has been trying to teach human beings their proper position and give them direction. Throughout history God has been looking for us, seeking, through the path of religion and based on our faith, to bring us back to Him. (4-069, 1958.03.09)

55 If Adam and Eve had not eaten the fruit of good and evil and had not fallen, they would have married within God's realm, inherited His love, life and lineage, and become His children. Such people would have had no need for the Savior. They would have had no need for spiritual nurturing. As God's children in the original world of creation, they would naturally have connected to God, totally one with Him in mind and body. The problem arises from the struggle between mind and body. If your mind and body are not united on earth, you will have to make them one in the spirit world even if it takes millions of years. They need to be united based on true love. Without true love it is impossible to make oneness. True Parents are the representatives of true love, who teach the way of true love. The teaching that they bring can uproot all the sins of history. When we practice it, we can finally achieve liberation. (232-089, 1992.07.03)

56 Religion does not exist to fulfill people's desires; it exists to fulfill the Will of God. Once we have fulfilled God's Will, then it becomes possible to fulfill our human desires. This is the Principle of Creation, the purpose for which God created human beings. The fallen world has not seen an age when God's Will was fulfilled; hence it has not seen an age when human desires were fulfilled. Therefore, to this day human history has been focused toward the ideal world, the original world of a higher dimension of life. The goal of this pursuit is not to fulfill any one purpose based on human desire; it is to fulfill God's Will. From that point, pursuits for the fulfillment of human desire can begin. This is God's providential view of history. God's Will is, first of all, the perfection of Adam and Eve. Then it is the perfection of the spirit world, the perfection of the angelic world. God is the center, and it is He who has been leading the providence of salvation toward the fulfillment of His Will. (115-237, 1981.11.22)

57 The fulfillment of God's Will is not what the people of this world are pursuing. God's Will has nothing to do with material conditions. It has nothing to do with worldly knowledge or power. What is the condition that God is seeking? It is the standard of perfection based on love. The world's various religions, although from different historical backgrounds and different ages, have been pursuing this purpose. That is why every religion teaches a concept of benevolence or love. What kind of love meets the standard for perfection? The love of God for Adam is not only for Adam, and the love of God for Eve is not only for Eve. The love of God for Adam and Eve is to flow through the family, tribe, people and nation, and through all their future descendants. From one ideal husband and wife centered on this love, the ideal family of love, the ideal tribe, people, nation and world of love can arise. (115-238, 1981.11.22)

58 Religions were established by God; among them are the mainstream religions of His mainstream people. To advance the providence to realize God's ideal, God wants to connect a mainstream religion with a central people and a mainstream thought. God's plan is to set up a mainstream religion as the foundation for the realization of His ideal, and then on that foundation to establish a people and a nation through which to bring His ideal into reality. Without these two, a mainstream religion and a central people, there is no way for the human race to inherit God's ideal of creation. Therefore, in history, God sets up a people who can inherit His ideal, based on the religion that is closest to Him. That religion connects individuals, families, tribes, peoples and nations to the world that can inherit God's ideal. This is the way of God's Will and the path by which humankind is to inherit God's ideal. (172-263, 1988.01.24)

59 The path of religion is to enable people to start living centered on God's Will. Therefore, religions exist for people to follow the way of God's Will. Because God's Will is absolute, it is eternally one. It cannot be two. Therefore, the person who lives centered on God's absolute Will is living the life of the kingdom of heaven on the individual level. A family that lives that way is living the life of the kingdom of heaven on the family level, together with God. If all people throughout the world live in unity, focusing on God's Will for the world—beyond the levels of one people or one nation—the world will become the kingdom of heaven on earth. (182-050, 1988.10.14)

The providential person who moves heavenly fortune

60 The way of the Will is one. The Will moves in one direction, not two. There is only one place where the Will can settle. Look at the people living on earth today:

they each take a direction in life based on their own will as they determine it to be. Everyone chooses differently and goes in a different direction. Following their own volition, they pursue various avenues to success and places to settle. (186-054, 1989.01.29)

61 God's original Will at the time of creation was for God and human beings to live in harmony, in one love and centered on the one Will. All of heaven and earth were to live in the joyous reality of His love, and with His love at the center of their lives, they were to live as one. Yet due to the Fall of Adam and Eve, God's love remained as only His love. That is, God's love was supposed to create relationships with and among human beings, but being unable to forge those relationships, it departed from them and from the entire world of creation. Hence, the ideal that God envisioned in the beginning remains unfulfilled. The love that He hoped for remains unrealized as well. Nevertheless, God will fulfill the Will by all means. That is the reason God has led the providence for six thousand years and continues leading it to this day. (1-088, 1956.06.06)

62 We are now in the process of fulfilling God's hope, which is our ultimate purpose. As you move forward in that process, you should be able to fulfill the promises you make in faith. If you fulfill them and even go beyond that limit, then you will begin paying back the Lord, whose flesh and blood we received in these Last Days. In this context, what should you do? You should be able to stand boldly for Jesus, in front of him and behind him, at his right side and at his left side, above him and below him, acting on his behalf. You should stand boldly for the Holy Spirit, in front of her and behind her, at her right side and at her left side, above her and below her, acting on her behalf. You should stand boldly even for God, in front of Him and behind Him, at His right side and at His left side, above Him and below Him, acting on His behalf. We must bring God's Will for human beings in heaven and on earth to a conclusion, for only in this way can Jesus' will be fulfilled and God's Will be fulfilled. It may seem as though we are insignificant individuals, but in submitting to God's Will our value is tremendous. (1-156, 1956.07.08)

63 You are the ones who have to carry out the final remaining adventurous mission on the level of the universe at the conclusion of six thousand years of history. Since this is a universe-level mission, in order to meet it you must also be on the level of the universe. You must be courageous and filled with inner determination to carry out this mission. If your life of faith falls short of what is needed for God's Will, what will happen? Up to the present, God's history progressed when individuals took a bold course that transcended ordinary reality. Hence, you too must go through the gate of an adventurous universe-level course. Only then can you

uphold the flag of final victory, sing “Hosanna” in front of God, and stand in the position of His brides before the entire universe. If you are to become God's princes and princesses, you must overcome all conditions without stumbling, and weather any circumstances, even persecution or ridicule. You must set a standard of boldness that transcends ordinary reality. (1-274, 1956.12.02)

64 You must attend the Lord in the manner that gives Him the maximum freedom, the greatest glory and the greatest joy. In order to do this, you must make every effort to free the Lord from all the conditions throughout history that permit Satan to accuse Him. If you become this kind of person, then when you call “Father!” God will come to you. He will come even before you call Him. This is the standard you need to set in your daily life. God is looking for one person whose character reflects His universal love, a person whose character has such value that he can stand in the position of Jesus and stand in the position to represent history. Jesus wants him to then gather people of like nature and recover the nation, the world and all of heaven and earth. This is God's desire. (2-055, 1957.02.17)

65 The reason God continues to lead providential history, even repeating it, is to inspire people to respond to His providence. Only in this way can He stand in front of humankind as the God of the ideal. Yet to human beings who live in the realm of Satan, God appears as the fearful God of judgment. To attend God as the God of the ideal, we must be able to experience the grief that was caused Him by the human Fall. We must be able to establish a relationship in which we can abide with Him in His grief. Otherwise, God cannot appear to us as the God of the ideal and cannot appear to us as the Lord of the ideal of creation. On the way to attend the God of the ideal, our path requires that we fight the evil forces that constantly try to block us. This is the path of restoration through indemnity that is required of fallen human beings. (2-097, 1957.03.06)

The providence of salvation according to the Principle

66 We know that God's providence is the providence of restoration. What is the providence of restoration? It is taking actions to recover and reinstate what has been lost. In other words, it is the work of re-creating human beings through the Word. Because the human beings, whom God created, completely lost the Word, they need to be created again. We fallen people lost the Word by which we can align our mind and body and experience constant joy in our heart. Hence, we must find the Word, namely, the truth. The Word is also called the truth. The truth is the principle that governs any system. At the same time it is the root of Heaven's principles. That is why the world seeks for the truth to this day. However, the true

Word in all its fullness has not yet appeared. Since there has been no true Word, there has been no one who could embody true life. Since no one has embodied true life, there has been no one who could embody true love. Since no one has embodied true love, the true cosmos, the true heaven and earth, have not emerged. (7-085, 1959.07.19)

67 God's providence of restoration is not guesswork. Since the providence of restoration is the work of re-creation, and it is the work of recovering what was lost, God must do it based on certain principles. God is carrying it out according to the principles of creation. Because God lost human beings as a result of the Fall, even though God created them, they are standing in the position as if God did not finish creating them. So God has to bring them back to the conditional position of having created them again. (48-086, 1971.09.05)

68 The providence of salvation is the providence of restoration. The providence of restoration is the providence of re-creation. How is the providence of re-creation carried out? During the creation, what did God create first? He created the world of angels first. Then He made all things. Then He created Adam and Eve. These were the three stages of His creation. History likewise has developed to this day through this three-stage principle. That is because all of history has been within the realm of the work of re-creation. In order to save fallen human beings, God has had to pursue a course based on the work of re-creation. (84-069, 1976.02.22)

69 Through the providence of salvation, God seeks to restore the form of the original ideal. Hence the providence of salvation is the providence of restoration. Then, by what sort of providence does God carry out the providence of restoration? It is by the providence of re-creation. For the providence of recreation, we must reinvest on God's behalf the same kind of love that He has invested repeatedly to form relationships of love with human beings. That is the only way we can become His ideal creations. For this reason the Bible says: "You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your strength. This is the greatest and first commandment. And the second is, you shall love your neighbor as yourself." (Matt 22:37) There is also a third commandment: You shall love all things of creation as you love your mother and father, your spouse and your children. These are the first, second and third commandments. Practice these, and you will achieve everything. You will enter the realm of God's ideal that combines vertical love with horizontal love. This leads to the actualization of that ideal. (180-185, 1988.08.22)

70 Even as Satan strives to subvert and destroy God's Will, God strives to advance the process of re-creation with each victory He wins over him. This cannot be done randomly. Paying indemnity cannot be done in a haphazard way. God has to go back to the point where the process of creation started. This is what you learn when you study the entire providence of salvation, namely that God has been conducting the providence of salvation by the providence of restoration through indemnity. Evaluating the whole of history, we find that first it is the providence of salvation, second it is the providence of restoration through indemnity, and third it is the providence of re-creation. Accordingly, we can say that the providence of salvation is the providence of restoration. It is the providence to bring human beings back to their original position. If a patient who is hospitalized and on the verge of death is revived, he says, "I am saved!" In the same way, salvation means to return to the original position or state. Furthermore, the providence of salvation is the providence of restoration through indemnity. You cannot go back to the original point without investing; you have to pay indemnity. (264-271, 1994.11.20)

71 God's providence of salvation is the providence of restoration, and the providence of restoration is carried out through indemnity. The providence of restoration cannot be done for free. Sins that were committed must necessarily be indemnified. Paying indemnity means to separate from Satan. When you commit sin, you fall into the realm of Satan's possession. When you pay indemnity you can separate yourself from Satan and return to your original position. How much sin have fallen people committed throughout the long course of history to this day? How can we indemnify all the sins committed by all evil people? Although most people do not know it, good people have been paying that indemnity by being sacrificed. It is the same for national sins. The sins that nations committed in the past are being paid for by the sacrifice of some of its good people. Unless they make sacrifices, no indemnity is paid. Looking further, this is the path along which humankind has developed, all the way up to the world level. In the process, numerous good people sacrificially offered themselves. They paid indemnity for all the sins committed by humankind so that the world could return to its proper state. (242-229, 1993.01.02)

72 Throughout human history, it was by paying indemnity that a separation was made between good and evil, a separation was made between happiness and sadness, and a separation was made between the way that brings blessings and the way that brings punishment. It is the same throughout the world. Therefore, God's providence of restoration must also proceed by indemnity. There are no exceptions. Indemnity became necessary as a result of the Fall. Those who live their lives without realizing that they are fallen people are living as though they are on the

path of the Fall every day. Because of the Fall, God became the God of sorrow, even as He leads the course of the providence of restoration. And God became the God of pain. Yet sorrow and pain were not the end of it; He lost every precious thing that He cherished. To restore that which He lost, God must go the way of pain; to recover them He must again suffer in sorrow. This is what God must endure as He strives to reclaim what He has lost. (288-291, 1998.01.01)

73 The Fall caused God to lose what was most precious to Him. It is not the case that the Fall only affected human beings, with God having nothing to do with it. God and human beings are in a parent-child relationship. That relationship is in order to realize the ideal of love—the ideal of oneness between them based on love. However, because human beings separated from God, that ideal of unity in love cannot be found. That is what God lost, and that is what He needs to recover. However, just following the course of indemnity is not enough to recover the ideal of oneness in love that God is seeking. To recover this ideal, there needs to be a program for re-creation. Human beings need to be remade based on a blueprint, just as a blueprint is needed for manufacturing a product in a factory. (288-292, 1998.01.01)

The role and mission of the Messiah

74 God's purpose in calling the Israelites to the land of Canaan was to have them complete a victorious foundation as one people. Upon that foundation, they were to build a kingdom in Canaan under Heaven's sovereignty and prepare the foundation for the coming of the Messiah. The people of Israel were to attend the Messiah as the central person who would rule over their country. Then they were to defeat Satan's world and complete God's providence of restoration together with the Messiah. Although that was their mission, the people of Israel and their religious leaders did not know it. In those days, there were those among them who thought that when the Savior came, they would automatically become the nation that could rule the world. They did not grasp that they had to complete the history of restoration by first gaining victory on the level of a people and then on the level of the nation before they could achieve a victorious worldwide foundation. (13-181, 1964.03.15)

75 Unless individuals attain perfection, they cannot form families with a new and higher awareness. And without such new families, a new people and a new nation cannot emerge. Therefore the Unification Church has come forth with a focus on bringing about the perfection of individuals through True Parents. God longs to complete the restoration of the individual. It has taken six thousand years, until

today, to substantiate one perfect man. God has been toiling with the goal to bring forth that one perfect man; this has been the whole purpose of His providence of restoration, transcending time. Then, by centering on the one perfect man, God's intention is to recover one woman and form the model for the perfection of the family. This is the messianic teaching. God desires to conclude the providence of restoration by setting up the bridegroom and the bride according to this messianic teaching. By doing so, God plans to lay the foundation for all of human life. The way of life and the teaching that the Messiah brings are the eternal standards that all human beings need to follow. (21-301, 1968.12.08)

76 Another formula in God's providence of restoration is that before sending the Messiah, He works to set up one central religion and one central nation. God called the Israelites and Judaism. God planned to send Jesus upon that foundation and then expand that realm of goodness by having all humankind unite with him. In this way He would restore the world and realize the ideal of the kingdom of heaven. If the Israelites and Judaism, which God had prepared over four thousand years, had received Jesus, united with him and upheld the one Will in a sacrificial way, then Jesus would have united the Arab world and Asia, connected them to the Western world, and spread the Will quickly to the ends of the earth. In that way, Jesus could have established the kingdom of heaven on earth under God's sovereignty. (88-209, 1976.09.18)

77 Adam possessed the seed of true love and true life. After God lost Adam, He had to recover the Son, a man having the new seed. This Son has to be a man having no condition for Satan to accuse. Just as God made Adam first at the time of creation, in the providence of restoration, which is the providence of re-creation, God has to first set up a Son who has nothing to do with the Fall. This is the root of the messianic teaching. The Messiah is the true man with the new seed of life. He guides people of the fallen lineage to deny their life and then engrafts his new seed onto them. Even though the Messiah is rooted in God, as the second Adam he must clean up what Adam did. This is the reason God cannot send the Messiah as a superman having God's almighty power. (277-204, 1996.04.16)

78 The Savior is God's representative who can dissolve the bitter sorrow in God's heart, the sorrow that was brought by the first human beings' failure to fulfill God's love in accordance with His Will. Because they never realized God's love, all people are in despair and filled with bitter sorrow. The Savior is the one who dissolves this bitter sorrow and brings God's love to fulfillment. He comes to help people attain this original love. The Savior does not come to feed those who are hungry physically. He comes to liberate God. A man is liberated when he has a wife of true

love. When a man has a wife who loves him and remains with him eternally, there is no imprisonment. He is free. Does God, the original central being, enjoy that kind of freedom? He is a sorrowful God, who, while searching for love and investing His love, had to forget how much He invested, only to invest again. (209-096, 1990.11.27)

79 God, by all means, has to restore the ideal of true love and peace that He has held onto since the beginning. God's providence of salvation is the providence to restore that original state; in other words, it is the providence of restoration. For the providence of restoration, God set up religions and expanded the realm of goodness. The Messiah whom God sends is responsible to complete the providence of restoration. Therefore the Messiah must come as the True Parents and quickly recover everything, starting from the root. Jesus, who came as the Messiah, had the mission of the True Parents. He came with true love to give rebirth to all humankind and to restore them as true individuals and as true husbands and wives, so that they too could become true parents. Unfortunately he could not complete this mission due to the disbelief of those on earth, and he departed with the promise to return. He must come again as True Parents in order to restore completely God's ideal of creation. (279-208, 1996.08.20)

Section 2. The God of Re-Creation

1 Due to the Fall, God lost everything that He had created in six days, from the first to the sixth day. Because of human beings, He lost everything. To restore this, God has led providential history for six thousand years. Now this history is moving on to the seventh millennium. Christianity speaks of a kingdom that will last a thousand years, but that thousand years could be understood as one day. The thousand-year kingdom actually refers to the realm of resurrection on the world level. (20-330, 1968.07.14)

God's course in the providential history of restoration

2 You have to build a foundation in your daily life that connects your life in this world to your eternal life. Otherwise that connection will not be made. Adam and Eve should have fulfilled the full potential for their lives on a universal level, but they fell, and God has been toiling for six thousand years to restore this. That is why the history of the providence of restoration is called the history of God's toil. (2-010, 1957.01.06)

3 If human beings had reached perfection centered on God, their joy would have been God's joy and their glory would have been God's glory. But because they were

unable to attain that state, instead of featuring joy and glory as God had hoped, they ended up living in sorrow. Having sinned, they fell far from the garden of the ideal. Ever since then, God has endeavored to restore fallen human beings. This has been the history of the providence of restoration. (3-103, 1957.10.06)

4 To this day, no one knew that human history was the history of the providence of restoration. Explaining the course of history by the concept of restoration is the Unification Church's great contribution to the study of history. God is the root of history; thus He took responsibility for it, led it and developed it. Along the way there were numerous individuals, families, tribes, peoples and nations who were responsible for the mission of restoration, and whose efforts made it possible for history to advance step by step. (22-181, 1969.02.02)

5 Looking at things from God's viewpoint, from the beginning of history to the present time God has not yet seen the day of total victory, the day when He could celebrate. Instead, God has been toiling for thousands of years to achieve His ideal of creation, from the day Adam and Eve fell, through the history of the providence of restoration. Still He has not yet reached the stage at which He can claim victory and glory. We have not yet reached that stage; we are still on the way. What God ultimately desires is true victory, when the truth has absolute authority and exercises its power. This power is not to be exercised only once, but should operate continuously throughout history—past, present and future. On the basis of God's victory, the truth should pervade everything. Nevertheless, God has not yet welcomed such a day. At certain points in the course of the providence of restoration, God attained a partial victory, only to have the next stage in the historical process end in failure. (58-129, 1972.05.22)

6 The history of the providence of restoration since Adam and Eve has been carried out through vertical relationships. People need to pray, "God! God! Please help us reach the standard of perfection." They have to climb up through the positions of servant of servants, servant, adopted child, direct child and parent. They have to go back to the Old Testament Age before Jacob and become as servants of servants. Then they must climb up through the positions to become adopted children, and to become direct children. Only in this way can they finally meet the True Parents, the Messiah who with his bride stands in the position of the Parents of humankind. In this way the era when human beings were servants of servants, the era when they were servants, and the eras when they became adopted children, direct children and parents, can all be liberated. (65-192, 1972.11.19)

7 We are the people who must recover the kingdom of heaven, the garden of victory that people throughout history have been seeking with hope and faith. To do so, we ourselves must become individuals that God can be happy with and form families that God can be happy with. However, in order to form such families, we must restore ourselves as true brothers and sisters, true couples, and true parents. It is to restore all of these that God has been conducting His providence in history. The Old Testament Age was the age that symbolized hope, and the New Testament Age was the age that symbolized faith. But in the future, the age that symbolizes love will come. We call it the Completed Testament Age. This destiny is now unfolding, from the heavenly world to the earthly world. (5-111, 1959.01.04)

8 The ideal world of creation was to be built based on the one Will, but due to the Fall it was not fulfilled. Nevertheless, God has absolute authority. Even though the entire external world may change, God will never change. Even though He lost Adam and Eve and all things to the devil, Satan, since God is still God, the Absolute Being, He must bring Satan, who was originally an archangel, to voluntarily surrender. He has to establish His authority as the absolute God, but in a natural way that does not insist upon His authority. God is good. Therefore, He cannot strike the evil Satan first. In the realm of God, who is good and whose essence is love, there can be no cause or motive for striking first. God must live even for that enemy. God invests and invests Himself for all created things and lives for their sake. This is the dignity and absolute authority of God. Hence, even though the devil came into existence and no matter how much he opposes God, he can never cause God to compromise His dignity and authority. Since God continues living for others even in that position, His providence of salvation inevitably has taken thousands of years. Yet through this course He is bringing the devil ever closer to natural submission. (210-340, 1990.12.27)

9 Human history is the struggle between good and evil. God originally intended to govern true parents, true children, true families, true nations, a true world and a true universe according to the ideal of true love. However, Satan has been governing false parents, false children, false families, false nations, a false world and a false universe through false love. To restore this, human history has entailed repeated struggles between good and evil. That is to say, from individuals up to the global level, Satan has mimicked God's way of developing history through the Principle, imitating the principled world before the true one could emerge. He seized the initiative, with the pretense that his was the true world, and tried to destroy the world of the Principle. Hence, struggles between good and evil were inevitable. In leading the providence of re-creation, God takes an altruistic stance. He acts for the sake of others again and again and follows the strategy of being

struck first and then taking back what is His. On the other hand, Satan takes a self-centered stance and strikes first; but later he must pay compensation for the damage. God's strategy is to be struck first and later to claim damages; Satan always strikes first but comes to ruin later. In this way, the good side advances by being struck first, receiving persecution and making sacrifices, while Satan's side does the opposite. (204-140, 1990.07.06)

The meaning of the Old Testament Age, New Testament Age and Completed Testament Age

10 When we look at the overall course of restoration in history, we see that God leads the providence through the three stages of formation, growth and completion. The course of the providence advances from the Old Testament Age, the era of servants, to the New Testament Age, the era of adopted children, to the Completed Testament Age, the era of true children, and finally to the era of true parents. (15-049, 1965.02.07)

11 Human history can be categorized into three ages: the Old Testament Age, the New Testament Age and the Completed Testament Age. The Old Testament Age was the age when children were redeemed by sacrificial offerings. It was a time to make preparations for the coming of God's Son. In the New Testament Age, Jesus became the offering. Based on this, we received the Parents. During that time, God made preparations for the coming of the bride and bridegroom, so that we could receive the Parents at the time of the Second Coming. The reason why I, bearing the name True Parent, have suffered for forty years as the central person of the Completed Testament Age is to welcome God on earth and achieve oneness between God and human beings. (227-094, 1992.02.10)

12 How is it that God has continued in bitter sorrow through the six thousand years of history? He had to lead human beings, who were positioned between God and Satan, to make certain conditions. These conditions are the mountains of offering sacrifices. Looking back at the six thousand years of providential history, in the Old Testament Age God led human beings to climb the mountain of offering by sacrificing the things of creation; and in the New Testament Age they climbed the mountain through the offering of Jesus Christ, who gave his actual body. What, then, are you to offer as a sacrifice in the Completed Testament Age? You faithful believers have to climb the mountain by offering yourselves as sacrifices. Thus it is that providential history has advanced overall based on the offering of sacrifices. In the Old Testament Age people climbed the mountain by offering the things of creation. In the New Testament Age, the offering of Jesus Christ, the Son of God,

surmounted the mountain of sacrifice. Now, in the Completed Testament Age, you, representing the bridegroom and the bride, have to climb over the mountain of sacrifice by offering yourselves. You will not see the world of true peace, freedom and the ideal until you have climbed over the mountain of sacrifice. (2-111, 1957.03.10)

13 In the Old Testament Age, the things of creation were sacrificed as offerings to God; in the New Testament Age the offering was made by the sacrifice of His Son; and in the Completed Testament Age it is the Parents who sacrifice themselves. God's purpose in having human beings sacrifice material things and in denying their right of ownership was to restore them as His sons and daughters. His purpose in sacrificing His Son, Jesus, was to recover the Parents, and the purpose of the Parents carrying the cross is to attend God. Therefore the Old Testament Age is the age of righteousness by works, the New Testament Age is the age of righteousness by faith, and the Completed Testament Age is the age of righteousness by attendance. (232-320, 1992.07.10)

14 In order to attend God, the things of creation were sacrificed in the Old Testament Age, the Son was sacrificed in the New Testament Age, and the Parents were sacrificed in the Completed Testament Age. Then, what needs to be done from now on? You must stand in the position representing the Parents, Mother and Father. All the things of creation represent the Old Testament Age, and God's sons and daughters represent the New Testament Age, and the Parents represent the Completed Testament Age. (208-345, 1990.11.21)

15 On the path of restoration, we should go up from the era of servant of servants through the era of servants and the era of adopted children to the era of direct children. But how can we complete the course from the era of servant of servants to the era of servants to the era of adopted children, and be connected to the era of the direct lineage? Connecting to the era of the direct lineage cannot be done just like that. Following the Principle, we are required to go through the foundation of faith and the foundation of substance, which are necessary for the foundation to receive the Messiah. That is, we need to welcome the Messiah. The Messiah is the true Son of God, but the lineage of a true son is different from that of an adopted child. This is why we need the change of lineage. (55-192, 1972.05.09)

16 What is the fundamental issue as we go the path of restoration through indemnity? We have to fulfill the Old Testament, the New Testament and the Completed Testament. Fulfilling the Completed Testament means the whole world will come under God's sovereignty. This is what is required to fulfill the Completed

Testament Age. The Old Testament Age was the era for restoring all things of creation, the New Testament Age was the era for restoring the people of God's kingdom, and the Completed Testament Age is the era for restoring God's sovereignty. This means we have to restore God's sovereignty over the world. Jesus' mission was to restore the people of the world. In other words, the mission of Christianity is to restore all the people of the world as one people, and the mission of the Lord of the Second Advent is to restore the world to the sovereignty of the One. (55-247, 1972.05.09)

The providence of restoration in the Old Testament Age

17 The Old Testament Age was the age of the servant. It was the era when people in the position of servant of servants were restored to the position of servant. Even Abraham was God's servant, not His son. God established the way of loyalty by setting up servants of servants and then servants. This was the way God advanced His providence in history, a providence that will ultimately bring together all the people in the world and bring the world stage, hitherto under the dominion of evil, to God's side. Even Jacob triumphed as God's servant rather than as God's son. God has been working this way, restoring people from the position of a servant of servants to that of a servant, and from the position of a servant to that of an adopted son. (15-325, 1965.12.07)

18 In the Old Testament Age, the providence of salvation for all humanity was to bring them to the position of God's servants. Yet restoring them to the position of servant required that the central figures of that age attain victory from the beginning to the end. That is why God had to make incredible sacrifices through four thousand years of history just to set up central figures such as Noah and Abraham. (15-050, 1965.02.07)

19 Human history began with religion, and throughout history religion has flowed together with humanity. It exists to show us the way of hope. From the day of the Fall, God took responsibility for having created human beings. He has been toiling throughout the course of history in order to save fallen people. As a result of the Fall, Satan took dominion over human beings and drove them into unimaginable situations. Yet because they were not supposed to love centered on Satan, God had to push people to positions so low that even Satan would lose his grip on them. That is why God began the providence of salvation for human beings by taking them to the position of servant of servants. This is the reason God conducted His providence through the religions that teach the way of a servant of servants. They teach that we must serve for the sake of humanity. As long as we are in the position

of a servant of servants, we are not qualified to have anyone serve us. Therefore, we have no other way but to surrender and obey unconditionally. In the position of a servant of servants, your master is another servant, not a rightful master. (42-281, 1971.03.27)

20 Before the Old Testament Age, people were in the position of servant of servants. After the Old Testament Age began, they could reach the position of servant, and hence they could relate with the Lord. People in the position of servant of servants cannot, on their own, pioneer the way to become a servant, so God pioneered the way for them. God had to educate people who were far more evil than servants of servants. But since people cannot see the invisible God even if He stands right in front of them, He chose prophets to educate them. God chose prophets to represent Him on earth, and the people had to obey them in order to follow God's orders. (42-282, 1971.03.27)

21 What did the prophets have to teach the people? They had to teach the people that in order to follow God's desired providence they had to go against the stream of fallen history and establish the way of obedience to Him. God needed them to be more loyal to Him than they were to Satan. In short, God, through the prophets, had to teach them their duty as servants. After they completed that duty, they had to set up a system to form individuals, families, tribes and a people who would prepare the environment in relation to the providential Will. But they were unable to set up this environment while in the position of servants. God therefore led the providence by presenting them with the messianic ideal and promising that He would send them the Savior someday. This was the providence that centered on the Israelites. (42-282, 1971.03.27)

22 In the Old Testament Age, God found those whom He could use as His servants by having them make sacrificial offerings. Such was Old Testament history. Human beings had fallen to a position lower than the things of creation. Since the things of creation were closer to God than the people were, God worked through the things of creation. He ordered the Israelites to cut them in half, and separate what belonged to Him from what belonged to Satan. Why did God tell them to divide and sacrifice these things? It was not because of God or Satan; it was because of human beings, who were unable to fulfill their responsibility. The inheritance of Satan's lineage was the point at which they failed to fulfill their responsibility. (136-229, 1985.12.29)

23 Although human beings fell, they could not entirely leave God. In striving to come back to Him, they had to start from the position of servant of servants. What

does "servant of servants" mean? It means that they do not have their originally intended master. Thus fallen people have to be loyal to God and serve Him from the position of servant of servants. Satan was an archangel, God's servant. Human beings were pressed into the service of this servant. Therefore, in order to return to God they had to demonstrate their loyalty to God from the position of a servant of servants. (17-073, 1966.11.12)

24 The Old Testament states that God called Noah and Abraham to serve as His messengers and deliver His word to the people. The people of the world had fallen into darkness. In order to lift them up to a position where the Heavenly Father could relate with them as His children, He called Abraham and established the people known as the Israelites. Through this people, God pioneered the way for humankind to gradually return to Him. God toiled during that era of four thousand years, utilizing the angels to help achieve the standard in His work. That standard was the preparation for the coming of Jesus, who would establish the victorious foundation upon which the people of Israel could relate directly to the Father. It was also the foundation for Jesus to fulfill God's Will for Adam and Eve. (1-283, 1956.12.16)

The providence of restoration in the New Testament Age

25 Jesus Christ came to the earth to fulfill God's covenant with the Israelites, by having them uphold God's Will. He came to fulfill God's covenant with the people who at an earlier point in history had been in the position of servants, and restore them to the position of adopted children and then true children. One who has faithfully fulfilled his or her duty as a loyal servant can then stand in the position of adopted child. That is why in the providential history of restoration God tried to lead the Israelites to fulfill the duty of loyal servants, and upon that foundation He wanted to relate to them as His adopted children. (42-283, 1971.03.27)

26 How can one become an adopted child? Until the Son of God came to this earth, it was not possible. After the Son of God came to the earth, those who listened to the Son's commands and obeyed them could finally become adopted children. This is how God worked to connect the Old Testament Age to the New Testament Age. Believers in the Old Testament Age were servants who wished to receive the inheritance, which is a benefit of becoming adopted children. That is why they waited for the coming of the Messiah. In other words, their desire was to surmount the sorrowful circumstances of a servant and advance, through the Messiah, to the position of adopted children. In the absence of a son or daughter of direct lineage, an adopted child is entitled to receive the inheritance from his or her parents. God,

in directing the servant-level Old Testament Age, therefore guided the people so that they would maintain their desire to transcend the servant's position and thus benefit from attending His Will. God desired them to do so. This is why the Israelites continued to long for the privilege of leaving behind the position of servant and receiving God's inheritance, and why they maintained the concept of being the chosen people. (42-283, 1971.03.27)

27 Jesus went one step higher and introduced God's love. In the Old Testament Age, Moses introduced only the God of authority, the God of power and the God of judgment, but he was not able to introduce the God of love. It was Jesus who introduced His love. Yet although he introduced the God of love and was himself a man of love, the people of his time did not accept him. (35-277, 1970.10.25)

28 Two thousand years ago, Jesus was sent to the earth. On the foundation of Judaism, he was to establish the realm of a world religion in his lifetime. He was to stand as the axis of a religious movement on God's side that would assimilate Rome, even though it might face Rome's opposition. That is, in Jesus, God sent the very Messiah that Judaism had been waiting for. Who was Jesus? He came as the Messiah of Judaism and died while pioneering the way of the Messiah of the world. Then, what happened to Judaism? Up to that time they had been attending God as the God of Judaism, but that was no longer sufficient. What did Jesus come to earth to teach? He did not come to teach about God according to the teachings of the Old Testament. He came to teach about the God of the New Testament Age. (105-214, 1979.10.26)

29 As a first step, God raised up Israel as a servant nation and raised a people who would serve. Then, when Jesus, the Son of God, came to them, had they believed in him and believed his words, then by their faith in him they would have been elevated from the position of servants to that of adopted children. Then, when Jesus had gone a step higher, his believers would have become his children. What do I mean when I talk about Jesus going a step higher? After the Fall on earth, there were no original ancestors. Therefore, if Jesus had been elevated to the ancestor's position, the people of Israel could have gone from the position of adopted children, been engrafted into him as God's children, and received their right of inheritance. However, this did not happen. That is why Romans Chapter 8 says, "But we ourselves, who have the first fruits of the Spirit, groan inwardly as we wait for adoption as sons, the redemption of our bodies," and also, "The Spirit you received does not make you slaves, so that you live in fear again; rather, the Spirit you received brought about your adoption to sonship. And by him we cry, 'Abba,

Father.” This shows that they could only become adopted children. Christians today are adopted children, from a different lineage. (154-337, 1964.10.05)

30 What must you do to become adopted children? That is the question. Adopted children should be better than servants. Adopted children should be better than the servants on God's side and better than Satan, who is the king of the evil world. Satan was originally an archangel, a servant; to be an adopted child you have to be better than a servant. This is logical from the viewpoint of the Principle. Therefore, you must have the conviction that you will conquer Satan's world with your own hands; otherwise you cannot become adopted children. In order for God to move forward, today He needs one representative who can live for His sake more than anyone else has in history. Only when that person appears can we enter the era of adopted children. God has toiled throughout the long ages of history, through a vertical history age after age, to mobilize one people and create the realm of adopted children. We too need to emerge as adopted children in order to earn our right of inheritance from God, our Parent. (89-203, 1976.11.22)

31 If God had His own children, He would have no need to adopt children. It is because He has no children of His own that He needs adopted children. God's purpose in adopting children is eventually to restore true children. Therefore, an adopted child should have the heart that the inheritance he or she receives from God is not really theirs to keep; it is meant for God's direct sons and daughters. This is how adopted children should be. Adopted children should be willing to offer their lives for the sons and daughters who are to come. They should hope to see the birth of the sons and daughters of direct lineage whom God desires, although it may require sacrificing everything they have. They must always prepare such a heart to receive them. Unless they uphold this standard as adopted children, they will have no relationship with the direct children of God. (89-204, 1976.11.22)

The providence of restoration in the Completed Testament Age

32 32 What does the Completed Testament refer to? It refers to the fulfillment of God's covenant to establish the ideal of creation. Then what does the Completed Testament Age refer to? Adam and Eve were supposed to be God's children and complete the ideal of creation, but they were expelled from the Garden of Eden. The Completed Testament Age occurs when they return as the son and daughter on God's side, the ones who can finally represent God's kingship on the world level. On this foundation, we will be able to return to a world that has nothing to do with the Fall, where God will welcome individuals, families, tribes, peoples, nations and the world. (266-325, 1995.01.01)

33 What is the Completed Testament Age? The Completed Testament Age is the time when humankind advances toward God's ideal, which is based on families on earth that center on the Parents' love, a new world free from Satan's accusation. The Completed Testament Age, from the point of view of the Principle, is the realm of the Parents who have completed their portion of responsibility. A covenant entails responsibility. The Fall was the failure to fulfill the human portion of responsibility. The Old Testament refers to the old covenant, the New Testament refers to the new covenant, and the Completed Testament that we are now talking about refers to the time of completing the covenant. Completing the covenant means that all the people of the world complete their portion of responsibility. Because of the prior failure to fulfill human responsibility, our responsibilities as individuals, families, tribes, peoples, nations, the world and cosmos still remain before us. What is more, Satan's world came into existence. Since Satan came into existence because of our failure, we now need to fulfill our responsibility in order to eliminate him. (131-098, 1984.04.16)

34 Looking at God's providence, we can see that it consists of three stages. They are the Old Testament Age, the New Testament Age and the Completed Testament Age. Christians believe that everything was finished with the Old and New Testaments, but that is not the case. They do not know that the Completed Testament Age lies in front of them. Jesus must return to complete the Will; we call this the Completed Testament. We have the Old Testament and the New Testament; those covenants should be completed, should they not? The Lord of the Second Advent comes to this earth to complete the Will. (243-100, 1993.01.03)

35 The Completed Testament Age is the age of fulfillment. We should fulfill its covenant on the levels of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation and world. All these levels should be linked, centered on God's love, God's life and God's lineage. In this way, we will establish one lineage, one love and one life as the tradition. When this happens, Satan will have to leave. This is done by the work of engrafting, which will naturally remove our connection to Satan's lineage. (226-276, 1992.02.09)

36 In the Old Testament Age, the things of creation were sacrificed to pave the way for the Son and, in the New Testament Age, the Son offered himself as a sacrifice to pave the way for the Lord of the Second Advent, the True Parents. In the Completed Testament Age, True Parents sacrifice themselves in order to bring God's vertical love to the earth. In relation to humankind, God is the vertical Parent of true love. True Parents are the horizontal Parents, whose true love is aligned at a ninety-degree angle with the vertical Parent. On the foundation of this vertical and

horizontal love, God's love and life will be able to burst forth for the first time. With the virtuous union of husband and wife with God, new blood ties between them will expand, based on the love of True Parents. In this way, the seed of life that began in God's love based on the standard of the original Principle will appear on earth for the first time in human history. (208-340, 1990.11.21)

37 The Old Testament Age was the age when the things of creation were sacrificed to find sons and daughters. In the New Testament Age, sons and daughters were martyred to pave the way for the coming of the Parents. When the Parents come to the earth, they will pave the way for God to come. The mission of the True Parents is to build a horizontal base for the vertical Father, encompassing all the peoples of the world. As the True Father's horizontal realm of heart unfolds, the Heavenly Father's vertical realm of heart will naturally unfold and settle there. When God reaches the point where He can embrace both vertical and horizontal love, for the first time He will make the transition to the age when He can go beyond the fallen-world, attain the core position, and reestablish His original, ideal authority. Then He will say, "Everything is accomplished." (177-346, 1988.05.22)

38 We look at God as the Lord of our hope and the Lord of our faith. He is also the Lord of our love. God, the Lord of hope, faith and love, guided human history through the Old Testament Age, which represents hope, and the New Testament Age, which represents faith. Therefore, henceforth we need to go through the Completed Testament Age, which represents love. What is the one main element of the Completed Testament Age, that is, the age of the Lord of the Second Advent, which will remain unchanging forever? It is God's love. God's love is the central element overall; it is also the ideal element overall. For the sake of this love, people have walked their providential courses with hope and faith. Nevertheless, if you do not now walk the providential course of love, the foothold of unity on earth will crumble. God needs to set this up, centering on love. (1-090, 1956.06.06)

Section 3. We Must Liberate God

1 To complete the providence of restoration, we must restore all levels that were not completed. This includes the level Adam could not attain after the Fall and the level Jesus Christ was unable to reach. All of these we have to explain, indemnify and restore in the context of our present time. This is the mission of the Unification Church. I have to fulfill them myself, and I have to lead all the Unification Church members worldwide who follow me to do the same. This is my mission. (22-181, 1969.02.02)

The completion of the providence of restoration

2 We must awaken to an understanding of God's plan for the world—the environment and the ideal that He bestowed upon Adam and Eve prior to their Fall. We have to have a clear ideological standard and conviction so that we can overcome any harsh environment, no matter how much our enemy, the devil, may oppose and struggle against us. With this we should be strong enough to overcome all the evils that influence society and affect our daily life. If we are pulled down and fall away, it will be impossible to complete the providence of restoration. That is why each of us who is alive on earth and who knows the Will must resolve, “I am the one who will solve the problems of this world. I will do it, even if I am the only one left on earth.” Without having such conviction, we cannot stand as representatives of the world in front of God, the subject partner. Thinking of this, unless our basic attitude is that we are free from attachments to this world, unless we uphold the ideal that God had for Adam and Eve before the Fall, unless we have the mindset that we are the embodiments of the subject partner, and unless we are resolved to transcend this world of death, we will surely fail repeatedly on the way of the Will. (65-179, 1972.11.19)

3 Up to now there has never been a true family, a family whose lineage is based on God's true love. Our ancestors are fallen, and our ties with them are based on false love, false life and false lineage; that is the reason our mind and body struggle against each other. Adam and Eve became enemies, and killing occurred among their children. God's providence of salvation is the providence to restore all this. In order to complete the providence of salvation, we have to build the true family that was lost. That is, we have to be sons and daughters who unite our mind and body, and then we have to become couples that absolutely unite in true love and live with God eternally. (275-057, 1995.10.31)

4 When the Messiah comes again, what will be his purpose? It will be to shatter Satan's sovereignty, bring humankind back to God, expel Satan from this world, and work with Christianity to finish God's providence of salvation. These are the purposes that the Messiah comes to fulfill. In other words, the mission of the Messiah is to complete the providence of restoration for the sake of returning to the original world of God's Will. (74-177, 1974.12.09)

5 The Lord of the Second Advent comes to complete the foundation of God's providence of restoration that Jesus left. Specifically, he comes to perfect the ideal of True Parents, who are the origin of God's true love, true life and true lineage. Thus, he is the original seed for completing the ideal of creation. He comes upon

the victorious foundation of the fundamental providence on God's side that had been completed up to the time of Jesus. This means that he comes directly upon the foundation of the victories that Jesus established in his life up through the time of his maturity as an individual. Then he fulfills the tasks that Jesus left to be accomplished later. These are to find his bride, to become the True Parents, and to save all of humankind. (277-211, 1996.04.16)

6 Jesus was to be the Parent of all human beings. He was sent by God to be the second Parent. For the victorious third Parent to appear, he must build on what Jesus accomplished as he strove to become the second Parent. This is logical. For Jesus to become the second Parent, he had to restore the position of Adam and Eve, who should have been the first Parents. Yet he was unable to restore the position of the first Parents, which would have been his victorious foundation to be the second Parent. Because Jesus died before he could lay this foundation, the providence was prolonged to a third attempt. Therefore, the returning Lord, who comes for this third attempt, must establish a victorious foundation by indemnifying, both spiritually and physically, the failure of Adam and Eve, the first Parents, and the work of Jesus and the Holy Spirit, who came in the position of the second Parents. If he does not do so, he cannot emerge on earth with his bride as the victorious True Parents. (55-153, 1972.05.07)

7 Adam failed, and Jesus died before he could conclude his mission as the second Adam. Hence, it is the Lord of the Second Advent, coming as the third Adam, who must complete their missions both spiritually and physically and eliminate Satan's domain and sovereignty. He must finish the providence of salvation and guide the world to return to God's original perfect ideal. One of the last tasks in God's providence of salvation is to connect the kingdom of heaven on earth and the kingdom of heaven in heaven, so that they may freely interact. (74-192, 1974.12.09)

8 The people who are in the spirit world and the people who live on earth come from different time periods. Nevertheless when they live according to True Parents' principled path, all the barriers between them will be broken down. They will establish structures based on the original standard, so that all may advance to the kingdom in heaven. When all people do this, True Parents' mission will be conclusively completed. Considering this, we should not forget that the era of completion, the era for the fulfillment of God's Will, is unfolding before our very eyes! (215-140, 1991.02.06)

God needs to be liberated

9 We must liberate God by centering on His love. God has been confined because of fallen love. It is as if He is in prison. He has never been set free. Although the God who created the universe is all-knowing and all-powerful, it has always been His intention to establish the ideal world based on love. Yet due to human beings, the universe was snatched away by Satan. As long as God does not separate Satan from this world, He cannot be liberated in heart. That is, as long as Satan is not cut off, the foundation to liberate God in heart has not come about in the universe; consequently God remains confined. Can His heart and mind be at rest when His beloved children are no better than dead? (138-262, 1986.01.24)

10 The Fall took away God's freedom. I am saying that the Fall put God in shackles and chains. The Fall also put the first ancestors of the human race in shackles, and the realm of angels as well. Not only that, countless religious people in history lived a fettered existence, struggling against these shackles. Such is the case for all of humankind. (079-026, 1975.06.16)

11 Unless all people are freed from the realm of lamentation, God our Parent cannot be free from the realm of lamentation. No parents can be comfortable while their beloved children live amid worries and fears. Since God is in such a situation, we should liberate Him. How can we liberate God? God is in a prison where He is unable to freely love all people. He must be released into the realm of freedom where He can freely love all of humankind. This is something that we are responsible to do. This problem was caused by the human Fall; therefore we ourselves must liberate God by becoming sons and daughters who are victorious over the Fall. (65-100, 1972.11.13)

12 Who can stop the fighting between God and Satan? Will that fight just come to an end? How can it, when almost no one has been a devoted son or daughter showing the way of filial piety to God, and no one could fulfill the duties of loyal patriots, saints, and divine sons and daughters of God's kingdom? God has had no place to stand, having lost the mainstream of love through which people would uphold God's kingdom. That is why God has been incarcerated and confined to this day. The spirit world includes hell, the middle realms and paradise. Jesus is in paradise, although he should be in the kingdom of heaven. How can there be such places as paradise, the middle realms and hell in the world that God created? It is because of the Fall that God suffers this anguish. (302-226, 1999.06.14)

13 Have you ever met the ideal grandfather or grandmother whom God has been searching for? Have you ever met a grandfather or grandmother whom God wanted to become like? Have you met that person, or not? Because of the Fall, you never

could meet such a person. Have you met the ideal mother or father whom God has been searching for? No, you have not. Have you ever met the ideal wife or husband whom God has been searching for? No, you have not. Have you ever met the ideal son or daughter whom God has been searching for? No, you have not. God has not found such people, so how can His bitter sorrow ever be dissolved? What can sever the chains and bonds around God's heart? It can only be done by love, by God's love. Nothing except God's essential love can do it. (209-108, 1990.11.27)

14 We need to liberate God; it is our destiny. We should have faith that thirsts to liberate God and hope that hungers to liberate God. We should be burning with love. We should be the people whom God has sought for six thousand years, who can say, "It is on account of humankind that God is in shackles; not only that, it is my fault that God is in shackles. It is my fault that Satan is accusing God. It is my fault that Jesus died on the cross. It is my fault that the Holy Spirit has been going through a bloody history of struggle. Oh, God, please give me strength! I will bring You to the place of Sabbath and liberation. Father, I will also bring Jesus and the Holy Spirit to the place of liberation." (007-162, 1959.08.30)

15 We call God "Father." Do you think God would say, "Good; you are doing well," when He sees people on earth, the good and the bad alike, dancing to Satan's tune and under his dominion? Because God has ties with us as a Parent with His children, He cannot help but toil and struggle to free our hearts from their prison-like confinement and to alleviate the sad and miserable conditions that afflict heaven and earth and everything under the sun. Therefore, we have to understand God's inner situation and liberate Him from that situation. (019-100, 1967.12.29)

The liberation of God is the completion of the providence of restoration

16 We have to liberate God. This involves the number four. After the Old, New, and Completed Testament Ages, there will come the era of liberation from sorrow. When the era of liberation from sorrow comes, we must offer everything. It does not mean that God will receive everything and keep it all for Himself. Rather, He will hand it over to Adam. After Adam receives it, he will give it back to God, and then God will hand it back to Adam—to True Parents. From that point they will begin to distribute the right of ownership back to us. When we receive it and take ownership, we will be able to enter the era of the kingdom of unity. These are necessary steps for realizing the kingdom of heaven on earth. (298-064, 1999.01.01)

17 We need to save the nation and the world. Yet in order to save the world, we first must liberate God. Only after God is liberated can the world be liberated. What I am saying is that we have to liberate God first and then liberate the world. For this, we Unification Church members have to reach out to the ends of the earth. The bonds of heart we establish with people should be like stakes of love sunk deep into the earth. In this way we will melt the world with love. (162-222, 1987.04.12)

18 When parents have lost a child, to whom can they appeal about their miserable situation? Unless that child comes back to life and assuages his or her parents' grief, the bitter sorrow embedded in their hearts cannot be dissolved. Nor can they remove the nail that pierced their heart. Who will take out that nail from God's bitter heart and liberate it with tears of love? Who can pull that nail out of the flesh and blood of God's heart and heal it with restored flesh? Who can give God release from His sorrow? It is we who must liberate God, and we should do so before tending to our own liberation. You should know that this is the path to the ultimate liberation that religious people are seeking. (187-273, 1989.02.11)

19 Christianity teaches the idea of the returning Christ. But when Jesus returns, what will he do? God has not been able to evade Satan's incessant demands. Only the Messiah can cut off Satan; only he can stop Satan from making demands on God and making claims for his unrighteous cause. That is why the Lord of the Second Advent has to come to earth and liberate God. The Lord of the Second Advent must carry out the central role, to stand for public righteousness and take responsibility for liberating God. (162-186, 1987.04.12)

20 "Tears are flowing from God's eyes; red blood is surging in His heart. Yet the blood vessels through which His blood should be flowing are clogged, and He is brought low as if at the point of death. I am resolved to liberate this suffering God by following the way of a filial son, patriot, world saint and divine son. And after I have done all that, and God comes and embraces me and says with tears, ""You have worked hard," still I will have to say, "I have done nothing." I turn away to shed my own tears only after I have dried God's tears. I am going such a way according to Heaven's law. It is the path that I must go as the True Father. (350-321, 2001.08.19)"

21 I am trying to liberate God by my own efforts. God is not free; He is in confinement. He is the Parent who has lost His sons and daughters. When a filial child dies, even if another child is ten times more devoted than the deceased child and does everything to ease his or her parents' hearts, still that child cannot liberate them to the point of restoring their hearts to their original state. I am like that second devoted child, trying nevertheless to liberate God who is in that

situation. Meanwhile, Christians today mistakenly believe that God is omnipotent and therefore can do anything He pleases. (135-283, 1985.12.15)

22 Just to look at me, you may think that I am no different from other people. Yet, my way of thinking is different; I have a different philosophy. It is not my face or my body that makes me great, but my philosophy. My spirit is such that when I move, God Himself wants to move with me; He wants to follow me. This is my strength. God has been unable to fulfill the purpose of love. Yet I am asserting that with love I will liberate Him. Through my encounters with God, I have come to know His bitter sorrow over His unfulfilled purpose of love. I am trying to liberate God from this bitter sorrow. What I am saying is logical. I assert it based on systematic logic and scientific proof. (165-186, 1987.05.20)

23 In order to attain God's original ideal, what is the work that sons and daughters of God must do, for which God will praise them with a liberated heart? My teaching, and the teaching of the Unification Church, is that husbands and wives have to be sons and daughters born from God's lineage, and attend Him as their eternal Parent for a thousand, even ten thousand years. That is how we can become God's own, qualified to receive God's eternal praise. We have to reach that position if we are to heal the wounds that remain in God's heart as a result of the Fall. (232-139, 1992.07.03)

24 Some people pray, "O God of glory! Please give me blessings." But God is not in that position. On the contrary, He is in misery, suffering in confinement. God is in such a sorrowful situation because He has no true sons and daughters, and only through their birth can He be liberated. That is why we must become true sons and daughters—in order to liberate God. Unless we do so, the way of Heaven cannot be properly secured and the ideal world cannot be established on earth. This has been the mission of the Unification Church during the course of its history. That mission is to correct what went wrong. (22-151, 1969.02.02)

25 God is in the process of restoration. He is not in His original state as God. Rather, He is a God of sorrows, a God who deserves to be consoled. He is not the God of joy, but of despair. For God to return to His original state, we must liberate Him. We cannot do it with money or power. Human capacity falls short. It is possible only by true love. (174-250, 1988.03.01)

26 Unification Church members are working as a unit for God's liberation. We are not talking about liberating the world. Liberating the world is rather easy. Liberating the world merely requires bringing peoples and nations together, but liberating God requires unity of heart. For this we need the Principle, which is a system of thought

that can unite the realm of love. We have to untangle the entangled relationships in the spirit world and build bridges of heart on earth. It is a revolution more fearsome and difficult than any other. This is why I say that liberating humanity is easy compared to liberating God. It simply amazes me that I have become the standard-bearer for tackling a task unprecedented in this world. It is remarkable that I have been able to provide answers to the fundamental issues of providential history. (136-285, 1985.12.29)

BOOK 2 TRUE PARENTS

Chapter 1 True Parents

Section 1. The Identity and Role of the True Parents ... 137

Section 2. The Emergence of the True Parents ...144

Section 3. Proclamation of the True Parents and the Three Great Subject Partners Principle ...154

Chapter 2 True Parents and the Messiah

Section 1. The Hope of Humankind ...163

Section 2. The Second Coming of Jesus and the True Parents ...169

Section 3. The Messiah Becomes the True Parents ...175

Section 4. True Parents and Family Salvation ...180

CHAPTER 3 True Parents and Rebirth

Section 1. The Path of Rebirth and Restoration ... 184

Section 2. Our Rebirth and Change of Lineage ...190

Section 3. Restoration of the Right of the Eldest Son, the Right of the Parents and the Right of the King ...198

CHAPTER 4 True Parents and True Children

Section 1. The Life Course of the True Parents ... 208

Section 2. The Responsibility and Authority of the True Parents ...215

Section 3. True Love, True Life and True Lineage ... 220

Section 4. The Way of a True Child ... 224

Section 5. Learning and Inheriting the True Parents' Heart ...226

CHAPTER 5 Inheriting the Victory of the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind

Section 1. The True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind ...232

Section 2. Representative Families of the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind ...238

Section 3. Inheriting the True Parents' Realm of Victory ...242

Section 4. Inheriting the True Parents' Tradition ... 245

Section 5. Inheriting the Teachings of the True Parents ...250

BOOK 2 TRUE PARENTS

CHAPTER 1 True Parents

Section 1.The Identity and Role of the True Parents

1 Where did I begin? I began with a title, True Parents, which is truly amazing in itself. I am pursuing God's Will. True Parents are the standard representing the ideal purpose and the point of its realization. When Adam and Eve realize the ideal of love and stand as the Parents in God's direct dominion, God's Will is fulfilled and the ideal of creation is completed. Please understand how remarkable it is that I have come to the earth and established the name True Parents. For fallen people, the name True Parents is the most blessed among names. This discovery has greater value than recovering a lost nation, or gaining the world itself. This name has a value greater than anything in heaven or on earth. (127-221, 1983.05.08)

The meaning of the title "True Parents"

2 For God's Will to be realized, Parents need to come—not fallen parents, but True Parents. You cannot just accidentally stumble upon the words True Parents. This is something that did not emerge in history until now. Its impact will be far beyond that of a revolution. It is a momentous event, akin to a miracle. The reason we can use the title True Parents, especially the word "true" is because they emerged possessing a love that surpasses the love of the countless parents that have come and gone, a love that has never before seen expression. This is the standard they represent, and that is why we can use the name True Parents. (067-225, 1973.06.27)

3 Our Unification Church members habitually speak the words "True Parents." These are simple words, but truly amazing words. In all history, no book has contained these words. This is a term that we Unification Church members alone know and use. Christians have known throughout their history of two thousand years that the first ancestors fell. Given this, they should have known from the outset that fallen parents are bad and false parents, and that parents who have not fallen are good and true parents. And yet Christian doctrine has not clarified this issue. This is because humankind has had to wait for this time, when this insight could be revealed. Even it, in the past, there were those who thought of the term True Parents, they would have had no basis to understand what was behind it. That comes only through understanding the vast and profound contents of the Unification Principle. Therefore, no one else has authentically been able to utter the simple words "True Parents." (201-060, 1990.03.01)

4 That which is true reaches the whole world; it is absolute throughout history. It encompasses the past, present and future. Therefore, that which is true is the fruit

of history, the center of the current age and the starting point of the future. That is the significance of the True Parents, who have emerged in the Unification Church. They are the Parents of humankind. They have emerged in accordance with God's Will. A true family is a family that has inherited the will of the True Parents and a true tribe is a tribe that makes True Parents its center. Knowing this, please become true people. A true person is one who loves the nation, loves the world and loves God. (35-342, 1970.11.01)

5 God can give you the best gift in the world. It is to make each of you an ancestor of humankind, a true mother or true father. There is nothing higher. Even being a cabinet minister or the president of a nation does not match that. This is the greatest gift God can give you. When there are True Parents, there will naturally emerge true children, true families, true tribes, true nations and a true world. This is the importance of the name True Parents. (125-117, 1983.03.14)

6 What can we clearly understand from the term True Parents? The Fall of the first human ancestors occurred as a result of an illicit sexual relationship; this resulted in our lineage having nothing to do with God or the True Parents, through whom God intended to manifest the ideal of creation. That is, we inherited the wrong bloodline. For this reason, the term True Parents signifies two things in relation to God's Will. First, all people in history, including our first ancestors, will separate from the false lineage. Second, a new love, life and lineage will begin, connected with God and based on a new original root. (201-061, 1990.03.01)

7 Everything begins with the True Parents: the ideal history, a new culture, love, life, family, nation and world—in other words, the heavenly kingdom of God's love. The name True Parents is not just something you can casually talk about based on your own understanding. It represents a position that countless people, sacrificed as offerings through their blood, are crying out to reach. (67-227, 1973.06.27)

8 Both God and Satan fear the name True Parents. True Parents know that their words will judge their followers who, like all human beings, are in the fallen realm. Why does Satan fear the name True Parents? It is because when people believe and follow True Parents words, everything Satan has will come to destruction. Therefore Satan always tries to block the way of the True Parents and hopes they will come to grief and ruin. (65-277, 1973.01.01)

9 We can achieve oneness with God in heart only through True Parents. Through True Parents, the original lineage and original character will begin, language will return to its original starting point, our daily lives will return to their original form, the original nation will be established and the original world will be realized. True Parents are the core encapsulation of everything. True Parents are the ones who can determine everything. This is why we need to inherit their thought in its entirety. We will have to inherit everything from them: their heart, character, and

their views on life, on the nation and on the world. Otherwise, we cannot stand in the central position. (28-248, 1970.01.22)

10 If we had had unfallen parents, we could have attended God as our Father- He would have been our vertical Father in true love. This is a great discovery. In relation to God, who is the vertical Parent, Adam and Eve were supposed to stand at a perfect ninety- degree angle. They were to have become the True Parents of humankind by attaining perfection centered on original true love. When the horizontal parents' love, life and lineage are united with God's love, life and lineage, then heaven and earth are united in virtue. This harmonious union gives birth to each one of us. (198-303, 1990.02.05)

11 God assumed the form of Adam and Eve because He needed a body through which He could become the ancestor of humankind. Adam and Eve were created with an inner mind, a spirit self, and an external body. The mind and the body have to unite. How can they unite? The mind is vertical, and the Creator, God, is the True Parent based on vertical true love. Adam and Eve, who are like the Creator's body, are the True Parents based on horizontal true love. The vertical True Parent, the Creator, becomes one with the horizontal True Parents, Adam and Eve, based on love. (223-237, 1991.11.10)

12 True love between the vertical True Parent and the horizontal True Parents always takes the shortest route at the highest speed. Thus, God's true love descends to earth vertically, over the shortest distance. Love between a man and woman, likewise, moves in a horizontal line, traveling the shortest distance. When vertical true love meets horizontal true love, that intersecting point inevitably forms a ninety-degree angle. Those two lines of love cannot intersect without forming a ninety-degree angle. Since God is our vertical True Parent based on true love, He is very close to each one of us. Thus, once we welcome the perfected human ancestors, namely Adam and Eve, as our True Parents, we meet at the intersecting point between God's vertical true love and the True Parents horizontal love, which forms a ninety-degree angle. (201-212, 1990.04.09)

The past, the present and the future

13 When you pray you say, "We are the fruit of six thousand years of history;" but how are you the fruit of six thousand years? You are simply your parent's children. Yet since you are connected to True Parents, you can be a fruit of history and a starting point of the future. Thus, your hope is not in the future, but in the True Parents. The world will become one based on everyone's unity with the True Parents. (30-237, 1970.03.23)

14 When you unite with True Parents, the nation, the tribe and the family can emerge. True Parents embody in substance all the glory and values of heaven and

earth. Would you exchange True Parents for all the money in the world? Can you purchase them with your life? You are now living in a different time. Wherever you go, you should attend True Parents. Beginning with your sons and daughters, your descendants should do the same in the generations to come. (30-237, 1970.03.23)

15 True Parents are the core, the center, who can determine the standard of value of all that is in motion in heaven and on earth. I am saying that they are the measure of value that is the hope of all beings. This is true because God is such a being. He is the origin of the Principle, the center of all ages and eras, and the owner of the future. He seeks to harvest the fruit of history. True Parents are the central headquarters in which God dwells. (30-237, 1970.03.23)

16 What will be at the core of history, the present era and the future? It is the true man and true woman. They should be the center of a global teaching that bears the fruit of history with respect to history, connects this age to all ages with respect to the present, and creates the forthcoming era with respect to the future. The viewpoint and motivation of that true man and woman would be to live a meaningful life for the sake of the world. Their loving each other would also be for the sake of the world, and their having sons and daughters would spur them to love the world more. (25-147, 1969.10.03)

17 True Parents are the central figures who judge history, govern the present time, and pioneer the future. To receive True Parents has been the desire of all people throughout history. True Parents come to this earth to represent God's Will. Then what is it that they are meant to accomplish? They fight against Satan's world and attain dominion over all things. They destroy Satan, who governs the human world, and they attain an absolute position from which they govern even the myriads in the spirit world. This is the mission of the True Parents. That is why God has been paving the way by which He can send them to earth and restore a world wherein all things of creation, humankind and Heaven are united. (13-281, 1964.04.12)

18 Due to the Fall of the first ancestors we lost the hometown, the nation and the world. Furthermore we lost God and even God's love. True Parents are the starting point to regain all these essential and magnificent things. What is the purpose and desire of God, who has led His providence throughout history to this day? It is to find the True Parents, and thus He has been leading the history of indemnity since the Fall. It is for this same purpose that countless Christians have been longing in hope, waiting for the day of the Second Coming. For this purpose many religions are also longing for this day. Thinking of this, True Parents' birth on earth is a fearsome yet marvelous event. (67-227, 1973.06.27)

19 Study of the providential ages leads us to understand that the providence of restoration is completed in the Last Days. As the Last Days approach, religions move closer to realizing their purpose, which is the coming of the Parents—not any

parents, but the True Parents. As the Divine Principle teaches, True Parents are those who have realized the ideal of oneness based on God's love. They have fulfilled their responsibility by passing through the realm of indirect dominion based on their accomplishments according to the Principle, and into the realm of direct dominion. They are the first parents in history to establish the ideal of oneness in love between God and humankind. God's ideal of love finally begins to settle on earth through the True Parents' family. (143-076, 1986.03.16)

20 What was God's ultimate purpose in guiding the history of restoration? It was the advent of the True Parents. True Parents are required to represent a true family. A true family is required to represent a true tribe, a true tribe to represent a true people, a true people to represent a true nation, and a true nation to represent a true world. In this way history will advance. If we look at this process the other way around, a nation should be sacrificed to represent the world, a people should be sacrificed to represent the nation, a tribe to represent the people, a family to represent the tribe, and a representative person should be sacrificed for the family. This process culminates with the True Parents. (25-017, 1969.09.21)

21 We are living a life fraught with struggle between good and evil. Then, when will this fleeting, temporary life transform into a permanent, eternal life? At what point in time will this transformation occur on the national and world levels? Where do these issues originate? All problems came about due to the Fall of Adam and Eve, who became the false parents. Consequently, problems of the heart, of lineage, of character, of language, and the problems of daily life arose, as well as problems affecting nations and the world. Then how can we fulfill our desire to resolve these accumulated problems all at once? It requires a true standard. But this is not to be found within the tribe, society or nation, or even within the world. Because the origin of all problems is the false parents, only a connection with the True Parents can lead us to a solution. (28-247, 1970.01.22)

22 Even if all the parents of the billions of human beings were to resurrect this instant, not one of them would manifest the glory of True Parents. Even if all the ancestors of millions of generations were to come back to life and sing praises over the glory of their resurrection, the song and the glory still would not be free from the fallen realm. What of the name True Parents, which we use in the Unification Church? Although your current situation may be miserable, you can be proud of these words. Their value exceeds your value, and even that of hundreds of millions of ancestors bringing victory throughout the earth, proclaiming liberation for all people, singing songs of praise and shouting of glory. Meeting the True Parents will start you on the path to meeting God, and meeting the Unification Church will start you on the path to God's kingdom, the homeland that True Parents desire to see in the near future. (138-106, 1986.01.19)

True Parents are the Savior and returning Lord

23 The Messiah is in the position of Adam who has perfected God's love. He comes with the qualifications of the original Father. Therefore he will choose a woman in the position of the Mother, and based on the foundation of God's original love, they will secure the rights of ownership for the individual, family, tribe, people and nation. Centering on true love, the Messiah claims the right of ownership from individuals, families, tribes, citizens and nations, and then returns it to nations, citizens, families and individuals. (129-194, 1983.11.05)

24 If the original love of the Messiah had been established from the individual to the nation, and if it had spread to Rome and to the world, there would be no need today for the concept of the returning Lord. But there is no country on earth that has passed through such a course. Even the countless Christian churches do not belong to the realm of ownership according to God's principles of love. In short, the heavenly kingdom does not exist on earth. When we consider this, how great and amazing is the name True Parents! It is only through them that we can lay the foundation, pierce through the fallen domain of Satan's world, and go up from there. (129-194, 1983.11.05)

25 What is the purpose of the Second Advent? It the coming of the True Parents. The returning Lord and his bride are the True Parents. The Messiah means the True Parents, who are the final destination of human history. One united world can come about only when all people, who are wandering about like orphans without a nation, come to the True Parents. That is how the world becomes one home. In this world of True Parents there is no devil. This is the viewpoint of the Principle. When the True Parents appear, Satan will ultimately have to withdraw. God wants the True Parents to appear on earth and defeat Satan. God wants to lay that foundation. (202-348, 1990.05.27)

26 True Parents must emerge in history. The one who carries out this historic mission is the Savior and the Messiah. What does he save? Not our physical bodies by making them last forever. Rather, he enables us to fulfill our hope for ideal love. To achieve this, the Messiah must come as the True Parents. Christianity teaches that Jesus is the Messiah and Savior. What does he need to do in order to come as the True Parents? We know he cannot do it alone. He comes as a man representing the True Father. This is why Jesus said that he was the only begotten Son of God. When the only begotten Son comes, it will not suffice if he is alone. There has to be the only begotten Daughter. The only begotten Son and Daughter would love and marry each other, at the place where all can rejoice with God. Upon their marriage, God, the vertical Parent, would rejoice, and the only begotten Son and Daughter would rejoice as the bride and bridegroom. Then, as the horizontal Parents, they would give birth to children on earth. (58-218, 1972.06.11)

27 The returning Lord of whom Christians speak is he who comes with the hope of establishing the most victorious of all families. Then, where is his beginning point in

life? It is not based in the family, but in all of heaven and earth. Wherever he goes, that place will represent heaven and earth; everything he does will have historic value. All his footsteps, from the smallest to the greatest, will bear value higher than anything else in history, and will remain eternally. Even something as small as a piece of paper that he used will remain as a historic artifact. Everything related to him will have the value of the world and the cosmos. (027-015, 1969.11.15)

28 Study of the world's religions reveals archangel-type religions and Eve-type religions. But Adam must emerge before Eve. In Christianity he is called the returning Lord. Who is the returning Lord? Jesus Christ was the second Adam, who came due to the failure of the first Adam; the returning Lord comes as the third Adam. Adam is the man who was supposed to become the true ancestor of humankind. Yet as a result of the Fall, the first Adam became our false ancestor instead. Jesus came in place of Adam, as the new ancestor, but could not completely fulfill that purpose. Christianity is the fruit of that incomplete ancestry. Because a clear ancestral line did not emerge because Jesus was unable to establish the bond of the bridegroom and the bride on earth, the Parents did not come. Without establishing the position of Parents, how could Jesus become the ancestor of humankind? Lacking any alternative, Jesus became the Parent in a spiritual sense. (50-060, 1971.10.31)

Section 2. The Emergence of the True Parents

1 Throughout history, men and women were brought together. However, their connection should have taken place at a single starting point, with the True Parents at the center, and history should have begun with the True Parents as its origin. In other words, if history had begun correctly through Adam and Eve, it would have resulted in a world of eternal goodness. Because history became twisted, its origin has to be re-created. This entails dealing with the history that has transpired thus far. To straighten out this history, one man and one woman, as a couple, should become the True Parents. Without them, the human race cannot pass into a new age in history. This is what the Unification Church actually has to do. My responsibility in guiding the Unification Church is to secure the position of the True Parents. This is an important mission that no one has thought of until now. (25-024, 1969.09.21)

Preparing the way for the True Parents

2 What was God's desire before the Fall of Adam and Eve? It was that Adam and Eve give rise to a true bloodline, centered on the original True Parent, which was to grow into a tribe, people, nation and world. Thereby, God desired to establish the kingdom of heaven as the ideal of His creation. But the human Fall shattered the ideal for the Parents and for the children. In the end, the world became the way it is today. No one living on earth has ever had blood ties with True Parents. Hence,

given the current state of the world, no one can directly relate to God. The returning Lord is the one who comes as the True Parents. Therefore, the six-thousand-year history has been God's work to restore the lost standard of the True Parents, that is, the standard of perfected Adam and Eve. (15-328, 1965.12.07)

3 According to the principle of restoration through indemnity, the Parents must emerge without fail. How good it would have been if Jesus, a pure bridegroom, had found a pure bride! However, Jesus came on a foundation whereby the stages of formation, growth and completion were not completed during the course of restoration through indemnity; hence, he had to lay a foundation of victory by fulfilling all these stages. In order to create a foundation of victory, both internally and externally, first he had to redeem the sin of fallen Eve, by taking the opposite course. For this, Jesus needed to prepare a room for the bridegroom and to find a bride, but he could not. Hence, Jesus fasted for forty days. This became a source of bitter sorrow for God and for Jesus. The hope and purpose of Jesus' coming was to save humankind, but due to his death on the cross that task could not be completely fulfilled. Therefore Jesus has to come to earth again. When Jesus returns, what does he need to do first? Rather than meet with his disciples, it is to find his bride. Christianity is this bride who has been waiting for the coming of the bridegroom. (16-182, 1966.03.22)

4 In order for True Parents to come, there should be the foundation of true sons and daughters; likewise, in order for true sons and daughters to come, there should be the foundation of true servants. This is why God has worked in the history of restoration for us to receive the era of the parents after we have gone through the era of the servant and that of the children. People in spirit world have helped us as we passed through and restored the era of the servant, the era of the adopted son and the era of the children, and moved up to the era of the parents. Externally, until the global foundation beyond the national level is established, True Parents cannot come to the earth. (13-281, 1964.04.12)

5 After the two-thousand-year history of the providence through the times of Noah and Abraham, God established the people of Israel through Jacob. He then had this people form a nation. To achieve this, an individual had to confront Satan on behalf of God from the position of a servant and be victorious. Then an individual had to confront Satan and bring victory on behalf of God from the position of an adopted son, and then from the position of a child of His direct lineage. Without this, we could not receive True Parents. This is why providential history has followed the long course from the Old Testament Age through the New Testament Age to the present day. By restoring the position of the servant and the position of the adopted son, God restored the position of the child of direct lineage. This means God could establish the position of the True Parents, which was His purpose in sending the Messiah to earth, only after laying the foundation for that victory. (13-281, 1964.04.12)

6 Jesus, who came two thousand years ago, had to gain victory by fighting as a servant and as an adopted son, and then become a son of God's direct lineage. This was Jesus, position. After having him go through the positions of the adopted son and son of direct lineage, on the foundation of the people of Israel, he was to establish the position of the True Parents. This was the purpose for which God sent Jesus, and the mission for which Jesus came. However, because Jesus died on the cross, he could not achieve complete victory. Therefore, with the spirit world as the base, God has been pioneering the foundation for True Parents. To this day, He has not yet secured the positions of the individual, family, people and nation. He has had to take a long, roundabout way to establish the individual, family, people and nation that are related to His Will. (13-282, 1964.04.12)

7 As we welcome this global era, God will by all means send the Lord, His promised bridegroom, who will choose his bride and lay the foundation for true victory. God has fought for six thousand years to this day in order to establish the position of True Parents, the original purpose of creation. It is no exaggeration to say that the purpose of the six-thousand-year history of the providence of restoration has been to establish the True Parents. True Parents represent the six thousand years of all providential history. Their absence was the sorrow, pain and tragedy of humanity. (13-282, 1964.04.12)

8 We can look at human history as one history of restoring the position of True Parents. Without this, there can be no true children, and without true children, there can be no true family, no true tribe, no true people, no true nation, and no true world or cosmos. God has toiled for six thousand years to establish this standard. Jesus came to earth two thousand years ago as the first person to manifest the glory of the True Parents. But, since he was the fruit of history, it was not enough that he succeed in this only on one level. He had to carry out the mission not only of the Son but also of the Parents. (13-283, 1964.04.12)

9 On this earth, physically and spiritually, Jesus had to go through the course of restoring the positions of the Son and of the Parents. He had to fulfill his responsibility in both positions to establish the starting point of oneness with God. Only then would Israel have had the foundation for the individual, family, people and nation. Had this come to pass, the standard of the True Parents would have been established, both physically and spiritually. However, the people's disbelief in Jesus rendered this impossible. In accordance with the Principle of Creation, True Parents are to be blessed by God both physically and spiritually. Yet Jesus was unable to become the True Parent due to the disbelief of the people. Hence, even after he passed into the spirit world, Jesus has been preparing the foundation for people to attend the True Parents. What does this mean? This means that the Lord of the Second Advent should restore the position of the Parents, spiritually and physically. (13-283, 1964.04.12)

10 Since Jesus* death and resurrection, he has been working in the spirit world, not on earth; hence, all Christians have been relating to him as a spiritual Parent. Thus, just as Jesus needed to inherit the blessing from John the Baptist, the Lord who returns to the earth has to inherit Jesus* spiritual foundation, which was achieved on the levels of the individual, family, nation and world. The Lord had to go through that in order to establish the foundation for the True Parents on earth. (13-284, 1964.04.12)

11 To attain the position of the Parents, Jesus, as the bridegroom, had to have His bride. Jesus and his bride, as the ancestors who have nothing to do with the Fall, should have been the True Parents of humanity. Jesus was in the position of the True Father. Yet in order for him to stand as the True Father of humanity on earth, he needed someone in the position of the True Mother. Jesus completed his mission as a son, but he could not find a bride who could become the True Mother. That is why he left the earth, remaining only a spiritual Parent. The resurrected Jesus, as the bridegroom, represents heaven. The Holy Spirit, as his bride, represents the earth. In this way, Jesus and the Holy Spirit established the standard of the spiritual parents. Originally, the husband-wife relationship should take place on the horizontal plane in their substantial bodies. This is the purpose Jesus was originally was meant to fulfill. However, since this purpose was fulfilled only spiritually, the spirit world and the physical world could not become one. Thus Jesus, who ascended to heaven as the bridegroom and the Holy Spirit who descended to the earth as the bride have been working together to unite the spiritual and physical worlds. (12-226, 1963.05.15)

12 Had Adam and Eve gone through their childhood and reached maturity in the springtime of their lives, God would have blessed them in marriage. God was meant to wed them at that point in their lives, yet He was unable to do so. Christians refer to the Marriage Supper of the Lamb. This term appears in the Revelation to John, the last book of the Bible. What is the Marriage Supper of the Lamb? Adam and Eve, who should have been wed by God six thousand years ago, instead lived together centered on Satan and thus became the evil ancestors. To rectify this, God has to find a new bridegroom and bride in the Last Days and prepare a supper to celebrate their marriage. That is the Marriage Supper of the Lamb. Through this supper, the True Parents will be born. (23-163, 1969.05.18)

13 Because it is time in history to hold the Marriage Supper of the Lamb, the world has been changing ever since the Second World War. The United Nations has emerged and changes are taking place throughout the world. After the First World War, the victorious nations abused and ruled three vanquished nations as they wished, but that is not what happened after the Second World War. After the Second World War, the victorious nations liberated the defeated nations. That is because it was time for the Parents to come. The numerous member states of the United Nations are brother nations. Whether big or small, they are all siblings.

Hence, through the United Nations all nations should have equal authority, like siblings within one household. The True Parents have to come to the United Nations as flag-bearers of peace. (23-163, 1969.05.18)

14 True Parents are the standard of the ideal world. Thus, their work must begin. True Parents come to connect the people of the world in one heart, to teach what is good and what is evil. They come as the Parents to set a new tradition. In so doing, they will form a new kinship and see the world begin anew. To do this, the Lord will create a new family. This is the returning Lord to whom Christianity refers. (23-164, 1969.05.18)

The background of True Parents' birth

15 As a condition for the returning Lord to be born, there should have been a nation. Yet at the time I was born, the Korean people had no nation. The Lord of the Second Advent had to come, but he had no nation. That is why an independence movement arose in Korea. At the time, there was a nationwide movement in all eight provinces of Korea to recover our nation. This was a confrontation with Satan. I was conceived during that time and born in the first lunar month of the year 1920. Heavens providence was realized on the foundation of those who shed their blood for the patriotic cause, and on the foundation of the provisional nation that was formed in 1919 through the March First Independence Movement. (229-315, 1992.04.13)

16 Because Eve fell at the age of sixteen, Yu Gwan-soon fought as a sixteen-year-old unmarried woman against the enemy Satan's nation, Japan, in order to establish Heavens nation. Japan represents a female position. Yu Gwan-soon fought for the independence of her country, Korea. Because its sovereignty had been lost, a conditional foundation had to be established to build God's nation. On that conditional foundation I was born. I was born into a patriotic family and as I matured, I participated in the independence movement. In history, Eve violated Adam, whereas Yu Gwan-soon, a sixteen-year-old girl, became a sacrifice fighting against Satan's empire. It is an amazing fact that, on the foundation of her unwavering heart and spirit not to submit, a gate could open for Adam to pave the way forward. Women should inherit Yu Gwan-soon's way of thinking. She suffered death, but because she was steadfast in her determination not to surrender, she set a condition for me to be born. (236-248, 1992.11.08)

17 Jesus was to have walked a seven-year course from the age of thirty-three, and then attain the position of parent as desired by God. He was then to attain the standard of restoring all things, thereby concluding and completely fulfilling God's Will by the age of forty. This was the mission that Jesus was to complete. However, he died on the cross, and God's original Will remained to be fulfilled. Thereupon, the True Parent, the Lord who is to return, has to take responsibility for setting both

internal and external conditions to fight Satan; thus, he had to go through a forty-year preparation period, a period of struggle. Although externally it was a forty-year period of preparation, internally it was a period of strife. By laying the spiritual foundation for victory, finally he established the groundwork for the substantial foundation, spiritual and physical, on earth. (13-287, 1964.04.12)

18 You as individuals have not prepared a proper foundation for victory. But through your relationship with the True Parents, by making conditions to unite with them, you can establish the basis for victory on the levels of the individual, family, tribe, people and nation. That is a seven-year course. Thus, if you establish the national level of victory through your relationship with True Parents, God can finally begin to take dominion over the creation of all things. By having dominion over the creation of all things and establishing Heavens family, God can establish one sovereignty, one people and one land, unshakeable in heaven and on earth. From that moment, when God can begin a Sabbath rest for all eternity, His judgment will commence. (13-290, 1964.04.12)

19 Because the Unification Church has taken responsibility for and upheld God's Will on behalf of Heaven and True Parents, we have undergone many ordeals. By going through this process, you need to separate yourself from Satan's world. Further, you should set the standard of true children by which to judge Satan's world, adopting the model of True Parents' victory. Unless we reach this standard on the levels of tribe, people and nation, we cannot realize God's original Will for True Parents on earth. You who are fighting on my side during this period are representatives of True Parents on the levels of the individual, family, people and nation. As such, you have to take responsibility and fight, not only in Korea but also on the world stage. (13-287, 1964.04.12)

20 You may not know how much I have invested for the sake of the world. How many tears have I shed, how much sweat and blood have I spilled, and how many times have I sighed? My efforts were not just to feed myself or to make myself successful. They were to liberate the earthly world, the spirit world and God. My work is not based on a concept; it has such a historical background. Since I formed a substantial foundation for the ideal in this world, on the actual world stage, I have reached a level where the nations of the world can solemnly bow before me. (210-364, 1990.12.27)

The qualifications to be True Parents

21 When the true son and true daughter join in union for the first time, centering on the True Parent, the horizontal love between a man and a woman and the vertical God come together. This is a historic point, a fountain of explosive love. Then God, who has been striving to realize this ideal of original love, will appear. This fountain was lost because of the Fall. God's vertical love encounters the

husband and wife's true love perpendicularly at the center, the place of the True Parents, the place that God hoped to see when He created Adam and Eve. In order to be in the position of the True Parents, they should first be a true son and a true daughter, a good man and a good woman. It is to establish the position where a man and woman representing east and west join together, harmonize with all of God's feelings and thoughts, and have not one shred of guilt. (145-139, 1986.05.01)

22 The position of True Parents, where Adam and Eve have merged into complete oneness centered on God, is free from Satan's accusation. The True Parents, who are the original starting point, can emerge only when they rise above the completion stage, where there is nothing that Satan can accuse. This is the origin of True Parents from the viewpoint of the Divine Principle. (25-030, 1969.09.21)

23 God worked for six thousand years to prepare the foundation for the coming of True Parents and to have them attain victory during their lifetime. However, the believers on earth failed to unite with Jesus as the spiritual Parent and follow his instructions. As a result, they could not bequeath the spiritual foundation that Jesus had prepared to the returning Lord. Therefore, in order to become the True Father, the returning Lord has to face tests on the levels of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation and world in the spiritual realm. If he fails to prevail and establish a standard of internal victory, a standard of substantial victory cannot be established on earth. Therefore, the Lord inevitably has to wage an internal battle. (13-284, 1964.04.12)

24 The new world begins through the True Parents laying a new foundation on earth. New children, new tribes, new peoples, new nations, a new world and a new cosmos are to emerge through True Parents. This is the hope of God's dispensation on earth. It is the purpose for which Jesus must come again. However, all this cannot happen in one day. Jesus first has to succeed on multiple paths, as servant of servants, servant, adopted son and son. The foundation that was laid over the course of six thousand years was lost, so the Lord who is to come has to establish the standard of victory by recovering the entire six thousand years during the course of his life. Unless he establishes a true standard of victory by which he can judge history, he cannot emerge with his bride as the True Parents on earth. (17-127, 1966.12.11)

25 I believe that I have devoted myself in prayer more than anyone ever has; I have shed more tears than anyone; and I have repented more than anyone. Also, in terms of passion, I think I surpass everyone. Nevertheless, why am I walking a path that today's Christians oppose? It is because I have no doubt that my way is correct. No matter how many times I examine and analyze this path, I find there is no question of its veracity. I am convinced that history will work out according to these principles. (17-127, 1966.12.11)

26 A new history begins from the new Parents. History cannot begin anew before the appearance of the Parents of Heaven and Earth. Thus, True Parents must emerge and after they fight and defeat him, Satan must recognize the Parents of Heaven and Earth. Before they emerge, the re-creation of heaven and earth is not feasible. With the appearance of these Parents, and once the new heaven and earth are created, a new history can commence. Sons and daughters who have grown up with God will live every aspect of their lives in accordance with God's Will and possess a new heart, the heart that God desired to see in Adam and Eve at the time of the Creation. Thereby, they will stand in place of Adam and Eve and fulfill what God desired Adam and Eve to fulfill. (17-128, 1966.12.11)

27 True Parents have to overcome all of history. They need to attain such a qualification and overcome the fallen world. They should pave the path for the future. In fact, that is what they have been doing to this day. They deserve respect and honor from others. You should recognize their qualifications. At least some among you should be able to recognize them. That is how you can receive the Blessing from them. Then as husband and wife, you will not fight with each other. How can you fight if you know that what I am telling you about the True Parents is true? (52-098, 1971.12.23)

28 In order to be True Parents, they have to love the world of Cain. The Cain world is the world of the firstborn son, the world of the fallen son. Therefore, unless the True Parents make the condition of giving the love of Heaven fully despite the opposition of this world, they cannot restore Satan's world. The firstborn son should be loved first. Since Satan is in the position of the first son in principle, he can say, "If God wants to love Abel, He needs to make the condition of loving the first son first. Without showing me such love, there is no way for Him to love the second son." This is within the Principle. The way of the mother, Eve, is to unite Cain and Abel and bring them to Adam. Without doing so, no matter how much the mother wants to give universal love, she cannot. That is the position she is in. (124-074, 1983.01.23)

29 The Messiah can come only based on the foundation of restoring the lineage through indemnity. In other words, even though the Messiah is born in Satan's world, in which all people are born with Satan's lineage, he should be born in an environment that Satan cannot accuse. If he were born in an environment that Satan could accuse, that would contravene the Principle of Creation. Originally, God created Adam and Eve with the support of the archangel, who bowed down to them and presented no opposition. In the same way, in accordance with the Divine Principle, in order for Jesus to be born on earth and emerge as the Messiah, there had to be no condition for Satan's accusation, even from the time Jesus was in his mother's womb. (55-296, 1972.05.09)

30 In order for the True Parents to emerge on earth, they should overcome the realm of Satan's accusation. They cannot appear in a position that Satan can accuse. What kind of being is Satan? He is a spiritual being. Thus, only a person who can stand in the position to subjugate the spiritual Satan can become the True Parent. In order to subjugate Satan, hundreds of billions of people in the spirit world, centered on tens of millions of believers and countless good ancestors, have to unite with this central figure. Without establishing the foundation of victory over Satan's realm and bringing joy and glory on that decisive foundation, he cannot establish the position of the True Parents on earth. (43-146, 1971.04.29)

The significance of the appearance of True Parents

31 What is the focal point of human desire throughout history, in the current age and for the future? It is a true family with true love at its center. All people throughout history have hoped for a true family. It is the center of hope for this age and the starting point of hope for the future. In other words, it is the fruit of history, the resurrection of history. It is the center of the entire world and the principled beginning point of the future. A true person and that true person's family can emerge only as the fulfillment of all the hope felt throughout history. The bridegroom comes as a true person with the purpose of having a true family. A true family is formed when the bride becomes one with the bridegroom. (44-132, 1971.05.06)

32 Once the True Parents appear, the purpose of a true person can be fulfilled and a true family established. The title True Parents can be praised eternally—from the past, to the present, and into the future. The fact that the True Parents have appeared on earth, that they are here, is the most joyful gospel of all gospels. In this world where the power of evil has brought about a realm of death and the loss of any sense of direction, people have turned to wickedness. True Parents' appearance in such a world is the fruit of God's six thousand years of toil. This achievement is not just for the nation of Korea in the present day. Amid the aimless wanderings of countless people, True Parents have emerged as the central model to show the human race its destination and its direction. (44-132, 1971.05.06)

33 The appearance of the name True Parents means that the ideal world of God's creation indicates the emergence of the eternal heavenly kingdom of the future, which should have begun in the Garden of Eden. This is a historic event, needed at this time and in the future. From the perspective of all ages, the past, the present and the future, the emergence of the name of True Parents means that the center of the universe has appeared on earth. From here history starts anew, is straightened out, and bears fruit. Because history bears fruit from this point on, this is where the past resurrects, the world is unified and put in order, and with this one world as the origin, the kingdom of heaven, which is totally new, is realized. That is why I say that the True Parents must come to the earth. (44-133, 1971.05.06)

34 Throughout the ages in history until now, the hopes of humankind have resided in the future. In other words, we have thought of hope as something belonging only to the future. Thus when we were asked where we were headed, the answer was that we were going toward one world that would be realized in the future. Looking to the future, we have been seeking one world. Therefore, if there is any way for the True Parents to be received by false humankind, everyone will rejoice. This is because the hope of humanity is to meet the True Parents. As True Parents are humanity's highest hope, their coming marks the moment when the tradition for all time will be determined. True Parents* appearance is the starting point of history's completion, as opposed to just the longing for that completion. In other words, it is not the beginning point of hope, but the fulfillment of hope. (44-133, 1971.05.06)

35 The path God has to go requires that He anchor His ideal on earth. In order to do so, all beings on earth should have the original mindset, but for that we need True Parents. If the True Parents do not appear, humankind will inevitably experience a miserable history. But once they come and make all the necessary conditions for their work by straightening out the history of misery and establishing a proper framework, from that point, the history of True Parents and of true children will begin. However, it cannot begin until the True Parents set the right conditions; neither can the history of true children or a true world. This is because only when the history of True Parents and true children proceed along the right course will it become the history of a true nation and a true world. (25-059, 1969.09.28)

36 When True Parents liberated their own ancestors, they became the True Parents of their family and True Parents of their tribe. Based upon this, they have to become the True Parents of their nation, the True Parents of the world and the True Parents of the cosmos. The cosmic level True Parent is God. The Lord comes as the True Parents on the levels of the world, the nation, the tribe and the family. The True Parents receive God's direct lineage. Hence, they are the son and daughter of God, who can go to the kingdom of heaven. They can freely give birth to their own sons and daughters. They are the same as Adam and Eve at the time of the Creation. I have already paved the paths that establish the True Parents at the levels of the family, tribe, nation, world and cosmos, but you do not need to do all of that. All you need to do is to be the true parents at the family level. (335-301, 2000.10.07)

37 Throughout history, people have hoped for the True Parents, who transcend history. History until now has looked toward the future, meaning that people pinned their hopes on the future. However, hope in the Unification Church is not pinned on the future but on the past. The past I am referring to is not the past that existed long ago. Rather, it represents a reality transcending time and space: the fruit of the past, the center of the present and the beginning point of the future. It is the center that integrates the whole. That is why I am saying that it transcends history. (30-236, 1970.03.23)

Section 3. Proclamation of the True Parents and the Three Great Subject Partners Principle

1 Any one of you can become a representative of the world if you wish to. What you have to do is to love the world as God does and love the people of your nation as God does. Do that with the love and heart that God had when He created His own home in heaven and on earth. You each must start with yourself, working hard with blood, sweat and tears, to pass through the process of re-creation. Starting with yourself, each of you should reorganize your clan and connect it to the great way of Heaven. As descendants of the Fall, your mission is to indemnify history. Even though I have walked my path while persecuted and alone, I have risen beyond the national level to the world level. Thus, I need to proclaim the True Parents to the world. When the proclamation of the real True Parents is completed, all of the devils wickedness has to retreat. If you hold on to his wickedness, you will be shattered; lightning will strike you. The spirit world will not leave you alone. (202-107, 1990.05.06)

The conditions needed to proclaim True Parents

2 I proclaimed the restoration of the right of the eldest son in 1988, based on that year's Olympic Games. I proclaimed the restoration of the right of the Parents and the right of kingship, and the settlement of the right of king- ship both in the heavenly world and the earthly world. What should I do next? The nations of this world have no true owner. Their current owner is Satan. The devils of Satan's bloodline are the owners. Under the false parent the world has a false climate. In the midst of all this I proclaimed the True Parents. (202-177, 1990.05.20)

3 Despite worldwide opposition, I planted the flag of individual victory and family victory, and laid the foundation to send more than 25,000 families out as tribal messiahs in 150 nations so they could succeed on the levels of the tribe, people and nation. No one can disregard this accomplishment. The Messiah is on the earth, where he will succeed and, centering on his bloodline, the offspring of heaven will grow up and inherit the kingship. When that is in place, Satan cannot oppose me. Satan came into existence because the True Parents had not been proclaimed. That took place at the completion level of the growth stage. Yet the proclamation of the True Parents occurs at the completion level of the completion stage, when True Parents emerge and fulfill their portion of responsibility. They are to realize an ideal family of love after passing through the realm of dominion based on accomplishments through the Principle and arriving at the realm of God's direct dominion. Therefore, the devil cannot appear once the True Parents have been proclaimed. I must fight the devil and bring him to natural surrender on earth; on that victorious foundation the True Parents will be proclaimed and Satan will no longer be able to appear. (224-057, 1991.11.21)

4 Before I proclaimed the True Parents, how much did I suffer? How many times was I cursed? And how many times did I go to prison? I have been imprisoned as many as six times. I declared the coming of True Parents after all these hardships. Therefore, you may consider me the most pitiful king of kings in the world, but I do not feel sorry for myself, even in my dreams. Parents with children who have gone wrong should shed tears. They should feel anguish. Heaven punishes those who try to avoid shedding tears or feeling such anguish. The reason I make you church members shed tears is to reduce the tears that have to be shed by your countrymen. • (211-162, 1990.12.30)

5 I have experienced prison life in four nations. My prison life represents the four directions of north, south, east and west. In all, I went to prison six times; the number is six. Six is Satan's number. I had to go through all that in order to create a realm of liberation. Even as I was being persecuted to that degree, I did not remain in the realm of accusation. In fact, I crushed that realm under my feet and waved the flag of victory, and I am now proclaiming the True Parents before heaven and earth. (305-034, 1998.03.29)

6 In this failed world, with vicious fighting everywhere, I have declared the True Parents. In order to proclaim True Parents throughout the world, I have had to accomplish my mission as the True Parents at all stages: the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos. I have had to reach the point where God Himself could acknowledge True Parents and where True Parents themselves could acknowledge True Parents. This announcement is truly historic. (202-168, 1990.05.20)

7 We must proclaim the coming of the True Parents. There is no gospel greater than this in all of history. On earth, there is no happier news than this. There is no greater standard of peace. The True Parents, who come in the Last Days, are the embodiments of the ideal. You too should live as true parents; only then can you build the palace of true love on the foundation of true love. (245-151, 1993.02.28)

8 The Unification Church has proclaimed the coming of the True Parents. If Adam and Eve had not fallen in the Garden of Eden, God would have become the True Parent. Adam and Eve would also have become the True Parents. With God as the vertical True Parent and Adam and Eve as the horizontal True Parents, vertical and horizontal True Parents would have been united. From this perspective, all four directions would have come into balance. (202-166, 1990.05.20)

9 How is it that I could proclaim the True Parents? The democratic and communist worlds represent the brothers Abel and Cain. These two worlds are like two sons, but are fighting each other. I have reconciled them, and I now stand in a position that both can accept. On that foundation, I could finally come to Korea with the

authority of the Parent and proclaim Mother and myself as the True Parents to the whole nation. (204-188, 1990.07.08)

10 You should understand why I have suffered. If this were for my own country, I would have had no reason to do so. I am going this way for the sake of the world and for Heaven's nation. Korea has done all kinds of things against me over the past forty years. Nonetheless, I carried all the burdens of the Korean people on behalf of my parents, my brothers and sisters, and all of those who are even remotely related to me. Then, after meeting all the conditions, I came to Korea and blessed this country. That is why I proclaimed True Parents in Korea. (204-187, 1990.07.08)

11 The devil killed the true ancestor of humankind. The first Adam became God's enemy due to the Fall. Afterwards, the one who came as the second Adam was Jesus, the Messiah. However, human beings, who were supposed to be God's sons and daughters, killed this Messiah who came as the Savior. How serious is the sin of imprisoning and killing the one who was to establish True Parents! Those who did this cannot escape responsibility. (219-335, 1991.10.13)

12 The people of Israel wandered for two thousand years. Look back at their history. The swords of their enemies shed the blood of many, while others were trampled by horses. They died amid resentment and cursing, disappearing like the morning dew. Barely surviving two thousand years of suffering, they were finally liberated with the support of America. The devil killed the first parents. His sons and daughters killed the second True Parent. Throughout the world, they have mobilized ideologies and systems to kill the third True Parent, yet amazingly, he has survived all perils and hardships and has proclaimed the way of the True Parents on earth. How God has longed for this! (219-335, 1991.10.13)

True Father's view of True Mother

13 To this day, my wife and I have led our lives upholding our calling according to Heavens desire. I am proud that we have done so and would like to share this with all the people of the Republic of Korea and everyone throughout the world. None of you can imagine the thorny path that my wife and I have walked. We have invested painstaking efforts, working in America, the Soviet Union, China, Japan and other parts of the world, to rescue all humankind from this world of evil and sin and to lay a foundation for the reunification of the Korean peninsula. Now that the entire foundation has been firmly built, it is time to reveal it to our people. The Korean people, with whom we share the same blood, have not understood us, and the persecution and sorrow we have faced at their hands over the past decades has been difficult to bear. It was not only governments that persecuted both me and the Unification Church, but even some Christians slandered me out of malice. Despite these difficult circumstances, my wife and I have united fully in true love for the completion of God's Will and have found our way through every difficulty. Today

people in more than 160 nations attend us as the True Parents, and their numbers increase every day. (231-007, 1992.05.11)

14 Mother had to become a true mother, a true wife and a true daughter. To complete even one of these three missions is difficult, but Mother has completed them all. In serving her husband, she served from the position of a daughter and a younger sister. After that, she served me as the man with the highest title in the entire world. It was only then that she could become the True Mother. Also, she had to be a mother by giving birth to sons and daughters. She had to give birth to children with the potential to excel on a global scale, which she did; every one of our children is intellectually gifted. They have outstanding intellectual capacity to offer the world or any aspect of society. If they have not demonstrated these qualities yet, it is due to their lack of effort. In terms of inborn talent and ability, each of them is very blessed, as I have been. They have the potential to accomplish anything they wish. (232-307, 1992.07.10)

15 Mother is by nature an introspective and quiet person, but she has learned to be observant about her surroundings and has become increasingly active. This is a result of the training she has received since she met me. She is indeed a quiet and well-mannered woman. Before our wedding, when she visited Cheongpa-dong, she would always come and go on the same path. I observed her behavior carefully. She took the same path the first time she came and again the second time she came. In those days I was looking for a woman who could become the Mother and I was giving the matter much consideration. When I saw how Mother chose to walk along the same path each time, I said to myself, "She is the one." Also I was pleased with her name, Hak Ja Han (韓鶴子). Her surname, Han, refers both to the study of the Chinese classics and to a feeling of bitter sorrow. Her name suggests a scholar researching deeply about God. I thought that if a woman could become a scholar of bitter sorrow, she could certainly become God's partner. I liked Mother's surname and her given name. Because of her background, I trained her and she has come to where she is today. So I am proclaiming her victory as the True Mother. As a representative of all women, she has crossed the mountain of bitter sorrow. That is why I am proclaiming her to be the root of all mothers. (232-307, 1992.07.10)

16 We have to change the lineage and ownership. Originally, Adam should have become the owner before Satan claimed ownership, and when Adam became the owner, God would have become the owner. But God has not yet become the owner because Adam has not become the owner. In order to recover the ownership that Eve lost, I must go out to the world and straighten everything out. That is, I must regain and return ownership to God. Yet ownership cannot come to me directly; it has to come through my children and through Mother. This is to go in reverse; that is how restoration is done. Henceforth, Eve should not stand behind; she should stand beside me. That is why I have Mother stand next to me. Men should stand behind Father and attend him, and women should stand behind Mother and attend

her. After solidly laying the foundation for husband and wife to become one, we held the assembly to proclaim the liberation of women. (229-155, 1992.04.11)

17 To this day, no one has known Mother. I invested myself in her through three stages, formation, growth and completion. Because it is time to seek sons and daughters in the perfected world devoid of the Fall, you can proclaim clearly that the True Father is Sun Myung Moon and the True Mother is Hak Ja Han. If you do not do so, the spirit world will not be able to work with you. Even if you boldly proclaim this to the world, no one will oppose you. That is so only because of the Parents victory. (229-156, 1992.04.11)

Changes after the proclamation of True Parents

18 Now that the True Parents are proclaimed on earth, the realm of the major religions can be liberated and saved, which is to say that the realm of the major religions will eventually disappear. In the course of the providence of salvation, spirits could come down to earth mainly through the providential religions: Judaism, Christianity and the Unification Church. I have gone beyond the world level and now I have returned to my homeland, proclaiming the True Parents on the national level. This is noteworthy in the history of the universe. There is no one in the world who doesn't know who I am. We have tribal messiahs; they are like branches that connect to the national level, upon which is built the global foundation. And then, once they connect the vertical standard, which is True Parents, to the nation, everything will be completed. (204-309, 1990.07.11)

19 Now that we have proclaimed the True Parents, from a providential viewpoint we enter an age when we have to restore the standards appropriate for the right of the eldest son, the right of the parents and the right of the king. Therefore the most important thing for us to do is to live according to God's Principle and laws. In order to realize the ideal of creation, we have to live according to the Principle of Creation. The Principle of Creation is not something vague that is needed just for the providence of salvation. The Principle of Creation will continue when the world that God purposed is realized; everyone will follow the way of God's Principle. So I remind you that your portion of responsibility remains. The realm of the human portion of responsibility needed protection before the Fall, and it needs even greater protection today in this fallen world. (212-203, 1991.01.06)

20 Even though God's providence of restoration continued throughout history, over countless years since the creation, the ideal standard was not established. Upon my arrival, the Unification Church was established and made it possible to reveal the truth. As a result I have announced the True Parents and the Completed Testament Age. This is a historic event. Yet it is more than an event; it will serve as the starting point for the building of a new world culture. What is the new world culture? It is the fulfillment of the promise God made to humanity at the time of creation. It is

neither the age of the providence of restoration nor the age of the providence of salvation; rather, it is the time to build the world of the ideal of creation. God thought of the words True Parents before human beings did. The appearance of the True Parents is God's ideal of creation. The core of the ideal that God intended from the beginning is found in these words. Thus Heaven cannot sit still. We are entering the age of worldwide transformation. (248-189, 1993.09.30)

21 What will happen as a result of the proclamation of True Parents? In the spirit world, the good spirits that have served God and the evil spirits centered on Satan will clearly divide. When you center on True Parents, you stand in the position of perfected Adam and Eve, whom the archangel should always protect, nurture and help. Not just help; when you stand in the realm of perfected Adam, the archangel has to serve you as his real master in keeping with the ideal of love. This is the stage in which you give the commands. You will rise to this position. This is why we can say that this world is coming to an end. Everything in Satan's world that started with the love of the false parents will come to an end, and there will be a new world centered on the new love of True Parents. With this as fertilizer, a new world will spring up. Thus you should follow a new lifestyle. New love brings forth new life. This new love is the love of True Parents. (202-274, 1990.05.25)

22 You should be grateful. What should you be grateful for? For being liberated from Satan. True Parents liberated you from Satan's lifestyle and Satan's lineage. Lifestyle is grounded in culture and accompanied by habits. Lifestyles differ according to cultural background. The British lifestyle accords with British culture and the American lifestyle accords with American culture. Living environments differ. You should be liberated from your living environment. The next issue is lineage. These three liberations—from lifestyle, living environment, and lineage—will take place and naturally give rise to a holistic culture. What do you do after you are liberated? Since you are liberated from Satan, you will go to God. If you are liberated from Satan, everything that was chained to him, the false parent, will be released as well. Therefore you will return to the heart of your parents, who have been freed. Once you return, you should not maintain the habits and lifestyle of Satan's world. You should thoroughly cleanse yourselves. (202-275, 1990.05.25)

23 You should grasp the era you are in. The proclamation of True Parents will bring an end to Satan, the parent of the fallen lineage. True Parents have fought against Satan's world. The democratic and communist worlds are on the verge of collapse. Thus once I proclaim True Parents, on the condition of that victory, Satan's world will fall. The end of Satan's world means that we will be liberated from Satan. We have lived thus far within the realm of Satan's culture and lifestyle. However, what I am saying is that we are now being liberated from Satan's world, Satan's lifestyle and Satan's lineage. After being liberated from Satan, we need to return to God. (202-276, 1990.05.25)

True Parents are the center of the three great subject partners principle

24 The word “religion” (宗教) refers to the “ground” (宗) and “teaching” (教). It is the ultimate teaching. Religion is like the floor of a house. In order to have a house, we need a floor, and religion is that fundamental teaching. The final conclusion of that teaching is the True Parent, True Teacher and True Owner, which is God. On this earth there are false parents, raise teachers and false owners. Because the True Parents have not existed, false parents, false teachers and false owners, fixated on false love, have come into being. We need to reverse that and attend the True Parents, True Teachers and True Owners instead. These three are one—namely, God. By knowing God, we come to understand the foundational teaching that can become the root, trunk and branches of all teachings. (324-135, 2000.06.18)

25 According to the “three great subject partners principle” You should each become a true parent, true teacher and true owner. The root of the three great subject partner idea is true love. True love means to invest more than 100 percent, invest again, and then invest still more. You should become a parent, teacher and owner with this view. The root is one. Therefore, with the true parent at the center, the teacher should come to the right side and the owner to the left. These titles always stand together. You do not necessarily become a true parent just by giving birth to sons and daughters. You have to invest in them and raise them well. (205-021, 1990.07.15)

26 Even the president of a university should return home as a parent in the evening, and the president of a nation, who commands cabinet members, should go home to his or her family as a parent. This is because parents are the center of the family. A school should take the position of a parent, and so should an owner. Though everyone goes out into the world, in the end they return to their parents. You do not need to return home when you live in the place where you can attend your parents. That is the way it is when true love is the central focus. This is the basis for the saying that the king, the teacher and the parents are one. I am now teaching you truth, so I am the teacher of teachers. (215-081, 1991.02.06)

27 The core teaching embodied in the three great subject partners principle is the True Parents. Why are True Parents the core? It is because there is only one vertical standard by which to form the perpendicular relationship: true love. True love has one perpendicular relationship, so it is the foundation for the representative family, which is the point where the True Parents and God meet. Thus those great teachers or sovereigns who are models of parental love seek to create the environment of the heavenly kingdom, which is impervious to Satan. Since the false love of the devil cannot invade there, a realm of liberation will unfold, and the kingdom of heaven will be formed as a new realm on earth. (213-124, 1991.01.16)

CHAPTER 2 True Parents and the Messiah

Section 1. The Hope of Humankind

1 There have never been true parents in all of history. Because there were only false parents on the earth, there were no true parents in the heavenly world either. God is called the Parent of humankind, but what position is God in? For God Himself to become a true parent, He must have true children. If He does not, He cannot be a true parent. Therefore, when we look at God's own position, we see that even though He created us, He could not take the position of the True God, the one who created us. In other words, because the first human ancestors fell, God could not become the True God. If human beings had attained perfection, the true family of humankind with True Parents at the center would have emerged, and together with this true family, the true tribe, true people, true nation and true world would have emerged. If this had happened, people would have had blood ties to the True God and would have inherited the heart of the True God. Being related by blood to the True God, they would have formed the people of the True God. Based on that one people, one nation under God's direct governance would have been established. (83-038, 1976.02.05)

True Parents are the hope of history

2 Because we are fallen people, we are an extended family that has lost its true parents. Since we lost our true parents, we could not become true children. Even though the highest ideals of goodness that God intended to establish at the time of creation—true parents and true children—all broke down, God has vowed that He will bring true parents into being, even if a course of historical hardship is necessary, even if He has to endure endless hardship and suffering. At the same time, God is working to restore true children, true husbands and wives, true siblings, true nations, the true world, true humankind, and the true cosmos. God did not work by coming into the hearts of fallen people from the outset; He started working from a distance. First He connected to fallen people through all things and then through His true Son. Now He intends to come into the heart of each individual to become the Father of heart. This is the final goal of the providence of restoration. (10-126, 1960.09.18)

3 The history of the fallen world shows us that the parents born into this world are fallen parents. Fallen parents have created a fallen world. We live in a world connected to false parents. It has nothing to do with the world of the original ideal that God had envisioned and the True Parents envision. Countless people have lived and died during the world's long history, but not one could proudly proclaim to the universe, "I am so happy that I was born as a human being! I have succeeded in all aspects of being human." (137-081, 1985.12.24)

4 The hope of all people in history has been to receive and attend the True Parents. God founded the nation of Israel and the religion of Judaism so that they could receive the Messiah. The Messiah is the True Parent. God created Christianity and Christian culture to receive the Lord at his Second Coming. The returning Lord comes as the True Parent and the third Adam. (51-354, 1971.12.05)

5 What is the hope that we should nurture? We should hope that we can genuinely attend the True Parents who come to the earth on behalf of Heaven. We should not want to attend the True Parents only after they are victorious, when all people look up to them and respect them. We should want to attend them while they are passing through their sorrowful course. Your ancestors feel deep sorrow because they could not attend the True Parents during their course of suffering. It is the hope of all humankind to truly serve the True Parents. Therefore you should become true, filial sons and daughters, willing to serve the True Parents in miserable circumstances rather than in glorious ones. (13-291, 1964.04.12)

6 At the time of the True Parents, advent, the nations of the world were relating to each other as brothers and sisters. At the end of the Second World War, the victorious nations liberated the nations that they defeated. The former, in the position of the older brother, had defeated the latter, in the position of their younger brother. Then these victorious nations blessed the nations in the younger brother's position. Had they not, the victorious nations would have been held accountable by the Heavenly Parent. That is why this unprecedented historical phenomenon took place. History has been yearning for the encounter with the True Parents. Religions came about for the sake of that encounter. Furthermore, all the nations of the world are looking for the True Parents. Thus, religions and nations emerged with the mission to prepare the way for the True Parents. (51-354, 1971.12.05)

7 The True Parents are the symbol of all hope, the symbol of absolute hope for fallen people. They are the fruit of history, the center of all ages and the center of all the nations of the world. The True Parents are the starting point of a future that connects to the ideal world. What have our ancestors wished for throughout the ages in history? If the world were united, whom would it wish to find? It would wish to find the True Parents. In other words, it would wish to relate with the True Parents eternally. (35-237, 1970.10.19)

8 No one in history was able to call out the name "True Parents." They never even conceived of it. But today you are in the glorious position of being able to call their name, know them and attend them. So you are in a happier and nobler position than anyone in history: Many people throughout history toiled and made tremendous sacrifices to lay the foundation for the victory of the True Parents at their coming, and to this day they are still toiling. Considering this, you should know that the words "True Parents" that we speak today signify the greatest blessing for

humanity. It is because the True Parents are the ones who bring healing to the chaos of history; they are the starting point of our advancement toward a new world; they are laying the internal conditions that can subjugate Satan; and by conquering Satan, the being that has ruled the external world, they are establishing the center that will liberate God. Therefore you should first be thankful for this amazing grace by which you can live together with the True Parents, receiving and carrying out their instructions. (43-144, 1971.04.29)

9 The True Parents represent the greatest hope and the greatest foundation of victory in history. As they are the central point of hope in history, all people must seek them. The place of historical hope is neither a nation nor the world. Outwardly it may appear to be a nation or the world, but you cannot solve the external world's problems by working through the external world alone. The purpose of God's providence is to save the world, and in order to do so, He must send good parents to the earth to create a perfect foundation. Without that foundation there is no way to create a perfect nation or to save the world. Therefore, the overall hope of history is neither a nation nor the world; it is the True Parents. In this context, people can have neither their own ethnic views nor their own worldviews. Ethnic views should emerge only after the True Parents, lineage has been bequeathed to humankind. Tribes and peoples should be organized after inheriting their lineage, and then the world can be restored to God. Without True Parents, none of these is possible. Without receiving the True Parents, nothing can work. (55-153, 1972.05.07)

10 What has history been searching for? What have all ages been searching for? What should the future search for? It is True Parents. Unless everything is connected to them, we cannot find the standard for real happiness in the course of history or in the universe. As for love, originally its vertical and horizontal foundations, centering on God and human beings, both have to be the same. Ever since these foundations were separated, fallen humankind has yearned to make them one again. Therefore, Christianity seeks the relationship of the bridegroom and the bride centering on Jesus. (26-199, 1969.10.25)

11 We are seeking our purpose now, not a thousand years in the future. The purpose we have found now is one that even our future descendants will look back to. That purpose is the True Parents. The True Parents belong to the past, and also to the present and the future. They are eternal. Based on this understanding, you should not only welcome True Parents in the coming world; you should yearn to attend True Parents in the present. Although you are living in the present era, you should also become the fruit of the past and the origin of the future. The three eras—past, present and future—must become one. Living in the present era, you should become a person who can unite the past that is behind you and the future that is to unfold. By what means will they be united? It is by True Parents' love. With whom should they be united? It is with their sons and daughters. Who are these sons and

daughters? They are those who make True Parents love their center, like the sons and daughters who would have been born of Adam and Eve had they not fallen. They would have come forth from Adam and Eve as the sons and daughters of Heaven. Hence, when you become a son or daughter of the True Parents, you will be connected to the love of the three ages. Even though you are fallen people, you must retrace the course of history and regain that position. (26-200, 1969.10.25)

12 If we understood that our original parents, the parents of original nature, were dead, and found a way to bring those parents back to life, we would have to offer indescribable devotions without words to pioneer that path. Even if we felt wronged and humiliated, with our heartstrings rent and broken by the sorrows of Heaven, we would want to offer unchanging loyalty for their sake. We must prepare the way so that our parents can revive. It is our duty as filial sons and daughters. It is our responsibility. We must pioneer this way without caring whether we live or die. We shouldn't care about the good things in the world or be dismayed by the bad things, even if the world persecutes us and we have to go the path of death. We must cleave to the way of loyalty and filial piety in order to pioneer this way. (20-123, 1968.05.01)

Becoming a son or daughter of the True Parents

13 Today we are attending True Parents in this world where we live. However, this earth is inhabited not only by True Parents* sons and daughters but also by the children of fallen parents. Originally, all people were to have been God's beloved children, descended from the flesh and blood of True Parents, but due to the Fall they became fallen sons and daughters instead. So the Savior must come again as the Lord of the Second Advent in order to rectify and clear away all the wrongdoing stemming from our first ancestors. (210-360, 1990.12.27)

14 Jesus was to be the True Parent who had nothing to do with the Fall. He came with the mission of the True Parent. Since Adam and Eve, our first ancestors, fell and created a fallen lineage, they could not become one with God in the original ideal world of His desire, the world that had never experienced the Fall. They could not become the True Parents who give birth to sons and daughters of God's direct lineage. Instead they had a relationship with Satan and became his minions, giving birth to children who are spiritually dead. All humankind today is descended from those false parents. You must therefore deny the lineage of the false parents and receive the True Parents. (14-280, 1965.01.03)

15 The Fall sowed the false love, false life and false lineage of the devil. People have the love, the life, and the lineage they received from their ancestors. Each is a fruit of the love, life and lineage inherited from his or her ancestors through history. Because we received Satan's love, Satan's life, and Satan's blood, each of us stands as an enemy of God. Peace on earth cannot come about until we disengage from,

disown and discard our connection to Satan. That is why I have brought the ideal of the True Parents. The True Parents are fighting to completely eliminate this false love and completely clean away the evil elements that obstruct the work for peace, so that individuals, families, tribes, peoples and nations can be separated from Satan. (217-185, 1991.05.27)

16 You do not know the innumerable sacrifices Christianity has made in order to build its current worldwide foundation. The miserable screams of those who were sacrificed and offered on the altar of martyrdom permeate Christian history; they have been heard in every corner of the world. We should know that these bloody altars still exist. That historical sorrow is right in front of our eyes, and it is our solemn task to resolve it. We must liberate God. What a wretched history Christianity has suffered, from its inception until now! We must liberate it. America and Christianity have been caring for all humanity as the subject-partner nation and the subject-partner religion representing the cosmos. But now they must not only do that but also receive the right of the victorious prince—the right of the eldest son—for generations and generations to come. (210-361, 1990.12.27)

17 What is the desire of all people? What are their ideals, their hopes? Which of them is their culmination? Which of them do you think comes first? The greatest hope a person can have is to become a son or daughter of God, and next is to be a son or daughter who receives God's love. After that, it is to inherit all that belongs to God. There is nothing greater than these. The hope of each person is to become a child of God, to become a son or daughter who receives God's love, and to inherit all that belongs to God. (91-242, 1977.02.23)

18 What is happiness? We human beings lost our parents, and have been orphans for six thousand years; hence happiness is to find our parents for the first time. What could be more joyful than this? We follow a religion in order to find such parents. The parents we believed to be lost for eternity can actually come back to life. If our parents can be brought back to life, we would do whatever it takes to bring them back. Would money be an obstacle on the way of finding our parents? Would our relatives be a problem? Would our nation or the world pose a problem? Nothing would stand in the way. We should put everything aside and offer all our devotion and effort toward finding our Parents. (20-122, 1985.05.01)

19 God lost His beloved true son and daughter, whom He wanted to love to the fullest. From the viewpoint of the man-woman relationship, the God-centered husband and wife were lost. From the viewpoint of the child, the true parents were lost. By a single fallen act, God lost these three. How can these three types of love be recovered simultaneously through the principle of restoration through indemnity? How can a standard that God can approve of be established? These are the issues. First, the standard of a true son and daughter who can be loved by God must be restored. When the son and daughter who have gone through that process

come of age, they should unite as husband and wife with God's love at their center. Then they must give birth to good children in order to form the four-position foundation that God desires and that can bring Him joy. (22-204, 1969.02.04)

20 The hope of all humankind is to meet the True Parents. This encounter with the True Parents is the fruit of history, the center of this age and the foundation for the future. You who are engrafted to them will become their branches. Up to this point, all the hopes of the ages in history have focused on the future, but the opportunity to connect with True Parents during your lifetime happens only once in eternity. This is a precious chance that comes only once. Your ancestors did not have it; nor will your descendants. Your hopes do not lie anywhere else. You are to become the devoted sons and daughters of the True Parents. In the future, the True Parents will hold the position of the King of kings on earth. That is why the place where you meet True Parents is the center where all hopes come to fruition, be it the hope of humanity, the hope of history or the hope of the present era. Your hopes do not lie elsewhere. (46-168, 1971.08.13)

21 What is the desire of all people today? It is to meet the True Parents, and after that to welcome one global nation. From whom would your future descendants want to be descended? Your sons and daughters would want to be born through the lineage of True Parents. I am saying that the True Parents will become the starting point of a new future. Those who can fully love True Parents can rightly claim that they completely love history. They are the ones who truly love the world and who are worthy to love their descendants in the future. Therefore you should be grateful to receive love from True Parents, even if you have to sacrifice your life. Then you will be worthy to inherit True Parents' love. (35-237, 1970.10.19)

22 Though we human beings were created by God, we are unable to act as His sons and daughters. The first reason for this is that God is prevented from freely loving us as His own sons and daughters. Since God cannot love us in that way, we cannot receive love as God's sons and daughters. The second reason is that we are unable to marry as God's beloved sons and daughters. The third reason is that we are unable to form heavenly families with God's love at the center. If human beings had been able to fulfill these three, they would not have become as miserable as they are today. Therefore people must seek the place where in the end all will be reunited and where all will abide. The nations of the world must find the original homeland, the numerous peoples of the world must find their original hometowns, and the numerous tribes must find their original parents. This has been the objective of God's providence to the present day. (21-042, 1968.09.01)

23 Salvation means returning to one's original state. Then, there should be some standard that determines what it means to be restored to one's original state. What is that standard? The human race is made up of both men and women. Therefore, the first standard of restoration is not only to become a son or daughter of God.

After going through the role of a child, we should form a husband-wife relationship and become true parents so that we can establish a new lineage. This is the purpose for which God created us and the standard from which our history can begin anew. Therefore the problem is not one particular nation, people or tribe. The problem is also not a specific son or daughter. The problem is that we absolutely need True Parents. The greatest problem for God is to find and establish the True Parents, who are the manifestation of God in the flesh. The greatest problem and purpose for humanity is how to meet the True Parents whom God establishes. (025-173, 1969.10.04)

Section 2. The Second Coming of Jesus and the True Parents

1 Your ancestors were born of false parents, but they can find salvation by helping their descendants in this age, when the perfected True Parents are on the earth. You must resemble the True Parents. The position of your ancestors in the spirit world changes as you live for the sake of others and dedicate your lives to the True Parents. The Messiah comes in the Last Days and educates the entire fallen generation of his time. The perfected True Parents come to rebuild all that was built before on this earth and in the spirit world by descendants of the false parents. They can rebuild it when you unite with them in accordance with God's original idea. To do this, Cain must follow Abel, the second son. The spirit world, in the position of the first son, must follow the earthly world—the next generation- in the position of the second son. Thus Christianity came forth from Jesus, the second Son. (293-210, 1998.05.26)

2 The Bible says, 'I am the Alpha and the Omega, the first and the last, the beginning and the end:' (Rev. 22:13) It means that due to the Fall, God was unable to fulfill His purpose as expressed in the Book of Genesis, but He will complete His purpose, as is written in the Book of Revelation. Jesus came to earth as what kind of person? Because Adam fell, Jesus had to come as the perfected Adam, one with God's love and untouched by the Fall. That is why 1 Corinthians 15:45 teaches, "The first man, Adam, became a living being; the last Adam became a life-giving spirit." The Bible indicates Jesus is a second Adam. The family as planned by God cannot come about without the positions of the true son and daughter, true husband and wife, and true parents. Therefore this family must appear on earth. (54-108, 1972.03.20)

3 Where can fallen people seek out the basis of original true love? It begins with the True God and the True Parents. From there, people will create harmony with one another, with the True God as their center. What does the Bible teach? The essence of what is needed to fulfill God's Will is taught in the sixty-six books of the Old and New Testaments. The core of God's hope and humankind's hope is the ideal world of love, the kingdom of heaven. The Bible teaches the direct path to the kingdom of heaven. The key point is that although God already existed, there were

no True Parents. So the True Parents had to be recovered. The decisive providential fact is that Jesus came as the bridegroom to find his bride. They are what all the world's religions have been seeking. The conclusion of the Bible is the bridegroom and the bride. Once they are restored, they will recover the original garden of love. (134-173, 1985.04.07)

4 In Genesis it is written that there were two trees in the Garden of Eden; one was the tree of life and the other the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. What do those trees symbolize? They symbolize the true man and the true woman whom God must recover. Because those who were to become the True Father and the True Mother were lost, they came to be symbolized by those trees. The Bible teaches many things in such a symbolic way. When God led the Israelites out of Egypt, a pillar of fire and a pillar of cloud appeared before them, with the pillar of cloud leading them by day and the pillar of fire by night. What did those pillars symbolize? They symbolized a man and a woman, symbolically showing that in the Last Days the True Parents would come and that the people of Israel would follow them faithfully. Those who did not follow the pillar of fire and pillar of cloud perished. (134-173, 1985.04.07)

5 When the Israelites returned to Canaan after the course of forty years, it was order to attend the Messiah. Their course returning to Canaan was to guide them in serving the Messiah, who would come as the True Parents in order to realize the kingdom of heaven on earth and the world of God's ideal. However, since God foresaw that the Israelites might all fall away in the wilderness, He gave them the two tablets of stone, which symbolically represented the Messiah. They were placed in the Ark of the Covenant. If the Israelites could uphold the tablets with absolute faith, this would be a condition for them to serve the Messiah absolutely when he came. In this way God showed them that they could begin the founding of the kingdom of heaven. Thus, God set up a symbolic messiah for their training. This was the idea behind the Tabernacle. It was symbolic preparation for the coming of the Messiah. (134-174, 1985.04.07)

6 What happens in the Last Days? Heaven and earth are turned upside down. This means that the natural order is changed. To say that the natural order is changed does not mean that the sky is split in two or that the round Earth is made flat. It means that the person arriving later becomes the ancestor and the person arriving first becomes the descendant from the standpoint of God's Will. In the Last Days, the true ancestors of humankind emerge for the first time in six thousand years. All people must receive the flesh and blood of the True Parents in order for the proper relationships to be established. That is why Jesus said, "Before Abraham was, I am!" (John 8:58). What did Jesus mean when he said he existed before Abraham? Jesus was supposed to establish the True Parents, and there cannot be more than one set of True Parents. There cannot be more than one original ancestor of humankind. Since Jesus came as the original ancestor to inaugurate the True Parents of

humankind, from the viewpoint of God's Will he was "before Abraham." (156-231, 1966.05.25)

The Second Coming and the True Parents

7 God's purpose in creating human beings was not to fulfill some fanciful idea of a spiritual nation. It was so that during their lives on earth, people would shed their sweat working on the land, form families and tribes, then a people and a nation. That nation would have been the kingdom of heaven that God hoped to see and that could receive God's love. The original purpose of creation was for people to set up this kind of nation and receive God's love. It was not God's wish to have a spiritual nation without any foundation on earth. Nor was it God's intention that the Lord who returns should descend to the earth on a cloud and build a fantasy nation. The purpose of the Lord's coming is to use the earth as his foothold. He will find his bride who can fully receive God's love, and carry out the work of recovering all that was lost six thousand years ago through the Fall—through which our first forbears were unable to become the true ancestors and instead became false ones. (22-083, 1969.01.26)

8 God sent Jesus as the True Father of humankind. He was a true man, and the fruit of four thousand years of His effort to establish relationships of love. If one true woman had emerged among the people of Israel, and had she loved Jesus, the True Father, from the position of the True Mother, the people of Israel would not have remained a pitiable people; they would not have become like orphans. Having begun as a people, from then on they would have risen to the world level. But instead they expelled Jesus, and thus they lost the one man who had come as the Son of God, who embodied God's love and whose purpose was to bond all people to God in love. Because this one man departed this earth without completing his purpose, he must return to complete it. (22-085, 1969.01.26)

9 There is one issue remaining that we must surely resolve. What is this one issue? It is God's love. His love does not come from the false parents but manifests on earth through the True Parents. In order for there to be True Parents, first there must be a True Father. The person who comes to the earth with the character of that father, representing God's love, is the central person in whom religious people today place their faith. That is, he is the Lord of the Second Advent. (22-086, 1969.01.26)

10 What is the concept of the Second Coming? It refers to the concept that the Messiah is the True Father through whom everyone must inherit a new lineage. In order to create a new lineage, the Messiah must come as the True Father and win over Satan's world. Then, together with Eve, the True Mother, the Messiah must establish a worldwide foundation that Satan cannot invade. Further, he and the True Mother must engraft sons and daughters horizontally to the True Parents by

uniting them as husbands and wives to make families. This is the meaning of the marriage Blessing given in the Unification Church. The lineage of Unification Church members originates from God. That is why if Satan's world opposes us, it will have to pay reparations for the damage they cause. (169-038, 1987.10.04)

11 The idea of the Second Coming is the idea of True Parents. It refers to our bond with the True Parents and the change of our lineage through the True Parents. However, one man or woman alone cannot accomplish this change of lineage. Not only must we make a vertical relationship with them; we also must replace our existing horizontal bonds. This means things must be turned upside down. This is because we must make connections based on the True Parents heart. (172-056, 1988.01.07)

12 Unification Church members may think they have no relationship with Christianity, but that is absolutely wrong. The Old Testament Age was supposed to be the time for the restoration of Adam and Eve as the True Parents. The New Testament Age was also a time for the restoration of the True Parents, as is the Completed Testament Age. God's purpose to restore the True Parents has always been the same. The Messiah is the True Parents. Therefore the essence or purpose of Christianity, Judaism and the Unification Church is the same. Then what is different? Judaism was to receive the Messiah, the True Parents, on the national level, and then expand to the world. What about Christianity? Christianity was to receive the Messiah, the True Parents, on a global foundation after Jesus departed this world. What is the Completed Testament Age? It is on the cosmic level. Its goal is to have even the spirit world receive the True Parents. It is on a different dimension. We have to make this distinction clear. (131-131, 1984.04.29)

13 Before the heavenly kingdom emerges, a heavenly people must come forth. What must be done for this heavenly people to arise? A people does not come into being all of a sudden. A special clan must first emerge, and this clan must arouse its people. This clan must arise from an extended family of close relatives. For these close relatives to come forth, one family must emerge as their center. For this family to appear there must be children, and for children to appear there must be parents. For the parents to appear there must be one man who can represent everything in heaven. He is the Messiah. If he is to become a parent, he must find a partner and unite with her. This is the teaching of Christianity about what will happen in the Last Days. Centered on Jesus, over the past two thousand years what had been turned upside-down has been spiritually restored on the global foundation of Christianity. This is spiritual Christianity. Now at this time, when Christianity receives the Messiah, its mission will be fulfilled. (66-277, 1973.05.16)

The mission of the Messiah

14 The greatest of all religions will be the one that establishes the logic of love and insists on the complete rejection of the fallen world. That accomplished, this religion must infuse its churches with positive love to bring about a greater world. An ideal world can then emerge. What kind of church is the Unification Church? It is the church where God can taste a love He never experienced before with human beings. It is the church with the mission to implant the root of God's love in people and in our world, something that has never been accomplished before. (140-028, 1986.02.01)

15 The lord of goodness and the lord of evil are fighting each other. They are waging a battle of good and evil over human beings. Who will end this battle? Neither God nor Satan can end it. Who can bring to an end the fight between the evil god and the good God? Neither God nor Satan can. Only a true person can end the battle. That person must be the lord of love—the one who begins from true love, possesses true love and can be followed by all people. Otherwise he would not be a true person, nor could he end the fight between God and Satan. Then who can resolve this fight? For this task, God has sent a representative entrusted with His mainstream teaching. This is the Messiahs teaching. (136-220, 1985.12.29)

16 What will the Messiah do when he comes? In all of history, God never had a nation. The Messiah comes as the commander-in-chief in the fight to restore one nation to God, a nation with sovereignty, territory and people. Then, on that foundation, the Messiah will fight to restore the entire world—all the realms that expanded horizontally from the fallen ancestors—to God. This is the mission of the Messiah. To subjugate Satan, it is not enough just to recover one nation. Since Satan has global sovereignty, he must be stripped of his sovereignty throughout the world. Only then will the realm of liberation unfold on the earth. God created the Garden of Eden as a garden of freedom and peace. If any shadow of Satan's opposition remains anywhere on earth, the ideal of that garden will not be realized. The kingdom of heaven on earth will be completed only when every shadow of Satan's antagonism has disappeared from the earth. (57-130, 1972.05.29)

17 The task of the Messiah on the individual level is to subjugate Satan and eradicate his lineage, thereby paving the way to individual victory. He then must pave the way to victory for the family, nation and world. This is the path the Messiah must walk. First, he must pave the way for individuals; second, for families; third, for nations; and fourth, for the world. After the Messiah wins the individual victory, even if Satan mobilizes the entire world—even if the nations of the democratic world join in Satan's attack on the Messiah—he must fight against them all and win. He must win on the family level and then on the worldwide level. In other words, he must gain victory in a one-on-one fight, just as Jacob did when he prevailed over the angel. Then he leads an all-out attack against Satan's world. Now the time has come for this. To accomplish it, a representative nation is needed at the forefront. That nation is Korea. (54-198, 1972.03.24)

18 What kind of person is the coming Lord? He is a man who must bring Satan to surrender, and then win over myriads of spiritual beings, the numerous spiritual leaders of the different religions, and the leaders of every walk of life who abide in the realms of the spirit world. One by one he must win them over. As he guides them with his godly character and true love, they will come to understand the true reality of religion and the universe, and they will surrender. This will happen because all beings in this universe desire to be absorbed into the realm of the Lord of love on earth, who is higher than they are. Once he wins them over through true love, he should inherit all their authority. He should receive the inheritance of a unifying authority. This is the responsibility the Messiah must fulfill on earth- (100-019, 1978.10.04)

19 There are spiritually oriented people today who brag as if they are something special in this world. However, they do not understand how to resolve the fundamental problems in the fallen realm. They are just offering devotions and biding their time. That is not enough. Victory must be gained first over Satan's realm, then over all the realms of the spirit world. That is not a visible world; it is invisible. Without fighting and defeating Satan in the invisible world, there is no way for us to go forward in the spirit world. In fact, we would not even be able to properly enter the spirit world, due to his incessant interruptions; and even if we could, we would not be able to win the battle. So we need to gain victory over Satan's realm. Then in the spirit world we need to win over all faiths, from the least up to the highest of the mainstream religions, including Christianity. This means we must inherit everything from these religions. When we have fought all these battles at every level we will receive God's official recognition of our victory in heaven and on earth. He will say to us, "You are the victors over Satan and over the evil spirit world." Then, with His words written on our banner, we can begin to take action here on earth. That work remains to be done. (100-019, 1978.10.04)

Section 3. The Messiah Becomes the True Parents

1 Today fallen people are wandering about, searching for a philosophy of hope and for the one point through which they can return to God. Their ultimate purpose is to find the one person who can rejoice, communicate and harmonize with heaven and earth and manifest the glory of Heaven. This one person is the one who will substantiate the purpose of our faith, hope and love. I believe that you have already learned through the Principle of Restoration that everything—including the indemnity conditions needed to build the foundation of faith and to rid oneself of fallen nature—is based on faith. In order to rid us of our fallen nature, however, we need the Messiah, who is the substantiation of hope. The time of hope we have been waiting for is when the Messiah comes. The Messiah is the very being for whom our faith and our hope is purposed. When this purpose is realized through the Messiah, what is the only thing that will remain to be fulfilled? Love. Ibis love

comes through becoming perfect embodiments of faith and hope. The Messiah is the one who comes as the representative of that love. (13-141, 1964.01.01)

The Messiah comes as the fruit of faith, hope and love

2 People are yearning for the time when the impossible can become possible. Facing the impossible in their lives, fallen people wander in search of the right person—the person who can realize the purpose of their faith, hope and love. Therefore in order to proclaim our faith, we need a person who is the substantiation of faith. To proclaim our hope, we need a person who is the substantiation of hope. To proclaim our love, we need a person who is the substantiation of love. The one who is the substantiation of faith, hope and love is a true person who was born without any ties to the Fall, the one who has no relationship to the world of the Fall. It is through him that heaven and earth will be set straight, through him that Heavens glory will begin for the first time, and through him that the love between the Father and His son will truly commence. Also through him, based on substantiating the father-son relationship, there will come a husband-wife relationship, and from that husband and wife a family will emerge. In this way a new heaven and earth will begin. (13-141, 1964.01.01)

3 The coming Messiah is the substantiation of faith, hope and love. To qualify as the substantiation of faith, he must achieve victory in a global-level struggle based on faith. The title of Messiah cannot be attained without that result. In order to become the substantiation of hope, he must achieve victory in a global struggle based on hope. The same sort of victory is needed to become the substantiation of love. What is the purpose of seeking to fulfill faith, hope and love in our lives of faith? Some might have faith to save themselves as individuals. Others might have faith to save their own families. Going one step further, some might seek to be the substantiation of faith for the sake of their tribe, nation, the world or heaven and earth. It is harder to save a family than an individual, harder to save a tribe than a family and harder to save a people than a tribe. The larger the level, the more difficult salvation becomes. (13-142, 1964.01.01)

4 What kind of person is the coming Messiah? He stands as the substantiation of faith, hope and love for the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos. Only when he stands in this position can the unfulfilled faith, hope and love in human history finally bear fruit. Otherwise neither faith nor hope nor love can bear fruit. His words are not just those of one individual. It is the same for you too when you speak with conviction: your words will influence world history. (13-143, 1964.01.01)

Understanding the Messiah and the process of engrafting

5 God established religions in order to save the fallen world. The world had become Satan's territory. The Bible refers to wild olive trees, which are the olive trees under Satan's husbandry. Religions try to cultivate olive orchards that God can manage as He likes. Wild olive orchards are cultivated by Satan according to his desire, so God has no control over them. Through religion, however, God tries to bring Satan's orchards under His management. God expands the orchards under His control until He has a foundation that surpasses the global realm of Satan, the realm of evil olive trees. To do this, God created the various cultural spheres based on religion. (134-010, 1985.01.01)

6 Satan's realm already exists in the form of nations; hence, God needs a nation that He can lead for His providence. He also needs a man to come in the position of the Parent of this nation. This was the vision in Jesus's mind when he came as the Messiah to the people of Israel. If the first human beings had not fallen but become True Parents, then centered on them all humankind would have simply entered the kingdom of heaven. All people would have gone straight to heaven and become citizens of the kingdom, living in the heavenly palace. However, because of the Fall, all this was lost and instead the human race was plunged into hell. To correct this, God will send the true olive tree to the orchard of wild olive trees. But first, as the Owner preparing for the time when the True Parents will come, He established the realm of religion. This realm of religion is not yet composed of true olive trees. Still, among the orchards of wild olive trees on this planet Earth, there is a realm of wild olive trees that is, at least, within God's jurisdiction. Hence, when the true olive tree appears, they can be cut and the work of engrafting can begin. (227-074, 1992.02.10)

7 God created the world, but Satan stole it from him; that has been God's situation to this day. However, God ultimately cannot lose; thus His plan is to send one true olive tree to the earth to serve as a model. However, the true olive tree, the Messiah, should not come alone. Because Satan's world formed societies and nations centering on couples, the Messiah cannot bear fruit as the true olive tree if he comes alone. The Messiah needs his bride and they must become one; then he can bear fruit as the true olive tree. To fulfill this, Jesus came to the earth as the bridegroom to find his bride and then cultivate an orchard of true olive trees. He was supposed to lead the movement to cut all the wild olive trees of Satan's world and engraft them. God created the environment for this engrafting to be done all at once through Judaism, the chosen people of Israel; they were the sphere of tribes under His management. (134-011, 1985.01.01)

8 Six thousand years ago, centered on the vertical and horizontal love of both sets of parents—God, the vertical Parent and the first human beings, the horizontal parents—humankind was supposed to make a joyful beginning. But Satan invaded that original starting point. What was lost then should now be taken back; hence, you must become the sons and daughters of True Parents. Since you are wild olive

trees, you need to receive a branch of the true olive tree and receive the engrafting. God intends that religions do the work of engrafting. That is why engrafting is a teaching of Christianity. The marriage feast of the bride and bridegroom must occur on earth. (58-219, 1972.06.11)

9 Satan tries to drag all human beings off to hell. But from among them, God separates people out one by one. These people were all wild olive trees in Satan's world, but God cultivates some to become wild olive trees on Heavens side. God made them olive trees on His side, and raised them to lead the world. This is the democratic world, which is based on Christianity. When the world on Satan's side weakens and the Christian cultural sphere is well established, the Lord will return, cut the wild olive trees all at once, engraft to them completely, make them one, and turn them around. (201-129, 1990.03.27)

10 The True Parents are the Lords who correct the lineage. They know the secret of how to do that. When the first parents fell they became the false parents, but the True Parents know how to deal with this problem and revive them by giving them an injection of life—that is, by establishing the standard of true love, true life and true lineage, and then connecting that standard to them, replacing the false love, life and lineage. Thus they turn from false back into true. In reversing the situation, however, True Parents cannot give rebirth to all families at once. They will engraft themselves to those families branch by branch. In order to engraft to a wild olive tree family, there needs to be a model true olive tree family. When a shoot from the model olive tree family is engrafted and three years have passed, each wild olive tree family can bear the fruits of a true family. I am saying that I will engraft a shoot of the True Parents to the mothers and fathers from false, wild olive tree families and transform them into families of True Parents' sons and daughters. (317-203, 2000.02.26)

The foundation to receive the Messiah

11 As a result of the Fall, this world became Satan's. Hence, in this world there are any number of individuals, families, tribes, and nations on Satan's side. But that is not so for Heavens side. There are individuals on Heavens side, but no families, tribes, peoples or nations that have reached Heavens standard. Hence, it is crucial that the Messiah as an individual has a foundation upon which to win over families, tribes and nations. Without it, there will be no way for ordinary people to rise to that standard. God prepared a realm within which individuals and families could rise together with the Messiah when he came to the earth. The people of Israel constituted that realm. They believed they were the chosen people. But the nation of Israel did not rise to that standard. It could not achieve that level. It is as if the chosen people are straddling the line; yet it is their hope to cross that line. If they do not, it is a serious problem. And yet, no matter how they try, they cannot succeed in it by themselves. (54-186, 1972.03.24)

12 When the Messiah comes to the people of Israel, if they unite with him with the determination to die for him and together with him, then Satan cannot pull them away no matter how hard he may try. Then individuals, families, tribes, peoples and nations will engraft and will be raised up at the same time. So there must be the principle of a chosen people in this world. Based on this people whom God chooses, He needs to form a nation. The existence of the term “chosen people” is itself evidence of God’s existence. From the perspective of this principle, a prophecy that the Messiah will be sent is evidence of God’s existence. (54-187, 1972.03.24)

13 Why do we need the Messiah? First, because of the Fall we have false parents. Our first parents, who were supposed to unite with God, were lost. The Messiah is the one who brings the position of Parents who are able to become one with God to us. Second, we need the Messiah to give us a second birth. We have Satan’s blood in our veins, so the Messiah must extract that blood from us, removing us from the position of Satan’s sons and daughters. He gives us this second birth by engrafting to us. Third, the Messiah makes Satan surrender, by means of us. In other words, the Messiah comes in order to qualify us to judge him and return him to the position of servant. (54-187, 1972.03.24)

14 What will happen in the Last Days? The cosmos-centered way of thinking will appear. It teaches us how to relate to God. People are ignorant of God and His existence, and hence they do not know how to deal with their situation in the Last Days. Also, they do not know what will happen at that time. The person Heaven sends to deal with this, when the time comes and the environment is prepared, is the Messiah, the Savior. The Savior is not just a historical, global, great teacher. Most of all, he is our Father. God is our internal Father and the coming Savior is our external Father. (153-024, 1963.10.18)

Section 4. True Parents and Family Salvation

1 Because the first ancestors, Adam and Eve, fell at the completion level of the growth stage, all human beings lost their original parents. In other words, although God intended to establish our first ancestors as the True Parents, that did not happen. God wanted a family that could bring Him joy, but He had no such family. The four-position foundation with God at the center never materialized. Instead, fallen descendants were born in fallen families. They all fell into a realm of evil in which they had no direct relationship with God. Therefore God has been toiling to find a family with whom He can relate both inwardly and outwardly. This is the history of the providence of restoration. (44-278, 1971.05.24)

The providence to restore the family

2 Fallen humankind must meet God's Son, who is outside the realm of Satan's accusation. The human race as a whole has no parents in the true sense. All of you have fallen parents, but you were unable to have parents who had attained perfection in accordance with Heavens Will. Once God has His Son and Daughter, He needs them to restore the Parents whom He can love, and then for those Parents to form a family. God will seek out that family. Where the Parents' family is, there is God's love. That is where we will meet with God. (114-029, 1981.05.14)

3 We on the earth today must find our brothers and sisters, our father and mother, and our own home in our original hometown. There, parents dwell centered on God's love. The love these parents give their family is well received by their sons and daughters. In that environment everything is in harmony and everything goes well. There, people sing songs of love. This hometown will expand horizontally to form a people. But first the family must be recovered through religion, because Adam lost the family. (114-030, 1981.05.14)

4 Before Adam and Eve fell they were like the substantial bodies of God. Had they become internally one with God and externally one with each other, the family they formed would have been God's family. The sons and daughters born to that family would have been God's sons and daughters. However, Satan violated Eve and ultimately caused Adam to fall as well. At the age of sixteen, while they were still immature and knew nothing about love, Satan invaded them. Satan made an unprincipled love relationship and entered the place where God should have dwelled. Then who was the father of Adam and Eve? It was Satan. That is why the Bible records that Jesus said, "You are from your father the devil" and called people a "brood of vipers." (John 8:44; Matt. 12:34) John the Baptist called them the same thing. The serpent mentioned in the Bible is the ancestor of the human race. (22-281, 1969.05.04)

5 God's work of re-creation is to recover the lost family of Adam in the realm of Satan's world. It is to create a victorious family that will never perish, but will withstand Satan's strongest opposition. God is trying to create a family that will live in His palace, with His true life and true love at its center. That is the highest goal of the providence of salvation. The purpose of the history of the providence of salvation until today has been to find that perfect family. Jesus could not do this at his coming. Originally, Jesus was supposed to create a perfect family and govern the nation. Then he was to enter Rome and bring it to God. Had he done that, he would have united the world. Then he could have returned to his hometown. (234-294, 1992.08.27)

6 What has God been looking for? He does not seek a subject partner; rather He seeks ideal object partners. He looks for those who resemble Him and reflect the inner and outer aspects of the world He created. The result of this search, and the new starting point, is the family. Nothing can represent the universe better than the

family. Unity with one's parents is the meeting point of past and present. In our families, with each of us at the center, we can love the past by loving our parents, love the present by loving our spouse and love the future by loving our children. To deeply experience the love of three generations is to connect the past, the present and the future. The family is the core body where these three kinds of love are concentrated. (30-080, 1970.03.17)

7 Throughout history up to the present day, individuals have modeled themselves on other individuals. Societies change, modeling themselves on more developed societies. Many people, and many nations, have tried to do this. However, there has not been a family that people have tried to emulate. In the history of the world, there has been no such family to this day. Nor has there been a teaching that guides people to emulate a certain family. There have been many assertions about emulating certain nations or individuals, but no such assertions about families. Then what is the problem that still remains? It is not that we need an individual or a nation to worship, but that we need a family that everyone can revere. It is only that kind of family that can found a new world and bring eternal happiness to the universe. If we settle down with such a family, it will become the basis for our happiness as well. (30-081, 1970.03.17)

The age of family salvation

8 What has God sought to establish through His providence of restoration over six thousand years? It is the family. Before establishing a nation, a tribe or a church, God sought to establish the family. More specifically, He sought to find partners through whom to establish His family. That family is indispensable for forming a nation. It is the basis of everything. Jesus, who came on the foundation of four thousand years of history, also needed to form a family. But he could not find his Eve, who would have been the basis of their family. In other words, he was unable to find his bride. And although he did find three disciples as his spiritual sons, they, in the position of Cain, had no opportunity to serve the sons and daughters of his direct lineage. Instead, these Cain-type disciples opposed him on the family level, and Jesus as the resurrected Lord could not reach the standard to restore that. Jesus family was to have represented the three stages of formation, growth and completion. To restore that requires the three eras of Adam, Jesus and the Second Coming. This lack of a family foundation was a major reason that Jesus had to die on the cross. (22-304, 1969.05.04)

9 Jesus came to recover the family. The work of salvation is the work of restoration. Humankind is sick, and those who are sick need to be healed. Jesus came to save fallen people. Since the family was lost, salvation means to restore the lost family. It is not possible to find that which is lost without returning to the original place. To repeat, why must we restore the family? It is because the original family was lost.

Humanity is sick and in need of healing. People are fallen and must be restored. (23-034, 1969.05.11)

10 Today's religions uphold individual salvation as their standard, but the religion that the whole world can appreciate and that God will establish in the new age must be a religion that can save families. Even if only the husband is saved, if his wife follows him, she will automatically enter the kingdom of heaven with him. Likewise, if the wife pays all the necessary indemnity for her family, then her husband will go wherever she goes. In other words, a man who believes his wife's words to the point that he would put his life on the line to follow her will go to the kingdom of heaven. Also, a woman who absolutely obeys her husband's words will go to the kingdom of heaven. (33-296, 1970.08.21)

11 Unless we recover the family centered on God, we cannot recover a nation or the world. When Jesus came to the earth, he was meant to establish a family that God could love unreservedly. In other words, that one man came as the bridegroom. Had he found his bride, then from that point true parents, true husbands and wives and true brothers and sisters would have emerged. Because Jesus could not fulfill this during his time on earth, he prophesied that he would come again to fulfill it. This was the prophecy of the Marriage Supper of the Lamb, the wedding of the bridegroom and his bride. Only when we have a God-centered family can we restore a tribe, restore a people and restore the world. That is why the family is the issue. This means that the bridegroom and the bride must meet. (070-330, 1974.03.10)

12 How will history unfold? The Lord, the bridegroom, will come and meet his bride. This will bring forth the era of the religious realm of the bridegroom and the bride. This can be viewed as the religion of the True Parents, but it is not really a religion. When this happens, what we know as religion will disappear. We will receive salvation by attending the True Parents. This means that the age of salvation through attendance is coming. Therefore True Parents' words should become the root of our words. All True Parents* feelings, physical and emotional, should become our feelings. True Parents* lifestyle should become the basis for the tradition of our own families; that is, it should become our family culture. (50-061, 1971.10.31)

13 We have already entered the era of the True Parents, so we do not need to focus on witnessing to others. We have to witness to ourselves. We have to save ourselves; we have to save our families. Our married couples must be saved and our sons and daughters must be saved. You are the fruits of the entire providence of history. You are its fruits. Until today, human beings have been unable to gather such fruit. There are lots of trees— many denominations—but none of them has been able to gather such fruit. It is in the Unification Church that such fruit is harvested for the first time. (260-122, 1994.04.28)

CHAPTER 3 True Parents and Rebirth

Section 1. The Path of Rebirth and Restoration

1 When we look into the origin of the Fall, we discover that it began with misdirected love. The Fall occurred when human beings, who were intended to embody God and receive His love, instead came to embody Satan. Had Adam and Eve become temples of God by becoming one with Him, and become husband and wife as originally intended, since they would have been united with God both spiritually and physically, they would have given birth to God-centered sons and daughters. Yet in John 8:44 Jesus indicated that Satan is the father and ancestor of the human race. The fact that our ancestors fell means that human beings ultimately became Satan's temples. This means they came to embody Satan and gave birth to Satan's sons and daughters. This was the Fall. The Fall was that Adam and Eve, going against God's desire, paired with Satan and engaged in love relations that were corrupt and immoral. (72-122, 1974.06.02)

Human beings need rebirth and restoration

2 What is God's plan for achieving His desire to save humankind? No matter how much God wants to save us from the realm of the Fall, He cannot do it by Himself. God must send another Adam and Eve to this earth as the True Parents. They must have nothing to do with the Fall and reach a higher level than the first Adam and Eve. Then God must have these True Parents go through the course of labor to give rebirth to all humankind. In this way, God will bring human beings to exist without any relationship with Satan and be eternally free from his accusation, so that God alone can have dominion over them. Human beings have original sin. Unless they are born again, they cannot be freed from that state and brought to a state of sinlessness. (22-240, 1969.05.04)

3 When I say you must be born again, it does not mean you need to go through another birth from the flesh and blood of parents who are the descendants of the fallen Adam and Eve. It means you must be reborn through the flesh and blood of the Parents who have no connection to the Fall. Otherwise, you cannot return to God. The root of sin originated with Adam and Eve. Unless you break this bond and attain the qualification of having been born without a connection to original sin, you cannot return to God's side. (22-240, 1969.05.04)

4 When you came into this world, all of you were born with the enemy's blood in you. You were born into the bloodline of Satan, and you bear his mark, the mark of a traitor in front of God. In the old days in Korea, when a king put to death an enemy of the throne, he would execute that enemy's entire household, including all relatives to the seventh degree of kinship. In light of this, since you were born with the blood of the enemy, you cannot protest even if your flesh is repeatedly thrown

to the vultures. Be grateful that has not happened to you. Nevertheless, having been born with the enemy's blood, we have to extract this blood and eliminate it. That is why God has worked through religion, encouraging people to fast, to be meek and humble, and to lead an ascetic life. (17-182, 1966.12.18)

5 We were originally created as God's children. Therefore, it is our original nature to pursue a standard as high and expansive as heaven and earth. Because of the Fall, however, God could not bestow such great blessings on us. We desire to rule the world; it is our inborn nature, an innate desire. Although, due to the Fall of the first ancestors, we were born in the position of thieves, betrayers and traitors, the original mind we were endowed with at the time of creation still inclines toward Heaven. This has not been taken away from us. That is why we still desire to become the highest and the greatest beings in the universe. Religion, however, teaches us to rid ourselves of Satan's lust and anger. These are in the body; therefore religions encourage us to fast. It is a way to sever our connection to Satan's blood. If you have not fasted at least seven days for Heaven, when you arrive in the other world you will not be able to register in the kingdom there. (17-182, 1966.12.18)

6 Jesus comes again to restore people to God's lineage. For this, he first sets up the foundation for restoration and then begins the work of restoration. We discovered that our birth into this world made us citizens in Satan's world. Therefore, we must be born again to be restored as God's children. But to be reborn we must find and again go into a mother's womb, and then come out. Rebirth means to be born a second time. (17-181, 1966.12.18)

7 For a child to be born, the seed of life originates in the man and then goes through the woman. Where does the change of lineage occur? It is within the woman's womb. That is why churches appeared that proclaimed that the Lord would return through a mother's womb. In other words, conditions were continually established through history for human beings to return to the starting point. Although life is conceived in the womb, it cannot be conceived by itself. There must be a woman to conceive and a man to impregnate her. Ultimately, God has to accomplish His work centering on one family. In view of complete restoration, the seed of the baby, which lay dormant in a man's body—in his bones, flesh and blood—must journey from that starting point to the woman's womb. First, however, that man has to achieve unity with God based on His love. If that is not done, no condition will suffice to establish the foundation for the total change of lineage. (35-162, 1970.10.13)

8 In order to go the way of complete restoration, your tainted blood must be purified. Your body received Satan's blood. However, here is the question: rather than understanding it conceptually, based on the Divine Principle lectures you heard, do you truly feel that your body is the enemy of God, the enemy of

humanity, and the enemy of history? Do you sense that the blood of the traitor entered your body and is still coursing through it? Furthermore, do you feel that your eyes are Satan's eyes, and that your mouth, hands, feet and your entire body are Satan's? That is why Christianity tells you to wash away your sins. It means you must purify yourselves. (72-123, 1974.06.02)

9 If our bodies had not become the dens of sin through Satan's bloodline, God's work of restoration could have been done in an instant. Originally, God was supposed to be our Father. However, since we were born as Satan's children, it is extremely difficult for us to feel that God is our Father. If we compare Satan to the North Pole, then God is the South Pole. The hardest thing in the world is for us to separate from the lineage we inherited. It means we have to find a way to know God, whom we did not know as our Heavenly Father, better than we know our own father. Unless we do this, we cannot return to God's kingdom in accordance with the providence of salvation. That is why salvation has been the most difficult task of history. It is the reason why the all-knowing and almighty God has not been able to complete the work of salvation even after six thousand biblical years. (72-124, 1974.06.02)

Rebirth through change of lineage

10 Our first ancestors became the false parents, weaving together the false love, false life and false lineage that have remained within us to the present day. That is why the True Parents must come. The True Parents intimately know the Heavenly Parent. They know the secrets of Heaven's world and the secrets of Satan's world. They come to restore God's kingship by giving the Blessing to the people of both worlds. In order to restore God's kingship, True Parents must put an end to the fight between God and Satan. Who else has the authority to do this? Only the coming of the True Parents can stop the fight. This is because those seeds were sown by the false parents. (357-202, 2001.10.30)

11 What the Unification Church promotes is the family. It is a new family with the True Parents at the center. You who begin anew as sons and daughters within this new family system must clean up your past. Regardless of your different lineage and background, if you want to take after the True Parents, you must first be engrafted. To do this, you must complete your own path of indemnity. What started with the false parents must be settled through the True Parents. That is why we must be engrafted by the True Parents. Because Adam became a false parent instead of a true parent, God has been continuously seeking the True Parents. In this era of the Second Coming, the bridegroom, the bride and the Marriage Supper of the Lamb are all for the purpose of recovering the True Parents. (24-203, 1969.08.10)

12 The Completed Testament Age is the age of marriage. As the result of the Fall, God was not able to bless Adam and Eve in marriage. Therefore, the Lord of the

Second Advent, the True Parents, must come and wed men and women on God's behalf. You cannot enter the kingdom of heaven alone. Only couples can enter. Even Jesus has been dwelling only in paradise, as he said in the Bible. (Luke 24:43) That is why he must receive the Blessing, and likewise all the other religious founders must also be wed by the True Parents. You, too, can be saved only when you allow True Parents to cut your wild olive tree and sever you from the false lineage, allowing True Parents* lineage to be engrafted onto you. In the future, once all humankind has received this engrafting, religion will cease to exist. (344-031, 2001.02.26)

We must love God absolutely

13 God created human beings according to His original ideal, with the desire to connect with them through His true love. Unless you feel such a profound love toward God that you don't care about losing your life, you cannot overcome life-and-death circumstances. Therefore, a perfect religion does not start from affirmation but from denial—from complete denial, even of life itself. Without going through such a position of total denial, you cannot stand in front of Satan with a clear conscience. This has been the position of those who have pursued a life of faith. (35-161, 1970.10.13)

14 Human beings fell due to their disbelief in God. To reverse this we must believe in the Savior and follow him. In so doing, we need to prepare a home filled with love. This means we must become one with the returning Jesus, substantially unite with him as bridegrooms and brides, and then all three should unite in heart. This is the process that humankind must go through to be restored. Thereupon the state originally desired by God at the time of the creation—the place where God, True Parents and true children come together—will become a reality on earth. It is where a new heaven and a new earth will begin. Everything in the world thus far is the result of leaving God. Therefore we need to go through the course of indemnity. Given the current situation of humanity, we Unification Church members are in a critical position. We must do our work well in order to save the people of Korea and the world. Our sacrifices up to this point were to build the altar on the level of the Korean people. Henceforth, we need to move forward once more and become sacrificial offerings on the world level. These are the two missions we must fulfill. (015-263, 1965.10.17)

15 What did Jesus mean when he said, "Love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind. This is the first and greatest commandment." He meant that we should be absolutely public. To be public from an absolute perspective means there is no "I." It means we represent the whole and treat the whole as our subject partner. This fallen world belongs to Satan's realm. Therefore, we should attend God as our absolute subject partner, the central being who represents the whole. Again, we must have no concept of "I." If we do, the condition for the satanic realms ownership over us will remain. From the point of

absolutely denying ourselves, we need to create oneness between all material things and our mind and body, with the absolute Subject Partner as our center. Then we should make offerings. (110-012, 1980.11.08)

16 Jesus told Nicodemus, “No one can see the kingdom of God without being born again.” (John 3:3) This means you must totally deny the life that you have lived thus far—your entire personal history. Even if you have justifiable excuses or notable accomplishments, still you must deny yourselves. As fallen people, you cannot escape the realm of the Fall without going through this course. You lived your life thus far as people who were dead; hence it must be denied entirely. (6-278, 1959.06.07)

We have to enter the world that is based on True Parents' heart

17 Even though you have received the Blessing, you should delay cultivating your relationship with your spouse. First you must yearn for True Parents. You should feel that without them there is neither day nor night, that your existence is worthless. Your heart of love and adoration for True Parents should consume every part of your life. Only then can you be called the sons and daughters of Heaven. Only after you have led this type of life should you finally receive your husband or wife. Otherwise, how can you possibly receive him or her? Before anything else, you should yearn for True Parents with all your heart. You will not receive salvation unless you attend True Parents with the attitude that they are the source of your life, the entirety of your hope, and the beginning point of all your ideals and happiness. You must have conviction enough to say, “I am a son (or daughter) of True Parents, and I will unite with them for eternity.” This kind of devotion must transcend even the awareness of your own existence. This is the kind of firm conviction you must have. (30-238, 1970.03.23)

18 You cannot fully attend True Parents if you are by yourself. Whether you are a man or a woman, you need your partner. If you are single, you should get energy from the one who comes in the position of Adam. In that state, you first must offer something to Adam, the Parent; then you can receive and inherit True Parents* love and connect it to your descendants through your lineage. You can pass on the valuable content of this love through your lineage. Hence you can serve God and the Parents through such a foundation of love. It is on the standard of the value of this relationship based on your lineage that you can attend True Parents. Otherwise, you cannot attend them. (35-239, 1970.10.19)

19 What was the beginning point of your life of faith when you joined the Unification Church? It started with a vivid realization about yourself, that you are God's child and that you must make effort to restore yourself to the position of a child who is centered on God's love. If you receive God's love but are not proud of God's Word and do not have the conviction to proclaim it to the whole universe,

you cannot stand as a son or daughter of God. You gain the authority of a son or daughter of God by standing on the foundation of God's authority. With the authority of God's sons and daughters, you must be able to walk boldly through Satan's strongholds, no matter what happens. You must go the course of subjugating Satan, who violated Adam and Eve. Unless you bring Satan to surrender, you cannot reach the standard for receiving God's Blessing. (22-205, 1969.02.04)

20 To become a filial child, you must know your parents' heart. After joining the Unification Church, if you truly want to know me, you must enter the world of my heart. There is no great secret for this. If you leaders and members have such a connection of heart with me that when you are walking the streets witnessing you break down in tears several times a day, your churches will blossom abundantly. (093-065, 1977.05.01)

21 Have you blessed families of the Unification Church fulfilled your duties? Since you failed to establish a victorious foundation, if I were to leave you alone, your families would all go in separate directions. However, as your representative I have paved your way, so now you need to live with the sincerest heart, offering all your devotion. This means you need to become one with me in heart. To attain such oneness, you must transcend distance, your environment, even history. You should have the same heart as mine, a heart that strives to shorten all the ages and eras of restoration. You should be sad when I am sad. You should breathe with me as one; when I exhale you should inhale, keeping to my tempo. If you lead your life in this way, you can build a victorious foundation. Therefore, consider your family as a special altar and pray without ceasing as you move forward. (100-286, 1978.10.22)

Section 2. Our Rebirth and Change of Lineage

1 In Adam's family there were brothers, Cain and Abel. Cain was the first son. Love has one principle, not two. Are there two principles of love? In the Divine Principle, we talk about unprincipled love. The Fall means that Adam and Eve engaged in unprincipled love. Based on love people should unite as one, not divide as two. Suppose someone has one hundred sons; all those sons should form one brotherhood, not two. However, if some of them practice unprincipled love, then to whom do those brothers belong? They belong to Satan. That is how it is. (36-248, 1970.12.06)

The change of lineage through Cain and Abel

2 In Adam's family, Cain represented Satan's side and Abel God's side. Adam should have been in God's position, but was he? He was not. The order of love was reversed. Originally God should have been the one to possess the fruits of love, but the archangel snatched them away: Therefore, a course was required to restore

someone to the position to receive God's love, and it was Abel who was placed in that position. In the course of the history of restoration, those whom God called and loved were not first sons but second sons. Thus we read in the Bible that at the time of the Exodus, even in Egypt the firstborn sons were killed. In other words, the second son is providentially on Heavens side while the first son is on Satan's side. We have to get rid of the blood of Satan, meaning we need to cut off from the bloodline of Satan. However, should God just kill Cain? He should not. Therefore He pursues the work of engrafting. That is, in order that all people might come to have God's viewpoint and practice His philosophy of life, God sends one person with that philosophy, who provides engrafting. This is the concept of the Messiah. (36-248, 1970.12.06)

3 The history of the providence of restoration is that of bringing the first son to surrender to the second son. This was the goal in the instances of Cain and Abel, Esau and Jacob, Perez and Zerah, and Joseph and his eleven brothers. It was also the case for the Israelites in relation to the nations of the world, and for Jesus the Son of God in relation to the people of the world. God does not want to destroy the first son by striking him. He wants to make him surrender, by judging the first son after he has first struck the second son. The original, heavenly way was turned upside down, and it needs to be set aright. Hence, even though the older brother should be born first, God worked in such a way that the younger brother was born first, supplanting his older brother. This is also why when Jacob blessed Joseph's sons Ephraim and Manasseh, he crossed his arms and placed his left hand on the older sons head and his right hand on the younger sons head. No one in heaven and earth has known why Jacob did this, until now. (017-180, 1966.12.18)

4 "For what purpose do we need the Messiah? It is for the purpose of salvation. Salvation begins at the point where we come in contact with God's love. Yet even though we need to return there, we keep on propagating the lineage of Satan. The whole of humanity is disconnected from God's lineage. ""This is the exact opposite of God's love. This position must be restored through indemnity. To make this indemnity requires the removal of original sin, but removing the original sin involves the fundamental issue of lineage. This is something fallen human beings can never resolve on their own. That is why we need the Messiah. (035-159, 1970.10.13)"

5 Why is Jesus the Messiah? It is because he was born as the historic first fruit of the change of lineage, as was never before seen in history. He is the Son who inherited God's life and lineage, based on His love. He represents the new seed of life. That is who Jesus is. That is why we call him God's only begotten Son. He was the begotten Son because he was born as the representative son who inherited God's love and life, from a lineage that had been purified over the course of human history. This makes Jesus different from all the other religious founders in the course of history. Jesus was born as the fruit of the course of changing the lineage,

the first person to be born completely centered on the living God. That is why he is the Messiah. He was born in that position; that makes him the representative of the changed lineage. That is why the Messiah is the central person for giving new life to humankind. It took a period of four thousand years according to biblical reckoning, from the time of the Fall until the appearance of Jesus two thousand years ago, to make it possible for a representative of the changed lineage to come for the first time. This was the Messiah. (224-276, 1991.12.15)

6 Who is the coming Messiah? Since fallen parents appeared, there must arise parents who have nothing to do with the Fall. In order to become such parents, they must set the condition of loving even the devil. Satan from the same position as God. Otherwise, there is no way to enter the kingdom of heaven. This has been a secret of the spirit world to this day, and a trap of sorrow placed between the human world and the heavenly world. No one has understood this. But now that I have revealed this, Satan's world will face its time of great misfortune. (136-167, 1985.12.22)

7 Jesus came as the Messiah in the position of a parent, but first he had to fight with the archangel. He fought, saying, "I am the one and only Son of God." The only Son of God means that he was the first man to receive God's love as a son. As God's one and only Son, he was to find God's one and only Daughter, and together they were to attain the perfection that the first Adam and Eve should have attained had there been no Fall. Jesus was the only Son of God. He came as the Messiah. The Messiah is the one who recovers the lost parents by attaining the qualification of True Parents, and who revives people by engrafting the lineage of the Parents. This is why Christians say that no one can go to the kingdom of heaven without being born again. (136-168, 1985.12.22)

8 What kind of person was Jesus? God created heaven and earth over a period of six days. In five days He created all things, and on the sixth day He created Adam. Jesus is like Adam. He is the second Adam, the Adam who came subsequently. This means that he is the original Adam who has nothing to do with the Fall. In the beginning God first created Adam, and then, centered on Adam, He created Eve. Therefore the second Adam was to establish the next Eve. But he could not do so. Again, who was responsible to find and raise up the original Eve? It was the first Adam. However, because Adam could not fulfill this responsibility when Eve fell, the second Adam had to find and establish such an Eve whom the first Adam had lost. There is no exception to the principle of indemnity. (017-190, 1966.12.18)

God's work of rebirth through Jesus and the Holy Spirit

9 Originally the earth should have treated heaven as her husband, and heaven should have treated the earth as his wife. And this couple should have communed face to face on an equal level. Yet due to the Fall heaven and earth were split apart.

Both came under Satan's dominion. To this day God has been leading Christianity toward tearing down the barrier between heaven and earth. Christianity teaches that you cannot be saved unless you receive the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit refers to the mother spirit. The Fall was first committed by a woman. As sin was initiated by someone who was to become a mother, someone in the position of a mother must correct this. That is why the spiritual Mother, the Holy Spirit, must come to earth and go through the labor of childbirth. False children were born on this earth due to the fall of the first ancestors. Hence, the spiritual True Father and spiritual True Mother must come together with the heart of love for each other, push their way through the enemy's barriers, strip Satan of his authority, and enter the state in which they can receive the essence of love. Only then can all people be spiritually reborn. There is no way for us to be born into a new life without the love between the spiritual Mother and spiritual Father. Resurrection and rebirth in Christianity refer to being born again through these spiritual parents. (023-042, 1969.05.11)

10 Who was Jesus and why did he come? He came with the mission to become the True Parent of humankind, the True Father. Had Adam not fallen, he would have received God's Blessing and become the True Father of humankind, and Eve would have become the True Mother. However, due to the Fall Adam lost the Blessing. In order to restore it, God prepared through a long history of four thousand years and then sent Jesus. He sent Jesus with the mission to become the True Father. To restore God's Blessing, Jesus had to inherit the fruit of this providential history and stand in Adam's position; he had to win a woman standing in the position of Eve who had been the object of Satan's accusations, and he had to subjugate all the satanic forces that were blocking this Eve. He had to do this in addition to taking all aspects of society back from Satan. This is why Jesus indicated that he was the bridegroom. Jesus was striving to find Eve on earth. (017-190, 1966.12.18)

11 Human beings are born from a mother's womb as descendants of the Fall. Hence, to enter into new life, they need to be embraced by the Mother's love. This is the love of the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit is the Mother spirit. With love this Mother spirit uplifts and embraces Jesus, who is the spiritual Father. The Holy Spirit yearns for Jesus, and the energy that flows from the power of her love for him is something you can experience. When you receive the Holy Spirit, it comes to you as a fire. With such an experience, new life can arise within you. It means that you have experienced the feelings of love between the father and the mother in the mother's womb. Unless you feel this sensation of love, you cannot be born into new life. I am saying that there can be no birth of new life without love. This is what is called rebirth in Christianity. (035-225, 1970.10.19)

12 The coming Lord is the True Father, so you must enter the loins of the True Father. Fallen people cannot be born again unless they set the condition of entering the True Father. That is why fallen people have sought to enter the loins of Jesus, who is a man. They do this because they have received the grace of the mother

spirit who attends Jesus as her bridegroom. However, people cannot literally enter Jesus' loins. Instead, they must be one with him through their heart of love. With the heart of love it is possible to get there. Christians who believe in Jesus can enter his body with the help of the Holy Spirit, the Mother spirit. Because Jesus did not marry, his spirit is like that of a bachelor. Christians who believe in Jesus want to find a way to enter the returning Lord in the position of baby seeds within the returning Jesus. Then, once they enter his loins, they must be born again through the restored new Mother. This is the way; they can be reborn substantially. (035-226, 1970.10.19)

13 According to the original standard, Christians need to take the position of the sons and daughters of Jesus, born from his flesh and blood. This means that they should enter the position like that of the seeds of sons and daughters that Adam had within him before he fell. Therefore, Christians must take the position of sons and daughters born from the father's flesh and blood—Jesus' flesh and blood. 111 order to do so, based on the condition of unity of love with Jesus, they must be born through the Mother, the Holy Spirit. I am saying they must be born again. Can there be rebirth only through the Father? Can there be rebirth only through the Mother? Because no man and woman have been able to become the substantial True Mother and True Father, no one could establish the ideal family of love, which is the Will and God's ideal of creation. In order for this purpose to be achieved, Adam has to come again in the position of the bridegroom, receive his bride, and attain oneness with God's love. If a man in the position of Adam who has never fallen in the Garden of Eden attains perfection and becomes one with Eve through love, nothing can make that person fall. People have been longing for that day. (114-028, 1981.05.14)

14 What does it mean to say that we believe in Jesus? Jesus, as a man, is the original Adam untouched by the Fall. In the end, he is to be the Father, both physically and spiritually. Unless we become one with this Father, we have no way to be born again. Christianity is the religion that teaches people to yearn for Jesus and to love in a way that is deeply in touch with his love. It teaches us to long for Jesus and welcome him as the bridegroom. The teaching that we are to welcome Jesus as our bridegroom has two purposes: one is that we can become like baby seeds that enter his bone and flesh; the other is that we can conditionally pass through the womb of the Mother, who is in the bride's position. (035-164, 1970.10.13)

15 According to the original ideal, people should not be born with their spirit self separated from their physical self. Owing to Jesus death on the cross, believers can attain rebirth spiritually, though not physically. Therefore, Jesus must surely come again. Jesus went to the spirit world and when he comes back—when the True Parents come—those who believe in Jesus need to reject this world. They need to set the condition of rebirth through the True Parents—through the womb of True

Mother from the loins of True Father. If they do not, they will have no way to gain eternal life. In other words, before you receive the Mother you must enter the body of the unfallen True Father as the seeds of his baby sons and daughters, and stay there until you are born through the Mother. That is why people cry, “Lord! Lord!” and try to enter the Lord’s body. In fact, Jesus has been doing this work in spirit. Hence, when Jesus comes again, those who enter him spiritually as baby seeds and who have become one with Jesus flesh can then be born through the True Mother. This is the way to complete restoration. This is how people can remove Satan’s blood completely and stand in the restored position for the first time. (092-291, 1977.04.18)

16 Christianity is a religion that has been looking toward the spirit world, a spiritual kingdom of heaven with Jesus and the Holy Spirit as the spiritual Parents at its center. However, to build the original kingdom of heaven, Adam and Eve have to turn around everything that was lost on earth and attain a standard of spiritual victory not only on the vertical plane but also on the horizontal plane. Unless we realize on earth a world in which True Mother and True Father can give and receive love on the corporeal plane, we cannot fundamentally rectify what went wrong. That is why I say that the Lord who comes again must come to the earth in the flesh. (023-043, 1969.05.11)

True Parents and the path of rebirth

17 God created human beings because of love. He should have been the Owner of Adam and Eve’s love, the Owner of their life and the Owner of their lineage. Yet the love, life and lineage that should have belonged to God all were snatched away. Salvation means to restore a sick person to the state he was in before he took ill. The work of the Lord at his Second Advent is to change the lineage of humankind. This can be done when God, Adam, and Eve become one body. Had the vertical relationship between the vertical God and the first human beings been established, the horizontal relationship between east and west—between Adam and Eve who have nothing to do with the Fall—would have been formed at the shortest distance in accordance with the original principle of true love. Vertical and horizontal lines that meet at a ninety-degree angle make for the shortest distance. Our first ancestors in their horizontal relationship were supposed to unite at a ninety-degree angle to the vertical God, and then they were supposed to form a sphere of ideal love centering on relationships of front and rear. Their failure to do this was the Fall. (198-119, 1990.01.25)

18 God cannot change human beings’ lineage. There is no one who can do it other than the True Parents. God cannot be a friend to the false parents. He is the vertical Parent, so He cannot stand in a horizontal, physical position. Before He can do that, whatever mistakes that were made on the horizontal plane must be restored on the horizontal plane. To make an analogy, if there is a hole in something made of

leather, then leather must be used to mend it; you cannot mend the hole with some other kind of material. It was the false parents who made the hole, so it must be filled by True Parents. Unless the True Parents go through a course of suffering, the hole will not be filled. God by Himself cannot just do it. If He could, He would have done it long ago. (337-272, 2000.10.27)

19 We need True Parents in order to dismantle the foundation of Satan's love, life and lineage. How did man and woman fall into such a position? They fell by their reproductive organs. In the original sense, the reproductive organs are the palaces of love. But what happened to that palace of love? The human reproductive organ is such a precious thing—the palace of love, life and lineage—but due to the Fall it became full of filth. From God's original viewpoint it should not be something filthy, but something sacred. It is the most precious thing. Life, love and lineage are connected there. This is the holiness that Satan defiled. (218-178, 1991.07.28)

20 The True Parents are what we truly need. What started from the false parents must be restarted by the True Parents. The false parents received false life and false lineage through false love. This must be reversed. We need to inherit true life and true lineage with the love of the True Parents as the center. In the past, we inherited the wrong seed of life, and now we need to inherit the original seed. We cannot inherit this without the True Parents. Therefore the Messiah must come again upon the earth and implant his seeds—the True Parents seeds of new life—and engraft them to us so we can return to the original position as true olive trees. God is really our Parent. Can you imagine how close He is to us? Our vertical Parent, God, fulfills ideal love through the horizontal parents, True Parents. (218-224, 1991.07.29)

21 True Parents are the Adam and Eve who did not fall. God is the first generation, True Parents are the second generation, and blessed families are engrafted into the realm of the third generation. Now that you wild olive trees have received a graft from the true olive tree, you need to make much effort to become true olive trees. Your most urgent priority and responsibility is to purify yourselves internally and externally in order to cultivate true love, true life and true lineage. You must feel that the True Parents are your own parents and that you are their direct lineage. By fulfilling your duties you must become completely one with True Parents, attending them as their filial sons and daughters. Then you must serve the nation, and also heaven and earth, as patriots, saints and divine sons and daughters. (361-259, 2001.11.26)

22 You must enter a relationship of love with Adam and Eve centering on their first love for each other. Only then can you be born again, from the loins of True Father and the womb of True Mother, and form a bond of eternal life with them. You cannot pay the full indemnity for this without going through the Principle of Restoration. Whether you realize it or not, that is why you have been loving me

centered on the Will, and why your hearts seek to move in the same direction I move, in concert with my feelings. You are setting the condition to be engrafted with the True Parents, from their bone marrow to your heart, so that you can be born again from the ones in the position of the original Adam and Eve, through the womb of True Mother. Without doing so, you cannot be restored. You have to be restored through True Mother. And by connecting with my sons and daughters from the time when they were babies in True Mothers actual womb, you are restoring the Cain-Abel relationship. (026-311, 1969.11.10)

23 You who were born again as children through True Mother's womb are in the position of Cain; hence you have to love not only True Mother but also the babies born from her actual womb. By uniting with them, you have to make the condition of heart that you have participated at the same rank as their twin siblings. Then you should take the position to serve and attend them. That is the only way you can prevent conflict between the two seeds in her womb. To prevent repeating the Fall based on such conflict, you must work the opposite way; this is how you can be restored. God has been conducting this work without your being aware of it. (035-228, 1970.10.19)

24 You were able to enter the loins of True Father because you have been one in heart with him. But you were not just to remain as a baby seed within True Father; you also had to be born again through True Mother's womb. For this purpose I established True Mother through the Holy Wedding I conducted in 1960. Based on this, you had to feel from True Mother the grace and love that you had felt when you were within the body of True Father, and out of that love, you loved and attended her. As much as you loved me, it was through that emotional connection to True Mother and your bond of love with her that your rebirth was finally made possible. (035-227, 1970.10.19)

25 Why do Unification Church members want to follow me around all the time, day and night? Why are they so much in love with me that they create a commotion? Why do they abandon even their own mothers, fathers and spouses? They do it because they have no way to be born again unless they connect to me with the heart of sons and daughters who were born through my body. Likewise, they must set the condition of having loved True Mother even before their birth. Have you ever thought of this, even in your dreams? When I came to understand this truth I carved it deep in my heart, even as I devoted my entire life for the fulfillment of the Will. (092-292, 1977.04.18)

Section 3. Restoration of the Right of the Eldest Son, the Right of the Parents and the Right of the King

1 A son is the fruit of love. God is a being of the Principle, and according to the Principle the firstborn son should be God's son and the second-born son should

also be God's son. However after the Fall, the firstborn son came to be on Satan's side and the second-born son on God's side. These unprincipled positions emerged. In order to be in accordance with the Principle, the firstborn son and the second-born son should both be on Heavens side. Hence, the first son to be born should be on God's side. For the firstborn son to be on Satan's side goes against the Principle. Therefore, for the God of the Principle to save fallen people, He must first love the son who was born first, but he is on Satan's side. So that he can be a son whom God can love, he must be brought to the position of the firstborn son on God's side. (58-045, 1972.06.06)

2 Adams sons Cain and Abel were the fruits of love from the Fall, so they were in the position where both God and Satan could have dominion. Therefore, Cain and Abel were divided to Satan's side and God's side, respectively. The first son Cain represented the first love relationship, which was between the archangel and Eve. Thus he stood on Satan's side. The second love relationship was between Eve and Adam, so the second son Abel stood on God's side as a representative of that love. Originally Adam was supposed to stand on God's side and govern the archangel with the right of dominion over him based on God's love. This would have secured the principled order by natural law. From the perspective of the Principle of Creation, God was in the position to claim Adam. However because Adam fell, Satan was able to claim Adam based on his love. What did God have to do to recover Adam to Heavens side? The archangel, who should have been under Adam's dominion, governed Adam instead; therefore to restore the original positions, the archangel had to be governed by Adam. This meant that Cain, who stood on Satan's side, had to submit to Abel, reversing the dominion. Without submitting, Cain could not be restored. (22-247, 1969.05.04)

3 In order to be fundamentally restored from the fallen state, you must be born again. In order to be born again, you must start from the body of the Father before he married, the Father who has nothing to do with the Fall. God's work has been to restore, first, the right of the eldest son, second, the right of parents, third, the right of the king, and finally, the right of the royal family. To this end, the lineage must be changed. That is why Rebekah's sons fought over the birthright, and why the sons of Tamar switched positions inside her womb. It is from this lineage that the chosen people, the Israelites, arose. God continued working in this way to separate out the pure lineage until Jesus came through Mary to establish these rights on the national level. Then God continued this effort up to the present, the age of the Lords return. God has been working to purify the lineage. To raise that process to the national level and to enable Jesus to stand as the Son under God's dominion, Jesus was conceived and born through Mary's womb. That is why it is said that he is God's only begotten Son. (235-234, 1992.09.20)

Restoring the right of the eldest son

4 When was the lineage leading up to Jesus changed? This is the question. When we look at his lineage from the perspective of the Cain-Abel relationship, what happened? The change of lineage had to take place in the womb of a mother. The fact that the son on Satan's side was born first violated Heavens law; this had to be changed in the mother's womb. Therefore, God's work through Cain and Abel was to have the younger brother restore the right of eldest son. How was it done? It was by reversing their positions after birth. Hence, even for all humankind, after their birth their positions have to be reversed; with their levels gradually narrowing down from the world, nation, people and so on, until the positions were reversed on the closest level-for instance the twins, Esau and Jacob. It was easier to reverse the positions through twins. (139-300, 1986.01.31)

5 We have to establish the rights of both the elder and younger sons on God's side and go beyond the realm of the Fall; only then can we stand for the first time in the original world that has nothing to do with the Fall. This is the original ideal of creation. As God is absolute, His ideal also remains absolute. In order to achieve the original ideal, at some point in history we must go through a course of restoration through indemnity. (134-306, 1985.08.16)

6 How difficult it is to restore the right of the eldest son! Countless religious people were sacrificed for this purpose. Christianity underwent dreadful persecution under the Roman Empire for four hundred years, and much blood was shed in order to subjugate the domain of Satan's world. In Rome, the early Christians built deep and extensive caves called the Catacombs. There they buried the corpses of their ancestors underneath their altars and lived inhaling those odors day and night. They lived under such conditions because they believed it was for God's will. Otherwise, who could do such a thing? Under normal standards, no one could. Imagine how much God has suffered. You have no idea how much effort He has made throughout history. (140-205, 1986.02.09)

7 Each of you has been called to establish a clan in which you can claim the right of the eldest son. In order for your clan to receive blessings, they must first support your right as the eldest son; then they can receive the blessings that you would like to bestow upon them. The right of the eldest son is not for you yourself. You must connect it to the vertical heavenly world centered on the coming Lord. You cannot do this through only the horizontal, physical world. Since I came to know this path, it was inevitable that I would set up the logic of living for the sake of others. We were born for the sake of others. Man was born for the sake of woman, and vice-versa. You must not have the concept of "myself." (136-131, 1985.12.22)

8 To reach God, we need to pass through seven levels, from the individual to the family, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos. When we have fulfilled restoration through each of these seven levels, we can reach the position of the original eldest son who has nothing to do with the Fall. Adam and Eve were the first son and first

daughter. The first son and daughter were to go through the realm of indirect dominion and connect to the realm of direct dominion while receiving the love God has for His elder child, rather than the love He has for His younger children. Therefore, the position and right of the elder child must be restored at each level as we go up. This is the battle I have been fighting. (138-135, 1986.01.19)

9 Because Adam and Eve fell and lost their relationship with God, there was no way for Cain or Abel to unite vertically with God either. Since fallen Adam and Eve had no standard by which to make a vertical relationship with God, their failure had to be restored through Cain and Abel. Adam and Eve having lost this vertical standard, for us to recover the right of God's legitimate children, what we require is True Parents, who establish the vertical relationship, and their children who will become totally one with these Parents. These are the two conditions that are needed. We cannot ascend to this level in the position of adopted children. Unless we stand in the position of their legitimate children who have nothing to do with the Fall, we cannot become one with God and rise to the standard of perfection. Therefore, we must pass through that stage. Even if we say we are God's children, or that Cain and Abel have become one, until the foundation of the True Parents who are untouched by the Fall is achieved, there is no way for us to rise vertically. That is why God had to set up the standard of True Parents. (55-137, 1972.05.07)

10 As in the time of Cain and Abel, the brothers Esau and Jacob fought—but in the womb. At that time, Rebekah wondered why her two children were fighting in her womb, and she prayed to God about this. God told her, "Two nations are in your womb... and the elder shall serve the younger." (Gen. 25:23) They had to go through such a fight in order that the position of the elder son could be restored by the younger son. (139-303, 1986.01.31)

11 Esau and Jacob, the older and younger brothers, were born as twins so they could completely understand each other's hearts. In the case of twins, when the younger brother is sad the older brother also is sad. That is how they connect to each other. Through these twins, who were so close to each other, God carried out the providence of restoration. The person who had to accomplish this restoration was the mother. After the Fall, Eve as a mother gave birth to Cain, so this time a mother had to carry out the process of restoration through mother-son cooperation. Here the mother worked with Jacob to take the, birthright, the right of the eldest son from Esau by deceiving Isaac. (139-301, 1986.01.31)

12 The right of the eldest son is recovered through mother-son cooperation. When the older brother Esau returned from hunting, he sold his right as the firstborn son to Jacob for bread and lentil stew. This set the condition for Jacob to restore the right to be the eldest son. Because Esau sold his birthright to Jacob, Esau had to surrender to him in reality. If he had not sold his birthright, Jacob and Rebekah would not have been entitled to take it by deceit. It could not have happened

without such a condition. This is how Jacob could have the opportunity to be given the name “Israel.” In other words, for the first time the right of the eldest son was restored, and this marked the emergence of the realm of Israel. The right of the eldest son was changed through twin brothers, but it had not yet been changed within the womb. Then what happened? The fourth son of Jacob was Judah. Judah had three sons, and his first daughter-in-law was a woman named Tamar. Tamar knew the value of the lineage blessed by God. Therefore, she was willing to do whatever was necessary to inherit that lineage. (139-301, 1986.01.31)

13 Tamar conceived two children, and they struggled in her womb. When she prayed to God, God answered Tamar as He had answered Rebekah the mother of Esau and Jacob, which was by saying: “Two nations are in your womb... and the elder shall serve the younger (Gen. 25:23) In the same way, Perez and Zerah were born to set the condition of two clans struggling in the womb with the purpose that the older would serve the younger. During their birth, the older brother Zerah’s hand came out first. The midwife tied a red string to it. His was a symbol representing future generations and was a forewarning that communism would appear among his descendants. However, Perez recovered the right of the elder by pushing his older brother aside in order to be born first. This was the first time the second son restored the first son’s position in the womb. He was given the name Perez, meaning “he who made a breech at birth” while pushing his brother out of the way. In this way, God worked with Rebekah and Tamar through a course of struggle to change the lineage. Finally, within the womb, the first son was made the second son and the second son was made the first son. The right of the eldest son began from that point in the history of the Israelites. From then on, God could help them at any time. Whenever anyone attempted to destroy them, Heaven struck back. The history of Israel records that that God mercilessly struck any Gentile nation that tried to destroy the Israelites. (139-303, 1986.01.31)

Restoring the right of the eldest son

14 In order to be victorious, you must go out and restore the right of the eldest son. The firstborn son must ultimately attend the second son, the younger brother, as though he were his older brother; he must come to the point where he can say, “I will receive all blessings through you.” In this way, the first son willingly comes down to the position of the second son, and the second son, with the first sons blessing, ascends to take the position of the eldest son. Only when the firstborn son says, “You go up instead of me” and supports the second son, is it possible to move from the tribal-level right of the eldest son to the people-level right of the eldest son. This is how you can ascend step by step. Only when the first son supports you can you go up. You cannot go up by yourself. Because of this principle, you must fulfill the standard of restoring the right of the eldest son. Otherwise, God’s dispensation cannot succeed. This is the secret of religious history. That is why, in order to go the way of a true religion, you must leave your home. This is the origin

of the words, "You must leave your country and your home, renounce the world and become an ascetic." (138-204, 1986.01.21)

15 Cain represents Satan's side, the position of the older brother. Abel represents God's side, the position of the younger brother. There is the battle between the two of them. God should love the firstborn son first and the younger son next. But the firstborn son Cain stands on Satan's side. He belongs to Satan's side. In order to save him, God appointed Abel to restore the right of the eldest son. This he cannot achieve by force; it requires him to move people with love. Restoration is achieved by melting people's hearts with love. If you cannot be someone who loves others, if you cannot win their hearts and turn them around, you will not be in a position to truly love your own sons and daughters. Since God is the absolute God, from the viewpoint of His ideal of creation it is the firstborn son who should be loved first, not the second child. (140-038, 1986.02.01)

16 The question is whether I have loved Satan's world even more than I love my wife and children. I must not love my wife and children and neglect Satan's world. God has to love Cain first before loving the Abel realm, and He should not love Abel more than Cain. He has to love the firstborn son more. The problem is that the firstborn son went over to Satan's side. That is why the history of salvation has been so prolonged. Satan's lineage has been continually passed down through the bloodline from generation to generation. Because of this, we cannot enter the kingdom of heaven unless we love the firstborn son and give him rebirth, and unless all people on God's side stand in that position of loving him. This is why the providence of salvation has been prolonged till now. (140-039, 1986.02.01)

17 In the history of restoration through indemnity, what is the secret to restore the right of the eldest son? Satan claims: "God, You are the perfect God. Therefore the Adam and Eve You are seeking are also perfect. If they had not fallen, then according to the standard of the Principle, Adam and Eve would have loved me as the original archangel. I fell and now stand for evil; nevertheless, if You and they truly represent goodness and righteousness, then You, and they, have to demonstrate that you love me regardless. Without making this condition, You cannot be God to me in the real sense." This is the issue at hand. (131-183, 1984.05.01)

18 Once the restoration of the eldest son is achieved on the individual level, we have to go on to achieve it on the family level. To do so, we must go to the frontline where Satan has his people persecute us and even try to kill us. We must win them over with love, and then teach them everything we know. When they realize that our tradition is good and they are moved by us in heart, they should be able to repent with tears, willingly, and pledge to give their lives as an offering for humankind's sake. There is no other way to obtain the right of blessing from the Cain world. (131-184, 1984.05.01)

19 Without love, you cannot win over Satan. Even God has to stand in the position where He can rightly say that He loves the fallen archangel. You are God's sons and daughters. Therefore, for your family to enter the kingdom of heaven, you also have to stand on the condition that you have loved Satan. That is, you need to set the condition that you went out to struggle with Satan's world and won over it with love. You must be able to claim, "I did not crush my enemies; instead I brought them to surrender with love. In this way I restored the right of the eldest son." (141-202, 1986.02.22)

20 Instead of beating His enemy to death, God makes the condition of loving him. Accordingly, He has to make the condition of loving His enemy Satan more than the one who stands in the position of Adam. If you overcome even while being persecuted again and again, persevering with tears, blood and sweat until your enemy naturally surrenders to you and you bring him back to God's love, then you can be blessed. It is only then that Satan will let you go. You need to receive official approval: "You have now become a child qualified to go to the kingdom of heaven." Who must sign your certificate? Satan must sign it. After Satan signs it, you will sign it, and then True Parents need to sign it. You can go to God only after getting True Parents' signatures. That is the kingdom of heaven. (141-202, 1986.02.22)

21 Once I set the condition of having loved Satan on the world level, he cannot take away those who follow me. Then Cain and Abel will switch positions. Up to the present, the Abel realm has been pushed to the corner. However from now on, Satan's kingdom in heaven and on earth will collapse in my presence. In the presence of the man who centers on love and who has gained the right of the eldest son of the heavenly kingdom, Satan has no choice but to retreat. He can do nothing to defend himself. If he fights back, he will be totally shattered in defeat. This is the view of the Principle. (139-278, 1986.01.31)

Restoration of the right of parents

22 To this day, it has been hard for me to recover the family and hard to recover the church. It has been hard to set the direction for Christianity and hard to bring the free world and the communist world back from their paths of ruin. Yet I restored the right of the eldest son. Had Adam not fallen at the outset, he himself would have had the right of the eldest son. Also, Adam would have become the True Parent, and he would have become the King of kings. (211-343, 1991.01.01)

23 The first human beings lost the right of the eldest son and daughter due to the Fall. They lost the elder children's right to inherit the great foundational work of heaven and earth. They lost it all because of the devil. Moreover, they were to have attended the Heavenly Parent, the Creator of heaven and earth, as His eternal blood kin imbued with His love, life and lineage. But Adam lost the authority to

become the True Parent. If the Fall had not occurred, there would have been one culture, Adams culture. There would have been one clan, Adams clan. They would have established one kingship. (211-343, 1991.01.01)

24 In order to restore the right of the eldest son, I had to conduct the Ceremony for the Settlement of the Eight Stages. After that came the era of Heavenly Parentism, which is the era to restore the right of the parents. Now we have entered the time of the True Parents. Since Cain and Abel became one on the world level, the True Parents could emerge on the world stage. What is the right of the parents? Neither Adam nor Jesus could attain that right. Yet now, in my time, the parents' right of Adam, the parents' right of Jesus, and the parents' right of the Lord of the Second Advent—the rights of these three generations of parents—have all been fulfilled. I am saying that in my time, the parents' right was established for Adam, Jesus and the Lord of the Second Advent. (199-096, 1990.02.15)

25 Why do you need things such as indemnity? Why is restoration of the right of the parents necessary, along with the right of the eldest son and the right of the king? It is because humankind is connected to Satan's love, life and lineage. This is the key problem. What originally should have begun from God actually began from the devil. The devil used something as amazing as love to begin his work. Love is the reason the universe was created. Love is the basis for the creation and the source of all created beings. Satan took over this fundamental root, however. This fundamental root that Satan turned upside down needs to be restored to its proper position. (206-237, 1990.10.14)

26 God's ideal of creation is to build His kingdom on earth and in heaven in the name of the True Parents. Without their name, the kingdom of heaven cannot come, either on earth or in heaven. We might ask why, since Jesus is God's beloved eldest Son, he would say he would be in paradise rather than in the kingdom of heaven. People don't know the answer. The kingdom of heaven, both on earth and in heaven, can be built only based on True Parents being established and on the foundation of their love. Even after they go to the spirit world, the True Parents, not anyone else, are the central people for bringing unity to the kingdom. Jesus could not become the True Parent; that is why he is in paradise. (131-184, 1984.05.01)

27 Because restoration is such a grueling task, God has been suffering throughout history, facing countless prolongations of His work until now. If it were not so difficult, why would Almighty God have to toil like that? If He could teach human beings everything they needed to do, He would have already done so long ago. However, Adam in his day did not know the answer; therefore Adam today has to take responsibility and discover the answer. I had to go throughout heaven and earth and discover everything. To find those answers, how many tears did I have to shed? Adam was expelled from the garden in tears; so how many tears do I, as today's Adam, have to shed in the course of restoration? In that sense, I can be

called the king of tears. You should know that, representing history, I sought the way of truth and for that I shed many tears. I survived tremendous ordeals, having my flesh torn and shedding my blood. You must realize you are attending me, the representative of all humankind, a wonderful True Parent. We are now facing the final summit we have to climb. Along with the standard of restoring the right of the parents, I should establish the right of the younger son. Having restored the right of the eldest son and the right of the parents, I have to restore that. Then I have to restore one more thing—the right of kingship, and bring oneness around that kingship. It will be done once True Mother and one of my younger sons build the foundation of mother-child cooperation. That will be the last phase of my work. (222-242, 1991.11.03)

Restoration of the right of the king

28 Originally, the perfection of Adam meant the perfection of the Father of the kingdom, and the perfection of Eve meant the perfection of the Mother of the kingdom. Once they had become the heads of their family, the right of the King of the kingdom would have emerged, beginning from the family level. Then, Adam and Eve would have become the King and the Queen on the levels of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation and world. The time has come when we can transcend the national level; we can now stamp out the sovereignty of Satan's world and establish the sovereignty of Heaven's world. That day is March 27, 1990, the thirty-first Parents, Day. (201-132, 1990.03.27)

29 I endured a seven-year course to overcome worldwide persecution for the sake of the family. I went the way of the cross to liberate the family. I endured and overcame because I must become the king of the families. From the viewpoint of the ideal of creation, in his family, Adam was to have become the king of the first sons, the king of all parents, and the king of all families. Providentially, this was the responsibility entrusted to Adam. Within his one family, God tried to set up an ideal standard for the entire kingdom of heaven and engrave it as the template for families in the kingdom of heaven. However, because this family failed, ail was lost. This means that everything— from Adam, the first generation, to today, thousands of generations later— has all turned into nothing. The True Parents came as the Lords representing God to re-establish everything that the false parents had reduced to nothing. Therefore, after establishing the True Parents, I had to set up the foundation for the Blessing, which would connect humankind to true life centered on God's true love, change the lineage of humankind, and make the perfect model of Adams family that has no relationship with Satan. (304-062, 1999.09.10)

30 What does Heavenly Parentism mean? First, it means the restoration of the rights of the two brothers—the elder and the younger; second, it means the restoration of the right of the parents; and third, it means the restoration of the

right of the king. In the democratic world there is no concept of a king. The democratic world is based on the concept of brotherhood. Everyone is considered to be brothers and sisters on an equal level. The problem with brotherhood is that people in the democratic world fight with each other, ever struggling, "This is mine and that is yours." Democracy includes the notion of conflict. The ruling and opposition parties fight. Each is struggling to gain the right of the king. Isn't the presidency just another form of kingship? Presidents are replaced after serving their term in office; however they often misuse their power and things do not go well. However, if a king emerged who was absolutely centered on God, things would be different. A world of absolute peace would then come. (205-174, 1990.09.01)

31 The democratic political system is a system in which siblings struggle. To stop their fighting, we need to rise to the position where we can represent the True Parents to them. Siblings can all unite around the True Parents. The world of peace starts from such unity. There is no other way. People need to find the True Parents, and then everything else follows—true children, the true nation and true peace. There is no other way. (205-189, 1990.09.01)

32 We need to unite based on Heavenly Parentism, the basis of which is Godism. Ultimately, True Parents are the king and queen of the family. A family comes together with other families and naturally forms a tribe. A king of the tribe will then emerge. Next the tribe comes together with other tribes to form a people, and then a king of that people emerges. The same will happen on the levels of the nation, world and cosmos. All these kings, being centered on True Parents, are connected all the way up to God. So God becomes the King of kings. (205-189, 1990.09.01)

CHAPTER 4 True Parents and True Children

Section 1. The Life Course of the True Parents

1 You cannot imagine how many tears were shed, unseen and unnoticed, before the True Parents came. I'm not talking about a few moments of weeping. If you were aware that this struggle was not only in the past but has continued until today, you would not be able to speak of it without shedding tears. You should find that same degree of resolve within your own heart. You should not be complacent about having sinned in the past and continuing to sin in the present. You are fallen people, so to return to God you need to shed tears of repentance, followed by tears of gratitude. Without going through this process to be restored to God, you cannot enter the heavenly kingdom. No matter who you are, you should have that kind of heart. Then you will truly be the kind of people whom God welcomes. (55-163, 1972.05.07)

The course to start the providence

2 I was born during the most miserable time in Korean history. The March First Independence Movement had started the previous year and was spreading. It had been a lean harvest that year. This made it a most difficult period for the people of Korea. Many people lost their lives during the March First Independence Movement. Not only were we going through some lean years, we were also facing an internal national crisis. People died one after another. Moreover, during my twenties there was not a single day that I did not go hungry. During that period we had nothing. We missed all the things we had known. Because my great uncle fought for our country's independence, our extended family faced such severe repression that we were completely torn apart. Our family was all destroyed. We faced civil unrest, national strife and family upheaval. (125-185, 1983.03.20)

3 When I was sixteen by Korean age, I had an extraordinary experience. On Easter morning I was offering a long and tearful prayer when Jesus Christ appeared and revealed many things to me. Jesus spoke to me of profound and amazing truths. He told me that God was in deep sorrow due to the suffering of humankind, and he requested that I take on a special role for God's work on earth. So many things happened in the wake of this. I would pore over the Bible while I continued my school- work. I continued receiving profound messages from Jesus that most people would have found hard to understand. I was arrested and put in prison on a number of occasions for teaching people those things. I was incarcerated in a North Korean death camp for almost three years. In that camp people often died within a few months. Yet God protected me for nearly three years, allowing me to survive even amid such terrible suffering. (134-145, 1985.02.02)

4 I was in the same position as Jesus, who was abandoned by his own people; therefore I could not witness to my own family or try to influence them. I did not talk about the Divine Principle to my brothers, my parents or any of my relatives. Instead I went out alone into the world at large to find people. Now that I have restored people outside my family, blessed them and formed a tribe, I can witness to my own relatives and bring them along with me. (52-196, 1971.12.29)

5 There was no one whom I could lean on, not my parents, friends or teachers. I did not have a comfortable environment. All I had was a lonely heart. All alone, I faced a heaven and earth that seemed so bleak. Nevertheless I pulled myself together and summoned the heart to call out to my Father. As I shed tears, the wind blew; that wind became my friend. The sunlight rising from the east became my friend, with whom I shared my heart. The lowly soil at my feet became my friend, as did everything in nature that I saw around me. If you ever experience such a heart, you will discover a new self. I found new value there, and based on that, you too will find a new self within you. Welling up in your heart you will feel a new determination to make a new relationship with God. With such resolve and heart, I prayed, bowing down before God. This is not something that only I had to do; you too must pray in order to release God from His bitter sorrow. You are called to shed

sweat and blood for Heaven, even if it means sacrificing not only yourselves but your entire tribe and people as well. (150-170, 1960.09.04)

6 I have been wandering everywhere in search of a people that could receive God's blessing and a land that could receive God's blessing. That search took me to prison. It was a miserable path that left me bloodied; a path on which I often risked my life. The land of the enemy was so vast; it was like an open sea. Looking up, I saw nothing but endless sky. I had no friends, no companions and no comrades-in-arms. I even had to distance myself from my parents. But I did not despair. I was keenly aware of the path Noah had walked as he lamented and suffered, the historical path of the Israelites who collapsed in the wilderness, and the miserable historical courses of Jesus* disciples who pressed forward for the sake of Heaven, even to the point of being crucified upside down. Nevertheless, I chose to go that path. Since there had been no one up to that point who could take responsibility for this world, I felt I had no choice but to set out on this perilous road. (12-332, 1963.08.11)

The course of suffering and victory

7 My life has been filled with misery. I have to recover the birthright of the eldest son, and for this I have to go out and fight until I win before I can return home. But I do not fight with my fists. I have to sacrifice myself, even to the point of vomiting blood. By walking this tortuous path soaked with my blood and tears—the path of loving my enemies—I have to transform the realm of Cain into the realm of the eldest son on Heavens side. I must then ascend from the younger son position to the eldest son position. That means I must bring them to the point where they offer themselves to work with me—not only themselves, but their property as well, and even their nation. Unless they do, I cannot recover the position of the eldest son. In doing this, I must pass through eight stages. (120-340, 1982.10.20)

8 How many levels must you pass through in the course of history to reach the level of the True Parents? The first step is to be a true servant of servants. In that position some of you will have to bear the cross. If you think you cannot bear it, the True Parents can never appear. Even among sinners, there have to be “true sinners,” who want to change. You have to go that way and build bridges to the True Parents. I am the representative of love who began from the most miserable place in the world and overcame everything. In order to do this, I had to shoulder the cross of love. In this way I built a bridge. Step by step I had to rise from being a true servant to the position of a true adopted son, then a true son, a true Cain and eventually a true Abel. This is the path I have followed. I have been building bridges from stage to stage by walking that way of suffering, surviving the struggle and emerging triumphant. So whenever you see a pitiable person on the street, remember that I was in that situation. Even though I was indignant when I was being stomped on, kicked and tortured by communist interrogators, I never prayed, “Heavenly Father,

strike these enemies with a thunderbolt and slaughter them all.” Although my body was bleeding, I was praying for them to receive blessing. (116-114, 1981.12.27)

9 When I began my seven-year course immediately after Korea’s liberation from Japan, and as I looked at the fortune of the nation during those seven years, I was seriously concerned. I knew that God would be with Korea if it did well; otherwise He would not. If Christians had united with me during that seven-year course, we could have worked together successfully. If that had happened, the Unification Church would have expanded throughout the world within that seven-year period. The Communist Party in North Korea and communist parties throughout the world would all have been gone long ago. I was supposed to make a family- level foundation during those seven years. This was the hope of history, the hope of humankind and the hope of all religious seekers. (17-133, 1966.12.11)

10 If Christianity had received me in 1945, I would have united the world in seven years. Through the Blessing I would have opened the gates of both earth and heaven and realized the kingdom of heaven. But as I sought to restore the nation, Christianity, together with the rest of the world, opposed me. Moreover, as I sought to embrace the world, the earthly and spiritual realms united to oppose me. Nevertheless, I must bless all humankind by overcoming even this persecution, using a hidden method that I am keeping secret on behalf of God. All people must receive the Blessing in the end, becoming absolute couples who abide by the ideals of absolute sex. (305-164, 1998.06.13)

11 If the Christian leaders had listened to me after Korea gained its independence, I would have prepared the groundwork for the salvation of the world within seven years, investing my total effort. I knew clearly where the world was heading. I knew it was headed to ruin if it kept on its present course. Would I have walked this stony path for forty years had I not known that? It has been an exhausting and rugged path, one that neither my mother, nor my father, nor my brother could understand; indeed no one at all could understand it. Because they were already in Satan’s realm, I did not even try to make them understand. At that point I was kicked out into the wilderness. I was like a useless stone thrown into a corner. Who could have known that this discarded stone would become a rock of vital importance to the Lord God? (167-032, 1987.06.14)

12 God is the King who created heaven and earth, yet due to the Fall of the parents, Adam and Eve, He lost His authority. Ever since God lost His authority to Satan, He has been unable to exercise His royal authority even once. God must be crowned, but He cannot crown Himself. It must be done by the True Parents. If the True Parents do not do it, no one can. The right of kingship is the original standard by which God created heaven and earth. Once this kingship has been achieved, the family can be restored, followed by the tribe, people, nation and world; this will usher in the age of God’s kingship on earth. This is a process, so we should not talk

about heaven and earth being restored all at once. Human beings and the archangel together overturned God's kingship. Nonetheless the True Parents came, eliminated Satan, and established the standard by which to complete God's providence. They abolished hell both in the spiritual and earthly realms, and standing in the position of the unfallen True Parents, they enabled God to stand in His rightful position of royal authority. (339-087, 2000.12.07)

Restoration course of blood and tears

13 I do not have a teacher. Even God could not be my teacher. If God had been my teacher, then all people of prayer would also have been my teachers. How did I become the Teacher? I made myself into the Teacher. How did I become the True Parent? I made myself into the True Parent. How did I become the True Owner? I made myself into the Owner. This is re-creation. If God could have done it for me, He would have done it immediately. (316-261, 2000.02.15)

14 I once prayed for seventeen hours straight. I often prayed for more than twelve hours, staying up all night in the process. I prayed until my cotton- padded pants were so soaked with the tears of my bitter weeping that I could wring water from them. The Unification Movement was not built with games and laughter. I built it by going the way of truth, with blood, sweat and tears, wringing my own flesh and spilling my own blood. I came to know the standard, I fulfilled it, and I built a victorious foundation. Only because I know it is correct, having confirmed it through my own experimentation, am I teaching it to you. I am not saying I will become the True Parent; I already have. That is why I could proclaim True Parents and the Completed Testament Age. Now is the time to firmly secure the Completed Testament Age. We are in a time when nothing in this world can invade that. (257-308, 1994.03.16)

15 How can I sleep soundly while Unification Church members receive persecution throughout the world? How many times have I been unable to eat or sleep? After learning that a missionary had been sentenced to death by a communist regime, would it have been right for me to sleep or to eat well? Even though I had never met him, he had heard my words from a distance, across many national borders, and said while offering his life, "Father, please be victorious! I am crossing over first." How do you think I felt at the core of my being—in my bone marrow and flesh- when I was told that he had spoken those last words? I was deeply sorrowful that we did not yet have a nation. Who could ever fathom that God would have to suffer this much? (365-326, 2002.01.14)

16 Until I was thirty years old there was not a day that I did not go hungry. It was not for lack of money or food. I deliberately ate only two meals a day. Until I was thirty, I did not buy clothes for myself. This was because I knew I was responsible for saving the world's poor. Even when I had nothing to eat and could not afford to

wear good clothes, I prayed that God would save the hungry and liberate the poor, who could not wear good clothes. Such prayers reach Heaven directly. (276-099, 1996.02.04)

17 We are called to bear a great cross. Our individual and family ordeals have been but preparation to build a tribal foundation. You should not think that the path we are called to go will be easier simply because we no longer face persecution or trials as before. Our scope is greater now. If in the past we bore our cross while sitting down, from now on we must bear it while walking. If in the past we bore our cross with our eyes fixed only on one point, from now on we have to look in every direction—east, west, north and south—as we go forward. I must attend to the path that God takes, and you must attend to the path I take. I am walking a more difficult path than you are, and God who is leading me is walking an even more difficult path than I am. (13-232, 1964.03.22)

18 God wants to give all good things to His sons and daughters, and His sons and daughters want to possess all the precious things God has. Likewise, I want to give you everything, and you also want to possess all the good things I have. Such is family with True Parents at its center. We all desire this. I try to give you all good things on behalf of God and you, in turn, want to receive them. This is a basic principle. I am guiding you along this path because I know this principle. (127-329, 1983.05.22)

The course of seeking the True Parents

19 How can you find yourself? The center of your being must be connected to God and True Parents by true love, true life and true lineage. God is the vertical Parent and True Parents are the horizontal Parents. Perfect love settles in the place where the two become one. When you as two become one so as to settle the vertical love of God and the horizontal love of True Parents, then your true value is manifested. That is where you can settle as well. We then can expand it to the family, tribe, people, nation and world. (421-263, 2003.10.18)

20 In the beginning God created Eve through Adam. Therefore, the True Father creates the True Mother. This is recreation. After surmounting the eight stages—individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world, cosmos and God—we, True Father and True Mother, came to stand side by side as God's true son and daughter. I am saying that the two of us stand at the same level. It was not God who made this possible, but True Father. The Declaration and Celebration of True Parents' Cosmic Victory was held on that basis. You must fully inherit the model of the True Parents. The mission of the True Father and True Mother is to clean up the world of evil begun by Adam and Eve, the false parents. Hence, if you become one with the True Parents through absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience, Satan cannot interfere. (310-292, 1999.07.27)

21 With our Heavenly Parent at the center, Adam and Eve were supposed to have inherited true love, true life and true lineage. Then all humankind would have become as one tree. However, they became the opposite, like a dead tree. The True Father and True Mother must come to remedy this; and from them true sons and daughters also must come. Then based on the True Parents blood kin, we must organize tribes, peoples and nations, complete the kingdom of heaven on earth and in heaven, and move forward to liberate the universe. (355-099, 2001.10.04)

22 The original position should have been perfected in Adam's family, but it was lost due to the Fall. To restore this, everything must be put back together in reverse order. Therefore True Mother must stand as the representative of the world. For this, True Father is placing all the women of the world in the position of Eve, the position representing True Mother. Just as there was mother- son cooperation in providential history, True Parents, who came on behalf of God, will teach you sisters, who stand in the position representing True Mother, how to unite in the mother-son relationship. This mother-son cooperation must be carried out according to the eight stages of love. Through becoming one we can turn around this world, in which the absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal God has struggled with Satan. (332-229, 2000.09.23)

23 I must do all the necessary preparatory work for Mother before I go to the spirit world. There is much work to be done. Do not wish for me to live more than one hundred years. You do not know how much work needs to be done in the spirit world. I have to go there and reorganize its structure. Originally I was supposed to receive the key to the gates of the kingdom of heaven and open them. This is symbolic and conditional. I am saying there are huge issues at hand. (316-212, 2000.02.12)

24 In the era of the realm of the Fourth Adam, I have to put my children forward. You too should do the same. You men have to raise your wives and put them forward to build a foundation for your extended family. If they cannot, you should do it through your children. To stake your claim as an outpost you must first prepare your sons and daughters; once your sons and daughters are united, their mother must stand with them. The Messiah's thought, the teaching of the True Parents, is that God can establish Heavens tradition for the sons and daughters through the mother. Through this we will stake our claim to the tradition of a heavenly nation. This is not a tradition for the family, but a tradition for the nation. The family exists for the sake of the nation. AU families represent the nation. Unless families make sacrifices, Heavens nation will not emerge. Blessed families must sacrifice in order to see that nation arise. (324-029, 2000.06.04)

25 How will everything be connected to the Heavenly Parent and the True Parents? All the family members are divided and scattered. Families in that condition have to be brought into unity, and for that they must unite with the mother. This is the

course of restoration. The sons and daughters must become one with the mother and then one with the father. Thereafter they are to be connected to the Lord of the Second Advent, the True Parents. After that connection is made, the question is how to restore everything. Restoration happens when father and mother and sons and daughters become one. Then God will be present. That is where the kingdom of heaven on earth begins. (315-050, 2000.01.25)

26 True Mother must re-create the sons, Cain and Abel, and create a realm of unity with them. She needs to connect everything to the tradition and standard lifestyle, beyond the nation to the world level, to live in the kingdom of heaven. To do this, she must create oneness with her children, educate the Cain world, and reach the level of God's nation. Only when we reach the level of God's nation can we restore the right of the eldest son, the right of the parents and the right of the king. Therefore, True Mother is in a position of leadership and must be an example in all things. She is in the position of the subject partner, and she has to govern the environment. Mother is in the subject partner position, not me. We must relieve the bitter sorrow of Jesus and bring Mother, who at this time is positioned as the bride at the national level, up to the world level. (330-103, 2000.08.13)

Section 2. The Responsibility and Authority of the True Parents

1 Due to the Fall, humanity is sick. The only doctor that can cure this illness is God. There have been numerous religions throughout history, but the founders of those religions were just messengers. As messengers, they could only prepare medicine according to the methods shown to them by Heaven, and then deliver it. How will humanity finally be saved? Even if people take that medicine, and even if they improve, it does not mean they are cured. In the end, they must go through a process in total alignment with God's instructions. Unless they do so, the providence of salvation cannot be completed. (115-124, 1981.11.08)

Salvation in the spirit world and in the physical world

2 When the Messiah comes to humankind, he brings a teaching of equality. God is fair; hence the Messiah who is sent by God to save all fallen people treats everyone fairly. He comes with a purpose that is fair to everyone, to create the environment in which all people are equal. Thus, anyone who unites with him can be his disciple. What path does the Messiah follow? He walks the path from the bottom of hell in the human world up to the most glorious realms. This means there is no place he will not go, putting his life on the line to save each person. (091-278, 1977.02.27)

3 Looking back through history, we see that there have been many prophets and saints. They may have accomplished some kind of outward unity, but as they could not attain mind-body unity, they inevitably encountered fundamental limitations. Now, however, the True Parents have come to earth with God's true love. By

establishing the True Family, they are bringing about an ideal society. They have formed the mainstream realm for God's providence of salvation. True Parents are the mediators who engraft all people to God. We cannot go to God without the True Parents. True Parents are the ones who show us the only path by which we can be saved from the realm of the Fall. (271-063, 1995.08.20)

4 True Parents came with the right of kingship over the spirit world and the physical world. In order for this right of kingship to take effect in the spirit world, they had to lay the foundation of unity there—a foundation at the formation level of the growth stage. Otherwise the spirit world could not participate in True Parents* work on earth, where they fulfilled the standard of perfection. That is why True Parents had to make these preparations. The spirit world was supposed to have been united and connected to the earthly foundation based on the love of True Parents, but everything was blocked. But now that Jesus and my son Heung-jin have become one, the barriers are being removed and Jesus, through Heung-jin, can come down and communicate with True Parents' family on earth. (140-054, 1986.02.01)

Cleaning up Satan's world

5 The world is in confusion, and the source of this confusion is the family; Families are breaking down and teenagers are being corrupted. This is the world-level fruit of Adam and Eve, who in their youth caused the breakdown of Adam's family in the Garden of Eden. God could not do anything about this. Those who are working for the providential will cannot stop this; not even Satan can. Then who will resolve this problem? Adam and Eve were the ones who sinned. As the false parents, they brought about false love, false life and false lineage. Therefore True Parents must come and uncover all of Satan's secrets and the secrets of the spirit world. With this knowledge they must inherit everything from both worlds—the democratic world and the communist world—and embrace everyone from both the right wing and the left wing. Jesus could not bring such opposites together, so division and conflict remain to this day. To bring them into unity, True Parents must embrace the democratic world and the communist world, that is, idealism and materialism. (280-257, 1997.01.02)

6 From the viewpoint of God's providence, the realm of victory between Cain and Abel must be attained in the Last Days, centered on Eve. In alignment with God, the victorious side must absorb Satan's side. When that happens, the family, tribe, people and nation based on the perfected Adam can emerge. Once the left and right are both pulled to God's side by Adam, Satan's world will disappear. This should have happened immediately after the Second World War. Great Britain, an island nation, represented Eve. Under the leadership of Great Britain, the positions of Abel and the archangel were set up. The United States, the nation born of Great Britain, was in Abel's position. France, a former enemy of England, was in the

position of the archangel. Eve, Abel and the archangel were united representing God's side. In opposition to them, Japan, also an island nation, represented Eve on Satan's side. Germany was the Abel nation on Satan's side, and Italy was in the role of the archangel. The Second World War thus saw a global division and a battle between the two camps. The Allied nations' historic victory brought about a unified world centered on God; at that time the realm of religion had unified the world. (235-014, 1992.08.24)

7 If we do not know history clearly, we cannot clearly perceive God's providence. The fact that after the Second World War the Eve nation, Abel nation and archangel nation on Satan's side became nations on God's side is a sign of the Last Days. These are the end times. Yet although the Cain and Abel nations had united, they still inherited the lineage of Satan. Their lineage still had to be completely restored through indemnity in order for them to return to God. In order for Eve, Cain and Abel to become a daughter and sons on God's side, they must clean up everything on Satan's side and inherit the seed of new life centered on true love. The one in the flesh who bequeaths that seed of new life is none other than the Lord of the Second Advent, the Savior and True Parents. (235-014, 1992.08.24)

8 In order for the True Parents to stand in that position, everything throughout heaven and earth that has been overturned by Adam, the false parent, has to be put right. Any condition by which Satan could accuse needs to be completely corrected. Because I am striving to achieve that, Satan has mobilized the world to attack me all along the way. He led the world to attack me as an individual, to attack my family and to attack my tribe. Even though Satan blocked the path I took as an individual and as a family, and continued to block my way as I walked the path of the tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos, through my own effort I have removed all these obstacles. (210-244, 1990.12.23)

9 The purpose of the providence of salvation is for God and the Messiah, the True Parents, to unite and liberate the world. You now stand at the very edge of destruction. If you take just one more step you will fall off, so you had better turn around. To do so, you need to have a love greater than Satan's temptation; that is the only way to liquidate his claim against you. How can you liberate God and True Parents? God has been carrying out His work of re-creation to this day. Re-creation is carried out by investing and forgetting, then investing and forgetting again, in true love. Wherever I go, Satan's walls collapse. The walls around individuals, the walls around families, the walls around tribes, around peoples, around nations and the world are all collapsing. Why? The right of the eldest son has been restored. The right of the king is being restored. These are the positions that originally belonged to Adam. (216-231, 1991.04.01)

10 Representing humankind, the True Parents are opening the gates of hell and the gates of the kingdom of heaven and building a highway going straight to the

kingdom of heaven. The highway to the kingdom of heaven was the original foundation and blessing that God gave to His children, Adam and Eve. However, people who are in the spirit world do not want to hear the screams of those in hell or see the complicated spiritual environments in hell or paradise or anywhere else. All they want to see is an environment that is linked to God's kingdom. Who will resolve this? The True Parents will. True Parents are expanding us into a true family, true tribe and the true nation. As a true nation, true world and true cosmos emerge, everything on earth and in heaven that resulted from the Fall will collapse. (293-305, 1998.06.07)

The liberation of God

11 During the forty years since the True Parents Holy Wedding, we have paid the indemnity for four thousand years of history and opened a new age. We have opened a realm of blessing for all people, so that they may abide within the realm of liberation. The worst problems now are related to youth and to the breakdown of families. There is no sovereign, no teacher, no one to solve these problems except the True Parents. I have the special authority to do so. I have resolved all the hidden resentments accumulated in history, in the spirit world and on earth. I have paid indemnity for everything and attained victory, so when you determine to become one with me through absolute faith > absolute love and absolute obedience, day and night, centered on true love, you can rise. God has authorized the True Parents to form a lineage of true love, a clan of true love and a people of true love. Therefore your blessed families are more precious than anyone else in history. This is how the True Parents pass down heavens treasures to each family. (320-155, 2000.04.02)

12 How will you settle Satan's claim against you? How will you liberate God and True Parents? Throughout history much indemnity has been paid. By carrying out your mission as tribal messiahs, you can liberate God and True Parents. The nation, world and cosmos are all connected to you in this. Originally you should have gone through the course of a tribal messiah, a national messiah, a world messiah and a cosmic messiah in order to connect to God. These things have all been done by the True Parents; you have only your mission as a tribal messiah. (216-235, 1991.04.01)

13 Why am I your Father? Are you of my seed? I am the True Father who can connect you to God's original love. What was the Fall? The parents who should have been your true ancestors failed to connect you to God's love. Your own parents also cannot do this. But True Parents have the special authority to connect you to God's love. Under the circumstances, is it righteous or evil to ignore the words of your own parents and listen instead to the words of True Parents? With True Parents you are listening to the principles of the cosmos, so it is righteous to listen to them. (118-148, 1982.05.23)

14 The Marriage of the Lamb takes place in the Completed Testament Age. That marriage did not happen during the Old Testament Age, and although it was supposed to happen in the New Testament Age, it was postponed. What was postponed is completed when the Lord of the Second Advent comes in the Last Days and holds the Marriage Supper of the Lamb. It is through this marriage that we are to arrive at perfection. We can call this era the global era of perfection through marriage. In this era, when people become one with God and attain perfection through marriage, they can enter the kingdom of heaven. Hence, it is on earth that the kingdom of heaven will emerge. Due to the Fall, two paths were formed, so we must find the right path. We must make it possible for the people of the world to enter the kingdom of heaven. The way to the kingdom of heaven has been blocked ever since the Fall. That kingdom has been empty for thousands of years. But through the Blessing, the kingdom of heaven will be filled in an instant. The people of the world will realize one united world with a culture of freedom. (293-318, 1998.06.07)

15 What is the mission of the Unification Church? It is not to look forward to a time of hope, as Christians do. Our mission is to move forward centered on the substantial people who fulfill that hope. They are the True Parents, and they are our standard. The True Parents must be the link between God, the earth and the spirit world. They must connect not only with God and with all the people on the earth, but also with the angelic world. In this way they must establish the authority of God .to directly govern the universe, and at the same time become the center that guides the universe to pursue God's one purpose. Then God's purpose and His great work of creation will be accomplished. (28-011, 1970.01.01)

Section 3. True Love, True Life and True Lineage

1 The words True Parents did not come into existence only after the Fall. God's ideal of creation was to begin with True Parents. However, due to the Fall, the lineage was changed. It became precisely the opposite of what was intended. Nations today are also different from the original nation that would have emerged if the Fall had not occurred. In the original plan, there would have been no religion. Religions and nations and all such things stemming from the fallen lineage have nothing to do with me. In this sense, only the ideal of the True Parents, which God had in mind before the Creation, is absolute. Only that thought is connected to God's love, life and lineage. The concepts, ideas and relationships you have, which came about after the Fall, have no connection to the True Parents, who are unrelated to the Fall. Therefore, you need to cleanly cut off from all these fallen things, as if they were your enemies. (491-144, 2005.03.18)

The embodiment of love, life and truth

2 God has been working to appoint a central figure who could realize His desire, the kingdom of heaven. That person, whom God designates on earth, first receives God's truth, life and love. He then can become the embodiment of these. God has worked throughout the long course of history to establish one person who could achieve the standard for humankind based on these three criteria. If we cannot meet the central figure who comes on God's behalf, who as His embodiment has integrity of mind and body, then we can have no relationship with the kingdom of heaven that God is trying to establish. Nor can we build the kingdom of heaven desired by all people on earth, even by all of creation. (2-130, 1957.03.17)

3 The one person who stands in the central position, possessing the genuine truth, life and love that God can relate to, will become the center of hope for all things of creation and the core of God's hope. Created beings will naturally want to be with him. If he speaks God's truth from that standard, he will be able to testify to the life of God, demonstrate the love of God, and manifest the truth of God as His very substance. That is the meaning behind Jesus' saying, "I am the way and the truth and the life." (2-129, 1957.03.17)

4 You were born originally to continue the history of the original lineage through the love of God and True Parents. When you discover this self, you will find the True Parents and their love as well. Since you originated from God's love, when you find yourself, you will discover the two original images of love— God and True Parents— already planted within you. They are implanted there as the root. You cannot pull yourself out of God or out of True Parents. Since you are one of their branches, you cannot deny that you are that branch. For example, if you look at a plant's cells, they are all alike, whether they are from a leaf or the root. These days, plants can be multiplied by cloning cells. It is the same principle. Leaves contain elements of the root and of all other parts. In the same way, God's love and True Parents' love are at the core of their dominion over the universe. Their love is the eternal standard, making them the ultimate subject partners. This is why they govern everything through love. (202-283, 1990.05.25)

5 Restoration through indemnity entails recovering the state of innocence that was lost. Two groups appeared in order to unite what was separated into Cain and Abel, centered on the mother. The mother and father on Satan's side fought with the mother and father on Heaven's side. The means to settle this was the Second World War. That is how the world formed one global realm. Originally God's love was to have been connected to True Parents' love, God's life to True Parent's life, and God's lineage to True Parent's lineage. However, these connections were not made. Humankind abandoned that standard. Satan planted his root next to it, seized everything and sprouted his shoots. Those shoots need to be severed. There, with the new True Parents at the center, the connection must be made once again, establishing the realm of resurrection of the tree of life. To accomplish this,

everything of Satan's must be cut off and human beings must be engrafted to the original standard. (199-132, 1990.02.16)

6 When it is said that Jesus is coming again, it means Christ is coming as the True Parent of humankind. That is, he comes as the original root of true life and true lineage founded on true love, in oneness with God. Through him all people need to return to the true lineage and make the condition of reconnecting and engrafting to the true lineage. In other words, the returning Jesus must reconnect humankind to God's lineage. Unless he elevates their value to a status equal to his own, by connecting them to God's love, life and lineage, he cannot attain the goal of the kingdom of heaven. Those who can enter the kingdom of heaven are the sons and daughters of the original unfallen Adam and Eve—their descendants who are one with God through lineage. People today with the defect of a fallen lineage cannot enter the heavenly kingdom if this connection is not made. (224-279, 1991.12.15)

7 When the Lord of the Second Advent, the Savior, comes to this earth, he is the Lord. He is the Savior of love and life. Because love, life and lineage all went off track, he comes as the Savior of true love, true life and true lineage. Those things of the original world were lost, and they must be recovered. The effort to recover them through human history forms the history of True Parents tradition. (191-245, 1989.06.25)

8 Who will end the battle between God and Satan? The True Parents will do that. How? With true love. Their true love brings Satan to surrender. Then God and restored Lucifer will embrace each other and praise the True Parents. Through the principle of True Parents true love, God is liberated, Satan is liberated and the gates of hell are abolished. Then the bright sunlight of the kingdom of heavens new love will permeate hell, bringing a revolution in the spirit world. (317-213, 2000.02.26)

9 The True Parents are the manifestation of true love. The True Parents are the individuals in the central position who set the standard of absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal love. This love requires a certain standard on the part of the partner. Everyone and everything needs a partner. Small things need small partners, and in their own small way they form spheres based on subject and object partnerships. Big things also form spheres based on subject and object partnerships in their own big way. In this way they grow into something even larger. God is the essence, so He forms a sphere that extends from the beginning to the end. The entire universe fits within the realm of His love. (317-271, 2000.02.28)

10 True Parents are the parents whose lineage is woven together with God's love and life. That is why they are called the True Parents. From this point on, people who do not know the True Parents will not be able to realize their full potential as human beings. The True Parents are the pioneers who can perfect God's love and

make God into the Lord of love. Without the True Parents, God's plan to perfect love can never be fulfilled. (459-071, 2004.07.10)

Changing to the lineage of true love

11 When the lineage was stained, it became contaminated. You must understand how difficult it is to cleanse a lineage that has been defiled. Also, since the lineage was stained, God could not freely relate to the people in this world, as they had become the children of His enemy. Therefore, it took tens of thousands of years to completely turn a good number of people around through religion. (332-304, 2000.09.24)

12 Due to the false parents in the earthly world, the heavenly world came to be divided into paradise, the middle spirit world and hell, and the phenomenon of division also occurred on earth. During the Old Testament Age came the promise that the Messiah would be sent to put the earthly world in order. During the New Testament Age, Jesus was to have built the kingdom of heaven on earth, on the family level first. Had he done so, the kingdom of heaven in the spirit world could have begun as well. However, because Jesus was unable to fulfill this, the task was delayed until this global era. At the time of the Second Coming, the True Parents, based on the Marriage Supper of the Lamb, stand in the position of having resolved the fundamental problem that arose at the beginning of history, through having indemnified everything. Therefore, the true lineage centered on True Parents' love can be passed down and engrafted. The Blessing is the engrafting of this lineage on the family level. Only families may enter the kingdom of heaven, so those families who are engrafted in this way can, with that fruit of being engrafted, enter the kingdom of heaven. By that engrafting, what had been the fruit of wild olive trees becomes the fruit of true olive trees. (295-127, 1998.08.19)

13 If you accomplish your portion of responsibility you will connect only to God's true love, true life and true lineage, and by this you will establish the tradition of the True Parents. To become true parents you have to change your lineage. To do so, you wild olive trees need to receive a graft from the true olive tree. This engrafting is done through the Unification Church Blessing. (482-187, 2005.01.12)

14 Until now, a perfect family with God at the center could not be established, and the eight stages—including the tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos—could not be unified. Cain's killing of Abel and the persecution of Seth have not been resolved. That is why the Savior, Messiah, Lord of the Second Advent and True Parents are necessary. The True Parents can resolve all this, and based on their true love, life and lineage, they can begin the family untouched by the Fall. This is the beginning of the family king, the beginning of the tribal king, and the beginning of God's kingship over the people, the nation, the world and all of heaven and earth.

Thus the whole world becomes one sovereignty of love, with God's throne at the center. (488-245, 2005.02.23)

15 Believing in a religion does not make you a true person. If the Fall had not occurred, there would be no need for religion. Holy and pure sons and daughters would simply be born through the use of the reproductive organs. They are where true love comes from. That is where true life and the true sons and daughters of the true lineage—the liberated sons and daughters whom Satan cannot accuse—come from. The reproductive organs are the palace of true love, true life and true lineage. They are the most precious things. If they disappeared, heaven and earth would disappear. Without them, God's ideal, God's family and God's Will could not be achieved. They are the source of the perfection of everything. (216-218, 1991.04.01)

16 Unification Church members live together with True Parents and with God. They are born again through the love of True Parents. That connection of love is eternal and cannot be severed. You can never forget their love, even on the day you die. When parents die, they take their heart of love for their sons and daughters with them. It is the same with husbands and wives. When we die, we do not forget those we love. Love goes beyond death and is connected to eternity. This is why you men and women who have inherited the realm of life through True Parents' love cannot forget the True Parents, who are the root of love. If they are the root and you are the trunk, your sons and daughters are the buds. When they grow in number, they will expand to form a tribe, a people and a nation. (218-128, 1991.07.14)

Section 4. The Way of a True Child

1 The six-thousand-year history of the providence of restoration is the history of restoring the parents and then restoring the children. In the course of restoration, the parents and children have the same responsibility. True Parents have to walk the way of the cross through seven stages—the individual, the family, the tribe, the people, the nation, the world and the cosmos. You as their children must also walk the way of the cross through these seven stages. There may be a difference in the time period or a difference between who walks ahead and who follows behind, but the substance of the indemnity conditions is the same. (13-308, 1964.04.12)

The course to restore true children

2 What kind of people will be chosen as true parents, true children and true husbands and wives when we enter the age of heavenly fortune? They will be people who understand human emotions, understand God's heart, and have experienced the universal suffering that is deep in God's heart. They will have felt God's love such that they can call God their Father. Throughout six thousand years

of history, human beings could not resolve the matter of their vertical relationship with God; nor could they resolve the issues in their horizontal relationships with each other. People have sought to resolve these issues through religion. In the Last Days we must surmount all such peaks and walls as we encounter them. (3-294, 1958.01.19)

3 To stand before the True Parents as true children, children must go through a course of restoration on the levels of the individual, family, tribe, people and nation. Through the completion of both the parents' course and the children's course of restoration on all these levels, the model of victorious and united parents and children is established. Only after this can we finally conclude national-level restoration and make a fresh start toward the world stage. (13-289, 1964.04.12)

4 There must be a family that bears the cross. Only when such a family emerges can all the families of the 30 million Korean people be restored. Therefore, all the family members of the Unification tribe must endure hardships on behalf of the Korean people. You must become the pillars of Korean society. You each have an individual indemnity course, but I must walk a family-level indemnity course. Moreover, when I bear a tribal-level cross, you must bear family-level crosses. I am walking one step ahead of you. (33-256, 1970.08.16)

5 Once my family has fulfilled its responsibility as Abel on the family level, you also will need to fulfill your responsibility as Abel on the family level. In this way we must expand outward, with the kingdom of heaven as our goal. However, the base where God can rest is not yet prepared. There will always be fighting, and Satan can come and go from every direction. So when can we settle down? This is the difficult task ahead of us. You must offer your utmost devotion to resolve this. (17-321, 1967.04.10)

6 When the Abel family is victorious and restores a family in the Cain position, that Cain-position family will have to stand in the Abel position in front of many other families. Then those who were victorious in the first Abel's position can rest. The Cain people who inherit the position of Abel on God's side will take their place. These people in turn must win over those in the position of Cain in Satan's world. The people who inherit the position of Abel and then win over Cain gain victory as Abel. Then they too can rest, passing on their position to new representatives. This is how restoration through indemnity proceeds. (17-318, 1967.04.10)

7 As of now, while blessed families are going through a course to restore the Korean people, True Parents should be going through a course to restore the world. In other words, they should be one step ahead. Unless you blessed families attain victory on the national level, True Parents cannot walk the course of worldwide restoration. This is why you must inherit the responsibility to restore the Korean people, so that True Parents can walk the worldwide course. Until your death, or

until the deep sorrow of this people is removed, you must shoulder the responsibility to restore them. (13-293, 1964.04.12)

We must protect True Parents' family

8 As individuals, you need to protect yourselves from Satan. On the front line between Satan and God, you who are standing on God's side have to protect yourselves by establishing a victorious foundation such that Satan cannot attack you. Your families need a foundation of victory in Satan's world, and on that foundation you need to protect the Lord's family. Likewise, protecting the individuals in Jesus, tribe requires many diverse peoples to constitute a realm of protection. Those peoples need to stand on a foundation of victory in Satan's world and then create a realm of protection for the tribe on Jesus* side. (52-228, 1972.01.01)

9 Cain's family exists for Abel's family, Cain's tribe exists for Abel's tribe, Cain's people exist for Abel's people and Cain's nation exists for Abel's nation. It is only when such concepts are firmly established that a realm of protection emerges for the first time. With the attitude that you will take responsibility for difficult situations, you can attain the realm of rest, in other words, the kingdom of heaven. (52-235, 1972.01.01)

10 Today both the left wing and the right wing are on the verge of collapse. Who brought things to this point? God and True Parents did. You families who have become one with True Parents have inherited True Parents' path, so you should be bold and strong wherever you are in the world. Then, just as God and this universe protect me, they will protect your families, and winning the heart of a nation will be no problem. You should stand at the forefront with me. You should not retreat. You should advance directly toward true love. (201-129, 1990.03.27)

11 Wherever you go, you should proudly identify yourself as a Unification Church member. "We belong to True Parents. We are True Parents sons and daughters." Please do not fight; to fight is to accept Satan. You should go around proclaiming, "We are the number one children of God!" Then Satan will not be able to accuse you. You should carry such conviction firmly within you. (201-129, 1990.03.27)

12 Jesus came to earth embodying Heaven's dignity. Heaven and earth had been split apart, and had Jesus brought heaven and earth together, he could have formed a national realm of victory for the first time in Satan's world—in the spirit world and the physical world. Had he succeeded in establishing that realm, it would have been a realm where Satan could not reign. Had he given God a nation that could not be invaded by Satan, there God could have rested at the center with His tribe, or among His people. Unless a nation fights and wins, God cannot rest as the head of a tribe. Unless a tribe fights and wins, God cannot rest as the head of a family. For

this reason, unless God has a national realm of victory, He cannot have a people's realm of rest, and unless He has a people's realm of victory, He cannot have a tribal realm of rest. Likewise, if God does not gain victory in the tribe, then the family realm of rest cannot emerge, and without the family level of victory, the individual realm of rest cannot be attained. (51-035, 1971.11.04)

Section 5. Learning and Inheriting the True Parents' Heart

1 When we go to school, we have to pass examinations. We can advance only after passing them. It is the same with the heavenly kingdom: unless you inherit the realm of True Parents' heart, you cannot go there. (268-195, 1995.04.01)

2 The True Parents inherited God's Will and you inherit True Parents will. You should never lose the concept of tradition. What is that tradition? Since we are born into the lineage of the enemy Satan, we must first cut off from the lineage of this enemy and be restored to the lineage of God and True Parents. To accomplish this, we must become one in heart with God. Based on that oneness of heart, we need to connect with Heavens lineage, become the branches and leaves of the tree whose root is God, and become the embodiments of God's love. We must establish an absolute standard on earth by which to subjugate Satan. Only then will God's work of restoration move forward. God never gives up on His work of restoration. Even if you are unable to complete your mission, God will not give up on this earth. (13-297, 1964.04.12)

Attaining oneness through heart

3 In each age, from Adams family to the present time, known as the Last Days, God wanted to come to our ancestors and bequeath to them the heart of His great works. The ideal of the Second Coming, which is the desire of all heaven and earth and all of humankind, is that someone embodying God's heart emerges and succeeds in connecting all people to God's heart. This is the concept of the True Parents. Therefore, you cannot receive Heavens blessing or inheritance unless you stand with True Parents as your center and completely inherit their heart and will. You must attend them as your own parents and share in their liberation, as well as their feelings, whether joy or bitter pain. (151-042, 1962.04.19)

4 I must inherit the heart connected to all the providential victories from the time of Adam to the time of Jesus. This is the substance of history for which I have been battling to this day. The ideal of the Second Coming, which is the Will to set up the True Parents, is to connect history from Adam to the Last Days and then manifest it in heaven and on earth. If you cannot feel True Parents' ideal or grasp their will, you cannot receive God's blessing. Each of us, to the present day, has been a traitor in front of history and an unforgivable sinner. Therefore, you have to dissolve God's lamentation and bitter sorrow, and prepare an environment in which to attend the

True Parents. Then God will forge a bond between you and the substantial Parents, His embodiments. True Parents inherit God's work, and you inherit True Parents' work. You must know the sad content of True Parents' heart and of providential history. You can advance to the position to receive the Blessing only when you achieve oneness with True Parents. (11-342, 1962.04.19)

5 From a historical viewpoint, unless you become representatives of True Parents in front of Adam, Noah, Abraham, Moses and Jesus, and in front of all of heaven and earth, you cannot stand in the position to receive God's blessing. A man is a second self of Father and a woman is a second self of Mother. This term "second self" means a person whose heart is drenched with the tears, sorrows and complexities of history. Therefore you should indemnify the tears, sorrows and complex situations of history. You are in no position to say, "I am such-and-such a person, why don't You bless me?" You have to engraft to True Parents' heart, their persons and their words, whether in the past, the present or the future. Don't do less than your elders have done in representing the True Parents. If your elders cannot fulfill their responsibility, you must pledge to fulfill theirs in addition to your own. If you make such a pledge, you can certainly receive the same blessings as they do. You have to be determined that you will remain worthy until the end, even though you were unworthy in the past. Focusing on your individual purpose is not permissible. You cannot receive blessings unless you represent the True Parents. (11-342, 1962.04.19)

6 Only when you have the right heart can you become brave warriors of heaven. Without that heart, this cannot be achieved. Without that heart, you cannot have the right character. If you do not have good character based on heart, you cannot find the truth based on heart, and without that, you cannot find the ideal. What is your ideal? It is the True Parents. The Unification Church is the place where you can serve and attend the True Parents, the central figures whom history has been seeking and whom this era requires. They are the new beginning point of the future, and by attending them you will inherit from them the position of true parents as well. Accordingly, you will become the fruit of history and the center of history. You will be the origin, the ancestors of the future. This can only come about when you establish a relationship with the True Parents and unite your heart with theirs. If you have offered prayers with such a heart, you will not feel ashamed. (26-199, 1969.10.25)

7 Where does God's heart connect with True Parents' heart? How can the vertical heart connect horizontally? The horizontal realm of heart begins when God and a human being become one and reach perfection. What is the standard of perfection? In the course of growing to the age of seventeen or eighteen, you ascend from the bottom of the four-position foundation to the middle horizontal line. Then in the realm of heart, you are bound to expand your relationships into the horizontal world, necessarily centering on the True Parents. If the vertical heart

and the horizontal heart are not harmonized, the axis of heart is not established. The realm of God's heart based on the vertical standard is absolute; in the Divine Principle we call this the realm of God's direct dominion. Satan cannot invade this absolute realm. The direct dominion expands from the realm of heart. (171-010, 1987.12.05)

8 The question is how you can deeply experience True Parents' heart and God's love, and how you can enter into the state of their heart. For this, you have to become like Adam and Eve had they not fallen, free from Satan's accusation. How then can you be liberated from Satan's world? You have to win in the battle with Satan. How hard will you have to work and how much will you have to suffer to achieve this? Jacob and Moses were each deceived ten times. Jesus Christ was also deceived. It was the same with me. You must overcome this as well; then you will come to know God's heart and come to know the True Parents' heart. Without such experiences you will never know their hearts. If you lack such experiences, Satan will never leave you alone. Unless you triumph over Satan, you will never be able to know True Parents' heart or God's heart. (125-206, 1983.03.20)

9 You must know God's sorrow; you must also know that the more sorrowful God becomes, the more He yearns to bless you. You who are on the path of restoration must first attend the True Parents and then use that connection to deal with matters in the spirit world. God's heart is to bequeath heaven and earth to you, to bequeath the universe to you and to bequeath all of humanity to you. Therefore, you must fulfill your mission as true sons and daughters who act on behalf of God and the True Parents. In doing so, you will prepare a glorious foundation to become true children who can be recognized by God and can be called His loyal subjects. (12-285, 1963.07.26)

10 In understanding the True Parents' heart, the important matter is how to feel that you are one with them. You will not reach that point until you have defeated Satan. It cannot happen otherwise. That is why I established a spiritual power plant and transmission towers. I built them from the individual level to the levels of the family, tribe, people, nation, world, cosmos and even up to God. What remains is for the power lines of the heart to be hung upon them. It is not God or I who will hang them; it is you who must do so. (125-207, 1983.03.20)

Inheriting True Parents' heart

11 If the True Parents do not appear, neither can true children. As long as no true person existed on earth, the True Parents could not appear. So the Unification Church is saying, "Let us acknowledge that we need True Parents, and let us find and attend them." We are saying we should be sons and daughters of True Parents. When we become their sons and daughters, we can inherit what they have. The True Parents right of inheritance includes heaven and earth, and even God. We too

should inherit even God. If there were no owners of heaven and earth, heaven and earth would have no value. We have to be people who can fully uplift the value of heaven and earth and ascribe value to them for eternity. We also need to meet the One who can officially recognize that. That being is God. Thus we should gain True Parents' right of inheritance. (24-323, 1969.09.14)

12 The True Parents are the hope of God and the hope of humankind. They have been eagerly anticipated by heaven and earth. They have come to the earth to resolve our bitter history and to inherit the great work of God's heart. You must inherit the heart of the True Parents. In order to inherit their heart, you must experience at least some part of God's sorrow as well as True Parents sorrow, even if you cannot fully understand it. In order to claim the earth anew, you naturally must understand the hard work being done by Heaven. If you cannot fully understand it, you must at least grasp some aspect of the heart and of the grief of the True Parents who have worked hard on earth. (151-043, 1962.04.19)

13 If you want to receive God's love and possess it as your own, you must base it on God's life. Otherwise you cannot receive His love. Once you have His life within you, you can feel His grace. Without becoming people who are connected to God's life, you cannot convey God's love to others. That is why you need to receive grace. Grace is revealed in visions or dreams. You should be able to cry in yearning for True Parents, who are the very embodiments of God. You must long to see them over and over again. You must want to serve them, even by preparing a humble bowl of rice or a glass of water and offering it to them. You must have such sincere desire for them that you cannot help but shed tears in yearning. If you have that heart, you will become one with my heart. You will breathe together with me. In so doing, you will come to know the standard of my character, how it was authored by my past life course, and what is in its background. Furthermore, you will be able to inherit these things and take them on as your own. (38-075, 1971.01.01)

14 Even if I have to face death, I must fulfill my responsibility by dealing with the totality of events and situations that took place in the background of history. This is the course of my destiny, so I have to move forward no matter what it takes. I cannot back down. What should your attitude be as people who must inherit that spirit from True Parents? Up to now you have lived as you liked. However, from now on you have to take it as your lifelong destiny to inherit my foundation and protect it. You all have the mission to guard it, even at the risk of your lives. (229-041, 1992.04.09)

15 The road you are traveling does not end with receiving the Blessing. After you receive the Blessing, if you are thankful to Heaven you will receive even more blessings. Yet you should not just be grateful as an individual; more importantly, you should never forget that you receive the Blessing on behalf of your tribe, your people and all the people of the world. At the same time, you should know that

with the Blessing you have also inherited the responsibility that True Parents are carrying out on earth. (13-293, 1964.04.12)

16 You need to inherit the realm of True Parents victory. As individuals you should have nothing to be ashamed of in front of heaven, earth and True Parents. Therefore you should live with absolute love, absolute obedience and absolute faith. You should lead a life of devotion and sacrifice for True Parents, based on total oneness of heart that makes you willing to offer everything you have. With that heart, you should strive to give more love to them and to others than you receive from them. Only when you live this way can True Parents be liberated. God's realm of liberation can only emerge when society becomes a place where people love one another more than the True Parents love humankind. You need to become sons and daughters of True Parents whom they can praise, their beloved sons and daughters in whom they can rejoice. Then the joyful realm of liberation can emerge. You should not forget that you stand upholding the original mainstream of tradition, in which you must fulfill your duties as patriots, saints and divine sons and daughters of heart. (266-290, 1995.01.01)

CHAPTER 5 Inheriting the Victory of the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind

Section 1. The True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind

1 The True Parents are the Parents of Heaven and Earth while God is the Parent of the Cosmos. The Parents of Heaven and Earth are on the earth for one generation. Their life ends after one generation. The cosmos is God's home; it is eternal. The Chinese characters for cosmos (宇宙) include a home (宙) and two (二) people (人). The character representing top knot (冖) signifies being comfortable. Since it is in the character for home (宙), it signifies a house where two people can live freely. So the cosmos is a house where two people can live together freely. That is why we say that the cosmos-centered ideology is Godism. From now on, you have to understand the difference between the Parent of the Cosmos and the Parents of Heaven and Earth. When we say "Parents of Heaven and Earth" we are referring to the two perfected people who represent God in substantial form and who stand in the central position for all matters of this world. (403-030, 2003.01.19)

The Parent of the Cosmos and the Parents of Heaven and Earth

2 The Parent of the Cosmos is God. The cosmos here refers to God's home. The spirit world is God's home, and the earth is also God's home. The Parents of Heaven and Earth stand on this earth in the position to be the True Parents of this fallen world. With the Holy Wedding Ceremony of the Parents of Heaven and Earth, and the Holy Wedding Ceremony of the Parent of the Cosmos, both have joined in virtuous union. This ushers in the time when the two worlds, the spirit world and

the earthly world, come together as one and can be offered as a fruit to Heaven at the Enthronement Ceremony of the Parent of the Cosmos and the Parents of Heaven and Earth. (402-269, 2003.01.16)

3 What is the difference between God and True Parents? God is the deity, and True Parents are human beings. When the deity and these human beings unite, together they become the nucleus and the center of a world where fountains of love flow unceasingly like a mountain spring and the sun shines for eternity. When such a world comes, the spirit world and the earthly world will be liberated, and in unity they will form one ideal kingdom. (561-194, 2007.04.24)

4 The Parent of the Cosmos and the Parents of Heaven and Earth bear fruit in human beings. Even God cannot achieve the purpose of love on His own. Being incorporeal, there is no way for God to bring His sons and daughters, who live in the world of substance, to the kingdom of heaven and make them its citizens. Without assuming a form, He cannot do it. (422-266, 2003.10.25)

5 We call our Heavenly Parent the Parent of the Cosmos, and we call True Parents on earth the Parents of Heaven and Earth. Everything could have been completed in Adam's family if the Parent of the Cosmos and the Parents of Heaven and Earth had become one at that time. Then all could have been joined in ties of true love, true life and true lineage and all would have settled in Adam's family. Adams family was supposed to have been the beginning point of the world and the starting-point of God's blessing for the world. That one family was to be the owner that would have opened the gate to God's nation, which is the kingdom of heaven. By inheriting the tradition of that family, people would have become sons and daughters within the realm of the royal family and would have gone directly to the kingdom. They would not have needed religion, the Savior, the Messiah, the Lord at his Second Advent or the True Parents. They would already have been able to serve the Heavenly Parent in the palace of the heavenly kingdom. (404-167, 2003.01.31)

The Era after the Coming of Heaven and the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind

6 The most important words in the Unification Church are the Parent of the Cosmos, the Parents of Heaven and Earth, and the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind. God's ideal is not to become the Parent of the Cosmos or the Parents of Heaven and Earth; it is to manifest as the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind. That has been the ideal and hope of God's creation. Among these parents, we need the Parent of the Cosmos and the Parents of Heaven and Earth, but we need the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind even more. Yet until now no one has ever known such parents. Because Adam and Eve could not attain perfection as human beings, they could not perfect God, nor could they perfect themselves as the Parents of Heaven and Earth. Even God cannot find love on His

own. Likewise, the Parents of Heaven and Earth cannot experience love without having partners of love. However, with God standing in the position of the mind and True Parents standing in the position of the body, you stand in the position of God's grandchildren, the third generation. Hence, these two sets of parents bear fruit in you, and you become the seeds that can be harvested and stored in the heavenly kingdom. Therefore, the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind are the most precious. (422-257, 2003.10.25)

7 Had human beings not fallen, God would have become manifest in the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind. God would have entered directly into the people's hearts. He would have become embodied in them; and then when the two people loved each other as husband and wife and had children, God would have become the real Parent of that family. Until now, people have not had the opportunity to attend God as their Parent in this way. Nevertheless, the ideal of creation is that God would be embodied in His children, create a family with them, and then expand that family into a people, nation, world and cosmos. Yet, due to the human Fall, God was unable to become embodied and He was unable to bear children and bequeath everything to them. Being unable to give birth to children in the flesh, He could not become the Parent with form. (423-009, 2003.10.25)

8 In the end, everything must be perfected on the earth. Both God and True Parents have to reach perfection on earth. Had that occurred in the beginning, the individuals of that original family on earth would have represented the world. Likewise, this family had to expand to a tribe, a people and a nation that would represent the world, and so on up to the cosmos. These needed to emerge on earth. With the fulfillment of all these, everyone would have entered the kingdom of heaven, to abide therein. This is the viewpoint from the ideal of creation. However, that world never came into existence. God, who is the Parent of the Cosmos, and human beings, who were supposed to become the Parents of Heaven and Earth, were split apart. Still, in the end they have to unite and become the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind. That is the ultimate hope. God attains perfection on earth, not in the spirit world. The incorporeal God has to attain perfection in a substantial body. (425-039, 2003.11.08)

9 The Old Testament Age was the time for recovering all the lost things of creation, based on offering sacrifices. The New Testament Age was the time for bringing all people, Cain and Abel, together. The era of the Second Coming is the time when the Heavenly Father and the earthly Father and Mother become one as the Parents of Heaven and Earth. Thus, the era of the Second Coming is the time for receiving in your families the lineage of the Parent of the Cosmos, the Parents of Heaven and Earth, and the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind. It is the era of the new heaven and new earth, when, under these Parents' authority, there is no room whatsoever for Satan to accuse or invade. This means that the age is changing from the Era before the Coming of Heaven to the Era after the Coming of Heaven. I have

come to this overall conclusion, through which everything is made clear. (467-041, 2004.09.02)

10 In order for the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind to arise, one man and one woman, each with mind- body unity, must become one and settle as a family. When the time comes that they do this, then the era of liberation is at hand. It will be the era of complete freedom, when God's lineage can be spread throughout the world. Now, with True Parents having reached the top of the world level, even the era of complete freedom has been established. Hence, a new heaven and new earth is upon us, as the Era before the Coming of Heaven comes to a close and the Era after the Coming of Heaven begins. With the arrival of a new heaven and a new earth centered on God, we see the emergence of the King of Peace. (467-104, 2004.09.02)

11 The Era before the Coming of Heaven has passed, and the Era after the Coming of Heaven is approaching. Therefore, we need to recover not only the Day of the Victory of the Number Ten Combining Two Halves (Ssang Hab Shib Seung Il), but also the year of victory. Satan willfully took possession of not only the day but also the year, and controlled them. But with the power of the Parent of the Cosmos, the Parents of Heaven and Earth, and the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind, I did what the incorporeal God was unable to do and what Jesus was prevented from doing during his time in the flesh. By means of the physical body I have enabled God's sons and daughters to be brought into the world—the children of the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind. The families that have received the Blessing are the beginning point of this. Without blessed families, God cannot have His tribe, nation or world. (455-309, 2004.06.26)

12 You are no longer sinners. You have been freed from the sin of the Fall, and you have even come to the liberated nation, Cheon Il Guk. But even in the nation of Cheon Il Guk some are still convicts on death row. I have to liberate even those who are serving life sentences, people who would otherwise be in hell for eternity. That is why I proclaimed the age of complete freedom. The Day of the Victory of the Number Ten Combining Two Halves was the turning point between the Era before the Coming of Heaven and the Era after the Coming of Heaven. It signaled the time when a new heaven and new earth could begin. Based on that day, God could recover all that He had lost, including the day and the year. He opened up days and years in which all the wealth of the world, all material things and all people, everything that had been lost in past days and years, could be recovered in the new era of the new heaven and new earth. (456-215, 2004.06.29)

13 God Himself needs to live in the family, embodied in people who are having sons and daughters. That is the kingdom of heaven. Centering on the family in which God dwells, the kingdom of heaven on earth and the kingdom of heaven in the spirit world are one world, not two. Anything that is not of the kingdom will fade

away. It will be repulsed. These elements must be completely eradicated. Once that is done, everything will be governed by a new law. Therefore, we need to remove everything that is of the Era before the Coming of Heaven and make things new for the Era after the Coming of Heaven. That single family of unity will expand to a people, and that people will create a newly restructured nation in heaven. It will be God's nation and our original homeland. (461-123, 2004.07.20)

14 With the coming of the True Parents, we have entered an era that transcends religion, transcends nationality and transcends history. It is the era when True Parents take dominion. Their dominion connects the Old Testament Age, the New Testament Age and the Completed Testament Age; moreover it unites heaven and earth. This is how the Parent of the Cosmos and the Parents of Heaven and Earth will govern in this era. Earth was far distant from the high spiritual realm of heaven, and no relationship could be built between them. They could not even form a relationship with each other. But today is the time when that relationship can be built. That is what made possible the starting point of the True Parent of the Cosmos and the True Parents of Heaven and Earth as the King and Queen of the Blessed Families of Peace and Unity. (417-280, 2003.09.11)

The responsibility of the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind

15 Human beings are meant to be the embodiments of God. Becoming one in spirit and body, they are to live in the kingdom of love on earth and then pass on to the heavenly world where they will live as members of the household of the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind. Such is the eternal kingdom of heaven. The most wondrous of God's creations occur when, as the Parent of the Cosmos, He becomes as one body not only with the Parents of Heaven and Earth, but also with the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind. A straight line between heaven and earth does not produce the wonders of God's creation. They come into being at the meeting of three points—Heaven, earth and human beings. Can they be produced by the Parent of the Cosmos alone? Can they be produced by the Parents of Heaven and Earth alone? They require the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind. That is why to establish the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind, the Parents had to go through three resurrections. They needed to go over the three mountain passes, resurrecting to the level of a form spirit, the level of a life spirit and the level of a divine spirit in order for the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind to land on the earth. In terms of celestial bodies, they should not merely be moons; they must be stars, emitting light. (436-139, 2004.02.07)

16 You cannot enter the kingdom of heaven without attaining the qualification to become parents of heaven, earth and humankind. As parents of heaven, earth and humankind, you will be in the position of the third creators. You will give the Blessing to your sons and daughters. They are the sons and daughters of God, the incorporeal Parent of Adam and Eve who are God in substance. They are the sons

and daughters of the True Parents, the substantial Adam and Eve. If I am considered the first generation, then you are the second generation and your sons and daughters are the third generation. You have to unite these three generations together on the horizontal plane. If you do not make this happen, it is a problem, and you will not be able to arrive at the position of a parent of heaven, earth and humankind. After the Parent of the Cosmos and the Parents of Heaven and Earth come the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind. Finally, at that point, even God becomes a person. The Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind settle in love based on the perfection of man and woman. (429-137, 2003.12.25)

17 The Unification Church teaches about the Parent of the Cosmos, the Parents of Heaven and Earth, and the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind. Through these three stages, sons and daughters are born through the physical bodies of human beings of good character, who are the substance in the flesh of these three sets of Parents. The incorporeal God, who is the Parent of the Cosmos and the being with both genders in harmony, cannot give birth to sons and daughters. Hence, God and the Parents of Heaven and Earth need to become one, and then convey their oneness to those in the position of the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind. Then they can rightly give birth to children and have a family. In light of this, whoever among you does not raise their own sons and daughters to go to the kingdom of heaven, also cannot enter the kingdom. (475-060, 2004.11.07)

18 The incorporeal God, the God of the Cosmos, and the corporeal God, the Parents of Heaven and Earth, together make the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind. This must occur so that you can receive the inheritance on earth through the lineage they bequeath to you. They are the Ancestors of Heaven, Earth and Humankind, and you are in the position of their representative. Unless you receive that inheritance, you yourself cannot become parents of heaven, earth and humankind. Once you become those parents, the place you enter together with your sons and daughters is the kingdom of heaven. (436-138, 2004.02.07)

19 The Parent of the Cosmos, as a deity who has no form, is the Lord of the incorporeal world, and the Parents of Heaven and Earth, the perfected Adam and Eve, are the Lords of the earth. However, neither the Parent of the Cosmos nor the Parents of Heaven and Earth have yet been able to settle on the earth. This the task of human beings to connect the Heavenly Parent with the Earthly Parents, so that they may settle as Lords. Only then can the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind settle on the earth. Yet because the Parent of the Cosmos and the Parents of Heaven and Earth were not able to settle, it was not done. God can settle only when He enters the body of Adam, enters the body of Eve, and gives birth to sons and daughters through these Parents, who embody God in substance. Until God thus establishes three generations, He cannot be present on the earth. God can settle only when the Lord of the Second Advent has secured the positions of three generations of Fathers, representing the person of God the Father, the Father

of human beings, and the Father of the spirit world and the physical world. (447-056, 2004.04.30)

20 The titles Parent of the Cosmos, Parents of Heaven and Earth, and Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind signify the conclusion of history. If you do not serve the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind, then you are serving neither the Parent of the body nor the Parent of the mind, who is God. However much you say there are people in the spirit world and Jesus is in paradise, unless they attend the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind, who are united with the Parent of the Cosmos and the Parents of Heaven and Earth, they have nothing to do with the world of the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind. The words "Second Coming" refer to this. (455-214, 2004.06.24)

Section 2. Representative Families of the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind

1 We need to become husbands and wives who have blood ties to the family of the Parents of the Cosmos, of Heaven and Earth, and of Heaven, Earth and Humankind. We need to build families that God and the entire universe can cherish; then our families can become the origin of the liberated kingdom of heaven that has nothing to do with the Fall of Adam and Eve. That is the law. We are meant to reach that position, and even go beyond it. (471-228, 2004.10.03)

2 Who are the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind? The first Creator is God, the second creators are the True Parents, Adam and Eve, and the third creators are the sons and daughters of Adam and Eve. However, due to the Fall, God was not able to have His own grandsons and granddaughters. Hence, there were no third creators and the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind could not come into being. You should recognize that you are to represent that position. The Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind are important. You have to become a family embodying these Parents. This is how you can find your place during the era of the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind and make it your era. Then you can prepare yourself for the era of the kingship of peace in God's homeland and proclaim the era for entering the kingdom of heaven. (430-275, 2004.01.04)

A blessed family of three generations

3 True Parents refer to the perfect couple that represents Adam and Eve as God created them, having nothing to do with the Fall. The first generation is God, the second generation is the True Parents and the third generation is the blessed families. These are three generations. Among them there are no national barriers or anything of that kind. There is no such thing as false love, false life, false lineage, no vain titles, or anything of that sort. (363-215, 2001.12.25)

4 In order for God, who has no form, to take on substantial form, He absolutely invested His absolute faith and absolute love into the making of His ideal partners, the very best object partners for His love. When His partner embraces his wife, or her husband, together they become substantial parents of heaven, earth and humankind. Then finally, God will be fully embodied in them. This will inaugurate the era when they can perform the functions of governing both the spirit world and the physical world as their owners. Then, even God must follow these owners who have physical form. All evil spirits must obey them and the angelic world must obey them. Further, you also need to advance to the position of parents of heaven, earth and humankind In order to bequeath this position to you, so that you in your families might become parents of heaven, earth and humankind, who represent the Parents of Heaven and Earth and the Parent of the Cosmos, I proclaimed God's Homeland and the Era of the Kingdom of Peace in the Era of Cheon Il Guk. You need to become parents of heaven, earth and humankind. For this, three generations have to unite. In this way God, the invisible, harmonized being of dual characteristics who mainly appeared as a masculine being, will be able to assume form as male and female. It was for this purpose that God invested His whole self in the creation of Adam and Eve. (436-137, 2004.02.07)

5 You are the central families who received the Blessing. Since you blessed central families represent the True Parents, just as I said when I prayed to God, all the saints and divine sons and daughters in the spirit world have to listen to you. Because you received the Blessing from True Parents and attended True Parents on earth, you are owners. That is how it is structured in the spirit world. Hence, once you enter that world you can go straight up! There is already a ladder set up for you. (373-019, 2002.03.24)

6 Recognize that you are meant to inherit the kingship of the Parent of the Cosmos, the kingship of the Parents of Heaven and Earth, and the kingship of the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind. You are also meant to build families of filial children of God and loyal citizens of the heavenly kingdom, families that represent the right of the eldest son. In this way you become families that can securely bequeath the kingship of three ages to future generations. Your families should represent the past, present and future and become families of princes and princesses in the era of the three kingships. Each of you should declare, "I will build a family of filial children of God and loyal citizens of the heavenly kingdom, representing the royal authority that I received as an inheritance in the era of the kingship of the Parent of the Cosmos, the Parents of Heaven and Earth, and the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind." You need to understand that each blessed family is their representative and has inherited this authority in the era of the three kingships. (442-048, 2004.03.08)

7 You blessed central families are to be the central beings. Therefore, by living the way that God, who is spirit, wants you to live—the way True Parents, who are the

embodiments of God, want you to live—living on their behalf, you should be able to establish the law for individuals, families, tribes, peoples and nations that will become the law of the heavenly kingdom. You are living in the era when the love of the Parent of the Cosmos, of the Parents of Heaven and Earth and of the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind becomes the real authority. You must become so united with God that you have that full authority, and exercise it on behalf of God and True Parents. You have to become one with God. After becoming one with the Central Being, you will flip over, landing on the ground with Him in total oneness. Then, the Parent of the Cosmos, the Parents of Heaven and Earth, and you as parents of heaven, earth and humankind will become one, inside and out. When you reach that level you can receive your inheritance from God, and from then on your nations and the world will unite through the Blessing. (434-120, 2004.01.30)

8 As the substantial fruit of God's love, you should live with the mindset that you are God's eternal sons and daughters who represent the heavenly kingdom, and who are its distinguished leaders. You should bear in mind that you can partake in the glorious authority of a prince or princess who attends God without encountering any restrictions from the earth. You can become one of the distinguished leaders who will govern the world when it is united as one nation. Shouldn't you put your whole heart and mind toward attaining that position? If you cannot do that, you will only be able to gaze upon the palace from the outside, unable to cross over its threshold, even for tens of thousands of years. (456-262, 2004.06.30)

Embodiments of the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind

9 You should aspire to become embodiments of God, embodiments of the True Parents and embodiments of the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind. In fact, all these Parents want you, their embodiments, to be better than they are. It is now time for you to surmount obstacles without passing through a course of indemnity as I did. Even though you may not own material possessions, all you need is absolute faith in True Parents, having the standard of absolute faith that they fought to establish throughout their lives. You need absolute faith to recover the realm of absolute love. Therefore, you have to become people of absolute faith. Actually, you need to have absolute faith while you are alive on earth, which is virtually hell; that is why you must invest and forget, invest and forget, invest and forget. This is how the Parents of Heaven and Earth, who are in the substantial realm centered on the incorporeal Parent of the Cosmos, became His object partners. Also, this is how the Parents of Heaven and Earth and Humankind established their virtuous union, by which heaven and earth were made complete. (434-123, 2004.01.30)

10 If you want to serve the Will, you must inherit everything that the Parent of the Cosmos, the Parents of Heaven and Earth, and the Parents of Heaven, Earth and

Humankind achieved. Parents do not want their children, who represent them for the Will, to be less than they are. Just as a husband who loves his wife does not want her to be less than he is, and a loving wife feels the same toward her husband, we want the people who will represent us in our work for the Will to be better than ourselves. For this reason, if we have a son or daughter who is better than we are, we are pleased to bequeath our inheritance to him or her. (423-268, 2003.11.02)

11 The providence of restoration unfolded through the three stages of the Old Testament Age, the New Testament Age and the Completed Testament Age. Now that we are in an age of liberation and complete freedom, we are building an infinite world of liberation where all sons and daughters are actually free from any trace of sin, both in spirit and flesh. It is the ideal world where we are destined to live. Therefore, the Parent of the Cosmos, the Parents of Heaven and Earth, and the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind come to the earth in the person of the Lord of the Second Advent. Coming as a man in the flesh, He finally secures, on behalf of God and in place of the perfected Adam, the substantial realm of love. That substantial realm of love is the family. If you cannot secure your family by having sons and daughters, then your love will not be expressed through future generations. No matter how much a husband and wife love each other, if they have no children, their lineage ends there. (458-330, 2004.07.11)

Section 3. Inheriting the True Parents' Realm of Victory

1 Until True Parents emerged on earth, God could never have His own direct children in the spirit world. Through me, the children whom God originally intended could be born for the first time. I am saying that through me, God's royal family could come into being. Therefore, you should take pride in it. It is we who are to connect all nations to the original Garden of Eden. I laid the victorious foundation transcending heaven and earth. The True Parents built such a foundation and they are trying to bequeath their achievements to true children. (218-200, 1991.07.28)

True Parents' realm of victory

2 The realm of True Parents' victory refers to the scope of their victory in the battle against Satan. It means that the True Parents are completely victorious on the individual level and on the family level. Further, they brought victory on the levels of the tribe, people, nation and world. It was indeed a challenging course; by no means was it easy. However, I overcame every difficulty and won the victory. I offered to Heaven the Enthronement Ceremony for the Kingship of God, which brought about the miracle of liberating even God. True Parents, with true love, forgave even the failed communist nations and embraced them, while leading the providence forward. (421-017, 2003.10.15)

3 The fact that True Parents established the realm of victory means that they recovered all that Satan kept in his possession, including all providential individuals who were lost. Because Eve was lost, Adam also was lost. However, now that Adam has been recovered, it is time to recover the women of the world. That is why, for their recovery, on April 10, 1992, I placed Mother in the forefront and developed a movement for the liberation of women. We are entering the age of the Mother. This is the age of the Mother. (266-247, 1995.01.01)

4 When we say that the True Parents are victorious, we mean that everything that was lost due to the false parents has been recovered: the True Son, the True Daughter, and the True Husband and Wife. The True Parents are the root from which will arise one humanity, where all are related as blood kin. From that True Husband and Wife will come only good descendants, continuing for countless generations. (266-252, 1995.01.01)

5 The realm of True Parents victory is not limited to them as individuals. It leaves a mark on the history of the universe. You have to inherit this. In order to do so, you have to recover what Adam and Eve lost by their failure to have absolute faith and absolute love, and you have to clean up the stain in the lineage. You can accomplish this within the realm of victory that I have prepared; all you need to do is follow the original track, climbing up the eight stages beginning on the individual level, then starting again at the bottom on the family level and climbing up again, and so on. Then you should be able to go about your life freely. From a two-dimensional viewpoint, God and human beings have been separated at opposite poles. Hence, True Parents had to go and bring God back into the family. I surmounted all eight stages both vertically and horizontally and broke free from the realm of Satan's accusation. Therefore, I can now freely attend God in the family and also on the national level. (266-284, 1995.01.01)

6 What grounds do I have to take pride in the name True Parents? I established the realm of internal heart that, through love, breaks down all barriers and opens gates in every field and on all levels, horizontally and vertically, throughout history. This victorious foundation should not just be something that I alone can rejoice over; it should be cause for heaven and earth, history, and all ages to rejoice. Only when there is rejoicing to this extent can we truly rejoice. We should not rejoice over our individual victories while ignoring the past ages of history. What we accomplish should be cherished as a victory that all people—people in the past, present and future—equally can rejoice over. (174-190, 1988.02.28)

7 The family of absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience is responsible for changing the lineage, changing the ownership and then forming the proper Cain and Abel relationship in the realm of heart. That family determined to bring victory and was victorious. On this condition, as True Parents, we could proclaim, "True Parents and the Completed Testament Age," and "Settlement of the True Parents

and the Completed Testament Age.” Because we, True Parents, are settled on the family level, the families of the world can give us recognition as their subject partner. With that, they can inherit True Parents’ realm of victory. Then by that formula we can expand our foundation through the levels of the individual, family, tribe, people and nation based on the realm of the four- position foundation of Adam and Eve. This expansion does not occur all at once, but gradually. The center and destination of this national level foundation is the world. The nation is the starting point for reaching out to the world. (270-152, 1995.05.29)

8 You must praise True Parents and love True Parents. The era has come for the settlement of True Parents and the Completed Testament Age. True Parents* settlement allows you to inherit their victorious realm. Now that they are settled, they can give the Blessing throughout the world. This is how the world can be settled. In fact, True Parents have bequeathed everything to you. You, representing fallen humankind, should be grateful for this. You should be able to praise True Parents and love True Parents. Since the Parents from Heaven gave you the Blessing, took pride in you, loved you and served you, now in return you should praise and take pride in the Parents from Heaven. This is how you can alleviate the sadness of Heavens family. (281-282, 1997.03.09)

9 Adams family was lost, and that los\ family expanded worldwide; hence, True Parents must restore everything worldwide. Since things became as they are due to the love, life and lineage of the false parents, it is the True Parents who must bring every individual, family, tribe, people, nation, and the entire world back to God's side. The false parents turned all these things totally upside down. Thus, it is not only the family that True Parents must restore. They have to restore every level in heaven and on earth through indemnity. Specifically, they have to reorganize every level based on their family, and straighten out all eight stages. In other words, although due to the false parents it was the family that was lost to God, True Parents cannot return to God after straightening out only the family level. They can resolve all the problems at that level only by bringing victory at all levels in the cosmos. (439-027, 2004.02.19)

10 At this time I am making many proclamations, such as the “Realm of the Cosmic Sabbath for the Parents of Heaven and Earth,” the “Settlement of the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification and the End of Indemnity” and so forth. There is no other way than this, since True Parents have to pave the path to the liberation that God originally intended. To do so, I had to level mountains and build a global foundation. Without such actual accomplishments, my wife and I could not have become the True Parents. Nor could I have become the Messiah and the returning Lord. (289-064, 1997.12.30)

The path to inheriting True Parents’ realm of victory

11 The settlement of the Completed Testament Age means that we who center on the True Parents¹ family have become one large family in the plus position. All human beings are in the minus position. With True Parents' family in the plus position, all other families are its counterparts. If they unite as one with True Parents family by taking the position of a perfect minus, they will all rise to the same position as the True Parents' family. This is the formula for recovering the universe. Three main conditions are required for this to happen. First, the lineage must be changed. Second, the right of ownership must be changed. Finally, the realm of heart must be changed. The realm of heart includes three stages: the individual, family and tribe. The stages in this realm form one set that cannot be divided up. Therefore, as tribal messiahs you must connect these three stages of heart into one. Based on this foundation, you can then move up to the level of the nation. (268-080, 1995.03.05)

12 God's ideal of creation is based on love that partakes of His chief attributes: absolute love, unique love, unchanging love and eternal love. Based on such love, you can maintain your purity. This means that coming from a fallen lineage, you need to maintain your purity—to take the completely correct position for true love and true life. On the foundation of purity you can change your lineage. After that, you can experience pure love. You receive your inheritance after settling as a family of filial children; and then you expand the scope of your family to become a family of patriots, saints and divine sons and daughters, uniting the world on the horizontal plane. Then you will inherit the authority of victory which is as sweet as a fragrant flower. (410-055, 2003.06.30)

13 In order to become the eldest son, and to inherit the right of the eldest son, you have to be better than Satan. You have to represent God in all areas and stand in the position to take responsibility in accordance with God's rules and principles. The person who loves God the most receives the prize. Because of this principle, it is possible for God to carry out the providence of restoration. Inheritance is received based on love, and it is in accordance with this principle that you can claim back the birthright of the eldest son. As sons and daughters on Heavens side, you must be more filial to your parents than the sons and daughters of Satan's world. As people on Heaven's side, you must love your family, your nation, the world and all humankind more than the people of Satan's world do. You must be better in all aspects. They have to give you their inheritance voluntarily; you cannot take it by force. (102-182, 1978.12.24)

Section 4. Inheriting the True Parents' Tradition

1 As a consequence of the seeds that were sown by the Fall in the Garden of Eden, various phenomena of the harvest of their fruit will arise around the world. Now is that time. Since this world cannot continue as it is, the time has come to reap the fruit of the Fall. This world became the way it is because it inherited a tradition that

deviated from God due to its relationship with the fallen parents. Therefore, True Parents must come and establish a new teaching. Should it be based on the current ways of the world or the cosmos? No, it should be based on true families. Unless the teaching of true family appears, the teaching for a new world cannot emerge. The representative of this true family teaching must be God's true son. He should be the internal heir who inherits everything related to God's heart. He should also be God's external heir, who inherits the ownership of all things. In other words, he should be a man who can inherit God's heart, God's body and all things. Only such a son can be God's representative. Only when that son comes will God's kingdom finally be realized. (21-049, 1968.09.01)

True Parents' tradition

2 How will history unfold? When True Parents' tradition is established, True Parents' actual way of life will remain in history as the standard for all traditions for all eternity. Suppose we continue on for one thousand years from this point. People will not be moving forward looking to the future; rather, they will move forward looking back one thousand years, modeling their lives on things as they are in this present time. Until today, fallen people have sought to unify the world, but once the True Parents emerge and are recognized as the central persons of the world, all people will totally emulate the tradition of the True Parents and uphold them as the center. As time goes by, the domain based on that center will continue to expand. Indeed, True Parents family is the foundation representing the tradition of a future that people hope to see. The purpose of God's history of six thousand years has been to create True Parents' family. Why are people going through straggles at the present time? It is so they can meet True Parents' family. (44-134, 1971.05.06)

3 What is True Parents' love? In the Garden of Eden the first human beings failed to become the true ancestors and could not establish the tradition of original love. Therefore, at some point in time the Messiah must come, and in the position of the True Parents he has to establish this tradition of love from the level of the individual to the family, tribe, people, nation and world. When it is realized on the level that transcends peoples of all ethnicities, the kingdom of heaven will be established on earth. It will be God's museum. Thus far, individuals and families have been disconnected from God. Hence, what I am trying to do at this time is to connect them to the whole, and to God, and establish the proper tradition of love centered on the family. To prepare such an amazing foundation is the mission of the True Parents, and to uphold and actualize that purpose is the mission of the Unification Church. (107-161, 1980.04.20)

4 You can become an owner only when you act with the heart of a parent and the body of a servant. This is how God has been working to fulfill the Will. Hence, you too can fulfill it only if you have the heart of the Father and shed your tears, sweat and blood. In order to become a true leader, you need to receive true leadership

training. You need to inherit True Parents' way of tears, sweat and blood, which is the way of Heaven. You too have to shed tears, sweat and blood; then you will leave it behind as your tradition. (11-155, 1961.05.18)

5 What is the tradition of God and True Parents? First, it is to live for the sake of others. Second, it is to invest, invest and forget. Third, it is to pray and offer devotion to fulfill the Will. It is a goal that you cannot accomplish by yourself. Why do you need to pray? It is because you need to receive the help of God, your subject partner, and to have Heaven with you and supporting you. Why do you need to offer devotion? It is to enable you to prepare the path and accept any circumstances that you might face. Prayer is to create a bond with God, the subject partner, and devotion is to expand your horizontal relationships. (219-216, 1991.08.29)

6 What kind of family is True Parents' family? Their family is the fruit of history, the center of this age and the starting point of the future. So, in the future, when the world we live in becomes the kingdom of heaven that we've hoped for, every aspect of True Parents' lives will serve as the tradition. They will become the mother's womb of the ideal nation. They will be the starting-point for building the ideal world. Therefore, based on the vertical connection to True Parents, you as their children should always establish a realm of three generations together with True Parents. The vertical three generations are God, the True Parents and you. Horizontally, three generations are True Parents, True Children and you. Heaven and earth will not be united unless these three generations are formed and perfected. (44-169, 1971.05.06)

7 The tradition, education and practice that we talk about refer to tradition and education under True Parents. All you need to do is follow in True Parents footsteps and inherit all the victories that they won in their battles against Satan. True Parents are going to gather the offerings of all believers and offer them all to God on the altar. They will do so without discriminating among their sons and daughters or among the things of creation. Further, they will do so without distinguishing between the Old Testament Age, the New Testament Age and the Completed Testament Age, having liberated them all from Satan's accusation. They will offer God the UN and the entire world united together. Then, True Parents can inherit the world from God, at which point their right of ownership will begin. (417-124, 2003.09.05)

8 For the past six thousand years, the purpose of God's work has been to establish True Parents' family. Why has humanity been struggling to this day? It is in order to connect to True Parents and their family. In the future as well, our descendants will exist in order to produce descendants for the True Parents. They do not need to create a nation for True Parents or make a world for True Parents, because once True Parents emerge and receive public recognition, True Parents' nation and world

will come into being naturally. To support True Parents you should make descendants for them. It is not a matter of making a nation for them. At this time, what is most ideal for you is to live with True Parents at the center of your life. In the future, when heaven and earth will be governed under the authority of True Parents, you will not be just ordinary citizens who come and go. You will carry the tradition that was woven centering on True Parents, which will remain forever in history. There can be no greater tradition than this. (44-134, 1971.05.06)

9 Had Adam and Eve not fallen, human history would have originated with True Parents. Their words would have become their descendants' words, their way of life would have become their descendants' way of life, and the environmental conditions they experienced would have become their descendant's reality. In this way, history would have started from True Parents. (26-280, 1969.11.10)

Inheriting True Parents' tradition

10 Fathers and mothers want to bequeath everything they have to their beloved sons and daughters. Parents and children who follow the tradition of love come to stand in positions of equal value; hence the parents can bequeath the whole universe to their children with their minds at ease. That is why parents want to have children of filial piety. Who are children of filial piety? They are those who participate in their parents' eternal love. They are the ones who will carry on the tradition of bequeathing love. (140-235, 1986.02.12)

11 Who do you want as the leader of your family? What kind of person would the father, the grandmother and the entire family want to have as the heir? They would want the one who loves the most. If the grandfather loves the whole family the most, the family members will report to him rather than to the father. This is natural. Thus, the person who becomes the leader of a household is the one who serves the others with the most loving heart. The one who serves others the most, with a heart of love, will inherit the tradition of that family and imbue it with love. You should understand that only such people will belong to the line of inheritance that continues for eternity. (141-292, 1986.03.02)

12 In order to inherit God's providence in its entirety, we have to be faithful to His providential tradition. And not only should we be faithful to the tradition, we should take responsibility for it. After taking responsibility, we should transform society. Heavenly Father's tradition needs to be passed on to everyone. If the social environment is not in accord with His tradition, then we must fight to change whatever is contrary to it. Otherwise, there will be no progress. (152-197, 1963.05.10)

13 In order to inherit a historical connection with God and True Parents and fulfill the responsibility of pioneers in this era, you need to receive the pure tradition of

God's providence of restoration, assume responsibility for the existing circumstances of your life, and fight to build the foundation for a new ideal in the future. (152-198, 1963.05.10)

14 The heavenly kingdom is the place where people who lived for the sake of others go. They are those who invested themselves for the world and cultivated relationships with its people. They journeyed throughout the world to embrace its peoples, to serve God and strive to realize the ideal. They will be the owners of the heavenly kingdom. You should take pride in doing these things. You should be able to take pride in your mother and father, your wife or husband, your sons and daughters, and your siblings. Then, you need to extend this tradition and apply it to the nation; you need to extend this formula to the world and to heaven and earth. If you become such people, then wherever you go you will have the right of equal participation, the right of equal position and the right of inheritance. (175-139, 1988.04.10)

15 The victory I bequeath to you is the family-level realm of victory. What kind of family am I talking about? It is a family that represents the world. The family that fulfills a messianic mission is one that represents the world, embracing and taking care of all matters and traveling back and forth freely among all people. I want your family to become such a family. When all five races want to find their way into your family, when they try to create relationships with your family, you should not block them or say that only certain people may come in. It is a principle that if you are connected to the central point of heart, your heart will expand in all four directions. Power and action emanate from that central point in all directions without exception. That center is the True Family. Accordingly, the True Family must be at the core of your family for it to realize the kingdom of heaven. (100-309, 1978.10.22)

16 The family is the base for finding the homeland and hometown and settling there. How should you live in such a family? You should connect to True Father and live with him, immersed in his tears. Then you will weep for the sake of your nations and your families. You need to recover your families. How can you do that? It is by upholding the tradition of tears, the tradition of sweat, the tradition of blood, the tradition of water running from the nose, and the tradition of investing your whole self. That is how you should bequeath unchanging purity, an unstained lineage, pure love and a pure approach to sexual relations to the second and third generations, and on to countless generations of your lineage. Above and below, front and back, left and right—all directions must all be cleansed. Only then can you bequeath the pure love of an unstained lineage. You have to pass through the gate of pure sexual relations in order to plant pure seeds of true love, true life and true lineage. (484-084, 2005.01.20)

17 You need to suffer for the Will more than others do. If you do, everyone will follow you. Who has suffered for the church? Who has sacrificed their own family and relatives for the church? Who is suffering more and is therefore closer to the tradition of heart? When someone of the lowest rank prays night and day for the Will and sheds blood and sweat while striving to realize the spirit of love, whether that person is a woman or a man, Heaven will make a new history through that person. In the Unification Church that kind of tradition is already established. The question as to which of my sons or daughters will become my heir will be decided on the basis of which of them suffers the most for the Will and fulfills his or her filial duty. It is the same for each of you. It is the same in the family and the same in the church. Everyone must follow this tradition. (113-147, 1981.05.01)

Section 5. Inheriting the Teachings of the True Parents

1 The question is not how to unify the world, but how to unify yourself. Within each of you, your mind and body are divided and are fighting every day. To resolve this problem, you need God's word. Living by the word, you should resemble God's character and heart. You have to reach the point where God likes it when you love yourself, and where God would lift you up and give you His recognition. You have to arrive at the point where God recognizes the things you say as true. In order to become such people in reality, the most urgent matter is to create the realm of unity with others in your daily life and to become a person who has mind-body unity within yourself. How can you know whether you have become a person with mind-body unity? Go out and spread the word with utmost devotion. When you do so, you will realize that God is always with you through your connection to the Word. (27-337, 1970.01.01)

The value of the Divine Principle and Father's words

2 We are connected to God through the Word. If the Word did not exist, we could not be connected to God. If it were not for the Word, we could not find the way to connect with Him. Hence, unless there are people who actually spread the Word, nothing will happen. God's purpose in connecting to us as human beings is to enable us to connect to His love. Those who convey the Word that connects people to God may be people on earth, but the Word they convey is from God. It is through that Word that people are made new. (27-337, 1970.01.01)

3 The Fall happened because of a failure to uphold God's Word. Therefore, as we seek to follow this path, which is centered on God's Word, we are to be a group that pledges to absolutely uphold God's Word. What kinds of people rely on God's Word? They are the most public, living for the sake of the world and for all humankind, living for the sake of God. When God looks at them> He wants them to stand with Him in an ideal relationship, not content to remain merely in their current relationship with Him. Moreover, God wants them to go beyond their

present situation and move forward toward their place in God's ideal. They are people who live for God's ideal, for God's tomorrow and for the tomorrow of all humanity. Imagine how difficult that is! Nevertheless, I am saying that we should become a group of people who build the world of the future. When we become such people, then whenever God thinks of the future, He will think of me and of the Unification Church; and whenever people think of tomorrow, they will think about the Unification Church and think about me. We can arrive at this outcome. (88-304, 1976.10.03)

4 God is calling us with His Word. Therefore, we need to follow as His Word directs us. By what route can we meet each other as true parents and true children? It is through true words, the Word given by our Heavenly Parent. You cannot become such children unless you know the Parent's word. If it is true that the Parent God's Word is absolute and true, you will not feel tired even if you listen to that same word for a thousand or ten thousand years. The Parent God's Word has no end. You have to search for that word. It is not enough to find words that fit the constraints you impose with your own logic. The Parents Word teaches not only the greatest principles but also gives life to those who listen. It gives you life no matter how many times you hear it, even if you listen repeatedly for all eternity. (10-131, 1960.09.18)

5 The words of loving parents are eternal; they transcend time and space. It is even more so with God's Word; it transcends history, transcends ages and eras, transcends ideologies and transcends philosophies. It is more precious than the words of any human being. His Word, whether you listen to it or read it, at night or during the day, flows endlessly into your heart. (10-132, 1960.09.18)

6 The words that Jesus spoke to the Jewish people, and all the things he showed them, were not based on his own desire. They were related to the Will of Heaven. Jesus represented the providential Will of God. However, within the realm of the Fall, a clash arose between Jesus and the people who were meant to relate with God's Will through him. When God's Word appears in the fallen world it can transform an individual when it appears to an individual; it can transform a people when it appears to a people; it can transform the world when it appears in the world. The Jewish people did not know that Jesus was the manifestation of God's Word that could transform heaven and earth. (001-230, 1956.11.11)

7 I am the owner of the Word. I became the owner of the Word because I have lived according to the Word. The first human beings did not become the owners of the Word and therefore they failed to become True Parents; hence someone else had to become the True Parents and embody the Word. Mother and I did that, and then we offered its fruit before God. This is why we can all advance into the era of liberation and complete freedom and realize the ideal of God's purpose of creation. (524-252, 2006.04.15)

8 No one can erase the words I have spoken. When I listen again to the words that I spoke fifty years ago, I bow down out of respect for those words. When I spoke in those days, I did so with such seriousness. I had the urgent determination that even though I could die that day, I would leave my words for future generations. Even though I might be dead and gone, I knew that my words were so profound and significant that with them people in the future would be able to lead the world. When you read the volumes of my sermons, you should be moved to the degree that you come to that realization. You should have spiritual experiences. You may enjoy playing and dancing and such, but to be enraptured by my words and grow spiritually through them is a blessing among all blessings for you, your ancestors in the spirit world, and your descendants in the earthly world. (309-190, 1999.05.01)

9 If the content of many newspapers is saved on a computer drive, you will be able to read it even a thousand or ten thousand years from now. Likewise, if we store all my words on CDs, billions of people in every corner of the globe will be able to use computers to listen to it. We are now living in such an era. Therefore, you cannot hide falsehoods. There is no longer anywhere to hide them. As the words of Heaven—the words of Heavens love—shine brightly throughout the world, the forces of darkness will eventually self-destruct. They will have to flee further and further away. Once the light begins to shine, darkness can no longer rule in the realms bathed in that light. (342-022, 2001.01.09)

10 A thousand years from now, will the words that I spoke as the founder of the Unification Church have disappeared? Whenever I think about it, I realize that this is a serious matter. My words must not remain only within your hearts; they must flow and become medicinal waters—not just spring water—so that everyone can drink those waters, even one thousand years from now. I want people to be able to point to my words with pride, recognizing that they are a universal remedy, a medicine that can cure all ailments. For this, I am offering sincere devotion in the hope that my words will last forever as life-giving words. (340-064, 2000.12.23)

11 The truth of the Unification Church is not only a truth that was revealed through struggles in its own history. It is the truth that existed even before the Creation. It is God's ideal of creation to establish a true family, a true tribe, a true people, a true nation and a true world based on the relationship with True Parents. This truth revealed in the Divine Principle also contains the details of what was done in the history of God's providence of restoration in order to realize God's ideal. (30-318, 1970.04.06)

12 The True Parents are the ancestors of absolute faith, absolute love and absolute wisdom. It was with absolute faith, absolute love and absolute wisdom that I discovered the words of the Divine Principle. Therefore, whether we stand in front of God, Satan or history, no one can deny their validity; all must affirm it. The Divine Principle is indeed a strong shield; it has such power- (277-152, 1996.04.07)

13 The Unification Principle connects everything by the laws of nature. That is why it is called the Principle. It is Heavens Principle. That is to say, it is the eternally unchanging Principle. The Principle is not a doctrine. It is not a doctrine of the Unification Church. It is not a doctrine taught by True Parents. A doctrine is something by which fallen people seek out Heaven, but what do people who live together with God have to do with a doctrine? The Principle is Heavens law. (301-034, 1999.04.16)

14 My words are such that you will not understand them right away. However, if you read the books that contain my words many times, you will come to understand them without fail. I have a mind that can see the whole picture. By distinguishing, comparing and contrasting everything in this wide world, I have rearranged all knowledge based on the standard of a new tradition, which is called the Divine Principle. With it, I have established a philosophical system that completely restructures the entire spectrum of knowledge in all major fields. It will require thousands or even tens of thousands of scholars to recognize the full value of the Divine Principle. In the Divine Principle, the Unification Church possesses a formidable weapon. (228-149, 1992.03.27)

15 My teachings embody an understanding that will forever remain at the top as the central teaching, even if in the course of history the Unification Church disappears. Even if you fail to fulfill it, others will do so at some point. A time will come when many nations will compete to fulfill my teachings. When that happens, your situation will be the opposite of what it is today. Those who were first will be last, and those who were last will be first. Everything will be turned upside down. Those of you who miss this opportunity will not be remembered in history. (390-314, 2002.08.16)

16 In the course of seeking the True Parents, have you really felt the value of True Parents' words? They are the teachings that enable you to connect with eternal value. If you have never felt their value, it would not matter if True Father came and told you personally how truly valuable his words are, still you would not be able to recognize their value. In order to clearly understand the value of these words of truth, you need to pray. People on earth must seek out True Fathers teachings, for they are words of truth. They are words that move the heart of Jesus and words that move the heart of God, who has carried out His providence for six thousand years. More- over, when those words appear on the earth, they will reveal the ups and downs of that six thousand-year his- tory. They will reveal God's anger, ill treatment and bitterness. For these reasons, True Fathers words cannot help but move God's heart. (10-133, 1960.09.18)

17 God's Word does not establish rules; its purpose is to give us life and fulfill His plan. There are many religious doctrines and ideologies on the earth today that advocate truth, but there are no teachings that truly bring peace to our mind and

body, even when we practice them; nor are there teachings in which we can be deeply immersed for eternity. If God's Word enables the love of God, the source of life in the universe, to move within our mind and body, then surely with God's true Word we can fundamentally resolve the claims of all ideologies and doctrines. (3-327, 1958.02.02)

18 You need to establish a tradition based on the Word and develop a character that will enable you to attain oneness with the Word. In the Last Days there are three judgments: the first is judgment by the Word, the second is judgment of character, and the third is judgment of heart. This is the absolute standard; it is already established. The Fall occurred when the first human beings could not unite with God's Word. Adam and Eve should have taken God's commandment not to eat the fruit as absolute and thus established the right tradition. But they did not do so, and consequently fell. Therefore, those people who walked the course of restoration had to establish the tradition of uniting with the Word, which prefigured the ultimate truth that appears in the end times. In heaven such a tradition has been already established, but it has not yet been established for people on earth. If this tradition is not established, then there is a possibility that, like Christianity, the Unification Church will split into many denominations. (21-326, 1969.01.01)

19 The critical issue is to establish the tradition that brings us into oneness with the Word. You should not be separate from the Word. You should be people who cultivate yourselves based on the Word and move forward based on the Word. You have to establish a tradition based on the Word by taking it as the absolute standard. For this, you need to be tuned to my mind and heart as it was when I introduced the Word. You study the Word so that you can believe in the Word, yet your standard of understanding is not yet perfect. There is a time-honored standard in background to the Word, and you have to meet that standard. For this, you need to establish a tradition of deeply penetrating the Word. (21-327, 1969.01.01)

True Parents' sermons are a treasure

20 How many volumes of my sermons have been published? Up to now, you have not been interested in the books of my sermons. From God's viewpoint, no matter how many books you may find in a library, they are of little use compared to the books of my sermons. Think about the fact that there are a huge number of volumes of my sermons. The contents of these books are to save the sons and daughters of this world. The volumes of my sermons are still first editions. If you buy them, they will become your pride from generation to generation. If you think about this from God's viewpoint, they are the most valuable of all books. There will never be a second set of True Parents. For eternity, and absolutely, there will be only one set of True Parents. You need to learn what kind of person I am. I do not think you know how deep, high and broad I am. Yet you can know my character

through the volumes of my sermons. These books are like a lighthouse giving out light in the darkness of night. (309-167, 1999.05.01)

21 Many volumes of my sermons have been published. I read them every morning during hoondokhae. Now we do not need any more large-scale rallies. I have already taught you everything you need to do. I have even spoken in detail about tribal messiahship. These are not ideas I came up with as I developed the church. I had already made a detailed plan for teaching them in advance, and I have been teaching you on that basis. That is one thing that is to my credit. Many things I have said may have sounded like idle fancy, but I have already substantiated them in my own life. Once you own the volumes of my sermons, preparing your own sermons and similar talks will be no problem. Those books are a vast treasure. All the money in the world cannot compare with the value of those words. (192-110, 1989.07.03)

22 I usually rise at 3:30 in the morning. When I get up, I read from the books of my sermons that I delivered in the past. Their content is awe-inspiring. Since it was I who spoke those words, I know all of the content; yet when I read them I still become tearful. People who hear such precious words and then just drift away will have a hard time forgiving themselves. These sermons are more precious than your homes, more precious than your land. (269-318, 1995.05.01)

23 How many books of my sermons have you read thus far? This is a serious matter. The more you read, the more you will shine and the greater your value will become. You have to know everything I have taught. Even a king who makes his nation great, understands the world and knows the truth, will find the books of my sermons to be a treasure. Even now, I am reading and studying my words. I have to straighten out every point before I die. If there are any mistakes, I must correct them. It will be a problem if there are any errors. (228-148, 1992.03.27)

24 How many books of my sermons have been published so far? If you have the opportunity to share some of the sermons from these books, you will find many parts that move people to weep rivers of tears. Even now, I read the books of my sermons for two hours every day. While reading one of the prayers that I gave several decades ago, I found a part where I mentioned about the fulfillment of the Completed Testament Age even then! This is something that I have been talking about recently, so when I came to that point in the prayer I felt something that resonated to my bones. How amazing these prayers are. This is not a matter of personal pride. These prayers are full of inspirations, which when I reflect upon them, are stimulating to me even now. They are like a huge chest full of treasure. (260-220, 1994.05.19)

25 Now you do not need to give sermons of your own. Rather than making your own sermon to preach, find a title from among my sermons that is appropriate to the occasion and use that sermon in a manner that fits your circumstances. Create

a separate book of your own with sermon titles and three-line summaries of each sermon. Then, whenever you need to speak, all you need to do is to decide the title that you would like to give your sermon on and find a portion of my sermon that matches what you want to say in your sermon. When you feel that you need to speak about some specific topic, read from the books of my sermons those that are relevant to that topic and then give your sermon. Also, even for your prayer, use the words that I prayed. There is nothing Heaven likes more than that. This is how you should always give sermons. (212-119, 1991.01.02)

Disseminate and practice the Word

26 My words have substance that will last for eternity. They are teachings that can enable us to transcend life's circumstances. Evil circumstances in your life cannot devour teachings that are true. True teachings cannot be restrained by anything in the evil world. Through these words, people should constantly motivate themselves to overcome their evil environment. But because people these days are not doing this, Christianity worldwide has entered a state of confusion. True Father comes with a loving heart for his children. Since that is so, should there not be a place where he can convey his true words to his beloved children? You have to find that place—the Unification Church—where he speaks those true words. When you find that place and listen to him, even if you listen to him a thousand times, you will still find his words refreshing. Those words have meaning that is linked to eternity, with the true value of goodness. Unless you connect to those words, which have such true value, you cannot become his true children. (10-132, 1960.09.18)

27 The flavor of True Father's words will never become bland, even if you hear them repeatedly for a thousand years. The same words will comfort you when you are sad and delight you when you are happy. My words can be your wonderful object partners; you can relate to them according to your state of mind and the emotions that you are experiencing in your life. Such is their value. (10-141, 1960.09.18)

28 The number of church members will increase in proportion to how often you convey the words of the Divine Principle. Another issue is how sincere you are in conveying the Divine Principle. You must share it with your utmost sincerity; there is no other way. Human beings were created through the Word. Since they lost the Word, they must be re-created through the Word. The Word has three main elements: the word of God's love, the word of God's life and the word of God's lineage. Simply, they are love, life and lineage. When you convey the Word to others, they should feel love welling in their hearts, life surging in their hearts, and lineage changing in their hearts. People need to shed their skin three times, at the formation, growth and completion levels, in order to reach maturity. (198-030, 1990.01.20)

29 You must convey my teachings throughout the world. With the arrival of the Completed Testament Age, I am conveying a new message. When I made the new proclamation of the Completed Testament Age to the entire world, I also bestowed my words in the form of the scripture of the Completed Testament. That is why I am telling you to read and study it. You must unite with these words. Before you can become one with me, you must become one with my words. (291-217, 1998.03.13)

30 A person who cannot understand my words as they should be understood will be judged by them. Even though our earthly lives will end, I have to leave behind my words for the benefit of the unending line of our descendants. As long as our destiny to complete God's providence of restoration remains unaccomplished, our descendants will have to work based on my words. We must observe and protect these precious words. God has been anticipating the day when all the peoples of the world will bow before these words. God has been enduring a history of great suffering and hardship until now in order to bring all people to surrender to these words of truth. (64-256, 1972.11.12)

31 God gives His words of love to Satan's world. Then, out of Satan's world, people should come forth who have absolute faith in God's Word. This means there should be a group of people who believe in God's Word absolutely, unlike Adam, who did not. They need to do things that will bring God to trust them more than He trusted the archangel, who betrayed God when he caused Adam and Eve to lose their faith in the Word. On the condition that they listen to God's Word, He can snatch their bodies from Satan's realm. He has to recover their bodies so they can come to Him. (53-040, 1972.02.06)

32 After joining the Unification Church, it is not enough for you to know the words of truth you learned from the Divine Principle merely in your head. Even as you know these teachings intellectually, you must also feel them in your heart. Once you truly know the teachings with both your mind and your heart, you will not hesitate to take action and fight Satan because you will want to fulfill the purpose of those teachings. Moreover, you will never be able to speak ill of True Father or reverse your thinking and take a position that could betray Heaven. (3-099, 1957.10.04)

33 You eat every day and the food still tastes good. Likewise, you can eat spiritual food that connects you to the truth every day, and it will still taste good. I am saying that words of life are satisfying, even if you hear them every day. People who enjoy listening to the words of the Divine Principle until the day they die will certainly not go to hell. You may think, "I already know all these things!" but you know them only in your head, which has nothing to do with the realm of heart. The more you listen to these words, the more Heaven's realm of life will come and help you. (239-145, 1992.11.24)

34 The word is the substance that nurtures our life. It is a grave mistake to think that just because you attended a twenty-one-day workshop and a forty-day workshop, you are now a member in good standing of the Unification Church. You have to continue studying the Divine Principle book. The experiences and insights that come to you when you treasure the Divine Principle in your heart will become your personal testimony, which later you can share at any time. At those times, you will be able to convey the grace that you received from the Divine Principle. (261-257, 1994.06.20)

35 All of you now living in the Last Days are to become the ancestors of the Third Israel. You need to understand: the final teaching will be God's words of love. Therefore, you should not keep God's Word as God's Word and yourselves as yourselves, having nothing to do with each other. You are to become the visible, substantial embodiments of God's Word of love. God's innermost heart has to become your innermost heart. In other words, you need to become the embodiments of the original heart of God. All of you need to carry out the mission of a second creator who can disseminate the Word of God. That is to say, you must become propagators of the Word, propagators of life, and propagators of the substance of God. In this way, you will become one with God centering on love; then can you attend God eternally. This is the standard of the Third Israel Only in this manner can you plant the Word, the substance and the life. (3-331, 1958.02.02)

36 You should not become people who follow my teachings blindly. First you should study my teachings, and next you should become their embodiment with the character of a subject partner. This means you have to become a subject partner who is imbued with the Word and who has attained the character to create spiritual children. However, when I look at people in the Unification Church who are studying the Divine Principle, I see many who have not attained that standard of heart and character, but who only work and act based on their knowledge of the Divine Principle. This will not do. Having studied my words, you should be able to express them as your own words. You should speak about the Divine Principle, but not as something that you were taught by some teacher. Rather, you should speak from the perspective of having a living relationship with it in your own flesh and bones. Although people may initially connect to you through your teaching the Divine Principle, unless you can speak with the authority of an original subject partner, you will end up having no relationship with them. Thus you have to perfect your character and become the substance of the Word yourself. (19-133, 1968.01.01)

BOOK 3 TRUE LOVE

Chapter 1 .The Origin of True Love..

Section 1. The True Love of God.....	263
Section 2. The Origin of True Love	271
Section 3. The Characteristics of True Love	280
Section 4. The Power of True Love	286

Chapter 2. The Realms of True Love

Section 1. Grandparents' Love.....	301
Section 2. Parents' Love.....	304
Section 3. The Love of Husband and Wife	309
Section 4. Childrens' Love	320
Section 5. Love among Brothers and Sisters	325

Chapter 3. The Practice of True Love.

Section 1. The True Way of Life	327
Section 2. The Practice of True Love.....	334
Section 3. The True Parents' Practice of True Love	351

BOOK 3 TRUE LOVE

CHAPTER 1 The Origin of True Love

Section 1. The True Love of God

1 What kind of being is God? He is the God of love. St. Paul said, "Nothing in all creation will ever be able to separate us from the love of God that is revealed in Christ Jesus our Lord." (Rom. 8:39) Even Jesus Christ would be nothing without God's love. This is why we value God's love above everything. God's love is the original source of life, the source of happiness, and the source of peace. (24-325, 1969.09.14)

What is God's love?

2 God's love is stronger than the sun. When the sun rises in the morning, the shoots of all plants turn toward it. Yet God's love, and it alone, is the source of life, the source of our original mind, and the source of the ideal. (099-232, 1978.09.25)

3 The coming Lord possesses God's original true love and His real truth. Through this truth, families emerge, and true societies, nations and the world emerge. On each of these levels— individual, family, tribe, people, nation and world—love, ideas and personality emerge. It all begins with the individual. In this way, a person who lives a true life as an individual, in whatever corner of the world he or she may be, is living for the sake of the whole world. That is how it is in the world of love. Living in the world of heart for even one hour would be our source of pride for a thousand years, and living in that world for one day would give us pride for ten thousand years. It is true love that allows us to experience the precious value of life. True love lets us feel even the energy by which our cells multiply. The world filled with God's love is like that. It is hard to describe in words, but it is a world of enchantment where all our cells are dancing and we feel as if we are flying on the clouds on a bright spring day. (20-026, 1968.03.31)

4 How shall we describe God's love? It is like being enraptured by a warm spring day with white clouds floating gently in the sky. The air shimmers above the ground, insects crawl around, and ants scurry about, exploring the world. Beside a flowing stream, pussy willows bloom, frogs sing songs of spring, and bees and butterflies flit about. It feels as if you are drifting off to sleep, but you aren't sleeping. You are awake and in a happy mood, rejoicing in the beauty around you. God's love has such a flavor that lasts forever. Our mood as we focus on becoming the ideal object partner for whom God is seeking is like our mood in that flower garden with the fluttering butterflies and buzzing bees. (37-029, 1970.12.22)

5 The place where God dwells is filled with love. It is a place where the more you give, the more you want to give, and the more you receive, the more you want to return millions of times more than you receive. This is the kingdom of heaven. Because you can give more and receive more there, you feel an explosive stimulation, as if all your cells are bursting. God's love is like that. (039-335, 1971.01.16)

6 What defines a good person? It is the attitude that good and precious things belong to the whole, rather than to him or her alone, and it is the heart to connect the value of such things to the value of the whole. God, who created heaven and earth, is a being of utmost goodness, the root of all things, and the subject partner of love. When there is someone whom God can truly trust and love and to whom He can entrust things, He will want to hand over everything He values to that person. If this is so, the desire to give one's most precious things to others is the principle of heavenly law and the original heart of all people. (13-247, 1964.04.12)

7 God's love encompasses parents' love, the love between husband and wife, and children's love. Of course, it includes siblings' love as well, and when that expands, it also contains love for the nation and the world. So we say that God's love is parental love, conjugal love and filial love. This is the most wonderful statement that can be made. Because the power of love can guide everything, it affects one's destiny. If we really understood love and its power to determine what happens in our life, we would be able to change our destiny. (067-172, 1973.06.03)

8 The love God needs is absolute love. Just as God needs absolute love, unique love, unchanging love and eternal love, we also need absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal love. In this respect, we resemble God. Since God has both a masculine and feminine nature as well as plus and minus qualities, He created human beings, His substantial object partners, as men and women. Thus when people marry, they become the substantial plus and minus representing God. God seeks to bring perfect unity between His vertical love and horizontal love through marriage; this is God's Will. (279-246, 1996.09.15)

9 When giving us love, how much would God want to give? God is not one who limits His love, saying, "Okay, okay, that's enough." God wants to love without limit. Even after giving everything, God will still say, "Because of who you are, I want to live deeper inside you." That impulse is in the original nature of love. Once having entered into a relationship of love, God would be happy to live even as a servant. A father feels joy even when he sees his beloved infant son or daughter climbing onto his dining table. Love transcends the law. After giving all His love to people until now, can God say, "I have given everything to you. Why have you given nothing back?" The God of absolute love still has the attitude that He has not been able to give all the love He wants to give. God cannot assert Himself. It is a principle of creation that God wanted to give humankind complete love, and for that reason, because He still has not been able to give us that complete love, He wants to give us something more. Because God is like that, the more we think of Him, the better we feel. (36-077, 1970.11.15)

10 God says, "I am love." This means He likes love by night and by day, while working, resting, dancing or crying. This is why He said, "I have love, in all its fullness." The phrase, "in all its fullness," indicates that everything is contained therein. The one who likes love most is God. Since God has such love, if we come to know and taste His love, we will not let go of God even at the cost of our life. (44-188, 1971.05.07)

11 To receive God's vertical love, an original, unfallen couple has to stand in loving oneness, the man on the right and the woman on the left, perpendicular to God's vertical love, ablaze in love and unity. When that happens, they engraft to God as one man and one woman. How are they engrafted? There must be a balance. What does this entail for the individual? Start with the understanding that God is the bone of love. With respect to love, God's love is like the bone and human love is like the flesh. The bones and the flesh become one and assume a form, like the human body. God's love is the bone love, and True Parents' love is the flesh love. (181-206, 1988.10.03)

Eternal and absolute true love

12 "Do you have eternal love in your heart? Have you arrived at the position where you can say, ""God's love has come to me. It will never change. Though heaven and earth may change, this promise does not change"? That's where you have to be. God's love appears in places that do not change. God's love is unchanging, so we can say it is eternal. Because it is unchanging love, if it comes to you, it comes on the foundation of your having also developed an unchanging heart. Therefore throughout your life, everything you eat, you should eat for that love; you should sleep for that love; everything you do should be only for that love. If you have a perfect, unchanging standard for the sake of love, God's love will appear. If that doesn't happen, all the promises of the universe are proven false. (83-180, 1976.02.08)"

13 God is in the position of the Father for all humankind. Because He is the Father, He is the center for all His children. Even though God created humankind, since He is in the position of their Parent, He also naturally exists for their sake. Parents want to exist for the sake of their children. Day and night they worry about their children's safety. Parents try to protect them from troubles and from harm. The way of goodness is to seek and connect to the original nature of such a parent; that is the way of love. Goodness brings the connection of love in the parent-child relationship, and enables us to realize our purpose. That is why we have to base goodness on love, and not just any love, but God's love, which is at the center. If we do not do so, we cannot establish the center of love on earth. (057-085, 1972.05.29)

14 Until now, God has loved those people, tribes and nations that were dear to Him. He blessed the Israelites as individuals, as a people and as a nation, adding blessings again and again, with the concern that they might reject His blessing if they thought it too small. Even this was not enough. He wanted to bless them

further by sending His beloved Son. When they rejected that blessing, He even gave them the life of His Son. Even after His only Son died as he did, God still wanted to give more love. This is why, on the day when this love is finally returned, all of heaven and earth will be transformed into the ideal kingdom of heaven. (38-167, 1971.01.03)

15 Where do God and human beings connect? They connect where their life, love and ideals intersect. This is nothing other than the parent-child relationship. How great would our joy be if we could be equal to God? God is the subject partner of our love, life and ideal. If this is so, do we still need to pray? God's authority and dignity are not the issue. Without hesitation we can hold on to God. When we experience God embracing us, caressing us and loving us, it melts our very bones. (69-079, 1973.10.20)

16 What happens when you experience God's love? Your hair will dance and so will all your cells. When you become completely intoxicated in this love, you don't faint; you want to live forever. If someone tries to wake you, you plead not to be awakened. As the saying goes, "A saint's delight makes him forget the passage of time." There is indeed a way to become enraptured by this level of love, which exists far beyond human imagination. (59-317, 1972.07.30)

17 Why do all people like God and follow Him? It is because God is the One who gives everything to them, then continues giving more, continues giving everything for thousands of years, and still feels it is not enough. He says, "Now I can give you only this much, but wait a bit longer, and I will give you something that is many hundreds of times, many thousands of times better." This is because He has so much in His heart that He is never satisfied with what He has given today. Far from it; He promises to give better things in the future. If we were with that kind of God, we would be happy even if we were poor and had no food to eat. Such a reality would be no problem, because we would be stimulated by hope. It would be like receiving a jolt. In fact, that kind of situation is all the better because it leads to new resolve. Being together like that, our tears, shed for the future, would be mutually comforting. We would not despair over the present reality but would be filled with hope for tomorrow. Encouraging each other face to face, we would express our mutual resolve. It would be an intense experience. (36-291, 1970.12.13)

18 It is not so much Adam and Eve's bodies that God likes as their love for each other. God wants to be in the place where the two unite. The final destination of the purpose of creation that God seeks is the place where He can meet His children and love them. The final destination we wish to reach is where we can attend God

as our Father and receive His love as His children. This is why human beings strive to become the children of God and God strives to make us His children. The place where these two desires coincide is none other than in the parent-child relationship. There is no place higher than this. (56-145, 1972.05.14)

19 God is not in need of knowledge, as He is the creator of knowledge. God is not in need of power, as He is almighty. God is not in need of money, as He can make diamonds and gold whenever He wants. There is only one thing that God needs: love. You may ask, "Can't God have as much love as He likes?" But God cannot have love by Himself. No matter how impressive a Ph.D. you have, no matter how overwhelming your power as a ruler of the world, no matter how awesome your wealth as a mighty king, you cannot possess love by yourself. What God needs most is a partner with whom He can share true love. (137-053, 1985.12.18)

God, the origin of true love

20 In terms of love, God is the origin of all the related emotions. It is from here that parents' love, husband-wife love, children's love, brotherly love, the love of relatives and the love of a people emerge. Just as the branches, twigs and leaves spread out from a tree trunk, and as ripples flow out from waves, the shoots of love grow out; the farther they go, the more sensitive you become. If you become a person who receives God's love, the one among your relatives whose heart is closest to God will be attracted to you. If God is with you, people are attracted to you, although they don't know why. (050-267, 1971.11.08)

21 We should become sons and daughters who are concerned about the heart of our Father and attend Him. Otherwise we will become objects of pity. Once we know that God exists, that He seeks us and works for us, we must understand that it is not enough to attend this God as merely a mental image. God is the substantial being who wants to be with us eternally as one body, eating together, living together, sharing joy and suffering together for eternity. God is the eternally unchanging original being of love, the embodiment of eternal hope. Jesus Christ was the person who made no excuses in front of this God. Completely forgetting himself, he was able to do anything for the sake of God's Will. We must be sons and daughters who can follow in Jesus' footsteps. (4-082, 1958.03.09)

22 Whenever we see something big, we want to make it our own. In our heart, there is nothing we cannot own. Our heart is vast enough to want to bring God to us and attend Him, and vast enough to bring any country that follows God to us, and to bring the world to us. Therefore, attending God in our heart is not a

problem; our heart is that big. We want to attend God in our heart. Since God is a loving God and the Absolute Being, we cannot put this being of absolute value anywhere else. People want to go together, be together and live together with the person they love. How do we want to live together with our beloved? We want to go deeply into one another, and become one. This is the original nature of love. (56-149, 1972.05.14)

23 A man must be able to say, "I am the subject partner of perfect love representing men." A woman must be able to say, "I am the subject partner of perfect love representing women, so you and I absolutely need each other." What a man absolutely needs on earth, other than God, is a woman. Also, other than God, what a woman absolutely needs is a man. Why is this so? It is so they can receive God's love. To do this, the man and woman both must stand in the position of true perfection, where even if they could turn back they would not want to, and even if they had a chance to stop loving they would not want to. This is the meaning of attending God. The owner of love is neither man nor woman, but God. (149-100, 1986.11.17)

24 Where can we dig to find God's love? God's love does not originate where brothers and sisters love each other. God's love does not originate with man and woman's love at the center. God's love originates in the love between parent and child. There has to be a vertical relationship. Such a relationship is established only through parents' love, so the parent-child relationship is the foundation for love. In this love there is no distance. In this vertical relationship there must be a center. There is only one center. The center must be the best place. Wherever there are two centers in this world, struggle begins. (28-169, 1970.01.11)

25 If, with true love, you seek a person better than yourself, you must invest 100 percent, then 1,000 percent, and then invest again. When you think you have invested enough, at that moment, everything stops. When God created human beings, He wanted to make His object partners of love greater than Himself, so He invested every ounce of His being. He invested and wanted to invest even more, in order to make His intangible nature completely substantial. Only when you have invested everything and forgotten about your investment can you find the beginning of true love. It is that simple. This is a fundamental principle of the universe. (203-232, 1990.06.26)

Creation is the investment of true love

26 Even though God is the Absolute Being and the subject of true love in the eternal, unchanging and unique realm, He doesn't ask others to live for Him. Working from nothing, God invested Himself to bring everything into being. His investment was for His creation. He had to invest Himself. Through this investment the universe came into being. The origin, the foundation and starting point was true love for the sake of the world. Everything began from true love. This was the original point, the beginning of the ideal. (173-255, 1988.02.21)

27 God invested Himself totally in making all things of creation. He found love only when the object partner into which He had invested was complete. In the same way, the more we invest ourselves for the sake of the public sphere, the more love will come to us. So we must be devoted children in our families. Why do we need to be dutiful toward our parents and loving toward our brothers and sisters? The more we are, the more love will come to us. Then, what do we want to own? We don't want to own knowledge, power or glory. We want to own love. That's the highest purpose for which human beings were created. It is the destination we seek. (109-270, 1980.11.02)

28 A mother offers her body for her child, and then forgets her investment. There is no mother who remembers how she gave and shared her flesh and blood. While she is nursing her baby, a mother does not keep a record in a notebook, writing, "Today I gave the baby this many milliliters of milk." She invests and forgets, invests and forgets. The way a mother raises her child is the same way God created all things, by investing and forgetting, investing and forgetting; the two are exactly the same. (235-101, 1992.08.29)

29 The origin of creation reveals the logic of love for the sake of others. It is great to invest for the sake of an object partner. This is where the life philosophy of "living for the sake of others" originates. Love should take us on a voyage to the ideal. The life philosophy of living for the sake of others originated in order to keep us moving in the direction of the world of purpose. Unless one takes the path of total investment, one cannot reach the destination of true love. This is possible only when you invest yourself totally and live completely for the sake of others. (173-213, 1988.02.18)

30 True love is love for the sake of others. Giving, or living, for the sake of others means searching for the object partner, the second creation, who is the object of love. Not only God creates; we too are creating now. Just as God invested Himself completely into His creation, likewise true love invests completely. When you invest yourself completely, your creation appears for you. (167-123, 1987.07.01)

31 True love is not about being served, but serving others. When God created His object partner of love in the beginning, He invested all of His energy, all of Himself, 100 percent. In this way God set the example of true love. In other words, God set the tradition of true love by exhausting Himself completely. This true love is the center of the cosmos. (201-205, 1990.04.09)

32 The way of true love is not to have others live for one's own sake; it is to live for the sake of others. When God created His object partner of love, He did so for the sake of His object partner, repeatedly investing all He had. This God is the original central being. The original central being with this kind of heart is the God who made all creation. True love for the sake of others is giving 100 percent, then 1,000 percent; it is giving everything, thus turning oneself into a vacuum. (201-349, 1990.04.30)

33 Love is total investment. A man looking for love needs to invest everything. He has to invest his five senses completely, his eyes, ears, nose, mouth and sense of touch. Unless he fits with the perfect shape of the model according to the original form of creation, he does not qualify to attain his love. Resembling God, he must invest everything. (173-213, 1988.02.18)

34 God began His creation based on love. He did not do so in order to suffer a loss. People often think that to give of oneself is to lose, so why did God invest everything? It is because love has the power to fill everything to overflowing and still remain undiminished. So God invested everything and used Himself up, but He received love in return. When you invest true love more and more, it does not gradually diminish. The more you invest, and the more you exchange, the more it expands. If it were a principle that true love grows smaller through investment, God would have been depleted. But instead, the more He invests true love, the bigger it gets. The world of true love grows bigger as it moves. If you want to capture love, you need to invest and forget and invest and forget. (237-126, 1992.11.13)

35 God created all things of creation with the heart to invest Himself for the sake of His object partner, His partner of love. So if you love all things of creation as God did while creating them, when He invested Himself and enjoyed everything with a heart of love, you will stand on God's side. The more you love the things of creation, the closer to God you will be. (61-207, 1972.08.31)

36 The origin of the universal principle is God. To create the universe, God invested Himself completely in everything He made. Throughout history He has sacrificed Himself ceaselessly to save fallen human beings. The prophets, saints and sages

who knew God's Will and followed His Principle with their lives were not satisfied to merely keep the truth to themselves. They sacrificed themselves for the sake of teaching the truth to others. (234-222, 1992.08.20)

37 Why should I sacrifice myself, having to overcome difficulties, with a sense of responsibility for others? It is so that I can influence others. This is in order to stand in a position like that of God, who invested energy and created everything from nothing. When He looked at all that He had created, "God saw that it was good" (Gen. 1). Therefore, the things that came from that were also supposed to be good. But we are not really good until we stand in the same position as God and follow His principles of creation. (62-193, 1972.09.25)

Section 2. The Origin of True Love

1 Where does true love begin? It is not from you; it begins from God. God is the origin of love. He created this world because He needed His ideal partner in love. Accordingly, even the creation of heaven and earth had its origin in love. Love is possible only in a world of reciprocity. Love makes no sense outside the concept of reciprocity. Therefore, if there is a man, there must be a woman; if there is a right-hand side, there must be a left-hand side; if there is a top, there must be a bottom. There must be above and below, front and back, right and left. Through these connections a sphere is formed. Before creation, God had mind and body. In the unity of mind and body, in love and without conflict, God lived and dreamed of realizing a world of ideal love. God wants not quiet love, but explosive love that can spin 360 degrees. To make and to find a partner for that kind of love, He created heaven and earth. (213-079, 1991.01.14)

God is the origin of true love

2 Any of you who have had a mystical experience will begin to wonder about and search for the origin of the universe. When you put this question into words and seek the origin of the universe, you will come to know one thing: Human beings are the original foundation of the universe, and represent the whole world of creation. What is the original foundation of human beings? It is life. What is the original foundation of life? It is love. If there were no love, there would be no life. Then what is the original foundation of love? Here you must look higher than human beings. You must look to God. So we say God is love. We say God is love, using the noun love, but that noun, love, cannot be realized all alone. It requires a reciprocal relationship. (48-206, 1971.09.19)

3 The word love makes sense only in reference to a reciprocal relationship. Not even the almighty Heavenly Father can establish love all alone. Love can be realized only in a reciprocal relationship. God's purpose in creating Adam and Eve was to feel joy. How can you experience happiness? It is not just by seeing, or speaking or touching, but only by loving that you come to feel happiness. God began the creation in order to actualize joy. (114-012, 1981.05.14)

4 Love does not begin with me. It comes from my object partner, and to receive it, I must open my door wide and invest myself completely for that partner. I must support my object partner. God, the Creator of the universe and the owner of true love, made the world not for Himself but for His object partner. God invested everything for His partner, everything of value that He possessed. (178-309, 1988.06.14)

5 True love originates in living for the sake of others. When God created the universe, the ideal of love was at stake. For the sake of what He had made, God has put out of His mind the thousands of years of fallen human history. Over and over and over again, He has given love in the face of betrayal and humiliation at the hands of human beings. That unconditional giving of love still remains on earth, even in this fallen human world. It is a parent's love. What is true parental love? When loving their children, parents who think, "Oh, I must get back everything I've given my children, with interest!" are not true parents. True parents sacrifice day and night, giving love again and again to their children. No matter where they go, they do not forget them and want to give more to them. They live for them twenty-four hours a day, transcending time and distance. This kind of love is closest to the original love. Because He is the origin of this kind of love, God could lead human beings to the truth and lay the foundation for their salvation. (142-035, 1986.03.03)

6 Love cannot begin from a self-centered position. We can love only when we can stand in our partner's position, honoring and protecting that position. Is there anyone who would say to his or her loved one, "Hey, you! Serve me!" When you lift up your partner and live for your partner more than for anyone else; when you feel you want to exist because of your partner, that is love. If you make yourself the center and command, "Do as I say!" that is not love. (042-259, 1971.03.21)

7 Even God cannot be happy alone, so He made all things of creation. Happiness and love begin from a reciprocal relationship. This is where the phrase "it is good" begins. Can anyone be truly happy alone? Words such as goodness, love, happiness and hope apply when we seek to realize meaning in a reciprocal relationship of a

higher dimension. This is how our level of happiness is determined. (061-331, 1972.09.03)

8 Love is not centered on myself. Love does not begin with me. A love relationship can come about only through a partner. Without a partner, it can't happen. Therefore both men and women need object partners. That is because love is not "mine." Love is something to be shared. Love is the power that can embrace everything in the universe. That love does not start with me alone; it is sparked by having a partner. Therefore when there is no partner, I do not feel love. Even when there is a partner, love cannot function if I have a "me first" attitude. (145-215, 1986.05.11)

9 We say that parental love is good and conjugal love is good. True love is not self-centered. Love does not start from me but from my partner. Love comes from my husband or wife, from my sister or brother. Love does not start from me alone, but from relating with others. The owner of love is my object partner. (34-332, 1970.09.20)

True love invests endlessly

10 God wants to give His true love endlessly to His object partner. Parents hope that their children will surpass them, so they want to give their children more and more. Husbands and wives in love also want their partners to surpass them, so they invest themselves again and again and forget what they have given. This desire to invest and invest again in your object partner sparks the action of true love. From the position of the subject partner of true love, by continually giving and giving again for the sake of human beings, God exists eternally. (234-239, 1992.08.22)

11 God, too, invested for the sake of human beings. He exists for our sake. Hence people have tried to follow Him for tens of thousands of years. In order to maintain a position in the universe that follows the heavenly law of existing for the sake of others, you also need to exist for others. Only by living for the sake of others can you be accepted in the East and West, in the past and the present. Because God's love is the same in the past and in the present, and in the East and the West, He can deal successfully with the East and West and the past, present and future. Because love can overcome the differences between the past, present and future, development can take place; and because love overcomes the differences between East and West, the two can be united. All this is possible only through love. (187-089, 1989.01.06)

12 No one wants a beloved partner or a dear child to be inferior to oneself. Where does this heart come from? It comes from God. He feels the same way. God wants His love partner and His children to be better than Himself. Therefore, to create children better than Himself, a love partner better than Himself, He had to invest more than Himself. Even now He has to invest one thousand times more and forget what He has given, then invest ten thousand times more and forget what He has given. Without the concept of investing, we can't expect a better object partner to appear. So a person who gives true love with the original heart that wants to give more, even after giving his or her life and living this way for a thousand years, keeps on giving. God's logic consists of wanting to make His object partner rise to the highest point and then still further, and so if you wish to possess God's love you'll have to invest more than God has invested. The basis of true love is investing even your life and not looking back. (221-305, 1991.10.26)

13 Because God is omniscient and omnipotent, He has His own sovereign power to invest in what He is imagining, thousands and tens of thousands of times beyond Himself. He invests and forgets how much He has invested. Love can invest itself limitlessly to produce limitless value. When you continually invest yourself, you automatically advance upward in a spiral movement. In the realm of this spiral movement, I can become an owner. Also, I can inherit the ownership of love in the heavenly world. Since love has the right of inheritance, the right to live together and the right to participate together, this sphere of activity belongs to me. Looking at this, we can see that God is the true king of knowledge. Why would He invest Himself and forget how much He has invested? It is so that He can continue to invest Himself again and again. Through the principle of self-replicating spherical movement, eternal rotation begins. From this we can establish the logic for the reality of eternal life. The act of investment repeated again and again exhibits the logic behind eternal life. (204-106, 1990.07.01)

14 True love dwells in the place where you love, forget how much you have loved, and want to love again. It dwells where you invest even your life and forget how much you have invested, and invest again. True love is giving everything of value all at once and then forgetting what you have given. Why must you forget? Because if you want to give more, you need to forget what you have given already. A mother gives her love and forgets what she has given. She doesn't record it in a notebook and expect to get it back. A mother is happy while giving her milk and giving her life to her child. Even mothers in this fallen world are like this, so you should be even more giving. True love exists eternally among those who invest totally and then forget how much they have invested. (207-056, 1990.10.28)

15 True love stems from total investment. When you have sacrificed everything and forgotten even your life, true love continues. True love continues on a plane beyond the point of investing your life. This is because true love is the origin of life. Unless you invest more than your life, there is no way to connect to true love. True love is the origin of life, so if you sacrifice everything you can go back to that place of origin. (237-235, 1992.11.17)

16 The more love you give, the more love you have; it never ends. You will have enough to give even more. Everything else comes to an end. Money, knowledge and power all come to an end. Everything that has to do with human circumstances and recognition in the world comes to an end. Yet eternal true love never comes to an end, no matter how much you give out. Amazingly, it continues eternally. Therefore with the power of love you can move the entire universe and still have more remaining. (121-242, 1982.10.27)

17 What is the difference between false love and genuine love? Once false love begins, it diminishes and becomes weaker. Once genuine love begins, it increases. True love keeps increasing until it embraces the world. This heart that is infinitely embracing, this heart that holds everything, says, "I will embrace more. I will embrace more!" It is only true love that activates the original heart like this. Only true love does this. (141-285, 1986.03.02)

18 There is no end to love. There is no end to parents' love. If a man and woman devoted themselves to their child, feeding and dressing him or her well, and raising him or her to be successful internally and externally, and then the child died, those parents would never feel they had done all they could for the child. Even after giving something good, it is the way of love to feel it was inadequate. After giving something good, love never boasts. It bows its head and is humble and quiet. (48-297, 1971.09.26)

The original nature of true love is giving for the sake of others

19 What kind of love is true love? The original nature of true love is not to focus on first receiving for one's own sake, but on giving first for the sake of others and for the whole. True love is a love that gives without remembering having given, and continues to give. It is love that gives happily. A mother feels love and joy in her heart while nursing her baby. A filial son feels joy while making sacrifices for his parents out of love. (556-298, 2007.02.23)

20 True love is love that exists for the sake of others. True love wants the beloved to go higher than oneself. The nature of love is to want one's beloved spouse and

children to be greater than oneself. This is the way it is meant to be in the human world. We want our loved ones to go higher than our parents, to go as high as God. God is the same. He loves the people who are in a reciprocal relationship with Him more than He loves Himself. He invests and forgets. This is God's original love. (300-237, 1999.03.23)

21 It is not the nature of original love to expect others to live for us. But when we seek to live for the sake of others, love multiplies. Love focusing on oneself diminishes, but love for the sake of others multiplies. It keeps growing. Love for the sake of others keeps multiplying and expanding, whereas self-serving love keeps shrinking. The original nature of love is such that when you want to live for the sake of others, your love becomes greater, but when you want people to live for you, your love gradually disappears. (129-264, 1983.11.13)

22 Real love is not giving and keeping account of how much was given. It is not self-serving. Real love exists for the sake of others. After having loved someone, can you say, "The reason I loved you was so I could be happy"? You must not go there. The person who feels inadequate after having loved, the person who feels many things even beyond inadequacy, is in accord with the principle of ideal love. But the person who says, "Now that I have loved you, you have to love me," is not in accord with this principle. (60-084, 1972.08.06)

23 When parents love their children, they don't say, "We bought you shoes and clothes a few days ago, and invested our sweat and blood for you, and it cost this much," and record it in a ledger. When parents love their children, they want to treat them even better than the princes and princesses in any palace in the world. With hearts wanting to give more, they say, "I did all I could, but this is all I can give you. I'm sorry." Parents always want to give their children something better. This is why we cherish parents' love. Parents give and yet feel that it is not enough; they love and yet feel that they should have loved more. Even after giving, they still are not content with what they were able to give their children. Parents' love connects to eternal love. That is where our tradition of love begins. (60-084, 1972.08.06)

24 Everyone wants true love, but love is possible only when we live for others. We need to serve and sacrifice for our partner. Everyone avoids a person who relates to others with the attitude, "You should live for me." This selfish individualism is Satan's strategy, purpose and tool; the result can only be hell. We must live for the whole. If we live for others and for the whole, and serve sacrificially, then everyone will return love to us. (316-241, 2000.02.13)

25 Why is parents' love so precious? It is vertical love, but it does not remain as vertical love until the end; it seeks to dwell together with horizontal love. Parental love seeks to guide children to avoid going astray, throughout their entire lives. Vertical love is such that it always creates horizontal love. According to that principle, parental love consists of the essence of both vertical and horizontal, based on God's love. Because parental love has both vertical and horizontal elements and responsibilities, parents want to give all their precious things to their children just the way they are. Parents want to bestow everything they have upon their children and want to see their blessings expand horizontally. This is the original nature of love. Why is original love like this? Love is possible only in a reciprocal relationship between subject and object partners, and this is the only way to create that relationship. Through give and take between subject and object partners, a sphere is formed. The vertical is the subject partner; the horizontal is the object partner. Together they make a ninety-degree angle and form a circle. (34-234, 1970.09.13)

26 God's love is vertical love, but it is not only vertical. It also has a horizontal quality. Therefore, God can appear in front of His sons and daughters, who are on the horizontal. Those sons and daughters not only widen the base of vertical love but also expand it as horizontal love so that, centered on the vertical aspect, all things of creation can create a horizontal environment on the scale of the world and the universe. It is from the loving heart of God's sons and daughters that their desire emerges to govern the world, to have possessions, and to pursue their aspirations. This is all because a vision of vertical and horizontal bonds of love lies in the subconscious of our original mind. We cannot deny that satisfying this essential desire satisfies all human desires. (34-235, 1970.09.13)

True love is the origin of existence

27 If their children were in a life-or-death situation, parents would readily expend all their possessions to save them. Considering this, we can see that life is more precious than material things. Then between love and life, which is more valuable? Between husband and wife, if the husband prepared a treasure for his wife with the full investment of his life, she would never tire of it; she would want to keep it for ten thousand years. But if the treasure were given without love, she wouldn't want to keep it. Thus, the value of the treasure depends on the investment of heart. If there were one couple in the universe whose love remained unchanged for ten thousand years, their love would be more precious than life. That is why people sacrifice their life for love. We don't abandon love for life, but we abandon even life for love. (136-108, 1985.12.22)

28 In this world there are gems such as diamonds and pearls. Why do we call these precious? A diamond is so hard that nothing can corrupt it; thus it has the special nature of being unchanging. A pearl's elegant sheen never changes for thousands or tens of thousands of years; nothing can compare to it. Why is gold so great? Its golden luster never changes, even for thousands of years. Nothing can surpass that color. Because of the unchanging qualities of these things, people treat them as treasures. But there is something we would never give up, even for these treasures. Such treasures have no life. You would never give up your beloved one's life for treasure. (136-107, 1985.12.22)

29 The first measure of value in the kingdom of God is love. It is not life, but love. That love is unique, unchanging and eternal. Based on this standard, all value is decided. Since God holds that highest standard, it has very naturally become the decisive standard. When God says, "That person is a man of character," or "She is a valuable person," His assessment is based on this standard. (099-063, 1978.07.23)

30 The common denominator for all beings is life. Life comes from love. So love is more valuable than life. Who is closer to the center, someone who is willing to sacrifice his love to sustain his life, or someone who is willing to sacrifice his life for the sake of love? Who is closer to the truth? The one who sacrifices his life to attain love is closer to the center and closer to the truth. This is because the one willing to sacrifice love for his life is self-centered, whereas the one willing to sacrifice his life for love is not. (174-015, 1988.02.23)

31 Love subjugates life. Love has the power to change the direction of life from right to left. But life cannot dominate love. Then what about God, the subject partner of life and of love? Even God is vulnerable in the face of love. Even though God is the absolute standard of life itself, when He faces a love stronger than His love, He submits to that love. If there is a power that can move the power of life, it is the power of love. (48-149, 1971.09.12)

32 What is true love? In this human world, since we have never seen God, we say we don't know. True love is stronger than a mother's love for her child, stronger than the burning passion of first love, that explosive power that rushes in, oblivious to even a life-or-death situation. The love of parents, who will sacrifice their own lives to protect their children from death, is connected to Heaven's love. Heaven's love begins there. (121-126, 1982.10.24)

33 Even though the omniscient, omnipotent God is the owner of true love, He doesn't want the root of love to begin with Him. He wants to place the root of love

in people who are able to be His partners of love. That is why, even though we associate God with true love, God wants people who can love truly, into whom He can invest everything He has. When God invests, He does not begin with inferior things. He invests the best things first. To God, the best thing of all is true love, so He invests everything in the person who will love with true love. (177-269, 1988.05.20)

34 God was behind the original formation of the universe, but His central motivation was to set up the way of true love. He was not thinking only of Himself. Before God thought of Himself, He invested everything in a second self, a partner that could be the object of His love, and He respected that being. What was to be the substantial result of His love? It was not God Himself but the object partner into which He invested, who was made to bear the fruit of His love. This is an amazing concept. This is the beginning, the origin of the formation of the universe. In short, why did God create heaven and earth? This is a philosophical question. Why did God create heaven and earth? Of course, He created what was good to behold, but more than that, He created heaven and earth to attain a love that is like His love. (177-270, 1988.05.20)

35 There can be no result without a cause. My mind and body came from my parents. Through the love of my mother and father, their two lives combined. Love harmonizes everything. Through true love, my mother's inner mind and body harmonized with my father's inner mind and body. The life force spreads out like a fan, and the lineage connects with love at the center. The first cause that led to my existence was not the lives of my mother and father. Rather, it was that the lives of my father and mother connected in love, and I was born through that lineage. From the bone of my father and the blood of my mother, flesh and blood connected, and after ten lunar months in the womb, I was born. I had the power of the life of my parents, linked to their lineage. My origin, the fundamental beginning of "me," is not myself. My origin is the life of my mother and the life of my father. Preceding life is love, which combines two lives into one. The origin of all beings on earth, the origin of all created beings, is love. (187-044, 1989.01.06)

36 What would have happened if there had been no concept of love when God created Adam and Eve? Adam and Eve were born to manifest the concept of God's love, expressed from the time of creation as the relationship of convex and concave forms. This is not something that evolved; there is no evolution taking place. The concept of love leads to the existence of male and female, and this fact transcends evolution. (223-021, 1991.11.07)

37 We have three important original palaces: a palace of love, a palace of life and a palace of lineage. The purpose of these original palaces is to unite in perfect oneness. This is possible only through love; there is no other way. The place where they unite is the most secret and most holy. Why did this palace become corrupted? It is because of the Fall. Because of the Fall, the palace of love was destroyed, the palace of life was destroyed, and the palace of lineage was destroyed. In fact, that place was desecrated and became shameful. (228-052, 1992.03.03)

We all wish to live in true love

38 In the place where I consummate a love relationship, all my nerves experience a stimulation that is electrifying. Love is in the closest place to me. Love is so close to me; it is inseparable from me. It brings me the impulse and stimulus of joy. It makes me say with an ardent heart, "I want to see that; I want to go there." (112-256, 1981.04.19)

39 Love has the power to concentrate all our senses together and unite them, focused on one point. The eyes would say, "We want to see"; the ears would say, "We want to hear"; the mouth would say, "I want to eat; I want to speak; I want to learn." Not only this, all the cells of the body would move in that direction. Just as a lightning rod draws lightning to itself on a mountaintop, love unites the action of the nerves. Once the heart is stirred by love, all the senses are stimulated and gravitate to one place. Everything moves together. Our eyes, ears, nose and hands all move together. This is not because of us, but because of the person we love. (066-160, 1973.05.05)

40 Nature is our first mother; we receive everything to support our life and to grow from that mother. In our physical mother's womb we live in water. On earth we live in air. Then what is the center of our life? It is love. Love is always the issue, whether it's the love of parents, conjugal love or children's love. Air is a prerequisite to life. Even in our mother's womb we have to absorb air; when we move from our mother's womb to life on earth, we have to breathe air. It is the same air; only the way we receive it is different. For us, the most important element in life is love. (132-271, 1984.06.20)

41 Why were we born? If we say simply, "It is because of love," we've said all we need to say. That love is true love. True love goes beyond the love of this fallen world. The purpose of all religions is to reach the world of true love. Christianity, the religion of religions, emphasizes a love that surpasses the love of this world.

Jesus Christ said, love me more than anyone else; otherwise you are not worthy to be my disciple. He said, "Whoever loves father or mother more than me is not worthy of me; and whoever loves son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me." (Matt. 10:37) Why did Jesus say this? To Jesus Christ, his disciples were like his children, and unless they could get past the line of the Fall, they could not have a relationship with Heaven. (219-167, 1991.08.29)

42 True love is fulfilled not only through horizontal, level relationships, but also through vertical, perpendicular relationships. A horizontal relationship of true love is gradually elevated in an upward direction until it reaches the pinnacle, which is the position of God, the King of true love. In this position everything combines, and embraces. Everything turns into love and blossoms. We can conclude that all beings in the universe want to be in harmony with love and to live in the midst of love. We are born for the sake of love, we live for the sake of love, and finally we die for the sake of love. (316-238, 2000.02.13)

43 Not only people, but all things of creation desire true love. Thus human beings, as the lords of creation, should embrace and love God's masterpieces and take responsibility to teach them the way of love. All things are seeking such owners. In light of this standard, we should feel ashamed. Darwin's theory regarding the survival of the fittest needs to be reinterpreted in the context of this logic of true love. Even ants and microorganisms want true love; beyond that, they want to offer themselves to the owner who loves them. Based on this principle, human beings, as the highest partners of God's love, have the privilege of taking and even eating all other creatures. Therefore, when we eat the things of creation, we have to have a heart that represents the true love of God the Creator. (316-238, 2000.02.13)

Section 3. The Characteristics of True Love

1 In love there is no end. A love that has expired and come to an end is not love. If you asked your beloved spouse, "Dear, do you love me? How much do you love me?" and your husband or wife replied, "I love you just this much," you would feel bad. This is because in love there should be no limit. Self-centered love cannot last even one day. Why do a husband and wife fight? It is because each of them wants to receive love from the other. A relationship between those who try to receive love from the other cannot last long. A family in which everyone tries to receive love breaks apart, but a family in which everyone tries to give love to the others will never break apart, even if someone prays that it will. The love in which each tries to give to the other is eternal (36-076, 1970.11.15)

Absolute, unique, eternal, unchanging true love

2 The Creator's purpose for making man and woman was love. True love is eternal and unchanging. No matter how much the era and the environment change with time, true love will remain unchanged. Men and women were created to fulfill the ideal of true love, which is unique, eternal and unchanging. Human beings were not created with themselves at the center. Creation was initiated with God as the root, at the center. Therefore it can be said that all things were created because of love. (213-156, 1991.01.20)

3 Original love is not human love; it is God's eternal, unchanging love. At the moment we encounter God's love and attend Him as our Master, we become one with Him. When we enter the place of joy where we can interact with God, we can conquer the world. Sharing joy with God is more rapturous and intoxicating than owning all of heaven and earth. No stimulation of the five physical senses can compare with the experience of sharing happiness with God. (7-248, 1959.09.20)

4 Everyone wants true love. No one would tire of true love even if it lasted for ten thousand years. No group would launch a revolution against it. Then what is true love? It is not the momentary love between young men and women of this world. Since true love involves God, it has an eternal, unique and unchanging nature. When you look at the solar system, you can see that the planets continuously move around the sun as their center, and this does not change. The earth orbits the sun once a year. In hundreds of millions of years it has not deviated from this cycle. It is amazing to consider this big earth circling around for hundreds of millions of years in this orbit. If the orbit were even slightly different, it would cause serious obstacles to the development of life. Likewise, true love is absolute, eternal, unique and unchanging. (299-153, 1999.02.10)

5 We are born because of the love of our father and mother. There can be no result without a cause; accordingly, no life in heaven or on earth belongs to itself. God has a greater purpose, with us at the center. Love is eternal, but it cannot exist contrary to divine law. Therefore, no one is born outside the principle of love. Also, complete love does not originate from one individual alone. A mother's love is God's love. An elder sister and younger brother may be fighting, but when their mother and father come in, they stop. In the same way, our human world needs a mother of love. But in the love of our human world, in the love of the whole universe, there is no mother of love. Humankind lost the original Mother. What we lost was nothing other than God's love. (20-021, 1968.03.31)

6 True love lasts forever. It is the same love in the spring, summer, autumn and winter. It is the same when you are in your teens, your adulthood and your old age, and even when you go to the eternal spirit world. True love does not change. (194-303, 1989.10.30)

7 Love has an absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal nature. It has the elements of these inner qualities. The foundation of all the inner qualities, the foundation that desires to form common relationships, across the board, cannot be anything but true love. No matter how absolute and unique God may be, He does not reject a relationship of true love. He willingly makes such a relationship. (226-063, 1992.02.01)

The rights and privileges that come only from true love

8 What is the Unification Church doing? We are attending God vertically and attending True Parents horizontally, and in the place where we resonate with them perfectly we seek to inherit true love. The attributes of true love include the right of inheritance and the right to participate together. These allow us to participate in love. Next is the right of equality, which means to stand in the same position. When you have that love, you can go everywhere together. You have the right to participate in everything together, everywhere. Thus there are three great attributes of true love. When you have a relationship of love, you have the right of equal position, the right to participate together, and the right of inheritance. You can immediately stand in the same position. (177-224, 1988.05.20)

9 When you have true love, you have the right of equal position. The positions of father and son are different, but a father always wants his dutiful and loving son to be with him, and the son also wants that. The father would not say, "Hey, boy, you are the son, so your position is different; you have to go to your place." Even though their positions are different, the son always has the privilege of sitting in the same place as his father. One attribute of love is the equalization of authority. One's beloved has the right to participate in that. (176-185, 1988.05.09)

10 If you are united in true love you have the right to hold an equal position and to do everything together with your beloved. You do not separate from each other anywhere, day or night. You can attend everything together. If your beloved becomes president, as the president's spouse you can go everywhere with the president. Even if he or she goes to visit a slum, you can go there; you can participate anywhere. You also have the right of inheritance. That is a law that

applies to all people. It is a formula. This is why we naturally think about these things. (290-063, 1998.02.03)

11 God's fundamental purpose of creation is to have true people who can be the object partners of His true love. How can human beings stand in the objective position to God, who is the Absolute Being? That is not possible through human effort or external conditions. It is possible only through a relationship of true love. When subject and object partners form a perfect relationship of true love, they immediately have the right of equal position, the right to participate in everything together, and the right to inherit. (294-062, 1998.06.11)

12 The person of love is the owner of the eternal God. Among the attributes of love are the right of inheritance, the right to live together and the right to participate in everything together. Even if a woman did not graduate from primary school, if her beloved husband is the president, whatever he owns belongs to her; of course, she can live together with him day and night, and she has the right to participate in whatever he does. Since love has these three great attributes, once you stand in the position of oneness with God's absolute and unchanging true love, you receive the authority to join God wherever He is and live with Him at any time. Then you will be able to see God even without closing your eyes. Those who have deeply felt God's sorrowful heart will stop in their tracks and weep bitterly; such a realm of deep feeling exists. Even in the fallen world, a mother's love is such that if her child has an accident far away, she can sense it. She wakes up calling her child's name. There are many examples of this. (201-356, 1990.04.30)

13 Even fallen people desire the highest, best and most glorious position. All people of all races desire this position, whether educated or not. Only love can satisfy this desire. Love is eternal, so when you have God's love, you can have eternal life. To stand in an equal position, a position with the same rights as God, you first have to possess God's love. (145-270, 1986.05.15)

14 When we have a loving relationship with God our position is equal to His and we can share in His rights. When we are united in love with God, we have the authority to participate in His work. Love confers the authority to participate in the beloved's activities. Love also grants the right of inheritance. When you have a loving relationship with God, not only can you stand before Him, you can have all that He owns. Originally people had the privilege of ownership over all that belongs to God. Thus it is natural that we have the desire to become the very best of beings. (145-270, 1986.05.15)

15 In the original, ideal world, a person who experienced true love would immediately inherit the right and ability to have whatever God desired for him or her. You can attain that qualification only on the earth, while in the process of bringing your body into oneness with your spirit in a true family. The family is the meeting point of God's love and the place where you can attain this. You can feel the true love of God by loving your fellow citizens, loving the people of the world, and loving all things of creation. (298-310, 1999.01.17)

True love takes the shortest and the most direct route

16 God is the vertical True Parent, and Adam and Eve would have become the horizontal parents, had they not fallen. True love takes the shortest, most direct route. Then where can human love and God's love meet? Where can the vertical and horizontal meet? The shortest, most direct route connecting heaven and earth is the perpendicular line. There is only one such line. Only true love can take that perpendicular path, reflecting the great law of heaven and earth. True love is the original common standard that can measure everything relating to the great law of heaven and earth, and there is only one perpendicular line through which true love flows. (204-104, 1990.07.01)

17 Where can God's love and human love unite? True love flows through the shortest, most direct route. There is only one shortest, most direct route for love from above; that is vertical. True love takes the shortest, most direct route from the Father above to the son below. Following the perpendicular lines, there is only one point where the two can make contact. Conjugal love between man and woman, representing east and west, also travels by the shortest, most direct route. This horizontal love and God's vertical love intersect at a right angle; they meet on the perpendicular. The love between brothers and sisters also flows along the shortest, most direct route, and meets God's love only at a ninety-degree angle. Consider a man and woman who are able to establish the perpendicular with God's true love at the center. Where in the universe should they meet? They have to meet on that perpendicular, which is the shortest, most direct route. (209-101, 1990.11.27)

18 God's true love moves along the shortest, most direct route. True love flows along the fastest, closest, shortest, most direct way. If there were one place on earth where true love could settle, it would be the place at which the shortest, most direct route arrives. This place is absolute. It is eternal. Yet because of the Fall, this place was lost. Love has nowhere to settle, and its axis shifts back and forth. Unless True Parents begin the process of settlement, having actualized the philosophy of the love of heaven and earth, based on the logic of true love, this

world will not find the way of the ideal with love at its center. In accordance with God's love, horizontal love is drawn to connect with vertical love. Had there been no Fall, the horizontal love between man and woman would have flowed along the shortest, most direct route to intersect with the vertical, perpendicular line at the central point. This is the formula through which we can reunite with the love of God's original creation. (221-344, 1991.10.27)

19 True love travels by the shortest, most direct route and therefore arrives in the shortest time. When your beloved child is overseas, you can think of your child and be with him or her in an instant, right? Love transcends distance. Since true love travels at the highest speed, with it we can travel anywhere in the universe; the entire universe becomes our sphere of activity. Since love transcends time and space, we have no sense of separation. Everything seems to be right in front of our eyes. (210-093, 1990.12.01)

20 Love travels at the highest speed as it flows along the shortest, most direct route. This is not secular love but divine love. What is divine love? It is true love. If we enter the realm of true love, because we are able to come and go at the highest speed through the shortest, most direct route, we will be able to act on the stage of the universe in the realm of thought. This may sound like a fantasy, but it is true. (210-226, 1990.12.23)

21 Love chooses the shortest path. If we are to form a perpendicular line with love at the center, then love has to come through the shortest and most direct route possible. When you go to visit someone you love, you don't saunter along as if you were touring a neighboring village. You go directly, swift as an arrow. Whether night or day, whether spring, summer, autumn or winter, however long its history may be, love always takes the shortest, most direct path. Vertically, the shortest distance is along a line perpendicular to the horizontal. This is how that which is highest contacts that which is lowest. (187-051, 1989.01.06)

22 What kind of love is God's love? Love is the heart that is never satisfied with what it has given; instead, it feels embarrassed that it cannot give more. One who feels sorry even after giving is truly the owner of love. After parents have bought new clothes for their child, they still feel sorry that they could not buy better clothes. Even after giving, they don't feel satisfied, so they supplement that with love. (38-327, 1971.01.08)

23 The person who most readily lives for others becomes the central figure. The one who lives more for others rules, supervises and inherits all things. This is

heavenly law. Within love there is the right to be always together. You can do everything together in any place, day or night. Do you need permission to go into your sons' and daughters' rooms? Would you need permission to go into your wife's room? If you love God, you can participate in everything with Him, wherever He goes. (170-199, 1987.11.15)

24 True love gives and forgets what it has given. It does not remember. What is the standard of good and evil? Evil is giving for the sake of making a profit. Goodness is giving and forgetting about it. Even in a family, the person who lives more for the others is on the side of goodness. The person who lives for others eventually becomes the master of that family. If there were ten friends, the best friend among them would be the one who lived for the other nine. Then the nine people would make that one the central figure and serve that person. This is how to inherit the universe. (141-253, 1986.02.26)

25 The original nature of dominion is love. There is one element of life that can connect with the original nature of love. That is my value as an object partner before a subject partner. At that point, my value corresponds to the value of my subject partner. The value of the object, which is the result, is equal to the value of the cause. My body, in relation to my mind, always has the value of an object partner. My mind, in relation to my body, has the value of a subject partner. These two together make up the being called "I." In this way, the universe brings about connected relationships. Immediately, the relationships between front and back, internal and external, left and right, and above and below are all connected. (145-177, 1986.05.04)

Section 4. The Power of True Love

1 The fastest action in the world is the action of love. In the world the highest speed is not that of electricity; it is love. It has the most amazing power; it can fly. If two people located at opposite ends of the earth were to fall in love with each other, their love would pull them together, closing the distance between them. Love has such power. So today in the religious world it is said, "Search for love. Stay close to the God of love. Have a deep heart. Pray." Why? It is because when you make contact with the world of love, you can participate with God in all His activities of love. This means you accompany God in His work. (112-204, 1981.04.12)

2 Love is destined to expand in all four directions: north, south, east and west. From this point of view, with love at the center, front and back, right and left, and above and below combine in an ideal way and begin circular motion. Thus the whole

universe is revolving. As the universe turns, the things at the center have to turn with it. There's no other choice. What is at the center of this universal rotation? It is the axis, which is eternally unchanging. Money, knowledge and authority all change. In our time, when even people's feelings change, what can be the eternally unchanging axis? There is one thing that never changes and that is the relationship between parents and children. Even in the animal world this is so. Only parents' love for their children is eternal. (227-121, 1992.02.11)

True love's power is activated through giving and receiving

3 In order for people to exist, they must sustain a process of giving and receiving, starting with the physical body. Having established the prerequisites for reciprocation, men and women interact with each other; only then can they exist. If men were to say they don't need women, and women were to say they don't need men, this world would be in ruins within one hundred years. To maintain existence, that is to say, to give and receive, we each need a partner. Therefore, to this day men and women have been loving each other and forming families. Love is the power that initiates the interaction between men and women, and it is the power of the action itself. There must be giving and receiving action at the source in order for the power called love to arise. For this action to arise, we absolutely need men and women. To establish the prerequisites for reciprocation, we need men and women. (18-324, 1967.08.13)

4 All material things are composed of energy, but energy cannot come into existence by itself. Unless a reciprocal standard is set, giving and receiving does not occur and energy cannot come to exist. You generate energy through the giving and receiving action of your entire body. Energy is generated in proportion to this action. Before there can be energy, there must be giving and receiving action. Then what initiates such action? Nothing can do this by itself; an object partner is needed. This is the absolute requirement for the appearance of all beings. If there is no object partner, there is no giving and receiving action. (18-323, 1967.08.13)

5 The more you love, the more your love grows. Love does not disappear; instead it prospers. There is no way to prosper without love. Furthermore, there is no eternal life without love. So Jesus said, "Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind. This is the greatest and first commandment." (Matt. 22:37-38) This is the commandment we need to observe absolutely. Prosperity is possible only through building loving relationships and following the way of love. (38-328, 1971.01.08)

6 When you invest beyond your limits and even your life, the power of true love generates ten thousand times more energy. You will never fail when you invest true love. The amount of true love you invest will multiply and develop. The more you set the power of true love in motion, the greater it will grow so that you can embrace the world, the universe and even God. (221-251, 1991.10.25)

7 True love will never be exhausted. The more it is set in motion, the greater it gets. In mechanics, input always exceeds output. But in the world of love, output exceeds input. This is why love is the nucleus of everything. There is always enough true love to provide for your object partner and still have more left over. There is no shortage. Since you always have something remaining after giving true love to your object partner, the more you love, the more true love increases. (219-018, 1991.08.25)

8 In a relationship of true love, output is greater than input. Saints were persecuted and, at that time, killed, yet their constant investment in true love produced an output greater than the input, and made an imprint in history. Since God has done the same thing, the creation of the universe was possible. When true love is invested, it grows greater and greater. If there is a heart that invests, the foundation for life to exist remains forever. (213-258, 1991.01.21)

9 True love stimulates the world and supplies it with the surplus energy it needs to rotate eternally. It also sustains the consumption of energy by adding more than it consumes. This is why only true love can exist forever. For people, the most precious things are life and love. Life comes from love. Therefore, everyone who has life automatically pursues love. (109-143, 1980.11.01)

10 When we say that true love is the origin of life and is able to sustain the universe, we can compare it to air. If I continue to give over and over again for the sake of the universe from a position of low pressure, the universe will pull me to the center and raise me up. I will be at the very center and then rise to the top. What is true love? If I go to the eternal zero point by investing myself completely, over and over again, the universe will add to me. If I go to that place, God will take notice and move on my behalf. The more I invest and forget how much I have given, the more God will support me. If I keep investing with God supporting me, I will become the center. Once I become the center, as I keep investing, I will never sink down into the earth. Instead, I will rise up. Everything will get bigger, and since I keep moving at the center, everything will become rounded. This is how the universe stays in motion and assumes a spherical form. (221-106, 1991.10.23)

11 Since the object partner of love will be eternal, God continues to invest eternally until it comes into being. And when He has a partner He wants to invest infinitely into that partner, even to His very essence. Since God's investment is infinite, all pairs that move in the world of love have an eternal quality. We can conclude that the love partner of the absolute, infinite God will live for eternity. (221-107, 1991.10.23)

12 God's love is love for the sake of others and only for the sake of others. Because God wants to keep giving, true love also cannot help but keep giving, and since they give to each other, they revolve. God's love is like that. Since God wants to give endlessly, and the original nature of love is also to give endlessly, they revolve. How did the universe begin? It began from the point of revolving. All existing things, by their intrinsic nature, have to revolve. Then what can go on forever? The love that gives eternally, the love at the very center, will keep revolving forever. When the power of giving and the power of receiving become one and they want to keep giving, they expand. Since there is power in this principle, expansion takes place and the universe is formed. (128-292, 1983.09.11)

13 Love functions as a lubricant and as an orbit in which things move. Without love there is no lubrication. Automobiles need oil to move. For things to move, we need to oil them. There must be lubrication. Everything needs lubrication if it is to move. Only love can be the lubricant for the highest joy. It does not disappear because it is rooted in the eternal God. The more love moves, the more it develops. (180-163, 1988.08.22)

The unlimited power of true love

14 True love remains even after it embraces the universe; it remains even after it flows through the universe, and it remains even after it blends with the universe. It is the driving force of life, of movement and of everything. Where there is love like that, life at last has value. From that love, all that is ideal emerges. Laughing "ha ha ha!" can be ideal. We can say that crying "wah wah!" can be ideal as well, if it is prompted by love. People shed tears in times of sorrow but also in times of joy. No matter where you are, even in hell, if there were one power that would allow you to know happiness, that would be the power of wanting to live for the whole. (129-315, 1983.12.01)

15 Love has the power to enhance that which is insufficient, to reinforce that which is inadequate, and to complete that which is lacking. That love is true love. The nature of love for the whole cannot differ from the nature of love for the individual.

To reach the world of cause from the world of result, there should be an expenditure of surplus power. This power could be both stimulating and electrifying to human beings, who are resultant beings. (112-130, 1981.04.12)

16 When you inherit the work of creation you receive the authority of true love. The reason is that to inherit the work of creation is to inherit true love, which is the strongest power. With true love there is nothing you cannot do, nothing you cannot make. You can love even your enemy. The power of true love is not to fight, not to force, but to win over someone naturally. There is no power stronger than this. (124-095, 1983.01.30)

17 The Bible says, “Whoever finds his life will lose it, and whoever loses his life for my sake will find it” (Matt 10:39) How do we explain such paradoxical logic? It is a paradox because the world of evil and the world of goodness move in different directions. It seems contradictory, but it is a widely accepted viewpoint of those on God’s side. Unless we overcome the environment that gives rise to this paradox, and unless we make a bold leap into destiny to find the way of true love with its own logic, we cannot be liberated. The power to leap comes not from military might, economic strength, political prowess or intellectual power. It is the power of nothing but love. It is the only path to the eternal, unchanging and correct way. (121-126, 1982.10.24)

18 Love is the essential force that moves reality; it is indispensable in daily life. This has been so throughout history. Love is the origin of the force that drives our social systems and everything else. This is why students are taught patriotic love for their country. Brotherly love, parental love, conjugal love and worldwide altruistic love—all are forms of love. What does this mean? It means that without reference to love, which impacts people’s daily lives and the course of history, we cannot create the thought and tradition that connect us to history. (187-046, 1989.01.06)

19 The power of true love is great. True love can melt even the hardest substance. It is more fearful than a clenched fist. Love can conquer any place in a flash, no matter how far and wide. Nothing is strong enough to withstand the power of love. True love can melt even our enemy. We want to become the owners of the world based on love. Love is the pinnacle of hope for the human race. (193-042, 1989.08.06)

20 If you tap on the heart of true love, the physical body spontaneously resonates. If you become a perfect man or woman through true love, God spontaneously appears. This occurs only through love. True love is the power that leads to such

events. So what is true love in reality? True love connects vertical and horizontal. It can weave together above and below, right and left, before and after. Because of that, love can weave together heaven, which is above, and earth, which is below. Going laterally, it can weave together the right side and the left side. I am saying that love is the power to intertwine everything: before and after, right and left, above and below. (181-087, 1988.08.28)

21 What is it that can give life the taste of honey? It is the taste of true love. It is not the love of man and woman living in this fallen world. Once you taste true love, everything is united. All eyes focus on one place. All the cells of the body are drawn together into a ball and begin to roll. True love has that power. All kinds of cells are drawn together into a ball and roll down the path of love. While rolling down that path, I forget my own existence. The concept of “me” is lost. (109-274, 1980.11.02)

22 The schisandra (omija) fruit is used to cure a number of illnesses. The berry has many uses in Oriental medicine. It combines five different flavors, and makes an effective medicine. Love, which is the medicine of medicines, also has five flavors. It is bitter, salty, sweet, spicy and sour. The taste of love is like the five-flavor schisandra berry. The tastiest dishes are made with this berry. This is a medicinal food. Everyone likes food that is good for the body. (195-068, 1989.11.05)

23 In the right season a beekeeper gathers his honey with equipment designed for that purpose. Honeybees store the honey in honeycombs, but there are many holes. Bees save honey to get through the winter, but the beekeeper collects all the honey and provides sugar water for the bees to live on during the winter. So the bees live on sugar water all winter. Then when spring comes and they taste real nectar, they become intoxicated. When the flowers bloom in spring, the honeybees fly from flower to flower. If you look at the bees on the flowers sucking their nectar, their abdomens are raised up and their heads are buried deep in the flower. If you were to pull at a bee's abdomen with a pincer, it would still keep sucking, even if its abdomen separated from its body. How delicious that nectar must be! Now, how does the taste of that nectar compare with the taste of love? Which do you think is better: the taste of honey or the taste of love? What kind of taste would God like most? If God were to smell many aromas, which would He like best? If He were to choose something to listen to, what would He like to hear, and if He were to seek something to feel, what would He like to feel? There is only one thing God likes, and that is love. Nothing other than love can focus God's five senses and fill Him with joy. (136-116, 1985.12.22)

24 Is the color of love blue or red? What is love's color? It has five colors. Its taste is like the schisandra berry. It has five flavors. If something has five colors, won't that be dazzling? A rainbow has seven colors. Think of all these colors mixed together. What color would that be? When you mix all wavelengths of visible light, you get white. What color do people like most? When God created all things, do you think He first created the color He likes most, or the color He likes least? He created the one He likes best. What color is the flower that blooms in early spring? It is purple. The color purple includes red and pink and all other colors. That's why all elegant things are purple. In the spirit world, the most beautiful color is purple. (197-049, 1990.01.07)

25 A man and a woman embracing and kissing light up like two poles with opposite charges touching and sending out sparks. If that light is white, we must add heat to create five brilliant colors. When this colorful display is mixed with the vertical love of God, it is transformed into a world of ideal, brilliant hope, like the colors of the rainbow. Since human love is on a horizontal plane, it is simple. People of original love want to combine colors, to see perfectly combined colors through the love of a man and a woman. When that occurs, vertical love will come down. Like a rainbow, God's love will descend to this horizontal love. (134-171, 1985.04.07)

True love brings unity

26 A sense of love is not one-sided; it is all-inclusive. Even cells function in that way. We sometimes say that people are intoxicated by love and that everyone should have this experience at least once. If you are intoxicated by love, when you call out to anything in the universe, it will respond without hesitation. You can sing for a thousand years while watching water flow. The whispering sound of the flowing water is infinitely sweet. Think of it! Through love, people attain the value of owners who harmonize with the entire universe. You want to go the way of completing this purpose. Once your heart has the capacity to capture God's love, you can sing and dance for thousands of years. At that time you will have completed everything; you will need nothing more. There is nothing on earth more precious than this. Once you capture God's love, you have no need for gold, silver or treasure, absolutely no need. (39-211, 1971.01.10)

27 True love fills everything completely. When God's eye perceives love, He becomes intoxicated. In a family, when the father is intoxicated by love, the mother likes it, the sons and daughters like it, and the whole family likes it. But if the father is frowning, the mother can't help but frown, and the sons and daughters frown too. If the mother is intoxicated by true love, that true love will melt the father. It

will melt the sons and daughters too. If the sons and daughters are intoxicated by true love, their mother and father will melt in turn. (106-099, 1979.12.16)

28 True love is almighty. There is nothing it cannot do. If someone imagines the ideal, the ideal object that they imagine appears. Even if a husband is not handsome, when his wife comes to love him, he appears handsome to her. Love transforms unattractiveness. We don't know our own faces well. Even though we see them in the mirror every day, we don't know them. When we see ourselves in a photo, we say, "Oh, so I look like this?" but when we look in the mirror, we don't think that way. According to our mood, we sometimes look like the most repulsive person, sometimes like the most attractive. Sometimes our faces look round, sometimes long. If we look with the eyes of love, no one is better looking than we are. When your eye is very close to something, can you see it well? You need a certain distance in order to focus. If you are too close, you cannot perceive it. (106-102, 1979.12.16)

29 Love has great power. Even if someone is a farmhand working in the fields, when he forms a love relationship with the owner's daughter, the owner has to give him all he has. Love can leap from the lowest place to the highest place. It can break down any barrier, no matter how strong. No matter how confused the world is, once you experience God's love, you can leap beyond it. If the American president falls in love with a country girl who is naive, ignorant, unqualified and lacking in many ways, from that day forward she is invested with the right to participate with him in his position. Likewise, if you have true love, no matter how low you are, you can leap to the highest place in a flash. Today, no matter how miserable our circumstances, once we have a love relationship with God at the center and can say, "There is no doubt that You are my Father and I am your child," we can freely go in and out of God's master bedroom; we receive that privilege. Only love can make this possible. (142-037, 1986.03.03)

30 When you meet your beloved, you want your love to be a flower that blooms forever. You want to explode. When two lovers come together there is such an explosion. Love conquers everything with its brilliant power. There is nothing that can suppress that power. Love has that explosive quality. All beings are in awe when thinking of love, and all cells open their gates. (179-115, 1988.08.01)

31 Would you prefer to hold on to someone because of love, or because the person had earned a doctorate? Why do you prefer true love? No amount of money has the power to make your mind and body one. No amount of knowledge can make your mind and body and five senses focus on one thing. These cannot make your

eyes, nose and ears focus on one thing. Power cannot do that either. But love can. That is why love brings the greatest joy. Our five spiritual and five physical senses can unite their focus through love. In love we enjoy explosive happiness by having the five spiritual and five physical senses unite in one focus. We feel tremendous stimulation in love. We ignore everything else and all our cells unite into one. The power of true love unites the spiritual and physical cells as one. Nothing else can do this. True love is the highest peak. (189-194, 1989.04.06)

32 Love is the power that unites man and woman. When two people love each other completely, they think, "I am in you, and you are in me." It is like St. Paul; when he had his spiritual experience, he could not say whether he had been in his body or out of his body. What binds subject and object partners together? If one man and one woman just casually meet and live together, that is not love. In love the direction should be right, the physical constitutions should match, and there should be a common base. One is minus and one is plus, which makes for a perfect mutual relationship. Love is when I say I would die without you and you say you would die without me. When two people are bound together completely as one, their two personalities combine and become as one personality, and they have greater value than they do as two individuals. They then become owners who can build a world of higher dimension. (33-047, 1970.08.02)

33 Neither money nor knowledge can give rise to unity between mind and body. A Korean maxim says that a habit you adopt when you are three years old will last until you are eighty. It is very hard to change your habits and your deep-rooted fallen nature. These have a historical and global character. Only enlightened people who can crush such things underfoot, clear them away, and transcend the world, are able to overcome this problem. Man and woman are physiologically different, and the components of their original natures are different, but they can unite in love. (211-264, 1990.12.30)

34 The very cells of a mind and body are made to resonate with each other when united in true love. If there is no true love, this is not possible. When you hit one side of a tuning fork, the other side resonates automatically with the same vibration. When they resonate, the frequency is the same. Likewise, when our original mind and original body reach maturity and blend with God's heart of true love, and the environmental conditions are right to allow that, they move automatically and harmonize perfectly. Power is put into action. (164-048, 1987.05.03)

35 When you enter the realm of resonance with true love, you have a wide view of heaven and earth. The Buddha said, "Throughout heaven and earth, I alone am the honored one." Why did he say this? If you reach the center of the realm of resonance, the whole world is in your hands; God is inside you, and you are one with heavenly law. This is why he could say such a thing. If you enter the realm of resonance of true love, you don't need a religious faith. You don't need a Messiah. This is liberation. (201-361, 1990.04.30)

36 When can the mind and body unite? If the vertical and horizontal had been united, then the great law of heaven and earth would have united the mind and body forever. Only when I love do I attain my true value and find myself. For a man, it is possible to realize his full value as a man only through marriage. That means that the fullness of human potential is realized through marriage. Only by knowing love can a man become complete as a man and a woman become complete as a woman. Completion occurs with love at the center. (211-263, 1990.12.30)

37 Among the things people seek, the most precious is love. We are driven to seek precious things, precious people and precious love. God, the center of love, has no beginning and no end. To God, governing heaven and earth is not a one-day operation. He will do this for eternity. The center of all precious things is human beings. The center of precious love is God. God sacrificed the things He created to find humankind, and God sacrificed human beings to find love. Love makes two into one. God wants to give humankind that kind of love. In a place without relationships of love, everything scatters, but if you make love the center, everything is drawn together. (14-080, 1964.05.24)

38 That which can harmonize everything is love. For example, when a girl marries and goes to her husband's home, she discovers that his grandfather and grandmother, as well as his father and mother, are all living there. In the past, in a nobleman's house, do you know how great their influence was and how great their authority? Do you know how complicated their traditions, their moral principles, were? In that environment, a wife could not even stretch out her legs as she wished. So when a bride goes to her husband's home, what is her husband to her, such that she willingly leaves behind her mother, father and brothers? The power of love is a moving force with the ability to harmonize. (181-025, 1988.08.28)

39 The word love cannot stand on its own. It absolutely requires a mutual relationship. Subject and object partners appear as two, but the two become one. If one becomes the top, the other becomes the bottom; if one becomes east, the other becomes west; if one becomes south, the other becomes north; if one

becomes the front, the other becomes the back. Love has the active nature that brings two into natural balance in any environment, in any place. (193-135, 1989.10.13)

True love is the source of harmony and equality

40 True love can transform even sorrow and pain into joy. More than our power, knowledge or money, what we want to leave behind in the universe is true love. This is our original desire. This has absolute authority in each individual. Where does this true love come from? Needless to say, it comes from the true love of God, the foundation of the universe. It derives from Him, and God also wants to experience that love. When you ask a man and woman, who are engaged to be married, about their future spouse, the bride will say, "I expect my husband to be better than I am." The bridegroom will also say, "I expect that my wife will be better than I am." Parents always hope that their children will be greater than they are. This heart comes from God. These words arise out of true love. (201-345, 1990.04.30)

41 Just as flowers bloom in many different colors, even though love comes from the same root, it appears in an endless variety of forms. This is love's response to the action of its object partner. When you relate to someone who is sad, you feel sad; when you relate to someone who is happy, you feel happy. Love matches the feelings of its object partner. A loving wife's face shows that she can accept everything from her husband's past, even a dark background. (233-131, 1992.08.01)

42 God breathes true love. Since this is the rhythm of the universe, the universe continues forever, based on true love. In love there is eternal life. Everything moves in one direction, with God at the center. True love is eternal, absolute and unchanging; once it begins, it lasts forever. It moves according to the shape of waves and circles. When it moves in waves, it connects horizontally; when it moves in circles, it connects vertically. When it moves up, it grows larger; when it moves down, it grows smaller. Thus, heaven's side grows larger and earth's side grows smaller. God's true love is eternal. (201-191, 1990.04.01)

43 What makes someone an amicable person? If you fight with your wife every day, are you such a person? An amicable person is one who, while heading east, can turn around and head west without any problem. If someone grasps his head and pushes him down, he goes down without resisting, and as he rises up somewhere else, he does not change. The universe is round, and so is the sun. Everything is

round. What is the source of all round things? They cannot become round by themselves. They become round only on the basis of a relationship with something else. The world is one existing entity, a substantial entity of relationships that integrates a realm of relationships. It continues on the foundation of this realm of circular relationships. Here, the source that can form circular relationships, the source of harmony, is the action of love. (164-078, 1987.04.26)

44 You should live enraptured with love. One who is enraptured by love is truly happy. An artist is enraptured by art. A person who loves literature writes books and is enraptured by them, or by the great masterpieces he or she reads. Such people are happy people. Your entire body should live in the rapture of God's three-dimensional, ideal love, and you should follow only Him. (59-318, 1972.07.30)

45 Love flows into the heart of the individual, into the center of the family, and into the center of a people. Wherever it goes it enters as the mainstream. And wherever it flows, everyone welcomes it. There is no way to block it. God created people to relate with one another through the power of love. The one who lives and breathes along with the universe, connected through ties of love, can go freely to the Palace of God. He or she can open the gates to the Palace and enter at will. There is a sanctuary there, where God is attended. He or she can go in and call out, "Heavenly Father!" Then God will answer, "Oh, my child, you are here!" (164-047, 1968.08.11)

46 The word equality is meaningless without love. Equality is based on love. There is no equality that is not based on love. Then what is happiness? Happiness is the fruit on the branch of the tree of love. Happiness is the front side of love, the back side of love, the summit of love and the feet of love. These words are all correct. Since love is one, and round, these words are all correct. Without love, can there be happiness? No matter how beautiful a woman may be, she can find harmony only when she meets a man with whom she can be equal in love. (140-143, 1986.02.09)

47 In a realm with true love at the center there is no injustice. It is like the nature of water and air. The power of love always balances things out like water and air. Water always forms a level surface. High pressure in the atmosphere always transfers to a low-pressure area to create equilibrium. Love is the same. Love balances everything. With True Parents at the center, one culture—the world of the culture of Adam—begins. Starting from the individual, it connects eternally to the spirit world. (294-329, 1998.08.09)

48 In love, men and women are equal. In love, a mother and son are equal, even if her son is the president. In love everything is equal. When a husband comes home

he should say, "I'm returning to my beloved wife's house. I'm returning to my wife's loving arms." A wife should say, "My love, my husband, come into my arms!" This is peace and equality. In this way a husband and wife become one. A husband wants to be held in his wife's arms, and she wants her husband to come into her arms, so the two become one. There is no high or low between them; they are one. (129-051, 1983.10.01)

49 When you say people should be equal, what kind of equality are you talking about? When you receive original love, you have original equality. What kind of equality? It is equality based on love. The highest realm of equality is that based on love. The most important thing to people is love. Since love is also the most important thing to God, when you have equality of love, everything is magnificent. Everything can be accomplished. (130-119, 1984.01.01)

50 If you want to interact well with the universe, you have to give love. Without love you will never experience interaction with eternal value. Love is said to be meek and humble, and indeed it is, so that it can flow eternally and fully. This is the one method to create flow without resistance. Meekness, humility and sacrifice are accepted everywhere. They cause no resistance anywhere. So it is not really sacrifice. One secret method for working without resistance is to live and sacrifice for the sake of others. (122-330, 1982.12.01)

51 Love transcends even national borders. God's love has no national borders. It transcends all races, feeling no difference in value between black, white and yellow races. God's love is great. The flow of love is not dependent upon the environment. As it flows it assimilates the environment, which does not resist. God will be pleased only when we adopt the perspective that can make this happen. (164-093, 1987.04.26)

True love is the origin of peace and happiness

52 When you enter the realm of God's love, it is as if you are intoxicated by the fragrances of a million spring flowers. It is like the indescribable feeling of sitting on grass and looking up at fluffy, white clouds. At that moment you feel all the cells in your body dancing. That's why we say that God's love is the origin of the power of all living beings and the origin of all happiness. God's love is the condition that is absolutely necessary for happiness, peace and all that we hope for in life, and it is an absolute element of faith. (24-325, 1969.09.14)

53 Men and women have to be absolutely united through love. When they become one, what happens? It is not conflict, but loving harmony. That is where happiness

dwells, peace blossoms and the eternal heavenly kingdom begins to spread. From there, the eternal world rushes in. We are called to make love blossom. Love is the foundation of happiness for all people. That is why if we open the world of true love, everything else we want is guaranteed. (234-034, 1992.08.02)

54 Our first ancestors' union in marital love should have been simultaneously the perfection of God's love. It should have been an occasion for celebration, in which God, Adam and Eve, and all things were intoxicated naturally in blissful joy and blessings. It should have been a happy ceremony that marked the settlement of God's love, life and lineage in human beings. (288-127, 1997.11.26)

55 When a person who is the subject partner of love is full to the brim, everything is full. Because all things are complete when one is full of love, one can give boundlessly and authentically. Giving and receiving in this love is the realization of the ideal and the multiplication of the ideal. The world of love transcends distance. What is the speed of love? Not even light can keep up with it. Nothing travels faster than love. Also, nothing is brighter than love, and nothing surpasses the perfection of love. The fullest thing is love. Even a girl who is dozing off bursts into bloom at the appearance of the partner she really loves. Only love can make this happen. What love is this? It is true love, the love that is the source of the universe, the center of the universe and the owner of the universe. (95-039, 1977.09.11)

56 No one wants to unite if the purpose of doing so is only temporary. Everyone wants eternal oneness. What single element can bring that about? It is love. Love is the foundation for building unity. It is the foundation of happiness that is worth unending dedication. Without love there is no happiness. Without love there is no peace. Without love there is only conflict. But when love is abundant, everything is harmonized. (50-114, 1971.11.06)

57 When we speak about love, we mean the standard that God has in mind. Love is like leaven. It is the cause, motive and source that can break down the barriers between one person's mind and another's and bring them into unity. If we think of love as small, it is very small; and if we think of love as large, it is very large. Between the two of you, the blink of your loved one's eye can make you feel as if heaven and earth are turned upside down. A smile from the one you love can make you feel as if all of heaven and earth are encompassed within your heart. If you think of love as sensitive, it is sensitive; if you think of it as small, it is small; if you think of it as big, it is big. If you think you can see it, you can, and if you think you can't see it, you can't. Love alone can melt barriers. (51-162, 1971.11.21)

58 There are so many barriers. Then what is the one central point that can break them down? In this world, money can overcome barriers. Knowledge and power can as well. But once you get past one barrier by such methods, you just encounter another one on the other side. Knowledge has a limit; money and power also have limits. Only true love can destroy barriers globally, above and below, front and back, right and left, from the past to the future, from the east to the west. The one point that can dissolve the barriers between all people is true love. Such is the power of true love. If you have true love, you can climb up on the crown of your father and mother's heads and they won't mind at all. If you travel while focused on love, there is no door through which you cannot pass. You can pass through every nook and cranny of the world. True love can manage and govern the world. (123-135, 1982.12.26)

59 True love naturally upholds the proper order all the time. That is how absolute it is. The son or daughter cannot intrude into the positions of the father and mother. The parents cannot intrude into the positions of the son and daughter-in-law. Such positions are absolute. Love arises when we maintain perfect order, one with another. Love is not disorderly. In true love there are always front and back relationships, above and below relationships, and right and left relationships. These are not barriers; they define order and process. (123-136, 1982.12.26)

60 If you looked at the world through the eyes of love and saw a bird in song, you would say, "Why is that bird chirping? Oh, he must be missing his beloved." You would recite poetry, or even just spout it off spontaneously, and write works of literature. The scenes of your everyday life reappear in constant repetition. Ordinary people see water in a stream go by all the time, winding its way, following the lay of the land, meandering along. When it hits a rock, it sprays drops of water and flows on. But a person who fathoms the love behind this water's flow will receive unending inspiration—really! He or she will write poetry and novels about it for a millennium. How pleasing are the breath of love, the caress of love, the song of love and the words of love! (112-258, 1981.04.19)

61 Through love, happiness will come into the human world. Without the standard of love, people cannot realize the ideals that they themselves desire. Everything in the universe lives because of love. All things of creation originated through God's love. We human beings, having originated from a greater love than anything else, are the center of creation. We are to return to the spirit world having been born in love, attained maturity through love, led a life in society through love, and completed love. (137-208, 1986.01.03)

62 In this world, once we give something away it is gone. Yet with respect to love, the more we give, the more comes back to us. That is why we delight in love. We can always give love and in return be filled with love, so we can always be happy and joyful. Giving centered on money leads to collapse. No matter how much you like power, trying to accumulate it leads to misfortune. Knowledge also has its limits. But love is different. The more love is given, the more it circulates. (121-106, 1982.10.24)

63 Where does eternal life begin? It begins with God's love. I'm talking about God's love, not His money, power or knowledge. Jesus said, "I am the way and the truth and the life; no one comes to the Father except through me." (John 14:6) However, he left one thing out, the most important thing of all: love. He should have said, "I am the way and the truth and the life and the love." These words should be inserted into the Bible. When I say this, some people will say, "Oh! How blasphemous!" But if you ask God about this, He will reply, "Of course!" From this we can see that God really likes love, but He likes true love best of all. This is very logical; I am not speaking out of ignorance. (149-017, 1986.11.01)

CHAPTER 2 The Realms of True Love

Section 1. Grandparents' Love

1 The Korean family system is principled. The lineage and history are like that. Three generations live together in one family: grandmother, grandfather, mother, father and I. The Fall meant that God never had a chance to love His grandchildren. Adam never had a chance to love his own children truly. In more and more American families, you cannot go to your own children's homes freely. You cannot see your grandchildren whenever you like. You cannot go to your children's homes without calling them first. Where on earth did this tradition come from? If you look, you'll see how miserable they all are. Grandparents love their grandchildren more than the children's own parents do. Yet God never had a chance to love His grandchildren. A grandfather is like a heavenly ambassador. He is the representative of God. My grandfather is God's ambassador, my father and mother represent the king and queen of the world, and I am the future king of the heavenly nation and the world. This is what we in the Unification Church call the three great kingships. (295-272, 1998.09.08)

Grandparents' love for their grandchildren

2 If you want to make a good family, then help the parents, the children and the grandchildren unite in heart. No matter what complicated problems occur in that

family, the parents' love for their children and the grandparents' love for the grandchildren will not change. You have to set up this absolute standard, go beyond a fragmented personal view of life and beyond the environment, and adopt a four-directional perspective. (24-137, 1969.07.20)

3 A grandfather and grandmother need to have an affectionate relationship with their grandchildren. Only this will start the vertical line of love. Also, the grandchildren must become one with their grandfather and grandmother. Since the grandfather and grandmother are in the position of God, they should be attended like God. Otherwise the axis of love will not be set in place. Horizontal love arises after this is established. Horizontal love reaches out in four directions, but vertical love moves in only one direction. What is horizontal can move east, west, north and south, throughout 360 degrees. What is vertical comes down from one point alone and cannot be divided up. (298-308, 1999.01.17)

4 There is no fundamental difference between the loving hearts of a grandfather and grandmother, those of a father and mother or those of a son and daughter. It is the same love. If the grandchildren barge into their grandfather and grandmother's room, the grandparents are happy; and even if the father and mother barge into their room, the grandparents are happy. Because there is such a principle, grandparents love their grandchildren even more than they love their children. So as the grandchildren grow up, they prefer their grandparents raising them to their parents raising them. The logic, principle and formula lead to this. A family based on the ideal of the four-position foundation is a unified realm of rounded, balanced love. The unified world is found within the ideal family. (253-163, 1994.01.23)

5 In the presence of true love, even God can kneel down and fool around. A grandfather will happily become a horse for his grandchild to ride. Even if the child grabs his hair and tries to climb onto his back, the grandfather will say, "Get on! Get on!" Heaven and earth become earth and heaven, father and mother become mother and father, father and son become son and father; this is all fine. In this way, love flows down from above and up from below; all is in harmony. So if you have true love, you can buy everything in the heavenly nation. (210-020, 1990.11.30)

6 God is not someone to fear. He is the one closest to us. If you meet God, even if you ride on His back and pull His hair, He will enjoy it. It is as when a beloved grandson grabs his grandfather's hair and climbs on his back; the grandfather enjoys this. God is our Parent, is He not? When you know this, He is not someone to fear. He is the one closest to me. God is closer than a parent, closer than a

husband, closer than a son. When I come to know God as the one who is closest and most precious to me and who will live with me forever, then everything goes well. (201-307, 1990.04.29)

7 When a grandfather meets his grandson, it is the happiest time. Old people's forgetfulness is designed to enable them to become friends with little children. That makes their loving heart bigger and more beautiful. Forgetting extraneous things, they raise their grandchildren with that loving heart. This is not a bad thing. It is in tune with the heavenly world and is part of God's process of creation. Forgetfulness has a downside, but those who are forgetful have a stronger desire to see those they love. Living like this before going to the spirit world means you go to a higher place. This is God's love. (260-119, 1994.04.28)

Forgetfulness is natural in the elderly

8 You should not ignore your mother and father when they become forgetful. You should not scorn your forgetful mother and father, who are to go to the heavenly world without remembering all the extraneous details of their life on earth. Their original heart right now is to build a bridge and construct a road for their descendants to follow. Parents represent God. Our first ancestor is God. We have to attend four generations of ancestors on earth: our great-great-grandparents, great-grandparents, grandparents and parents. If you attend these ancestors more than you do your own spouse and children, your family will prosper for tens of thousands of years. (200-135, 1990.02.24)

9 People are born through love and become the substance of love; they have to begin in love and end in love. They meet the one they love and have children, love those children, become a child again themselves and then go to the spirit world. Forgetfulness is not a bad thing. We should not view it as a bad thing. When parents become old, it is a good time for the children to give back, without reserve, based on their obligation to their parents for having raised them. (144-240, 1986.04.25)

10 A grandfather and grandmother wish to love their grandchildren more than they do their own children. When they raised their own children, they were too busy and had no spare time to love them, but this is not the case when they become a grandfather and grandmother. They are preparing to go to the spirit world. They become forgetful in order to become friends with children. They themselves return to being pure and childlike. They become pure and childlike, forgetting father and mother and brothers and sisters. (263-062, 1994.10.09)

11 When you grow old, you have to become friends with babies. Your grandchildren become your friends. You have to return to the kingdom of heaven as a pure person with no desires. Children naturally grow, but grandmothers and grandfathers are slowly closing down, day by day. They came from zero and return to zero. That means returning to the origin. Since we begin life without character, pride or desire, we have to return to that place in order to connect to Heaven. In the same way that parents raise children, the family and the country have to take care of the grandparents and help them return to the heavenly world. (278-253, 1996.05.26)

12 Why do the elderly become forgetful? It is because they have to move from the visible world to the invisible world. To prepare to cross that barrier, they become forgetful. They become simple. As a baby is born to meet a flat plane at high noon, the elderly become like newborn babies to meet the three-dimensional God. That means they move from the flat world to the three-dimensional world. When they die, they are reborn with concrete hope. Man and woman unite and advance toward the three-dimensional world. Then they walk into the spirit world. Representing the dual characteristics, they march toward the high noon of love centered on God, the multi-dimensional subject partner with dual characteristics. From there they embark on a new time of youth. (123-216, 1983.01.02)

13 When love is your center, the gap between the spirit world and physical world breaks down and you are liberated from the fear of death. Death is not a fearful thing. You know where you are going. This is why most of the elderly people who are forgetful become more and more interested in the spirit world. They know in advance, "Yes, I will have to go sometime soon. It's time to prepare." This means they forget everything on earth, arrange everything neatly and cleanly and then go. Please do not look down on those who are forgetful. Neglecting the present gives people time to correct everything in their past and clean up the sins of their ancestors. (196-270, 1990.01.02)

14 When you become sixty and then seventy, your spiritual awareness develops. This is so you can prepare to go to the spirit world. This is why you don't remember practical things and become forgetful. Throughout our life, what we most enjoy, remember and store in our consciousness is loving and eating. Therefore elderly grandfathers and grandmothers are fond of looking for things to eat, and when they miss people, they cry. This is human instinct. Life is sustained by eating. The paramount value of life and love is revealed by the fact that the elderly miss those they love and miss eating certain foods. This is inevitable. It is instinctive desire, perfectly in accord with the principle of creation. (258-032, 1994.03.16)

Section 2. Parents' Love

1 Children are the substantial manifestation of their parents' love and investment. They are an extension of their parents' life and the embodiment of their parents' ideals. Those who have given birth to children and loved them know this. They say to their beloved children, "You are the embodiment of my love, the extension of my life and the realization of my ideals. You are a second me." Because children are born on the basis of the parents' love, life and ideals, the more the parents see their children, the more they find them lovable, the more vibrant their lives become and the more they discover in their children their ideal object partners. (69-079, 1973.10.20)

Unchanging parental love

2 The love of a father and mother is vertical. It is the model of love and the basis for tradition. It is vertical love, and that which is vertical is unchanging. Because conjugal love involves the connection of vertical love to the horizontal plane, divorce is possible, but severing the parent-child relationship is impossible. This is heavenly law, and it is so because it is vertical love. That which is horizontal has four directions and can move throughout 360 degrees, but that which is vertical occupies only one point. It cannot be moved. (168-281, 1987.09.27)

3 The most precious love of all is parental love. This is because true love travels by the most direct route. Parental love is the vertical expression of true love. Vertical love occupies only one point and cannot be divided. If you change that position, you are turning heaven and earth upside down. No matter how capable you are, no matter how skillful you are, if you shift the position of vertical love, you make heaven and earth grow dark; you turn it into hell. Since love travels along the shortest route, it intersects the horizontal plane at a perpendicular angle. You cannot damage this love; you can't put it aside. It is only one. It is absolute. Because the parent-child relationship is vertical and perpendicular, no power can sever it. (212-019, 1991.01.01)

4 "Parents are unique, unchanging and eternal. Who your parents are cannot change. Because of this, parental love is unaffected by social or political revolutions. No matter how many of those come and go, parental love is not affected; it lasts forever. Parents, as subject partners of love, need their object partners absolutely. They need them uniquely, "unchangingly and eternally. (74-019, 1974.11.10)"

5 A mother and father do not keep accounts of their sacrifices for their children, how much they worked at night to feed them and send them to school. They don't

calculate their investment or expect a return, saying, "I have spent this amount on you; in ten years it will be worth this much, including interest." Instead they invest everything without keeping track of it and forget what they have invested. The principle of creation tells us that only in sacrifice can you find true love. This is why parents are good. Parental love is the best thing. People without parents are called orphans. Being an orphan is very sad. An orphan has no roots and so cannot set his or her direction in place. (242-050, 1992.12.27)

6 When parents raise their children, specifically, while a mother feeds her baby, she does not say, "Later, when you understand things, you'd better remember that I am the one who raised you." A parent like that would not be normal. If you want to be that way, I suggest you raise a cow and ask it to help you with your work. No parent would request of his or her child, "I have loved you this much, so you have to repay me more than that amount." You sacrifice for a person you love. You give and give and still feel it is not enough; you want to give and give and keep on giving more. This way of love continuously brings us to feel ultimate value and provides constant hope for the future. (60-128, 1972.08.13)

7 Even in this fallen world, a mother who loves her children invests in them and then repeatedly forgets how much she has given; she serves and sacrifices for their sake, hoping they will do well. Even though her child fails to attain success, until her dying moment she wants to continue to invest. This is the love of a mother. That is how it is even in this fallen world. When children come to know their mother was like this, they will go to her grave and tearfully ask her to forgive their unfilial behavior. Even though it is too late, they will repent, resolving to turn around 180 degrees and fulfill their duty to her. This filial piety is not a way of clever strategies or methods. This is the way of love, of truly sacrificing and offering one's flesh and blood. (216-342, 1991.04.25)

8 Parents' love toward their children does not appear just on the basis of routine, everyday interactions. It is a love that springs from the very marrow of the parents' bones. The parents have a heart of love that, beyond their own will, they can never forget or cut off. Therefore parents love their children as long as they live. When parents feel that their lives are connected with their children, a loving heart toward their children naturally springs up. Parents don't make a conscious choice in saying, "I am going to love that child because he is my son," as if they could do otherwise. They share heart and connection. The life force that connects them guarantees they cannot help loving their children. (32-015, 1970.06.14)

9 What is true love? This is love for the sake of others. It gives and gives for a thousand years and wants to forget how much it has given. It does not remember. In the world of love, output is greater than input. Parents will say to their son when he leaves the house, "Son, watch for cars when you cross the road today," even if he is seventy. Even at ninety years of age, parents will never tire of this; they will continue to say it every day, even to eternity. This is love. Knowing that parental love is like this even in our fallen world, do you think you would get tired of loving when you are in the original world of God's love? This is the first step in establishing our life's realm as God's true object partner. When we come to know that God's love is eternal and unchanging, from our experience with human love we can deduce the logic of eternal life. We conclude that by centering on true love, we live for eternity. (143-280, 1986.03.20)

10 In loving their children, parents do not announce, "Parents should be like this," and love their children according to certain theories. Parents do not assert themselves but deny themselves. That is, they love their children without regard for position. In other words, parents do not love their children based upon their authority as parents, and always and only from this imposing position. Instead they take a higher stance by loving their children without a bit of concern for their status of authority. This is the heart with which parents love their children. (059-298, 1972.07.30)

11 In the parent-child relationship, a baby pushes his way to his mother's breast to nurse. Would this be possible without love? No, it would not. A mother feels a mother's love toward her baby. When she holds her baby, rather than identifying her happiness with herself, she feels as if heaven and earth have entered a state of peace, and in that holistic atmosphere, goodness is growing. No matter how hard the baby pushes its way to its mother's breast, an embracing heart wells up within her. She forgives the baby's pushing and says, "Go ahead, little one!" This is because parents love their children immeasurably. (49-053, 1971.10.03)

Parental love is the paradigm of true love

12 There is no limit to the love parents feel for their children. In one sense a baby is like an enemy to the mother. The infant is an enemy who takes a siphon and sucks out its mother's flesh and blood. However, through her baby a woman gains new hope as a mother and finds new stimulus in her husband. In that place there is an unspoken understanding. That place is not a result of regulations. It is connected to absolute love. So, by the power of true love, parents have the strongest standard of love, love that is absolute, not for them, but for God and for the whole. So you

pledge to God that you will serve for the sake of the whole. If you are not standing on that standard, your speaking and listening and looking and promising count for nothing; all those things can change at any time. (49-053, 1971.10.03)

13 Parents cannot discard their own children. They are the community of love. It is because the children are the fruit of love. Everything bears fruit. Everything seeks fruit. There is nothing that can deny fruit. No tree will deny its own fruit. Fruit sustains eternity. The parents' fruit draws all the elements of love from a father and mother. It mobilizes everything. That is why when they look at it they say it's good. Within me there is an eternal me, there is a history of me, and there is a developing me. Love in the present and future is connected in me. There is no principle allowing attacks on the love between parents and children. It cannot be struck. The universe naturally protects it. The law of the universe does not permit an attack on the place where loving parents embrace their loving children; rather, it gives natural protection. (130-152, 1984.01.08)

14 To satisfy a baby's hunger, its mother's breasts swell with milk. When the milk accumulates, the breasts begin to hurt and the mother's entire body feels pressure. The feeling of a mother as she embraces and breastfeeds her child is beyond expression. When the swollen breasts empty, the mother feels relieved and happy. Only mothers can understand this feeling. Moreover, as a mother watches her baby nurse at her breast and caresses it, love springs up in her heart. At that time, joy and sadness intertwine in a mother's heart in a way that only a mother can comprehend. (187-100, 1989.01.06)

15 Original love is the love that enables parents to sacrifice their life for their children. Their love goes beyond their own life. The origin of the universe was not for the sake of life. It was created for the sake of love, and therefore love comes first. Thus it is life that appears from love, not love that appears from life. Thus, genuine love can sacrifice life and go beyond life. This is the love of Heaven, a love that can connect with the universe. In the universe, parents who sacrifice their life for their children are unmatched true parents. (132-153, 1984.05.31)

16 We can observe that parents who have raised many children have hearts that are wide, deep and large. People who have raised many children cannot strike even their enemies. It is because they stand on a mysterious, broad foundation and live according to that broad and expansive law. (51-318, 1971.12.05)

17 When a baby is born, it follows the electric current of love and automatically seeks out its mother's nipple. Whether its mother is ugly or beautiful by worldly

standards doesn't matter. This is truly an image of supreme harmony and holiness. People are born in love and grow up by receiving love. Each of us is the fruit of our parents' love. We are the visible, real fruit of our mother and father's love. Because I am the fruit of my parents' love, they cannot help but love me. Through this fruit, infinite love will bear fruit yet again. This is the path whereby we can connect to individual love, family love, tribal love, national love, global love, universal love and even to the fundamental love of God. (298-305, 1999.01.17)

18 The love between parents and children comes from the parents. We receive our parents' love from the moment of birth. As long as our parents are alive, we receive our parents' love no matter what age we reach. This is true when we are children, through our youth, and into the prime of our life. We receive our parents' love and grow up, and it is a matter of course that each of us then engages in the horizontal love between husband and wife. In order for the love of a husband and wife to continue, they must have children. If a husband and wife have no children, they don't know love in its fullness. We can feel true love only when there is an object partner to love. Brothers and sisters grow up not understanding what parental love is, but when they reach maturity, marry and have children, they begin to understand parental love. In other words, we come to know parental love only when we experience the cycle that is started by our parents and is completed when we become parents ourselves. Therefore we can say that only after we have children do we become truly mature people. (066-119, 1973.04.18)

19 Children, after becoming mature and experiencing conjugal love, attain the power to create, like God. God gave us a loving heart with which to love our children so we could experience His happiness when He created human beings as His children. God poured the best of everything into us. God created human beings with the expectation that we would live in the Garden of Eden, in happiness and contentment, one with His eternal love. In this way the original state meant for humankind was for all people to live happily as the eternal object partners of the absolute God. Centered on that love, it is impossible to be separated from Him. (52-321, 1972.02.03)

Section 3. The Love of Husband and Wife

1 Sacrifice goes hand in hand with love. The way of love flows downward, making sacrifices. This makes everything smooth. Without sacrifice, everything is thrown out of balance. It is the same for what we call conjugal love, which is the working of the heart that provides balance in the family. If you move alone and independently, problems arise. But as love grows bigger, it spills over to fill even the lowest places.

Thus even people living in a slum can nurture the dream of love. They can say, "Since we came here out of our search for love, happiness is right here," and they will want to settle and live there. (541-332, 2006.10.10)

Through conjugal love we experience God's love

2 You need to go through the love of husband and wife in order to establish the four-position foundation. Only then can you experience the heart of children and the heart of parents. Man is the male or yang image of God, and woman is the female or yin image of God. A married couple is like heaven and earth wrapped up together in a cloth. Therefore they can feel the heart of God's ideal love. The four-position foundation is the cornerstone of the kingdom of heaven on earth and in heaven. One individual cannot establish the kingdom of heaven by him or herself. (13-067, 1963.10.17)

3 The place where a husband and wife unite in conjugal love is where they can experience the love of God, who created Adam and Eve and all the things of creation. Since in this place they become perfect representative children, brothers and sisters, husband and wife, and parents, they stand in the position of second creators, centered on the mind and body, in the position of God, the first Creator. Because that place is filled with the love of children, of brothers and sisters, of husband and wife, and of parents, they stand in the position of both second creator and object partner. God gave them children so they could feel His joy of creation. Children are the princes and princesses of the kingdom of heaven. (239-240, 1992.11.25)

4 God's love, which is parental love, is vertical, and the love of a man and a woman is horizontal. The man and woman's task is to engraft their horizontal love into the vertical love. That is how the two can meet. The two loves can join nowhere but at a ninety-degree angle. A love that does not fit this, a love that does not meet the vertical standard, will end up drifting around. Such love will eventually perish. When horizontal love connects to vertical love at an exact ninety-degree angle, energy is produced that can spread that love's influence in all directions. Hence when you enter the realm of love where the vertical and horizontal are aligned, you will be able to rule the whole universe through love. You will have a relationship with the whole universe. There you will not want for knowledge, power, money or even life. Life also exists eternally within love. (136-204, 1985.12.29)

5 You have to know the value of human life. A husband is the representative of God; a wife is also the representative of God. A mother and a father, and each of

you also, are God's representatives. A husband represents four generational positions: grandfather, father, husband and son. An heir and heiress couple then appears, representing these four loves. That is why conjugal love is so precious. When conjugal love breaks down, all human love—grandparents' love, parents' love and sibling love—is shattered and disperses. This is natural because people live to serve God in this universe. Starting from each person, the love of grandparents, parents and siblings begins to bud. Upon the foundation of thousands of years of life connections through lineage and through horizontal multiplication, there emerges a tribe based on the families, a people based on the tribes, a nation based on the peoples, a world, and then the kingdom of heaven. (224-244, 1991.11.24)

6 After you marry, you cannot behave just as you like. You should live in such a way that you can receive the love of God. Human beings are born as a man or a woman for the sake of love. The husband and wife are to become one through love. What happens when two beings, separated according to the dual characteristics of God, come together in a perfect union? They receive the love of God. In order to receive God's love, a woman unites with a man and a man unites with a woman. Otherwise there is no way to encounter God's love. Only through God's love can you stand in the same place He stands. You are able to stand next to God. Why did God request this degree of love from Adam and Eve? It is because only based on this degree of love can people unite as one with God. Conjugal love is meant to connect with God's love. When you receive God's love, you can stand in the same place as He. In the presence of the concept that is called conjugal love, a man and woman stand firmly in the same position. In love, two become one. They cannot depart from each other. They have collective responsibility always. (144-133, 1986.04.12)

7 The question is whether a man and woman are united in mind and body. As much as the whole cosmos likes this perfect unity, it can occur only on the foundation of true love. As a man or as a woman, the question is whether or not you stand in that position of perfect oneness. Today this is the problem that philosophy and religion have to solve. We have not realized that a man absolutely needs a wife and a woman absolutely needs a husband. For a man, the being of greatest value is his wife; for a woman, the being of greatest value is her husband. Before meeting God, a man needs his wife and a woman needs her husband. The unity in flesh, the oneness of husband and wife, is based on love. (247-093, 1993.04.25)

8 Love is the coming together of east, west, north and south as one sphere. It is also the coming together of heaven and earth. This is for the purpose of possessing the universe. What is the purpose of marriage? Its purpose is also to possess the universe. It is to possess God. A husband represents the east and high places; a wife

represents the west and deep places. When these two unite in love, they can possess heaven and earth. They can possess God and the universe. (225-046, 1992.01.01)

9 A family whose husband and wife love God and humankind, and unite in an explosion of love for one another, enraptures God and the universe. Such love cannot but be oriented toward God and humankind. The root of this love lies not within the husband and wife themselves. God is the source of this love. (35-240, 1970.10.19)

10 When we speak of man and woman, we are speaking of the horizontal plane. When we adopt a vertical point of view, we speak of above and below. Because all ideal forms are drawn based on the realm of the object partner, all words are spoken for the sake of the object partner. When we speak of human beings, there are men and women. What unites men and women? Keep in mind: each makes up half of the human world. The common denominator among all groups of people, no matter how large, is that they are composed of men and women. In each there will be bad men and bad women as well as good, but still we can divide the membership of groups composed of any kinds of people into two: men and women. The force that drives these two to unite is love, not money, knowledge or power. (198-071, 1990.01.21)

11 When a man and a woman love each other, a variety of things happen. When you know the way to God, when you really taste God's love, you realize that nothing on earth can compare with it. No suffering or sorrow can defeat one who has tasted that love. Please know this and attend God as our Father. Become sons and daughters who resemble God. Money and power absolutely do not transform us into sons and daughters of God. One who has tasted God's love is called to live according to divine law, uphold God's dignity and authority and protect His glory. God's sons and daughters will never lead trivial, insignificant lives. (39-240, 1971.01.15)

12 Loving one another as brothers and sisters sets up the foundation for conjugal love. This path restores three types of love that God had no opportunity to experience: sibling love, conjugal love and children's love. When you harmonize these three types of love in your family, you can give and receive God's love. Within the family we strive to realize God's ideal of creation. This is the cosmos-centered thought of the Unification Church. (35-243, 1970.10.19)

13 On the way of restoration, as we couples work for the sake of the original world, we should always feel the heart and ideal that God felt at the time of the Creation. Consumed with that feeling, we should risk our lives as we proceed along this path with a heart of gratitude, willing only one thing. From now on, this is the course by which blessed families will realize the purpose of creation. It may cause us suffering, but that is not the intention. God asks us to go this way so we may receive the even more bountiful blessings He has stored up for us. To know this evokes immense gratitude. We couples who were brought together through heart and love are called to build with that love. We are to build a family that goes beyond the realm of daily life. That family should go beyond life itself and be one with God's purpose. Otherwise we cannot return to God's dwelling place, the kingdom of heaven. This is the purpose of creation, so we have to move toward making such families. (35-180, 1970.10.13)

Inseparable loving couples

14 Man was born for woman; woman was born for man. A woman keeps a man's most precious treasure; a man keeps a woman's most precious treasure. They exchange these treasures with each other. Because a man entrusted his treasure to the woman, he cannot separate from her. Because a woman entrusted her treasure to the man, she cannot separate from him. This is the linkage of love. Therefore a woman is the owner of a man's love, and a man is the owner of a woman's love. Throughout history, men and women have been unfaithful to each other. Furtively they steal from the owner, and now the whole world is corrupt and in decline. The woman has the key to the man's love, and the man has the key to the woman's love. (142-039, 1986.03.03)

15 The love I value above my life is not my own; it belongs to my partner. That's why a man's wife is the owner of what he possesses, and a woman's husband is the owner of what she possesses. We face each other as owners. However, husbands play around, as if what they possess is their own; they wander about, cheating. This has destroyed everything. Wives are just as bad. Your reproductive organ is not yours. It has one owner, and that is not you. We are talking about ownership based on love, love that makes all the cells of your body come alive. A husband desires that his wife own him with this love, and a wife desires that her husband own her with this love. (140-290, 1986.02.14)

16 Nothing a wife has is her own. That which is horizontal belongs to her baby; that which is vertical belongs to her husband. It is easy for a wife to think, "I have this, so it's mine." What a woman has, she does not need for herself. The one who needs

what she has is a man. What a man has, he doesn't need for himself. The one who needs what he has is a woman. God switched the ownership between husband and wife. They have convex and concave aspects; this was the only way to bring about husband-wife unity. There is no other way to create that oneness. When God created the reproductive organs, He said, "These are the most precious things in heaven and earth." If a brave and ambitious man gets rid of everything but keeps what he wants most for himself, and if a woman keeps what she wants most for herself, there is no stimulation. You feel stimulation due to your object partner. So what a woman possesses is owned by a man, her husband, and what a man possesses is owned by a woman, his wife. If they treat these as their own, the great and divine law of heaven and earth will be violated. (258-027, 1994.03.16)

17 If a man insisted on absolute ownership over his reproductive organ, and a woman did the same with hers, both would remain exactly where they are without moving for all eternity. This is not right. In order to have the other come to my side, and for me to go to the other's side, ownership should be exchanged. Marital love is this kind of action. The value of the action of giving and receiving appears only when the ownership of the reproductive organs has been exchanged through marriage. When a wife faces her husband, is her reproductive organ her own? The owner of the wife's organ of love is her husband. The owner of a husband's organ of love is his wife. Since we haven't realized this until now, the world became licentious. This law is absolute. This is why marital love is great, because in it, ownership is exchanged absolutely. (140-245, 1986.02.12)

18 What is the difference between a man and a woman? First, their bodies, including their reproductive organs, are different. With that in mind, who absolutely needs the male reproductive organ? And who needs the female reproductive organ? The male reproductive organ exists for a woman, and that of the female exists for a man. One is convex and the other concave: why are they made like that? Why were they not both made pointed, or both made flat? Why were they made different? It is because everything exists for the sake of another. This is why the woman should absolutely value her husband's organ, and the man should absolutely value his wife's organ. We have not recognized that, on this basis, the woman's reproductive organ absolutely belongs to her husband, and the man's reproductive organ absolutely belongs to his wife. (299-120, 1999.02.07)

19 When you listen to a person's voice, you can tell what gender that person is. Whose voices are higher, men's or women's? Women's voices are higher. Why is it that women's voices are pitched higher than men's, even though women have less physical strength than men? In terms of heart and affection, women are higher

while men are broader. Men love broadly. Women are higher, focusing on love for their husband and children, but men have a broader heart of love for their tribe and country. This is why we learn from our mother how to love our sons and daughters and our family, and from our father how to love the world. That's how it is. Weaving these characteristics of love together creates a sphere of harmony. (129-055, 1983.10.01)

20 Nowadays people tend to be self-centered, thinking, "As long as I'm fine, everything is okay." But now is the time to discard egoism and share our love with everyone around us. The family is the place for this. A happy family is one in which the husband comes home after work, discusses with his wife everything that happened to him during the day, and plans new projects together with her. A happy family is one that strives together to discover new things. When parents set such an example, the children want to contribute too; they will participate gladly in making such a family. (29-114, 1970.02.25)

21 The place of conjugal love is the flower of the whole universe. A wife is a composite of all people in the museum of human history. She is the flower of her entire lineage. God is present on her wedding night. After waiting throughout history, finally God can settle in the joyful place of a man and woman's love. How awesome is this place! She must think, "I have the role to open the way, to reconnect the broken path and to explode in love as a perfect minus, where this has never been done before." From here, the bright sun of love rises above heaven and earth. When a man enters his wife's room, he should do so as the embodiment of love and of the ideal. (179-091, 1988.07.22)

22 A life with love as its center resolves everything. Even the tiger-like eyes of a greedy old man, when he is in love, will take on the shape of the moon in a painting, and his frozen mouth will break into a smile. Love can completely thaw out things that have been frozen— or freeze something that has melted. Love has the capacity to encompass extremes and go still further. If you look at the Chinese character ho (好), meaning "good," it combines characters for a female person and a male person. When a husband and wife fight, there seems to be no way to reconcile them, so what's good about that? Yet if the two of them are in love, even after fighting ten times they can come together again. That's the enormous power of love. There is a saying that a fight between a husband and wife is like cutting water with a knife. When you cut water with a knife, it doesn't leave a trace. Likewise, even after fighting, a couple can put their foreheads together and giggle, and everything is settled. Only with love can peace come. (127-245, 1983.05.15)

The holy of holies and the original palace of love

23 The way of love means looking for the place that is God's holy of holies. The Tabernacle was not the ultimate holy of holies. Fallen people built that Tabernacle. Of greater value than the Tabernacle is the place where God's original love before the Fall can be found. The reproductive organs of men and women are the real holy of holies. If you misuse them, you will be struck by lightning. Just as God struck and killed any Israelite who violated the Holy of Holies, if we misuse our holy of holies we will bring ruin to heaven and earth. Husband and wife have to be the high priests responsible to protect love. A couple becomes the high priests who protect love. They are the high priests who pass God's love on to the next generation. (144-227, 1986.04.24)

24 The reproductive organs of men and women are the treasure store of the heavenly nation's royal palace. Even God cannot do whatever He wants with them. The owner of a man's reproductive organ is a woman, his wife; the owner of a woman's reproductive organ is a man, her husband. Because God is the King of wisdom, in marriage He exchanges their ownership. Since these are the most precious treasures, to own them, a husband and wife must treat one another as the most precious beings. They must treat each other as more valuable than their own life, more valuable than their own children. (194-346, 1989.10.30)

25 Both men and women have a place that is the holy of holies. This place cannot be bought with money. You can say, "Surely it is true, I cannot buy love for all of heaven and earth." This is because love is the holy of holies. The holy of holies is the place that is connected with the center of the universe, and whoever is in this place can enjoy the privilege of becoming the owner of everything. Everything is in the holy of holies. It owns everything. Which is more precious, life or love? This has not been defined in human history. Why is love precious? No matter how much life there is, neither a man's life nor a woman's life can take the place of love. Life itself has no connection to the holy of holies. Only in love can we connect with that place. Therefore love is more precious than life. (132-072, 1984.05.20)

26 Through marriage and the meeting of their reproductive organs, two half beings become complete. Man becomes complete through woman's love. Woman becomes complete through man's love. Man perfects woman, woman perfects man. They become one through true love. In that place, two lives come together as one, with love at the center. That place is the crucible where man's blood and woman's blood become one. From this place come sons and daughters. This place is more precious than your sons and daughters, your spouse and even God. It is a

place that is more precious than your children, your spouse and even your parents. If the reproductive organs did not exist, parents, husbands and wives, and sons and daughters would be of no value. Since this place is that precious, the treasure of treasures, it is kept under lock and key, hidden from public view for an entire lifetime. Furthermore, the wife owns the key that can unlock a man's reproductive organ, and the husband owns the key to hers. (280-200, 1997.01.01)

27 The reproductive organs, with which a man and woman make love, are the original palace of love, the original palace of life and the original palace of lineage. Your grandfather and grandmother live holding on to this palace; your mother and father live holding on to it; your couple lives holding on to it; and your sons and daughters to come in the future also will live holding on to it. Then why have we turned this into something base and vulgar? The name of this original palace is actually something that is very holy. We must uphold it with holiness. It is because of it that eternal love is connected, and from it that eternal life and eternal lineage appear. It is the most precious thing. That is why whoever violates this will not be welcome in the world of life, the world of love and the record of history. (210-101, 1990.12.01)

28 Because of the Fall, we have misperceived, mistreated and abused the word "love" to this day. In truth, love is the original, holy palace. The original place of love is the holy palace, the most precious place. The palace door cannot be opened just as you please. Only when you become the king and queen of love can you open that palace door. This is the original tradition of love for all people. The king and queen who have True Parents can open that palace door. From that palace, that original palace, God's beloved sons and daughters are born. (128-326, 1983.10.02)

29 Your organ of love is more important than your brain. The origin of true love is not in your brain. The origin of true lineage is not in your brain. Where is that origin? It is in the reproductive organ. Everything is in the reproductive organ. In there is life, in there is love and in there is lineage. It is the original palace of love. We find also the root of life and of lineage residing there. This is the most precious place, not only in the human body but also in the world and throughout history. Without it, the multiplication of humankind would be impossible. (203-105, 1990.06.17)

30 In the Old Testament we find terms such as "holy place" and "holy of holies." The holy place symbolizes a person, and the holy of holies symbolizes the house of love, the house in which you can love. Every person has his or her own holy place and holy of holies. In other words, the holy place is a house where you can attend

God. As for the holy of holies, since only God has the privileged dominion of love over it, it is the place where you come into relationship with God. The holy of holies is the place where you connect to Heaven. It is where you create a direct relationship with God. If you wonder where that place is, it is your reproductive organ. No one can touch this. There are surely not two high priests serving the holy of holies. There is only one. Long ago, the one who had the key to Eve's holy of holies was Adam, and the one who had the key to Adam's holy of holies was Eve. (132-246, 1984.06.20)

31 Love begins with investment. True love begins with the act of giving. This is a universal principle. Because the universe moves according to this law and its rules have this content, if you act only to receive, that is a betrayal of the universe. Heavenly fortune will repel that. When you have a mutual relationship between subject and object partners, the universe protects you and you grow until you meet your object partner. When you grow up, you have to meet your partner. If you cannot do this, you have no way to go. The heart of a man wanting to marry a woman and of a woman wanting to marry a man comes from the universal force. (219-186, 1991.08.29)

32 When you have a mutual relationship between subject and object partners, the universe protects you. But if you have no such relationship based on love, the repelling force of the universe will cause you to feel pain and regret. Why do you feel pain when you are sick? When a husband or wife passes away, why does the other feel sorrow? In both cases, the universal force makes you feel that way; it is a function of the universal force. This force protects subject and object partners. If the two come into conflict, the universal force repels them. Without a subject and object partnership, new things cannot arise. Therefore as long as you preserve your relationship as subject and object partners, the balancing force of the universe will protect both of you as its object partners. If something is missing, the universal force will repel you, and your suffering will be so great that you will cry, "I want to die!" (219-186, 1991.08.29)

33 The infinitely vast universe is a place in which subject and object partners share a common purpose. It has the power to protect itself as it protects and nurtures entities comprised of subject and object partners. If subject and object partners do not unite, however, the universe repels them. This is how it is possible for existence to continue forever. This supportive energy is called attraction, and the opposing energy is called repulsion. They also can be called acceptance and rejection. (89-224, 1976.11.27)

34 When your mind and body are united, you receive the protection of the universal force and you feel happy, but when your mind and body are not united, you encounter opposition from this same force and you feel pain. By this principle, disease causes pain. When subject and object partners are out of balance in your body, the universal protective force is lost and as a result you feel pain. A doctor prescribes medicine to stimulate harmonious interaction between subject and object partners. As it is with the physical body, so it is for the individual and for the family. (89-225, 1976.11.27)

35 Once a couple is married, they do not like interference from others. After marriage, when the subject and object partners are united, they feel happy and content under the protection of the universal force. At that time, if a second man or woman interferes, it presents a danger that the couple's unified energy will be disturbed. So there is a repulsion. The protective energy accelerates the perfection of the couple so they can live eternally. In a similar way, electricity functions smoothly when plus and minus interact, but if plus and plus come into proximity, or minus and minus, there is a repulsion. All existing beings function in this way. By the same law, a good relationship between subject and object partners brings stability and joy. (89-225, 1976.11.27)

36 Why do we feel sad when our father or mother passes away? It is because the universal force they embodied is swept away. We should go to the spirit world only after experiencing the love of our mother and father, love as parents for our children, and our love as a child for our parents. Only then does resonance occur through 360 degrees. When a woman's husband dies, she experiences a big void in a part of her life. The fortune of heaven and earth protects that which beats in accord with its rhythm. But when her husband dies, that rhythm is lost. All the force of heaven that he embodied is swept away. This sweeping away is experienced as pain. When you suffer from illness, it is similar. When you lack something, the force that expelled it from the protective realm of the universe and heavenly fortune causes you pain. The pain is the result of such an expulsion. Because it alerts us to protect the balance, this pain supports continuity. (202-088, 1990.05.06)

The principles of absolute sex and education for true love

37 The thing that is absolutely necessary for a man is not convex. For him, convex repels. There is no happiness there. That which is absolutely convex needs what is absolutely concave. When absolute convex meets absolute concave, God is there, and when it is not like that, God leaves. The fact that it is not like that means that Satan's lineage still remains. Even though 98 percent may be done, if so much as a

shadow of Satan's lineage remains, God cannot come down. God can find your family and become its Lord only when vertical and horizontal meet at a ninety-degree angle based on absolute sex, absolute partnership and absolute love. (331-077, 2000.08.29)

38 There is only one true love. The first love must be that which unites one husband and one wife. There absolutely must be only one true love. This is what absolute sex means. Absolute sex will eliminate the attraction of "free" sex. Do you think a woman's fluttering eyes belong to her? No, they belong to her husband. If she makes sidelong glances at another man, in her spirit self her eyes are rotting and her bones are dissolving. The universe does not countenance violations of this principle of one true love. It is incompatible with salvation. God will expel her. She can be restored only through tens of thousands of generations of descendants. (282-326, 1997.04.07)

39 We know the concept of fidelity. In Korea, who is the lady who represents fidelity? Her name is Chunhyang. Korea is the country of moral traditions that value fidelity. The model faithful wife is Chunhyang. The model daughter of filial piety is Shimchung. You ladies, you should be better than Chunhyang, better than Shimchung. Governor Byun asked Chunhyang to come to him, but she rejected him. Even at the risk of your life, you have to be able to do the same in such a situation. Since you are born for love, if you sacrifice your life to resist false love, in the end you will be revived in resplendent true love. (282-327, 1997.04.07)

40 In a woman's mind, the most elevated state and the deepest misery are both related to love. If women are like that, what about men? Sure, men are gruff and assertive, but who has a more loving heart, women or men? Men more than women tend to suffer from being lovesick. This is because men have embracing hearts. A woman's love goes in one direction at a time, but a man's love covers all four directions. As a man's love can scan in all directions, this can lead to many conflicts in love. (166-215, 1987.06.07)

41 It is not a question of virtue. Once a man is infatuated with a woman and becomes lovesick, he will be ready to sacrifice his money, knowledge and power. Even if he is lying on a bed of gold, he will lose it all with no thought to his dignity. He will just want to follow that woman. If God really enjoys true love, when someone appears as His object of true love, it's not a question of holiness; He too must follow that love. (168-174, 1987.09.20)

Academic study does not teach us love

42 People do not need to study in order to know how to love. When a man and woman marry, they don't need someone to teach them how to behave on their wedding night. In the world of insects there is no sex education, but they know very well what to do, and human beings are the lords of creation. There is no one who is incapable of conjugal love, so no education for that is necessary. If God had made men and women to need such education in order to love and become complete, then God would not be omnipotent. Without a need for sex education, you know the way of love. By practicing it, you obtain a qualification that can transcend heaven and earth, the whole world of creation. (266-231, 1995.01.01)

43 Did you learn how to love in your family? What kind of father would tell his child to learn how to love from him? Also, does a mother tell her child to learn how to love from her? Furthermore, did the parents learn from someone how to love their children? Did the bride and bridegroom learn from someone that they should love in a certain way? They were not taught it, but they know it well. This is something truly mysterious. (23-020, 1969.05.11)

44 Does someone instruct parents on how to love their children? You women gathered here, when your babies were born, did you have to be taught how to love them? Is there a school somewhere that teaches love? There is no such school, but everyone attains a perfect score in this. The more you feel your love is not enough, the closer you are to perfect love. That which is perfect does not need to be learned or improved. That which does not need adjustment is completed. That which is complete does not change, and that which does not change goes on for eternity. (38-228, 1971.01.08)

45 The meaning of love is vague. Love is difficult to understand through words. No matter how much you explain parental love to a person without parents, he or she will not be able to understand. No matter how much you explain conjugal love, people living alone cannot grasp it. Those with no experience of giving birth and raising children cannot enter the domain of parental love. (058-290, 1972.06.25)

46 People always need stimulation. Happiness does not come without stimulation; there has to be stimulation. Just as hunger makes each meal taste like something new, stimulation makes the love between husband and wife fresh. The more a husband and wife see each other, the more they should long to see each other even more, until they just want to be together all the time. In light of this, you need to research about yourself and about God. (23-057, 1969.05.11)

47 True love is attained through life experience and is understood through the spiritual senses. True love is not something that can be mastered through words, writings or general education. Its complete attainment comes only by living it. In their process of growing from infancy, Adam and Eve were supposed to reach perfection by experiencing and understanding in daily life, through their spiritual senses, the heart of true children, the heart of true brother and sister, the heart of true husband and wife, and the heart of true parents, step by step. When they experienced the whole of God's true love, then for the first time the world would have seen ideal people who had perfected the purpose of creation. (277-197, 1996.04.16)

Section 4. Children's Love

1 In the parent-child relationship, if the parents' love is the cause, the children are the fruit and result of love. The result and the cause do not begin separately but in the same place. The result and cause start from one place. What does it mean to say, "My parents' love is the cause and I have appeared as its result"? It means that "I" come as the result of my parents' love. Therefore in the parent-child relationship, the child is born with a value equal to the parent, because the cause and result are one in love. (127-013, 1983.05.01)

The original foundation of the universe

2 The parent-child relationship is based on blood ties. The concept of a father involves love and lineage. To be children of his direct lineage, you and he should be one body in love, connected through lineage. Blood creates life. It possesses the life that transmits the parents' traditions. And it is based on love. (142-267, 1986.03.13)

3 The original foundation of the universe is nothing other than the parent-child relationship. Joy blossoms from this relationship. If sorrow begins, there is no place that creates a greater sorrow. The joy with which children relate to their parents should be the emblematic joy of the world, and the joy with which parents relate to their children should be emblematic of what fulfills their desire and the desire of the world. Even if it means that parents have to lose everything due to some external problem, for them there is no place where they can live happily and with hope other than with their children. (62-018, 1972.09.10)

4 Sons and daughters are co-participants in parental love. From whence do sons and daughters come? They come from their parents' love. So in this world, sons and daughters come into existence by participating in their parents' love and uniting

with it. Where do I come from? I was born in a place where my parents' love blossomed frilly. Children are planted as seeds in a place of joy, a place where their mother and father, who were born as man and woman encapsulating the universe, made their love blossom. (83-162, 1976.02.08)

5 I am the one who participated in the fundamental root at the beginning of my parents' love; I am the one who appears as the result of my parents' love. Because cause and result start in the same place, our relationship cannot be severed. The source of parents' love, which is the cause, and of the love I have in my life, which is the result, are one. In this sense we can say that a parent and a child are one body, based on love. Without love we cannot talk about one body or oneness. Love is the cause. We receive our parents' love from the time we are in the womb. The love and all the attention of our parents focus on us from the moment our mother becomes pregnant with us through the essence of love. Why is that? It is because we are the fruit of love. So we are born in love and connected to life through love. When we grow up in love, and the time comes to meet our partner, we decide who our spouse will be. (127-014, 1983.05.01)

6 As participants in parental love and conjugal love, children are born with the highest authority. In other words, children emerge from that unchanging, unified love and share the nature of that love. This is why, no matter what they do, nothing can sever the parent-child relationship. Since children have the subject- nature of their parents' love and life, cutting off that relationship would mean the parents are denying their own existence. Parents are unable to deny the results of their love. This is why parents will sacrifice their lives for their children. This is very logical. (83-163, 1976.02.08)

Participants in parents' love

7 It is from our parents' love that we were born. We were born from the love of our mother and father. Before life and lineage comes love, so it is through love that our life and lineage are connected to our parents. Why is person- hood so precious? It is not just because the person has life, but also because the person participated in his or her parents' love. It is their parents who loved, but the person is the fruit of their love. The one who is born as both the beginning and the result is not the mother or father; it is a new person. That's why each person is precious. (140-234, 1986.02.12)

8 I am not only the one who combines the life of my mother and father, but I am a participant in my parents' love, as one body with them. Taking it further, I am one

with my parents' ideal. The ideal includes everything: peace, happiness and all else. To parents, the joy of living a successful life on earth pales in comparison to the joy of meeting their child who has been lost. To parents, children are the fulfillment of their highest ideal. (298-303, 1999.01.17)

9 My mother and father's lifelines are connected to me, their "love line" is connected to me and their "ideal line" is connected to me. No one can cut this off. Even God cannot cut this off, and the universe also cannot cut this off. To the contrary, all the power of the universe protects this. Thus wherever I go, my parents follow me. My parents always want to be with me, even in the spirit world. Thus it is the greatest sin if you dislike your parents accompanying you. This attitude is destructive of the entire universe. If you dislike the company of your parents, it means you are off track from the universal principle and are going the way of the Fall. Hence, thinking of and loving your parents as if they were your own body and carrying out your filial duty are of the highest value for human beings. That's why it is said, "Heaven's blessing comes to the harmonious family" (298-303, 1999.01.17)

10 People without children are said to be lonely. Our children enable us to experience deeply the heart of God, the subject partner who created the entire universe through love. Our children are born through us, through our motivation, but by having and loving them we come to realize, "Yes, this is how God loves people." Once you have your own children, without anyone teaching you, you realize the importance of filial piety toward your parents. (136-202, 1985.12.29)

11 You have to return the love your parents gave you. When parents are raising their children, they don't worry about their own hunger. If there is something to eat, they will hold their hungry stomach, keep a stiff upper lip and give that food to their children. By the nature of love, children will return such love to their parents. After the parents have gone the way of love, the children go the same way to comfort their parents. It begins with your heart to comfort your parents. Then your sons and daughters will become such sons and daughters to you. You need such sons and daughters in order for people of a good blood lineage to continue. You cannot become a filial child if you center your life on yourself and neglect your parents. (35-241, 1970.10.19)

12 What kind of person can we call a filial child? The son who treats his parents as they treated him is a filial son. A filial son moves Heaven. Even though parents devote themselves to raising their children, if the children don't care about their parents, that family will go to ruin. In order to gain a return on their investment, they need to establish an objective standard based on the principle of giving and

receiving. When that happens for the first time, God will come and dwell in that place and the kingdom of heaven will be realized. What kind of children can reside in the kingdom of heaven? They are those who pay the debt of parental love on their own. When their parents become old and senile, the sons and daughters should endure the difficulties of their care without feeling it is difficult. They should possess the same heart their parents had toward them when they were little, cleaning up their urine and feces. This is what it means to be children of filial piety. (35-241, 1970.10.19)

Filial piety is the duty of true children

13 What is a filial son? The filial son is the person who, throughout his life, sacrifices everything for his parents and does not assert his subjectivity. Then his parents' true love remains. Filial piety preserves and protects the realm of true love. Because of filial piety, we can build a bridge to the universe. (112-151, 1981.04.12)

14 Fulfill your filial duty to your parents; become a filial son or daughter and a patriot. It is your parents who have led the nation and the world. Before becoming a patriot, become a filial child, and before becoming a filial child, become a proud family member who truly loves your brothers and sisters. "Family member" is the name by which siblings can praise each other. You have to show filial piety to a degree greater than when men and women married and had children, created a family, and fulfilled their filial duty to their parents in ages past. You cannot be a truly devoted son or daughter before you get married. You can become a truly filial son or daughter only after getting married. You can establish the realm of true filial piety only after you have married and the wife's filial piety is added to the husband's in front of his parents. Only through this foundation of devoted attendance to the parents can a true realm of filial piety be established. (30-220, 1970.03.23)

15 In order to become a filial son or daughter, you have to align yourself always with the direction of your parents' heart. To walk the path of filial piety, you should not do things separately from your parents. When your parents go east, you go east, and when they go west, you also go west. If you are going one way and your parents say, "Turn around," you turn around. There should be no question about it. Even if you are told to go a certain way and then to turn back ten times, you should turn back again and follow your parents. (62-032, 1972.09.10)

16 In your family you have heard of filial piety. It means to attend your parents on the path of love they walk. The parents' path of true love follows heavenly

principles. The parents are not walking alone; they are guided by vertical heavenly principles that move with them. Thus, becoming one with your parents means you are going the way that connects the horizontal and vertical realms of the historical heart. This is the reason to fulfill your filial duty toward your parents. (136-203, 1985.12.29)

17 You have many gifts to offer your Father. Even though you may not have many possessions, there is one present you have that you can give to God, something other than things of which worldly people are fond. You must prepare yourself in front of God by shedding blood, sweat and tears for Him. This is the best gift for our Heavenly Father, who is suffering in pain and bitter sorrow. (11-102, 1961.02.12)

18 In the family, you as sons and daughters are responsible to fulfill your filial duty toward your parents. Why do you have to fulfill filial duty? The path of filial piety is connected to the path of patriotism, and a person who is loyal to his country should then walk the way of a saint for the sake of the world. There has to be one straight line. From this viewpoint, if you were unable to fulfill your filial duty and yet became a patriot, your parents would not say you had not fulfilled your filial duty. They would say, "You have done so well." Even if you did not accomplish your filial duty but instead had abandoned your parents and left home, if you then became a patriot in your nation, your mother and father, even though they might have died and gone to the spirit world, would praise you, saying, "You did really well!" (100-155, 1978.10.09)

19 Even though parents and children are unworthy, they at least have to communicate. If they don't, parents are not really parents and children are not really children. A filial son is not one who receives his parents' love because he accomplished something easy or something beneficial to himself. He is one who, in order to take responsibility for his parents' sorrow, seeks out the difficult tasks and fulfills his responsibility. This brings joy to his parents. If the parents have done ten units of work and the child has made the effort to do fifteen units, the five-unit surplus will translate into that much joy for the parents. The one who makes effort to serve his parents and thinks how to take on some of their work is a child of filial piety. (24-261, 1969.08.24)

Section 5. Love among Brothers and Sisters

1 Why do we need brothers and sisters? It is so that a brother, by looking at his younger and elder sisters, can understand, "Oh, that's how our mother was as she grew up!" Through them he sees the process of his mother growing up. Also, a

sister observes carefully how her elder or younger brother grows up to understand how her father grew up and lived. This is the love among siblings; you become one by growing up like this. That's the value of loving your brothers and sisters. (184-061, 1988.11.13)

The love of brothers and sisters is the model for loving all people

2 The relationship of brothers and sisters is connected to both the vertical and horizontal planes. If we say the relationship between Adam and Eve is horizontal, then that between God and Adam and Eve is vertical. East and west form only a horizontal line. This is why two linear dimensions that form a plane are necessary. And then the front-back aspect gives the required third dimension. Only the love between brothers and sisters expands the love of the family to a new dimension. Only through adding that love can a sphere of love come into being. That ideal sphere represents the highest standard of hope for men and women. The sons and daughters in substance are the embodiment of the love God hoped for at the time of creation. These sons and daughters will be able to inherit heaven and earth and the love that represents God. These sons and daughters grow up as brothers and sisters, and they mature. When these children grow up, they have to find their father and mother, and the father and mother have to find their sons and daughters. Through this encounter, they become complete. This is the principle of counterparts. (236-012, 1992.11.02)

3 When we embrace the world with the love of humanity and the love of brothers and sisters, everything will compose an ideal sphere. Once that happens, collisions will not create any shock. For the first time, in that place the entire substantial world will bear fruit as God intended. God's ideal children will come to that place, bear fruit and unite. They will become substantial children of love. Next they will become the substantial fruit of brothers' and sisters' love, the substantial fruit of conjugal love and the substantial fruit of parental love. When the invisible God fulfills the plan He made at the beginning of creation, then up and down, right and left and back and front will unite in harmony. (236-146, 1992.11.04)

4 Man is the subject of life who contains the seed of life that woman receives. This is why we say that man represents the east and woman the west. The sun rises in the east and the west receives the sun. An axis plus east and west together make four directions. Up and down, east and west form a cross but not a sphere. That's why we need brothers and sisters. Through brothers and sisters a nation arises and all humankind arises. So it is brothers and sisters who form the sphere. Brothers and sisters expand to become a people and the world. So the love of siblings is

connected with the love of the world. A family in which many brothers and sisters grow up is like the model needed to create the ideal, the kingdom of heaven, the kingdom of God on earth and in heaven. (235-269, 1992.10.01)

5 In the world, normal circumstances do not bring about unforgettable love between friends. You cannot forget the friend who protected you or even risked his life for you in a crisis. No matter what may come, you can't forget him. If you have such a friend, you will tell your children. You will write in your will that you are leaving something for him when you die. This is your duty toward your friend and benefactor. No one can interfere in this deep connection and relationship. (28-120, 1970.01.04)

6 The desire for harmony and unity with God, the desire to praise Him, the desire for equality in the world, the desire for all humankind to live in prosperity and peace originate not in the body but in the mind. The wish in our original heart of goodness is not malice or enmity toward one another; it is not bloody struggle, fighting and killing each other. Instead our heart of goodness wants to live in freedom, peace and happiness, loving one another as brothers and sisters. This is the hope of all humankind. (41-070, 1971.02.13)

CHAPTER 3 The Practice of True Love

Section 1. The True Way of Life

1 Originally the relationship between God and human beings was to have been as parent and child, with God in the position of parent and each person in the position of child. God the Parent and we as His children would have been bound together by love. Children born from the love of their mother and father begin their life as participants in their parents' love. That is a great thing. But even more, from the beginning of our existence we would have been participants in our Heavenly Parent's love. Had we been born from our Heavenly Parent's love, we would have connected to our Heavenly Parent's life path centering on love. Yet, no one living on earth today fully relates to the Heavenly Parent's life or life path. That is why even human parents walk a path of life that goes over mountain passes of sorrow mixed with joy, as they struggle amid the suffering of humankind. (135-267, 1985.12.15)

The path of love that human beings must follow

2 We human beings come into this world through love. After growing up in love, we are to connect to another dimension of love. This is because we leave the love of our parents to find love with our life partner. We can call living in the love of our

parents, formation-stage love, and conjugal love, growth-stage love. Yet, no matter how much a couple may love each other, their love is not complete until they have children. This is why couples want to have children; it is to know completion-stage love. Therefore, the core of human life is to go through the course of love—love from our parents, love for our spouse and love for our children. This is the fundamental path of love, to realize the ideal of God's creation. The purpose of a true love family is not only for the family but is also to build the kingdom of heaven. To achieve the goal of oneness throughout the universe, a family must expand its purpose to the people, nation, world and cosmos. It must go out all the way to the world and then return. (48-012, 1971.08.31)

3 Which comes first, life or love? Life does not come first. Love comes first. Because what comes second must adjust to what comes first, it is natural that we devote our life for the sake of love. We human beings should be born in love, walk the way of love, and die for love. If we live, love and die in such a way that God, the angels, all the things of creation and all human beings—that is, the entire universe—publicly recognize us, then the whole universe will welcome our love. This is the purpose for which we were born. (83-164, 1976.02.08)

4 We are born in love, and so we have to go the way of love. When it comes time to die, we also have to die for the sake of love. Love is not only more precious than life; it precedes life. This is why we willingly sacrifice our life for the sake of love. Love is eternal. That is why there are many literary works, novels and poems about unchanging love, eternal love. This makes it plain that the love we want is not momentary or temporary. We want eternal love. (298-299, 1999.01.17)

5 Love has such an authority that even God is totally captivated by it. By that I mean that God is weak in front of love. The fragrance of human love makes God's face light up with a smile. God delights in stories of love. If God so delights in stories of love, how much more would He delight in the real thing? The various organs of the human body were made for one purpose, love. The eyes were made to see, but to see what? To look for love. This is the common purpose of all the sensory organs. The nose was made to smell, but the most important fragrance is the fragrance of love. The ears were made to listen for the sounds of love. Of all the sounds we hear, the ones we never tire of are the sounds of love. It is the same whether we are young or old. (298-300, 1999.01.17)

6 We were born in love, raised by our parents in love, and we learn to love our spouse. We give birth to our children and raise them in love; we love our family and then our tribe. In this way we connect to the wider world of love, from our

individual love all the way to the love of God. In other words, love is like the water that begins as a small mountain stream, flows to the sea and becomes a great ocean current that rejuvenates the globe. It makes for a world of love, which rejuvenates nations of love, tribes of love, families of love and individuals of love. (205-345, 1990.10.02)

7 Man symbolizes heaven and woman symbolizes earth. As for men, since they are in the position of subject partner, they do not like anyone to interfere with him. As for women, they prefer to respond to love more than to initiate it. Since men symbolize heaven and women symbolize earth, their union is analogous to the union of heaven and earth— the cosmos. Since love alone can govern the cosmos, and since through love alone can we become the subject partner of the cosmos, we should respect our partner as greater than heaven and earth. The only thing that can exist forever and connect these two worlds is unchanging love. Because the spirit world centers on love, people who live amid ties of love on earth will go to heaven. (48-011, 1971.08.31)

8 When God and human beings unite completely, man and woman will unite naturally. When a perfect couple appears, heaven and earth become one. Where does God wish to dwell? Since love arises between a man and a woman, He wants to dwell where a true man and a true woman love each other. Since God is with them, their love can last forever. They can achieve eternal unity as God bestows on them the ideal of eternal life. Those who attain that love can possess everything. (48-011, 1971.08.31)

9 You should love your family, but you should love your country even more. You ought to love your nation more than your family; you ought to love the world more than your nation; and you ought to love God more than you love the world. This is the path of a true human being. It is the exemplary and direct route that human beings should have gone as human history unfolded. If you go this way, you will never stumble and fall. With the family as your foundation, you will move forward to the nation, from the nation to the world, and from the world to God. By doing so, you will become filial children, patriots and saints who will be remembered in history. After that, you can become God's sons and daughters. Human beings' ultimate purpose is to become God's sons and daughters. When you teach this position, you can attain the highest peak of your desire. It is a sublime happiness without limit, not only for you but also for the whole. When you reach that point, the whole will support you and live for you. Let us follow this way, going straight ahead. (69-022, 1973.08.19)

10 Humankind is walking a path that began with God and should end with God. In order for us to return to God as an individual, a family, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos, we need to be linked to true love. Without being linked to true love it is impossible. Neither can we achieve mind-body unity without true love. This is why our mind prompts us to sacrifice ourselves to discipline the body. It does its utmost for the body and repeatedly forgets what it did. The mind's position represents God; hence, it is our greatest teacher. The mind is the center of the self, sent by God on His behalf. It is the vertical self. (226-060, 1992.02.01)

11 On the path of life, our final goal should be to possess God's love. Whatever we have, our mind drives us to continue seeking something higher. Even if we possessed the whole world, since God is in a still higher place, we would want to possess God too. But even if we were to possess God, we would lose Him if we failed to possess His love. Thus our highest desire should not be to conquer the world, not even to conquer God, but to win God's love. Winning God's love has nothing to do with external talents or skills. Anyone can become a son or daughter of God and possess God's love if only they follow the right way. In the end, the best life is a life by which we become God's sons and daughters. (38-326, 1971.01.08)

12 We came from our mother and father's love. We came from our mother and father's life. Because we are connected to our parents' love, we can say, "Father and mother, you are mine!" And our parents can say, "You are the extension of my love and life, so you are mine." Likewise, anything that has God's love and life force belongs to God. The hope of fallen human beings is to become God's object partners and to belong to God. However, in order to become God's object partners, we need God's life and God's love. This is our cherished hope. Such is the path of human life; we must walk it whether we live or die. This is the path that we should find, and this is our final destination. (116-084, 1981.12.20)

13 The original way of love will lead us to the place where the ideal abides. That ideal was God's original ideal when He created human beings. Love is a most mysterious thing. Because of love, even if we possessed God, our heart would not rest. Merely to possess God would not make us happy or satisfied. We want to possess everything in the core of God's heart, even the love in His secret treasure house. Only when we completely possess this love will our heart's hunger subside. Human beings are like warriors standing at the starting gate of a competition to possess God's love. (18-026, 1967.05.14)

14 In order to get to the kingdom of heaven, we first need to collect all kinds of God-centered love. We must gather the love of the family, the love of the nation

and the love of the world, and then go to the kingdom of heaven and unite with God. When we unite with God on this foundation, everything will orbit around God. How do we human beings arrive at the place where God's love dwells? We must go the way of a filial child, the way of a patriot, the way of a world saint, and the way of a son or daughter of God. Then when we arrive at the place where God's greatest love dwells, we will settle there. For anyone born as a human being, this is the happiest way and the way of ultimate perfection. Everything is designed to reach this realm. (113-164, 1981.05.03)

The true path to life that fallen people must walk

15 God has been leading His long providential history through good individuals, good families and good peoples. In the past, ascetics followed a path that Satan could not go. They went a path that no one wanted to go. They went the path of suffering in order to discover what the mind is, what love is and what truth is. All people need to go this path. (11-311, 1962.03.05)

16 Human beings should be receiving God's love and blessings and enjoying a happy life. So how on earth did we end up this miserable? Human beings should be walking paths of hope and victory, so how on earth did we end up going the way of defeat and death? If you think that it is your fault, and therefore you want to take responsibility on God's behalf, and if your heart is bursting with compassion for the suffering of humanity, you will surely gain victory. Although you may have to suffer on the way, God will be with you throughout your life, and you will live ever grateful to Him. (13-324, 1964.04.14)

17 Our path as fallen people is the path of repentance. We have to find the path of repentance. Unrepentant people cannot say they love their nation, nor can they say they love the world. How do you repent? You need to find someone among human beings who can represent God. That person is the Messiah. What kind of person is the Messiah? He appears as the friend of friends, the teacher of teachers and the parent of parents. To love the Messiah with your whole heart means to enter the realm of his love for the world and his love for the cosmos. Unless you make a relationship with him, even though you strive to love, you cannot truly love. This is the situation of the descendants of the Fall. (32-026, 1970.06.14)

18 We should be devoting all our hearts and minds to becoming the progenitors of goodness that humankind has been seeking and that God has been seeking. We should be the parents of good parents. By practicing the right principles of love we should be examples for humanity. If you have been unable to do so, you should

blame yourselves. If you have been unable to do so, you should be sad, even indignant. You need to understand the reality that you were born from the blood of the enemy. You must extract all that tainted blood from your body, so that you can become new people who can offer yourselves before heaven. No matter what suffering and persecution you endure, if there is a way to find your true self, you should go that path in silence with a joyful heart. We may have to face death a hundred times or a thousand times, but that is our destiny. Unless we take the path of negating this fallen world, we cannot find the way. This is the path of religion. (41-159, 1971.02.14)

19 The first human ancestors were born into the realm of God's love. Therefore, without fail, we must receive God's lineage so that we may go the path of true love that is unchanging for eternity. No longer will we go in two different directions, with our minds and bodies divided. We will exercise self-control on the path of life, with the mind controlling the body. Ultimately we need to become people who, even without any spiritual discipline or cultivation, can know this path and proceed upon it. A compass automatically knows north and south and does not deviate in its orientation. Even rats on a ship know when a typhoon that can destroy the ship is coming and escape along the mooring rope. Yet how is it that we, who should be the lords of creation, have become such low and insensible brutes? We human beings are a miserable lot, with no sense of direction and no understanding of our purpose. (121-115, 1981.10.24)

20 Nowadays the paths people follow are all divided: families, tribes, nations and the world zigzag every which way. Some people follow money, some follow knowledge, and some follow power. All of them are wicked. The path of true love has one eternally unchanging direction, whether for individuals, families, tribes, peoples, nations or the world. When God calls out to people, "Come directly to Me!" He is speaking of the path of true love. The path of true love is the shortest and most direct route. It leads you straight ahead. There is no zigzagging. True love leads individuals to take the direction that benefits their family; it leads families to take the direction that benefits the nation; it aligns a nation with the direction of the world saints; and it aligns the saints with the direction of divine sons and daughters. It is the path of spiritual cultivation, and we fallen people must walk it. We must go this one direction our entire life. (211-208, 1990.12.30)

21 All individuals should follow the direction of true love, but fallen people have lost their way. In the devil's world everything centers on the physical body. The devil's love is always self-centered and self-serving. Love on God's side does the opposite; it centers on the whole. Thus, following the desires of the flesh is the

path that leads to death, but following the desires of the heart and mind is the path to life. They are 180 degrees opposite. (211-311, 1991.01.01)

22 In our life on earth, there is a right path for human beings to follow. What is that right path? It is the path that is good for individuals, for families, tribes, peoples, nations, the world, the cosmos, and even for God Himself. We all have to advance upon this path. This path is the one and only way of original love. (147-184, 1986.09.21)

23 Human beings born since the Fall have faced a terrible fate. Therefore, you need to have the heart that you are willing to spend tens of millions of dollars just to find a precious member to whom you can say, "It is wonderful, isn't it, that I could meet you and bring you to God!" No matter the difficulty and pain, you should have a heart that says, "To find one precious spiritual child, I am ready to go anywhere." If you devote yourselves to this ideal with this spirit, then even if, like Jesus, you may have to leave the earth without completing the Will, you will surely encounter God's love after you die. (8-159, 1959.12.06)

24 Fallen people live in regret while asking, "What is the way?" Let us therefore stand before them proclaiming "Hallelujah! Amen!" as victorious brave soldiers who have overcome history and attend our cosmic Parents. Then we will reach the stage when we will sing as cosmic brides and bridegrooms. Then the stage will come when we will love our cosmic sons and daughters. These are the three great paths that all fallen people must go. National borders will pose no problem. The gap between East and West will pose no problem. If we become such people, our parents will bow to us; if we become such couples, everyone will bless us; if we have children like that, all people will bow to us and serve us. This era is destined to come. Where is the place where it appears? It is the place where the Lord of the Second Advent dwells. Those who attend him are the people who will go before the throne of God. (8-110, 1959.11.22)

25 Our path is the way of love. It is one path, whether an individual walks it or a family walks it. The way of love is the same for both. East or West, whatever ones race or nation, the way of love is the same for all. The direction does not differ. Between the path of love for the individual and the path of love for the family only the number of people is different; the way is the same. It is one road with the same focal point. It is the path of God's love. Our birth is rooted in God's love. We all were born within an amazing path of love, which is connected to the cosmos and rooted in the original love within our parents. Even after the Fall, this root holds strong. Our tendency to pursue goodness and our desire to add value remains. It is what

makes historical restoration possible. That origin within us can foster new development. (142-118, 1986.03.06)

26 After God created all things in heaven and earth, He bestowed governing authority upon human beings as His children, in order to realize the Will for the ideal world and the ideal of love. That Will was lost. Nevertheless, God has led the history of re-creation through the providence of restoration, centered on those who can represent His love and character. This effort is not based on human love or human character, but on God's love and divine character. Why do we need God's love and character? Without God's love, we cannot transcend Satan's worldly love. God cannot intervene if we hold on to Satan's love. God's character cannot co-exist in a world pervaded by Satan's characteristics. The only way we can make a new beginning and carry out God's Will is together with God, based on His love and character. (120-127, 1982.10.05)

27 In the Unification Church you learn the law of indemnity. My burden includes the burden of a servant of servants, the burden of a servant and the burden of an adopted son. As the leader of the Unification Church, I want you to work with me to remove this burden from all humankind and guide them. This is what is great about the Unification Church. I myself had to go through the course of indemnity to find the original world of love, so I started from the position of a servant of servants. Then I took the positions of a servant and of an adopted son. You are responsible to go through this indemnity course only for yourself, but I have to take responsibility for all things and even for God. My entire life to this point has been for one purpose, to carry all this burden. (108-019, 1980.06.13)

28 The world of our fallen, evil ancestors has gates open from the individual level on earth to hell in the spirit world. It is for True Parents to abolish all of that. But to do this, they have to receive worldwide persecution. It cannot be done for free. They have to be struck first, and then they can take back what was lost. That is why after being struck, they are entitled to demand compensation for the damage. The way for good people to go is to be struck first and then to claim what was lost. This is why good people are always struck first. After they are struck, over the course of time something develops. That is the way of heaven and earth. It happens because good people keep investing. When investing love, the output is always greater than the input. This is how eternal life can be sustained. (210-245, 1990.12.23)

29 We have to win the fight against Satan. Those who lose to Satan cannot go to God. What must we do to defeat him? That is the question. The problem arose with the Fall of Adam. Therefore, you should do what Adam could not do. Adam did not

believe in God absolutely, so to surpass Adam you need to believe in God's Word absolutely. Also, Adam failed to practice God's Word. Adam fell because he did not believe in God or practice His Word. Only when you practice God's Word can you connect to God's love. The original way for human beings who have nothing to do with the Fall is to believe in God's Word and practice it. Had Adam and Eve done so, they would have moved on to the next level. There, God's love awaited them. God's blessing awaited them. (76-050, 1975.01.26)

Section 2. The Practice of True Love

1 Nothing is good unless it is in harmony with the essence of God's love. Love does not focus on its position as a subject partner; rather, it focuses on its object partner. If you focus on yourself, you cannot go the path of love. Suppose you are the leader of a nation; you cannot function in that position if you are all alone; you need to recognize the value of others as your partners. The basic principle underlying the organization of the ideal kingdom of heaven is that within the family, husband and wife openly affirm each other. A man who is not affirmed by his wife can hardly expect to be affirmed in the ideal world. It is a contradiction for a man to seek the world's public recognition when his wife does not first recognize him. In order for a man to attain world-level recognition with dignity and authority, he should be recognized as the linchpin of his family, without any shortcomings. A family with that kind of man as a head will remain intact and not be divided. Then that family should take the position of subject partner to its tribe and live sacrificially, overcoming challenges for its tribe's sake. Its purpose should be for the sake of others, not for itself. (46-037, 1971.07.18)

2 The way of love does not go here and there. There is only one way. Is the way of love two or one? It is one. If you go that one way, you can go everywhere. The way of love is the way of purity, the way of tranquility and the way of caution, like a priest making a sacrificial offering. (233-146, 1992.08.01)

The way of true love through self-sacrifice

3 A human life is conceived centering on the ideal of love; therefore, its essence is love. Since our life originates from love, it is Heaven's principle that we live for the sake of others, just as God does. So we can say that we were born for the sake of true love. True love begins by living for the sake of others. Human beings were originally created to live with God's true love within their mind and body and to respond to His love directly. Their mind would respond to God centering on true love, and their body naturally would resonate with the mind. The true love of God

that they would inherit and experience would be the basis of true unity, where there is no conflict between mind and body. (234-271, 1992.08.26)

4 God's love is not meant to appear only in the heavenly realm. It must first arise in the physical universe—the created world— and ultimately in human beings. Parents' love is seen in their children. A husband's love is seen in his wife; a wife's love is seen in her husband. This is the mutual commitment of love; this is the direction that love takes. Unless you follow this way, you cannot perfect your love. (083-179, 1976.02.08)

5 For God to love, He must sacrifice Himself. Likewise, for us human beings to love, we need to sacrifice ourselves. This is the way we should go. Why? It is because God goes this way. If we are to go with God, we must go this way. When I as an individual take the path of sacrifice, it leads me to the position where God participates in my family along with me. Next, when my family sacrifices, it earns the right for God to participate with it in the life of the tribe, and so on to the people, the nation, the world and the cosmos. From the time we begin our course in the world of love, as we travel through all the stages on the path of love, we will come to earn these qualifications. This is possible because our life from the beginning is centered on love. It is because we always strive to participate in God's love and tune ourselves to the direction of His love. This is how we can be free from the realm of the Fall. (097-263, 1978.03.19)

6 The way of love is not to live for oneself but to go the way of self-sacrifice. Love is so powerful that hearing a single word from your beloved can give you the strength to endure ten years of suffering. It is why just a one-word promise from your beloved husband or wife can enable you to persevere through any hardship, for ten years or even for your whole life. The more adversity you face, the more difficulties you overcome and the more misery you endure, the more you cherish that promise of love and the more value it holds on a higher and multidimensional level. (115-191, 1981.11.15)

7 When a husband has a sacrificial heart for his wife and offers her his absolute, self-sacrificial love, his wife will do everything possible to become a good life partner to him. She will not do so unwillingly but joyfully and with sincerity. There is no suffering in it. Her sacrifice does not make her miserable. Instead, it has a sweet and interesting taste. Parents' love for their children is inevitably accompanied by sacrifice, but they do not demand repayment for it. Parents sacrifice and forget their sacrifice. Sacrificial love is to give and forget how much one has given. God has been giving and sacrificing for humankind, then forgetting how much He gave, how

much He sacrificed. This is why Jesus said, “When you give alms, do not let your left hand know what your right hand is doing.” (Matt. 6:3) If you give expecting something in return, you are not a real owner of love. If you give and then forget how much you gave, you can be a central person of love. (56-340, 1972.05.18)

8 Let us go the path of love that God wants us to go. Only when we reject the path of the Fall that the devil wants us to go, and follow the path of love that God wants us to go, can we be separated from the devil. We cannot be separated from Satan by our worldly knowledge, by our understanding of doctrine, or by having better skill or wisdom. Love is what enables it. The reason Christianity has endured to this day is because it promotes the way of self-sacrifice, even to the extent that many believers have sacrificed themselves, willing to go the path of martyrdom and shedding their blood. (138-252, 1986.01.24)

9 The way of love is the way of giving yourself to be used by others for a higher purpose. Individuals who have love want to be used by their families, families who have love want to be used by their nation, nations want to be used by the world, the world wants to be used by the cosmos, and the cosmos wants to be used by God. This is the way of true love. (206-222, 1990.10.07)

10 The way of faith requires long endurance; endurance and sacrifice are the way of faith. Human beings have been able to go on living because they have faith in God’s promise of a world of love, and with faith they are willing to endure and sacrifice to attain it. When we are told, “God is love,” we need to understand that within that expression is sacrifice and endurance. (112-051, 1981.03.29)

11 When people love each other—for example, parents and their children— their love knows no seasons. When you weep for the ones you love, your tears transcend spring, summer, autumn and winter. True love transcends youth, middle age and old age. True love follows the track of eternal life, eternal joy and eternal happiness. This world is one of change upon change. Revolutions come and go; life and death come and go. But true love never changes. Therefore, let us always maintain the environment of love in our hearts. To do so, we need a life of prayer. By that we can grow. When going the way of God’s Will and the way of love, prison is not a problem; even death is not a problem. In fact, the way of true love is about overcoming death and difficulties. (277-013, 1996.03.17)

12 There is a power that enables that which is true to exist forever. In order for us connect to it—in order for us to connect eternally to what is beyond time and space—we must be connected to God’s true love. To possess that love, we need to

sacrifice ourselves to secure love with our eternal partner. By sacrificing as couples, we should recover the family; by sacrificing as families, we should recover the tribe; by sacrificing as tribes, we should recover the people; by sacrificing as peoples, we should recover the nation; by sacrificing as nations, we should recover the world; by sacrificing as a world, we should recover heaven and earth; and by sacrificing as heaven and earth, we should find God. Even for God, going the way of love requires sacrifice. God sacrifices too. He sacrifices Himself for love. (180-102, 1988.08.07)

The one who sacrifices becomes the central person

13 To walk the path of love, you need to serve and sacrifice for others. Without serving and sacrificing, your love cannot grow. Although you may have a capacity to love that rates only ten, if you sacrifice and serve, that capacity can grow to one hundred, one thousand, even ten thousand. Especially, if you have some ancestors who were evil, your love rating may be even lower than ten. Nevertheless, you would want to increase it to one hundred, one thousand or even ten thousand if only you could find a way to do so. That way is the path of love, by serving and sacrificing. Because I understood this principle, no matter what kind of abuse and indignities I suffered, no matter how many times I went to prison or faced pain to the point of death, I endured everything. When it comes to loving people, I am willing to sacrifice more than anyone else. When I meet anyone whose sacrifice and love is greater than mine, I immediately resolve to sacrifice and love more. If it means I have to sacrifice and love one thousand or ten thousand times more, I will go that way. I know that only by becoming like that is God able to pour out His love upon me. (44-203, 1971.05.07)

14 The way of love opens to us only when we sacrifice for others. After parents love their children, they do not say, "We raised you for twenty years and sent you to school, so now, according to the principle of restoration through indemnity, you have to sacrifice for twenty years for us." No. Parents sacrifice for their children without considering or calculating the extent of it. In fact, the harder they work for their children, the more their children's love for them grows. Even though parents ask no compensation, their children's original mind cannot but love them. That is why children whose parents loved them are never unfilial. It is impossible for a child to be unfilial to such parents. In a family of sacrificial parents, filial children will emerge. The more a nation's king sacrifices for his subjects, the more loyalty they will display to him. On the path of love, sacrifice and suffering do not diminish your value. Instead, they double it. Such is the path of love. (63-196, 1972.10.14)

15 Love drives you to the place of sacrifice. You may feel that being pushed to sacrifice is unfair. Especially if you collapse and die as a sacrifice, you may feel even more that it is unfair. But unbeknownst to you, God's love builds up behind you. So widen that place by going over the realm of your tribe and your people. Widen it even further to influence your nation. On the day when you change the standard of your nation, you can take the flag of your renewed nation and march toward the world. The Unification Church is going this way toward that goal. Therefore, you must love your country more than you love your own children. You are in the position of following God's Will, so you should expect to take responsibility as His representative over and over again. (32-228, 1970.07.19)

16 Sacrifice accompanies the way of love. It is how you can totally possess the love of your partner. You need to sacrifice, because doing so builds the foundation for your partner to completely unite with you and follow you. People can unite completely with those who sacrifice themselves to pay the price of love. It turns out that the dwelling place of love is not in yourself, but in your partner. Do not think that your husband or wife loves you because you are great. (44-349, 1971.05.30)

17 The center of your love has to be your counterpart, not yourself. Only when you fully recognize the value of your counterpart will his or her full value in love become manifest. Why do you have to sacrifice on the path of love? It is because your love does not belong to you. You must make your counterpart the focal point of your love. That being the case, unless you make the condition to be completely in accord with that focal point of love, you cannot fulfill love's purpose. Therefore, if you want perfect love, you must sacrifice completely. When you follow the way of total sacrifice, you will see perfect unity. (45-226, 1971.07.01)

18 Without fail, the sacrificial person becomes the central person. In a family the filial child is the one who sacrifices the most; thereby he or she becomes the center of the family. A patriot who sacrifices the most for the nation becomes the central person of the nation. The saint who sacrifices the most becomes the center of all saints. This is Heaven's principle, so follow this way with sincerity and become individuals who can bring people into harmony in all respects. When you do so, God's new hope will dwell within you and the power of God's love will be added to your efforts. (113-326, 1981.05.10)

19 Sacrifice makes the way of love shine. That is why the Bible says to love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your strength. It says that it is the first commandment. As commandments go, it is indeed the first among all the commandments in the universe. It is the most important law,

because once we fulfill this law, we can create a realm in which all other laws will be followed. From this perspective, in order to fulfill God's Will, God's ideal of creation, we have a path to follow: We must make a relationship with God in absolute love; then we will realize the ideal of creation. (63-160, 1972.10.14)

20 The way of true love is to move toward something greater, even if it means sacrificing your own interests. As you move forward toward a bigger world, you make sacrifices and accept greater hardship. With respect to the family, if your family lives for the sake of society, then leaving your family is not leaving it behind but uniting it with society. For example, when your son grows up he will find his life companion, and they will join as a couple. Even though he leaves you, his parents, his loving relationship with you can deepen, and when he has children, your family will expand. Further, when your son's family moves into society, your family grows even bigger. As its links with society develop, your family will grow ever greater. (48-012, 1971.08.31)

21 If parents love their children in a self-centered way, their love is false. If children love their parents in a self-centered way, that too is false love. What do I expect to see in the Unification Church? If our church represents a true religion of true love, we should not love the Unification Church for the sake of the Unification Church. Just as you become a filial child by loving your parents at the sacrifice of yourself, and you become a true parent by loving your children at the sacrifice of yourself, in the Unification Church we should love the nation and the world even at the sacrifice of the Unification Church. This is the shortcut to establishing the law of love. (34-330, 1970.09.20)

22 For us, to sacrifice our individual selves for the family is to find the path of love to the family; to sacrifice as a family in order to save the tribe is to expand the path of love to the tribe; to sacrifice as a tribe in order to save the nation is to expand the path of love to the nation; to sacrifice as a nation in order to save the world is to broaden the path of love to the world. In this way, by loving the world we should go to reach the love of God. This is the path we have to go from now on. (41-356, 1971.02.18)

23 Religions teach individuals, families, tribes and nations to sacrifice their own interests. The nation of Israel was built upon the sacrifices of its tribes. Among the nations of the world, those that stood on religious beliefs walked the way of sacrifice throughout their history. If we are to realize the ideal of creation, we must become God's object partners of love. But unless we go through sacrifice, unless we practice this essential principle of love, we cannot become one with God. Nor can

we form a relationship with the ideal world of love that God is to govern. To form a relationship with the ideal world of love, there is no other way than to inherit the tradition that takes sacrifice as a cardinal principle. This is why religions place great emphasis on the path of love that requires compassion and sacrifice. The division between heaven and hell, between good and evil, is right there. (60-087, 1972.08.06)

The way of blood, sweat and tears

24 Throughout His course of searching for human beings, God has been confronting Satan. We have to learn from God's course of devotion and follow in His steps. We now know that God has devoted Himself throughout history, in ways beyond description, to finding His lost children with the heart of a parent, in the shoes of a servant, sowing sweat for earth, tears for humankind and blood for Heaven. We too, in order to find and attend our Heavenly Parent, must shed blood, sweat and tears for Him, and in order to experience the heart of our Parent, we must go forward in the shoes of a servant. God suffered pain to find us, and we suffer pain to find God. The tears we shed on this course are not for ourselves alone; they are the tears we share with God. Our sweat is the sweat we share with God. Our blood and sacrifice are not for ourselves only; we shed tears and blood to participate in the sacrifices that God has been making. (13-244, 1964.03.29)

25 God comes to the earth with the heart of a parent and in the shoes of a servant. When you shed tears, He also sheds tears; when you shed sweat, He also sheds sweat. When you stand in the place of death, He sheds His blood for you. You have no idea how many tens of thousands of times God sacrificed Himself for your sake. You have no idea how many times God Himself played the role of high priest. How many painful experiences did God endure in the course of this work, from the individual level to that of the family, tribe, people, nation and world? God sent His Son to do this mission, and when he was unable to complete it, He had to do the Son's mission Himself. (11-214, 1961.07.17)

26 We were dead, yet God went the way of death in order to revive us. Hence, we should go the same way—the way of blood, sweat and tears with a parent's heart. This course is our destiny as descendants of the Fall. When Jesus came to earth, he shed tears for humankind, blood for heaven and sweat for the earth. When Jesus went the way of the cross, he set the substantial standard of heart for the past and present simultaneously. We human beings had been unfilial children, yet Jesus made the indemnity condition in heart on our behalf when, before he died, he set the standard of forgiving us all. (13-055, 1963.10.16)

27 You must connect to God in heart and experience His heart. Unless you experience His heart, you can never come before God. At the time of Jesus, what did the people of Israel do? God had shed tears, blood and sweat for them, to prepare them as the chosen people, and all His heartfelt tears, blood and sweat still remained with them. Yet they utterly forgot all of it. (10-278, 1960.11.06)

28 We are destined to go the way of one mind and one heart. How can we continue on this way without ever changing? If we cannot go this way with wisdom, we will have to go with sweat and tears. If we cannot go with sweat and tears, we will have to go even shedding our blood. We have to offer our sweat as God's sweat and our tears as God's tears. We should shed blood for Heaven, tears for humankind and sweat for earth. We should totally demolish the basis of God's bitter sorrow, which has blocked the union of God, the earth and human beings. This is our task. We should strive to make our daily life one in which "God's work is my work; my work is the work of the earth; my work is the work of all humankind." We should reach the point where each of us is praised as a person of divine value. (10-179, 1960.09.25)

29 We who know the existence of the living God will have to save humanity before Satan inflicts more destruction on the world. Even though I might end up in the lowest position and perish there, my urgent concern is how the Unification Church can establish measures to save this country and the whole world. We need to provide something of substance. We need substance that we can present to history, which we can present to all time and to the future. What is that substance? That substance is our blood, our sweat and our tears. Our heartfelt blood, sweat and tears should make God and all humankind weep. Each of you needs to shed blood, sweat and tears. Then, when the people of the world listen to you, they will be so moved that they will not be able to hold back their tears. (13-191, 1964.03.15)

30 What do you value most among all your possessions? No matter what it is, you should be able to give it away without hesitation or regret. But to me, your tears, sweat and blood are what have greatest value. You should shed sweat for all things of creation. You should shed blood for Heaven. You should shed tears for all humankind. This is the motto of our Principle movement. You should be able to give these precious things freely. Only by doing so can you bring unity in the spirit and in the heart. (15-069, 1965.02.13)

31 You should be the cement, you should be the gravel, you should be the sand and you should be the water. Your blood, sweat and tears are the water; your flesh is the sand, and your bones are the gravel. With these materials, you must build your foundation of concrete. The foundation you create in this way will remain for a

thousand years; even ten thousand years later it will still be standing. Although people may try for ten thousand years to knock it down, they will not succeed. (28-221, 1970.01.11)

Loving our enemies and the way of the Principle

32 Why did Jesus teach that we should love our enemies, even as he did by carrying the cross? It is because there is no way to subjugate Satan other than by love. God-centered love is love that seeks to save the world. It seeks to reclaim the realm of love from Satan's world. God's love has a purpose: it is to liberate Satan's world. The goal of salvation is to fulfill God's Will and providence. The core element for fulfilling God's providential Will is love. We must love, because it is the way to recapture this world from Satan. (138-253, 1986.01.24)

33 The biblical teaching to love your enemy means to love human beings, people who are under the devil's influence. It does not mean you should love the devil himself. Our cherished hope is eternal life. The only way we can have eternal life is by walking the path of true love. We create unity when we strive over and over again with our mind and body to live for the sake of others, centered on God's love. Unity comes when the body serves the mind as much as the mind serves the body. If you give and receive in that place, based on the central axis, unity will certainly come. When you stand before this axis of principled love at the point where the horizontal line and the vertical line meet, your position will be established. (209-229, 1990.11.29)

34 Every human being is connected to two lineages. One is Satan's lineage; we are linked to it through the historical line of our ancestors. This happened because they had a self-centered consciousness. Then what is the other lineage, God's lineage, about? It is to live not for oneself but for the sake of the whole. This lineage lives for the sake of others. This is why arrogant people can never escape Satan's lineage. How can you free yourself from that lineage? Worldly people live for themselves, but godly people are the opposite. They live not for their own sakes, but for the sake of the whole. That is why I tell you that the way to be free from the fallen realm is to love your enemy. (332-067, 2000.09.05)

35 When you journey to find love, your mind goes first. But if your counterpart does not reciprocate, all your investment disappears. It is not so with God. His heart will keep pounding and He will keep trying again and again until He establishes His love. He just cannot stop. He continues searching unceasingly for His beloved ones. He continually strives to forge relationships with them by filling all their cells with

love. He continues to invest over and over in His work of creation until He reaches His goal. This is the basic logic behind the principle of living for the sake of others. (202-293, 1990.05.25)

36 To say that God created all things means that God totally invested His heart of love in them. Since God is like that, when His object partners appear, they will have the same heart. Then not only will God be able to have a relationship with people, but His love will manifest through people. Such people will prosper. You may not grasp this by reasoning it out, but nonetheless the conscience guides you to love one another and to live for the sake of others. Further, all religions teach sacrifice and living for the sake of others. (112-301, 1981.04.25)

37 God set up the principle of living for the sake of others. To use the analogy of the atmosphere, it means He becomes a total vacuum. The environment of a total vacuum is an area of low pressure toward which a high-pressure area automatically moves to create balance. Likewise, to find His object partners God continually gives and gives of Himself, giving out until what He has given automatically returns. Based on this logic, God made all creations in pairs, advancing step by step to higher levels, in order to make the ideal footstool for the love between God and human beings. (199-276, 1990.02.20)

38 To demand that others live for your sake is not true love. The true ideal, true happiness and true peace do not stand on the foundation of telling other people to live for you. They stand on the foundation of living for the sake of others. That is why true husbands and wives, true parents, true teachers and true patriots do not start out by pushing others to sacrifice for them. They start from the point of giving themselves for others. The act of creation itself was an act of investment. (077-106, 1975.04.01)

39 People who wish to succeed need to help people in the world around them. With this in mind, the Unification Church advocates living for the sake of others. We were born for the sake of others. The act of creation required God's total investment. It means that God created with love and for love. The world has been advocating, "Live for me!" but this is wrong from the outset. I as a human being am born for my parents, for my wife, for my husband. My life is a continuation of my parents' lives. I inherited my life for the sake of my parents. The life a husband inherited is for the sake of his wife; the life a wife inherited is for the sake of her husband. The life I inherited is for my brothers and sisters and for my country. Ultimately I was born for the sake of the world. (169-087, 1987.10.25)

40 Was the Unification Principle made before the Fall of Adam and Eve, or after? The Principle existed before the Fall. The way of the Principle was the way Adam and Eve were supposed to go. If Adam and Eve, as the ancestors of humankind, had become perfect and achieved oneness with God in the realm of His love, no one could have separated them from each other, not even God. The way to salvation is the path of restoration, and the path of restoration is through re-creation. For re-creation, we need to apply the general rule of the Principle, from before the time Adam and Eve fell, to assess the value of things in relation to their progress toward completion. Otherwise we cannot go back to where we can have an original relationship with God. (135-305, 1985.12.15)

41 The path of the Principle is to walk, while the path of restoration is to seek and find. The path of restoration through indemnity is to seek and find. Once you find the path, you are to walk it. Thus far, no one knew about the path of restoration. Now that I have elucidated it all— the path of the Principle, the path of the Principle of the course of restoration— you are required to walk it. This is the formula course. Hence everyone from your ancestors to your descendants must go this way. (213-331, 1991.01.21)

42 It is not only human beings who have to walk the path of the Principle. God also has to go this way, in order to meet us. God seeks to walk the path of the Principle even as we try to walk the path of the Principle. God and human beings can meet in a victorious reunion only when they both have walked the path of the Principle. What is evil? It is what opposes those who would go the path of the Principle. Evil tries to stop us from going on the path of the Principle. Evil sets up obstacles on that road. This is why, by the rules of Principle, evil cannot be tolerated. (58-010, 1972.06.06)

43 Since our ancestors Adam and Eve lost the way, we have to find that way again. That is why I am saying that the way of restoration is about seeking and finding, while the path of the Principle is to be walked. When you are walking the path of the Principle, you will be walking the same path as I. However, there is a difference between you and me: I had to pass through a course of incredible battles with Satan both in the spirit and in the flesh, that is, with Satan in the spirit world and with evil people in this world, and triumph over them. However, you do not have to walk the path of confronting Satan on the world level or evil people on the national level. (34-266, 1970.09.13)

44 To ride on heavenly fortune you must go the way of the Principle. You must become a person who walks the principled way. This is my philosophy of life. I have

been persecuted to this day, and many people thought I would perish. Yet I leaped up from a place of ruin to a bigger world and a bigger stage, and I have been advancing ever since. The reason why God cooperates with me is because the path I walk is in alignment with Heaven's principle and law. (149-187, 1986.11.21)

45 Through me as your teacher, you Unification Church members came to know the Principle by which you seek out the path of restoration. All of you are required to walk the path of the Principle. On the path of the Principle, there is no need for forgiveness. This is the path that everyone without exception—your grandparents, your parents and you, including blessed children— have to go. (143-032, 1986.03.15)

46 I am going ahead of you in seeking, because the way of restoration is the way of seeking. I am seeking and testing the way, and I am building the path of the Principle. So walk this way exactly as I do. When a guide leads you across the ocean you have to follow him; when a guide leads you over a high mountain pass you follow him. If you say you hate this way, you cannot reach the realm of liberation. (58-092, 1972.06.06)

47 While following the way of the Will I have never uttered one word of complaint. I was imprisoned even though I committed no crime. There I was beaten and bloodied by interrogators, but I never complained or asked, "God, what is this?" Servants may oppose God for tens of thousands of years, but as a son, I should never take their side. Knowing that Satan opposes God, how could I as a son oppose my Father, God? Isn't that right? Even though I may die, I have to die on my Father's side. You too, after enduring all sorts of difficulties and pains along the way of the Will, may have many things that you would like to say to God the Father. But what will make you great is to say nothing. (044-297, 1971.05.24)

48 You must keep going, no matter how miserable the course. I too have been through this course. On the way, you should not resent anyone. If you have the urge to complain, rather be concerned about what will happen to this nation and the world as well as to the way of God's Will. This is the proper attitude of those responsible for restoration. Set up this inner standard before God. (29-214, 1970.02.02)

49 Go the way of restoration with a joyful heart. Even on the way of death, when you go with a joyful spirit, God will come to you. But if you go disheartened and lamenting, Satan will follow you. Also, in case you become a martyr, if your motivation is to go to heaven, you will end up in the opposite place. Thus, if you go

the way of a martyr, it should be with the desire to liberate God and to save the world. Jesus' life purpose was to save the world, including the Roman Empire. This is why he could love the Roman soldier who pierced him. He died for the sake of Rome, and so in the end the Roman Empire came into the bosom of Christianity. If he had complained and lamented on the cross, God would have lost the position to claim Jesus; Satan would have claimed him instead. Therefore, those who follow the Will of God cannot complain, even unto death. So to make friends with those who complain is a most dangerous thing. (291-324, 1998.03.19)

50 When you are joyful, God takes an interest in you and you can enter God's realm of love. But the question is: how can we live with joy under any circumstances? The answer is this: When you do everything with joy, do not keep it only for yourself. Rather, share your joy and bring harmony among all things of creation, making them your partners in joy. Your life of faith should be fun. Also, all the work you do on the way of God's Will should be enjoyable to you. It is no good to do things reluctantly or unwillingly. No matter how difficult, you should not take it as difficult, but rather as something fun to do. This attitude should be deeply rooted in your daily life. (277-012, 1996.03.17)

51 You are called to expand your experience of the community of cosmic brotherhood and sisterhood. It is not enough for your family to live alone. For at least three years, you can live together as four families from four nations under one roof. There, you should not regard only your own children as your children. In your community of four families, you should love all the children as your own sons and daughters. You should create such communities of families and experience what God wants to enjoy through your brotherhood and sisterhood. (310-200, 1999.06.15)

52 In the future we will have apartment buildings that serve as family training centers. I envision apartment buildings serving as intercultural residences. We will make a residence in which at least seven families can share life together for several months at a time, training for community life among people of different cultures. These apartment buildings will be training centers. I want you all to go through such training. I would like to see three households living together in those apartments, eating together and studying together. This is based on the Principle. (44-154, 1971.05.06)

53 I want to see the three wives of your trinity united as one. I am training you for this. In the future, twelve families should dwell in one house, then one hundred twenty families, then twelve hundred families, all under the same roof. People who

live in the same village should not fight. The time when you live with True Parents on earth is the time to set this tradition so that it will endure for tens of thousands of years to come. Big problems will come if you fail to set up this tradition. By this tradition, if one family among the three cannot have a child, the other two families will step up to give them a child. (44-154, 1971.05.06)

The way of filial children, patriots, saints, and divine sons and daughters

54 Even though the ways of a filial child, a patriot, a saint, and a divine son or daughter differ, they all belong to one sequence. What makes their ways one sequence? In this world, the love of filial children for their parents lasts for but one generation. The love of a patriot is confined to one nation. But if you move centered on true love, your path remains forever. When an ancestor sets up this foundation, it will endure even if his own children cannot continue it. When anyone in the future builds on his foundation, his merit will increase. For this reason, the more we fulfill the duties of filial children, patriots, saints, and divine sons and daughters centering on the direction of true love, the more we will progress, never to retreat. (219-208, 1991.09.29)

55 Have you ever considered that God wants you to be a filial child in your family, a patriot for your nation, a saint for the world, and a divine son or daughter before heaven and earth? Looking at history, all the main founders of religion taught people to be filial children and also to become patriots, saints, and divine sons and daughters. Religions that did not teach this have not survived. It is your destiny as human beings to become such people. Destiny concerns what cannot be changed, such as the relationship between parents and children. Fortune, on the other hand, refers to things that you can change. You can change your fortune, but you cannot change your destiny. (287-024, 1997.08.10)

56 You can be victorious only when you go the way of the Will with the title of a devoted son or daughter in front of God. You have to become the princes and princesses who are obedient to God and committed to take responsibility for the six-thousand year history of sin and evil. Just as Jesus set the standard of a devoted, filial son when he said, "yet not what I want but what you want" (Matt. 26:39), you should also set the standard of a filial child and say, "In the end, Satan surrendered to me." Only then can you enter kingdom of heaven. In this way you will become the ancestors of the Word, the ancestors of substance, the ancestors of heart, the ancestors of obedience and the ancestors of lineage. (11-350, 1962.06.07)

57 A filial son will disregard himself, his wife and his children in order to follow his parents. Such is the path of a filial son. The path that we walk is the path of the Will, and the path of the Will that we walk is the path of love. To love is to place the greater good ahead of oneself. This is why the way of the Will is the way of love. (18-023, 1967.05.14)

58 A filial child is someone who is faithful to his or her parents, out of love for them. A patriot is someone who loves his or her country, and a saint— that is, a world-level saint—is someone who loves the world. Divine sons and daughters are people who love and uphold the authority of the Palace in the heavenly kingdom. Hence, as people who hold the Will in your heart, if you follow the way of the Will with the hope that you will be respected by all the people of the world and that your names will be known throughout the world for upholding the Will, then you must become warriors who can shine more than anyone else on the path of suffering. (199-071, 1990.02.15)

59 For the sake of his nation, a patriot will sell his land. He will sell his cows and pigs. He will continue in this way even if it means that he cannot afford to send his sons and daughters to school. A patriot's way is to fight for his country at the sacrifice of his flesh and blood. He does so for the sake of his descendants. (138-041, 1986.01.13)

60 A patriot is ready to sacrifice his or her family, relatives and tribe for the sake of the nation. A faithful wife is ready to sacrifice herself for the sake of her husband, and a filial son sacrifices himself for his parents. Sacrifice is the basic principle—sacrifice for the sake of goodness. Sacrifice means denying oneself. Perfect sacrifice is total self-denial. (127-258, 1983.05.15)

61 For citizens of a nation, the way of truth is to serve the leader of the nation with unchanging devotion. This is the way of a patriot. As we are citizens, we need to go the way of patriots. For members of the human race, the way of truth is to go the way of a world-level saint. As we are members of the human race, we need to go the way of world-level saints. It means that we love the people of the world beyond the borders of our nation as we love our brothers and sisters and as we love our spouse. This is the way of truth for the world. (169-082, 1987.10.25)

62 In this world there are people who are loyal to their family, there are people who are loyal to their community, and there are people who are loyal to their nation. Those who are loyal to their nation make the condition to leave a legacy—to pass on their national ideals as a tradition to their descendants. However, everyone

living in this earthly world is destined to stand at the court of judgment. To prepare us for it, religions teach us to become not simply patriots who are loyal to our nation, or children who are filial to our parents, but children who are filial to God, the Father of the entire world, and to the King of kings and Lord of lords. This is the right way that all religions teach. (9-224, 1960.05.29)

63 It is said that a person whose loyalty is for his nation is a patriot and a person who loves humanity and the world beyond the borders of his nation is a saint. This principle defines the right way for filial children toward their family, patriots for their nation, saints for the world, and divine sons and daughters for the sake of heaven and earth. We are called to be people who, like Jesus, connect humankind with love to the law of the heavenly kingdom and to the decrees that come from the Heavenly Palace. This way leads us in one straight line. On the other hand, the love of the devil goes the opposite way. That is why the habits of those on Satan's side are 180 degrees different from those on Heaven's side. Historically, the character of people on Satan's side is to demand that others invest for their sake, whereas the character of people on God's side is to give of themselves for the sake of others. In the end, it is the latter who become owners. (213-015, 1991.01.13)

64 What is the difference between a patriot and a saint? A patriot does not go beyond his or her nation, but a world-level saint transcends his or her nation. The love of a saint is not limited to one nation. That person lives a life of love, enduring hardships and suffering, for the sake of humanity and the world. (223-142, 1991.11.10)

65 Christianity speaks of sons and daughters of God, people who are like Jesus. These divine sons and daughters represent all the realms of the love and work of the heavenly kingdom, and they represent the realm of love for humanity on earth. Beyond this, divine sons and daughters are equipped with the internal and external qualities of the heavenly kingdom, they uphold the kingship of the Palace, and they live a life of love. Divine sons and daughters are different from world-level saints. Saints, even world-level saints, endeavored to love humanity based on brotherly love—a somewhat nebulous concept. Divine sons and daughters, on the other hand, focus their love on building God's kingdom—the kingdom of heaven on earth and kingdom of heaven in heaven. Their subject partner is eternal. People in a nation live for their generation, but the kingdom of heaven's sovereignty should represent eternity. Sons and daughters of God are those who pledge to center their love on the sovereignty of the kingdom of heaven to the very end. (223-142, 1991.11.10)

66 What is the way of divine sons and daughters? It represents the tradition of loyalty and filial piety, but for the sake of the invisible spirit world as well as this visible human world. The way of divine sons and daughters requires sacrificing the love of even the great world-level saints in order to pave the way to a higher love. When Jesus Christ came to earth, he knew the law for divine sons and daughters and how to follow the right way of a divine son. Therefore he loved even his enemies. (140-146, 1986.02.09)

67 The founders of the great religions were world-level saints, people who loved the world. All religious leaders should follow the right way of these saints. Theirs was the path to love the world, transcending human history and national boundaries. Theirs was a love that has lasted for thousands of years. Then, who are divine sons and daughters, like Jesus? They are the people who are centered on God and who love God's kingdom and His sovereignty. (211-276, 1990.12.30)

68 Filial children are those people in a family who love their parents and live for their sake. Patriots are people who love their nation and live for its sake, and saints are people who love the world and live for its sake. I am teaching you to become divine sons and daughters who love God and the universe, by living for their sake. In order to become a divine child of God, you need to have a loving heart like God. (129-099, 1983.10.01)

69 What is the common thread running through human history? Even though the world is fallen, history has unfolded based on ethics and morality. The center of morality is love. Filial children are those who love their parents more and more; patriots are those who love their country more and more. The path of a saint teaches us to transcend nationality and love the world. A world-level saints takes it as their duty to love the world more than they love their own family or own country. The way of divine sons and daughters teaches us to transcend this world and love with the highest love in accordance with the decrees from the Heavenly Palace. All these levels unfold in this way, centering on love. (206-062, 1990.10.03)

70 Once you become a patriot, you are automatically a filial child. As a patriot, you stand above tens of thousands of filial children. When you become a world-level saint, who is on a higher level than a patriot, you can embrace tens of thousands of patriots. Divine sons and daughters are God's children. When a person follows the way of a divine son or daughter, saints in vast numbers will necessarily love and serve that person. What kind of person goes the way of a filial child, the way of a patriot, the way of a saint and the way of a divine child? It is a person who loves

and serves others for a higher purpose, loving them more than they love their own life, more than they love their own spouse and children. (194-275, 1989.10.29)

71 Being a saint does not make you a divine son or daughter; it does not make you a filial child of God. You still have to become a divine son or daughter. No matter how devoted you are to the ruler of your nation and the people of your nation, in order to become a divine son or daughter you have to know the decrees issued from the Heavenly Palace. You have to know the one law as decreed from the Heavenly Palace, be governed by that law, and move to its rhythm. (147-282, 1986.10.01)

72 On earth, you must equip yourself with the qualifications to earn the title of a patriot, then the title of a saint who can represent the world, and then the title of a divine son or daughter who can represent heaven and earth. Who are divine sons and daughters? They are those who know how to keep the decrees of the Palace in the kingdom of heaven. Jesus Christ knew how to do that, and that is why we call him the Son of God. Filial children of God invest their entire life in giving love for the sake of others; they love their family, their nation and the world. When you walk the way of divine sons and daughters, you are investing not only for one generation; your position represents many hundreds of generations. The question when you die is: How much, through your investment, were you able to bring your ancestors in the spirit world down to earth to help you widen your foundation and influence the world beyond your nation? In the heavenly kingdom, your status is determined by the scope of your love for others. (170-202, 1987.11.15)

73 The way of divine sons and daughters requires you to know and adjust to the decrees of the Palace in the kingdom of heaven on earth and in heaven. This is the duty of heavenly princes and princesses. This is what Heavenly Father does, so we should inherit God's parental heart, inherit the heart of His kingship, and day and night aim to live up to it. This is what a true son or daughter of God does. A divine son or daughter should walk the way of love along the shortest route, without twists or turns, from the family level all the way to the kingdom of heaven. (194-224, 1989.10.22)

74 A saint is a person who devotes his or her life for the sake of humanity. A divine son or daughter is a person who not only lives for the sake of humanity but also serves the people of the world as if they are serving God. Those whom history recognizes as world-level saints are those who lived and died for the sake of the people of the world, while those whom history recognizes as the children of God—divine sons and daughters—are people who were loyal to God but also lived for the

sake of thousands of people in the same way that they lived for God. Such is the difference between world- level saints and divine sons and daughters. Truly devoted sons and daughters live for the sake of their brothers and sisters just as they live for their mother and father. True patriots serve their nation's people just as they serve their king. Likewise, true divine sons and daughters love all things that belong to God just as they love God. (133-243, 1984.07.19)

Section 3. The True Parents' Practice of True Love

1 Tribulations and persecution are no problem for those who have tasted God's love. I have suffered persecution to this day, but I walked tall all the way. It is only because I know God that I could overcome world-level difficulties and come to this place to meet you today. I know what God's love is. Who can block the way of true love? No one can stop even the human love between a man and a woman, so who can stop the love of a person who has tasted the love of God, the origin of human life? No one can. (142-118, 1986.03.06)

The path of love True Parents walked

2 To share my history with you, I would have to tell so many stories. There were times of despair, but I never succumbed to despair. I was put in places of servitude, but I was never without backbone. I still remember vividly my experience in Pyongyang. As I walked into prison wearing handcuffs, I waved to the members who had come to say goodbye to me and bid them farewell. I will never forget that moment. Other people go to prison in disappointment and despair, but I went with a heart of hope. God had told me what sorts of people I would meet in prison. When I was hungry, God mobilized people to bring me food. Even though I was unable to speak about the truth, I was always confident, because God showed me living evidence that He was with me by making many people come to me and follow me. (17-032, 1966.11.06)

3 One cost of following the Will was that my clan came to ruin. My father, my mother and most of my siblings perished. Yet with the destruction of my family, God drove me to love all of you. By sacrificing my family and relatives, God led me to love my enemies and their families. Drawing compensation from my enemies for the sacrifice of my family was God's idea; it is the teaching of Unificationism. It explains that God sacrifices His own sons and daughters and those who are closest to Him as He loves and strives to recover nations and peoples that are owned by the enemy. (36-262, 1970.12.06)

4 In my historical position I have been through all manner of shame. You have no idea how much humiliation I endured to set straight the way of the Will. Once I devoted myself for one year and eight months to witness to one woman. Every time I went to her house her husband persecuted me, yet still I sat down at the table to eat with him and witness to her family. To uphold the Principle, I went through the worst course of humiliation a man can endure. (218-153, 1991.07.14)

5 In the course of attending God I never thought of myself. I never asked God, “God, You call me Your beloved Son, so why are You giving me a life of unremitting difficulty?” Instead, I thought of God as more deserving of sympathy than me. That was my thinking even when I was behind bars. From the very first step of my walk on the way of God’s Will, I comforted God. I told Him, “I am still alive to do Your Will. Thank you for protecting me.” I walked such a path in order to leave behind a standard of indemnity in history. To this day, this is the tradition of the Unification Church. No one can invade it; no one can take it away. Only Heavenly Father can touch it, no one else. (043-054, 1971.04.18)

6 On the way of the Will, no matter where you go, if you have the bone marrow of love, heaven and earth will protect you. Even if you are imprisoned, you will not be defeated. In prison I never prayed, “Father! Your beloved son is in prison, so please take revenge on my enemies.” Instead I prayed, “The barriers to God’s love have not yet fallen, so I must go through this course in prison. As Moses struck the Red Sea with his staff to divide it, please strike my mind and body, to divide the Red Sea of this fallen world. My flesh may be torn and my bones may be broken, but I will go on. I am still alive!” (180-119, 1988.08.07)

7 Until I complete the Will, I cannot afford to be exhausted. It is because I know God’s situation. In this respect I am different from you. Even though all of you may abandon the way of God’s Will, I absolutely cannot. You may be able to return to the world and give up the Will, but I cannot. I must keep going, even if I am the only one remaining. (33-246, 1970.08.16)

8 I have done a great deal of work up till now, and I also invested large amounts of money. But I never invested money for the purpose of making more money. I have never worked for honor or fame. I have shed blood, sweat and tears to liberate God from His sorrow and pain and to bring true peace to humanity. Why? Unless we liberate God from sorrow and pain on every level— from the individual and the family to the nation and the world—and thus make Him happy, true peace can never come to humankind. Because I thoroughly understand this point, I have been practicing this way of life. (198-163, 1990.02.01)

9 I have walked this path at the sacrifice of my family, my wife and my children. When I began this path, I never thought of first giving worldly blessings to my mother and father and my clan. The way of a patriot is to give his love and devotion to his nation before serving his own family. Such is the way of a patriot. The way of a world-level saint is to leave his own country behind, set out to love and serve the world, and teach the people of the world to love their own nations. The way of divine sons and daughters is to be born anew as princes and princesses of the heavenly kingdom and live by the divine law on earth. Then they will continue loving based on the divine law when they go to the heavenly kingdom in heaven. (172-334, 1988.01.31)

Loving your enemy

10 In my life I have had many experiences as a wayfarer. I wandered along many roads at sunset as the last light heralded nightfall. I still cannot forget the time I prayed, carrying my rucksack on my back, "I have continued on for Your sake. I left behind my wife and child. Yet I cannot do otherwise." I was facing a fork in the road. I had to succeed in going the path of loyalty to God. I knew that if I failed, I would become nothing but an enemy. Therefore I prayed, resolving not to take time to love my own wife and child until I could welcome God to the earth. This is the bloody road I had to take in order to save this world. I knew that unless I made this resolution, I could not build a true world. You too need to make such a resolution. You are in a position to build this world with me, so you should not weep while holding on to your wife and children. Rather, you should shed tears while embracing the greater world that you are working to recover in the future. (18-164, 1967.06.04)

11 There were no shortcuts, there was no smooth path for this wayfarer with a rucksack on his back. Mine was a tiresome, difficult path as I searched while shedding blood and tears. My course as a wayfarer, as a youth seeking the path of Heaven, was like that of a hunted and hounded lamb. On that path the tears that fell from my eyes were not my tears; they were tears that God shed through me. (18-164, 1967.06.04)

12 The Bible warns us not to forsake our first love. My first love is for God, and to this day I have never forsaken Him, even while walking the way of suffering and adversity as I carried the responsibility for the providence of restoration. No matter what anyone said, and even though my life was torn to pieces thousands of times, I could not deny that love. God knows it. When I see God, I feel heartrending sorrow. When I think of God's situation, sometimes I feel resentful toward the thirty million

Korean people who are opposing God's Will. But when I think of His suffering throughout the six thousand years of providential history, of His endless endurance as He leads the providence of restoration, I feel ashamed. This is why I too must endure. (17-033, 1966.11.06)

13 If God had cursed fallen human beings, their way for the future would have been blocked. But God did not do that, and hence the hope of salvation has remained throughout human history. I have inherited this tradition and this heart of love; therefore, I prayed for my enemies, even though they hounded me to the point of death. I filled their cups with God's blessings. I am praying even now for God to bless them. This is my teaching as the teacher of the Unification Church. You who have been attending me for many years cannot deny it, because you witnessed it with your own eyes and experienced it as a fact. I am the one who carries God's bitter sorrow deep in my heart. Yet I know that even if I could draw a sword and slash to pieces the heads and bodies of the thirty million people of this nation who behave like my enemies, it would still not dissolve God's bitter sorrow. Instead, since I know that the way of love is to love them even more, I have to make known to them the love of God that I keep in my heart. (22-108, 1969.01.26)

14 I was whipped brutally while walking this path. Sometimes just thinking of what they did to me filled me with indignation. When I felt that way I just wanted to smash them all. But when I thought of God, I pitied my enemies. I knew that God still persisted in His affection for them and I resolved to love them more. When I thought of that, there was nothing I could do but try to comfort God. When I returned after being severely beaten, I busied myself with trying to comfort the broken heart of my Father, who shed bitter tears on receiving me, His son, in that condition. I have been busy on my path. I paid no heed when village dogs barked at me, or when a landslide nearly buried me. This has been my path as the teacher of the Unification Church. For decades of my life I devoted myself to this path. During the time of the Japanese occupation, even while I was busy with this work, I was persecuted and imprisoned. Wherever I went, I was harassed, hounded, rejected and cast into miserable circumstances. Still, I never reproached Satan; I only lamented that the environment was not yet prepared, and I continued my work. (18-254, 1967.06.11)

15 In the Bible we learn that Jesus washed the feet of his disciples. Unless you adopt this tradition, you cannot rally people around you. I have done that. Once, when I heard the news that my enemy's children were going hungry, I sent them everything I had except my underwear and one of my blankets. For one week I lived with only one set of underwear and one blanket. Later I sold the only blanket I had

left, for them. Why did I do it? It was not because I was a fool; it was because I had to set the condition of totally loving my enemy on the way of restoration. I did it because I had to practice the Bible's words, "Love your enemy." (23-320, 1969.06.08)

16 Because of whom does God support the Unification Church? I hope you are a person who can say, "It is because of me." Please live in such a way that God can give you His help and support. You must become such people. This has been my secret and my philosophy of life. I am saying that you must be the people who leave God no choice but to help Korea because of you. You should become such leaders. The question is whether you can draw God to the Unification Church. Do not hate your enemy. Do not rejoice at your enemy's ruin. If God were happy to see His enemy ruined, this world would no longer exist. When God cannot hate anyone, not even Satan, how can I? (17-343, 1967.05.10)

17 When you shed tears, lamenting sorrowfully that you could not love God enough, or you could not love the world enough, or you could not love your country enough, God will comfort you with tears, saying, "It's alright. That day will come. Because you have such a sincere aspiration, I will bring it to pass." I need you to become such people. Once you are able to live that way, then you can love your tribe, your family, and last of all yourself. This should have been people's central mindset throughout God's providential history. (22-149, 1969.02.02)

18 I came to know the story of God's sorrowful history. I came to know of God's heart when He sent Jesus to his tragic fate. So I thought about how I could offer myself for the sake of God's Will. While the entire Korean people ridiculed me and the world persecuted me, I loved my enemies more than anyone else in order to bring them back to God. I not only loved them, I even wished blessings on them. Then I thought about how I could leave in my will a request to my sons and daughters that they would bless my enemies and love them on my behalf. This has been my aspiration, and I have paved the way to bring it to pass. (22-131, 1969.02.02)

The practice of loving the people in the realm of Cain

19 My mother loved me dearly. She gave birth to thirteen children, eight of whom survived, two sons and six daughters. Among them, my mother loved me the most. But I never had a chance to show her my love. I did not even buy my mother so much as a handkerchief to express my devotion. This is because I had to follow God. I had to love the world more than my mother. Had I not, it would have been as if I

were stealing God's love. I would have become a swindler. I have to love this world more than I love my mother, and more than I love my wife and children. Even if I was not able to personally love an enemy who shot arrows at me, I have to love that enemy's children. Even though God cannot love the fallen archangel himself, He has to love his descendants and restore them. This has been God's providence. Therefore you and I also have to love Satan's sons and daughters. (25-224, 1969.10.04)

20 After endless, bitter suffering, I discovered all the secrets of the spirit world. This discovery was a precious treasure, of priceless value. Yet I could not share it with my parents, my brother or my sisters. Isn't this tragic? When I left my mother by herself, I could not stop crying. I said in my heart, "Mother, I'm leaving home, and because of the way I must go, I may never see you again. Please forgive me." After I departed like that, she came to see me in prison, weeping endless tears. But I could not offer words to comfort my own mother. Instead, I asked her to stop crying. I encouraged her, saying, "Accept that you are not the mother of an insignificant man. Please accept that you are the mother who gave birth to a great and true man." This is my history. (22-125, 1969.02.02)

21 You must love the sons and daughters on Satan's side before you love your own sons and daughters. Without making the condition of loving the children on Satan's side, you should not love your own children. Because I faced that circumstance, I had to desert my child and cross the thirty-eighth parallel into North Korea. I had to make the condition of loving many people in an enemy country and then return. I could return only after I had gained that victory in the enemy country. (100-321, 1978.10.22)

22 Until I turned thirty I never bought clothes for myself. It was not that I had no money. It was that I was in charge of many members and I was unable to take care of their needs sufficiently. I wanted to look after those whom I considered my sons and daughters first, with all my devotion, before looking after myself. This is the teaching of the Way, and this is the heart of a parent. Since I had not reached the point where I could provide for my members' needs, neither would I buy clothes for myself. Also, until I was thirty, I never went a day without feeling hungry. It was not because I lacked money. I had money, but I did not spend it for myself. Once I spent it on a man who was lying ill on the street and could not go home. I helped him, even carrying him on my back for a long distance. (34-349, 1970.09.20)

23 Whenever I saw people coming to the Unification Church in threadbare, patched clothing, I gave them money to buy clothes. But I never bought my mother or father

a single set of clothes. Then how could I face my parents? Whenever I saw people pale from hunger, I could not eat the food that was in front of me. Even after they left they would come to my mind, and I could not eat. So whenever I had something good to eat, I saved it and gave it to the next hungry person I saw. I served everyone who came to see me with all my heart, even going to great lengths so that they would never forget. (22-172, 1969.02.02)

My prison life and the practice of truly loving others

24 I experienced life in the prison of all prisons. I have been imprisoned a number of times, but prison life never drove me to sorrow. I looked at prison as my best training ground. Could I truly love humanity? Could I truly love my enemy? Could I truly share my breath, nose to nose, with those who were sentenced to death? Thinking about such things, I considered prison to be a good environment for training myself. Also, it was where I reflected on whether I could really feel the bitter sorrow of my people and whether I had the passion to sharply criticize social injustice. Prison is where our church began. It was there that I had to find the way to overcome the environment and set up the standard of human dignity. There I had to be a champion of the standard of character that God envisaged for the person who would become His original embodiment. My guiding philosophy has been to secure this victory; this has been my lifelong pursuit. (26-017, 1969.10.14)

25 While in prison I was whipped, beaten, tortured and bloodied, yet I never resented those who beat me. The true God is the God who sacrificed His beloved son to save His enemies. Not only that, He gave away all His treasures to His enemy. That is the love of God. God's way is to pray with tears for the one who holds the whip. This is why I did so, and still do to this day. (32-270, 1970.07.19)

26 I have experienced prison life many times since the age of twenty-four. I am a man who never surrendered to the authorities. Even under torture, even when my nose was broken and blood oozed from the wounds on my head, even when my neck was injured, I kept absolute faith and conviction in God. I held out against my torturers, thinking, "Go ahead and hit me. The bat will break, not my body. Go ahead and cut off my hands. No matter what cruel tortures you put me through, still I will not give in." Countless such stories are embedded deep in the marrow of my bones. In these incomprehensible places, where no one can come up with answers as to why, I came to recognize that my Father's tearful love was right there. And still I know that many thorny paths and deep valleys lie ahead of me, paths that others will not understand and which I must face alone. (025-120, 1969.09.30)

27 My parents came to visit me when I was in prison, but immediately I sent them home. I had to do that. I never accepted visits from my brother and my sisters. I sacrificed my brother and my sisters, my family and my relatives, in order to find new people. I have loved all of you more than I loved my own parents, brother, sisters and relatives. I have done so because God is like that. God sacrificed His own Son to save the world. God had to sacrifice the life of His only begotten Son. Hoping to save the whole world, He would do even that. I am following His example. (52-196, 1971.12.29)

28 In prison I met so many people who followed me. They received revelations from Heaven to follow me. But those who followed me before I went to prison dispersed. They doubted, "How can someone whom God loves so much end up in prison?" Jesus too lost his twelve disciples when he went to the cross. So I had to restore those twelve disciples in prison. In the prison cell were communist spies disguised as inmates, so I could not speak a word. But the spirit world testified and people followed me. When I was hungry, people brought me rice balls. It was because their ancestors appeared in their dreams and asked them to do so. (52-155, 1971.12.27)

29 You have no idea how relentlessly God put me through hard training. To me, God was not a loving God. Thinking of how He treated me makes me shudder. If I had the mind of a businessman, I would have run away long ago. I would have forgotten about the Will and run far, far away from God, with the fear that He would come after me. And yet, it was when I was suffering in prison that I felt God's love the most. In that place I came to know, "Truly, truly, God loves me." So I did not dislike going to prison. You Unification Church members need to suffer, even if it means going to a prison or a detention center. Where can you meet God? It is in the most serious and difficult place that you can meet God. (217-266, 1991.06.02)

Endless investment for the nation and the world

30 Many Korean patriots have shed tears for their people, but I do not know anyone who has shed more tears than I have. Even now, I cannot forget my prayer at two in the morning on April 1, 1941. I was looking back at Korea from the boat on which I had just left the dock at Busan on the way to Japan, where I was to study. I promised Korea, "I am leaving you now, but when I return I will love you more than ever; I will shed more tears for you than ever." In Japan, whenever I met Korean friends who were going hungry, I gave them whatever food I had, even though it left me with nothing. Whenever I met starving Korean students I embraced them in my arms and wept with them. When they had no food, I took off

my school uniform and worked at the dock as a stevedore or worked carrying coal on my back to earn money for their food. Please understand how I fought to love my young comrades. Whoever met me came to think of me as their best friend. (22-123, 1969.02.02)

31 To this day, whom have I loved? Not my parents or my wife and children. I have loved the world and I have loved my country. In order to love the world and love my country, I also have to love my people and my tribe—the Unification Church members. To love the nation that God wants to love on earth, I have to love the tribe that God wants to love on earth and love the family that God wants to love on earth. I have shed so many tears of love for humankind. I am confident that God will recognize this publicly. I also have shed so many tears for this country. I have loved my people more than anyone else has, and I have loved my tribe more than anyone else has. (22-137, 1969.02.02)

32 This man with knowledge of the new truth was born in the impoverished country of Korea. Born in this war-torn land, I suffered beyond anyone's imagination. I was scorned countless times, and I was hounded relentlessly. Yet despite all that, I have come this far. Do not ever think that I am sitting here comfortably on a wave of good luck. Please wake up! While you were enjoying yourself in comfort and humming along, I shed tears for the Will while standing under the eaves of some farmer's house to get out of the rain. I wandered about the streets like a beggar in the sleet and cold. I am still fighting for my people and for the world. I tell you, when on a bus or on a streetcar you see some poor young person in dripping wet clothes, you should not mistreat him. Your teacher walked that road. (22-143, 1969.02.02)

33 I was not born into a lowly family. It was not my lot in life to suffer. But had I not chosen the path of suffering, I could not have opened the way of restoration. So I had to go this way. My heart was burning with ardor to love the Korean people and all humankind. I longed to move God's heart to tears so that He could relate to this people and the world, and love them. Because I moved God to relate to this peninsula, this desolate land, I have no doubt that the day will come in the future when the whole world will welcome Korea as their homeland, centering on the teachings of Unificationism. (22-143, 1969.02.02)

34 I left my hometown, I left my country and I left my church in Korea, only to be persecuted, abused and pursued as I continued on my way, even to this hour. Yet even while we are pursued and hounded, we are growing. We are not people of despair; we are people of hope. We are people united in one love that cannot be

severed by anything in the world; therefore no one can conquer us. Only love can bring the complete victory. Where there is love, there is eternal victory and the possibility to build the eternal kingdom of heaven. In the presence of love, everything is liberated. This is where I am heading. (48-014, 1971.08.31)

35 I have loved God, I have loved the world, and I have loved humankind. Right after the liberation of Korea from Japan, I loved even the enemies who had tried to have me executed as a criminal. I even sold my suit, even my undergarments, and gave the money to one of these men when his son was starving. Then I lived for two weeks with nothing. I could not even go outside because I had nothing proper to wear. I did not do this from a calculating motivation; I did it from my genuine heart. I never pray in tears for my own sons and daughters; instead I pray in tears for you. Were it not for this foundation of shedding tears for you, God would not have carried out His works to this day. (22-149, 1969.02.02)

36 My desire for you is that you love God first before you love me. I have been trying to teach Mother and my children that they should not love me unless they love God first. Hence, they should not be sad when I leave home to travel for tens of thousands of miles on a pilgrimage to love God. All of you must love God and humankind before loving me. I want you to practice the law of public righteousness and, wherever you go, stand on that authority. Without doing that, any promises you make are empty. Here heavenly law and the principle of human morality are the same. (22-147, 1969.02.02)

BOOK 4 TRUE PERSON

Chapter 1. The True Human Beings that God Created

Section 1. True Human Beings Are the Embodiments of God ... 363

Section 2. The Mind and Body of a True Person ...368

Section 3. The Purpose of Our Creation and the Three Great Blessings ... 378

Section 4. Our Value in Unity with God ... 384

Section 5. Our Position in the Created World ... 387

Chapter 2. Our Portion of Responsibility and the Fall

Section 1. Our Growth and Portion of Responsibility ...390

Section 2. The Human Fall ... 402

Section 3. The Results of the Fall ... 414

Chapter 3. The Path of Restoration toward God's Original Ideal

Section 1. Restoration through Indemnity ... 423

Section 2. The Path of Restoration through the Blessing ... 431

Section 3. The Life True Person ... 437

Chapter 4. The Life Course of True Men and Women

Section 1. The Way of Our Original Nature ... 447

Section 2. The Path to Individual Perfection ... 451

Section 3. True Love between Man and Woman and True Marriage ...456

Section 4. The Path of a Life of True Love ... 466

BOOK 4 TRUE PERSON

CHAPTER 1 The True Human Beings that God Created

Section 1. True Human Beings Are the Embodiments of God

1 All things have form, but God, as an incorporeal being, has no form. In terms of size, He can be infinitely large or infinitely small. All things of creation have substantial bodies, however. If God were to manifest or exhibit Himself in one particular pattern or form, He would not be able to directly govern them. For this reason, in order to be the Lord of the substantial world of creation, God must manifest His form and character through a substantial being. God should have dominion over all created beings, those on earth and those in the infinite spirit

world. In order to govern incorporeal substantial beings, including the archangels, as well as the beings with their myriad forms in the corporeal substantial world, God needs central beings that manifest His complete image. This is why God created Adam and Eve. (35-157, 1970.10.13)

Why God created human beings

2 Why did God create human beings? He created them because of love. God did not create just to make some kind of artwork. He began the creation because of love. For this reason, love precedes existence. God made the model of love as the standard, and then created. From this ideal model, God created a man and a woman and the entire created world. (161-327, 1987.03.08)

3 Why did God, the Absolute Being, create men and women? It was not for money, knowledge or power. It was for love. The only way God can feel love is through His partners, human beings. From this point of view, we can say that God is the Father and human beings are His sons and daughters. This relationship is the axis. If God and human beings had been connected through this axis, they would have become one in love. Then absolutely nothing could sever their relationship. (137-057, 1985.12.18)

4 What do you think was God's purpose in creating human beings? Simply put, even though God is omniscient, omnipotent and omnipresent, He did not want to be alone. Hence, God created the cosmos as an environment for human beings, and on that foundation He created human beings to be His partners of absolute love. Because God created human beings as His children, He wanted them, as His object partners, to be better and greater than He is. Even in this world, don't people want their children to live better than they do and become better than they are? This tradition of parents' love is a blessing that God bestowed on human beings. God's purpose of creation was to experience joy in seeing men and women, His children, grow to perfect themselves in spirit, blessing them in marriage, and having them bear the fruit of true love, true life and true lineage by multiplying true children, creating true families, and building and living in the eternal, ideal kingdom of heaven. (474-162, 2004.10.30)

5 God began creating heaven and earth and all things in order to develop the world of His object partners. Specifically, God wanted to create others like Himself as His counterparts. That is why God invested Himself. God intended to evolve from being a God who is not seen to being a God who is seen. The work of creation requires investing, which consumes energy. How much did God invest Himself in creating? He completely poured out His true life, true love and true ideal. Therefore, the situation before God created and the situation afterward were different. Before He began creating, God was thinking of Himself, but after He began creating, He lived completely for the sake of His counterparts. That is why we too exist not for

ourselves but for our counterparts. The words “love” and “ideal” exist only when we live for our object partner. Hence the basis of an ideal existence is to live for the sake of our counterparts. It can never be based on living for ourselves. (69-082, 1973.10.20)

6 Why did God create human beings? It was not just so He could watch His sons and daughters live their lives. When I deeply pondered this question, I concluded that He created us in order to share love with us. God’s purpose in creating us is love. Love is the foundation upon which God created life. God did not generate love after first creating life. In other words, life germinated because love began to grow in God’s heart. Since life sprang from that love, its result should come about by means of that love. Since the beginning was love, the end must also be love. This is why we human beings are miserable when there is no love in our lives. When we talk about love we do not talk about ourselves, because love occurs through mutual relationships. Love can arise only through a relationship between subject and object partners. (57-022, 1972.05.21)

7 God’s last step in realizing His purpose of creation was to assume a form. The incorporeal God cannot govern the physical world directly, so to be the Father and Mother of all humankind, God has to manifest in physical form. He has to embody Himself in the physical forms of human beings, so that when these human beings relate to one another as subject partners and object partners and are stimulated through their sensory organs, He also will experience that stimulation. (025-343, 1969.10.12)

8 Why do you think God needed Adam and Eve? God had two purposes in mind. First, He wanted to realize the ideal of love. Second, being incorporeal, God wished to manifest Himself in a form. Adam and Eve were to be the base and core through which the incorporeal God could assume form and establish a relationship with the corporeal world. If you could look at the perfected Adam and Eve in the spirit world, Adam and Eve would be like God’s body and God would be like Adam and Eve’s mind. Like the mind, God is invisible. God’s purpose in creating Adam and Eve was so that each of them would be a complete person, like the mind and the body of the substantial world. As a result, as perfected people in the spirit world, each of them would be a unified human being. (092-147, 1977.04.01)

9 When God and human beings become one through love, Adam’s body and God’s body—the God embodied in Adam—become one, and Adam’s mind and God’s mind become one. It is likewise with Eve. Then God can fully feel the image of Adam and the image of Eve. This is the basis from which the principle of origin, division and union begins. The origin is divided and then comes together. What is the purpose of division? The first reason is so that God can be in the position to perfect His love through His object partners of love, who have bodies. His love is not perfected as a vertical relationship of above and below, but through beings in a

horizontal relationship. In the same way that the mind is vertical and the body is horizontal, God also has mind and body. His body being one with Adam's body and His mind being one with Adam's mind, and likewise with Eve, God finds His substantial self through a substantial man or woman who are united in mind and body. The invisible God exists with internal character and external form, but His existence is on the level of a mind. That is why, to become one with the physical world, God created Adam and Eve. (294-243, 1998.08.05)

10 Why did God create Adam and Eve? God, being formless, cannot have direct dominion over the world of substance. The invisible God cannot directly govern the visible world of creation, the universe. This is the reason God needs to assume a body. Furthermore, it is in a body that God can experience love. This is why He created human beings—Adam and Eve. When God incarnates in them and experiences love through them, God is stimulated internally and externally. As long as God is only existing on the level of a mind, He will not be able to experience stimulation without a physical counterpart. (166-232, 1987.06.07)

11 God exists as a being without form, and as such He cannot feel stimulation when relating to the universe of forms. He can try to stimulate Himself, but no matter how much He does, as long as it is only in His mind, which is incorporeal, He is unable to feel stimulated. There cannot be stimulation between things that are the same. However, when two contrasting things come together, such as warm and cold ocean currents, spectacular reactions can take place. God longed for that kind of stimulation. He needed something that would be stimulating and alive, yet at some distance from Him. That is why God in the plus position created His partners in the minus position. (141-038, 1986.02.16)

12 The Principle of Creation explains why God created by dividing His dual characteristics. If we view God as complete, then we can view Adam and Eve each as half of God. Adam is half of God, and Eve is half of God. It is so since God divided Himself in creating them. What is the purpose of having each substantial being be half of God? An individual alone cannot make a family, much less a nation or the kingdom of heaven. There must be two halves, Adam and Eve, who become one through love. (380-047, 2002.06.04)

Human beings are the temples of God

13 What would have happened if the first ancestors, Adam and Eve, had not fallen? They would have attained oneness with God. Then they would have inherited from Him the great task of creation and shared His joy in completing it. Standing in the same position, they would have rejoiced together after completing the creation together. Such would have been the relationship between God and humankind. If the original human beings had had nothing to do with the Fall, they would have become God's temples. Had Adam and Eve not fallen, then when they married and

became the human ancestors, God would have entered their minds and dwelt there. Having entered their minds, God would have become their center, and Adam and Eve would have become as God's body. That is why Jesus said, "I am in the Father and the Father is in me." (John 14:10) He meant that he was one body with God. Yet that was supposed to have been the case with Adam and Eve. Jesus did not fall. If likewise Adam and Eve had matured and received the Holy Marriage Blessing with God as their center, they would have become one in the realm of His direct love. God would have been the center of this realm. Had this happened, human beings would have become the embodiments of God, His substantial bodies. (54-064, 1972.03.11)

14 Adam is God's body in substantial form. First Corinthians 3:16 states, "Do you not know that you are God's temple?" What is a temple? A temple is God's dwelling place. Originally, the place in our hearts where love blossoms should be the holy of holies, where God comes to dwell. That is why God was striving to build the temple of universal love in Adam's heart and, from the power of the love generated there, bring the flower of love into bloom. It was for this purpose that God created Adam and Eve and blessed them to create a family that would eventually fill the whole world. (121-113, 1982.10.24)

15 In the Garden of Eden God created all things, and then He created the first ancestors as their lords. When He created human beings, He did not do so for amusement or as a hobby. The hard work and devotion that God invested in creating human beings and establishing them as the center of all created things cannot be described in words. God utterly devoted Himself to create His sons and daughters. He put forth all His effort. He gave all His heart and soul and the essence of His life. He totally poured out all His love and affection. He created human beings as His ultimate creations, to exist in a relationship with Him that no force could ever undo or sever. God created them like this so that through them He would find peace. It is through them that He will one day feel the full range of intimate affection and happiness. (20-207, 1968.06.09)

16 God is the Father of human beings, and human beings are His sons and daughters. God created them by investing the core of His being. Truly, He gave the bone of His bone, the flesh of His flesh, and His very marrow. Thus it is that when people pull on God, He cannot help but be pulled along. Conversely, when God pulls them, they cannot help but be pulled along. God created human beings in such a way that they would share His essence and purpose within their relationships. Human beings were created to receive God's praise. The stories and poems that He would write to praise them would be the greatest stories and poems ever written, far surpassing those of any writer or poet in this world. The object of this praise would not be God, nor would it be any of the creatures He had made. That praise would belong to human beings, the epitome of all creations. (20-207, 1968.06.09)

17 What kind of status should human beings have in relation to God, the subject partner, which would allow them to both govern and be governed by love? Human beings are not meant to receive God's love merely in the position of His disciples. If God had daughters and sons, people would not want to be merely daughters-in-law and sons-in-law; their goal would be to go one step higher—to become His sons and daughters. People do not want any position other than that. God wants us to establish just such a relationship—a parent-child relationship—with Him. The ultimate truth of the universe is that human beings must recover this position. No one has struggled harder than I to understand this truth. I went into a mystical state and asked, "What is the highest truth of the universe, which all people are seeking?" The answer I received was the relationship of parent and child. (54-087, 1972.03.20)

18 Human beings are meant to be the partners of the absolute God. Through absolute love, God and human beings are meant to become as one body. If Adam and Eve had become one body with God in this way, the sons and daughters born to Adam and Eve would have been not only the children of Adam and Eve, they also would have been God's children. If this had happened, God's family, tribe, people, nation and world would have all been realized, substantiating God's lineage. Since the links between them would be rooted in God's eternal love, no one would be able to separate them. Such was to be the kingdom of God's lineage, founded in God's love. It was to have been the kingdom of heaven on earth. (54-065, 1972.03.11)

19 God is the Absolute Being; that Absolute Being is our Father; and that Father is the Sovereign of the cosmos. In other words, from the perspective of the world, God is the sovereign Lord and the center of heaven, but when viewed from our perspective as human beings, God is our Father. How awesome is our Father! The word "Father" signifies that God is the closest being to all people in the spirit world; therefore He can unite them all. It signifies that God is the closest being to all people in the physical world; therefore He can unite them all. It signifies that God is the closest being to me; therefore He can bring unity between Himself and me. There is nothing more intimate than the word "Father," whether in the spirit world or in the physical world. (30-055, 1970.03.15)

Section 2. The Mind and Body of a True Person

1 The world of creation has two axes: a visible axis and an invisible axis. They form a dual structure. The visible axis and the invisible axis rotate around the subject partner at their center, which also rotates along with the two axes. The give-and-receive action between mind and body works in this manner. All beings exist according to this principle. These two axes exist even in the fallen world, but to restore that world we have to repair them. In human beings, the center of the body is the mind. Since the body is connected to the mind with the mind as its center,

the body should rotate around the mind. The body should move according to the commands of the mind. When the mind directs the body to go east the body should go east, and when the mind tells the body to go west the body should go west. (136-014, 1985.12.20)

Mind and body in relationship

2 What is the mind? It is that part of us that received love from the vertical Father, the Creator. The body is that part of us that received love from our horizontal parents. Therefore, the mind is the vertical "I" and the body is the horizontal "I." Their relationship is one of subject partner and object partner. When the circumstances are such that our mind and body are united, horizontal and vertical unity finally takes place within us. With love, the vertical plus and the horizontal minus make a ninety-degree angle as they meet at the ideal and central point of unity. Nothing exists at that central point, but all power flows through it. Power jumps and dives into it; there is no resistance whatsoever. Everything there whirls about like a typhoon that nothing can stop. It is God who made the center in this way; He is truly the King of wisdom. The center exists in a vacuum state. When a vacuum is created, the pulling power becomes hundreds of times stronger, so everything is naturally pulled in. Its pulling power is so strong that it can swallow whatever it encounters, even a big mountain. (229-324, 1992.04.13)

3 The mind is the vertical master because it has inherited God's lineage. The body is the horizontal master; it is the self that received the lineage of the perfected Adam. Thus, there are two masters in each of us. One is the master that inherited God's vertical lineage, but it does not suffice to have only God's lineage. We need a horizontal line that intersects with the vertical line of God's lineage. That intersection is the center where the directions of east, west, north and south can meet. Each of those horizontal lines connects to the vertical line at a ninety-degree angle. When each line extends an equal distance from that perpendicular vertical line to the east, west, north and south, together they form a sphere. (302-156, 1999.06.13)

4 Looking at the mind and the body, the mind is the subject partner, in the plus position, and the body is the object partner, in the minus position. Even so, they fight each other. How did they come to fight? It is because the body became another plus. The body should be eternally the object partner before the mind, but it took over the position of subject partner. That was the Fall. (61-330, 1972.09.03)

5 God's love is vertical, but there must also be horizontal love. Who can possess this horizontal love? The ones in the position to possess it are the true ancestors who have nothing to do with the Fall, who reach perfection and who align themselves with true love. If the human ancestors had become one with God's love in this way, then each of us would have been born through that love. In addition, our minds

and bodies would have resembled God's mind and body, even as they resembled the mind and body of our father and mother, Adam and Eve. This is how it would have been for us. (178-244, 1988.06.05)

6 The mind is the vertical "I" and the body is the horizontal "I." The vertical Parent and my horizontal parents created me together. Had there been no Fall, I would have inherited true love, true life and true lineage from them. That is how I was supposed to come into being. I was meant to be brought into this world when they united in true love. Therefore, I was meant to be a center of the universe and a representative of Heavenly Parent's love, a central manifestation of the formula for horizontal love, and a central being of true love formed through the union of horizontal and vertical love. That is who I was meant to be. (217-153, 1991.05.19)

7 Looking at ourselves, our mind represents the vertical aspect and our body the horizontal aspect. We use the expression, "a mind that is upright and straight." Upright means the mind is correct vertically and horizontally. When it stands vertically it is correct, and when it extends itself horizontally it is correct. When it stands horizontally it is correct, and when it extends itself vertically it is correct. To the mind, which we consider to be vertical, the body is horizontal. Hence, if the mind and body reciprocate well according to the desires of the mind, the mind is at peace. In that case, we grow well. Physical suffering is painful, but the suffering of the mind is worse. That is because the vertical is central. (178-274, 1988.06.08)

8 The mind and body are in different positions. The mind is vertical and the body is horizontal. Yet unless they are united, unless they are made level, we cannot form a perpendicular that is aligned with the direction of God's essential, absolute love. There can be only one perpendicular, not two. So we have to do our best to unite our minds and bodies with our minds as the center, especially in our life of faith. (178-045, 1988.06.01)

9 Each person has a mind and a body. The mind represents a person's vertical aspect and the body his or her horizontal aspect. When you remark, "That person is upright," you say it with the horizontal in mind. To arrive at such an opinion, you did not look at that person solely from a vertical perspective. Inevitably you considered his or her horizontal standard. Believers in Buddhism, for example, try to comprehend the nature of the mind through meditation, but they have not yet discovered what the mind truly is. In fact, it is simple. The mind is the vertical "I" and the body is the horizontal "I". I am perfected as a human being when the vertical "I" and the horizontal "I" unite. What is the center that enables the horizontal and the vertical to unite? There must be an essence by which the two can resonate with each other and unite in a state of perfection. Neither money nor knowledge nor power can create this resonance. The only thing that can bring it forth is God's true love. (226-075, 1992.02.02)

10 The body represents the horizontal and the mind the vertical. The vertical and the horizontal have to meet at a ninety-degree angle within you. When four ninety-degree angles are combined, they make 360 degrees. Unless this happens within you, you cannot be a perfect person. That is why you have to become one centering on the vertical, the mind. To attain unity of mind and body, the body should not be the center. The mind should not vacillate or change under the body's influence. You need to control your body, the horizontal, in order to unite completely with your mind, the vertical. When you have done that, you must find the "I" who abides in complete mind-body unity, where they form a ninety-degree angle. You will find that real "I" only when you grow to perfection and experience conjugal love for the first time. In order for a person living in the east to look west and for a person living in the west to look east, they have to attain maturity. (168-196, 1987.09.20)

11 The mind that takes after the principle of heaven and earth represents the vertical aspect of a human being. That is why we consider that the mind should be high and lofty. Although a mind can be considered broad, within the concept of being broad-minded is also the concept of height. So your mind should be both broad and high. An upright mind should consist of a perpendicular connection reaching to the highest point in heaven and all the way to the ends of the earth. In the world of things in motion, the spherical realm of the great universe, at every point on a plane there can be only one perpendicular. If there is a perpendicular that is desired by all beings in the creation as their ideal, it has to be one. That is true love. That perpendicular, namely, true love, cannot be two. This is so anywhere in the universe. Whether someone is from the East or the West, whether living in the past, the present or the future, there is only one perpendicular of true love. Since God is also connected to that perpendicular, and the action of love takes place at that one point, the ideal that God desires is connected with the realm that arises from the perpendicular. However, this axis, this point of perpendicularity, has not yet been formed on this earth. (177-327, 1988.05.22)

12 We often use the expression "He has an upright mind." Upright means standing straight in a line perpendicular to the ground. We do not use such an expression for a tree that is leaning over. Thus, for a person to have an upright mind means that his or her mind stands straight. That is why human beings walk with an upright posture. A person can be spiritually upright only when his or her mind is vertical. Hence, we have to make the mind completely vertical. Then our body becomes a horizontal line. When we establish the vertical and horizontal within ourselves, the force of the vertical that pulls inward and the force of the horizontal that expands outward are in balance and manifest as centripetal and centrifugal forces. (299-073, 1999.02.04)

13 We each have both a mind and a body. When the mind and body are united, we do not feel distress. But when the mind and body are disunited, when they are not balanced horizontally, we feel inner torment. The problem arises when either the

mind or the body is too overpowering, creating an imbalance. When the mind and body are balanced in horizontal alignment, however, we do not feel anxiety. Also, when the mind and body are aligned with the perpendicular, things begin to move. A lively motion ensues, and we feel joy. That is why everything should be aligned with the perpendicular. The horizontal and the vertical must always be in harmony, joining on the perpendicular. (212-293, 1991.01.08)

14 The kingdom of heaven begins from the love of a man and a woman. The original kingdom of heaven is where the horizontal line unites with the vertical line at the center, based on God's love. With God present, a loving man and a loving woman become a core within the love of God, and their minds and bodies together form a perfect sphere. There, the mind is the vertical self and the body is the horizontal self. Also, the vertical mind is God, and the horizontal body is True Parents. The two are united as one. (217-150, 1991.05.19)

15 The mind is invisible and vertical. The body is visible and horizontal. The family is the microcosm of the great universe. The spirit world exists within human beings. A spirit dwells within us; that is the mind. The invisible mind and the visible body represent the world. Even though they may travel all over the place, as long as they do not leave their orbit around the center of true love, they can form an ideal person. Further, when the invisible mind and the visible body become one with true love at their core, that person will become an ideal man or an ideal woman, a perfect individual. (217-150, 1991.05.19)

The mind is the second God

16 Among ten friends, if one of them says, "Live for me," the others will flee. However, if one of the ten is willing to give up his or her life for the other nine friends, he or she will become their leader. That is why if you live for the sake of others you will not perish. Rather, you will become the owner, the teacher and the parent. God is not far away; He is within you. The mind within you is your master. When you are tempted to do something wrong, your mind speaks up and says, "Don't do it." It interposes itself wherever you are and seeks to become the master. Wherever you are it instructs you, like your mother and your teacher. (201-075, 1990.03.01)

17 Your conscience or higher mind is your second God. God is your first God, in the plus position to your mind. Your mind, in the minus position to God, is your second God. You need to understand this. Again, the mind is your second God. That second God, the mind, is always with you. It relates to you from deep in your conscience, from within the depths of love, life and lineage. It is ever cleansing and removing anything impure, resolving your inner problems and guiding you to a higher place in life. By doing so, your original conscience is also lifted up. The force of this conscience governs your physical self. This force and the physical self are naturally

perfected when they unite and become one, as plus and minus. Thus, your conscience is your second God. It is your center, from which arises a powerful force that governs you all the time. (254-238, 1994.02.13)

18 Your higher mind does not need a teacher. It is already your second God. Rather than follow a teacher, you should follow your higher mind. What is the nature of this mind? When you wake up alone at daybreak, and it is so quiet, and you do not hear even the squeak of a mouse or the buzz of a fly, you think to yourself, "I should do such and such good deeds today" Then your mind will tell you, "Good! Good! Go ahead and do them!" On the other hand, if you harbor evil ideas in your mind, it will chide you and say, "Don't you dare!" That is the way it is. Your mind is well aware of what is good and bad. (138-125, 1986.01.19)

19 Your mind is your watchman. It protects you night and day. It tells you over and over again, "Do good deeds! Do good deeds!" without letting you rest. Have you ever imagined how exhausted your mind is? From the day you began to think for yourself, from the day you acquired the intellectual capacity to analyze situations in society, your conscience has always been following you around and telling you what to do. It will keep doing so until you die. It tells you to take after God, the saints, patriots and children who practice filial piety. It commands you to resemble them all. It keeps telling your body, "My body, you need to resemble me!" (179-312, 1988.08.14)

20 We never knew we had such a wonderful teacher within us. The original mind within you has the aspect of a great mother and father. The teachings of such mothers and fathers never contradict this mind. You should learn to obey whenever this mind counsels you, just as you would your mother or father. Thus far the formula that could serve as the origin of a moral order and bring our whole environment into accord with that order has not appeared. Therefore your original mind must serve as your teacher, as your parent and as God. No teacher can teach that mind. (207-267, 1990.11.11)

21 The original mind guides you better than God does. It existed even before you did. As a guide, this mind or conscience is better than your parents, better than your king, better even than God. It is that precious. When you are about to do something wrong, it does not say, "Hurry up and do it!" No, if you are about to do something perverse, it says, "Don't do it, you rascal!" Therefore, you absolutely need to listen to your conscience. Once you make it a habit, you and your conscience will be in constant dialogue. (338-139, 2000.10.29)

22 When you pray, you have to do it focusing on your original mind. How often do you act in the way this mind desires? No matter how much you call upon God, it is of no use if you ignore your original mind. You can connect with God only once you are united with your original mind. This is why your thinking should always be

rooted in this mind. Always ask your original mind for answers. Instead of asking your parents, ask your eternal conscience. Your conscience will tell you before your parents do. You can leave your parents, but you cannot leave your mind. You can leave your teachers, but you cannot leave your mind. You can leave your lord, but you cannot leave your mind. It is a great sin to ignore your original mind, which lives in attendance to these three subject partners. Doing so is to ignore your parents, your teachers and God, the Lord of the universe. To ignore your original mind is to ignore these three as well. (306-225, 1998.09.23)

23 You should set aside some time to experience the joy of being with your original mind. It may seem to others as if you are all alone, but in fact you are becoming a friend to this mind. Sit down in a tranquil place and meditate. Enter a state of deep prayer. Then you will enter a world deep within, a world that no one else can know. You need to have such experiences. (133-182, 1984.07.10)

24 Your original mind is your lord. It is your teacher. Because a mind gives birth to a body that resembles it, your mind is the root of your body. For this reason, the mind represents your mother and father on the horizontal plane. The original mind represents parents, teachers and owners. (222-157, 1991.11.03)

25 Have you ever considered the value of your original mind, how precious it is? Whenever your body seeks to do something wrong, this mind admonishes it not to and tries to block its way. But too often the body ignores, abuses, and tramples on the mind and does as it pleases. Your mind is interior to your body. It gives of itself time and again to fulfill its duties as your subject partner, your comrade amid hardships, and your teacher until your death. (217-092, 1991.05.04)

26 When you glance at someone, your mind can immediately sense what kind of person he or she is. Before you get to know him or her well, your mind already knows. That is why I declare that the teacher closest to you is your own mind. Hence, you should not torment it or cause it sorrow. If you do, you will sadden the Teacher and Lord of the universe. Your original mind is the lord of your life. When you grieve this mind, you bring sorrow to the lord of your life. Instead, you should follow a path that will cause your mind to rejoice. (133-181, 1984.07.10)

27 Your original mind precedes your parents and teachers. That is because your mind is with you for eternity, while your parents, teachers and lords are not. That is why the mind has such great value. Hence, before you ask your parents a question, you need to discuss it with your original mind. Then you may not even need to ask your parents. Because this mind is directly connected to God, when you go into a state of resonance with it, your body attains the same frequency and you get the right answer. For instance, if you ask your original mind, "Should I meet such and such a person tomorrow?" you will feel either joy or uneasiness in your mind. Your

mind knows whether it is good or bad to meet that person. If it is not good, your mind will prompt you to withdraw. (306-224, 1998.09.23)

28 When you search for what is true, your body must absolutely obey your mind. When your mind and body become one, connected at an uncompromised ninety-degree angle linking heaven and earth and centered on God, you will know everything wherever you go—north, south, east or west, up or down. You will also naturally connect to the spirit world. You will know even things that you were never taught. How do you think I came to know all the secrets of heaven and earth? It is because I entered that state. When I reached the state where my mind and body resonated with true love, everything became clear. I could understand all the fundamental issues of God, the spirit world and history. God's original desire, according to the Principle of Creation, is that we live an ideal life in an environment that enables us to relate and bond with one another in true love. Therefore, once I entered that state, I had access to everything. If I called upon any among humanity's forebears in the spirit world, they would immediately appear so I could ask them questions. (199-372, 1990.02.21)

The way of mind-body unity

29 If your body does something wrong, even late into the night, your conscience will stay awake and say, "Stop it, you rascal!" More than that, if you even think about doing something wrong, you immediately feel pangs of conscience. Through your conscience, the God you thought was dead, and your teachers and parents who seemed to have died within you, come back to life. Hence, you are left with little choice but to follow your conscience. You may wonder whether the conscience and the body were fighting even before the Fall, but the answer is no. No one even now can say that God's conscience and body are fighting each other. Our struggles persist only because we failed to become true sons and daughters of such a God; our root has changed. This is a simple truth, but even the saints and sages of history did not understand it. You do not know how much I struggled over this matter. That is why I say, "Before trying to govern the universe, you must first govern yourself' If you don't, your body is the enemy of the universe. (518-011, 2006.02.14)

30 Throughout our lives, we each have within ourselves a most precious teacher. Nevertheless, we frequently mistreat, abuse and trample on it. That teacher is none other than our conscience. It always speaks to us in its efforts to help us and tries to connect us to true love. Like our parents, it encourages us to become good and unselfish, and it guides us to act according to God's desire. However, within each of us there is a rebel that goes against the voice of the conscience. That rebel is our body. (201-208, 1990.04.09)

31 In the fallen world you recognize who your parents are, who your teachers are and who your leaders are, but as a human being you have a master whom you often do not recognize, namely your conscience. The conscience has planted within us the idea of God, who is the original root of parents, teachers and owners. I was really surprised when I discovered this. The culmination of everything I was looking for, the hidden home within me, was my own conscience. I said to myself, "I cannot hold God accountable for anything. I have to hold myself accountable to follow my conscience and fulfill my mission. Therefore, there is no situation in which I can ask someone else to take responsibility. I must take responsibility myself." This is the stance I take. Because I take this stance, God cannot help but love me. (307-325, 1998.11.21)

32 The revolution of the conscience is an internal revolution. It requires us to obey absolutely the voice of our conscience. All of you still face the internal struggle between your conscience, which prompts you to do good, and your physical desires, which tempt you to do evil. In order to end this shameful internal struggle, you have to understand clearly the position and action of your conscience. Your conscience knows everything you do and everything you think. You cannot add or subtract anything; nothing can be hidden from it. It knows before your teacher does and before your parents do. It knows even before God does. When you disobey your conscience, you feel conscience-stricken. Then dust sticks to your spirit, and stains and scars appear. Such scars are a heavy burden that you take with you to the spirit world, where they can never be erased. Therefore I tell you, you need to control your physical mind with a revolutionary determination and be guided by your conscience, until the day you go before God without any speck, with a clean and clear spirit. (474-182, 2004.10.30)

33 Originally the mind and body were meant to be inseparable, in total oneness. The human mind was supposed to be God's mind and the human body was supposed to hold it as a container. However, due to the Fall, human beings turned their bodies over to the devil and have been his servants ever since. The human conscience is that aspect of the mind that represents God. It does not exist for itself but for the sake of God's righteousness. It constantly seeks the direction of goodness. The body rebels against this. It seeks only physical comfort. It is selfish and instinctively follows carnal desires. The conscience chastises the body and tries to make it conform to the mind. This is why bitter conflict and struggle occur within oneself. (219-118, 1991.08.27)

34 All religions teach their adherents to strike the body. Religion is the training ground where we learn to control our body and its physical desires with the mind. It is the training ground where we cultivate ourselves to become original people in accordance with the ideal of creation. No one, though, can conquer the body without welcoming God into him or herself. Only with the power of God's true love and truth can the mind become the subject partner, take command of the body as

its object partner, and realize the ideal of oneness with God. The result is the human perfection that all religions speak of. (219-118, 1991.08.27)

35 When you have attained oneness in true love, you can attain a perfect score as a person of precious value. Mind- body unity refers to the state in which the physical self resonates in harmony with the conscience. When you strike one prong of a tuning fork, the other prong vibrates at the same frequency. Similarly, when you strike the conscience with true love, the physical self resonates with it. Conversely, when you strike the physical self with true love, the conscience resonates with it. In that state, you do not need any moral education. Once you find that center in yourself, you will know everything without being taught. (223-356, 1991.11.20)

36 Looking at human beings, we can see that the mind and body are at war. This struggle did not start today, in the current age; it began with our first ancestors. As is recorded in the Bible, it began just after the Fall of Adam and Eve. Has there ever been any saint or sage in history who could say, "Model yourself after me, as a representative of human history, for my mind and body are not in conflict; I have realized their complete unity"? The mind is important, and the body is important, but most important of all is that you attain the realm where the mind and body are united. That is vital. Even if the entire world were united, if you had not attained unity between your mind and body, you would be disconsolate. A person torn by this sorrowful struggle would not find a place in the united world, but would be rejected. He or she would be repelled. So before we strive to unite the world, before we strive to achieve the ideal vision of a new world, we have to discover within ourselves the ability to resolve the conflict between mind and body and set them in harmony. (142-325, 1986.03.14)

37 Unification Church members must accomplish mind-body unity under any circumstances. Those who cannot achieve mind-body unity within their lifetime should not muse about love and the ideal; if they do, it is shameful. It is also going against heavenly fortune. The path of new hope opens only to those who wish for it after having achieved perfect mind-body unity. If you stagnate in your current condition, the path of new hope that leads to the kingdom of God will not open up before you. (205-047, 1990.07.07)

38 Human beings were originally created to live with God's true love within their minds and bodies, and to resonate with His love directly. The mind was to resonate with God centered on true love, and the body was to resonate with the mind. The origin of true unity, a state in which the mind and body are not in conflict, begins when we inherit and experience God's true love just as it is. The human ideal of mind-body unity can be realized when we completely possess God's true love. When our mind and body are united based on true love, the ideal of true freedom and peace can begin.' On the foundation of mind-body unity, there will emerge free

and peaceful individuals, free and peaceful families, tribes, peoples, nations, and a world of peace and freedom. (234-271, 1992.08.26)

Section 3. The Purpose of Our Creation and the Three Great Blessings

1 When God created heaven and earth, He did so with absolute faith and absolute love, based on the absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal ideal. As God spoke, everything came into being. It was all in accordance with what God said. Everything was one with God based on absolute faith. The reason God created was to find the partners whom He desired. The invisible God, the God without form, wanted partners of love who would be His visible manifestations, and having form they would be His representatives in the world of form. God would have become embodied in them. This was God's first purpose of creation. It is the same with regard to the spirit world. Although God is incorporeal, God can become the Father and King in the spirit world as well, once His ideal of creation is fulfilled through human beings with form, Adam and Eve. That will occur when Adam and Eve, who have bodies, and their sons and daughters, who have bodies, come to the spirit world. It would be impossible for God to do this without assuming form. Then, what form would that be? God's face will be none other than the faces of Adam and Eve, who will have reached perfection and become one in conjugal union after receiving God's Blessing. Adam and Eve are the partners of God's love. (286-015, 1997.07.01)

The creation of human beings as the object partners of God's joy

2 God's purpose of creation is joy. He created human beings and the world so He could feel joy. Yet joy is not something you can feel alone. To experience joy, you absolutely need an object partner; there must be a pair. When beings establish a reciprocal base and then begin giving and receiving as subject and object partners, they can feel joy. The greatest joy comes from a reciprocal relationship based on love. That is why God created human beings to become His object partners. He wanted to feel eternal joy by giving and receiving love endlessly with them as His object partners. That was His purpose of creation. In order to realize this purpose of creation, God created Adam and Eve. Suppose Adam and Eve had become God's perfect object partners with whom He could rejoice in a reciprocal relationship of love, and then had multiplied children of goodness. They would have made a family of goodness and then expanded into a society of goodness. That society would have developed into a nation of goodness, and that nation would have developed into a world of goodness populated with Adam's family and relatives. It would have been the world of joy, where God's goodness and love were fulfilled. (100-241, 1978.10.19)

3 God can work as Father and Mother after He enters into the dwelling place of Adam and Eve, which He can do because He does not have form. Thus, the reason why God created heaven and earth is to love, through human beings as His

incarnations. God had three purposes for creating human beings. The first was to experience love. The second was to assume a body. The third was to become the Father of humankind. (102-189, 1978.12.24)

4 God created all things of creation in the cosmos and put human beings in the position to have dominion over them. This gave Him great hope. He looked upon Adam and Eve as the personifications of that hope, based on His purpose for the creation. After Adam and Eve had grown to maturity, God intended to dwell within them. He wanted to enter their minds. Not only that, He wanted to establish residence in the deepest part of their hearts. His purpose in creating human beings was to plant His heart in the deepest part of their hearts. (11-090, 1961.02.12)

5 Originally, the first human ancestors should have become completely one with God based on His heart and love. God created the cosmos to complete His purpose of heart. Hence, centering on love, He has to bequeath all the creation to the objects of His heart—His beloved son and daughter, Adam and Eve. God created all the things of creation not for Himself but for Adam and Eve. Thus, His joy arises not from Himself but through Adam and Eve. Parents in the world rejoice when they see that their children are happy. In the same way, God's joy would arise from the joy of His object partners. (15-244, 1965.10.17)

6 God did not create Adam and Eve just to look at them. He wanted to experience joy. Experiencing joy comes from love. So the starting point of creation is love. The starting point of all existence is love. It is from God's love that human beings came into existence; not only human beings but also all animals came into existence from God's love. All living things were given life because of God's love. If human beings have nothing with which to reciprocate with God, if they do not enthusiastically chime in and jump on board, they cannot be true partners of love with the absolute God. (48-220, 1971.09.19)

7 God is the First Cause of the universe and the Creator of everything under the sun. He is also the beloved Father of humankind. He made everything in the creation in order to fulfill His special Will and purpose, the realization of love. God is the origin of true love. Yet despite God's omnipotence, He cannot feel the joy of love by Himself. He needs an object partner to love and wants to receive love freely given in return. That would be from His partners, and for this He created man and woman in the highest position. This is the reason our lives have purpose. That purpose requires us to attain maturity and establish a relationship of eternal true love with God. This is the fundamental Principle, through which we can find peace with God. (166-131, 1972.06.01)

8 In whom is the purpose of creation fulfilled, and through whom does God's Will bear fruit? It is surely through perfected human beings—perfected Adam and Eve—and the mutual relationship they would have with God. Hence, the purpose of

creation is realized when Adam and Eve reach perfection. When Adam and Eve reach perfection, the four- position foundation can be realized. That is the Principle. The purpose of creation is fulfilled when God, Adam and Eve complete the four- position foundation. Hence, God's Will is not only for God Himself; human beings absolutely need it as well. In the end, everything depends on Adam and Eve and whether they perfect themselves according to God's Will. The fulfillment of the Will starts there. Hence, the Will cannot be separated from human beings perfecting themselves as individuals. (091-268, 1977.02.27)

9 The ideal world of creation is the ideal loving family. In that family there is oneness between God and His son and daughter, Adam and Eve, and when Adam and Eve become parents there is oneness between them and their children—all centered on God's love. Therefore, in the ideal world of creation, first of all there should be God. Then there should be true sons and daughters who are centered on God's love. Next there should be true husbands and wives. Finally there should emerge true parents who bear true sons and daughters. We need to recover all these different types of love relationships in order to enter the ideal world of creation. Otherwise, we cannot enter there. We ought to be born amid God's love, perfect ourselves amid God's love, and become husband and wife amid God's love. After that we ought to have sons and daughters amid God's love. (80-269, 1975.11.02)

Loyalty and filial piety as duties to God

10 There is no one on earth, from the individual to all of humankind, who does not desire to be good. That is why people throughout history and to this day have been aspiring to goodness. Educators and people of faith have endeavored to establish the standard of goodness. Therefore, when we are born we should be born for goodness, when we live we should live for goodness, and when we die we should die for goodness. This is the purpose of our life. It is not only the purpose of our life; it is also the purpose of history, which is entwined with the life of every human being. (24-013, 1969.06.22)

11 It may be important to live in affluence and to become somebody significant. However, more than anything else, we need to fulfill our duty of filial piety and loyalty to our vertical Heavenly Parent. We need to surpass the saints in our devotion to God. This is how human beings can begin to fulfill their original purpose. Further, God created us so that He could meet such people. We have such a purpose to fulfill. After fulfilling it, we should become filial children to our natural parents. We absolutely have to become one with them and live with them. (58-231, 1972.06.11)

12 When people feel good, they want to share their joy with their parents, siblings and relatives. Feeling good is happiness. Happiness is eternal, and what makes it

eternal is the heart of love. The center of the universe is the Parent- child relationship between God and me. God is my Father and I am His son. My ultimate purpose in life is feeling the infinite joy that comes from finding our Father and forming an inseparable relationship with Him. (12-104, 1962.12.16)

13 What is the greatest hope of humankind? The biblical passage that states, “And now, faith, hope and love abide, but the greatest of these is love,” is so true. (I Cor. 13:13) Yet people do not fully understand the content of this message. You need to understand clearly that the universe protects and nurtures what is good, and that freedom, liberation and peace abide there. That is because where there is devotion, it creates the power of attraction. (16-133, 1966.01.02)

14 What should be our purpose as human beings? Rather than pursuing one’s purpose as an individual, the purpose of one’s family or social organization, the purpose of one’s nation or of the world, or even that of heaven and earth, we should move forward toward God and the goal and purpose we share in common with Him. What is the purpose that will remain in the end? Purposes that are merely for the individual, family, society, nation or world will surely pass away. At the very end, after everything else is gone, what will endure is the purpose pursued jointly by God and humankind. Only such a purpose can remain until the final chapter of history. (41-323, 1971.02.18)

15 What is your heart’s final destination, where it can settle? Even when you have found God and made Him yours, your heart would not want to rest there. Your heart’s final destination is where you possess not only God but also His love. If you fail to possess His love, everything will be in vain. What is the final purpose of life? The issue is not whether we can meet God, the center of heaven; it is whether we can live together with Him. In what kind of place can we meet Him and live with Him? That core place is the place of His love. Therefore, the greatest aspiration of the human conscience is to follow heavenly fortune, become one with God, and possess His love. (24-017, 1969.06.22)

16 Looking at yourselves, none of you wants to live your life alone and die alone. Every person has a different appearance, but human beings have, deep in their hearts, the aspiration to become global citizens, people whom the world pays attention to. In fact, this is the course of life that all human beings should follow. It is quite normal to have such an aspiration and pursue it. This is because the ultimate human desire is to become an object partner of love to the greatest being. This greatest One is God, our Father. (65-046, 1972.11.13)

The three blessings and the perfect beings of true love

17 When God created Adam and Eve, He gave them the three blessings: “Be fruitful, multiply and fill the earth, and have dominion over every living thing.”

(Gen. 1:28) The first blessing, “be fruitful,” means that human beings should grow and perfect their characters, with God as their center. The second blessing is that a perfected man and woman should become a true husband and wife, have children, and realize an ideal family, thus fulfilling their duty as true parents. The third blessing is that human beings should create the kingdom of heaven on earth, where they would not experience any inconvenience or lack amid the environment that God bestowed upon them. God, who is the Original Being of true love, created human beings as His object partners of true love. He wanted them to become perfected beings of true love, realize the ideal of true love as husband and wife, and create the environment of the kingdom of heaven. (234-270, 1992.08.26)

18 The first hope of human beings is to reach individual perfection. Nevertheless, because they fell, they have to be born anew centered on a resurrected individual. Their second hope is to fulfill a life-long partnership; human beings are born to be blessed in marriage. Their third hope is to multiply good children. Although we may have many good days in our lives, each of us has certain special days. They are the day we were born, the day we married our life partner, and the days when our children were born. Not experiencing all of these special days can make us unhappy. The same is true for God. The most joyful day for God was the day when Adam was born. That is because it was the day He became the Parent God in the physical world. That is to say, the day that Adam was born was also the first day that God could begin His existence as the God of cosmic value in the substantial world. (19-320, 1968.03.29)

19 How can we go to the kingdom of heaven? As it is the place where God resides, we need certain qualifications to enter there. The qualifications are realizing the three blessings: “Be fruitful, multiply and fill the earth, and have dominion over every living thing.” (Gen. 1:28) This is because the kingdom of heaven is the place where loving couples go, together with their children. (12-111, 1962.12.17)

20 The children of blessed families are citizens of the kingdom of heaven. They are citizens of the eternal world. In that world, the number of children you gave birth to can be a source of pride. They are precious assets you can be most proud of. Your spiritual children are also your assets when you go to the kingdom of heaven. When your Abel children and Cain children become one, you will meet the ideal standard for restoring the fallen world. Their oneness brings expansion. That is why Adam has to fulfill the positions of a son, an elder brother and a husband, and Eve has to fulfill the positions of a daughter, an elder sister and a wife. Their courses were set up in this way. Adam and Eve had already begun these courses; they had no way to escape. Even if they wanted to extend these courses, they could not. Your courses are the same. When we analyze this process carefully, we see that men and women are meant to seek each other. That is why you are absolutely required to marry. (246-253, 1993.04.18)

21 God created human beings and gave them the blessing to have dominion over all things. He also said, "Multiply and fill the earth." Once human beings perfected themselves and fulfilled the words of these blessings, God intended to take direct dominion over them. This was His original ideal of creation. However, human beings have not been able to accomplish this. Therefore, we have not been able to govern the earth, we have not been able to multiply in the world of true love, and we have not been able to receive God's true love. This is our sorrow. In these circumstances, we are destined to constantly fall and become Satan's prey. Although we human beings are in this situation, God will raise us up again. He has us accumulate merit so as to clear away all the evil things that are intertwined with fallen humankind. He seeks to unite us and transform us into children of His lineage. All of this is to enable us to have dominion over the earth. This is the purpose that humankind has sought to fulfill throughout history. It is the ultimate hope that all people, in their hearts, aspire to realize. (5-314, 1959.03.01)

Section 4. Our Value in Unity with God

1 When God, in search of love, created His object partners, whom do you think He wanted them to resemble? God created them to resemble Himself. In order to do so, they should reflect His masculine and feminine characteristics. This is where the logic of the dual characteristics originates. God also drew upon His original internal nature and His original external form and manifested His invisible thought as form, having it unfold substantially in human beings. Hence, the Book of Genesis is correct in stating that God created human beings in His own image. (170-169, 1987.11.15)

2 God needs human beings. It is not just that He loves to look at our faces. God loves us not because we have beautiful eyes or good features, or because we resemble Him in outward appearance. God needs and loves us because we have an eternal value as His object partners of true love, with whom He can experience joy for eternity. Hence, on the day when we manifest this value as God's partners, on the day we bring forth this value and become partners in perfect harmony with God, on that day God will be able to burst into laughter for the first time. Just as you do not talk to yourself, God does not talk to Himself; He needs someone to talk to. The human ancestors, Adam and Eve, should have become those partners for God. (127-012, 1983.05.01)

3 God treasures human beings above all else because they are the object partners of His love. That is why God's love is the most precious thing for us. No matter how much love God may have within Him, He cannot feel it without having partners to love. He can experience His own love only in relationship with a partner. It is because we are in the position of these object partners that God cherishes human beings the most. (143-309, 1986.03.21)

4 God has longed for tens of thousands of years to have human beings as His partners. His relationship with them is the foundation of the cosmos. It is a relationship that connects God and human beings both internally and externally. Thus, it establishes the worldview of vertical love and horizontal love. This worldview holds that vertical love and horizontal love unfold by forming relationships of above and below, and left and right. God can then reside at the very center of these relationships. The place where God and human beings bind most tightly together is the center where vertical love and horizontal love meet. Unless their vertical love and their horizontal love join as one, neither of these two kinds of love can manifest the standard of love's ideal. (48-224, 1971.09.19)

5 Human desire knows no bounds. We want to possess even God. The means by which we can satisfy that desire is true love. The one and unique love that God has hidden away can be ours. Since we have the original nature of desiring to possess God, we want to become the best in the world. This is our right as human beings, for we are only seeking to fulfill our original value. God is the King who created the cosmos. Hence, when we become sons and daughters who have God as our Parent, we all will be brothers and sisters under His king- ship. Then God's kingdom will be our kingdom. The responsibility of the sons and daughters, to whom you give birth after receiving the Blessing, is to create parent-daughter unity, parent-son unity and, when they are blessed, husband- wife unity. You have to raise your children so that they can do that. All this is to deal with the most fundamental issue—the relationship between man and woman. (218-133, 1991.07.14)

6 Why do human beings view themselves as the center of the created world? It is because the whole world was created for love. Men and women represent God's love to the rest of creation. They stand in the central position before the Lord, with the privilege of receiving His love first. For this reason, it is said that human beings are the "lords of creation." However, it is impossible to say that we are lords of creation without recognizing that in the first place we are God's partners of love. The unique value of human beings stems from the privilege of being the primary recipients of God's love, representing the whole of the created world. It is because we stand in the position of God's number one partners that we are given the authority to participate in His love, share it with the universe and rule the universe with it. Without love, it would all be nothing. (132-245, 1984.06.20)

The realm where God and human beings are united in love

7 Human beings have been seeking God. Throughout the six thousand years of history we have been moving toward God, not further away. Regarding this relationship, one partner needs to represent plus and the other partner needs to represent minus. Plus cannot connect to plus, and minus cannot connect to minus. There has to be a relationship between the two. That is why we use the expression "heaven and earth," as well as above and below, front and back and left and right.

When we speak of heaven and earth, front and back or right and left, each of us places ourselves in the middle. In the end, then, everything depends on me. From this standpoint, it is not for God to seek the highest standard of character or to seek one world; rather, I must do it. I am the one who must pursue it. In this sense, human beings are the center of the universe. That is why human beings need to become one body with God, and that is why both God and human beings aspire to become one. God has that hope, too. His hope is to create the point of oneness with human beings. We call that point the oneness of heaven, earth and humankind. We human beings absolutely have to attain it. (27-049, 1969.11.23)

8 When God created all things in the Garden of Eden, He made them with absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. Then, with human beings of absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience, God wanted to form the realm where God and human beings are one in love. Once God and human beings are one in love, together they can build the kingdom of heaven on earth and in heaven. There we can freely exercise all authority as children of the absolute God. It is a world of freedom, where we can travel anywhere. When we are able to do all this, then and only then can we liberate God. (301-085, 1999.04.16)

9 In the family, parents are joined in marriage centered on love. The Korean expression, "Husband and wife are one body" is not only about the man, nor is it only about the woman. Nor is it about their family. It simply means that the husband and wife are one because of their love for each other. The same is true for the expression, "Father and son are one body." Although people use that expression, a father and son cannot literally become one body. It means that their love for each other is so great that they will never separate. Because of love, they cannot be separated ever, for all eternity. That is why it is reasonable to conclude that they are "one body." By the same token, if the first human beings had not fallen, God and they would have become one body. They would have become one body as Heavenly Father and His children. Then the man and woman, after growing up in the love of their Heavenly Parent, would have become one body as husband and wife. The family they formed would have realized the ideal of one body because they would have entered the state of one body centering on God's love. (187-105, 1989.02.05)

10 When I probed into the fundamental truths of the cosmos, I agonized most over the question of how love moves and settles. My questions were answered when I discovered one plain truth: true love-travels the shortest distance. When true love descends from heaven to earth, what route do you think it takes? The shortest route travels straight down the vertical line perpendicular to the earth. Since love takes the fastest and shortest route, there can be only one meeting point of the heavenly world and the plane of the earthly world. There cannot be two such points; absolutely there can be only one. (211-078, 1990.12.29)

11 We aspire to become the outer God, with the inner God abiding within us. Everyone harbors this aspiration to become one with God. The ideal of creation is the realization of the four-position foundation. The four-position foundation is realized when Adam and Eve become one with God through love. Within it God is present in all relationships—above and below, left and right, and front and back. Thereby God's love and human love are perfected. This is the perfection of God and human beings united in love. They become one body. (276-254, 1996.02.24)

Section 5. Our Position in the Created World

1 It is said that human beings are the lords of creation. Such a thing can only be said when we stand in the center and are able to represent the value of the whole. All people, whether they do well in life or not, desire to become the center of the world. All beings want to be the best among their kind. If there is an Absolute Center, all beings desire to unite with that center. People want to have a relationship with something of higher value. This is because human beings have the central value representing the overall value of the historical ages. (32-212, 1970.07.19)

2 When God created human beings as the lords of creation, He placed them at the center of heaven and earth as the representatives of everything around them. Because of that, each person can claim the autonomous right to become the center of the universe. There is no such thing in the world of monkeys, lions or tigers. This exists only in the human world. (117-035, 1982.01.31)

3 It is said that human beings are the lords of creation, but the fundamental Lord of all things is God. Human beings have a spirit. The reason human beings are considered lords over other spiritual beings is that human beings ultimately have a direct connection with God. We cannot just become lords of creation by ourselves. We are part of the creation, so how can we be lords of creation? All created beings are relational, resultant beings. A created being cannot connect to its cause by itself; alone, it cannot possess the cause. Instead, all created things are meant to be possessed by the cause. There is no question that human beings are resultant beings. The Chinese character jang (長) in the word young- jang (lord of creation) means the center of the spirit. This word originally referred to the relationship of unity between God and human beings. (32-137, 1970.07.05)

4 What is the difference between animals and human beings? We eat and sleep just as the animals do. Human beings wear clothes; animals do not. Yet we are equal in many ways. In terms of structure and appearance, our eyes and noses are not so different. Human beings consist of a spirit and a body. However, if we compare our physical existence with that of animals, there is not much difference. We eat, sleep and search for food in similar ways. The difference between people and animals is that people are seeking something different, something of precious value in the

universe. That which is precious is not the physical but the spiritual aspect of a person. The spirit differs from the physical body; that is why it is precious. It has to be different. (129-307, 1983.12.01)

5 Monkeys and human beings are different in essence. Monkeys mostly just eat, sleep and reproduce. They are essentially different from humankind. Human beings do not live for themselves, but for the sake of others. They live with the desire for something greater, not with the hope or desire for something less than themselves. Human beings are of a different dimension. For as long as they have existed, they have revered God. There has never been a people who didn't venerate the deity. Human beings have always thought about God and dreamed of a better world. (39-333, 1971.01.16)

6 When you give birth to a child and nurse that child, you think he or she is so adorable. But because of whom do you feel this way? You should adore your child on behalf of heaven and earth. You should love your child for the sake of the world, and for God. Heavenly fortune driven by God's love is now moving beyond the world to embrace all heaven and earth. However, it is unacceptable to love my sons and daughters for my own reasons. The mother who embraces and breast-feeds her children should do so on behalf of heaven and earth, embracing her children with sincerity as if she were embracing God's own beloved sons and daughters. Such children, the hope of God, who can live in the Garden of Eden, have to be children of universal character. As God blessed humankind to take dominion over all things, they must have the qualifications to do so. (008-105, 1959.11.22)

7 You have to stand on behalf of Heaven, which has dominion over everything, manifesting value equal to that of the Lord who governs the created world. From your lips you should be able to say, "Heavenly Father, I have become the person You have been looking for; I have fulfilled Your Will that I received from You as the original lord with dominion over everything, so please instruct me." You are the person for whom God has been hoping throughout the six thousand years of His dispensation. (001-120, 1956.06.27)

8 Human beings are centers of harmony. However, in order for harmony to come about, a central, absolute standard needs to be determined. It is just as in an orchestra, where many different musicians play in harmony centered on a conductor. The central figures for the harmony of the universe are we human beings. Human beings are positioned to align completely with the absolute standard; therefore, where such a person stays is where the universe stays, and the whole world of existence functions centered on that person. Because of this, the entire existing world has power. (29-128, 1970.02.26)

9 A human being is a microcosm of the entire universe. We are each a miniature universe. The greater universe is the created world. God is the origin of all

interaction and the source of all energy. We are microcosms in front of the greater cosmos. When the power that is the origin of the great universe enters our heart, we achieve the value of a counterpart to the entire universe. This is why human beings are the flowers of the universe. (121-190, 1982.10.27)

10 We are not alone. We have emerged as the resultant beings that harmonize in relationships within the universe. Everything that exists in the universe is included within us; we have within ourselves all the qualities that we have received from our numerous ancestors. You may feel that your face is your own, but it is the result of tens of thousands of years of history. You have your face today because you inherited the blood of your ancestors that accrued over tens of thousands of years. We are truly miraculous beings. Moreover, we exist today because Heaven has worked behind the scenes to allow the continuation of all the relationships that led to each of us. We are beings of substance into which all interrelated aspects of creation are invested and projected. (58-304, 1972.06.25)

CHAPTER 2 Our Portion of Responsibility and the Fall

Section 1. Our Growth and Portion of Responsibility

1 Adam and Eve should have understood God's love and reached the standard of complete unity with Him, such that God's standard of love and their standard of love would be perfectly aligned at one point. Adam and Eve were the horizontal representatives, while God is the vertical representative. These three should have united; then they would have created a sphere of love. This sphere was to have been formed based on the union between God's internal love and Adam and Eve's external love, with God's internal love as the nucleus. Even a cell has a nucleus. Centered on this nucleus, the subject partner and object partner should have interacted by giving and receiving. That was supposed to be the standard. Since this did not happen, it must be rectified through the historical ages. (145-320, 1986.06.01)

Human responsibility and the growth period

2 Before Adam and Eve committed the Fall, certain responsibility had been given only to them. Had they fulfilled this and emerged as the True Parents, they would have been welcomed by all subsequent generations of parents. Then no such being as Satan could have interfered, because there would have been nothing for Satan to accuse. This would have been the reality for Adam and Eve had they not fallen. However, to this day, there have been no perfected Adam and Eve, and their absence has affected every aspect of human life throughout history. Therefore, human beings in the fallen world have been eagerly awaiting the coming of the True Parents, and even those who have passed into the spirit world have been

eagerly anticipating the day of the Second Advent. This you should clearly understand. (124-309, 1983.03.01)

3 The portion of responsibility given to Adam and Eve was such that one mistake could result in a dreadful bottomless pit, like a cancer that could affect human beings for hundreds of millions of years. It was Adam and Eve's task to fulfill this responsibility, and since God anticipated that Satan would challenge them on the way to fulfilling it, He warned them, "Do not eat the fruit." Nevertheless, they ate the fruit of good and evil. How must God have felt as He witnessed them eating the fruit? Even at the moment they deviated from the right path, God must have desperately wanted to believe that they would not fall into temptation. (20-211, 1968.06.09)

4 From the perspective of the Principle of Creation, you must take full responsibility for your own actions. Even though God carries a 95-percent portion of responsibility, we must take responsibility for the remaining 5 percent. These two combined make 100 percent. This is the Principle of Creation. The reason for this principle is that God wants us to participate in His creation so we can be given the privilege and authority of co-creators. God's responsibility is 95 percent, while only 5 percent was allocated to human beings. Nonetheless, the first human beings could not meet even that standard. Thus, no sooner had history begun than it was plunged into darkness, so that human beings had not even the slightest taste of the true world. Even today we live without ever having experienced a true world. (27-286, 1969.12.21)

5 What is the human portion of responsibility? First, it is to become true children; second, to become true brothers and sisters; third, to become true couples; and fourth, to become true parents. That is why we are born as babies and then become children, siblings, couples and parents. As parents you can create children on behalf of God; then you can experience, internally and externally, the reality of God's happiness when He created Adam and Eve. (225-129, 1992.01.05)

6 The realm of dominion based on accomplishments through the Principle and the realm of God's direct dominion must be connected, and true love is what makes this possible. Adam and Eve failed to make this connection, so we have to do it. Had they made this connection, one cultural sphere would have been established, and the world would have become one people, one nation and one land. However, that connection was not made. Consequently, the world became centered on the devil and is divided into many nations. We must unite these nations and return to the original world. (212-204, 1991.01.06)

7 To fulfill the human portion of responsibility, we must go beyond the realm of indirect dominion and reach the realm of God's direct dominion. We have to enter that realm where God's heart and our heart become one in God's love; then we can

travel freely between the two worlds, heaven and earth. This is the viewpoint of the Principle. Once we secure a horizontal position that can represent the vertical Parent centered on God's love, from that point on, Satan will no longer exist. That is the realm of God's direct dominion. (185-127, 1989.01.03)

8 The reason God set the standard of the human portion of responsibility was to complete the ideal of love. God apportioned 5 percent of the responsibility to human beings when He created them because He needed them as His object partners. One being alone cannot attain love. Even though God is omniscient and omnipotent, He cannot manifest His love without object partners. When a teenager is without a companion, he or she does not even know that love exists. But when his or her partner of love appears, love begins to stir inside. Likewise, fulfilling the human portion of responsibility requires a process: by passing through a certain time period, Adam and Eve were to reach maturity and come into bloom, emitting fragrance like a flower. Then God would have come to dwell in Adam and Eve, claiming the position of humankind's internal Father and Mother, and they would have created the structure of the human family. This was to occur not only in the family, but also in the tribe, the people, the nation and the world. The whole human race would thus be God's direct lineage. (130-021, 1983.12.11)

9 Why did God give human beings a portion of responsibility? As He is omniscient and omnipotent, He wanted to endow us with those same creative abilities. Also, as God is the subject partner with eternal and unchanging love, He vested human beings with a portion of responsibility in order to have us stand in the position to represent Him as subject partners of love. Further, this became the condition for human beings to receive God's blessings. That is, responsibility is the key that can lead us into the dominion of love over everything. That is why God bequeathed this responsibility to human beings. However, the Fall occurred because human beings failed to fulfill their portion of responsibility. (20-210, 1968.06.09)

10 Why did God give human beings a portion of responsibility? It is because we were the only ones who could, by abiding by this law, receive true love from God. God gave us our portion of responsibility because He wanted to enable us to attain true love. If the first human beings, while in the realm of indirect dominion, had lived for the sake of God and each other, they would have matured naturally. However, the devil, knowing God's plan, brought them into an awareness that was self-centered. That awareness began from the archangel. Eve fell because when the archangel seduced her she took on a self-centered awareness, and thus separated from God. Therefore, our life of faith requires that we completely reject Satan's world. It is a major challenge, because we have to overcome our blood relationship with his world. However, once you begin your new life based on the True Parents' true love, a realm of heart is created. (182-148, 1988.10.16)

11 If human beings had progressed to the stage where they accomplished their portion of responsibility by creating the remaining 5 percent of God's love, they would have been perfected. In other words, they would have completed God's love. God wanted to bequeath to them, based on that condition, the ability to create the ideal of love, by which they also would have completed God's love. How precious, then, the value of such human beings would be! (130-022, 1983.12.11)

12 Those who would enter the heavenly kingdom must completely fulfill their portion of responsibility, thereby reaching the position where they become the children of True Parents, of their flesh and blood, and receive God's love directly. Heaven is where we go after having lived under the dominion of God's love. Those who do not know this cannot enter heaven and register there. You cannot simply go there, in ignorance. That is why you need to know your portion of responsibility. Why did God give us a portion of responsibility? It was to bestow infinite value upon us. It was to have us partake in God's own work of creation. Had we not been given this portion of responsibility, we could not stand as God's object partners and receive His love. (143-077, 1986.03.16)

13 God should not create and do everything for us. God is to fulfill 95 percent and human beings should fulfill the other 5 percent as their responsibility. Only after we fulfill our portion can we stand on an equal plane with God, acting cooperatively with Him. Then we can rightfully give and receive love with God, the absolute subject partner, in an equal position as His object partners. This is how the ideal of love is fulfilled. Without accomplishing our portion of responsibility, we cannot merit the honor of standing in an equal position with God and receiving His ideal love. This is why God allocated to us a portion of responsibility, to give us the status whereby we are able to receive His love. (143-077, 1986.03.16)

14 Human beings should fulfill our portion of responsibility during the time we are growing to maturity. This means we have to add our 5 percent to the 95 percent that represents what God has already created. In this way we fulfill the condition of having cooperated in God's work of creation and can share the authority of the Creator. If God had done everything for us as His beloved object partners, we would be no more than puppets, lacking any authority of our own. God gave us our portion of responsibility as a privilege, in order to bestow upon us the right to become His object partners. It is a privilege with which even God cannot interfere. God gave us our portion of responsibility so that we could set the condition of participating in our own creation. (135-314, 1985.12.15)

15 Human beings have a portion of responsibility. God's purpose in giving us responsibility is to enable us to take part in the monumental task of creation. In the creation of human beings, God creates 95 percent and we are to complete the final 5 percent. By fulfilling this condition, not only does God create us but we also participate in our own creation. Having our own portion of responsibility endows us

with equal value to God. This is a great thing. Only human beings have such a portion of responsibility. Despite this fact, ever since the dawn of human history no one has fulfilled this responsibility. Indeed, we human beings did not even know about our portion of responsibility. (139-231, 1986.01.31)

16 Why did God give human beings a portion of responsibility? It was to have us partake in the glorious work of creation. Also, by having us resemble God's creative nature, it was to qualify us to take all things of creation under our dominion. Further, it was to establish the absoluteness and perfection of the Principle. It was for these three reasons. You must participate in God's great work of creation. Even if human beings had not fallen, we would still have had such a responsibility. The human portion of responsibility was not established due to the Fall; whether the Fall occurred or not, people would still have their responsibility. Even with God fulfilling His 95-percent responsibility for the perfection of human beings, you still have to fulfill your 5 percent. God does not make an individual perfect. You must complete your responsibility to achieve perfection. (115-066, 1981.11.04)

17 There are no exceptions to the Principle. We must go this way under any circumstances, even after we die. We must go this way even if it takes forever. Had God been able to do as He pleased, He would not have had to pass through the suffering course of the providence of restoration up to the present day. But God restricts Himself because of His own principle—the human portion of responsibility. It is for this reason that He has had to endure countless hardships in order to restore humankind. The responsibility does not lie solely with God; He shares it with human beings. This would have been the case even if the Fall had not occurred. (115-066, 1981.11.04)

18 What is the situation of fallen people today? Fallen human beings failed more than just their portion of responsibility. They violated 97 percent of the work of creation. For this reason, we must re-create everything. But what is re-creation? It is not limited to fulfilling the human portion of responsibility; that is not everything. The whole process of creation has been ruined. So how difficult will it be to deal with this situation? Human beings need to fulfill a responsibility corresponding to 97 percent; otherwise they will never find the way to fulfill their original portion of responsibility. We must re-create everything. The dispensation of restoration is the dispensation of re-creation. But why is re-creation absolutely necessary? It is because of human responsibility. In order to fulfill this responsibility and reach the point where it is completed, we must necessarily undergo the process of re-creation. (115-067, 1981.11.04)

The human portion of responsibility and the accomplishment of the Will

19 Fulfilling the providential Will requires a subject partner and an object partner. The subject partner is God. The object partners are human beings. The object

partners must unite with the subject partner centered on the providential Will; otherwise there can be no basis for victory. Why did God not create the object partners in oneness with the subject partner, rather than creating them to have to become one? It is because of the human portion of responsibility. It is because of this that complex problems have been passed down through the ages. If we did not have this portion of responsibility, God would have started with a victorious history, followed a victorious course and would have already arrived at the final destination in triumph. (109-066, 1980.10.04)

20 The realm of responsibility remains with you, the descendants of the Fall. If you ask whether you have accomplished your individual responsibility, through the Principle, to reach a level of perfection that qualifies you to connect to God's love in the realm of His direct dominion, the answer is no. Restoration through indemnity is necessary in order to separate Satan from human beings. Unless you separate yourself from Satan, it is impossible to complete your portion of responsibility. You should know, however, that if you had followed the path of responsibility and reached maturity at about the age of seventeen or eighteen, as a man you would absolutely need a woman, and as a woman you would absolutely need a man. (148-149, 1986.10.08)

21 Why did God give human beings a period of time for fulfilling their portion of responsibility? Why did He make it such that God and human beings meet each other through the process of fulfilling their portions of responsibility? Why is it that both God and humans hope to reach a time when they achieve their common goal of fulfilling the great work of creation? It is for love, nothing less. Maturity is the time when young people are supposed to come into full bloom, spiritually as well as physically. Human beings reach maturity at around the age of eighteen. If an individual's physical self and spirit self are united, at the time of maturity he or she fully blossoms, spiritually and physically, as God intended. Human beings are the center of the created world. Had they put forth fragrant blossoms, the whole universe would have entered the season of spring. It would have been springtime for human beings and for God. Responding to their spring fragrance, God would have sung and danced, expressing His joy. Had this happened, the realm of God's perfect ideal life would have begun right there, for the first time. (130-020, 1983.12.11)

22 No matter what, the center of love is not human beings, but God. Thus in the Principle, the completion of the human portion of responsibility means that our human love becomes one with God's love. God's love is eternal; hence, when we become one with God as His partners centered on His eternal love, it creates oneness with God that is eternal. In that state we will never separate from Him. (212-015, 1991.01.01)

23 By completing his portion of responsibility, Adam would have not only fulfilled his individual responsibility but also would have laid, in his one generation, the foundation for the fulfillment of the responsibilities of the family, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos. Then Adam's descendants would have stood in the realm where they could complete their historical portions of responsibility on the world level, under the direct governance of the heavenly kingdom. In such a place there would have been no world- level or national-level portion of responsibility remaining ahead of us. Adam's perfection naturally would have led to the fulfillment of the world-level portion of responsibility. His completing the human portion of responsibility would have connected the realm of dominion based on accomplishments through the Principle to the realm of God's direct dominion. (148-148, 1986.10.08)

24 Love is the starting point of the path connecting the realm of indirect dominion to the realm of God's direct dominion. The connection is made by love and creates a bridge of love between God and human beings. Only through that connection does the bridge of love appear. If we do not fulfill our portion of responsibility, the original ideal bridge of love between God and human beings cannot be built. Ideal love is realized only when we fulfill our portion of responsibility. (148-148, 1986.10.08)

25 What is the realm of God's direct dominion? Based on love, God finally comes to function as the subject partner, and each being emerges centered on that love. This creates a realm in which each and every being is connected, according to the desire of the subject partner. Such a world would be perfection, from the perfection of Adam's family to the perfection of the whole. In that world there would be no Satan; it would not be the fallen world we experience today. In fact, in the realm where Adam and Eve were first given their portion of responsibility to fulfill, Satan did not exist. (148-283, 1986.10.25)

26 Once Adam and Eve complete their portion of responsibility within the realm of indirect dominion and enter the realm of God's direct dominion, God will dwell with them. Then the actualization of true love will begin, starting in their family. That family is not just an individual family; it represents the entire cosmos and the entire world. It is a family that represents all the world's nations and all the world's peoples, tribes, families and individuals. Thus, that family stands representing individuals, families, tribes, peoples, nations, the world and cosmos in reverse order. From the bottom up they constitute the cosmos, world, nation, people, tribe, family, and couple. When, centering on love, these representatives become one with Heaven, they will establish a kingdom where everyone lives as one interconnected heavenly family. (204-283, 1990.07.11)

27 Heaven, earth and human beings are all divided; where can we reconnect them? A boy grows to maturity, a girl also learns many things and grows to maturity, and

then they finally come to know each other as a man and woman. At this point, they have become two connected together and acting as one. The 5-percent portion of responsibility described in the Unification Church entails reaching this state. It is the state where heaven and earth unite. It is the place where the world unites as one horizontally and where heaven and earth join as one vertically, where everything in the universe joins as alpha and omega. Man and woman were divided from the origin; hence they must return to that one point. We are the very center of the universe, but we have to recover that most precious central point. The path to recovering that position is not by money, knowledge or power. It is by nothing other than true love. (228-081, 1992.03.15)

28 Man and woman are the nucleus of the cosmos; they are the cosmos in microcosm. When husband and wife share true love, the entire universe is involved. Man and woman were born for the sake of love. The realm of God's direct dominion is vertical; human beings were originally created to be vertical. When they fulfill their portion of responsibility, they can secure their position as owners in their vertical relationships and then as owners in their horizontal relationships. This is accomplished through true love. (218-136, 1991.07.14)

29 In order to move from the realm of indirect dominion into the realm of God's direct dominion, we need to reach full maturity and then marry. By doing so, we fulfill our portion of responsibility. Children born of couples who are connected to God according to this absolute standard are children of God's absolute lineage. It is our responsibility as human beings to set this as our goal and achieve it. (171-262, 1998.01.02)

30 To fulfill our responsibility we must unite the realm of indirect dominion and the realm of God's direct dominion, unite the earthly and heavenly worlds, and unite our own minds and bodies. God and the horizontal True Parents are one. The issue is how to attain oneness in love that connects heaven and earth, love in which body and mind are one, and love that joins man and woman. Attaining oneness in love is the foundation that connects us to God's love, life and lineage for the first time. When it is expanded and developed horizontally in all directions, the right of kingship arises. (218-124, 1991.07.14)

31 The reason God could not intervene with Adam and Eve is because of the human portion of responsibility. If only Adam and Eve had fulfilled their 5-percent human portion of responsibility by going through the formation and growth periods and receiving the Blessing in the state of perfection, the realm of God's direct dominion, everything would have been completed. That would have been the new beginning of their individual life and family life, and God would have seen the completion of His Will at the beginning of history. Had that happened, Adam and Eve would have emerged as the True Parents of true love, of God's lineage. They would have brought forth true children, a true tribe, a true people and a true nation. The nation

they would have formed would have been the ideal nation of God's desire. It would have been the kingdom of heaven on earth. (252-227, 1994.01.01)

32 If Adam and Eve had fulfilled their portion of responsibility, we would never utter the words "bitter sorrow." Due to their inability to fulfill that responsibility, the footsteps of bitter sorrow remain in the course of history. If only they had fulfilled their portion of responsibility, human beings, the angelic world and the entire created world would have come under the dominion of God, amid joy and glory. This was heavenly law. Instead, due to human beings' failure to fulfill their portion of responsibility, Satan's world was formed, and this earth still remains under Satan's dominion. Due to human beings' inability to fulfill their responsibility, even God has been toiling hard, enduring a painful course to this day. Responsibility remains in every age, for the individual, the people and the world. Each individual must, during his or her life course, seek out and fulfill that portion of responsibility. (63-320, 1972.10.22)

33 Although God accomplished the great work of creation, He has been unable to see the fruition of His Will. Although human beings have served God throughout history, they still moan in pain, unable to see the completion of the Will. When will the day of God's liberation come? When will the day of humanity's liberation come? That liberation depends on the fulfillment of the portion of responsibility. Otherwise, the ideal world that humanity longs for is impossible, and the kingdom of heaven on earth that the Unification Church seeks to realize is impossible. People who have fulfilled their portion of responsibility are perfect as God is perfect. God contributed 95 percent in creating them, but only when people accomplish their 5-percent portion of responsibility do they qualify as perfected created beings. Therefore, fulfilling our responsibility leads to human perfection and also to the perfection of God's great work of creation. Completing the great work of creation means the fulfillment of God's Will, and the fulfillment of God's Will means the perfection of God Himself. (130-019, 1983.12.11)

The importance of the human portion of responsibility

34 God is both the center of all life and the center of love. Life is the center of love, and love is the center of life. Knowing that human beings are living in pain and agony, why doesn't God intervene so that human beings can be happy? Some people quickly raise the question, "Why, if God or the Absolute Being exists, is it the destiny of human beings to endure lives of trials and tribulations? Why have they wandered about throughout history, with an uncertain future?" People who look at life from this point of view can readily conclude that the God of love does not exist. (149-213, 1986.11.23)

35 Throughout the miserable history of restoration, even God with His almighty power could not do whatever He liked. This is because the 5-percent human

portion of responsibility remained unfulfilled. God could do nothing about that, no matter how many tears He shed. Human beings must meet that crucial standard. It is human beings who must accomplish that responsibility, yet until now they have been unaware of this. There are many people of faith who believe that God can do whatever He wants because He is omnipotent. Yet there are certain things that even God cannot do. (14-341, 1965.01.28)

36 Why did God not intervene when human beings fell? God is the absolute Creator. Since He recognizes human responsibility, He must leave human beings to bear that responsibility on their own until they complete it. If God were to intervene in the middle of their course, His standard of absolute authority would collapse. God is a great being. He refrains from intervening with human beings in order to bestow upon them the authority of second creators. Further, God created human beings as individual embodiments of truth; hence He cannot simply do with them as He pleases. (256-108, 1994.03.12)

37 That abhorrent and bitter phrase, “restoration through indemnity,” came to exist based on the clear understanding of a principle—the human portion of responsibility. In the course of restoration through indemnity, God cannot help you. You must go through it alone. If you received His help, it would not be indemnity. Why is that? Since the principle of the human portion of responsibility exists, if you received His help, then according to that principle, indemnification would not occur. If He could have helped, at the time of the Fall He would have intervened with Adam and Eve and prevented them from falling. Yet He could not do so due to the human portion of responsibility. (124-303, 1983.03.01)

38 So far, although many theologians and spiritual mediums have known of the existence of Satan, they have not been able to understand why the all-knowing and almighty God could not block Satan from opposing Him. This is a question even for those who communicate with the spirit world. Whenever we try to go to God’s side, Satan inevitably interferes. Satan opposes us from many directions, not just one. But why did God not intervene and restrain him? This has remained a riddle. It is unknown even to those who can communicate with the spirit world. Why have we come to live in such a sorrowful reality, where Satan is uncontrolled, and why have the spirit world and the earthly world come to be in such a state? We must find the answers to these questions. Even though God knows the answers, He cannot tell us. That too is because we have our portion of responsibility. (133-086, 1984.07.10)

39 Adam and Eve were supposed to fulfill their portion of responsibility, perfect themselves without falling, and become the True Parents. This was the Parents’ portion of responsibility, and only they could accomplish it. Then, as the Parents, they were supposed to teach their children about this portion of responsibility. Since it was their portion, after they failed and the world as it is today emerged as a result, God was unable to teach this to anyone. Had the words “portion of

responsibility” not been disclosed by the Unification Principle, there would be no way to solve the fundamental issues of history. (133-087, 1984.07.10)

40 It is a serious problem if you do not know about the human portion of responsibility. We cannot understand the history of religion unless we know that we are undergoing a course of indemnity to turn history right side up, based on our own responsibility. Unless you understand this, you will not be able to resolve anything, even after you go to the spirit world. Indeed, you will have no way to resolve anything. You may think that the phrase “portion of responsibility” is simple, but in fact it is momentous. It is historic good news for humankind. (133-100, 1984.07.10)

41 The Unification Church principle that human beings have their own portion of responsibility is a cosmic discovery. The discovery of this principle is incomparably greater than the invention of the atomic bomb or Einstein’s discovery of the theory of relativity. That is because without knowing this principle, nothing in history can be resolved. The relationship between God and human beings has been obscured throughout all of history. No historian or philosopher has been able to explain why righteous people were sacrificed and why their names were recognized only after their time had passed. (124-303, 1983.03.01)

42 If you could truthfully assert that you have accomplished your portion of responsibility, Satan's world could not appear before you. Yet Satan’s world appears before all of you, does it not? Therein lies the problem. If I did not know about this portion of responsibility, which determines the providence of restoration and the state of the world today, there would be no possibility of returning to our homeland in glory or of reaching the realm of liberation. Our challenge is to uncover the unresolved issues of the Old Testament Age and the New Testament Age, and resolve them by fulfilling the human portion of responsibility. This has been the hope and desire of the New Testament Age and the Old Testament Age. Why do we need the Messiah? The Messiah is the person at the apex of the realm of the portion of responsibility. Satan cannot invade if you become one with the Messiah. Satan’s world has no basis to oppose the person who appears with the authority of Heaven on the foundation of having completed his portion of responsibility, and with the authority of the lineage aligned with God’s love. Why, then, does the Messiah face opposition? It is because he strives to save the people in Satan’s world; because he will not give up on people in Satan’s world even at the risk of his life, even if Satan stirs up society to crucify him. Those who do not fulfill their portion of responsibility do not have the right to enter heaven, no matter what. Even Adam and Eve, who were not of Satan's lineage, were dragged away by Satan because they did not fulfill their portion of responsibility. (139-245, 1986.01.31)

43 Without restoration through indemnity, the realm of Abel cannot be recovered. Unless the realm of Abel is recovered, there is no way for the Parents to come

forth. Unless the Parents come forth, there is no way to recover the original ideal world envisioned by God. Thus, everything depends on fulfilling our individual portion of responsibility and our family portion of responsibility. Then it depends on fulfilling our tribe's portion of responsibility, and the people's, nation's and world's portions of responsibility. Failure to resolve all these problems has caused even the spirit world to split into heaven and hell. The reason why even the spirit world, which is eternal, is split into heaven and hell is because the matter of the portion of responsibility remains unresolved. The people in hell belong to Satan. They have no relationship whatsoever with God. So fulfilling the portion of responsibility and restoration through indemnity are absolutely necessary. (133-100, 1984.07.10)

44 How many times a day do you think about your portion of responsibility? You have to remember it and recite it over and over; when you are eating, holding a spoon, when you are washing the dishes, when you are on the toilet, and while you are walking. Adam and Eve did not think about their portion of responsibility, and that is why they came to ruin. You too will go to ruin unless you fulfill your responsibility. We must not become people who, like Adam and Eve, fail to fulfill our portion of responsibility and fall. To become people who can be restored and be victorious, we have to honor and bear in mind our portion of responsibility twenty-four hours a day. (124-102, 1983.01.30)

Section 2. The Human Fall

1 When you study the Bible carefully, you cannot deny that the first human ancestors were joined to the devil, Satan, through illicit love, and that their children came to be in a parent-child relationship with him. We human beings are so precious to God; in His absolute love we should have been born as God's own sons and daughters and inherited His direct lineage. However, we instead ended up being born into the lineage of the devil, Satan, as his sons and daughters. (53-262, 1972.03.01)

2 How did the Fall begin? Between a man and a woman, what would constitute the Fall? Could it literally be the act of eating a physical fruit called the fruit of knowledge of good and evil, as the Holy Scripture describes it? Simply eating a fruit cannot be the cause of original sin. The only thing that could cause such a thing is wrongful love between people of the opposite sex. Could the mere sin of the human progenitors eating a literal fruit have caused their descendants for tens of thousands of years to be sinners? That result is possible only because the root of the sin was implanted in our lineage, and hence it can continue forever according to the laws of heredity. This occurred through illicit relationships, first when Eve became one with Lucifer and next when Adam became one with Eve, who was already one with Lucifer. Consequently, when Adam and Eve began their conjugal relationship and begot a family, they did so centering on Lucifer, not God. Thus,

Adam and Eve's descendants—all of humanity— received Satan's lineage. (479-241, 2004.12.13)

The realm of God's indirect dominion and the realm of God's direct dominion

3 Adam and Eve should have been the substantial body of God and the Parents of all humankind. However, they fell before reaching maturity. This can be likened to good seeds that were sown in spring to produce good fruit in autumn, but before it was ripe the fruit fell off the branches in summer. The Fall refers to their dropping off at the midway point. (038-175, 1971.01.03)

4 Originally, Adam and Eve were meant to reach perfection, and in their perfection God would have entered into them and become one with them. After that, when the two of them became one physically and spiritually, they would have connected with God's love in their union. However, Adam and Eve fell when they were still in their adolescence, before they reached maturity. That is to say, they fell when they were still underage, when they were not able to connect to God's love in spirit and flesh. For this reason, they did not yet know love. They were like chestnut burrs that look normal on the outside but have no kernels inside. (99-232, 1978.09.25)

5 The universe cannot be based on deviation from the principle. Yet when Eve was still underage, it seemed to her that Lucifer understood all the principles of heaven and earth. Since Lucifer had been running errands for God, he knew how to talk about the creation of heaven and earth. Adam, on the other hand, was inattentive to her. He was preoccupied with everything around him, running around with a stick, catching birds, snakes and frogs. He was supposed to have dominion over all things in nature and manage them, so he sought to become close to them. Hence, he did not yet have any interest in Eve. (191-101, 1989.06.24)

6 If Adam and Eve had not fallen, they would have passed through their adolescence and upon reaching maturity they would have become one with each other naturally. It would have been natural; they would not have needed any guidance or education. Who would have been the center of their unity? It was neither Adam nor Eve. They would have become one centered on God, who is the root of love. It is the same as with a flower when it blooms; the blossom comes not from itself, but from the root. If these human beings had attained an ideal relationship with God, who is the root, their love would have been perfected. Then everything they would subsequently have done would have been approved by God and publically recognized. Life in the kingdom of heaven would have begun immediately right there. When seen from this perspective, the Fall means that God lost the standard of His ideal for the perfection of love, which was His dream for human beings. (130-021, 1983.12.11)

7 Why did God implement the human portion of responsibility? We human beings must grow; we are required to grow to maturity. During the ages of fifteen, sixteen, seventeen and eighteen, we must grow from adolescence to maturity, and wait for love until we are fully grown. That is why this period is called the realm of dominion based on the result of fulfilling the principle, or the period of God's indirect dominion. Until we grow to maturity, we do not know what love is. For this reason, we must wait for love until we are mature. Once the time comes for two individuals, on either pole of the horizontal plane, to reach maturity and become one, God will arrive and conduct the marriage ceremony. Then God's Will shall be done. (137-100, 1985.12.24)

8 Due to the Fall, human beings have remained in the realm of indirect dominion; they are not yet connected to the realm of God's direct dominion. As a result of Adam and Eve's inability to fulfill their portion of responsibility, they could not join the realm of indirect dominion to the realm of God's direct dominion. Because of this problem related to the portion of responsibility, the providence of restoration has been prolonged again and again. In order for us to reach the realm of God's love, the realm of His direct dominion—in other words, in order to achieve perfection—we must fulfill our portion of responsibility while in the realm of indirect dominion. (139-231, 1986.01.31)

9 In order to connect the realm of indirect dominion to the realm of God's direct dominion, we must fulfill our portion of responsibility. Fulfilling this responsibility requires that both a man and a woman must reach maturity. Perfection in the Garden of Eden refers to knowing only God. Adam and Eve were to love God first and foremost. Then second, the man was to know the woman and the woman was to know the man. If they had become such people, Adam and Eve could have fulfilled their portion of responsibility and crossed from the realm of indirect dominion to a new dimension, the realm of God's direct dominion. (165-105, 1987.05.20)

10 You have to set indemnity conditions in your families in order to complete your own portion of responsibility, by which you can reach from the realm of indirect dominion into the realm of God's direct dominion. You must do so, because unless you connect to the realm of God's direct dominion, you have no way to enter the kingdom of heaven. This is the principle. Why did God ordain for human beings a portion of responsibility? God has us set conditions of indemnity in order to allow us to inherit everything He has and to make us His object partners. Why, then, do we need the realm of God's direct dominion? It is because the connection of love between God and human beings is made only in that realm. Without this connection of love, we cannot inherit the universe from God. It is only through love that we can inherit the universe. That is why all families in every nation try to bequeath what they have to their children. This is the principle that is centered on love. (135-326, 1985.12.15)

11 In the realm where we have fulfilled our portion of responsibility, we can unite based on God's love. Having attained individual perfection by which we connect to the vertical love of God, we make the connection from the realm of indirect dominion to the realm of God's direct dominion. Once these two realms are connected their realms of heart are also connected, and Satan cannot exist there. The Fall took place before human beings reached this level. This is the problem. Fallen human beings by themselves have no way of knowing this reality. Thus they are bound to go to hell. That is why, behind the scenes of history, God set up the course of the providence of restoration and worked through religion to cultivate the conscience as a middle ground. (172-198, 1988.01.21)

12 The realm of God's direct dominion is where Adam and Eve can join together in love, while the realm of indirect dominion is the realm in which their portion of responsibility has yet to be completed. Thus, once they have fulfilled their responsibility, that is, after Adam and Eve have become husband and wife centered on love, God becomes the internal Parent and Adam and Eve become the external Parents. At that point, when God and Adam and Eve become one inside and out, the realm of God's direct dominion is established for the first time. That is why marriage is absolutely necessary. No one can enter the realm of God's direct dominion as a single person. (139-263, 1986.01.31)

13 When God's perfect love manifests, Satan cannot appear. This occurs at the point where human beings have fulfilled their portion of responsibility. In the state where it is fulfilled, a connection of love is made between the realm of indirect dominion and the realm of God's direct dominion. This is where vertical love and horizontal love meet. Out of that vertical love and horizontal love, people emerge who have a bond with God's lineage. His lineage is created. Satan cannot interfere with people whose lineage is bonded to the love of God, through the connection of vertical love and horizontal love. Such people have nothing to do with Satan. Therefore, in order to inherit God's heart, you must inherit the lineage of the original tradition, centered on the pure love of God. (173-286, 1988.02.21)

The human portion of responsibility and the Fall

14 If only Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden had obeyed God's commandment, the Fall would not have occurred. If those two individuals had obeyed God's commandment and given birth to a family, and if from that family a nation and a world had been formed, they would have established the kingdom of heaven on earth, a world where God alone would have had dominion. But because Adam and Eve disobeyed God's commandment, and even betrayed Him, the individuals, families, tribes, peoples and nations that came about were centered on Satan instead. Consequently, the kingdom that God had originally intended has yet to be formed. A world opposite to God's original intention came about, with Satan, God's

main opponent, at its helm. Thus the individual, the family and the world all came to be under the dominion of Satan. (72-074, 1974.05.19)

15 Had Adam and Eve consulted God before they fell, there would have been no Fall. They should have asked Him, "Satan is saying such and such, so what shall we do?" If they had done that, God in answering them would have guided them not to fall. Their portion of responsibility was to ask. They were free to do so. But instead they engaged in a horizontal relationship without asking God. That was the problem. Since they acted without asking, a problem arose. This is always the case. Do all of you have the confidence to fulfill your own 5-percent portion of responsibility? There are all kinds of people who go around pretending to be great, yet they do not have confidence to fulfill their portion of responsibility. (33-241, 1970.08.16)

16 Why did Adam and Eve fall? It is because they failed to fulfill their portion of responsibility. Could Adam and Eve have accomplished it by themselves? First, they should have become one with God. Without becoming one with God, they could not have fulfilled their portion of responsibility. Next, they should have become one with the Principle. They had to meet these two conditions. Therefore people of faith are instructed: "You must absolutely believe in God! You must turn to God, and stand firmly centered on God!" This is the first article of faith. No matter what the religion, this is the first article for people of faith. Next comes the Principle. People are instructed that they must completely unite with the laws that God has established. (87-122, 1976.05.23)

17 Due to the human portion of responsibility, indemnity came to exist. Had there been no human portion of responsibility, God could have exercised His dominion at any time. At the time of the Fall, He could have said, "Hey, you! You should not do that!" But because of the human portion of responsibility, God was not in a position to intervene to prevent the Fall or to prevent Satan's activities. Adam and Eve were unable to fulfill their portion of responsibility. However, the impact of their failure did not end with Adam and Eve themselves. If we liken Adam and Eve to the root and all humankind to the trunk, branches and leaves, then it is clear that all human beings remain in the position of having failed to fulfill their responsibility. (87-122, 1976.05.23)

18 Once Adam and Eve had committed sin, God could not work with them as He had desired. On the other hand, Satan was free to do whatever he liked with sinful Adam and Eve, in order to have them ruin God's Will. God cannot liberate Himself. He cannot be liberated until that day in history when the Lord of the Second Advent, the Messiah, comes to this world and subjugates Satan. Most religious people do not even dream of this. They simply believe that God is omniscient and omnipresent and can do whatever He likes. However, no matter how powerful God may be, He must abide by the laws that He established. God is not the kind of being

who does what He pleases if it means going against the laws that He established according to the great principles He used to create heaven and earth. That is the reason He could not intervene with Adam and Eve at the time of the Fall. Intervention is permissible only at the state of perfection. God could have intervened to care for them if they had reached the perfection level, but He could not intervene with Adam and Eve because they were still at the completion level of the growth stage. An unripe fruit that is still in the process of maturing has no seeds that can be harvested. God can gather only absolutely ripened fruit, fruit that is fully mature, to spread its seed. He cannot intervene if it is not fully mature. (252-233, 1994.01.01)

19 Since Adam committed the sin, Adam must resolve it. Because Adam was immature, he fell while in a state of ignorance. Thus a perfect, mature Adam must appear and bring to light all the secrets of God and Satan. He must bring the devil before God to be charged. For us to enter the kingdom of heaven, it is not enough that Jesus stamps our pass. We need to present a certificate of victory over the devil; otherwise we will not be able to enter the kingdom of heaven. For this reason, Adam must disclose all of Satan's hidden secrets and God's unknown truth. He must unearth the unprincipled acts that Satan committed throughout history. He must present logical arguments along with all the evidence of how Satan violated God's laws and principles. He must censure Satan by bringing to light all the facts about him, with clear evidence of how Satan violated the individual, the family, the tribe, the people, the nation, the world, and God's ideal of the kingdom of heaven in heaven and the kingdom of heaven on earth. When he presents that evidence, then Satan, the devil who committed those sins, will have to surrender. (252-234, 1994.01.01)

20 How can we explain concretely how sin, the Fall, evil and hell came to exist? In order to answer these questions, we need to think about what happened back at the time of Adam and Eve. Delving into the fundamental reasons why Adam and Eve fell, we can say the first reason was that they disregarded God's commandment not to eat the fruit of good and evil. The second reason was that they were self-centered. The third was that they engaged in self-centered love. Since these are the core issues of the Fall, we can conclude that anyone who engages in this kind of behavior is on Satan's side. All fallen people tend to be faithless and self-centered. In the final analysis, it can be seen that the people of this world profess and engage in self-centered love. (079-198, 1975.07.27)

21 When God said, "Do not eat," what is it that God said not to eat? The tree of life and the tree of the knowledge of good and evil in the Garden of Eden refer to Adam and Eve. Specifically, the tree of life symbolizes Adam's reproductive organ. The tree of the knowledge of good and evil symbolizes Eve's love. In the world, if a woman loves a member of the Mafia, the fruit she bears will be the Mafioso's children, and if she loves a king, the fruit she bears will be the king's children. By the same token,

because of whom Eve loved, it was the devil's lineage that humankind inherited. (275-219, 1995.12.30)

22 The tree of the knowledge of good and evil refers to immature Eve's love, and one step further, to her reproductive organ. When a patriot bears good sons and daughters and raises them well, the foundation of their upbringing is love. Where does this love take place? It is in the reproductive organs of the father and mother. Those are not bad things; rather, they are extremely holy. How was the kingship of the kingdom of heaven lost? It was lost when Adam and Eve lost their chastity. How were God's family and the realm of His ideal lost? When their chastity was shattered, everything was shattered. If their reproductive organs had not been violated, they would have become the original place for the building of the palace in God's kingdom. Therefore, we say that the reproductive organs are the palace of love, the palace of life and the palace of lineage. It is through this palace door that patriots are born; it is through this palace door that saints are born, and it was to have been through this door that God's sons and daughters would have been born. God wanted to plant His lineage through this door. (348-036, 2001.07.06)

23 The Bible states that Adam and Eve fell by eating the fruit of good and evil. Then what does it mean that they covered their lower parts? If only Christians interpreted the Bible a bit more rationally, they would know the origin of the Fall right away. Why were Adam and Eve ashamed of their lower parts? If they had eaten a literal fruit, they would have covered their mouths or their hands. Why did they cover their lower parts? The lower parts were not meant to be something to be ashamed of, but because they were used during the Fall, they became the palace of shame, where Heaven's love was trampled on. A fountain of true love should have sprung forth there, but instead a fountain of false love, the devil's love, gushed out. It became the den of the most iniquitous love. (202-200, 1990.05.24)

The cause and motivation of the Fall

24 It is written in the Bible that Adam and Eve plucked and ate the fruit of good and evil. It is also written, "It is not what goes into the mouth that defiles a man." If Adam and Eve plucked a literal fruit called the fruit of good and evil, they first would have looked at it with their eyes, then touched it with their hands, and then put it into their mouths. But what did they do after they had eaten this fruit of good and evil? They did not cover their mouths, hands or eyes; instead they covered their lower parts. They covered an area that seems totally irrelevant to their eating a fruit. We cannot help but perceive a correlation in the biblical record between the angels committing fornication and Eve covering her lower parts. Eve felt ashamed after eating the fruit of good and evil, and then compelled Adam to eat the fruit. After Eve had an illicit sexual relationship with the archangel, she realized that her originally intended spouse was not the angel, but Adam. She knew she had to return to God, but she was afraid. Hence, in order to recover her position, she

tempted Adam. After Adam and Eve had a relationship, they both covered their lower parts and hid themselves. This implies that they both had something to be ashamed of. In other words, they recognized their misdeed and wanted to hide it from God. (53-196, 1972.02.21)

25 Job 31:33 refers to one who “covered my transgressions as Adam.” Even in the secular world, when a man or a woman has some blemish on their face, they try to cover it up. It is a natural instinct. From this perspective, based on the fact that Adam and Eve covered their lower parts, we cannot deny that Adam and Eve’s blemish was not on their mouths, hands or eyes, but on their lower parts. In the Gospel of John 8:44, Jesus reproaches the nonbelievers by decisively stating: “You are from your father the devil, and you choose to do your father’s desires...” Jesus thus stated that the ancestor of humankind is the devil, Satan. Also, John the Baptist called the faithless people a “brood of vipers.” This indicates a relationship between human beings and the serpent, and that the serpent represents Satan. The ancestors of the human race fell because of Satan, the devil, and we became the descendants who received Satan’s blood. This means that the blood of that unforgivable enemy—the enemy whom God abhors the most— exists inside your flesh. (53-197, 1972.02.21)

26 What did the devil do to cause Adam and Eve to fall? Adam and Eve covered their lower parts after eating the fruit because that is where the devil sowed his evil seed. Adam and Eve fell in their teenage years, before reaching maturity. As they were the starting point from which the lineage of the human race spread across history, in the Last Days this phenomenon will become widespread. When the time comes that young people throughout the world assert their independence, transgressing the ethics of love as Adam and Eve did under the shade of a tree, without fear of judgment from heaven and earth, understand that the era of Satan’s full power will have arrived on earth. At that time, you will witness God’s wrath come down. (200-227, 1990.02.25)

27 The Fall of Adam and Eve was the mistake of just one day, yet it brought a fearsome result. That is why a marriage, a relationship between a man and a woman, is something fearful. When you reach out to your partner and when your partner reaches out to you, you should liberate your partner and your partner should liberate you. What should you liberate each other from? You should liberate each other from the trap of love. That trap exists as an individual trap of love, a family trap of love, a national, world and cosmic trap of love. God has fallen into that trap. The ideal world of creation of True Parents’ dream has fallen into the trap of love. That trap of love is the place where human beings became one in wrongful love, misusing their reproductive organs. It is a grievous trap, and they fell for it. (322-192, 2000.05.18)

28 The Fall was the misuse of the reproductive organs, and it resulted in changing the bridegroom and his partner of love. That is what fundamentally brought about the Fall. That transgression was such a grave mistake that Adam and Eve had no place to stand in front of any world—not the animal world, not the plant world, not the mineral world, not even the world of mice and insects. All created beings in the universe acted to expel them. That is why they were driven out of Eden. (279-215, 1996.09.08)

29 The private parts of a man or a woman are like a poisonous snake. They are the trap of a poisonous snake. What does it mean to say that a serpent tempted Eve? It is a reference to the reproductive organ. Are there not many women out there whose female organ is more deadly than a viper? Men too, do they not use their serpent-like organ to tempt and seduce women? If you mistakenly take that bait, you will get into serious trouble. Because of it a nation can perish; even the world can perish. In fact, it can block your way to heaven and eternal life. (227-373, 1992.02.16)

30 The male reproductive organ is like the archangel before the Fall. The archangel deceived his victim with lying lips like a snake's forked tongue; then he seduced her and utterly cast her into hell. The archangel makes men engage in the same act with the thing that resembles the head of a snake. It is like a snake that bites. That is, men use that snakelike organ to grab and eat women. What else can it mean when people say, "Did you catch and eat that woman?" It can only mean to defile her in this way. A man's reproductive organ is such a fearful organ, looking like the archangel, like the head of a snake. (287-117, 1997.09.01)

31 Absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience: these terms concern the reproductive organs. The Fall refers to the failure to achieve oneness between God and human beings in their reproductive organs. They were unable to reach a virtuous union. But you must absolutely believe in this virtuous union. Your reproductive organs must become the pillars of lineage in the history of your family and your clan. (304-166, 1999.10.10)

32 Adam and Eve were God's first only begotten Son and Daughter, and from them stemmed the tens of thousands of generations of humankind. The thing that brought destruction upon these children of God, as well as upon the tens of thousands of generations of their descendants, was their love organs, their reproductive organs. These organs were supposed to be the eternal and unchanging base of love and the foundation for their eternal well-being, for through them Adam and Eve were to inherit God's mainstream heart. The Fall ruined this base and foundation. (312-312, 1999.11.07)

33 What caused the Fall? Love caused the Fall. The Fall was an act of wrongful love. Wrongful love came about through the misuse of the reproductive organs. This is

the formula. If Adam and Eve had not had reproductive organs, how could the people that make up humankind ever be born? Without reproductive organs, how could God's kingdom on earth ever come about? God's true and good kingdom of heaven on earth and in heaven comes into being and develops through the perfectly true and good use of the reproductive organs. Hell comes into being through the use of the reproductive organs in a manner that is not true. (279-214, 1996.09.08)

34 God and Adam and Eve should have become one, but why did this not happen? The reason was the archangel. The Fall occurred because of the archangel's false love. Adam and Eve should have connected vertically with God, but someone else from the side snatched them. That someone engaged with them in a horizontal relationship through the flesh. Human beings exist in two selves— an internal self and an external self. However, at the time of the Fall they were not united in mind and body. As a result of the Fall, human history started out with the division between mind and body, and hence it has been riddled with conflict ever since. This has been happening not only on the individual level; the whole universe is like that. God's providence of salvation concerns how to rectify this. (437-290, 2004.02.13)

35 Man is born for woman, and woman is born for man. Each one's first thought should be for their counterpart; only then should they think of themselves. If they do so, both can claim victory and ownership. But instead, they came to think of themselves first before they could manifest their original value and be joined together. That was the Fall. Why could God do nothing about the Fall? What was it that made Him so helpless? Why is the Fall so hard to overcome? When Adam and Eve ate the fruit of good and evil, why did they cover their lower parts? Simply speaking, they had defiled their blood. This means they had defiled their life. By defiling their life, they had defiled their love. Human beings should have become the nervous system within the great body of heaven and earth, but they fell when they were underage. Who violated the woman? It was the archangel, a servant. He violated Eve, God's daughter, who in the future was to have become God's queen and outward manifestation. Yet the archangel changed her lineage. (200-051, 1990.02.23)

36 The universe wants to expand for the sake of the whole, but Satan pursues everything centered on himself and pulls the universe to himself. His actions are opposite the nature of the universe and cause it to shrink. The result is that the universe is suffocating; it is driven into the pits of despair and bitter resentment. This view is logical and true; no one can refute it. By this logic, if we ask how human beings found themselves in this precarious predicament outside the Garden of Eden, we can only conclude that it was as a result of the Fall. The Fall was caused by self-centered consciousness. Therefore, what we must do is deny ourselves, not only as individuals, but also as families, tribes, peoples and nations; we must admit in front of God that we are not worthy to be His children. (371-275, 2002.03.03)

37 The Fall happened as a result of self- centered consciousness, not as a result of free will. It is because of his self-centered consciousness that the archangel disregarded the conditions of his environment and instead thought of himself first. Satan was an individual existence that ignored the harmony between subject partners and object partners that exists for the whole. He is a thief, because he usurped the ideal of mutual relationship between the universe and the self. Such is Satan that, centering on himself, he disregarded the ideal of creation, the realm of love formed by mutual relationships operating on behalf of the universe. Instead, he caused mutual relationships to transgress their proper bounds. This means that in essence Satan ignored God. (374-199, 2002.04.10)

Why we have to know Satan's identity

38 Who is Satan, the devil, and where did he come from? If Satan did not exist, Jesus would not have had to come and God's providence of restoration, the providence of salvation, would not have been necessary. All of this became necessary only because of Satan. As long as Satan exists, God's providence of restoration will have to continue. As long as Satan exists, the Savior will have to come. Looking at this, we can conclude that Satan came from among the creatures that God created. The Fall means that something went wrong with human beings. They became sick. Who caused the Fall? It was the devil, Satan. Therefore we need to know his identity. The reason Satan still exists to this day is because no one has been able to uncover the root of the sin that he committed and accuse him before God. If someone could do that, we could punish Satan. In order to subjugate him, we must uncover his identity and initiate a campaign to banish him from heaven and earth. (53-194, 1972.02.21)

39 Satan committed adultery with God's own beloved daughter. Forgiving that adulterer would go against heavenly law, so God will not forgive him. Therefore, even though God will forgive the people of Satan's world a thousand times over, He absolutely will not forgive Satan. That is why the great Day of Judgment will come. Who will be judged on that day? It is not human beings but Satan, who dwells in their souls as if he were their master. (22-282, 1969.05.04)

40 What kind of being was Satan originally? The devil was actually a servant of God. Yet this servant raped his Master's daughter. This was the Fall. What is the Fall as recounted in the Bible? The Bible describes it as Eve eating of the fruit of good and evil, but this fruit was not a literal fruit. In fact, the servant raped his Master's daughter. She was supposed to fulfill God's ideal by raising sons and daughters who would inherit His lineage. But the archangel, who was created as a servant, raped the Lord's daughter, and that became the origin of the Fall. How in the world could such a thing happen? Yet heaven and earth ended up this way. (085-308, 1976.03.04)

41 Originally, human beings were supposed to inherit true life and true lineage from God, possess authority over the universe, and live a glorious life. But due to the Fall they received Satan's life and lineage, based on Satan's love. Satan is the enemy of God's love. He is the adulterer. In the Chinese characters for an adulterous man, kanbu (姦夫), the character for adultery, kan (姦) is formed by writing the character for woman (女) three times. An adulterer is someone who steals the woman you love. (213-265, 1991.01.21)

42 Satan, the devil, is the ringleader who expelled the original Owner, stole His wife, and dragged His sons and daughters to a place of death. When seen from this perspective, can there be a way to forgive Satan, the enemy of God and humankind? In the eyes of God, Satan is the ultimate adulterer, the one who stole His love. Can God just forgive him? If He forgave Satan, it would mean the ruin of the whole world. Therefore, you should proclaim before the public that you will become God's sons and daughters, no matter what. You must work with God and humankind to change the course of history. Unless you do, neither God nor humankind can avoid the path of lamentation and suffering. (53-339, 1972.03.06)

43 God offered His entire devotion in creating the universe, full of dreams and hopes about this great undertaking. But when Lucifer destroyed in one blow all the conditions for God's great work, God's life and God's ideal, God felt total darkness enveloping heaven and earth. Thus the archangel Lucifer became the enemy of God. God thought, "Shall I strike down Lucifer and bind him in chains?" God loved His son and daughter the most, they were the bone of His bones and the flesh of His flesh, but Lucifer turned them into his own son and daughter. "Shall I have this enemy beheaded, or not?" God was the first one to struggle over these questions. (27-061, 1969.11.23)

Section 3. The Results of the Fall

1 As a result of the Fall, we human beings fell into the realm of death. God said to Adam and Eve that they would surely die if they ate of the fruit of the tree of knowledge of good and evil, but the fact is that all of humanity fell into the realm of death. What happened as a result of the Fall? Satan, the devil, became the father of humankind, as Jesus pointed out in John 8:44. Adam and Eve should have attended God as their father, but after the Fall they came to attend Satan, the devil. This is the shameful reality that resulted from the Fall. (74-140, 1974.11.28)

Human beings inherited Satan's lineage

2 The Fall changed our lineage. It destroyed the family and the nation that God had envisioned. Therefore our lineage must be changed back. However, when you are in a given situation, if you do not understand the motivation of the actions that led up to it and their end result, you cannot make straight your own motivation, actions

and result. Likewise, unless you know Satan's secrets, it will be difficult for you to set straight what went wrong. The most crucial fact is that human beings fell. Satan's lineage came into us, and his blood began circulating through our bodies from the heart through the arteries and veins to the cells, contaminating them. Our lineage became a total mess, and as a result we became miserable. Humankind descended into ignorance, of history and of the substantial world. Eve saw everything centered on herself. She took that viewpoint and acted upon it while she was still in the realm of imperfection. Hence she ended up turning heaven and earth upside down. It is for this reason that you must change your self-centered consciousness and become new people. That is, you should have the mindset, "I resolve to revive this fallen world with my own hands. I will bring it under my authority on behalf of God. If God does not believe it, then I will make Him believe it." (439-083, 2004.02.19)

3 The Fall means that our bloodline changed, so the problem is with our bloodline. God cannot do anything about our changed bloodline. We human beings should have become children who directly received the bloodline from our original Parent; we were to become God's substantial embodiments. But we lost everything God had planned for us when the enemy changed our bloodline. With that, he stole everything. Our parents were to have been the pillars of love, the center of the kingdom of heaven in heaven and the kingdom of heaven on earth, but those pillars completely crumbled. (467-138, 2004.09.02)

4 In terms of lineage, God can be considered the first generation and Adam the second generation, but the third generation was not connected to this lineage. These three generations should have been connected. Yet Adam and Eve failed to connect to the absolute life and absolute lineage centered on God's love. We must return to that point. God was able to embrace His son and daughter, but since the Fall severed the lineage, He was not able to embrace His grandsons and granddaughters. His lineage was severed; no one can refute this logic. God was never able to embrace His grandsons and granddaughters, who were to have been the fruit of His love, the fruit of His life, and the fruit of His lineage. Therefore the whole human race, which descended from them, ended up having nothing to do with God's love. (437-290, 2004.02.13)

5 Because of the Fall, the lineage of Adam and Eve changed. Because they joined in love with Satan, the enemy of God, the adulterer, they came to embody Satan's life. Their lives as man and woman intermingled with and became one with Satan's love. Hence, the fruits they bore, their sons and daughters, inherited Satan's love, Satan's life and Satan's lineage. (227-047, 1992.02.10)

6 Up to the present, religions have encouraged asceticism, such as fasting. Why do they encourage us to strike our bodies? It is because we inherited Satan's blood, the blood of God's enemy. God's enemy is the adulterer. He is the enemy of God's love.

We inherited the blood of the adulterer. Eve should have inherited the royal authority of the heavenly kingdom and become its queen, but instead she became the wife of the devil, the mate of the servant. This has been a secret of heaven and earth, but now that the time has come, I am exposing it publicly for the first time. Therefore, henceforth Satan's world must retreat. (172-279, 1988.01.24)

7 When Adam and Eve engaged in false love, they came to manifest false life. Satan's lineage became intertwined with their love and life. This has not been known, yet it is an indisputable truth. After Adam and Eve fell they were expelled from God's presence. At that time, they had no sons or daughters. The fact that they bore sons and daughters after they were expelled means that their sons and daughters were connected to Satan's lineage. This is so logical that no one can deny it. Only after they fell did Adam and Eve understand that they were supposed to perfect themselves through their relationship with God and with each other. The problem was how to return to God and reconnect to His love, life and lineage, since the Fall severed them from that lineage and joined them to Satan's love, life and lineage. When we say that the human ancestors fell, we mean that Adam and Eve joined with the false parent, Satan, inherited his lineage, and bore his fruit. The question now is how to turn this around and change our false lineage back to God's lineage. To do this we must change totally, 180 degrees. (502-227, 2005.07.29)

The fallen world and the phenomena in the Last Days

8 The tragic history of deceiving one another began when Satan tempted Eve, and again when Eve tempted Adam. They came to possess a sinful, evil nature through their bond with Satan, the devil, and as a sinful couple they bore sinful sons and daughters. The tradition of sin began in the parents and was passed down to their sinful children. As a result, sinful siblings, tribes, peoples, nations, and a sinful world came about, and Satan, the devil, ruled all. In essence this world, in both name and reality, cannot be other than hell on earth. Satan made people into enemies and inserted enmity within the family. He incited divisions among tribes, peoples and nations everywhere throughout the world so that no one could return to Heaven's side. Satan effectively chased everyone out of God's world. (73-203, 1974.09.18)

9 Genesis 6:6 states that after Adam and Eve fell, God regretted having created them. We can clearly conclude from this simple phrase that what transpired after the Fall was not God's original intention. Also, the Bible states that after they fell Adam and Eve were expelled from the Garden of Eden. This means that they were not able to maintain their relationship with God; instead that relationship fell apart. From this we can see that this fallen world is not the world that God willed; instead it became the world that Satan, the devil, desired. (73-202, 1974.09.18)

10 What became of Satan, the devil, after he brought the Fall upon our first ancestors? In John 12:31 it says that the devil is "the ruler of this world." God is the

one who created this world; how could Satan cast aside the Lord of the world and become ruler in His place? How was he able to seize dominion over humankind and take sovereignty over the world? This world is not under the sovereignty of goodness, presided over by the good God. Rather, it is under an evil sovereignty, ruled over by the evil Satan. People are under the power and dominion of Satan, under his evil sovereignty. This is the first problem. The next problem is that we carry original sin. The Bible says that the progenitors of the human race ate the fruit of good and evil, but how could eating a fruit be such a vile sin that people have unwittingly passed on that sin for thousands of years? This original sin has not been uprooted to this day. Since the root of original sin still exists, Satan can still be the ruler of this world. (53-195, 1972.02.21)

11 The Fall destroyed the central point, which was to have been the standard of the great heavenly law and heavenly way, and the original axis of love. The self-centered relationship between the woman and the archangel shattered the very fundamentals of the universe and opened up an abyss of anguish. The servant trampled on the one who was to have become the queen, and in so doing, destroyed the original standard that was to be the fundamental principle of the universe. Ultimately, who is this devil? He is the chief culprit in the fundamental destruction of the palace of love in the heavenly kingdom. (171-114, 1987.12.13)

12 Human beings are like orphans who lost their parents. How happy would they be if they knew that God was their real Parent? The devotion we feel toward God, our Parent, should far surpass the bitter sorrow we experience when we are treated with contempt as orphans. That is the difference between all of you and me. Since I know who God is, I honor Him. I honor Him wherever I go, wherever I walk. No one can compete with me in this. (362-113, 2001.12.08)

13 Once we have a certain concept in our minds, it is difficult to remove it. Religion helps us in this regard. This is why religion is necessary; a place without religion will perish. For instance, Christianity teaches that the absolute God is our Father, and that we should attend Him as His sons and daughters. Satan is the adulterer who trampled God's love. Our real father is God, but Satan has taken the position of our father. That is why Jesus reproached the people in John 8:44, "You are from your father the devil, and you choose to do your father's desires." Now that you know the appalling fact that you inherited Satan's blood, you should be full of righteous indignation. You should feel like ridding yourself of that contaminated, false blood. (011-243, 1961.10.29)

14 With the Fall of the human ancestors, God lost the partners with whom He was to have formed His family. God was the first generation and Adam was the second, but their relationship could not continue. Had Adam and Eve received the Blessing, their relationship with God would have blossomed in love. But because that did not happen, and their relationship with God was completely severed, God was left all

alone. Adam and Eve had no way to connect to God's lineage. Hence, they were all separated. If you look at what transpired from God's point of view, He no longer had anyone to address as "my child" or "my dear," and call a member of His family. Gone were the people who could relate to Him as a partner. Consequently, ever since the Fall, God has been alone. His situation became more miserable than it had been before the creation. God created all things, and they too were waiting for God to relate to them as His partners. However, since human beings were to have been their center, all things were lost through the Fall. Everything was lost. God completely lost the realm of His counterparts. This was the awful consequence of the Fall. (442-189, 2004.03.11)

15 Adam and Eve fell through sexual misconduct, and that is what will happen in the Last Days. That is, young people will fall into promiscuity. That was the seed that the first human ancestors sowed, so at harvest time the same corruption of youth will spread throughout the world and bring it to ruin. In fact, that is what is happening today; it is undeniable. Who started free sex? Adam and Eve did. As the ones who fell, they are the ancestors of free sex. (257-061, 1994.03.13)

16 True love is so precious, and violating it is a universal crime. Sexual immorality, promiscuity among young people, family breakdown, incest, homosexuality, unspeakable sex crimes and the like, which are today's reality, make God grieve. The ideal of creation lies in the fulfillment of the family ideal, which is based on sublime and eternal love. How did this miserable result come about? We stand witness to the decadence of this age, because now in these Last Days humankind is bearing the fruit of what was sown by our ancestors at the Fall. (135-012, 1985.08.20)

17 Can the United States government solve the problem of promiscuity among young people in America today? That cannot be done through military power, economic power, science or technology. All sorts of wicked things are taking place these days in the name of sexual liberation, but is that love? Love should be true love, which leads to eternal life, but instead it has been corrupted. What hope is there in such love? There is only despair. There is conflict among men; parents clash with their children and children fight with their parents. All this leads only to despair. Wherever you go, whomever you meet, there is no hope. (183-338, 1988.11.09)

18 Today, many people prefer living a single life. Furthermore, issues such as homosexuality have arisen. We may ask why things turned out this way. A key cause is incestuous relationships. A grandfather violates his own granddaughter. A father violates his own daughter. Such incestuous relationships have become more common since the arrival of the era of sexual liberation, the era of free sex. People engage in all kinds of sexual relationships as they please; these take place not only

with strangers from distant towns but even with their closest relatives. (261-045, 1994.05.22)

19 The most serious social problems are youth problems and family breakdown. They are rampant today because God has had to allow Satan to take full authority and power. Satan said to God, "I am the one who loved and embraced Adam and Eve just as I wished, so you have to allow me to do the same throughout the human world in the Last Days. I am the one who planted that seed of capricious love, so you have to allow me full authority to break everything apart through that love. I will stop accusing You only after I have done all that I want to do; only then will I have no more demands of You. Isn't that so?" God responded, "Yes," allowing Satan an era of his full authority. Within God's love, there is no free sex or homosexuality. (307-176, 1998.11.08)

20 What weapons is Satan using? He has an airborne weapon: smoking. He has a liquid weapon: alcohol; he also has a solid weapon: drugs. With these weapons he rots human beings in every way possible, even their spirits. He rots their bodies, their minds, and their spirits. He rots their lungs with drugs that are inhaled through the nostrils. This is why we must not take drugs, drink liquor or smoke cigarettes. These are the weapons Satan uses to destroy human beings. These three things prevent the human spirit from communicating with God, and are the enemy's most effective weapons. Satan's next weapon is related to love—free sex. Free sex destroys the order of love. I must personally put all these things in good order. (126-071, 1983.04.10)

The heart of God as He views fallen human beings

21 When parents trust their beloved children but are betrayed by them, the shock, distress and misery they feel are beyond description. The more they loved and trusted their children, the greater the shock and pain. It is unspeakable misery when we are betrayed, rejected and mistrusted by those to whom we have devoted our lives. You cannot understand that heartbreaking struggle and suffering unless you have experienced it yourself. It can never be fathomed merely by words. This is clear in the affairs of the world. How did God end up being so miserable? God is not a conceptual God; He is a real God. God and human beings are supposed to enjoy the supreme relationship. Once God experienced joy with human beings, He would embark on an endless journey of joy with us, a journey that would last for eternity. However, because of human beings, He could not even begin that journey. (20-206, 1968.06.09)

22 Human beings fell. Not even a thousand years of bitter sorrow can indemnify that. How mortified God must have been, foreseeing that their Fall would become a death trap to myriads of human beings for eons to come. Human beings left such a hideous scar in God's heart. Considering this, we really have no right to utter even

one word before God. Suppose an only son, from a family that has had only one son in each of seven generations, died at an early age. It would leave that family without hope, especially if this son had been born when his parents were advanced in age. If his parents were young they could have had more children. If the only son of seven generations of only sons were to die, not only his parents but also all of his ancestors would be anxious about how their lineage could continue beyond the seventh generation. Ancestors want to receive all manner of worldly blessings through their descendants. So when children die before their parents do, the parents feel like dying themselves. Adam was God's only begotten Son for eternity, not merely the only son of seven generations. He was supposed to establish an everlasting family and accomplish God's great work of creation. Can you imagine God's heart at the death of Adam? (20-211, 1968.06.09)

23 According to the Principle of Creation, when you are in the ideal realm of oneness in love, the eternal owner of that realm, who is the subject partner of love, occupies the central position. God should have been that center. But instead Satan usurped God's place and became the center. Therefore heaven and earth became earth and heaven. They were turned upside down. Nothing should have interrupted the oneness between God and human beings that was to be based on God's true love, His ideal. Further, human beings should have originated from that oneness with God, as children of His direct lineage. Yet it all went the wrong way, and the opposite situation came to pass. (206-236, 1990.10.14)

24 When Adam and Eve were about to eat the fruit of good and evil, do you think God said, "This is just what I expected, go ahead"? Certainly not! God felt His heart withering, and all His senses were drawn into that one place. Trembling and bleeding, He wanted to cry out, "You must not eat that fruit!" Caught up in indescribable sorrow and frustration, He was unable to think of anything else. That must have been God's experience. Do you think God simply watched Adam and Eve eat the fruit of good and evil? If He had had a sword He would have wanted to cut out that part of history, even cut out the whole world, but His position did not allow Him to do that. Even though God was overwhelmed with pain and sorrow, He could not do anything about it. How sad and miserable He must have been! His sorrow and misery were greater than that of anyone who ever lived in history. At the moment Adam and Eve ate the fruit of the knowledge of good and evil, God felt His heart explode. However, God still had to love them. (21-142, 1968.11.17)

25 If Adam and Eve had been able to fathom God's inner heart, they could not possibly have fallen. God loved His children as their Parent, but they did not understand the depth of His parental heart. Of course, Adam and Eve fell while they were still young, but their young age itself was not the cause of the Fall. Rather, they fell because they were lacking in heart. Had Adam and Eve been able to feel, "God is living for me; He is with me; He can never, ever be separated from me; He is involved in everything related to me; in fact, He and I are one," they would not have

committed the Fall. Ultimately, Adam and Eve fell because they could not achieve unity in heart with God. This dreadful problem occurred because their desire deviated from God's desire, and their thinking was different from God's thinking. Furthermore, they fell because they did not understand the devastating consequences of their actions. They did not know from the bottom of their hearts that their actions would determine life and death. (65-174, 1972.11.19)

26 We are fallen descendants of the ones who betrayed God's heart. Do you know what it was that our ancestors betrayed? Do you think they simply ate something that God had forbidden them to eat, the fruit of good and evil? No, they betrayed God's heart. They betrayed His heart for the ideal of creation and His hope for the ideal of creation. That is the issue. (9-114, 1960.04.24)

27 Why wouldn't God cut off Satan from us human beings at once? God is omnipotent, so why does He not cut him off straightaway? It is because Satan is connected to our lineage. If God tried to remove Satan from our lineage all at once, He would have to exterminate the entire human race. Even Adam and Eve would be destroyed. Humankind would have to be struck and totally shattered. Why didn't God just destroy Adam and Eve and create new human ancestors? He could not, because of love. Love is the alpha and the omega. It runs from the beginning to eternity. It is the standard of the ideal. God therefore would not eliminate the human ancestors, who were still the object partners of His love. (188-226, 1989.02.26)

28 No parents in the world want their son or daughter to die, even if he or she were to be hanged for a crime. They would want to save their child if they could. Their hearts would prompt them even a hundred or a thousand times to seek out a way. This is especially true of mothers. If this is the heart of parents even in the fallen world, why on earth would the omniscient and omnipotent God have to bring judgment in the Last Days? Why would God not forgive humankind? How great is God's love? If Jesus forgives people seventy times seven times, God forgives seventy times seven thousand times. That is God's heart. (48-236, 1971.09.19)

29 God is omnipotent and omniscient; therefore He has the authority to judge the world and even Satan. Yet He has not exercised His power to judge to this day. On the contrary, He toils all alone, unable to claim the environment that is rightfully His. He suffers and laments under the accusation of Satan, who stole His entire foundation and robbed Him of His foothold in this world. When we think of this, we are at a loss for words. Have you ever wept in sympathy with God's predicament? It all comes down to this. (51-112, 1971.11.18)

30 How many tears have you wept for God? Have you ever struggled to seek out the path on which you could toil and suffer on His behalf, even though your limbs might be torn off? Likely you have not. You who seek to become God's children

should shed tears for a public purpose. When you meet God, you should be able to comfort Him. Endless tears should flow down your face as you say, “Father, how great Your sorrow was when You lost me, and when You lost the first human ancestors! How many times throughout history have their descendants, including me, caused You to suffer humiliation, pain and extreme hardship!” (51-111, 1971.11.18)

31 God fell into a state of great anguish and sorrow, far greater than the sorrow experienced by any human being. His ideal of creation was violated, His beloved son and daughter were violated. He had to surrender to His enemy, Satan, the entire earth, the garden of ideal true love that He had created, and watch as it became Satan’s playground. How angry and painful His heart must have been! How bitter His sorrow! No words can ever describe it. How many of you, having understood something of God’s situation, have wept tears to comfort Him? God had no choice but to give His beloved son and daughter to the enemy, not because He lacked power or ability, but because He could not trample on the way of love that He had established according to heavenly law and principle. Nonetheless, our beloved Father has been advancing the providence of restoration even as He waits patiently in tears for His lost children to return. For six thousand years He has been searching for His lost children, while having to endure the indignity of denying even Himself. Even though God is omniscient and omnipotent, He had no choice but to take this difficult course, more hellish than hell, in order to restore the true blood lineage. (501-034, 2005.07.14)

32 God is the original True Parent. How much grief did He suffer when He was robbed of that position? How much does His heart ache when He looks upon His fallen children, who inherited the lineage of the false parent, the enemy Satan, and are unable to recognize Him as their True Parent? What is the heart of our Parent, who has had to witness the wretched situation of humankind at every moment? God lost His substantial object partners of true love, whom He would not exchange even for the whole universe. This overwhelmed Him with grief. His ideal of creation collapsed; it was as if He had lost His entire creation. He became the wronged God, whose cosmic throne was usurped by His enemy. He became the God of lamentation, who agonized over the result of the Fall- even more so on account of having invested true love totally and absolutely according to the principles of absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. Further, even though it was Satan who stole God’s ideal, violated His beloved son and daughter and usurped His kingship over the cosmos, God had to endure while Satan accused Him about it continually. (479-242, 2004.12.13)

CHAPTER 3 The Path of Restoration toward God’s Original Ideal

Section 1. Restoration through Indemnity

1 Life is precious. Jesus said, "For what shall it profit a man if he shall gain the whole world and lose his soul?" (Luke 9:25) One can be qualified to become the owner of the universe only after experiencing the truth of these words. Have you become an owner with that qualification? When did you love God so much that even Satan praised you? When did you do something that moved even Satan's heart? Because you did not do these things, God, out of His love for humankind, pioneered the course of indemnity and taught that we must follow it until the time we can return to the original world. That is the teaching of the Divine Principle of the Unification Church. The course of restoration is a course you have to seek and then accomplish by following the Principle. My life has been a course of seeking out the path of restoration through indemnity. This means that all you have to do is follow the course that I have already found. (18-176, 1967.06.04)

Why we need restoration through indemnity

2 Why did restoration through indemnity come about? We understand that it was a result of the Fall, but for what purpose did it appear? If there were no portion of responsibility, there would be no need for the term, "restoration through indemnity." Human beings fell during the course of fulfilling their portion of responsibility. At that time, human beings handed over the realm of the portion of responsibility to Satan. It was taken by Satan. Therefore we must regain the realm of the portion of responsibility. (143-079, 1986.03.16)

3 If God had not established the portion of responsibility, the term "restoration through indemnity" that the Unification Church teaches today would not have appeared. Restoration could have occurred without having to pay indemnity. Why does indemnity have to be paid? It is because human beings have a portion of responsibility. The first human ancestors failed to fulfill their responsibility, and we, their descendants, have yet to fulfill it. To accomplish our given responsibility, we must overcome all the obstacles in Satan's world, and stand in a position to rule over Satan. That is, we must reach the point where we can eliminate the environment in which Satan opposes us and enter the state in which we can receive the love of God with dignity. When that happens, Satan will fall away. (143-078, 1986.03.16)

4 Restoration through indemnity cannot be avoided. Why do we need to separate from Satan? It is because we need to fulfill the original portion of responsibility and establish the foundation for an environment of freedom. Then Satan cannot accuse us and we will stand in a place where Satan can have no relationship with us. That is why, logically speaking, restoration through indemnity and fulfilling our portion of responsibility cannot be avoided. That is why we must separate from Satan. Thus, we must have the attitude that even if we must go without eating, we will have no relationship with Satan's world. That is the dividing point, the borderline. (148-204, 1986.10.09)

5 All of you have lived until now without knowing the importance of the human portion of responsibility. Restoration through indemnity is to provide us with the environment of freedom in which we can accomplish our portion of responsibility. Satan seeks to invade, so we must protect ourselves against him. To protect ourselves against Satan, we must love God and humankind more than we love Satan. Satan hates God and humankind, but we must be able to say, "We love God and humankind." We cannot separate from Satan unless we stand in the position of human beings who have nothing to do with the Fall, and meet the standard whereby we can fulfill our portion of responsibility according to the one original way. (148-156, 1986.10.08)

6 To fulfill our human portion of responsibility, conditions of indemnity are necessary, and I have already made these indemnity conditions. Therefore, if you adopt my viewpoint and purpose of life, when you stand proudly as flag bearers of love in your nation, you will become patriots; when you go to your family, you will become filial children; and when you take your place as husbands and wives, you will be virtuous husbands and wives. In relating to the world, you will walk the path of saints, and you will attain even the position of princes and princesses who live in accordance with the laws of the Heavenly Palace. There is only one way to freely pass through all these gates: by a life of offering everything willingly for the purpose of love. This is an amazing truth. (169-094, 1987.10.25)

7 Restoration through indemnity is not restoration that is merely conditional. I paid conditional indemnity. Now I am making actual indemnity conditions. This is not written in the Divine Principle. You may be hearing these terms, "conditional indemnity" and conditions which are for "actual indemnity" for the first time. When we look at the course of restoration to the present, we see that God repeatedly raised individuals from Satan's world who were most conscientious. Noah was precisely that kind of person. God called Noah upon the foundation of that one individual's life of absolute faith, and settled His providence through Noah's family. Today as well, God needs such men of absolute faith. He also needs women of absolute faith and four-position foundations of absolute faith. (183-164, 1988.10.31)

8 The way of restoration through indemnity is the way to separate from Satan. We need to separate from Satan in order to recover the realm of the portion of responsibility. Originally Satan did not exist in the realm of the portion of responsibility. That was Adam's realm. According to the original standard, Satan should not have invaded the realm of Adam's portion of responsibility. Each of you needs to clearly bear this concept in mind as you take this path. You must complete your portion of responsibility and be engrafted amid God's love. If you want to be engrafted amid God's love, you have to separate Satan. You must separate completely everything that is related to Satan. (148-197, 1986.10.09)

9 Why do we need restoration through indemnity? It enables us to create a realm of freedom wherein we can fulfill our portion of responsibility. Why must we separate from Satan? This is to restore the original environment of freedom, untainted by the Fall, in which we can fulfill our portion of responsibility. This is logical. I, too, am bound by this responsibility. That is why I receive opposition worldwide. I am being persecuted and attacked on the world level. By suffering this worldwide persecution, I can separate Satan on the world level. That is what I did based on my incarceration in Danbury. In Danbury, I loved my enemy and loved my enemy's nation. With love I attended God on the frontline and set all the conditions to declare that I loved humanity more than Satan does. Because of that separation, I declared that I had attained the realm where I can fulfill the human portion of responsibility. (148-200, 1986.10.09)

The eight stages of restoration through indemnity

10 Because of His heart of love, God, rather than considering the archangel His enemy and ordering him around, has been enduring Satan since the time of Adam. Due to humankind's ignorance of the secrets of Heaven and Satan, people have been living in confusion; but now the True Parents have come and revealed all those secrets. That is why I say that pursuing the course of restoration means finding the way, while pursuing the course of the Principle means following the way. I had to fight my way throughout the course of restoration, but you can speed along the path as though you were driving on a highway. We are entering the age when we can speed through in just a few hours what once took many decades. I have made everything clear; it is all based on this principle. (407-104, 2003.05.13)

11 How grateful are you to be going the way of restoration through indemnity, the destined way to fulfill your portion of responsibility? You should not say, "I like the words of the Principle of the Unification Church, but I don't like restoration through indemnity!" In order to be admitted to a university and be allowed to walk through its gates, you must take an exam. That may not be something you want to do, but unless you make it through, you cannot enter the school. It is the same with us. The course you must walk in the Unification Church is not easy. (138-121, 1986.01.19)

12 The Unification Church has been walking the way of restoration through indemnity. In order to restore everything, I created the foundation that we have now. It required me to go through indescribable circumstances in my life. I endured and prevailed without being destroyed and without being caught by Satan's hooks. I made this foundation not for my own sake but for the sake of humankind. It is not to be kept within the Unification Church. The Unification Church will disappear in the future, because everyone will belong to God's one sovereignty. This is what all religions have hoped for. (161-086, 1987.01.02)

13 Persevering and overcoming means you must patiently endure. No one likes to patiently endure. However, we must do so, even if it requires unbelievable effort. It is difficult because human beings were not originally meant to patiently endure hardships. People have to patiently endure because of the Fall. It is because we must offer restitution. In fact, didn't our first ancestors fall because they failed to patiently endure? So to restore this through indemnity, we have no choice but to patiently endure. That is the rule of indemnity. Satan is helpless in front of those who persevere, and in the end he will surrender to them. So be patient and endure until the very end. It is for this reason that God, our Father, has endured everything for six thousand years. We have inherited His heavenly character and His flesh and blood, so we must become like Him. Therefore our philosophy of life in this fallen world has to be one of patience and endurance. Who is this for? It is for God. The ways of filial piety and loyalty start from this. It is where the movement to liberate the nation and the world begins. That liberated world will be a place that both the good world and the bad world will welcome, and thereby hell will disappear. That is why under this principle, we must be patient and endure. (044-027, 1971.05.04)

14 The six thousand years of history unfolded from the individual level to the levels of family, tribe, people, nation and world. The Unification Church is going through eight stages to restore love, on the level of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world, cosmos and finally God. When we pray, we should do so focusing on these eight stages. Individual restoration takes place within the family, family restoration occurs within a tribe, a tribe's restoration occurs within a people, a people's restoration takes place within a nation and a nation's restoration occurs within the world. The restoration of the world occurs within heaven and earth, and the restoration of heaven and earth is completed within the love of God. This means that everything in heaven and earth should become one, centered on God's love. (61-075, 1972.08.27)

15 Although we may live for the sake of our families, we must also become people who live for the sake of something greater, our tribe. And although we may live for the sake of our tribe, we also must strive to live for the sake of our whole people. In this way, we need to climb up step by step. We need to continue climbing, even beyond the world. The world in which we live is the fallen world. In it there are realms of fallen individuals, fallen families, fallen tribes, fallen peoples, fallen nations, a fallen world and a fallen cosmos. We can reach God only when we have gone beyond these seven stages. How great it would be if we could leap beyond these stages all at once! That would be ideal. If Adam had gone beyond the twenty-one years of his growing period without falling, he would have gone through all these stages at once, automatically. (126-113, 1983.04.12)

16 The reason we human beings start from the position of the servant of servants is because we need to walk an internal course of separation from Satan through indemnity. Satan will not have a condition to attack if we fulfill all the vertical

indemnity conditions that exist in Satan's world. That is why I have walked the course of restoration through indemnity through all the positions, starting from servant of servants to servant, adopted child and stepchild. After that, I had to restore the son and the mother to arrive at the position of Adam. One man and one woman have to reach the highest position possible as a man and a woman; only then can they fulfill the position of the Parents. This does not just happen. They must completely fulfill the requisite internal indemnity conditions. (161-209, 1987.02.04)

17 During the course of restoration, world-level persecution and even bloody sacrifice are inevitable. To rise from the position of servant of servants to that of servant, or from the position of servant to that of adopted child, you will have to face persecution. The same principle applies through all seven stages of restoration, and if God is included it becomes eight stages. People change, but God never changes. Thus among the various religions of the world, there are religions in the position of servant of servants, servant, adopted child, stepchild, son, mother, father and true parents. Religions have remained at these different stages, even as they continued through their long histories. In the Last Days, the religion of true parents centered on the True Parents will emerge. (124-069, 1983.01.23)

18 The Unification Church explains that we return to God by going through the stages of the servant of servants, servant, adopted child, stepchild, child, mother, father and God. These eight stages constitute the vertical standard. The horizontal standard consists of the restoration of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world, cosmos and God. These vertical and horizontal standards must match. We must set the standard of indemnity for both. You do not know all this, but if I did not know it, there would be no way to restore this world. It would turn into a den of the devil. I am doing everything possible to survive while the devil is coming at me from all four directions. He is trying to destroy me. Satan is in the position of the father, based on lineage, and he is the chief of all the enemies who oppose God. Yet people act as servants of this Satan, without knowing where they originally came from. Now I have come and finally revealed the root of Satan. I am now leading the movement to lay bare the roots of history. (183-111, 1988.10.15)

19 We have to go through the eight-stage restoration process, even if we do not complete it. Have you ever been in the position of a servant of servants, as taught in the Unification Church? When you are a servant of servants, a servant is your master. You follow the orders not of the master, but of his servant who is above you, while longing to be in the position of a servant. Once you reach the position of servant, you have to move on to the positions of adopted child, stepchild and child of God's direct lineage. Then you have to pass through the stage of the mother, and then the stage of the father as you are climbing up to the stage of God. Only when you reach the stage of God and unite with Him can you enter the world of love. The kingdom of heaven is the world of love. Longing for that final stage, you should

overcome and go over all the preceding stages and enter the world of love. (142-167, 1986.03.09)

20 What is the Ceremony for the Settlement of the Eight Stages? It is a ceremony that marks the victorious completion of eight vertical stages—the servant of servants, servant, adopted child, stepchild, child, mother, father and God—and eight horizontal stages—the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world, cosmos and God. The Ceremony for the Settlement of the Eight Stages signifies that I have gone through the vertical and horizontal courses of indemnity according to those eight stages, and settled, and thereby the restoration of the right of the first son is completed and the course of indemnity for all the people of the earth is resolved. That is the result I brought by conducting this ceremony. The right of the elder son is restored, and True Parents can embrace all humankind. This ceremony brings an end to the history of wars and struggles that were necessary to restore the right of the elder son in the realm of the True Parents' love. Now the time has come when indemnity is no longer needed and we can have harmony in love. In order to achieve this, I had to hold the Ceremony for the Settlement of the Eight Stages. Through this ceremony True Parents forgave both the older and younger sons, so we can now enter the age of the realm where fallen parents are forgiven. (193-172, 1989.10.03)

True Parents' course of restoration through indemnity

21 Most people who go to prison feel despair and discouragement from the first moment they step inside. However, I was quite interested in what would result from my time there. You all have learned about restoration through indemnity, so I think you understand why I wondered what would happen after I surmounted each obstacle. Therefore, to me, the pain I would have to go through was not a problem; instead, I always thought about what new historical gift might come after the pain. (133-301, 1985.01.01)

22 Through the sin of the human ancestors and their failure to fulfill their portion of responsibility, a deep abyss of death came to exist. That is why I am now going beyond the national level in the course of restoration through indemnity, even though the whole world stands against me. I must establish the foundation created by this world-level condition of indemnity when the United States, as the center of the Christian cultural sphere of the democratic world, comes into oneness with the original line of equilibrium, the realm of God's direct dominion. Then the restoration of Cain and Abel will be accomplished. (137-251, 1986.01.03)

23 Unification Church members have to stand in the central position in their nations and in the world. The Divine Principle and the teachings of the Unification Church must become the center of the nation, the world, and heaven and earth. So what does that have to do with you? If you are to rise to the top and become leading

families, you need to stand in a central position and eliminate everything that came about as a result of the Fall. This is necessary. We cannot recover the nation unless we eliminate everything related to the Fall. Even if you are standing at the bottom, you have to rise again to the top, beginning with your family. Earlier in my life, I was unable to finish the seven- year course on the family level. Hence, I had to go through the eras of the individual, family, tribe, people and nation, and then reestablish a family in the ideal position by fulfilling the responsibilities of a filial son, patriot, saint and divine son. Because I went through this process, I had no family during that time. I had to do that course over again to recover the family. This has taken me forty years. (483-137, 2005.01.18)

24 I have forgotten the names of all my enemies. When I go to the spirit world, who could be my enemy? You must love the sons and daughters and the tribe of your worst enemy. That is the way I have lived my life. When the children of my enemies had no money to pay for school, I sent them money. When they had nothing to eat, I bought them food. So my enemy's curse against me has no place to go. Even if my enemy curses me, it does not affect me. Since he will have to pay the debt created by my heart of love for him, his descendants will have to follow me, even if his clan comes to ruin. They will have to serve me as servants while wailing in repentance for his sin. So my enemies are people to be pitied. Because God feels pity for them as well, He chose me to save them—to be the eternal center, the central person who could set today's world straight and, with God on high, regain the world. (305-288, 1998.08.27)

25 Make one thousand spiritual sons and daughters, and take the position of their ancestor on behalf of God. Your role as their ancestor is to embrace all your spiritual children and live for their sake every day. That is the way I have lived my life. Because of this, I have shed many tears that no one knows about. I have shed tears for individuals, for families and for tribes. I have shed tears not only for humanity on earth but also for all humanity in the spirit world and also for the liberation of God. Still, paying indemnity is not a simple matter. It is like water that has fallen to the ground and flows toward the ocean. Nevertheless, if people do not have grateful hearts for the Parents of Heaven and Earth, who have made such a contribution to history, I cannot be responsible for their ingratitude. (382-146, 2002.06.21)

26 The fulfillment of the providence of restoration means the fulfillment of restoration through indemnity. True Parents have been taking responsibility for it, because I know that God cannot intervene or take responsibility unless True Parents take responsibility. Likewise, you have to walk your course of restoration by paying your own indemnity. You can shorten the history of six thousand years to sixty years or even six years. You can do it during your life on earth. I have taught you everything. You must believe absolutely in what I taught you, and love True Parents more than you love your own father and mother. You must resolve that, as sons and

daughters who were born in the state of purity that has nothing to do with the blood of Satan, you will make heaven and earth your homeland, your ideal nation. You also must resolve that among your family, you will establish people who will become filial children, patriots, saints and divine sons and daughters by attending True Parents. By accomplishing this, your entire clan will enter the kingdom of heaven, beginning with your own family. (379-275, 2002.05.30)

27 It is fortunate that I came into this world. You have no idea how hard it has been to sort out all the tangles of mistakes in the bitter grief of human history. This wretched history has been rolling on incessantly, so the question is, who will pave the way and turn it back to Heaven? Behind the few years of Unification Church history stretches a human history that spans thousands of years and hundreds of thousands of years. All that history is connected to the history of our church. Do not forget that the Unification Church has embraced the bitterness of indemnity to restore this sorrowful history. (143-038, 1986.03.15)

28 God's eternal hope, the moment that God has been yearning for, the one moment that all religions in human history have awaited, has arrived within your lifetime. That long-awaited moment is the moment when the True Parents, who represent Jesus Christ, come into the world. Therefore, it is your responsibility to offer sincere devotion and to welcome that moment without any wavering. Many nations fell, many religions rose and fell, and many sages and saints were sacrificed in order to welcome the Enthronement Ceremony for God's kingship. On top of that, the Lord at the Second Advent had to take on the portion of responsibility that Jesus, who came as the only begotten Son, had left for his return, and conclude restoration through indemnity. Amid all this misery, God has been unable to maintain His dignity as the Creator. Yet you must know that He is none other than our True Father. He is the owner of love, the owner of life and the owner of lineage. His relationship with us is destined to become a relationship of Father and children, a relationship of inseparable oneness. (352-329, 2001.09.01)

29 Except for Jesus, even the founders of religion never thought of God as their Father. We understand that He is, but the more serious question is, how shall we take this reality and experience Him as our Father? I can represent heaven and earth today because, ever since I knew God and the spirit world, I followed Him, enduring any kind of persecution as if it were nothing. Unless you also live such a life, you cannot become the people whom God will remember forever as victors. True Parents are in this position. As the Savior, this has been their life course. You who received the Blessing also have to follow this course. (352-329, 2001.09.01)

Section 2. The Path of Restoration through the Blessing

1 If you want to receive God's love, you have to deny everything of this world and offer your life in loving God, which means entering into a love relationship with

God. If you want to receive God's love, you must invest your life; the force of life will enter you in proportion to your investment. If you thus unite your life with God's life, you can finally be restored to the position of a son or daughter before the Fall, a son or daughter whom God can trust. This is the way you build the foundation of faith. Once you have built the foundation of faith, it means that you have conditionally moved from the position of Adam who fell due to his disbelief, to the position of Adam who can be trusted by God, namely, the position God had hoped Adam would take. Afterwards, we have to fight against Satan's temptations and create the foundation of substance. From the position of Abel, we must bring Cain to a natural surrender. We do not fight against Satan with fists; we fight with love. This is because the human ancestors fell through love. If the level of Satan's love is ten, then the level of our love must be fifteen. If Satan's love is fifteen, our love must be twenty. (40-244, 1971.02.06)

Change of lineage through the Messiah

2 Because of the Fall, human beings lost their Heavenly Parent, received Satan's lineage, and came under Satan's dominion. Restoring what was originally intended requires going in the reverse order. We can receive the Messiah only when we have laid the foundation of faith and the foundation of substance. This is what the Divine Principle teaches: we, in our lifetime, have to establish the foundation of faith and the foundation of substance. (54-188, 1972.03.24)

3 Since Adam lost both faith and substance, he can recover love only after he has restored both the foundation of faith and the foundation of substance. What did Adam lose? First, Adam lost faith, next, he lost substance, and finally, he lost love. He lost these three; therefore we need to restore them. (65-314, 1973.03.04)

4 In order to go the way of restoration, you first need to establish a foundation of faith. The foundation of faith is necessary to create a solid foundation upon which you can secure your place and stand in the subject partner position. This will enable you to pursue Heaven's goals by yourself; however, that is not enough. You still have to establish the foundation of substance. The foundation of substance is the foundation that makes Cain surrender to Abel. Cain is the son of the enemy, Satan. It was by the hand of Cain that struggles in history came about. Through him evil took root and waves of death swept through history. To block these evil actions and stop the evil side, a person in the Abel position, that is, a person on God's side, must win over a person in the Cain position. (30-290, 1970.04.05)

5 There are two paths we must take. One is for our sake; the other is for the sake of Cain. That is to walk the path of serving our enemy. This means that, in order to go our own path, we must deal with Cain. What is the foundation of substance? Even though Abel has paved his own way, he cannot stand before God unless he totally wins over Cain. Abel should bring his enemy with him. He should not attack his

enemy; rather, he should lead his enemy and bring his enemy with him. (30-339, 1970.04.06)

6 To remove the original sin, we establish a foundation for the Messiah by restoring the foundation of faith and the foundation of substance. Once we have done that, we are able to newly enter the realms of God's life and love. To remove the original sin requires an engrafting process. In order to make a wild olive tree into a true olive tree, we have to prune it and engraft it with a branch from a true olive tree. Likewise, in order for people who are like wild olive trees to become true olive trees, they have to go through a process of self-denial and then welcome and completely affirm a new self. (41-063, 1971.02.13)

7 People say they have reached a standard of perfection, but this standard does not straighten out the blood lineage. Since human beings have inherited Satan's lineage, their lineage is not pure. In order to purify it they definitely need the Messiah. Therefore, fallen people absolutely need the foundation of faith and the foundation of substance as the foundation to receive the Messiah. The ultimate question is how to create the foundation to receive the Messiah and change your lineage through the Messiah. (55-136, 1972.05.07)

8 What should be your standard in living your life of faith? Your goal must be to achieve a higher position than that of our ancestors Adam and Eve. To get there, you must fight. But against whom do you fight? Brothers are not meant to fight against each other. You must fight against Satan. When you are about to do something good, Satan is bound to appear, but so is God. You stand in the middle, between good and evil. In that position, you can become a person of goodness only by conquering evil and following goodness, until evil surrenders to you of its own accord. In the terminology of the Divine Principle, this is called completing the foundation of substance; it is accomplished by fighting with Satan and gaining victory. After you defeat Satan, you will be rewarded. In this world, accomplishments are recognized with plaques or money, but we are not talking about such trivial things. Our reward is unique and of inestimable value; it is the love of God. (58-018, 1972.06.06)

9 Fallen people must seek the Messiah. The Messiah comes as the True Parents to give us rebirth. It is a rebirth—not through life, but through love. Where does that love originate? Consider the parent-child relationship: we think of our natural parents, but the original subject partner of love is God. If God is the subject partner of love in heaven, then it is Adam who represents God's love on earth. This means that True Father is in the position of the subject partner of love. Since True Father is in the position of the subject partner of love, True Mother must appear alongside True Father as his object partner. For this, Christianity to this day has been seeking the positions of father and mother, but it has not found them. The decisive teaching

that shows how to find these positions is the biblical concept of the bride and bridegroom. (58-019, 1972.06.06)

The origin and value of the Blessing

10 In the Bible we learn that the human ancestors, Adam and Eve, fell. The Fall means that they failed, and failing means that they did not pass their test. Another way to look at it is that they contracted a sickness. Therefore, history began with sorrow and tears instead of joy. For sure it was not filled with blessings. Where was the word “Blessing” to have begun? The history of the Blessing should have begun with Adam and Eve. There should have been someone to receive the Blessing and someone to give it. If Adam and Eve were the ones to receive the Blessing, then God was the one to give it. In this sense, human beings were created to receive the Blessing from God. By giving them the Blessing, God would have had continuous relationships with all people. Therefore, the Blessing belongs to God and, at the same time, to human beings. (91-207, 1977.02.20)

11 Since Adam and Eve fell at the completion level of the growth stage, in the course of restoration as well, the originating point of the Blessing from True Parents begins at the completion level of the growth stage. That is the stage when you receive the Blessing. After receiving it, you then have to pass through a seven-year course before you can stand at the level of perfection. Even I have to pass through this course just as you do. It is our common destiny to have to pass through this course. (25-027, 1969.09.21)

12 The term, “the Blessing” did not begin with the Unification Church. It has been the hope in God’s innermost heart—something He has pursued and strived to fulfill while leading the providence through history. God had wanted to fulfill this hope by giving Adam and Eve the Blessing of marriage after He created them in the Garden of Eden. However, to this day, no one has ever received this Blessing. God has been in the sorrowful position of waiting throughout human history to see the realization of His hope for the Blessing. After working in history for four thousand years, God sent Jesus to this earth for the purpose of finally realizing the Blessing that He had desired to give human beings. Jesus was doing God’s providential work, but he was crucified before he could receive the Blessing. Throughout subsequent history, many Christians struggled and shed blood as martyrs, but still God’s hope remained unfulfilled. God walked the path of suffering along with them to see His dream come true, but until now He couldn’t find that day. Only with the coming of that day will His bitter grief in history be dissolved, and the dream that He has nursed throughout history be fulfilled. (30-164, 1970.03.22)

13 The Fall occurred at the completion level of the growth stage, and we have to reverse its course to be restored to the original state. Adam and Eve fell through the misuse of love. In the course of our restoration as well, when we reach the stage

Adam and Eve were in when they fell, we also must overcome this problem of love. Up to the present, people have been receiving love from the false parent, Satan. To overcome this problem of Satan's love, there is no other way but to connect to True Parents' love, which is centered on God. Therefore, human beings, who have inherited the fallen parent's lineage in the realm of the Fall, must meet True Parents and unite vertically with them to find their way along the path that leads beyond the realm of the Fall. The Divine Principle teaches that we must take that position. However, it cannot be fulfilled alone; it requires that men and women be paired as couples. This is the Blessing conducted in the Unification Church. Therefore, the Blessing cannot be performed based on how you want it; it must be done centered on the Parents, the vertical center. (55-137, 1972.05.07)

14 Human beings lost all things of creation due to the Fall. Satan also defiled their substance—their bodies—and took away their hearts. Everything must be restored through indemnity. Hence, we must put God at the center of our lives and resolve the problem of all things, the problem of substance and the problem of heart. Also, unless we pass through the completion stage, we cannot attain the standard of perfection. This is a principle and law. Thus, all the lost things of creation must be restored and the defiled substance of human beings must be restored. The stolen heart has to be restored as well. When we look at this horizontally, all things represent formation, substance represents growth and heart represents completion. (55-138, 1972.05.07)

15 People commonly use the word “blessing” to denote the highest value. When businesses are successful, people say they are blessed; it means that they are fortunate. They also say they are fortunate when they have a good son or daughter. However, the Blessing is to be received by men and women. What is great about the Blessing received by a man and a woman? First, it is to begin a relationship of love in the very place where life is created. This is the most precious thing. Next, the Blessing is where a man and a woman connect to the life that does not belong only to human beings, but to God, who is the center of eternal life. It is where they inherit the ideal of love where their love is not only their own love but is connected with God's eternal love. Upon this foundation, they should strive to fulfill the ideal of life. This truly is a blessed life. (91-208, 1977.02.20)

16 The Blessing is to receive and inherit the bond with the True Parents of Heaven and Earth. Although God could not realize the relationship of heart that He wanted to have with Adam and Eve after the creation, through the Blessing thousands of generations of descendants will come forth, fulfilling God's hope for a world that will last for eternity. God's hope that was not realized in the beginning has been bequeathed to us today. We inherit that hope as representatives of True Father and True Mother. We inherit the glorious medals and plaques that True Father and True Mother received and all their great, victorious achievements in their fight against Satan's world. (158-021, 1967.11.10)

17 The Unification Church is the only place since the beginning of history that lays out a systematic path to the salvation of the family. That is why families that believe in the teachings and follow the way of the Unification Church will be able to receive salvation and enter the kingdom of heaven. Our mass weddings are the ceremonies that create such families. The world sneers at us and says all kinds of nasty things, but it does not know what an amazing and astonishing thing the content of the Blessing is. We must become true sons and daughters who are one with the principles of heaven and earth and who share in both the heart of heaven and the heart of human beings. We should then form families in the position of God's true first sons and true first daughters, and live our lives on this earth with God as our center. When we do this, we can fulfill the purpose of our life as true human beings born on earth and fulfill God's original purpose for creating human beings. This is the path true people have to follow. (41-314, 1971.02.17)

18 We stand on the foundation of the merit of True Parents, who have been walking the course of restoration. Our value is now higher than that of Adam and Eve who fell in the Garden of Eden. Therefore you are within the realm of authority where you can represent the standard of a people, tribe, family and couple, all of which Jesus was unable to attain. If you follow the standard of faith that is absolutely united with the Word, and if you are absolutely united with the life and heart of the True Parents, you can receive the Blessing from God without any problem. (76-080, 1975.01.26)

19 Centering on whom can you receive the Blessing? Centering on the Parents. They are the True Parents, in whom you can place your absolute faith. You would be punished if you received the Blessing without being able to say with absolute conviction, "I have come forth because of my relationship with True Parents, with their flesh and blood. No force in the universe can sever this relationship." In the future, if you violate this condition and fail, your life will become miserable. You have appeared as a representative of history and the representative of your good ancestors. You stand in a solemn position, representing all your good ancestors and your tribe in this era. (30-226, 1970.03.23)

20 You will be able to return to God only if you can feel from the tips of your fingers to the ends of your toes that you have been completely reborn through the love of True Parents and are grateful for it. However, there are all sorts of things tying you down, so you must kick all of them away and move beyond them. That is the path you are destined to take, no matter how tremendously difficult it may be. How many people without even a twig to grab on have fallen into the abyss? Countless individuals, families, tribes and countless nations have been destroyed, because while on the path they fell off the cliff and died. However, if someone could build a bridge that spans the abyss between the cliffs, such a thing would be worth more than nations and even more than the world. That precious bridge has now been

built for you, thanks to your relationship with True Parents. It is more valuable than receiving all of heaven and earth. (35-234, 1970.10.19)

21 Satan's blood is churning in your veins. Therefore, after cursing and trampling on your unworthy self and repenting in shame for having nothing in you that God can accept, you must come to the place of the Blessing. True Parents suffered to open this way for you, so you need to come with love and gratitude deep in your heart. At the place of Blessing, you must not measure good or bad based on your own thought and brain. Right there your lineage is changed; your bloodline is actually changed. The place of the Blessing is the very best place you can be in the entire world. It is impossible to attain the place of the Blessing on your own; you attain it solely by virtue of the love of True Parents. When a child is born from his parents, whether he is good-looking or not, the child resembles his parents. In the same way, in the Unification Church you are taught the way to become true parents. For you, that is the blessing of blessings. (35-235, 1970.10.18)

Section 3. The Life of a True Person

1 A life of true love simply means living for the sake of others. It is a life of giving to others first, for their sake, before wanting others to give to you, for your sake. It is giving to others and then forgetting what you have given to them. It is not a matter of wanting something in return for what you have given. Rather, you feel sorry that you were not able to give more. It is a life of taking a humble position, even as you give to others and live for their sake. That is the love of parents and the love of an owner. Such is the heart of God, the True Parent of humanity. (433-179, 2004.01.27)

The philosophy and practice of living for the sake of others

2 If you love people as much as you love God, people will love you just as God loves you. This is why in the Bible Jesus said, "Everyone who acknowledges me before others, I also will acknowledge before my Father in heaven." (Matt. 10:32) It is the same principle. That is why I am telling you to love people just as you love God. When you invest in something, do not think about it. Do not spare anything, and then do not remember what you invested. You have to become a leader with the heart of a parent, with the heart that if you have something to eat, you would want to save it for others rather than eating it yourself, or you would not eat by yourself, because you think of your members first. (70-166, 1974.02.09)

3 You should always be in the position of a subject partner, centered on God's love. You should be able to influence others. How can you influence others? By giving. When you give, how should you give? You should not give leftovers. If you give leftovers from your meal, even if people eat them, afterwards they will spit them out in disgust. Let's say you have five rice cakes to give out to people. If you pick up

one, put it down and then pick another, wondering how much to give, it is worse than not giving at all. Without any hesitation you should just pick up a handful of them and give them out. Then people will thank you. But if you hesitate in giving, people will criticize you even after you do them that favor. Thus, when you give, you should do so with God's parental heart. (060-170, 1972.08.17)

4 When you act centering on yourself, it brings evil results, but when you act for the sake of the whole, it brings advancement. When you act for the sake of the whole, every door will open to you. The doors of the individual, family, tribe, people, world and heaven will open; the doors to every path, including the way of love, will open and welcome you. From this viewpoint, the Unification Church teaches the heavenly principle that we are born for the sake of others. So we choose the path of living for the sake of others and actually live our life that way. (133-016, 1984.07.01)

5 If someone truly invested his or her life and sacrificed everything so you could receive a benefit of 100 percent, would your original heart tell you to repay 50 percent and put 50 percent in your pocket, or would it tell you to pay back as much as you can? Our original heart tells us to repay even more than we received. If we truly know that someone gave us everything with a heart of love, our original heart will tell us to give back more than 100 percent. It is by this process that the concept of eternity is established. It is how eternity originated. The principle of total investment was established in the very beginning. Advancement and prosperity flow from that point. (73-326, 1974.08.10)

6 Parents' love is good, but if the parents give it for their own sake, the children will not want it. Children's love is good, but if it demands that the parents live for the sake of the children, the parents will not want it. If you gave ten with love for the sake of others, it will return as eleven. Love for the sake of others works that way. If your partner loves you and lives for your sake even in a small way, you want to give back more than you received. This cycle will continue to expand. If the cycle of giving continually expands throughout your life, this sacrificial way of life will extend itself beyond the nation to the world, the heavenly kingdom, and the entire eternal spirit world. When you demand that others live for you, however, your benefit will diminish more and more. If you live like that, what is ten at first will the next time be reduced to eight. If you demand night and day that others live for you, your heart will shrivel up. Since love comes from the other, only when we follow the way of living for the sake of others can pure, ideal love flow back and forth between us. (119-326, 1982.09.26)

7 There should be no such thing as selfish individualism. The union of Eve and the archangel was based on a self-centered consciousness—the idea that the self should live for its own sake. That is why we have to deny that path. Up to this point we have been talking about living for the sake of others, but not anymore. From

now on, we need to talk about living for the sake of others and the self at the same time. Who are others? "Others" includes "me." We say we have to live for the sake of the Cain world, but that is not exactly so. We must bring them to us because those others and I are actually one body. This is no longer the time for teaching the principle of living for the sake of others; rather, we should teach living for the sake of "others and me." We have to bring our partners to the point that they become one with us, and in so doing, we make something greater—"us." Then we can go to the kingdom of heaven together. Those who think that they alone are the best will not be able to enter the kingdom of heaven. This is a principle. If there is one model at the center, then everything for 360 degrees around the center must be divided into equal parts. There should be no barriers, only equality, peace, unity and freedom. Thus we are not merely living for the sake of others. Our heart and body have to be united based on a greater heart through the principle of "others and I." In this way, we have to bring Cain to voluntary submission. (409-282, 2003.06.29)

8 We have to repay our parents who have lived for our sake. Therefore we must be filial children. Life did not begin from us; it came forth from the Origin of the universe. The entire universe exists in the position of living for the sake of others, and any being that denies this is bound to perish. Such a being would have no origin and therefore no basis for existence. Human beings are born to live for the sake of others. This means we must live for the sake of those who love us. We live for the sake of our father and mother until we die, because we need to make their love grow after we first receive it. If we live for their sake until the day they die of old age, our family will grow bigger. In order to inherit the nation, our family has to grow to the level where its love for the nation exceeds the love between the husband and wife. Then it will become a family that the nation can embrace. We must live for the nation, which is greater than the family, and live for the world, which is greater than the nation. Then we must live for heaven and earth, which are greater than the world, and finally we must live for God, who is the greatest of all. (435-176, 2004.02.04)

A life of true love in accordance with God's Will

9 Satan began his invasion by violating God's heart. Therefore the first step in subjugating and judging Satan is to revive God's heart. In other words, the foundation for victory begins by stimulating God's heart. In the Last Days there is judgment of the Word, judgment of personality and judgment of heart. These three—Word, personality and heart—are the standards of judgment. How can we achieve these standards? We have to ascend to a stage higher than that of Adam and Eve when they fell. Otherwise we will not be in the position to raise the flag of victory. As people who were called by God, who is the original being of the Word, we have to stand in the position of people who have recovered the Word, and we have to stand in the position of people who have substantiated the Word and inherited God's heart. These are the standards we have to reach, and to reach them

we must be above the level where Adam and Eve fell. That is why the Unification Church teaches about the heart of God in the age of completion. (19-134, 1968.01.01)

10 When Adam and Eve fell at the completion level of the growth stage, they did not understand the heart of God. However, in this age of completion, the Unification Church teaches about the heart of God. It also teaches what the Will of God is and how to fulfill it. Therefore, unless we stand above the level of Adam and Eve at the time of the Fall, we cannot resolve the problem that caused them to fall. We have to move up to that place. Among all the people in the world, however, until now not even one person has attained this position. That is why I am urging you to reach it. (19-134, 1968.01.01)

11 You must set your own goals and live according to those goals. You must live your life in a way that God can move with you and history can move with you. Your life should be a model for humanity and for your descendants to follow. Also, you must be courageous and bold in your actions—as when God told Joshua, “Be strong and courageous; do not be frightened or dismayed; for the Lord your God is with you wherever you go.” (Josh. 1:9) Thus God reveals His will to central persons in order to fulfill His providence. When God orders a battle with an enemy, we certainly will win that battle. But if you are set on your own goals and live your life according to secular standards, Satan will invade you. The matter is decided based upon what your goals are. Life goals approved by the secular world will not do. They must be life goals that are approved in the realm of heart. (14-322, 1965.01.10)

12 Behind your will, life and action there must be heart. Your will, life and action must be based on the heart of history, the heart of restoration, the heart of creation, and the heart for all humanity. Adam and Eve were meant to face the matter of heart only after they reached perfection, after going through the formation, growth and completion stages. The central issue in the new age to come will be heart. You must lead your life centered on the heart of God. His heart consists of the heart of restoration and the heart of creation. If the Fall had not occurred, there would have been no such thing as the heart of restoration. There would have been only the heart of glory—the heart of creation, which rejoices just to gaze upon it. The heart of restoration came about because of the Fall. We have to fulfill the Will through restoration because of the Fall. That is why, based on God’s Will and teaching, we have to relieve the heart of God, who has grieved throughout the course of restoration. Since Adam and Eve fell without being able to complete and offer God even one day of glory, we have to complete and offer that one day of glory for God. With the heart of restoration and the heart of creation, we must offer that one day of glory to God. (14-322, 1965.01.10)

The life of a true human being

13 People in England or America should not consider the Japanese or German people who visit their countries as enemies. Even though they are from former enemy countries, the British and Americans should think of them as an extension of their own families. By the same token, wherever you go in the world, if you see an elderly person, you should treat that person with more love than you would give to your own grandfather or grandmother. That is how you come closer to Heaven. If we can, we should create such an environment that American grandmothers treat Japanese children as their own grandchildren. They would even want their grandchildren to intermarry with them, overlooking the difference of nationality. Love is a mighty thing. In the world of love, people keep their loved ones close to their heart, no matter what the circumstances. The family is the training ground for life in heaven. The kingdom of heaven on earth and in heaven is an extension of the family. This is the reason I have worried about America. (229-140, 1992.04.11)

14 The model family whose members are united by love is like a textbook of the kingdom of heaven. The world is an extension of the family. The people of the world can be differentiated by age: those at the age of grandfathers and grandmothers, those at the age of mothers and fathers, those at the age of young couples and those at the age of children. If the people of these different ages train themselves to unite and harmonize with one another within their own families, they create a formula by which wherever they go, whether on earth or in heaven, they can inherit everything, participate in everything and become the owners of everything. The kingdom of heaven is one family. The kingdom of heaven on earth is a world where people treat one another with love as their own brothers and sisters, beyond the national barriers. People who live such lives then move on to the eternal kingdom of heaven in heaven. That is the greatest success in life and the path of greatest happiness. (217-104, 1991.05.04)

15 Men and women are supposed to be ideal partners who help each other reach perfection. Without a partner there is no way to find true love and no way to attain perfection. Your mother and father should give you their signatures of approval, your grandmother and grandfather should say, "okay," your spouse should say, "okay," and your sons and daughters should say, "My father and mother are okay." When all of them recognize you as a good couple, your sons and daughters will be happy. They will be happy because they live with you, their parents, who represent God, the King of the Universe. Your home, where they live, is a palace in which they are princes and princesses. Such a family is the kingdom of heaven. I have discovered this, and I am now teaching you by practicing it. (217-105, 1991.05.04)

16 The kingdom of heaven starts from the family. The grandparents represent the past, the mother and father the present, and the sons and daughters the future. In this way, the past, present and future are condensed in the family. The mother and father represent the current world. The grandfather and grandmother are in the position of God in the past; the mother and father are in the position of God in the

present, and the sons and daughters are in the position of God in the future. They all are equal in true love. Based on the logic of true love, they attain equal value and ideal oneness. True love is love for the sake of others, and based on such love, the four directions blend into one. The family where this occurs is eternally protected by the fortune of God's love. Its members are the partners of God's love, and therefore they will never die but live for eternity. (211-289, 1990.12.30)

17 True parents are horizontal beings, and horizontal beings need a vertical being—Heavenly Parent. It is our heart that resembles the vertical Parent. It is our conscience that inherits vertical love, life and lineage, and it is our body that inherits horizontal love, life and lineage. God can only settle in the place where human beings join in a virtuous union, where their human hearts and Heaven's heart are joined at a 90-degree angle. From that place all fortune springs and flows, and the world of eternal happiness and blessings begins. We must form this kind of heavenly kingdom in the family. When this kind of life expands, it becomes the world. (211-290, 1990.12.30)

18 We should know God's love. We should know the love of our parents and learn how to attend them. We should know conjugal love and learn how to serve our spouse. We should know our children's love and learn how to understand and support them, not just give them directions. Only then can we understand God's love. We need parents, spouse and children as the textbooks of love. Unless we have children, we are incomplete and cannot understand God's love, because we cannot understand how much God loves us, His children. Unless you are a husband, you cannot know a wife's love, and unless you are a wife, you cannot know a husband's love. Children do not know what parents' love is like until they become parents. Children, spouse and parents are textbooks to learn from. Hence, without sons and daughters you cannot be true parents. You need your parents, your spouse and your children so you can become first class products that meet the standards of the original Principle. Only then will the universe stamp you with its seal of approval as Grade A products that can experience God's love. Then you will go into the kingdom of heaven automatically. (133-138, 1984.07.10)

19 One who is always able to discern whether God is happy or sad cannot become an evil person even if he or she thinks to do so. He or she cannot go against the law of Heaven, even if he or she tries. The kind of person God deplores the most is the one who tries to use other people, whether in a private or public setting. Also God deplores those who evaluate matters based only on their self-benefit. The people God cherishes are those who yield to others. To yield means that you continually follow the person to whom you yield. You continually do what that person says. If you keep on doing it, you will find yourself orbiting in a circle, and you will end up acquiring that person's position. In the end you can possess everything that person owns. (40-297, 1971.02.07)

20 To your partner you should always be meek and humble; you should submit, obey and surrender yourself to him or her. You do this in order to win him or her over completely. It is not just to occupy your partner, but to win him or her over in every respect. Likewise, in the world of faith, you must use the strategy of denying yourself and completely complying with your leader's desires. This strategy is not to make you cease to exist, but to win him or her over completely. This is something of which you should be aware in your everyday life. (40-298, 1971.02.07)

21 Arrogance is your enemy. Arrogance and insisting on your own way are the essence and character of Satan. So instead of being arrogant, you should be modest; instead of insisting on your own way, you should be humble. Harmony creates friendship. Thus, you should be able to bring harmony to everyone. If you can do that, everything will start to flow. If people fail to unite in harmony, nothing greater can come. Lack of harmony leads to stagnation. Therefore, you must not give in to jealousy or envy, which, along with arrogance and insisting on your own way, are the essence of Satan's nature. (37-132, 1970.12.23)

22 The work of the Unification Church is to transform people into saints. Great people have to face enemies, but saints do not regard anyone as an enemy. Great people love their own people, but saints love all humankind. Therefore, when great people seek to stand before God, He tells them, "You loved your own people but you failed to love all the people of the world, whom I love and am trying to save. Isn't that so?" Hearing that, they are not able to stand in His presence. On the other hand, those who fulfill the duties of saints can go directly into His presence. The Unification Church works on transforming people into saints. (38-263, 1971.01.08)

23 Those who worship God need to shed their blood. Those who love God must shed tears. In fact, tears should not dry from their eyes. Those who seek God must shed sweat. Then, with the heart of a parent and in the shoes of a servant, they must sacrifice and serve humanity from the position of Abel, giving everything they have with utmost devotion. In giving, they should not boast to others, but rather feel sorry that they cannot give something better. This is what Godism is all about. (486-173, 2005.02.05)

24 The reason I stay up all night meeting with people is so that I can love everyone. If I disliked anyone, I could not take responsibility for the work of restoration. I have to love everyone, the good and the bad. Unless I love everyone, I cannot represent God. The Fall means that the first human ancestors fell down from God's world to the opposite place. The Fall caused the world to plummet to a bad place. Nevertheless, if God were to say that this world was bad, He could not be God. He could not fulfill the work of restoration. When God created the world, all the while He said it was good. He could not be God anymore if He said this world had become bad because of the Fall. That is why it is a principle to treat even bad things as good things. That is why Jesus said, "Love your enemy." (Matt. 6:44) (40-108, 1971.01.24)

25 To love your enemy means that you stand in a position where you do not have an enemy. To stand in that position means that you return to the original position in the original world, to the Garden of Eden which has nothing to do with the realm of the Fall. This is what we are fighting for. We fight so everyone can return to that state. Therefore, when you meet someone for the first time, do not reckon him to be a bad person, even if he is. (40-108, 1971.01.24)

The life of a true patriot and filial child

26 You must become families who can settle at the position of high noon, where no shadow is cast. The Garden of Eden was a place of true love, without any shadows. In love there are no shadows. That is why everything in the world wants to come and be in that place. In the position of high noon, no one asserts his or her self. It is the place of absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. There is no assertion of self. This is what happens to everyone in the presence of true love. Adam's family must be established as a family without shadows. Then from it will emerge Adam's tribe, Adam's people, Adam's nation and Adam's world. (335-045, 2000.10.01)

27 There must be a place of Sabbath, without shadows, where God can come and freely settle anytime He likes, day or night. Establishing such a place is God's ideal of creation. Therefore, the reason we live as we do, seeking that place, is to attend God as our eternal Father, from the individual level all the way up, even in the heavenly world, and to become families of filial sons and daughters, patriotic men and women, saintly couples and divine sons and daughters. Through such families, God can freely travel anywhere He wants. The kingdom of heaven on earth and the kingdom of heaven in heaven will be realized when the world without any shadows is connected to heaven and earth. This world is where God can travel freely back and forth, visit anyone, from the youngest family to countless generations of our ancestors, all at once, and reach heaven and earth in all four directions, as He pleases. That is why the place of settlement at high noon, where no shadow is cast, must come. (335-045, 2000.10.01)

28 You are not to live a life with shadows. Therefore, I proclaimed the high noon settlement. It is a marvelous concept. For there to be no shadows, mind and body must be united and the family must be united as a four-position foundation. If the father did something wrong, he would create a father's shadow. If the mother did something wrong, she would make a mother's shadow. If there were four members in the family and the four could not settle down, then the light would be blocked. No one likes the place of shadows. That is why we must achieve the high noon settlement. There shouldn't be any shadows, even after we go to the next world. God travels through the vertical line of eight stages from the shadow-free individual to the shadow-free family, tribe, people, nation, world, cosmos and God. Can there be any shadow cast on God's love? It is purity itself. That is why everyone wants

that purity, even in his or her flesh and blood. No one likes shadows. The shadow is Satan. This is why whenever we do wrong, we tend to cover it up. That is the enemy. That is the barrier. You must break down that barrier if you are to have the high noon settlement. I am not saying this just symbolically. It must be done. (333-294, 2000.09.27)

29 In front of the True Parents, we must fulfill our duties as true filial children, true patriots, true saints and true divine sons and daughters. Only then can God's kingship be established. The kingship of the heavenly nation is based on expanding the authority of the sons and daughters who attend the True Parents. Once the kingship is established, God will be enthroned and Satan's world will disappear. (400-195, 2003.01.01)

30 From now, we need to establish a new tradition with the family as its center, based on the tradition of those who lived their lives as patriots, saints and divine sons and daughters. For this, we need to replace the traditions that existed during the age of indemnity. This new tradition is what we will follow for eternity in the kingdom of heaven. Centering on the family, we should establish the ways of true filial sons and daughters, true husbands and wives who are faithful to each other, and true patriots, and prepare the ways of saints and divine sons and daughters. We have to prepare these ways here on earth. (482-054, 2005.01.08)

CHAPTER 4 The Life Course of True Men and Women

Section 1. The Way of Our Original Nature

1 Why were we brought into this world? Why do we have to live? Where are we heading? We should not think that we were born by our own will. We were born into this world, yet we do not know the motivation and purpose behind our birth. We were born, but it was not because we chose to be born. We are living, but it is not because we decided to live. We will die, but it is not because we decide to die. Then what is there to be proud of? Since we cannot choose to be born, we cannot have exactly what we want in our life; and since we cannot avoid the path of death, we are pitiful beings with not much to be proud of. Since we were born, we are destined to live; and after living, we are destined to die. (7-179, 1959.09.06)

Preparation to fulfill our purpose of life

2 People in this world often ask, "What is life?" This question relates to our view of life, of the nation, the world, the universe, and finally, of God. How do we decide on our views of all these issues? What should be the basis for all these views, and how do we put them in order and connect them together? There is no better view of life than that based on the principle of living for the sake of others. Through it, you can

find happiness by living for all humanity, for the whole world, for your nation, your society, your family, spouse and children. (75-324, 1975.01.16)

3 When you start off in a wrong direction, you will end up in a totally unexpected place. Hence, when a ship sets out on the vast ocean, the captain should chart its course and follow the compass from the moment it first sets sail from port. Yet fallen human beings do not even know their port of departure. They have no compass and no sense of direction or knowledge of their final destination. They have been wandering about, zigzagging here and there according to their desires. However hard they try, they end their life without having overcome their human limitations. (172-028, 1988.01.03)

4 You should not live your life without knowing what you are going to do. By the time you are in your twenties you should have a clear view of what you are going to do with your life. Then you have to struggle to achieve that objective, if you are to become a historical figure who leaves behind a legacy. You need to muster the courage to fight to attain victory, no matter what difficulties you encounter in trying to accomplish your goal. You should not try to avoid difficulties, but rather have the guts to digest them. (120-313, 1982.10.20)

5 The most important period in your life is from age eighteen to twenty-four. You should set the goal for your life by the time you are twenty-four. If you have self-discipline and offer sincere devotion, you will come to understand what it is. If you were born into the Unification Church and have led a proper life of faith, you already know what to do. On the other hand, those who live self-centered lives and take into account only their own interests have no idea. If you do not have any idea about your own direction, it is a serious problem. You need to discuss with God regarding this important matter of your life. Also, you need to adapt well to your environment. (120-313, 1982.10.20)

6 "When I was sixteen years old I was already very serious about life. When I was planning to go somewhere, if I felt uneasy about it I did not go. If I went anyway, there would be some kind of accident. It is the same today. That is why I am still alive, even though I have many enemies in this world. The more important one becomes, the more difficulties one encounters. In order to be able to overcome these challenges, it is crucial that you are able to make right decisions about where to go and whether to go there. If someone comes and reports to me, ""Father, we are in trouble; there is a problem,"" I already know what happened. If you cannot sense things like this, you will never become a great leader. You should not look at things two-dimensionally; you need to consider them from all angles. If you adopt a multidimensional way of thinking, an infinity of two-dimensional situations will be included. Because I have such a quality in me, if a person whose conscience is not upright comes to me, no matter how successful he or she is, I always have the upper hand. No explanation is needed. Of course you need to have knowledge, but

more than that, you need to develop your spiritual awareness, because the future world is one of spiritual principles. (120-323, 1982.10.20)"

7 When you are calm, there is a place deep within your heart where your mind can be at ease. Your mind should be able to go to that place where it can rest. After you rest there and reawaken, your senses become very sharp. Then, if you seize that moment and focus yourself on that tranquil mind, excluding all other thoughts, you will be able to connect to everything. This is why you need prayer and self-cultivation. You must offer devotion all the time. Devotion is not something you offer once and then expect results. Through continual devotion you must find that state of tranquility and peace in your heart. Then you will understand everything you have to do. Having found your direction, you must follow through. You have to focus on that one direction, with your focus as sharp as the point of an arrow. Finding your direction is not difficult, but there are many things you must do beforehand to prepare. You must find the source of strength within yourself to move forward every day. Moreover, you cannot do these things all by yourself. (120-320, 1982.10.20)

8 By the time you reach eighteen years of age, you know what kind of person you are. However, you cannot succeed with your own power alone. This makes you prone to impatience. So you need the help of your friends, teachers and God. When I need greater power than what I have in order to do something on the world level, I become serious about the question of where I can find that power. If I were not able to find extra power, I would have to retreat, but that is not an option. That is why we need to pray, and why we need God. That is why we need the world of heart. The world of love is unlimited; it doesn't matter how much you draw upon it. The material world ends at some point, as does the world of knowledge. The world of power can be destroyed in a second. But the world of heart is endless. Hence you need to act based on the world of heart. When you go to the center of the world of heart, you will move up and down on its central axis. You should go to the very core of the mind and heart. That is where infinite power is generated. If you make a ninety-degree angle with God, you can maintain infinite power based on that perpendicular. Hence you need to cultivate yourself. You need to offer devotion and experience the spirit world deeply through all aspects of your life on earth. (120-321, 1982.10.20)

9 The teacher closest to you is none other than your original mind. Your mind is more precious than your closest friend. It is more precious than even your mother and father. You need to consult your original mind. That is where God dwells. You need to reach the state where you can hear the voice of that mind. What Buddha meant by the words, "In heaven and on earth, I alone am the honored one," is that when you look into your heart, you will know that God dwells inside you. Then there is nothing you cannot do. So please make your mind clear and bright. Your original mind is superior to any teacher. It is your eternal lord. Therefore, do not be

self-centered. Cultivate a mind devoted to the common good, a mind that takes a public position. (133-179, 1984.07.10)

Our purpose to become the sons and daughters of God

10 "Human beings are meant to be the princes and princesses of the universe. We should come to the point where we are able to say, ""God is my Father, and what God owns—heaven and earth—is also mine."" We should not rest until we possess all that belongs to God. To do this, we need to resonate with God's heart. Then, motivated by God's heart, we can embrace everything in the universe, and Satan cannot claim us. Then, finally, heavenly fortune can move for us, the blessings of heaven and earth can dwell with us, and the Garden of Eden can open to us. God, human beings and all things of creation will join in harmony to make paradise on earth. However, this is impossible without heart. (11-321, 1962.03.23)"

11 Human beings are called to become true sons and daughters of God. God exists as our subject partner and we are meant to be His object partners. Despite the Fall, our original nature and character still remain in us, and we cannot but long for the ideal realm of the original subject partner. This longing is stronger than even our conscience, and it drives us day and night toward that relationship with God. It is the power behind our conscience. Even after the Fall it still pushes us in that direction. (56-152, 1972.05.14)

12 A magnet's plus pole and another magnet's minus pole attract each other. Even if paper or some other insulating material is placed between them, they continue to attract each other despite the obstruction. The thicker the insulating material is, the weaker the attraction between them. If the insulation becomes too thick, the magnets' attraction appears to be lost, yet their poles still radiate the same attractive forces. In the same way, because of the Fall there is a thick obstruction between God and human beings. Yet while it appears that the Fall completely blocked the relationship between them, the conscience always exerts an attractive force toward God. When a layer of the obstacle is laid aside, the attraction becomes stronger. As the layers of obstruction are removed one by one, the magnetic attraction becomes stronger and stronger. When all the obstruction is removed, their communication becomes perfect. At that point, people will know everything that God knows, even without being instructed. (56-152, 1972.05.14)

13 "What is it that caused the first human ancestors to fall in the Garden of Eden? It was self-centeredness. This is why the ones who should have become God's son and daughter could not fulfill their destiny, and Satan invaded them. Everything was lost because of this. Nonetheless, those who can overcome Satan's invasion can become God's sons and daughters. To do this, you need to develop the awareness within yourself, stronger than that of Adam and Eve, that the absolute God is your Father. That Father is the center of the kingdom of heaven and the center of the

earthly world. You have to become one with that Father. By doing so, you become one with the absolute center; you become one with the absolute ruler of heaven and earth. The question is how to gain this awareness. Until you realize there is absolute value to becoming one with God, there is no way to resolve the problem of self-centeredness. You must have the awareness, "How precious the relationship I have with my Father is! My Father is the ruler of the world! I cannot exchange my Father even for the whole world; I cannot exchange Him for the entire universe. Without a doubt, I am His child!" By this, you stand in a position higher than that of Adam and Eve before the Fall. (30-056, 1970.03.15)"

14 It is amazing that our parents and ourselves are from the same origin. Thus we can say that our parents' love is our love, our parents' life is our life, and our parents' ideals are our ideals. When parents look at their child, they say, "This is my beloved son or daughter." Parents feel and recognize that their children are the substance of their love, life and ideals. If they do not see their beloved sons or daughters for just one day, they miss them, and even if they have just seen them, they still want to see them again and again. Even if they try to send their children away they cannot, because they are their bone and flesh. The fulfillment of all their ideals depends on their children. If even parents born into today's fallen world, where no true love, true life or true ideals are to be found, knew how to love their children, how much more does God, who is the subject partner of those parents, love His children? Before the Fall, the original Adam and Eve, as the son and daughter of God's direct lineage, were God's royal descendants. That is, Adam and Eve were the prince and princess who were to inherit the kingdom of heaven in heaven and the kingdom of heaven on earth. (298-315, 1999.01.17)

Section 2. The Path to Individual Perfection

1 When we consider the fact that human beings have a contradiction within themselves, or have been unable to reach the requisite standard, or are damaged, or have fallen away from an ideal state, we arrive at the logical conclusion that God exists. This being so, we can appreciate the word "Fall." The Fall caused human beings to exist in a state of self-contradiction. Since we are fallen, broken, contradictory and imperfect, the perfect God cannot stand in the same position as us. Based on this logic, we can affirm the existence of God. (94-278, 1977.10.09)

People of contradiction between mind and body

2 When God created all things, as an Absolute Being, He must have done so with an absolute purpose. Even fallen people set out to make things with a purpose in mind and strive to achieve that purpose. Yet it is a contradiction in fallen people that they have a mind and body that seek contrary purposes. That should not be the case in beings created by the absolute God. Because God is one, His creations also should have one purpose. Since we were born with the single purpose of becoming God's

children, we should be one with Him based on that purpose. Yet, even between those two entities that are closest to us, our own mind and body, there is a contradiction. This is because humankind fell. (36-286, 1970.12.13)

3 If humankind had not fallen, we would now live in the kingdom of heaven and would be fully adapted to its environment. However, because the world is fallen, the magnetic poles of our mind and body were turned upside down, and they came to confront each other. Plus and minus were completely reversed. If there is an absolute God, that God must have one view, one thought, and one purpose. If it is certain that human beings originated from God, who is their cause, and that God has one purpose, then human beings, as resultant beings, should exist in accord with that purpose. Human beings have conflict within themselves, however, and regardless of what angle we look at them from, they exist in a state of contradiction. If we did not understand the Fall, we could conclude that we were originally created with this contradiction. In fact, it is a result of the Fall that the directions of plus and minus were reversed. The mind wants to go toward God, but the body opposes that. It is here that the conflict arises. (82-277, 1976.02.01)

4 Human beings have both good elements and evil elements; this is the problem. If we look at ourselves as individuals, we each have a body and a mind. But the body and mind are not always in harmony. The mind says to go one way, but the body often resists. It says, "Don't go that way; let's go this way." Because of that, many prophets and saints throughout history struggled over how to reconcile the mind and body. (38-301, 1971.01.08)

5 Without unity between mind and body, if one wants to go east, the other wants to go west; it means they are pursuing conflicting goals. If we follow the mind, we come to an ideal place that is different from the fallen world today. If we follow the body, we come to a fallen place. When we feed our body, it asks us to feed it something richer. When we let it play, it wants to play more. It even wants to take other people's possessions for itself. It acts in a self-centered way, as though it is the most important thing. It has no concern for others. But the mind acts in a way that is contrary to the body. The mind seeks to sacrifice for others. The mind says, "Live for others. Help unfortunate people. If there are poor people, assist them. Offer your service for others, from a public position. Give of yourself." It always guides us in a direction different from that of the body. (38-301, 1971.01.08)

6 Originally our mind and body should have been infused with God's love. Then there would be no contradiction, conflict or struggle between mind and body. But we fell away from God and engaged in external love centered on the body. The result of this has been struggle and conflict between mind and body. Love focused on the outer body was a betrayal of the love of God, who is the origin of ideal, eternal life that centers on the inner mind. The result is what we have seen throughout history. Therefore we must remove external, body-oriented love,

namely, Satan's love, and replace it with the internal, mind- oriented love that was originally meant to be, by inheriting the love of God. Then we will be able to reconcile mind and body. Unity can emerge only when we accomplish this. (20-179, 1968.06.09)

7 The deeper we go into the realms of spiritual growth, the more difficulties we encounter. Until we cast off and rise above all the selfish desires of our body, we face all kinds of resistance. Therefore religions encourage us to strike our body. They teach that when we bring our body to the zero point, new hope arises. True religions are rooted in the absolute denial of the body. In this regard, they point to the formula course that human beings are destined to follow. It is based on the fact that if something is broken, it needs to be remade according to its original factory design. Yet it is more difficult to repair something than to build it the first time. This means that even for God, it is more difficult to fix something than to create it. This applies to the path for perfecting human beings. (82-278, 1976.02.01)

8 How do I develop an unchanging mind and bring it into oneness with God's heart? How do I make my mind stand in the position of a subject partner, whence it can control my body throughout my life? This is the challenge. If I can bring my body to take a minus position and unite with my mind, if I can keep it in the position of object partner to my mind at all times, twenty-four hours a day, I will generate a power that can move the universe. My mind needs to become a plus, and my body a minus. But all too often in reality, my mind is plus and my body is also plus. Because two plusses repel each other, my body is my enemy. How do I make my body into a minus? This is the challenge presented by all religions. (82-281, 1976.02.01)

9 If you want to go the way of God's Will, you need to unite your mind and body. Because the mind should be the subject partner it is crucial that you subjugate your body to center on your mind. As you pursue the way of faith, if your body does not obey you, you should scold it, "You foolish body!" and rein it in. You fast, you restrain yourself, you deny yourself, and you impose restrictions on what you do. As you lead a life of faith you refrain from many things, such as casual love relationships. Money is not the issue. Knowledge is not the issue. The problem is that the body is always 100 percent armed and completely prepared for hand-to-hand combat, ready to attack the mind. This is the battle you face. Unless you succeed in this, you can never realize God's Will. (101-038, 1978.10.28)

10 People who are going the way of self-cultivation offer their utmost devotion in order to communicate with the spirit world. However, just as a man is about to succeed in his spiritual quest, a beautiful woman may entice him. This is Satan's secret weapon. Likewise, if a woman offers great devotion, a handsome man may appear and entice her. If a man seeks to shake off the devil's urge to destroy heaven and earth, if he seeks to find his origin or to learn about the original world of God,

the devil Satan will mobilize his best weapon, a woman, to trip him up. There is no man who is not vulnerable to the charms of a beautiful woman. Moreover, no matter how devoted a woman is in cultivating her spirituality, no matter how well-behaved or disciplined she may be, if she sees a handsome man of the world with an impressive build beckoning her, without her realizing it her hand has reached out to touch him even before her eyes meet his. Even if she tries to remain still, her body acts first. It happens through the attraction of love, through the attraction of plus and minus. (210-013, 1990.11.30)

11 Religions teach us to live a sexually abstinent life as a shield against immoral love. The flesh can be an enemy, and this enemy has three great weapons: eating, sleeping and sexual desire. I have faced all of these. You have no idea how much I struggled, how many tears I shed to overcome them. In order to make the indemnity conditions to conquer these, you have to do whatever it takes—even go to prison for ten years if necessary. Being in the position to receive God's sweet love is good, but when you run into the enemy's weapons, what are you going to do? I knew that the way to save humankind according to God's Will is not the easy and comfortable way, and the first question I wrestled with was how to bring myself back to the original state. (94-295, 1977.10.09)

12 How can we restore our rightful dominion? In the evil world of Satan, people want to seize that position by force. Saying, "I will rule over you," they take up a whip and use any means to take dominion. That is not how it should be. By what means should we restore the original dominion? Not by force or by any means commonly used in Satan's world today. Not by plotting to hurt other people, nor by sacrificing others for our benefit. Rather, it is by self-sacrifice and love. God has been showing us the true way to have dominion, beyond the ages. If a person overcomes many humiliations and difficulties with self-sacrifice and love, the people surrounding him automatically push him or her forward to govern them in the position of subject partner. (49-055, 1971.10.03)

Achieving the state of mind-body unity

13 Adam and Eve each have the dual structure of mind and body. The mind's position is internal and the body external. Each individual exists to attain unity between the internal and the external. A man and a woman who have attained that unity then can become one horizontally, in a relationship of subject and object partners. In other words, a man's mind and body unite with each other, as do a woman's. Then these two unite in love. How were our mind and body originally supposed to unite, had there been no Fall? They were not meant to unite around a concept or idea, nor by power. God divided the mind and body in order to substantiate love. He divided them so that love could form a sphere. Mind-body unity is what enables love to manifest in all directions, not just at a single point.

God wanted to create an environment in which love would spread everywhere. That is why He needs us to love. (140-125, 1986.02.09)

14 People always think about their parents. They always think about their parents' love. Then, what is the direction of our parents' minds? Their minds want us not only to connect with their love, but also to connect with the love of our brothers and sisters, with the love that concerns our nation and world, and with the love that concerns heaven and earth. In this way our parents' minds strive to have us connect to love expressed in relationships of front and back, left and right, up and down. Why so? The place of love where mind and body become one is not inclined to the north or the south. The mind seeks to stand at the center of north, south, east and west. It wants to stand close to the center, because that is where human beings form a relationship with God's love, the vertical love of the universe, the original love. The Creator, too, has one central way through which He can love human beings once they attain perfection. God did not divide human beings from Himself merely to observe them, but to experience their original love. (140-126, 1986.02.09)

15 The desires of the flesh are contrary to the desires of the mind. The body wants, for example, to steal from others to fill its stomach. It is animalistic. If I am hungry, I could even take food out of my mother or father's mouth. The body has plenty of attributes like that. As long as all human beings are born as descendants of Satan; everyone has this trait equally. Indeed, the body is the problem. Why do peoples with higher-level religions develop? It is because effective religions promote unity between mind and body. When plus and minus become one, the result is light, new strength, and energy. This is the principle of heaven and earth. Taking the example of a magnet, it has plus and minus poles. Likewise, when our mind and body become completely one, we become like a magnet. Even a man's body and a woman's body can be like magnets with plus and minus poles. That is why a man and a woman are attracted to each other to become one in body. We need not refer to love or anything else to explain this, as they are secondary. (82-281, 1976.02.01)

16 When the mind, which is plus, becomes completely one with the body, which is minus, that mind has the power to participate in the original authority and power of the Creator. The Almighty's creative power and life force exist, and we have the possibility of connecting to them. If a person reaches the state of eternal mind and body unity, he or she can see and understand the whole world. There all of heaven and earth resonate. When our body resonates in perfect unity with a perfect mind, we can connect to everything. We can even hear the sound of the universe moving. In proportion to that sound, our laughter bursts forth and our joy explodes. When we arrive on that plane, we can connect infinitely to that superlative power, the power of the ideal of creation. (82-283, 1976.02.01)

Section 3. True Love between Man and Woman and True Marriage

1 Man came to exist because of love. A man's love does not come from the man himself. It comes from a woman. Likewise, a woman's love comes from a man. From the standpoint of love, a man is not born for himself. He will never be able to find the path of true love if he is self-serving. He will not be able to advance and will end up fixed to one spot. Since God invested everything for the creation of the universe, a man should also follow the same path. This means a man is born to live for someone else. He is born for true love, but if he insists that he is born for himself, he will not find true love. Thus we can conclude that a man is born for a woman. And based on true love, a woman is born for a man. (177-218, 1988.05.20)

Man and woman exist for each other

2 In order for God to be happy with love, what kind of universe would He make? Since God cannot enjoy love by Himself, He designed the entire universe as a system of pairs. Even the mineral kingdom is composed of pairs. You can find symmetrical crystalline structures that are attached together. These pairs connect to each other according to a principle of partnership. Though we may not be able to see it with our eyes, everything functions like this. Since this universe was created with love as its guiding force, all things are made to pursue relationships that can harmonize with love. In order for all things of creation to harmonize with love, they must be in subject-object relationships. One entity alone cannot love. To connect everything through love based on the principle of subject and object partners, the universe was made as a pair system. (182-123, 1988.10.16)

3 Man and woman were born for each other. A man has no way to find love without a woman. Therefore, a man is born for a woman, and a woman for a man, for the sake of love. This is what makes them precious to each other. True love cannot co-exist with self-centeredness. It exists where one lives for the other. Therefore, a man was born for a woman, and a woman was born for a man. Since God is the being of true love, He always lives for the sake of others. God made human beings for their sake; He did not create them for His own sake. True love exists for the sake of the other. (144-214, 1986.04.24)

4 Man is born for woman. You may not like hearing it, but this is a heavenly principle. Unto eternity, this truth cannot change. Yet most human beings do not know it. Love is the most treasured and important thing for human beings; hence, a woman is absolutely necessary for a man. When a man and a woman marry, based upon what do they marry? They are physiologically different; do they not marry based on that? Women might be able to marry each other, but why do they marry men? It is because their physiological structure is different. That is absolute. Through this structural difference the way is opened for a woman to inherit the precious lifeline of a man's love; through this transmission of love a relationship

with the universe is secured. The path of love that a man seeks comes through a woman. The path of love that a woman seeks comes through a man. This is man-woman marital love; it alone is what establishes the ideal foundation and standard of all values. When we come forth in oneness with this love, the universe will welcome us. This love endows us with the ability to gain universal power, by which we can overcome obstacles anywhere—east, west, north and south—and become owners. This love possesses great power. (142-138, 1986.03.08)

5 When spring comes and pigeons call out, “coo, coo,” they are singing a song of love. That is a wonderful thing. Everything in nature is a textbook that teaches us. All birds and animals exist in pairs, and they come together through love. This reflects the harmonious relationship of heaven and earth. The opposite poles of the universe come into harmony centered on love. It is the same with migratory birds. Birds that had been living in the south fly to the north, and birds that had been living in the north fly to the south, the males and females within each species loving each other back and forth across the regions. Thus they go round and round endlessly. Human beings are to learn about love from this textbook of love—the museum of nature—that God created for them. When human beings and God love each other in joy, all things of creation in heaven and on earth will harmonize with their rhythm. When God loves and rejoices, the angelic world also rejoices, and the entire created world applauds and offers joyful praise. (142-274, 1986.03.13)

6 Art is worthless unless an emotional context is deeply embedded in it. If a painting created more than a thousand years ago can still arouse strong emotions in its viewers, even stronger than the emotion at the time of its creation, that work can be called a masterpiece. Of all the works of art created by God, His greatest masterpiece is human beings, especially because of the love in their hearts. When something with the beauty of an object partner’s love stands before its subject partner of ideal love, God’s eyes brim with tears. The beauty of love is such that it melts you and mesmerizes you without your realizing it. When the warm spring comes, even tiny insects we can hardly see make love as male and female. When we see that, it is truly wondrous. When there is a female, a male comes, and they know how to love each other. We do not know who taught them to do so, but they know how to make love and reproduce. All such things are part of the museum of love God created to teach human beings about love. (142-274, 1986.03.13)

7 When Adam and Eve love each other, God rejoices. This is because He participates in their love. God divided Himself into Adam and Eve, man and woman, as partners of love. When the two come together in love, they collide and explode. And when God feels that exciting explosion, He is thrown on His back, intoxicated in love. When I say such a thing, it is not blasphemy. There is no blasphemy when it comes to love. All it takes is love, which God relishes so much. In this world, what a woman likes most is a man. Even if a woman is so remarkably beautiful that she is the envy of all of heaven and earth, if she does not have a man to love her, she feels like

nothing. When she returns home she is lonely and everything is a bore. Even if her bedding is made of silk, she will despise it. But if her man is with her, she will find it pleasant even if she has to lie down on a ragged quilt. (143-086, 1986.03.16)

8 All of nature is an exhibition hall of love. When Adam and Eve, who are meant to be the owners of all things of creation, stand at the center and look in all directions, everything they see serves as a textbook of love. All plants and animals become partners to Adam and Eve. Even the insects are like exhibits in a museum that teach the man and woman to follow the ideal path of love. Our environment is one great natural museum for the lessons of love. It is all for Adam and Eve. Thus a person who cannot love nature cannot love people, and a person who cannot love people cannot love a family. (144-093, 1986.04.08)

9 Man was born for woman, and woman for man. This is why the reproductive organ of the man is not his own, and that of the woman is not her own. God, being very wise, exchanged their ownership. In the Unification Church the greatest sin, for which it is most difficult to be forgiven, is to be unfaithful to one's spouse. When you talk about the right side, you are implying that the left side exists. When you talk about above, you are implying that below exists. Therefore when you talk about a woman, you are implying that a man exists. No man was born for himself. What the convex needs is the concave part; thus, men are not the owners of their convex part. The reproductive organ is extremely sacred. The life and love of God connect to it. It is the source of love, where eternal love is revealed and perpetuated. It is the source, and without going through it, a man and a woman cannot approach the love of God. That spot is the source of love, the source of life, and the source of the bloodline. When love moves, life pulsates and the blood stirs. This happens when the love of the mother and the love of the father are brought together, fully exchanged and intermingled, thus forming a perfect sphere. (198-122, 1990.01.25)

10 God wanted to dwell in the most holy place of love. If human beings had not fallen, their reproductive organs would have been God's holy of holies. Human beings did not make that holy of holies. Of all the things God created, it is the most complex, the most stimulating, and the most sensitive. It is the zone of contact through which a man and a woman can be fulfilled in love. When lightning hits a lightning rod, it strikes the very tip. It can feel as if every nerve in a person's body is concentrated in the tip of the one organ that determines the key difference between a man and a woman. Even if I do not name it, you all know what that one thing is. It is so precious. If not for the Fall, it would have been the holy of holies where God would reside and where His love would dwell. (143-091, 1986.03.16)

11 The holy of holies symbolizes perfected Adam and Eve. Moses' two stone tablets, the manna and quail, and Aaron's rod that budded all symbolize Adam and Eve. Of the many cryptic stories in the Bible, a large number are allegories of Adam

and Eve. The pillar of cloud and the pillar of fire represent Adam and Eve, and the Tree of Life and the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil also refer to Adam and Eve. The secret of Adam and Eve's love has been recorded in allusions, but it has never been revealed. If Adam and Eve had not fallen and instead had reached maturity and become husband and wife, everything about God's Will would have been fulfilled. From there, the kingdom of heaven would have begun. On the foundation of God and His children having realized true love, the kingdom of heaven would have unfolded. However, because of the Fall, there is no foundation for that love. (143-091, 1986.03.16)

12 If you ask why a man is born, I will answer that he is born not for himself but for a woman. The most important thing to a man is a woman. A woman, too, is not born for herself. The purpose of her existence is not for herself but to unite with a man. A woman's innate beauty is actually not her own. Do her breasts belong to her? Do her expansive hips? Was she born to have them because of herself? No, it was for a man. Likewise, a man was born to develop large shoulders, not so that he can show off and exert his strength and be a violent beast, but rather to protect a woman. The woman has big hips and the man has big shoulders so they can create balance. They were not born for themselves. If they insist that they were born for themselves, they destroy true love. True love begins from God, who exists for humanity and whose love is such that He gives, gives, and gives again, and then forgets. That is true love. (142-334, 1986.03.14)

13 The reproductive organs are the source of life, love and lineage. Because their true purpose was subverted, they have come to be described by the foulest words in the world. If their use had not gone awry, we would not call them by the foulest words but by the grandest. They would be holy words. If human beings had not fallen, man and woman's reproductive organs would be the palace of love. Therefore they are not to be used recklessly. They are the palace of life. They are where life comes into being. What's more, they are the palace of lineage. From there new life is born and lineage is bequeathed. They are the source of our life, our lineage and our love. (206-126, 1990.10.03)

14 Of the bodily organs we have, which is the most treasured? It is the organ that links to love, life, and everything involving the lineage of future generations of humankind. From the structural point of view, that organ is the most precious center of the entire nervous system. This is the reproductive organ. This being the case, anyone who desires true love needs to know how to safeguard his or her reproductive organ. Committing sin with that organ is to desecrate your ancestors, to desecrate God, and to desecrate the origin of life, lineage and love. By that act, you trample on all humanity and on all human beings in all the ages of history, and you destroy all the ideals of love. (193-121, 1989.09.10)

15 When do the blood and flesh of a man and a woman join in harmony? This takes place when they make love. The lifeblood of a man and a woman cannot mingle just by their looking into each other's eyes. It mingles through their living as husband and wife, that is, by making love. The place where they make love is the source of life. The lifeblood of the man and the woman does not intermingle anywhere else. There is only one place for it: the place where they connect in love-making. That is also the place where lineages are connected. It is the place where lives attach and adhere together. It is where lineage begins and where love settles. And it is the only point where love engenders oneness. (252-105, 1993.11.14)

Our portion of responsibility and our ideal partner in love

16 How can people receive blessings? It is by loving people, who are God's greatest masterpieces, in accordance with certain principles and rules. There is an order in loving. It begins not from children, but from parents who give love to their children. What is the most beautiful time for human beings? It is young adulthood, the time of youth when one's flowering is in full bloom. This period is roughly the seven years from age eighteen through twenty-four. This seven-year period is a time never to be repeated in your life, the time when the flower of your love blossoms. How treasured is this beautiful time that will come only once in your life! The buds of some peonies are of an unusual yellow color, and they are wrapped tightly in dozens of layers so they cannot be opened easily. The same is true for the love of men and women. When should you fully reveal the bud of your love, which blossoms like a golden flower? It is the time of youth, the time when beauty is best revealed in accordance with the harmony of heaven and earth. Even to human eyes, it is the time when a person is most fully blossoming. It is a time when you shine as the centerpiece of God's masterwork. The period of youth is your best and most beautiful stage of life. (26-152, 1969.10.25)

17 Love moves forward in a spiral. It should not grow smaller; rather, it should gradually grow larger. When it expands as it should, individual love naturally pursues family-level love. But our family alone is not enough; we need a tribe, as love develops and expands through a spiral motion. In the Unification Church we say that the individual exists for the sake of the family and, moving on from this, that the nation exists for the world, the world for the cosmos, the cosmos for God, and God for love, which means that all beings that exist on this earth want to be absorbed by love. If a man lived a private life alone with his wife, even though he loved her very much, what would he do if a love greater than their conjugal love came along? The husband would follow that love. If a person who lived with his or her spouse came to learn that there was a world-level love that could embrace everything, that person would pursue that love, leaving his or her family. This is not a bad thing. This is the path of goodness, because those who set out to follow that greater love come nearer to God's side. (187-054, 1989.01.06)

18 God wished for Adam and Eve to reach their full maturity. They can be compared to chestnut burrs. Around June or July, the size of a chestnut burr is the same as it will be at the time of harvest. However, if you pry it open at that time, you find no nut inside. You may find something with the form of a nut, but it is not yet ripe and ready to eat. Adam and Eve were like that. There was no edible nut inside. God was waiting for them to ripen. When Adam and Eve reached maturity, they would have become the center of the universe. Everything that exists would then have known its own position in relation to that universal center, Adam and Eve. Therefore God was waiting for them to mature to the age of seventeen, eighteen or older. God did not create Adam and Eve as mature adults from the first, but following His laws of nature, created them as infants. If Adam and Eve had grown to maturity and then loved each other in oneness with God, humanity today would not be in such a wretched state. (143-092, 1986.03.16)

19 Nothing is more precious than the love of God. Once I possess His love, the universe belongs to me. It belongs to God and me both. In like manner, a woman's organ of love belongs to her husband and a man's to his wife. That's why they can say to each other, "Your body is my body, and my body is your body." In this way, the ownership is exchanged. Even though the man has his reproductive organ, it does not mean he is its owner, and even though the woman has her reproductive organ, it does not mean she is its owner. Therefore, if you use your reproductive organ however you want, you will be in serious trouble. This is absolute. For this reason, the Unification Church does not support premarital relationships, or even dating. God's Will is for you to give your first love to your spouse. This was true for Adam and Eve; they were supposed to have treasured their first love. God guides the first love. He connects hell and heaven through the bridge of first love. Hell will disappear when this bridge is built. (143-092, 1986.03.16)

20 You need to know that your portion of responsibility is all-important. If God had explained to Adam about his portion of responsibility, as I am doing for you right now, Adam might not have fallen. If God had constantly told him, "You have a portion of responsibility, you little brat! This is why I tell you not to eat of the fruit. It is your portion of responsibility, your own!" and shouted at him night and day about this responsibility, Adam might not have fallen. Many women want to have a husband who is tall and good-looking, not short and slightly built. So I think I should find such women the shortest husbands. That would truly allow for restoration through indemnity. Another benefit is that, when a short man weds a tall woman, his unfulfilled desire is at last satisfied. Similarly, when a skinny woman weds a heavy-set man, her unfulfilled desire will be satisfied. (133-151, 1984.07.10)

21 As the four seasons of spring, summer, autumn and winter differ from one another, so do people. There are some who are born in summer, some in autumn, some in winter, and others in spring. Those who are born in spring need to go through the summertime of life, and those who are born in winter need to adapt to

the springtime of life. The directions they should take in life are different. As the earth moves on its orbit, the direction human beings take changes as well. One may follow an ascending fortune, another a descending fortune. If a person whose fortune is declining joins with a person of similar fortune, they will both perish. Events will transpire; for example they may both be killed in an auto accident. Therefore if your fortune is declining, you will be able to survive only if you can join with a person whose fortune is naturally rising. For this reason, a man who has a bleak fortune should, if at all possible, find a woman who is ascending and who can pull him up along with her. (120-317, 1982.10.20)

22 Which season matches your innate nature? Is it a season of descending, ascending, or overcoming? Do you have an agreeable or contrary disposition? Everyone's nature is different. A primary point is that you need to conform to others, especially your spouse. In doing so, a period of just a few months is not enough. You need to make this effort for at least three years. It is your destiny, and you will have to pioneer it in your life. Getting married itself is not the end of everything. Marriage is not an easy thing. You need to marry well. If you meet someone on the street and marry that person just because he or she looks nice, that marriage likely will not last long. In the eyes of young men and women who gaze at each other, everything looks green and attractive simply because it is summertime. The trees are green and they have beautiful fruit on them, and crows and magpies are flying in and out; it is all alluring. But do you know what kind of fruit it is? Pine trees, for instance, should be engrafted only with pine trees. There are different species and families of trees, with boundaries between them. (120-318, 1982.10.20)

23 When there is a perfect plus, a perfect minus is bound to appear. But even if a perfect minus does not appear, the perfect plus does not cease to exist. If a perfect plus could cease to exist, we would have to conclude that even God Himself, who is in the position of the perfect plus, would have to cease to exist without a perfect minus. Based on this logic, the perfect plus creates the perfect minus. In this regard, the Bible story that God took a rib from Adam and created Eve means that Eve was created with Adam as the pattern. It means that from a perfect plus a perfect minus will inevitably emerge. Thus, if Adam became a perfect plus, Eve, in the position of a perfect minus, was to be born through Adam. This is a principle of heaven and earth. If you understand the Bible story in this way, you will recognize that God is a true scientist. (140-128, 1986.02.09)

24 God created man to become perfect, but not for the perfect man himself. In other words the perfect plus was not created for the perfect plus but for the perfect minus, which is the woman. Since God, the origin, is the absolute subject partner, He needs to create an absolute object partner. In other words, since God is the absolute subject partner and the perfect plus, He needs to create an object partner who is the perfect minus. The perfect plus does not cease to exist; rather He

creates the perfect minus. Suppose a person has perfect character. Even if he or she is unobtrusive, conscientious people nearby will flock to that person and try to emulate him or her. All existing things— every part of the material world—will likewise gravitate to that subject partner in order to secure the realm of its object partner. They are attracted because they want to rise to a higher level, a place of higher dimension and higher value. All elements move upward in pursuit of a more complete and more ideal version of themselves on a higher level. (140-129, 1986.02.09)

25 Only when it is determined that you have become a perfect subject or a perfect object can your perfect, ideal partner emerge. So the issue that needs to be settled first is how you can perfect yourself. When you reach maturity, you naturally want to find and love your spouse, but you need first to set the condition of having loved your parents even more than that person. Only when everyone can say of you, “That person is a filial son or daughter,” can you form a relationship of love with God, which is a prerequisite for forming a relationship of love with your spouse. This is a heavenly rule and a principle of creation. Before you start thinking about your ideal partner, you first need to form a bond of love with your parents such that they can proclaim you publicly as a filial child. This means you need to completely unite with your parents. In addition, to practice true filial piety, you must also create unity among your siblings. Everyone in your family should be able to say that you are truly exemplary. Only when you have achieved all this can you begin a relationship with your spouse as his or her ideal partner. (100-149, 1978.10.09)

26 When God looks at people, He first looks into the depths of their heart. Next He looks at their past and then their future, based on the present. Those of you who are young should understand the importance of this. You should not choose friends based on their good looks. Instead, you should choose them based on the quality of their heart, and what their future will be like in light of their way of life in the past and the present. The face is like a window on the heart. The face shows only the four features—eyes, nose, lips and ears. Therefore, whether you are homely or handsome you should conduct yourself well and have a generous heart. If God were searching the world to find one person, what kind of person would He want to find? It would be a person whose heart is as big as the world. But even if such a person existed, what if that person had eyes and hands that were as large as the world? No one would welcome him or her. Harmony comes when a person has a big heart. Rather than priding yourself on a beautiful or handsome face, you should live with a virtuous heart. This being the case, would you rather seek to marry someone with a beautiful face or with a beautiful heart? You should marry a person with a beautiful heart. (100-093, 1978.10.09)

True marriage is the fulfillment of the ideal of creation

27 You marry in order to fulfill the ideal of creation, that is, the purpose of creation. Before it is Adam's purpose, the purpose of creation is God's purpose. So it follows that God should feel joy before Adam does. From this perspective, we marry for the sake of God. In other words, we wed for the sake of the Will, which is God's purpose of creation. That Will is to fulfill the ideal of creation. The ideal of creation is not achieved centered on oneself. All hearts have to become one body with God, the subject partner, so that when He moves we move, and when He does not move we do not move. The inner and outer must attain the point of oneness in heart. The purpose of creation cannot be fulfilled unless you achieve the standard of harmonizing with God in this manner. For you to become as Adam and Eve who have perfected the purpose of creation, you need to marry. You do this because of God and His Will. (35-231, 1970.10.19)

28 We were born for the sake of love. True love is the foundation of the universe. That holds true for men and for women. Why do a man and a woman marry? They marry to possess God. This means we should not make the first move horizontally. Vertical love should move first. Once we meet God at a ninety-degree angle, at the place where God descends vertically along the shortest route, then everything is complete. When that happens, your body and mind will harmonize; they will never again fight. (198-122, 1990.01.25)

29 Man and woman marry because of love. Why should they marry because of love? It is to meet God. But where should they go to meet Him? They should go to the center of the universe, to the vertical point where they have each grown in their parent-child relationship, and there they should put their foreheads together. It will not do if the woman is a step ahead of the man or if the man is a step ahead of the woman. It is only when they come together and hold on to each other that they will harmonize. At this point they will begin to turn, like a man and woman in love who start to dance. When a person meets his or her beloved and they begin to dance, do they stand still or turn around? As soon as one partner pulls the other, they turn around. As they turn, they leap into the air. As they whirl around faster, they can leap higher and higher. (198-300, 1990.02.05)

30 In the fallen world, love is a dangerous thing. In the Garden of Eden there were only Adam and Eve, one woman and one man. In this fallen world, however, there are plenty of women. Many of those women are going out of their way to seduce men, be it night or day. That being the case, how difficult it is for men to maintain their virtue! The same is true for women. After marrying, a man should not meet any other woman alone. After marrying, a couple should go everywhere together. In one sense, the Fall occurred because of poor management of their relationship. It is still that way today; husbands and wives fall because they each fail in the management of their relationship. It is also because the husband fails to convey to the wife that she belongs to him alone and that she should place him above all else. They fail to love each other with such intimacy. (100-144, 1978.10.09)

31 If there are no sons or daughters in a family but just the husband and wife, the couple can achieve the standard of horizontal love between the two, but not the standard of vertical love. This is why married couples want to have children. Divine law directs them to do so. When you marry, why do you want to have children, even though giving birth to them is so difficult? It is to love your spouse and your sons and daughters, which you will gladly do even at the sacrifice of your life. But you did not know the fundamental reason for doing this. It is to be in touch with God's love, which is the core of the universe. Also, by connecting with His love, you will be able to triumph over every difficulty and prosper in every endeavor. Even though you did not make it that way, and you did not wish for it, it is the way of the principle of creation, established by the God who created you. (132-248, 1984.06.20)

Section 4. The Path of a Life of True Love

1 The greatest desire of all people is to become God's sons and daughters. This is because the parent-child relationship is the closest of all. We are born through the intense concentration of our parents' love and life; we are born to represent our parents' ideals. Hence the words "love" and "ideal" cannot be spoken with only oneself in mind. Life also does not come into existence just from oneself. It is created through our parents' relationship. It is the same with God. When God made human beings, He created them as the object partners of His true love, life and ideal. This is amazing and awesome. The love of our parents cannot be manifest without you or me. Our parents' love, life and ideal are connected to each of us. We are the fruit of our parents' love, life and ideal. Thus the position of the child is the most valuable. God and human beings are in this parent-child relationship. (298-314, 1999.01.17)

The way of a true husband and wife and true parents

2 The privilege of the son of God is that he can own God, and everything God owns belongs to him. Even God's love, life and ideal belong to that son. Human beings are to restore this magnificent original value, which they all have. Since God is the subject partner of true love, and since He is eternal, then His partners of true love also have to be eternal. Once we become one in true love, God Himself becomes us. The bodies of Adam and Eve before the Fall were God's dwelling place. Thus, had Adam and Eve eternally united through true love centered on God's heart, they would have become Gods bodies of love, life and lineage. Then, our mind and body would not be in conflict as they are today, h (298-315, 1999.01.17)

3 If we asked God why He created this universe, He would answer, "Because of love!" It is because of love. Then what is that love? People talk about love like the lyrics of a Korean song, "My love is my all." You want such love, right? Yet although you ladies have heard that song, you don't really know what love is all about, do

you? No matter how much we think about it, love is infinitely mysterious. If we say it is round, it is round; but if we say it is oval, it is oval. Can a woman alone find such love? Whether she likes it or not, she has to follow the young man who is destined to be her spouse, even if he is an annoying, mischievous, disheveled bachelor. (132-242, 1984.06.20)

4 When you sing, "My love is my all," so much is included in those words: a husband's love, a mother's love, a son's love, and even God's love. If only you had such love, you could withstand every trial. Love is the only force that can digest everything. Parents with loving hearts want to give the world to their children. They want to give and give and keep on giving. Love is that big. The heart of love is without end. It connects to anything or anyone; it is infinitely large and carries unlimited value. That is why a person who owns love can own the universe. Happiness overflows in the person who has love. That person can achieve success in every area of life. On the other hand, no matter how seemingly great your life, if you cannot become a victor in the arena of love, you will end up a loser. (132-242, 1984.06.20)

5 As a woman, when your dear husband, whose love makes you blossom unto eternity and connects you to the seed of life, greets you, how marvelous it is when you give him a beautiful smile and say, "Welcome, welcome, my dear! All my flowers are yours. Please take all my charms and do as you please!" And how beautiful it is when he offers you a prayer of blessing, "I pray that your happiness will last thousands of years!" Your first love is a rope that binds you together so tightly that nothing can untie it. Even if you fight so hard that one of you breaks a leg, you would still hold on to each other. That is the greatness of such a couple. But if the love of a couple who lives together despite their struggles is considered great, how much more so is the love of a couple who does not fight? When we see the unhappiness of a husband and wife who fight, we can learn from them how happy a couple who does not fight can be. When we see people who are unhappy, we can appreciate what it means to be happy. This is the same for everyone. (191-236, 1989.06.25)

6 Love can fill any deficiency. It compensates for all inadequacies. If you really love a woman, even if she becomes sick or disabled, you will not mistreat her. You will not dislike her or hate her. You should not recklessly give your first love to just anyone. You should not make casual relationships. Heaven and earth and the whole universe should recognize publicly your first relationship of love. Therefore, whether a man or a woman, you should not casually engage in any relationship without the approval of God, the owner of love. Why do you marry? You marry to find and attend this Owner of love. Without the Owner's permission, a woman cannot do as she pleases, nor can a man. The kingdom of heaven exists in love. Jesus said, "The kingdom of God is within you." (Luke 17:21) This means that love is deep within your heart. When a husband truly loves his wife, and when he loves all

humankind as truly as he loves his wife, he has a pass to freely go anywhere. (144-096, 1986.04.08)

7 In your family, the way you should go as a husband and wife is clear. It is not important who is right or wrong; the person to lead the way is the one who loves God more. The other one must follow. If the husband is lagging behind and does not listen, give him a good kick. If he does not follow you, you simply have to go on by yourself. If you do not keep going, both of you will come to ruin, as will your children. First, you must avoid responding to your environment out of habit. Second, you must be proactive, continually taking action to spread God's love. A wife needs to live for her husband and a husband for his wife. Since a couple is originally meant to exist for the sake of God, to fulfill His Will, you need to work so that God can recover your tribe, your people, your nation and the world. We still have realms to liberate, even the spirit world and hell, to build God's kingdom. (144-131, 1986.04.12)

8 "When God created human beings, do you think He loved the man or the woman more? He loved the woman more. Men are God's dwelling place. Therefore, when men mature and reach adulthood, they want to command the world, travel around the universe, and win first place in everything. Men are more ambitious in this way. Women, on the other hand, do not think, ""I want to be the best in the world."" Instead, in terms of their conjugal relationship, they are inclined to pursue one direction—love. They long for an environment of tranquility and a peaceful life. They do not relish competitive struggle. They rather want to love and receive love, and to lean on someone. So they want to live where they can be part of a family, be secure, and cultivate intimate relationships. Woman was God's final masterpiece. And women have more capacity to receive love than men. (100-132, 1978.10.09)"

9 Art is something that enriches our life. This is why it is important to include the arts in children's education. Women also need to know how to develop an artistic sense toward their husbands, how to treat them gently and how to embrace them. This is actually even a more wonderful kind of art. Through the art of love, we can beautify our family and elevate it. I think this art is of great value in terms of its benefits. Having a family is not a bad thing. No matter how capable, in the end, a woman needs to return home. That is why women should marry. (100-140, 1978.10.09)

10 In a marriage, if a husband caresses his wife with hands of true love, whether it is day or night, she always welcomes him. What is it that women are most shy about? They are shy about showing their breasts, aren't they? Men are similar in that they conceal their reproductive organs. But what happens when the two of you are alone? Do you still hide these things? No. You want to be open to each other. Before marriage, if a man touches a woman it is a serious problem. Once you are married, that is no longer true. Even if you hide your private parts from each

other before you marry, once you marry and love each other, it is not like that. In that way, you come to have one heart and become as one body. (190-220, 1989.06.19)

The way of life as you seek true love

11 "We human beings are born to travel through the world of love. We are born to travel in the universe of love. At the moment I inherited my mother and father's bloodline, I participated at the center of their love for each other. So I received love from the time I was conceived. My parents loved me as I grew in my mother's womb. During the months my mother carried me, I could feel her constantly. After I was born my parents loved me. I was in the realm of my parents' love all the time I was growing up, when I went to school and then to college. A mother and father love their sons and daughters more than anything, and when they cannot provide for them the way other parents do, it causes them great pain. Only when the children have a son or daughter themselves can they say, ""Now I know what my parents did for me." When the parents have to go away to work, leaving their children behind, do you think they sleep comfortably or spend their time peacefully? When you understand that their minds are always anxious and uneasy over their children, you will realize what amazing people your parents are. This is love. At around age sixteen we are on the verge of maturity. Just a little later, around eighteen or twenty, we are ready to marry. This begins another cycle of love. We marry, and in the early years we have sons and daughters, and we love them. And when our children marry, we love our grandchildren. (187-096, 1989.01.06)"

12 Grandfathers and grandmothers love their grandchildren even more than they do their sons and daughters. Those of you who know your grandmother, don't you receive more love from her than you do from your mother and father? If you ask what a grandmother's desire is, it is to cherish her grandsons and granddaughters. For the grandparents, grandchildren in their home bring to mind images of the things they did, from the time they were children until they were teenagers, when they were married, and when they had their children. They can review the entire course of their early life through their grandchildren. When we become grandparents or great-grandparents, our lives start to branch out in as many directions as we have descendants. These descendants will be interconnected in the love they inherit from us. The more there are, the greater the blessing. They are born from love; their lives flow forth through love. The course of life is the succession of generations according to the way of love. Undeniably, we are born for love. (187-099, 1989.01.06)

13 We are attracted to thrilling movies. When we are told not to do something tantalizing, our mind is naturally drawn there. All people and things gather around what is interesting and exciting. The womb of creation at the center of the ever-

changing universe is a place so electrifying that all things of creation, including human beings, are attracted to it. Although the various elements of the universe are engaged in routine action, they have an inner urge to connect to something higher and more appealing. A central, attractive power made the creation of the universe possible. With stimulation from that higher place, harmony came about through giving and receiving. We can feel that stimulus, which gives rise to movement between the elements and prompts them to move to a higher dimension. The power of that stimulation can open up our senses to communication with all things. Even God can become intoxicated and overcome by this power of true love. We wish for God to be so intoxicated. This is because we resemble Him. We also can become intoxicated and enraptured, so much so that we lose all sense of self. We cannot hide from that intoxicating feeling, and we all yearn for it. (140-130, 1986.02.09)

14 When Adam and Eve mature, they come under the invisible dominion of God's love. From the vertical summit, God descends and firmly stands at the very center of the horizontal line where Adam and Eve are positioned at each end. When the vertical subject, God, becomes the central core of the horizontal plane, Adam and Eve, as the minus, become absolutely one with God, who is the plus. Then based on the love of God, who is the vertical core, Adam and Eve meet at that place and begin moving up and down. Once they commence love-making, God does not simply remain still. Even when a husband and wife kiss, they do not simply close their eyes and touch their lips; they passionately caress each other and turn round and round. God's love is vertical. When we catch fire with love, God descends at the temperature of molten lava, several thousand degrees, and collides with us. (140-131, 1986.02.09)

15 The love between husband and wife is the force that implants God within them. Originally, parents are to stand in God's position, with the husband and wife each representing one side of God. Their sons and daughters also are small embodiments of God. Once they connect to the true love of God, the origin of true love, all of them become part of the same body. Parents are living representatives of God on earth. The husband and wife represent God, as do the children and the grandparents. In this way three generations stand in God's position, centered on true love. Parents, husband and wife, and children are each in this position, but for this they need true love. A family structure centered on true love like this is the foundation for the kingdom of heaven. Without achieving such a foundation we cannot build the kingdom. This is the formula. When this becomes reality, the family will be the center of the world. (298-307, 1999.01.17)

16 Because the perfection of the family is the foundation for the perfection of the universe, if we love the universe as we love our family, we will be welcome anywhere. In this case God, as the Parent of the entire universe, stands in the central position of love. When a man and a woman become one in true love, form

an ideal couple, and create a family, they come to reflect God's nature fully and are able to connect to everything in the universe. When this happens with us, all that belongs to God also becomes ours. Then, how joyous we would be! That is the reason that we naturally desire in our hearts to gain mastery over the creation. When a man and a woman become one based on true love, the family they create can expand to a tribe, nation and world. They are the center of their family. The family they create should be the model for their tribe, and their tribe should be the model for their nation. Our families are to follow this way in order to build the ideal family, tribe and nation. It is not possible for the ideal nation to appear without first forming an ideal family. (298-307, 1999.01.17)

17 We were born through love, live our lives in love, and pass away into the afterlife, a world of love. Death is not something to fear. Death is like marriage; it is a change of locale. It is to leave the realm of limited human love, a realm that until that moment we could not escape, and expand into the unlimited world that transcends time and space. It is to leap into a realm of limitless love. This is similar to when we were born from our mother's womb. In our mother's womb we did not feel constrained. We thought it was the most comfortable place to be. God is really the King of creation. He designed a baby's head to ease the transition from womb to world. If we look at a baby's head when it emerges, it is in the shape of a squeezed, elongated watermelon. If the head were hard like a rock, could a woman live through the birth of her first child? Giving birth is possible only because a baby's head is made so that it will extend like a watermelon and adjust to fit the birth canal. God is really the King of creation. (178-252, 1988.06.05)

18 We use the word "cosmos" to describe the combined spirit world and physical universe. The cosmos yearns to be united through true love. True love is the only thing that can unite the cosmos and bring families to an ideal state to make them one. True love is one thing we absolutely need, whether we are living on the earth or have entered the eternal life of the spirit world. True love is appreciated not only by people here and in the spirit world, but also by all things of creation. That is why people of true love attract even animals and plants. They want to live with such people and come under their dominion. Thus, a true man and woman who possess true love are the most precious beings in this world. (298-309, 1999.01.17)

BOOK 5 TRUE FAMILY

CHAPTER 1 True Families from the Viewpoint of God's Will

- Section 1. What Is a Family? ... 475
- Section 2. The Original Family of God's Creation 478
- Section 3. The Family Is the Training Ground of True Love 483
- Section 4. The Family Is the Base of Happiness 489

CHAPTER 2 Blessed Marriage and Original Love between Man and Woman

- Section 1. Coming of Age and the Love between Man and Woman ...498
- Section 2. The Significance and Value of Blessed Marriage 503
- Section 3. Rebirth through Blessed Marriage 511
- Section 4. The Significance of the Blessing Groups 515
- Section 5. Registration and the Responsibility of Blessed Families 527

CHAPTER 3 Principles and Order in the Family

- Section 1. Family Harmony Makes All Go Well ..532
- Section 2. Ideal Couples and the Parent-Child Relationship 538
- Section 3. Ideal Parent-Child and Sibling Relationships 544

CHAPTER 4 The Education of Children and the Kingdom of Heaven in the Family

- Section 1. The Meaning of Education ... 549
- Section 2. The Family Is the Textbook of God's Kingdom 553
- Section 3. Parents' Love and Responsibility 560
- Section 4. Children's Education 563
- Section 5. The Path that Children Must Follow 569
- Section 6. The Kingdom of Heaven in the Family 573

BOOK 5 TRUE FAMILY

CHAPTER 1 True Families from the Viewpoint of God's Will

Section 1. What Is a Family?

1 When we study the meaning of the word family, gajeong in Korean, the second character jeong (庭) stands for garden. Parents and siblings in a family are like the colorful varieties of lovely flowers in a garden. The family should be a place where

each member can be joyful, Singing and dancing. If family members fight each other, the garden will become a wilderness. When a flower hears harmonious music it grows well, but if it hears discordant music it cannot. The same goes for a family. When its members hear the melody of love they can grow wonderfully. What makes them do so is the heart of love. (18-021, 1967.05.14)

2 In a family there are parents, husband and wife, sons and daughters; and there are surely other relatives living around you. Family members include grandfather and grandmother, mother and father, husband and wife and sons and daughters. It is not mere words that unite them. It is not money that draws them together, nor the necessity of living and eating together. Sharing the same house does not guarantee that family members will get along well. It is mutual affection, no matter who is older and who is younger, that allows them to overcome the difficult challenges of life together, in unity. Vertical and horizontal, left and right, front and back; within a family all these relationships are harmonized through the love not only of mother and father, of husband and wife, of brothers and sisters, but also of grandparents and grandchildren. The family with love as its core is the foundation upon which each of its members bonds with others, moves and acts. A family is based on love. (210-313, 1990.12.27)

3 At home we have our grandfather and grandmother, our mother and father, our spouse, and our sons and daughters. What is good about a home? It is there that you find the embracing love of the grandfather and grandmother, and of the mother and father. You find the great love between husband and wife and the great love between brothers and sisters. It is people's original nature and tendency to seek the greatest love, so it is inevitable that we return to our family. The grandfather and grandmother are envoys of Heaven, and the father and mother, as the center of the family, represent the king and queen of the world. The grandfather and grandmother are the father and mother of the past, your own father and mother are the father and mother of the present, and you and your spouse are the father and mother of the future. When these three generations join as one, the past ages of the spirit world are connected to the historic realm of love on earth, going beyond the present family, and align with heavenly law in the future. Then all people of the world will be able to unite. The family is the core unit of harmony; ultimately all humanity must bind together as one ideal family. (316-150, 2000.02.11)

4 The family is the smallest unit that connects the past, present and future. It is a microcosm of the world. As the grandfather, father and son coexist in the family, they connect the past, present and future. When the son has sons and daughters, he rises to the position of the father, and his father rises to the position of the grandfather. From the grandfather to the father to the son, these three generations are to unite into one. The links of the past, present and future should unite them. No matter how much the world pitches and rolls, society will not adversely impact that sort of family. It will maintain a basis for happiness. (28-162, 1970.01.11)

5 In the family there are the four levels: grandfather and grandmother, father and mother, you and your spouse, and your sons and daughters. The world is the extension of these relationships. Thus you need to love the people of the world whose ages are similar to the people in your family, in the same way you love your family members. Just as your family loves and unites centered on the parents, so you should love and harmonize with all people according to the standard by which you love your own family members. In fact, God invested more to create His partners in love than for anything else. Likewise, you should love others even more than you love your own family members. (213-125, 1991.01.16)

6 The universe is the expansion of the directions of north, south, east and west that are represented by your grandfather and grandmother, your mother and father, you and your spouse, and your sons and daughters. The family is the ideal model wherein the different kinds of love become one; it is a textbook of love. Hence, we need to take all the types of love in the family and extend them to the world. When you relate with people from around the world who are of similar age to your grandfather and grandmother, no matter what race, respect them as you do your own grandparents. When you relate with people from the entire world who are of the same age as your father and mother, love them as you love your own mother and father. If you become such a person you can possess the kingdom of heaven; you can inherit the full scope of the kingdom of heaven on earth. Moreover, please honor all men and women in the world to the same degree you honor your husband or wife, and love all children in the world to the same degree you love your own children. The person who relates well with the entire world according to this teaching, for which the family serves as the textbook, becomes a prince or princess of God's love. (209-232, 1990.11.29)

7 God is the cause, and the grandfather and grandmother living at home are the representatives of God. Our mother and father inherited the tradition of the grandparents and are connected directly to us in life and love, flesh and blood. Our brothers and sisters share our direct bloodline. Family members are our kin who are connected through true love, true life, and true flesh and blood. There is no question that this love is one unified core that cannot change, no matter where you go. (211-028, 1990.12.28)

8 You actualize origin-division-union action through everyday life in the family. When you say goodbye to one another in the morning as you go to work, do so in joy, and when you meet again in the evening, do so in joy. When you return to your family, gather your family to talk about what happened that day, discuss it together, and suggest ways to improve. You have to connect the entire family through love and through laughter. The family becomes the children's haven of rest when they can say, "Our dad is the best! Our mom is the best! We really like it when you two love each other!" You have to become a couple who can build a family as the base of eternal joy and pride, such that your children will not want to go anywhere else. (30-283, 1970.04.04)

9 Why do you like love? You like it because it is how you are designed. When a mother and father love each other more than they love themselves, they are closer to the ideal. Love is a rope that binds the mother and father together into one. Steel chains rust over time and eventually break, but the rope of love lasts forever. Food or money cannot bind parents and children together; only love can bind them together. Unity among siblings is likewise possible only through love. (18-329, 1967.08.13)

10 A family is not necessarily good just because it has a good house and good surroundings. No matter how shabby a family's house or environment may be, a good family is one that will cherish it as a haven of rest and build ties of love that endure despite all of life's challenges. There you will find the heart of parents and children who live for each other. This heart becomes the original hometown of memories and provides the motivation that directs our lives. It is the basis of our happiness. Why is that so? It is because there is a singular tie of love between parents and children. It is a lineal bond of love that no one can replace or invade. There the love of parents and brothers and sisters becomes our motivating force. Our family members are the dearest to us in our everyday lives. (29-016, 1970.02.15)

Section 2. The Original Family of God's Creation

1 Genesis 1:27 reads: "So God created man in His own image, in the image of God He created him; male and female He created them." What kind of being is God? God is a being within whom there are subject and object aspects. All seeds resemble their origin. Because God is the original cause of the universe, all created seeds are in God's image. When you look at a seed, regardless of what kind, you see there are two halves wrapped in one outer layer. This reveals the image of God Himself. God's personality comprises plus and minus characteristics connected to the origin of life. In this way God recreates His own image, and relates with those created beings as His counterparts. Adam is His subject-partner image, and Eve is His object-partner image. Then, why did God create them as separate beings? It is because He wanted to have them each grow to perfection individually. (53-113, 1972.02.11)

The ideal family of God's creation

2 When man is perfected and woman is perfected, the two are to join as subject and object partners. Prior to joining as one, they receive love as God's son and daughter. After they grow to perfection by receiving that love, they are to become one. They are brought into union and bound as husband and wife. That is the origin of the family. When they come into union, whom do they resemble? They resemble God, the subject partner, and become His object partners. Then, as His object partners, they can do what God the absolute subject partner has done. That is, as they rise to the position where they can form a subject-object relationship with each other, as God can within Himself through the powerful force of love, a new life

can emerge. Just as God created people, people can also give birth to sons and daughters through the power of love. Through God's love, we are not only given the ability to create children and thus to stand in the same position as God, we are also given the heart to love our children so that we can feel the pleasure and joy God felt when He created His children and all things in heaven and earth. In the end, we should fully inherit the filial love, the conjugal love and the parental love that dwell within God. This is the wellspring of happiness that lies within us. (53-113, 1972.02.11)

3 The world in which we live is not the ideal world that God originally intended. Various religions pursue God's Will over human will. But what is the Will of God? Unless we clearly understand God's Will, it is impossible for us to find the way to fulfill it. God's Will is the fulfillment of the ideal of creation. What is that ideal? God created human beings after creating all things. Ultimately, God wanted not only to exercise dominion over the creation through the first human ancestors, Adam and Eve, but also to bring about a family under His love. In the Unification Church we define this as the fulfillment of the four-position foundation. (80-268, 1975.11.02)

4 God's Will is the actualization of the ideal of creation; concretely, it is the completion of the four-position foundation. To achieve this, Adam and Eve must be perfected as God's children and receive God's loving blessing on their marriage. Thus they first become God's son and daughter, and later husband and wife. They should have sons and daughters and build a family that God is delighted to see. This means guiding their children to reach perfection. In conclusion, the ideal world of creation is the ideal family of unified love, where God and His children, Adam and Eve, become one. Then, with God's love at the center, Adam and Eve become parents and create unity with their children. (80-269, 1975.11.02)

5 God's Will is to fulfill His ideal for the created universe; that is, His purpose of creation. God surely had a purpose in creating; therefore, He will bring it to pass. Adam and Eve were at the center of that purpose. In the Unification Church we teach that God's purpose is to complete His ideal of creation. The purpose of creation is to realize God's ideal through Adam and Eve's establishing the four-position foundation. Centered on God, Adam and Eve were to attain total oneness within the realm of God's love, which they could never have left, even if they had tried. Their family would have become the center and the starting point of love, attending God above as the Father while standing as the ancestors of humanity on the earth below. When God created Adam and Eve, He anticipated the moment when Adam could relate fully to Eve, when the two would attain oneness in heart and body through their union in love. This was the ideal He wished to see become real. Adam and Eve were to become one in love as husband and wife, and give birth to sons and daughters who would be one with their parents. God's Will would then have been fulfilled, based on His love, and the Adamic cultural realm would have emerged. (110-213, 1980.11.18)

6 God's purpose of creation is complete only when the four-position foundation is established centered on God's love. The four-position foundation refers to true sons and daughters, true husband and wife, and true parents; in other words, Adam and Eve and their children, with God at their center. Forming the four-position foundation entails the completion of the three-object-partner purpose. From the perspective of God at the center, there is a path of love going to Adam, a path of love going to Eve, and paths of love going to their sons and daughters. This love is to bear one fruit: children. Sons and daughters are the fruit of the love of their parents, a mother and father, and at the same time, the fruit of God's love. The fact that you can state, "I have true children," means that you are finally standing in the position where you can relate to the love of the entire universe. (82-276, 1976.02.01)

7 God's ideal for our first ancestors was that an ideal man and an ideal woman would create an ideal family. But the center of that ideal family would be neither the man nor the woman. The husband and wife would be bonded together, with God's love at their center. A family is ultimately a gathering of parents and children. Accordingly, the completion of God's Will refers to the perfection of husband and wife and the perfection of a family, all centered on God's love. (127-010, 1983.05.01)

8 God did not create Adam and Eve just to gaze upon them. He did not create men and women to have them age and die. They were created to grow to maturity, to reach the age when their hearts would long to relate to someone of the opposite sex. Then they were to build the true kingdom of heaven of humanity on earth. They were created to build a cozy home of love with God at the center, a home where the man, Adam, would represent heaven, and the woman, Eve, would represent earth. Thus, although they were two, their horizontal union would unify heaven and earth. When the man and woman achieved perfect unity in God's love, the cosmos would naturally harmonize with them. (21-044, 1968.09.01)

9 The essence of the Unification Church's teaching is simple: the formation of an ideal family in which God can rejoice. The Divine Principle explains the attributes of God. Among them are the attributes of internal character and external form, and of yin and yang. These are connected centered on God's love. Thus we can say that love is the mainstream of all of God's attributes. God's love has the attribute of absoluteness. It is also unique, unchanging and eternal. Therefore a husband and wife bound together through God's love are an absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal couple. The same is true for their children. God's ideal is to build families that form the realm of three generations connected to God's love. In such a family, the parents would be absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal parents, and the same would be true for the husband and wife and the children. That united entity, absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal in nature, constitutes God's ideal family. God is present in such a family. As such a family expands to become a tribe, a people, a nation, the world and cosmos, the kingdom of heaven on earth and in

heaven comes into being. And in the midst of this, God exists as the Parent, Teacher and King. (391-195, 2002.08.22)

The ideal base upon which we live in attendance to God

10 Adam and Eve were the substantial manifestations of God's dual characteristics. In God's heart there is nothing greater than the ideal of love in the perfect family, which is the supreme ideal of love: the perfect love of children, of siblings, of husband and wife, and of parents. Even the invisible spirit world and the visible substantial world came from the division of God's dual characteristics. The perfection of the heart of children, siblings, husband and wife, and parents is the highest goal and purpose that God desires to attain. Once these are substantially perfected, God descends and engages with them in their perfection. Conjugal love is the point where not only children's love and siblings' love, but also all other types of love, meet. Thus the realm of union in love is created on the first night of the marriage of a man and woman. At that point of union of east, west, north and south, the man and woman become completely one with God and experience the greatest joy. It is the same for God, who can experience the true joy of creation only through the perfect maturity of Adam and Eve. (235-027, 1992.08.24)

11 Where would Heaven's palace have emerged had Adam and Eve not fallen? It would have been in the place where heaven and earth meet as one. Then why did God create Adam and Eve as two? It is because they each needed their own time period to grow to maturity. They should have reached maturity on the horizontal level and then entered the stage where they could reach perfect oneness. Then and there the vertical God could have come into them and brought them into union. This means that the vertical God would have entered the place where Adam and Eve horizontally became one, and their family would have become the home of true love. The home of true love where God could dwell was to have been Adam and Eve's home. That would have been God's dwelling place. (161-307, 1987.03.01)

12 Adam and Eve were meant to live with the hope of receiving God's Blessing in marriage. If Adam and Eve had believed in and followed God's commandment not to eat the fruit, they, as God's only son and daughter, would have brought into being a family that realized God's Will. This was intended according to the Principle. People need to keep hope alive in their hearts. With hope, we have to pass through a process and period of faith in order to build an eternal relationship. Our hope and faith are fulfilled on the day we can receive God's love for the first time. That is the Principle. (5-108, 1959.01.04)

13 God is the subject partner of love for young children, men and women, husbands and wives, fathers and mothers, and grandfathers and grandmothers. When we look at families based on these criteria, it becomes perfectly clear that the family is the highest realm of love. Had Adam and Eve reached perfection through love, without falling, they would have become the first son and first

daughter of God. Their family would have become the home of love. (219-022, 1991.08.25)

14 Through Adam's perfection, Eve would also have attained perfection, and through Adam and Eve's perfection, God would have seen the beginning of the family centered on love. Had that happened, there is no question that from this perfected family the tribe, people, nation and world that could attend God would have arisen and God, Adam and Eve would have been at the very center of them all. With God as their center, Adam and Eve's way of life and their life course would have remained in history as the tradition by which to live together with God. In that case, their habits, customs, rituals and way of life inevitably would have stood as traditions bound up with God's love throughout history. (091-240, 1977.02.23)

15 Had our original ancestors, Adam and Eve, not fallen but instead become a family centered on God, on that day they would have fulfilled God's ideal of creation and ushered in the day of God's joy. It would have been the first day on which the love uniting God and humanity would have taken root on earth. It would also have been the day Adam and Eve embarked upon the journey of becoming the True Parents. On that day, all people and all things of creation would have rejoiced. (28-008, 1970.01.01)

16 Adam's family should have realized true love in accordance with God's ideal. God created Adam and Eve, our first ancestors, with the expectation that they would substantiate and complete His internal nature and convey His Will and love to the universe. Had they done so, Adam, Eve and their children would have established the fundamental Principle for all humanity to follow. Their descendants would have achieved mind-body unity and become individually one with God, creating families in which husbands and wives and parents and children were united. These families would have created a stable foundation overflowing with freedom, peace, happiness and hope that would have spread throughout the earth. Under God's ideal, this model would not have been limited to the family or nation; it would have expanded to the world and to the entire universe. The model of the kingdom of heaven realized in the family was to expand to a nation; the kingdom of heaven in a nation was to expand to the world; and the global kingdom of heaven was to expand to the cosmos. (288-167, 1997.11.27)

17 When children become God's princes and princesses, they enter into a parent-child relationship with God and inherit everything from Him. When these children marry and attain conjugal oneness based on true love, they form families living in attendance to God, and those families become the foundation of peace and the ideal. Man and woman, each being half of the whole, unite and complete God's ideal love as His partners. Looking at God and Adam's family, God would be considered the first generation, Adam and Eve the second generation and their children the third generation. God was to have been in the position of grandparents, Adam and Eve in the position of parents, and their children in the position of sons and daughters. Through these three generations settling in one

family, the grandfather and grandmother would have had the position of God in the kingdom of heaven in heaven and the position of the king and queen representing the earthly realm and the heavenly realm. The parents would have taken the position of the king and the queen of the kingdom of heaven on earth, and the children would have held the position of princes and princesses, inheriting the kingdom of heaven on earth and in heaven while representing the future. (254-107, 1994.02.01)

Section 3. The Family Is the Training Ground of True Love

1 God's love appears in the place where the three types of love—the love of parents, of husband and wife, and of children—manifest as one. Where these come together, God is absolutely present for eternity. God is always present where unchanging parental love, unchanging conjugal love, and unchanging filial love dwell. The teaching of the four-position foundation in the Unification Church appears on this foundation. (131-112, 1984.04.22)

The family is where true love settles

2 Ideal love is achieved in the family. However, God was unable to have true sons and daughters, to know true husbands and wives, and to become their Parent. Therefore it remains God's Will that He achieve all these; where that occurs is where love can dwell. Abandoning all their possessions, people will flock to the place where such love is realized. Love is the most important thing. (19-315, 1968.03.17)

3 You must have heard the words, "God is love." Where does that love manifest? All people want it to manifest within themselves. However, if that love were to manifest in only one person, it would end with that person. Whether that person were a man or a woman, if God's love were only to manifest in that one person, everything having to do with that love would become extinct within a century and that would be the end of it. In other words, if that one person were unable to bequeath that love to another before his or her death, it would end after a single generation. Then how will we establish the standard of love that lasts? It is through an eternal lineage. Eternal love will emerge if God can plant His love in sons and daughters through the blood relationships within a family. This has to begin with the manifestation of His love in one man and one woman. Thus the beginning point from which the love of the incorporeal God manifests substantially would emerge. Ultimately, the foundation upon which we can realize God's love is the family. (23-012, 1969.05.11)

4 Adam exists for Eve, Eve exists for Adam, and Adam and Eve exist for their family. They do so based on love. To form a nation, a world and the kingdom of heaven means to establish, based upon a single model, a training ground where this pattern can be reproduced, in order to expand what people feel and experience on the horizontal level. (113-165, 1981.05.03)

5 We have to live with three generations vertically and three generations horizontally. In a household, three generations should live together, connecting both vertically and horizontally. When you look for a spouse for your son or daughter, ideally you have in mind a harmonious family with a grandfather and grandmother, a father and mother, and sons and daughters. When a man looks for a wife, he naturally looks for one who comes from such a family. All men want a wife from such a family. Thus a man can learn how to relate to people in all positions, how to manage relationships with people above and below, and all around him. In this way a husband and wife mature and become well-rounded in heart and character. This training in love is what makes the heart grow. (118-147, 1982.05.23)

6 You need to build bonds within your family that will empower you to broaden your love for one another inside and outside the family. Your love within your family is the encapsulation of your love for your nation and the world. Thus, within your family you need to receive training in heart. The way of the heart will become your essential way of life, and you will assimilate the heart that is eager to fulfill God's Will. Then you can apply that heart to your tribe and to your nation. (37-104, 1970.12.22)

7 You first have to love your parents and your siblings more than anyone else does. If you have a family, you should love each family member in the best possible way. Through this, you become the most beautiful of flowers, with the most pleasant fragrance. You need to secure strong bonds of oneness with everyone in your family. Only by doing this can you germinate a perfect seed and bear fruit that represents the universe. Original life comes from such love, and your original value also begins from this indwelling love. In this respect, your loving relationship with your partner determines your value as a person. (051-199, 1971.11.21)

8 A fruit comes forth from the condensing of elements after a tree has gone through the hardships of nature for twelve months of a year. Then how does love bear fruit? Because people have not known the answer to this question, this world has become wicked and the family has broken down. Parents are not just somewhat necessary. From the viewpoint of love, they are absolutely necessary. It is the same with children, with siblings, and with a wife or husband. A spouse is absolutely necessary. The family is where people are trained in their ability to love one another, and this love is realized in the kingdom of heaven. (137-336, 1986.01.05)

9 The Unification Church asserts that God wants to experience the greatest joy together with our families. The place where we learn to give and receive love, the place where we create joy through harmony, nurture it and experience it, is none other than the family. This is the core of our faith. Without being nurtured with love in the family throughout our infancy and adolescence, we cannot develop the capacity to love our spouse or love our children. (120-193, 1982.10.14)

10 The family is absolutely indispensable to bring love into the universe. It is through learning in our families how to love our parents that we become capable of loving people of the same age as our parents. It is when we have the experience in our families of loving our grandfathers and grandmothers that we become capable of loving people of their age. It is only when you love your husband's sisters that you can love people similar to them; and only when you honor your husband's younger and older brothers that you can honor people similar to them. That is the only way that you can come to love all people. (106-025, 1979.11.04)

11 Where is the ideal training ground of love? The studio in which we are trained to build the ideal framework of true love is none other than the family. Where did your father come from? You need to think of your father as having come from heaven, from a world larger than the earth. You must treat him as though he were from heaven. At the same time, you must also remember that he has come from the world and from a nation. Besides that, he has come from a specific clan. Keep in mind how your father came to be your father. You may think the same way about your mother. Where is your mother from? You may think, "My mother is a representative of heaven. She is a representative of the world, and of my nation. She represents my clan. That is why she was sent to my family." (106-065, 1979.12.09)

12 The family is the training ground and textbook that enables us to enter the kingdom of heaven. It includes our grandparents, parents, spouse, and brothers and sisters. Humanity covering the globe is the extension of the relationships we have with our grandparents, parents and children. Hence, only the families of the people who love each member of the human race as they love their own grandfather or grandmother, their own father or mother, their own husband or wife, and who can serve them as they would their own children, can inherit the kingdom of heaven. There we find the privilege to inherit all the power and authority of heaven and earth created by God. Even in the secular world, particularly among the ancient noble families of Korea, although they had many levels of hierarchical order, the son who worked the hardest, served the most, and loved his family the most became the heir. The principle is the same, regardless of time and space. This is a privilege granted by love. We may think God is so high, being infinite and eternal. Yet once we establish a loving relationship with God, we immediately have the right to participate in God's work at a level and rank equal to His. Not only that, we have the right to inherit the universe. (143-285, 1986.03.20)

13 Unless a husband and wife can establish horizontal love between them, there is no way for them to find God's vertical love. If the first human ancestors had not fallen, the kingdom of heaven would have started from their family. This is because humankind on the world level is the extension of a family. Therefore, the family is the training center of love that enables us to enter the kingdom of heaven. Only those who possess the love of God have the privilege of inheriting the authority of heaven and earth. When we ask whether life comes first or love comes first, the answer is that love comes first. In the family, sons and daughters are born through

the love of the parents. Therefore children come to have the privilege of inheriting life as a result of their having participated in the love of their parents. Those who forge bonds of love stand in an equal position, at an equal level. (149-272, 1986.11.27)

14 The family consists of grandfather and grandmother, father and mother, husband and wife, and sons and daughters. When you extend this family, it becomes a nation and then the world. The vertical relationships of the family are extended horizontally to the nation and the world. All of this is gathered and knitted together, vertically and horizontally, into one place; that is the family. Therefore a home in which three generations live is a microcosm of the world. When we look out into the world, we can see people who are similar to our grandfathers and grandmothers, our father and mother, our husband or wife, and our sons and daughters. A family with three generations is thus a collaborative training center where we can learn to live in harmony with all people of the world. The family is the training ground where we can achieve a subject-object partnership with the authority to harmonize and create oneness by forging bonds of heart with the whole world, transcending nationality and race. This training takes place centered on love. (241-300, 1993.01.01)

Three-object-partner love in the family

15 God is the God of love. The love of such a God reveals itself among us as the love of parents, the love between husband and wife, and the love of children. No matter how great someone may be, if he is a man he is bound to seek a woman, and if she is a woman she is bound to seek a man. When they marry each other they are meant to give birth to children. (54-026, 1972.03.09)

16 God's Will is to realize the purpose of His creation. His purpose of creation is to be fulfilled based on love, but how is that accomplished? In other words, how is the purpose of creation, where love is the center, to be achieved? It is through the completion of the four-position foundation. This is why, in the Divine Principle, the completion of the purpose of creation is explained as the completion of the four-position foundation. What does this mean? It means the father's love is the mother's love and the mother's love is the father's love; the parents' love is the children's love and the children's love is the parents' love. It also includes the siblings' love for one another. All these kinds of love are one. Love can reach any place. From a vertical viewpoint there are three stages, but from a two-dimensional viewpoint, all three stages become one. Where does that occur? It happens with the parents at the center. Therefore, centering on parents' love, a man and woman become one in love, and God becomes one with their love. (101-042, 1978.10.28)

17 When a husband and wife realize perfect love, the four directions circle around and form a sphere. Happiness and satisfaction are possible only when we are in touch with the elements of love. If we take love out of the picture, everything grinds to a halt. The Unification Principle teaches that the purpose of creation is

fulfilled through the completion of the four-position foundation, and that this is not possible through the perfection of only the father and the mother. Not only do the father and mother have to become one, allowing God's love to dwell within them, but they at the same time have to love their children absolutely, so that God's love can reach the children through them. By love I do not mean thinking or saying, "I have to raise these children well so I can take it easy when I am older and my life is coming to a close." That is not love. Parents are responsible to unwrap their bundle of love and convey it to their children in the family. Then the children will surely orbit around their loving family, which began from heaven, heading toward their ultimate destination. Parents therefore have to teach their sons and daughters how to serve and love God. The wife has to demonstrate how to love her husband and her sons and daughters, and the husband has to demonstrate how to love his wife and his sons and daughters. In the Unification Church this is known as the perfection of love among the three object partners. (101-043, 1978.10.28)

18 Love never starts from oneself. Love starts from the other partner. When we do not have a partner, love cannot even begin. When we see human beings as the center, even God becomes a counterpart. A woman is a man's counterpart, and children are counterparts to their parents; love cannot be realized without counterparts. In the Unification Church we call this the love of the three object partners. A person who has not experienced the love of the three object partners cannot claim to have experienced God's love. Divine Principle calls us to be just as joyful when we bear children as God was after He created Adam and Eve. After creating Adam and Eve, God hoped to feel joy and satisfaction as He protected them and raised them. He nurtured the hope that, "From now, you will have dominion over the world! Our family will become the center of the world! Quickly grow up! Quickly grow up!" and He was eager to see them marry. In the same way, fathers and mothers want to raise their children well and find them good life partners with whom they may become good husbands and wives. If they help their children have good marriages, their family will prosper. (057-120, 1972.05.29)

19 Originally, had Adam and Eve attained perfection and the two formed a couple, this couple would have realized love and given birth to sons and daughters from their love. Taking a broader perspective, we see that before they realized love between husband and wife, the two were to have related with the love of siblings. Each gradually was to have attained perfection as an individual. Then based on the love of husband and wife, they would have advanced to the stage of giving love as parents. An individual is perfected as a son or daughter in the presence of God by experiencing first the love of siblings. Then comes the love between husband and wife and finally love for children. Had Adam and Eve attained perfection by aligning themselves fully with God at the outset as siblings, as husband and wife, and then as parents, they would have had to go no further. Nothing could be greater than this. Adam and Eve would have been the first ones to attain perfection, give birth to children, and reach the position where they could affirm their love for their sons and daughters as perfected parents. Then God could have loved them all, and this

would have enabled all the types of love in His creation to begin. (82-194, 1976.01.25)

20 Although male and female family members grow up in the same home as brothers and sisters, because of their physiology their lives are different. Males tend to be wild and adventurous in nature, while females tend to have a quiet demeanor, being reserved and cautious. Females more than males tend to feel secure when they receive love, content within the boundaries of a home. For this reason, when the two come together and interact in the conjugal relationship, this realm of heart of husband and wife, based on the children's and siblings' realms of heart, will blossom. (234-144, 1992.08.10)

21 After loving others as a brother or sister, when two of you become life partners and love each other as husband and wife, you will be glued to each other. As this takes place, you will bear the fruit of the parents' heart and siblings' heart, and perfect the hearts of man and woman. In this way, in oneness, you can go directly to God's love, centered on the ideal of creation. Love travels the shortest distance. Thus it always travels in a straight line rather than a curve. Then where do the two meet? It is on the perpendicular. If the man takes one step forward, the woman also takes one step forward. Since they do not want to separate from each other, they finally bump together. In loving each other, the man does not want to lose to the woman, and the woman does not want to lose to the man. So they are on an equal footing. There is a core of love within the family. The love of parents, the love of siblings and the love between husband and wife are all connected to that core. (234-144, 1992.08.10)

22 Love is the basis upon which you can conform to the standard of the whole. Therefore, unless you have a husband or wife as your life partner, you cannot pass all the requirements God set for you to stand as a perfect being. The same principle applies to having a relationship with your parents and children. When it comes to having children, it is not enough to have only sons or only daughters. Those who have given birth only to sons ask for daughters. Why is that? It is because duality is lacking. We desire to reside within the love of parents, the love of a spouse and the love of children. We should be able to receive a father's love and a mother's love. We should also be able to receive love from a husband or wife. We should be able to experience loving sons and loving daughters. (25-276, 1969.10.05)

23 The public law of heaven and earth clarifies the proper positions for the father and mother, the husband and wife, and the son and daughter, and calls us to maintain them. The universe is based on this ideal and fundamental standard. When we are in complete accordance with this principle we experience joy, but when we cannot align with it, we are unhappy. Again, we are joyful only when we live fully embracing this principle. Whatever conforms to this principle is goodness. A person who builds upon this goodness is a good person, but someone who builds on what is bad undermines goodness and is evil. (25-276, 1969.10.05)

Section 4. The Family Is the Base of Happiness

1 We cannot live apart from heart. Even if you were the president of a country or possessed unsurpassed authority over the world, if you did not have a place to express your heartfelt joy, what good would it do you? You would not feel life's deep joy from those whom you command—your cabinet members or followers. But in your family this is something you can feel. When you return home from work, you should be able to feel this from your spouse and from your children. You need to be able to share it with pride in the company of others. It is the same with God. Even if He were to restore the entire world, without a family God cannot feel joy. So we do ultimately need to have a family. (25-086, 1969.09.30)

The family is the foundation for joy

2 The family is a good place. It is good because our mother and father, our older brothers and sisters, and our younger siblings are there. Everyone, without exception, feels nostalgic for their hometown, and ultimately longs for their original homeland. People tend to think of their hometown more than their nation. Even though we may live somewhere in the Republic of Korea, we long for our hometown. Our hometown opens and elevates our heart. Love binds us to our hometown in multiple dimensions and in all four directions. That is, we are bound to our father and mother above us, to our spouse on the right or left, and to our sons and daughters below us. Our utmost desire is for happiness centered on love, so we cannot help but long for our original hometown. Then where is God's original hometown? The basis of His original hometown is the recognition by His son and daughter that He is their Father. That is, it is the place where His only son and only daughter, who possess His love exclusively, dwell. It is the place where that son and daughter marry to form a perfect family. (23-151, 1969.05.18)

3 In the Unification Principle and in the book of Genesis, it is written that everything was created for the sake of human beings. The ideal world we long for exists for the sake of human beings. Therefore, the kingdom of heaven is the world in which we live for the sake of others, knowing how to love people. The kingdom of heaven does not exist apart from us. The world in which we know how to serve and love others is the kingdom of heaven. Where is that place? When we think of this question with reference to our own life experience, we see that it is in the family, where we love others and where we are uplifted. When parents look at their child, even one who is immature and mischievous, with a zero score on a scale from one to ten, and nothing to be proud of, they still love him or her more than anyone else. The family is where love is abundant. It is the place where you are elevated to manifest your infinite value. It is the place where happiness dwells. (25-283, 1969.10.05)

4 The family is the eternally unchanging origin and foundation. It cannot be changed even by parents, much less by siblings or national policies. Nothing in the world can change it, not even God. Therefore, in relation to the family, the term

revolution is eternally unnecessary. If the family is a place of love, there is no need for revolution. With regard to love between man and woman, our grandfathers and grandmothers in their youth experienced the same heart of yearning that young people feel today. Our hearts are the same; the feelings of youth are the same. However, the framework of the family is changing and this is creating all sorts of structures and shapes. A loving heart is a loving heart, but the shape of the family is changing. This eventually will bring ruin upon humanity. The family that stands on a solid foundation cannot be swayed by any ideology or thought. On the contrary, such a family transcends and governs every ideology and teaching. Once we establish the family with this standard it will never change, not after ten years, one hundred years, a thousand years, even for eternity. It will instill order in a people and a nation. (25-087, 1969.09.30)

5 Neither your nation nor the world is the base for your happiness. Your family is. Therefore, your ultimate ideal should not be the world; it is your family. Ideal individuals have to dwell in the family. Your ideal itself has to dwell in the family as well. If such a family were to exist, the father of that family would be an ideal father and the mother an ideal mother. The sons would be ideal sons, and the daughters would be ideal daughters. Then each one of them would be the base of an ideal family. Thus we are all meant to realize ideal families. (104-060, 1979.03.28)

6 What could be considered a happy environment? A happy environment exists when people are positioned to receive love from their parents, experience the love of their siblings, share conjugal love with their spouse, and love their children. People can bring about the advancement of a nation and the world only when they know all these kinds of love. Thus the foundation of happiness is love, centered on harmonious parents, couples and children in a perfected family. (39-238, 1971.01.15)

7 We absolutely need a home. Without the home as the base of perfect happiness, the nation and world cannot fulfill their purpose. We have to become parents, spouses and siblings centered on the home God would desire to see. Happiness and discontent both begin from homes and spread out to the nation and world. The home is the beginning point and settlement point that God desires. However, we have not been able to realize the home of God's ideal. Instead, the home is sometimes a place of bad feelings and unhappiness. No one knew that the home, which was to be the base of the greatest happiness, could become the base of despair and distrust. God has been working until now to reverse this through indemnity. Unhappiness in the family began from the time of Cain in Adam's family. (24-306, 1969.09.07)

8 When we have something good, we like to boast about it and advertise it. Wanting to advertise something means that we want to draw other people into a relationship with it. What is it that we like most? First we like our parents most, then we like ourselves, and then we like our children. This is what we have seen in history. Then through what are all these integrated? The family is the base that

connects us to each other's lives. Based on the environment that connects our lives together, the family is the basis upon which relationships of love can bloom. (36-290, 1970.12.13)

9 The family should be a place where we model all relationships on every level. All people without exception determine their life path within their families. They are born in a family, go out from their family to all directions and return to their family from all directions—north, south, east and west—and encounter ups and downs in their family. This understanding tells us that a person who cannot experience happiness in the family should not expect to find happiness on the national level. Even if he were to recover his nation, where would he live in that nation? He would be unhappy, with nowhere to go. Only in the family can we find our parents, our spouse and our children. (188-256, 1989.03.01)

10 Some people may say that they are satisfied with their work and need nothing more, but that is not true. There may be some fulfillment there, but the workplace connects people through material things. Politics is where people pursue their rights and interests. Even in religion, people seek God in different ways, from all directions. Though they may be able to find God, they will not find love. True love can be found only in the family. Someone may be successful in his company, earning vast sums of money and being recognized by many, but if he does not have a loving family, he is an unhappy man. Even if someone goes into the field of politics, becomes a member of parliament and even the president of his nation, if he has no loving home to which he can return, he will be an unhappy man. Even if someone becomes a famous pastor and a great spiritual leader who is genuinely loved by the members under his or her wing, that love is not enough. We look for a deeper and more central place of love than that; that place is none other than the family. (184-055, 1988.11.13)

11 Even if someone has unified the entire world, he or she will be unhappy if there is disunity within the family. The realization of the ideal of love has to begin in the family; the family is the haven of happiness. Thus the kingdom of heaven begins in the family. Jesus, who came to this earth to realize the kingdom of heaven, spoke of the day when a bride would be prepared for him. He based this statement on the standard of the family. The family is interconnected in love and is united through love. Love does not change, so it can unite everyone. That is why the love of grandparents, of parents and of husband and wife can be one. In love all can unite, because the nature of love includes unity. Further, love's motive is to create life. The lives and ideals of a grandfather and grandmother are connected in love, which they bequeath to the parents. In other words, they bequeath everything to their children. Our parents are the children of our grandparents, and we are the children of our parents. The environment that revolves around such love is the kingdom of heaven. (48-010, 1971.08.31)

12 When we say someone is happy, on what basis do we say this? We cannot call someone happy just because he or she has external ability, power or prestige. Can

we say that someone is happy because he or she has great wealth and envies no one? No, we cannot. Can someone be called happy because he or she has worldly knowledge, or is influential enough to move the world? These things alone do not make a person happy. All the people on this earth generally feel, experience, and recognize that the family is the base for happiness. Yet they do not have families that meet the standard of true happiness. That is why the issue is the family. In the family, there must be parents. In the world, a child without parents is called an orphan, and we always feel sorry for orphans. If there are parents in the family, it means there are also husband and wife. It is pitiable to have no parents, but it is also pitiable to have lost a beloved spouse. No matter how much husband and wife love each other, there is no greater sadness than when one of them is bereaved. Moreover, having no children is a great cause of unhappiness for a married couple. (23-011, 1969.05.11)

13 Suppose that someone were unable to acquire a position that brought authority, power or recognition, and had nothing to be proud of. However, suppose that person had a family with true parents, a true spouse and true children, a peaceful family that was the envy of his community. Such a happy family should share its genuine happiness even beyond the tribe; it should impact society, the people and even the nation. There is no question that such a family would be admired by the people and the entire nation. If such a family emerged on earth, representing both the people and the nation, without doubt the world would honor that family. (23-012, 1969.05.11)

14 We should be willing to make sacrifices in order to recover the family. If the father's self-sacrifice saved his family, the children would say, "Father, you have worked so hard!" If his sacrifice moved his wife to the very marrow of her bones, she would say, "Oh, my love! I am so grateful to you!" This is the way true people are. The individual sacrifices for the family. In a family, the mother makes sacrifices for her husband and children, and the children in return offer devotion to their parents and love their siblings. A family that is united in this way is a happy family. A family where the members strive to serve one another, giving fully of themselves, will experience God in their midst. The family that can embrace God will eternally remain an ideal family. The family is the training center for life in the kingdom of heaven. (61-215, 1972.08.31)

15 The kingdom of heaven is the world in which we love all elderly people as we do our parents, we love all humankind as our brothers and sisters, and we love those of our own age as we do our spouse. The kingdom of heaven is the world where we live based on this universal view of people, expressed in the different realms of heart that we experience in the family. A social structure that expands based on families made up of such people is like the kingdom of heaven. The kingdom of heaven is a global extension of our own family, filled with our brothers and sisters. (151-085, 1962.10.07)

16 What is the kingdom of heaven? It is the place where we can love the people of the world as we love our own family members. People who can do that are the citizens of the kingdom of heaven. Grandfather and grandmother, father and mother, couples, siblings and children make up four generations. They are a textbook in the form of a family, a textbook through which we can experience the true love of the universe as citizens of the heavenly kingdom. The family teaches us as if it were a textbook. People who live this way experience no national barriers, even after they go to the spirit world. Wherever they go, wherever they are, the road opens up for them. (129-098, 1983.10.01)

17 The kingdom of heaven is where husband and wife go after attaining complete oneness through God's love, and is where the children who are born to such a couple go. It is where we go with the family, tribe and people who have attained oneness with God at the center. Therefore Jesus, who did not have a family while he was on the earth, could not enter the kingdom of heaven; he dwells in paradise. Only husbands and wives who have been brought together based on God's love can enter the kingdom of heaven. It is a world where the principle of relationship as husband and wife applies. That is why only families can enter the kingdom of heaven, and each family should bring its tribe and nation along with it. (018-331, 1967.08.13)

18 Your family is in the position to represent the sovereignty of the heavenly kingdom. Parents represent the sovereignty, children represent the citizens, and material possessions represent the land of that nation. Consequently, being devoted to your parents is the same as being patriotic to your nation and also leads you to fulfill the way of a saint on the world level. (35-306, 1970.10.30)

19 The four-position foundation is formed when the three types of love—parental love, conjugal love and filial love—are realized. God will surely appear in the place where this four-position foundation has been fulfilled. God dwells in the place where the love of the four-position foundation is secured. It is there that we live and attend God for eternity. That place is the foundation for the kingdom of heaven. (47-224, 1971.08.28)

20 When people are perfected as the object partners of God, the incorporeal God's ideal of love is substantiated. When people completely unite in mind and body and mature in character with God as their center, they become eternal object partners of God's life, love and ideal. Once Adam and Eve become ideal individuals as God's children, they will form an ideal family, then an ideal society, nation and world, and realize the kingdom of heaven of harmony and unity. In their lives they will experience ideal happiness and bliss in resonance with absolute love. (135-011, 1985.08.20)

21 Life in the kingdom of heaven begins in the family, not elsewhere. The kingdom of heaven is a multidimensional extension of the family, not something separate from the family realm. When you embrace your husband or wife, therefore, you

should think that you are in harmony with all the men or women of the world. In this way, you make the condition in your family of having loved all humanity. (30-083, 1970.03.17)

22 The extension of the ideal family is the ideal nation, and the extension of the ideal nation is the ideal world. The extension of the ideal world is the ideal cosmos. When that is realized, since the heavenly kingdom is the extension of the family model, people who have experienced the way of true love in the family are set to be welcomed anywhere they go in the world. They will be able to travel freely in the heavenly world. (239-096, 1992.11.24)

23 The family is a training camp that equips people to enter the kingdom of heaven. It is a training ground. The world is inhabited by people just like our grandfathers and grandmothers. If we expand the family, we have the world. The population of this world is composed of people of the age of your mother and father, the age of your spouse and the age of your children. Therefore, people who expand in all directions the training that they received in their families, and live within a realm of love that serves people in all directions, will enter the kingdom of heaven. The family is the training ground that makes it possible for people to go straight to the kingdom of heaven. (143-072, 1986.03.15)

24 The family is the place where we can feel the joy of creation on behalf of the invisible God. When we look at the world, we find people who are like our children, people who are like us, people who are like our father and mother, and people who are like our grandfathers and grandmothers. Imagine that you had a yardstick to measure children, another to measure spouses, another to measure parents and another to measure grandparents. Putting all of these together, you could form the body of one family. When you extend the family, you have the world. Look at your own family's situation. If you make all of them—children, spouses, parents and grandparents—the subject partners, and make the world their object partner, the two will go round and round as plus and minus. People who live on earth interacting in this way enter the kingdom of heaven. This world becomes the training ground that opens the way for you to go to heaven. (254-246, 1994.02.13)

25 The family is the training ground that prepares you to conquer the ideal nation and the ideal world with love. Moreover, it is the training ground that prepares you to conquer the heavenly kingdom and even God Himself. There, if you cast a net of love and pull it in with all your strength, the world will be pulled to you, the spirit world will be pulled to you, and even God will be pulled to you. In the end, an ideal family is where we fish to catch the universe with love. (106-026, 1979.11.04)

26 God is the vertical Parent. He will never be apart from you, for all eternity. The reason we have to attend our parents is to receive training in attending God, who is the vertical True Parent in the eternal world. The heavenly kingdom is the world of love. The world of love exists with the air of love, and the family is the place that trains you to adapt to that environment. True love contains the concept of giving. It

does not mean that you can act as you please for yourself. If you think you can relax and be comfortable in your own home, you are wrong. It is actually a difficult path to follow. (183-336, 1988.11.09)

27 People who go the way of filial piety—attending their grandparents and parents in the family—and apply these lessons to the world, will find that they can relate to everyone, anywhere. Even if they go to the spirit world and meet people who have lived in past ages, they will be welcomed. Right there, equality, harmony and unity emerge from the north, south, east and west. When this center of equality, harmony and unity appears, freedom emerges. Freedom means being with God. Once you reach that level, all things of creation will welcome you. That is freedom in the truest sense. (216-302, 1991.04.14)

28 Our journey through life consists of becoming a son or daughter, a brother or sister, and a husband or wife who can receive and practice God's love. It is a journey to become a husband or wife and love our sons and daughters from the position of second creators, just as God loved Adam and Eve. The beginning is love, the process is love and the end is also love. As the perfect product, after being manufactured according to the specifications of love, we go to the kingdom of heaven. When we actualize the kingdom of heaven, we do not do so as individuals but as whole families. (226-308, 1992.02.09)

29 In a family there are grandfathers and grandmothers, father and mother and also sons and daughters. It is the same in the world. If you are trained to love people in the world who are the same age as your grandfather and grandmother, your father and mother, and your children, more than you love your own family members, you will become a perfect being who can relate at any time to the multitudes in the heavenly world. (236-150, 1992.11.04)

30 Is yours a family in which the father and mother, the couple and the children are united in unchanging love? Is your family a treasure that the universe cannot continue without, a family everyone aspires to emulate? If we expand such a family horizontally, we create a tribe that God can love and cannot release. Yet even if we expand that foundation to a people and a nation, that nation is not enough. We need the world, and even that is still not enough. We cannot reach perfection unless we reach the stage of governing by the authority of the love that connects and unites the spirit world with the earthly world. If we do not reach that stage, there is no way for humanity to be liberated. (141-117, 1986.02.19)

31 Love is the reason God created man and woman as the ideal of His creation. That is why people who have lived centered on love enter the kingdom of heaven. If you compare the kingdom of heaven to a barn where the harvest is stored, the family is the harvest. A man and a woman who have become husband and wife centered on love enter the kingdom of heaven with their family. When you perfect your home on the earth by creating such a family, your entire hometown will welcome you. You will be a model son or daughter and model grandson and

granddaughter whom God can embrace and love. When you put these teachings into practice in your own family, you will stand in a position from which you can go straight to the heavenly kingdom. (213-202, 1991.01.20)

CHAPTER 2 Blessed Marriage and Original Love between Man and Woman

Section 1. Coming of Age and the Love between Man and Woman

1 God placed Adam and Eve in the center of the created universe, and gave them a purpose to fulfill. During the time of adolescence, when a person explores the things of creation, he feels their mystery. God hoped that the emotions of His love would become part of Adam and Eve, and that the emotions He felt as He created the entire universe would also be shared by them. When your passion reaches its climax, you can write an amazing poem. In the same way, God created human beings with the purpose of attaining perfection and possessing the same great universal heart. God waited impatiently until the time was right for them to mature according to His goal. As Adam and Eve matured, God longed for them to relate to each other as substantial manifestations of the entire universe. When a man relates to a woman and a woman to a man, God wants them to see each other in that way. He wants people to mature to the level that allows not only God, but also all the things of the creation, to enter the world of human emotions. (9-171, 1960.05.08)

The changes during our youth

2 The time of our youth is when we feel as though we are the princes and princesses of the world. It is a time when we think of everything with ourselves as the center. At the same time, the time of adolescence is a time of rebellion, so if others do not recognize us, it is very easy to go a different path. That is why the problems of today's adolescents are global problems. In the time of our youth, we dislike anything that doesn't revolve around us. However, when something is connected to us, no matter how insignificant it may be, we become elated. If you stop and watch young women in their late teens and early twenties, you will see that they sometimes laugh for no apparent reason. A young woman may laugh when she sees a ripe persimmon suddenly fall from a persimmon tree that has lost all its leaves. This is because these young women can somehow connect to what is going on around them and thus experience the deepest emotions. Our youth is the transition time when we can encounter and make a connection with all things. This is due to the fact that God gave us an original nature, which allows a man and a woman to be completely united through His love. (33-333, 1970.08.23)

3 When young men and women meet as young adults, their hearts leap. When these feelings arise, their hearts go through a change. However, if their minds are not fixed on God and they stand on the opposite side, they fall into evil. Our mind must be fixed on God. Love is what allows our mind and heart, when focused on God, to rise to the position of oneness with God's heart. Since people have to go

through their lives in that position, they absolutely must have dreams and hopes, with love as their center. (26-159, 1969.10.25)

4 In terms of perfecting a man and a woman, the power of love builds a relationship between a subject partner and an object partner. The power of love emerges after adolescence, at the time men and women attain perfection. The power of love is greater than both man and woman, so it can unite them. A man and a woman inevitably become husband and wife. On the path of love, one can even discard one's own life. Love is stronger than life. As men and women grow into young adulthood, this powerful force makes them long for a partner. (61-332, 1972.09.03)

5 The place of greatest happiness for people is the place in which human morality and compassion conform in oneness to heavenly morality and heavenly compassion. God created human beings as His object partners. The time that God as the subject partner recognizes the perfect value of people as His object partners is when they become mature. It is the time when we can give and receive based on God's love. I am saying that when an object partner comes to recognize his or her subject partner, that person has reached maturity. This is when a man or woman becomes a young adult. (65-025, 1972.11.13)

6 When women think about a man during their youth, they want to think of that man as someone who represents the world. During our youth, we want to pull the entire world to us and drive it into our hearts, and we want to walk with the great ocean in our embrace. This is why the time of youth is a wonderful one. It is wonderful because from a horizontal perspective it is when the subject and object partners meet and thus become closer; and from a vertical perspective it is when God and human beings become closer. When a mature man and woman are bound together through genuine love, everything that was invested by God at the time of the Creation ripens and returns back to God for the first time. At such times, everyone becomes a poet and lyrical writer. (65-026, 1972.11.13)

7 No matter how pretty a young lady may be, she will have her youth only once. It is like the blooming of the most beautiful flower, a most precious time in her life. Is there any woman who, when reaching young adulthood, would rather live alone? Such a person is not a woman. Is there any man who, possessing a fine figure and being in the middle of his energetic days of youth, wants to live by himself? At such a time, men or women always seek their partner. Who do they resemble by doing that? They resemble God. How could such a person seek partnership if God were not like that Himself? God is like that. It is the same for both men and women, in that they seek out their eternal partner during their energetic youth. That's the most precious time of life. (32-248, 1970.07.19)

8 Are you able to love freely or not? Just because a man calls to you on the street does not mean you should follow him. You must protect your body well until the proper time. I am saying that you must not entrust your pure heart to troll-like men. Men who strut around the streets frivolously are all little devils. Would you

place your destiny in the hands of such a man? This is not an issue to take lightly. Finding your spouse is something that occurs only once in your lifetime. On the day you make one misstep, you put your entire life at risk. It's the same for men. Until now, women were told to protect their chastity, but men must also protect their chastity. No matter how evil or heartless the world may be, you must not commit an act that deviates from the proper way. (26-161, 1969.10.25)

9 Your youth is a precious time in your life when you can take the grief of Adam and Eve, who lost their purity in their adolescence, and indemnify it. So you should protect and preserve your purity during your youth. You need to have the resolve that you will preserve your purity as something clean and precious. You should say, "Even if I may have to live alone for all time, I will absolutely never allow my love to be violated." Unless we love our people and our nation, we cannot meet the person whom we can love. Unless we love the world, we cannot have a person to love. This thought is the tradition of the Unification Church. Therefore you can love your wife and love your husband after you have loved God, loved the world and loved your people. This is a matter of principle. (37-108, 1970.12.22)

10 It is said that human beings are the most precious of all created things, and that they go through a spring season and an autumn season in their life. From this viewpoint, it can be said that young men and women who are in the growing period lasting until their marriage are in their spring season. In the spring season, the cold weather gradually warms and a green garden forms in which flowers bloom and spread their fragrance. Thus all things are prepared for welcoming the abundant summer. After passing through such a summer season, we welcome the autumn and the time for harvest. For people, the time of spring is adolescence, when we are at the height of our growth. (221-266, 1991.10.26)

The love between a man and a woman in the original creation

11 You need to understand that the reason for your birth as a woman or a man is to join your partner in virtue through true love. When we examine this, woman and man are each composed of yin and yang. From the viewpoint of the Divine Principle, yin and yang are called characteristics of sung sang or internal nature and hyung sang or external form. When we look at individual beings, we can see that each of us has yin and yang aspects. Yin and yang correspond to the attributes that enable us to receive internal nature and external form. God divided yin and yang because of love. (216-189, 1991.03.31)

12 What do the subject and object partners—in other words, yang nature and yin nature—have as their central focus when they unite? Love is not just a concept. It is a reality. What is the reality through which love can be established? We did not know what it was that made a man a man, and a woman a woman. Quite simply, it is the reproductive organs. The world is perishing, however, because all men believe their reproductive organs belong to them, and all women believe the same about theirs. Both men and women have a misconception about who owns their

reproductive organs. Everyone says that love is absolute and eternal and thinks of it in an idealized fashion, but if people only knew clearly that the ownership of eternal love has been vested in one's loving counterpart, then the world would not be as it is today. (279-245, 1996.09.15)

13 If you want to realize love, you must invest and forget, invest and forget. Why must we possess such love? It is because love grows larger and larger— not smaller—the more it moves. Natural phenomena in the world of physical dynamics are such that the more things move and the more they act, the more they are diminished. But in the world of true love, the more things move, the more they grow. Because God knew that, He was able to initiate the process of Creation with true love as His central focus. When a person matures and begins to interact in a certain way for the first time, it is love that is behind this. Once they are fully grown, young men and women seek to interact focusing on love. Their eyes, which had been only for themselves, change, and they now look outward. Even self-centered and prim young women glance to their sides when they reach their adolescence. Their eyes, which had previously been only for their mother and father, start to stray elsewhere. This is not a bad thing. Rather, it is natural. It permits them to grasp the larger world of their future spouse, in order to maintain their course in life. (237-127, 1992.11.13)

14 How do you want to live? The answer is simple. Is there something in this world you would wish to gaze upon until your eyes popped out, smell until you lost your sense of smell, listen to until your ears burst, and touch until your hands no longer had feeling? This thing is not money, knowledge or power. It is love. The more you hold love in your hands, the more you want to hold onto it. And when you let go, you liberate everything fully at once. The thing that makes all things possible is love. Your eyes must meet at the correct focal point and your nose must also have the right focus. You can only hear well when your ears find the right focus. The balance or focal point between the ear's three semicircular canals must be just right so that you do not feel dizzy. Human beings all live with focal points. What is the integrated focal point for a person? There is the focal point of the eyes, the ears, the nose, the mouth and the sense of touch. But what is the root of all these focal points? Love is the root of the creation and the movement of all the focal points. Nothing other than love. (195-032, 1989.11.01)

15 Only your partner can stand eternally in the position of the owner of your love. A woman is the one who perfects a man. Only a woman makes a man an owner of love, and only a man makes a woman an owner of love. Any other kind of owner is false. There is only one key—one partner—to unlock a person's love, not two. (453-259, 2004.06.13)

16 God's Will is the fulfillment of His purpose of creation. Individuals can reach that point within the realm of God's love. However, fallen people— no matter how hard they try—have no way to pass through and succeed in any matters. But God, by adhering to absolute conditions, has established a path to love that will allow

everyone to be recognized as scoring one hundred percent. Therefore, people have formed the religious realm in order to receive the privilege of that love, and a way of maintaining faith absolutely has unfolded through that realm. A man and woman who are united in mind and body, and who have the basis in their relationship that allows God's love to be with them, are to receive the Blessing and marry. In doing so, they will explode for the first time with the power of an earthquake. Love is established at the same time that heaven and earth vibrate. (101-047, 1978.10.28)

17 Establishing a family in which God's love and the three great kinds of human love can blossom together is the desire of the world, of humanity and of the future. The love of husband and wife is a precious and beautiful thing that can finally spread the fragrances of history in accordance with the principles of heaven and earth and appear as a new flower. (35-243, 1970.10.19)

18 The ideal married couple we speak of in the Unification Church is a couple who can realistically manifest the highest art and the highest literature. Before we encounter the highest ideal and the highest world of culture, the highest, sweetest love shared by a husband and wife must become the most sublime work of art in the world. The life of a husband and wife should inspire the most sublime work of literature. It should be the subject of a great literary work. (22-270, 1969.05.04)

19 The place where a husband and wife share true love after marrying is the palace that is the origin of the love, life and lineage of God and humankind. It is the starting point of the kingdom of heaven on earth and in the spirit world that actualizes the ideal. With true love as their center, the children born of this love become the perfect union of husband and wife, form a family attending God, and become the origin of peace and the ideal. The man and woman, who by themselves represent only halves, unite into one and complete the ideal love of God as His object partners. (259-046, 1994.03.27)

Section 2. The Significance and Value of Blessed Marriage

1 The literal meaning of our word for the Blessing, chukbok, is "praying for blessings." If you analyze the word chukbok, chuk means to pray or wish for something. When you are praying for blessings, what is most precious? The blessing of love is most precious. The core starting point of the universe's promise is a man and a woman creating harmony. So the Blessing is the most wonderful thing. Because the Blessing is the greatest blessing you can receive, the Unification Church refers to the wedding ceremony as "the Blessing." When we in the Unification Church say we have received the Blessing, we do not mean we have received some worldly, present day blessing. When we speak of the Blessing, we mean that we have been joined in holy matrimony by the leader of the Unification Church. (83-226, 1976.02.08)

The purpose of marrying

2 We marry to resemble the form of God. God exists with dual characteristics of masculinity and femininity. He is a unified being in whom both characteristics exist together in harmony. Men and women were created to reflect the dual characteristics of God. Therefore, a man and a woman should come together in complete unity and harmony, become like the seed, and return to the state of the original nature of God. (290-055, 1998.02.02)

3 Men and women are each only half of a whole entity. Therefore women must conquer the world of men and men must conquer the world of women. That is how they are perfected. They come to resemble God by joining their separate manifestations of God's dual characteristics back together through love. God and people are to unite based on the love between subject and object partners. The reason God has dual characteristics is also because of love. The most precious things for people are their sons and daughters, their brothers and sisters, their spouses and their parents. You cannot perfect your love unless you go through the progression of child, sibling, spouse and parent. That is why you must marry and give birth to sons and daughters. This is a formula. It is a cycle that repeats. (260-242, 1994.05.19)

4 Why do we marry? For Adam and Eve it was not so that they could discover their mutual love. It was to make the vertical love of God as the nucleus and, centered on that, create a spherical form as the embodiment of the Father. God's ideal of creation is also fulfilled by focusing on such a love, and only through the union of a mature man and a mature woman can love be fulfilled and connected to life. The connection cannot be made through life but rather through love. Based on vertical parental love, the seeds of original love can be connected for the first time through horizontal conjugal love. (173-288, 1988.02.21)

5 People marry to give love to God. We love God because we need to become one with God. When we become one with God based on the eternal love of the absolute God, we can realize eternal life. This is not all. The world created by God through love belongs to Him of course, but that world can become mine through the right of inheritance. At the place where we come to meet with God, He bequeaths to us the right to inherit the entire universe. (136-040, 1985.12.20)

6 If a man and a woman want to achieve individual perfection, they need to do so by perfecting their partner, and that is why they must marry. They cannot enter the realm of love if they are not married. The reason people need to marry is so they can relate to the love of God. A man and woman cannot fully connect to the love of God if they are not married. When they marry, the love of God resides with them, and they become one through this love. God can then bequeath the whole universe to them, including God Himself, His love and everything that belongs to Him. (135-327, 1985.12.15)

7 People marry to perfect their individual love while at the same time perfecting the love of their partner. Doesn't it feel good to know you marry to perfect both

your love and the love of God? Men and women have to marry to prepare the foundation on earth through which God can love. The love of God cannot reside there until a man and woman unite together based on the foundation of love. In the final analysis, people marry for the sake of God's love, that is, to possess the love of God. (165-087, 1987.05.20)

8 A man should know that the woman standing in front of him is God's daughter and the feminine aspect of humanity. Before she is my wife, she belongs to humankind. Only if you can love her as a woman who is loved by humanity and love her as God's beloved daughter, are you qualified to be her husband. Women are the same. Do not think, "He is my man." Think of him as God's son and as a man representing all humankind. You have to love and serve him more than humanity does and more than God does. (88-318, 1976.10.03)

9 God desires for husbands and wives to say, "The man will become the right foot and the woman the left, and we will find happiness through making a family that leaves footprints of love for humanity and for God." The right foot is the husband and the left foot is the wife. Do not become lame! You have to think, "We will surely move forward!" You also have to progress straight ahead. Only then are you qualified to be married. You have to think, "When I think admiringly of my husband, I am thinking admiringly of all people and thinking admiringly of God. When I love my husband, I am loving all humanity and loving God." (88-318, 1976.10.03)

The significance and value of receiving the Blessing

10 In the Unification Church, we call marriage the "Blessing." The life of a married person is such that a man and woman who had been alone on their path to seek love abandon that path and stand as complements to each other- comforting each other when they feel lonely, sharing joy together when they feel joy and giving each other strength during difficulties. In this way, one becomes the right foot and the other the left; one becomes the right hand and the other the left. Together they praise God, saying they are moving forward with God's love superimposed on the theater of their lives. (101-033, 1978.10.28)

11 From the time of the Fall of Adam and Eve, our first ancestors, people have waited eagerly for the day when God would bless them. Religion has played the role of mediator between God and humankind until the day the Blessing is given. The Unification Church seeks to find legitimate children to whom everything can be bequeathed. Because of Satan, people cannot receive the Blessing without going through the process of indemnity. Even the lives of ancestors in the spirit world are determined by how much blessed couples on the earth are aligned with God's Will. I have been making the utmost effort and fighting for the sake of this day. The Blessing means we can inherit a relationship with the True Parents. That is why True Parents conduct the Blessing under the same banner they used while fighting against Satan's world. (19-023, 1967.11.14)

12 The era in which the Blessing is given is the most important time. It is the time when God's wishes can finally be fulfilled and His grief of the past six thousand years can be resolved. It is also the time when the wishes of Jesus, who came to earth as the Son of God for all humanity, can be fulfilled. Moreover, it is the moment when people can truly love for the first time since their creation, and receive respect, honor and joy from the rest of creation. On that day, all evil will disappear and we will usher in a new era with the bright rays of the ascending sun. Nature will rejoice, everything in the universe will dance with joy and we will welcome a bright new morning, the new morning of victory. (19-106, 1967.12.31)

13 The time of marriage is the time when one inherits the love of God. It is also the time we inherit the authority of re-creation. The joy God felt after He created Adam and Eve appears through marriage. After that, the right of dominion commences. Through receiving the Blessing in the realm of perfection, things of the greatest value are inherited. What we call our wedding ceremony therefore refers to the manifestation of love; it refers to our being given the right to create, and it refers to us as subject partner and object partner receiving the right of dominion over each other. (76-047, 1975.01.26)

14 God's reason for creating man and woman and giving them the three great blessings was to complete a family. The three great blessings—that is, to be fruitful, to multiply and to fill the earth—are not something that an individual can fulfill alone. They can only be fulfilled within a family. Therefore the family is a secure environment in which individuals can establish themselves. It is the ideal foundation for that. No matter how great a man or a woman may be, there must be a father and mother, a husband and wife and brothers and sisters in their family. (261-044, 1994.05.22)

15 Why is it that women are absolutely needed by men and men by women? It is for the sake of absolute love. Why is absolute love needed? It is in order to possess God. If someone possesses God, God belongs to that person. Within that love is the right to inherit from God, the right to live together with God and the right to participate with God. Therefore within love, God becomes ours, as does everything of God's creation. (222-025, 1991.10.27)

16 The purpose of marriage is self-perfection and dominion over the universe. When one perfects himself, he seizes control of the universe and embraces the world of the future. Marrying is a statement that we will perfect ourselves and come to possess God. Thus, we will eternally remain as a counterpart of God, one who has assisted Him in realizing His ideal of creation. Since God created good sons and daughters, we should also give birth to and raise many good sons and daughters. Having children is a serious matter. Through giving birth to children, we infinitely expand the world that God governs, the world that God created. And we create the ideal world that God can enjoy. This is the content of the three great blessings. When we perfect our individual nature, we attain the right of ownership

of the world that God governs. When that happens, our joy is multiplied. When we produce children, joy overflows in the horizontal world. (246-253, 1993.04.18)

17 If you look at a woman in the spirit world, you will see the smiling face of a man within her. If you ask, "I see the face of such-and-such a man within you. Who is he?" She will answer, "He is my husband." When two are united into one, they cannot be separated afterward. They live together for eternity after they die. In this way, the man whom the woman loved remains one with her in her heart. Likewise, within a man is his beloved wife. That is happiness. Eventually this happiness will be shared with God. The right of substantial beings with dual characteristics is to stand as God's counterparts through true love and to return to God. This is the meaning of origin-di- vision-union. The united internal nature and external form divide and then come together again as substantial beings. This is the Blessing of a man and a woman. God comes to dwell in them, becoming one with them. The man and woman become one, and everything is brought into unity. (250-108, 1993.10.12)

18 You did not realize that a man's perfection is impossible without a woman. A man and a woman are each half of one being that is only completed when they serve each other. The two become one and live for each other, and thus return God's grace, and they become the object partners of God's love. This is the reason that the woman brings perfection to the man, the man brings perfection to the woman, and the love of the two of them brings perfection to God's love. Thus they are in a sense greater than God. All of us wish that the counterpart of our love would be greater than we are. We wish for our counterpart to be not just a thousand times greater but ten thousand times greater! Not ten thousand times but one hundred million times greater! Instead of one hundred million times, one hundred million times infinity times greater than we are! Instead of being one hundred million times infinity times greater than we are, we want the counterpart of our love to be eternally one hundred million times infinity times greater! From where does this desire come? It comes from our ancestors. Since the root of our ancestors is God, it comes ultimately from God. Even God wants the counterpart of His love to be many hundreds of millions times greater than He. This is the imperative of heaven and earth. (268-155, 1995.03.31)

19 If Adam and Eve had not fallen and instead had become perfected, they would have experienced their Blessing ceremony. In other words, Adam and Eve were to have been the substantial object partners of God. With Him as the subject partner, they automatically should have become the object partners. As the object partners, they should have achieved individual perfection. This would have been the foundation upon which they could have connected their objective love to God, the subject partner of love, and fulfilled the Blessing through marriage. In the end, perfection refers to marriage, and marriage refers to the manifestation of God's love. If marriage did not exist, love would never have begun in the human world. The owner of that love is not humanity; it is God. When that love of God appears within human beings, it becomes true love. When that heavenly true love is

realized for the first time within humanity, it becomes the pride and joy of God. That is the feeling of God's love. (76-040, 1975.01.26)

20 The most precious of all blessings is to receive the love of God. The first thing is to receive the blessing of God's love. Next, one is to inherit God's authority over creation. Just as God created Adam and Eve based on love, thereby feeling joy and hope, all people, equally and universally, are meant to have the authority of creation. They receive this same joy when they have children. Why is it that you cannot help but love your children? It is because having children is equivalent to inheriting God's great work of creation in the horizontal realm. People can feel the joy that God felt after He created Adam and Eve. We can inherit the love of God and God's creative power. God oversees the earth, the heavens and all created things. Even though we occupy a horizontal position, God gives us the authority of dominion over all the creation. (76-046, 1975.01.26)

21 You must know the value of the Blessing. In the age of the Second Coming, we should complete the standard of the Blessing. The new heaven and new earth begin when God resolves all the issues representing history, heaven and earth, all people and the entire providence. Then He will decide all things and transfer everything to one place. The gates of the Blessing are that astonishing. The Blessing is so great that you could not buy it even if you offered the nation of Israel, or the countless prophets and patriotic martyrs, or all the works of God for six thousand years, or all of Jesus' and the Holy Spirit's works for two thousand years, or even all the suffering endured by all humanity to this day. (158-167, 1967.12.27)

22 I consider the Blessing to have been the most precious gift in my life. For you also, the greatest gift in human history is the Blessing. Those who have received God's Blessing represent God. Therefore when you receive the Blessing, you must start a family and bring Satan to his knees. You have to bring Satan to judgment. After that, you need to actualize the four-position foundation and become a victorious person with dominion over the creation. (23-317, 1969.06.08)

23 The marriage ceremony is how the Heavenly Parent and the earthly parents become one through love. The man and woman join into one on the first day. You have heard the phrase "joining in virtue," haven't you? The place where you become one body is where God enters. Two worlds unite into one when God, who is the inner internal nature and external form, enters Adam and Eve, who are the outer internal nature and external form, through the power of love. The invisible internal nature and external form of the spirit world is the plus, while the internal nature and external form of the visible world is the minus. A large plus becomes one with a large minus for the first time. The place where they unite is the love organs. It is only when they unite that way that a baby born through the bodies of Adam and Eve will not only be God's child but also True Parents' child. (286-088, 1997.08.09)

24 If you do not receive the Blessing after attaining perfection, you will lose the chance to be God's external form and also to be the object partner of God's love. For things to happen in line with God's Will, He must first take on an external form and find an object partner for His love. Then He needs sons and daughters who will serve the family, descendants and nation. That is the family. On the day the family is perfected, God comes to have an external form. He comes to have an object partner for His love and sons and daughters. How is all this unified? It is unified through the lineage. The central root, stem and buds are all one. You have to receive God's lineage. The root is one. You have to receive the lineage of the invisible God and the lineage of the visible God. (286-016, 1997.07.01)

The attitude of those who receive the Blessing

25 The Blessing is the most precious thing in all heaven and earth. It is also the most frightening. If a husband and wife have different thoughts, they may do each other harm. It is from you that the good ancestors, good land and good nation will appear. Therefore, people who have received the Blessing should think of heaven and earth at all times. The Blessing is so that we can share blessings with others. Husbands and wives must become mothers and fathers to each other in heart. They should inspire the people of the world to say to them, "We want to make families like yours." (13-067, 1963.10.17)

26 The Unification Church honors the tradition of the family. That is why I am telling you there is something of value in the Blessing I give to you that cannot be replaced with anything else from any past age. If you leave a stain or a wound on your Blessing, it will be the shame of your family, the shame of your nation and a shame throughout human history. With that in mind, you must give all your strength to the re-establishment of the family. (242-091, 1992.12.27)

27 The Blessing is a magnificent thing. You cannot receive the Blessing based on your own desire. The value of a life is more precious than that of the whole universe. That is why when you make vows to take responsibility for a person, you should be ready and willing to do so forever. The Blessing is concerned with these issues. For this reason, if a person can receive the Blessing during his or her lifetime, he or she is truly a happy person. You must have a stronger resolve than ever before if you are to take part in receiving this great Blessing. (30-186, 1970.03.22)

28 The occasion of the Blessing is where the most precious among your relationships is decided. The Blessing can only come once in your lifetime. Therefore you need to pray a lot. I am telling you to offer your utmost sincere heart to God before you come to receive the Blessing. Don't even think of trying to find the person who is to become your spouse. You have to be willing to marry even the least attractive person. You should think, "I will live happily, even if it has to be with that homely person over there." It's problematic if your mind is all excited, without any foundation, and flies to one person and then another. People who pray for

themselves are greedy. It would be better not to pray and instead think, “Heavenly Father, I leave everything in Your hands. Isn’t there a partner even for an unattractive and foolish person like me? Please do everything according to Your wishes. Even if You tell me to grow old and die alone, I will do so gladly.” (30-191, 1970.03.22)

29 Marriage is not something you should enter into casually. It’s not something people should do who meet just walking down the street. If people marry simply because they feel affection for one another, as soon as they wed, some misfortune may occur. You should definitely not stand in the position in which you try to succeed based on your own perspective. The Blessing is something we do for the sake of the nation and the world. It is also for the sake of future generations. (30-205, 1970.03.22)

30 Whether it is men or women, when they did not know the Will, they probably lived just as they pleased. If you are a virgin only in name because you have some blemish from the past, you must repent with endless tears. If you do so, God will forgive you through the time of the Blessing. The most blessed thing is for a pure girl and a pure boy to be wed in accordance with Heaven’s will, in a place where God can be joyful. Such a person is lucky in front of all heaven and earth. He is a successful person in all matters in the course of human life on earth. If you cannot do that, you must repent earnestly to the point where your stomach hurts, your heart turns over, and heaven and earth are turned upside down. We say to God, with a clean body and mind, “Father, what should I do with this shameful body of mine?” The Father says, “I know your heart. It is my joy that I can forgive even worse than you have done, and that you overcame such painful obstacles.” You must participate in the Blessing with the attitude of receiving the power of Heaven’s compassion within you, telling you that God knows everything you have done but is forgiving you. This is the principled attitude to have. (157-344, 1967.10.16)

Section 3. Rebirth through Blessed Marriage

1 In the Garden of Eden, Adam and Eve were supposed to become one body with God, in both spirit and flesh. However, because Adam and Eve could not become one body with God and lost the position of True Parents, people have to be born again through the body of the True Parents, with God as the center. In the Bible, Jesus told Nicodemus, “Very truly, I tell you, no one can see the kingdom of God without being born from above.” Then Nicodemus asked, “How can anyone be born after having grown old? Can one enter a second time into the mother’s womb and be born?” (John 3:3- 4) People must be born again. You have to deny your old self and be born again. So in order to be born again, you must deny your old self. If you do not deny yourself, you cannot prepare the motivation within yourself to be born again. (24-326, 1969.09.14)

Rebirth and change of lineage

2 Fallen people were unable to be born with a direct blood relationship with God. If we do not acknowledge this, make a new relationship with God and return to our original position, we cannot advance to the position of receiving the Blessing. In other words, because we were born in the fallen world of death, in order for us to return to a God-centered life, we have no choice but to be reborn. We have to be born again. (30-165, 1970.03.22)

3 To be reborn, you need to love Jesus more than anyone else. There is no way to connect to God unless your love, centered on God, is greater than the love established in the shadow of satanic love in the fallen realm, and surpasses the love in Satan's world. This is the path of suffering, the difficult path that religious people must follow. Christians long for Jesus every day and are waiting impatiently for him to come again. For two thousand years they cried out to Heaven, "Jesus, our bridegroom, please come quickly!" When they reach the point at which their bodies are ready to burst, their hearts are being torn, their bones are melting and they do not know if their spirit is inside their body or outside—the point at which only God or Jesus can be present—then the Holy Spirit will enter them and bring them spiritual rebirth as spiritual babies. (114-028, 1981.05.14)

4 What is the ultimate purpose of the Blessing? It is to realize a true family. This is the greatest purpose sought by fallen people. For this true family to form, there must first be a true person. That true person should be none other than a true man. This true man will seek out a true woman and they will have their Holy Wedding with God as the center. Then for the first time a true family can emerge. Because of the Fall, this did not come to pass and so we must deny all families that have been created up until now. Following God's providential Will, we must move beyond that fallen family standard. From a Divine Principle point of view, if fallen people cannot achieve this they will not be able to return to the original world. It must be clearly understood that fallen people, no matter who they are, cannot stand before God if they do not fulfill this formula course. (35-214, 1970.10.19)

5 You do not connect to God's heart through theory. You can be connected only through the lineage. Did you inherit the lineage of God's heart? Up to this point you have not understood. That is why, before you receive the Blessing, there is a ceremony for the change of lineage. At that time you must enter into a state of selflessness in which you are nothing. You must assume the position of someone without a body of his or her own and have the conviction that enables you to say, "I am the starting point from which all my descendants will inherit the flesh and blood of the True Parents." (180-159, 1988.08.22)

6 God takes people living in the realm of Satan's false love and gives them rebirth through His greater love. People are born to parents of false love; they are born from ancestors of false love into a lineage of false love. They can become God's children and God's people only after being born again through parents of true love, ancestors of true love and a lineage of true love. Human beings must be born again. This is the path of destiny for fallen humans. No matter what kind of difficulties we

may face, we must go this course. God's work of salvation is His work of giving rebirth, thereby grafting His lineage into us. Therefore I must completely deny all the things that are part of me from my past—in other words, my concept of possession, my tradition, my consciousness—all of these things. Things we already have inside us cannot be recognized by God as they are now. When we graft a tree, we cut everything but the root portion, then graft on the new shoot. Similarly, we have to first cancel everything, get rid of it all, and then be reborn. (135-013, 1985.08.20)

7 All people desire to attend True Parents. Although six thousand years ago Adam and Eve should have been blessed in holy marriage and humankind should have become God's descendants, the Fall made people Satan's descendants. Therefore on this earth we must re-establish the True Parents, who are on the side of Heaven and who were lost six thousand years ago. We must be reborn through connecting with True Parents' love. Only then can we become citizens of the kingdom of heaven. (19-203, 1968.01.07)

8 The Fall occurred through the wrongful marriage in the Garden of Eden. Now the time has come for True Parents to overturn this by marrying people in the right way. Through cleaning up the terrible things that false parents have perpetrated, the True Parents are eliminating hell and giving the Blessing to the millions and billions of ancestors in the spirit world. They are recovering the proper true love, true life and true lineage in order to actualize the true father-son relationship. (316-244, 2000.02.13)

9 As for an adopted son, he should receive engrafting by a true son. The wild olive tree must be cut off, and then the shoot of the true olive tree can be engrafted onto it. We have to take part in a movement to convert all wild olive trees into true olive trees. To be reborn, you need to inherit the lineage of True Parents. That is why Jesus and the Holy Spirit yearned to consummate the marriage feast of the Lamb and why the whole of humanity hopes for True Parents. (19-164, 1968.01.01)

10 The Messiah separates you from Satan's lineage, but you must take the steps that permit Satan's lineage to be removed. In that position you have to unite with the Messiah and be selfless in front of him. Unless we establish this standard, we cannot be saved. You have to pass through the place of life and death. For the evil lineage to be removed we have to go through that adversity. We have to enter a state where life and death meet each other. We have to grope through that state of death on our path. (35-160, 1970.10.13)

11 Throughout history no one could change the fallen lineage, but I have succeeded. That is why I have borne a tearful cross of the heart. Because I have that holy standard, you received the Blessing without having any merit. You received a new lineage through the Blessing. The victorious right to change lineage was achieved through my life of labor in the physical world, based on God's thousands of years of travail. You are the people who stood on that, using God and me as a

stepping-stone. To receive the Blessing is to be cut off from the lineage of evil and to be newly grafted. When you are engrafted, your lineage is changed. (35-179, 1970.10.13)

12 Why do you need True Parents? It is so you can put down your roots in the realm of heart. At this point your root is different. Due to the Fall, your trunk and branches are not what they should be. The Unification Church is putting down new roots starting from the True Parents, and a trunk and branches are appearing and are then grafted. Branches of True Parents are cut and grafted onto you so that the Unification Church will become the central mainstream of the universe. We must cut off everything that is of Satan's world. (164-156, 1987.05.10)

Ceremonies to change the lineage

13 First there is the matching ceremony, then the holy wine ceremony, followed by the marriage ceremony. The matching ceremony, the holy wine ceremony and the marriage ceremony are unprecedented among all ceremonies of the past. That is because they symbolically represent and indemnify every aspect of the Fall. (35-215, 1970.10.19)

14 Fallen people cannot receive the Blessing unless they repudiate all their past loves defiled with the false love of Satan's world. They cannot participate unless they become resurrected beings who can multiply the love of True Parents based on the love of God. On that basis, the holy wine ceremony promises the achievement of a standard of new life by opening the gates of True Parents' love. (35-217, 1970.10.19)

15 The holy wine ceremony is carried out in the reverse order of the Fall of Adam and Eve. Adam and Eve were still in the state of engagement when they fell. Before you can marry there must be an engagement ceremony, and then a holy wine ceremony. Only then can you attend the wedding ceremony. Because you are fallen, you have been unable to become God's sons and daughters. Through the engagement ceremony, however, you present yourselves before God and True Parents, who have been trying to reclaim their children, and you say, "I became an Adam or Eve who is better than a fallen child." (120-184, 1982.10.13)

16 Because we received Satan's blood, we must have a ceremony to cut it off. That ceremony is the holy wine ceremony. From a principled viewpoint, it is absolutely impossible for us to receive the Blessing from God if we allow any stains from the blood of Satan's world to remain in us. Not only must we eliminate all the blood that we received from Satan's world but also all the sins that occurred up until now. There are many kinds of sin, such as hereditary, historical and individual sins, but the one thing that makes a condition to settle all of them is the holy wine ceremony. The holy wine includes twenty-one different substances. Each of them has been sanctified. Each of them was established through victorious conditions set during my confrontations with the spirit world, with Satan and with God. It may

seem that drinking a cup of holy wine is a trivial gesture, but that is not the case. On the day you drink that cup with faith, you will stand on the foundation of True Parents' victorious conditions, cut off from the blood of Satan's world and cut off from all the ties you have with the sins of your ancestors and from all the tangled connections your ancestors wove. (113-300, 1981.05.10)

Section 4. The Significance of the Blessing Groups

1 If you receive the Blessing of the Unification Church, your domain will expand because, with God as your focus, you will begin forming a family of the new mainstream. Therefore families that receive the Blessing in the Unification Church consider other such families to be members of their own tribe. After connecting to new parents, known as the True Parents, families that have inherited the innermost heart of the heavenly principles emerge and multiply horizontally. What this means is that within the Unification movement a tribe is being formed that will later expand to become a people and eventually a nation. (100-268, 1978.10.22)

2 Blessed families must form a new nation of Israel. That began in 1960 and continues to expand. We are starting over again. From here the historical age will go forward to the ages of family, tribe, people, nation and world. Therefore in the Unification Church, I, who am similar to Jacob, must create a family and then organize a tribe and a people. (81-110, 1975.12.01)

3 Families that were joined together centering on my family are part of a new clan. As the clan continues to prosper day by day, it becomes a new people. When it develops a bit more, it forms a nation and a global realm. It becomes a new people, a Third Israel. The Unification Church is the place that allows people to become children who have newly inherited the right of lineage, thanks to God. The place we must stand is different than where the people of this world are. I have taught you the contents that will allow you to block Satan's accusations and establish a base for victory. It's problematic for you to receive the Blessing, because you have not even risen to the standard of the completion level of the growth stage. The Fall was when one man and one woman were cast out. Therefore, to receive the Blessing, a man and woman must go beyond the state of being unwelcome. The Blessing is what is received after you have overcome that state. (22-198, 1969.02.02)

The providential meaning of the 36 couples, the 72 couples and the 124 couples

4 The work of Heaven is to organize a people, beginning with a tribe. The formation of the tribe began in earnest with True Parents' Holy Wedding and the Blessing ceremonies I held in the 1960s. I am speaking of the 36 couples and the 72 couples. The 36 couples represent the restoration of the ancestors of the people of Israel, the history of Judaism. They are the representatives of the ancestors. (110-120, 1980.11.10)

5 The 72 couples stand in front of the 36 couples and all the other families as the Cain and Abel families in relation to Adam's family. Up to this point, all the ancestors who have influenced this age have failed to unite Cain and Abel within God's providence. Because the base through which Cain and Abel could be united was not formed, this era of the fallen world has been prolonged. Therefore I blessed the 72 couples centered on the 36 couples, making one ancestral family connecting Cain families and Abel families. (110-121, 1980.11.10)

6 If we consider the twelve apostles to be at the level of a tribe, the 72 disciples of Jesus were at the level of a people and the 120 disciples were at the level representing a nation. The Unification Church must indemnify, rectify, liberate and accomplish the historical content of Jesus' incomplete mission. Unless the coming Lord can accomplish this, there is no way for the world to survive. That is why I organized the 36 and 72 couples; through the unity of these couples the center of a new people can be established. (110-122, 1980.11.10)

7 The 36 couples represent the ancestors who lived during the two thousand years from the time of Adam to Abraham. That is why there must be Cain and Abel in front of the 36 couples. The 72 couples were thus designated to occupy these positions. The 124 couples were set up to represent all numbers, based on the number twelve. Of the 124 couples, four couples were already married. Their Blessing was for the purpose of recovering the position fallen people had lost and realizing the family God has searched for throughout history, which Jesus tried to establish. (17-216, 1967.01.01)

8 On the foundation of my family, I gave the Blessing to three couples. Then I gave the Blessing to 36 couples, then 72 couples and 124 couples centering on groups of twelve couples that, in turn, centered on those original three couples. I gave them the Blessing after experiencing historic battles. These couples represent the 3 disciples, 12 apostles, 70 disciples and the 120 followers that were established based on their faith in Jesus. Just as Jesus became the victorious leader on behalf of his Father in the position of the Son of God, all of you must also fulfill your responsibilities in the position of a son. (22-163, 1969.02.02)

9 In the position that represents a nation and people, we are going through an exhaustive process. Through this, a final, decisive battle must be won on the borderline between life and death. In the 1960s, on the foundation of True Parents' Holy Wedding, we developed from the 36 couples to the 72 couples and on to the 124 couples. Based on the first three couples, I selected the 36 couples to represent the three ages, each group of twelve for one age. They represent the Old, New and Completed Testament Ages. The number twelve should not just represent the horizontal foundation. As it is also necessary from a vertical viewpoint to establish a base that connects to the spirit world, the 36 couples were set as the foundation for the ancestors in the spirit world to come to earth again. The 72 couples and 124 couples are connected to this. (100-171, 1978.10.14)

10 The 72 couples were selected from the clans as those who could organize a people to represent Heaven. Just as Moses prepared a foundation to lead the people based on the seventy-two elders, I also had to develop such a group from the realm of the clan to the realm of the people. That was possible only through the family. It is always through the family that God works. Then what do the 124 couples signify? Jesus went to heaven on the foundation of the 120 followers. So at Pentecost the 120 followers joined together to make a global beginning. This signified that the Lord would return during the Last Days at a time when there would be at least 120 nations in the world. We therefore had to establish, in front of Heaven, 120 families who represented the elder brother family on the world level and to prepare that foundation on the earth. I added four couples to that and gave the Blessing to 124 couples. (100-172, 1978.10.14)

11 According to the providential viewpoint, Jesus would have been able to accomplish the Will of God on earth if 120 nations had rallied to him, based on the foundation of seventy-two families representing one people. It is the responsibility of the Unification Church and of the families that received the Blessing of the Unification Church to resolve this by paying indemnity. With the achievement of the Blessing of 124 couples, I selected holy grounds throughout the world in 1965. Responding to the Will of God, I established the 36 couples and then the 72 couples, making them the central people on the national level. I then laid the foundation to bless 120 couples, representing all the nations of the world. As a result, we are now in a position to manage the world's nations. Since we are entering such a time, I selected 120 holy ground sites in forty nations around the world. (84-145, 1976.02.22)

12 The 36 couples represent the resurrected ancestors of fallen humanity; the 72 couples represent the resurrected sons and daughters of the ancestors; and the 124 couples represent the resurrected people of the world. It follows then that if all these couples are fully united, the families, the sons and daughters and the world will also be united. That is why I will take responsibility for all couples up to the 124 couples. From now on, your way of thinking should be the same as mine. In order to realize one world, we must first rescue one nation; in order to rescue one nation, we must mobilize our tribe. For example, if you are a Moon, you must mobilize the Moon tribe. We must save the people of Korea by mobilizing each of our tribes. (82-245, 1976.01.31)

The 430 couples represent the Korean people

13 After selecting holy grounds throughout the world, I gave the Blessing to 430 couples. These couples correspond to the 430 years during which the Jews were in Egypt and to the 4,300 years of Korean history. They signified the beginning of a new history. Moreover, the 430 couples represent all the families of the world. Afterward, while I was carrying out my second world tour, I blessed a total of forty-three couples in the United States, Europe and Japan. I could then connect those 43 couples to the 430 couples on the world level. In so doing, I was able to connect the

victorious foundation established in Korea to the world, including the West. All the world's families, not just the members of the Unification Church, could right then and there receive heavenly fortune. (52-131, 1971.12.26)

14 The 430 couples correspond to the 4,300 years of Korean history. After 430 years, the Israelites were able to escape from Egypt. The 430 couples, representing 4,300 years, must forge a new beginning as the Israelites did, based on the earthly foundation of the number forty- three. They must expand the territory in which the nation and people can be established according to God's Will. If we consider the number 43, adding 4 and 3 makes 7, and when you multiply these two numbers you arrive at 12. The 430 couples were blessed in Korea according to this principle. Just as the Israelites were liberated after 430 years and began their exodus, migrations occurred within the Unification Church. Thus people from Jeolla Province moved to Gangwon Province, and people from Gangwon moved to Jeolla. A great mobilization was thus begun through which people from different provinces intermingled. (58-061, 1972.06.06)

15 The fact that I blessed the 430 couples signifies that the gate through which we can carry out the mission on the world level has been opened. After you attain that goal on the world level, you can then be in the position to become messiahs on the tribal level. As blessed families, you are not in the same position as the crucified Jesus. That is because you have received the Blessing. For the sake of restoring your tribe, you are in the position of the returned Jesus. (52-194, 1971.12.28)

The Blessings of 777, 1800, 6000 and 6500 couples

16 The history of the large wedding ceremonies starts with the 3 couples, and then continues to the 36 couples, the 72 couples, the 124 couples, the 430 couples, the 777 couples and the 1800 couples. We are now living in an era in which the gates have been opened so that any nation in the world can enter the realm of God's Blessing. I therefore held Blessings for international couples with the United States, Germany and Japan as the main nations. Through the Blessing of the 777 couples in 1970, the time finally came in which any nation could come within the realm of God's providence. (84-148, 1976.02.22)

17 In the 1970s there was a great mobilization. Blessed families from more than ten nations were called to Korea for the restoration of Canaan. They were called to Korea and gathered together as one. It started with the Blessing of the 777 couples. (69-298, 1974.01.01)

18 With the Blessing of 777 couples, we entered the era of marriage that transcends race. Thus the Unification Church is not a church centered only on Korea. Through the Blessing of 777 couples, I have already laid the national foundation by connecting the people of the world together. This Blessing marks the beginning of a new era transcending races and tribes in which a new nation of the

world can be formed. From that time, the Unification Church began its work worldwide. (100-174, 1978.10.14)

19 I have already opened the gates to the kingdom of heaven for all tribes in Korea. These gates must not be blocked. The gates cannot be closed, because universal love rooted in God is the love of the whole. All the gates must therefore remain open. Everything expands from there, from the 430 couples and then the 777 couples. Through them we can stand on the world level. We are going beyond the national stage and entering the world stage. (291-295, 1998.03.18)

20 The fact that the Blessing has been given signifies that the realm of heavenly lineage has come into existence on the earth springing from the True Parents. Many tribes are included in that realm. With Korea as the center, all kinds of tribes are incorporated within that realm. The gates to that realm were opened through the Blessings of the 430 and 777 couples. (164-166, 1987.05.14)

21 Satan perpetrated the Fall centered on the family, so I bound families to the realm of Gods dominion; through that I am developing an international movement. I am doing so through the 777 couples and the 1800 couples. The 1800 couples complete the creation of this movement. The number 18 comes from Satan's number 6 multiplied by 3, representing formation, growth and completion. The fact that I have rescued 1800 couples from Satan's world signifies that I have gone beyond the realm of the tribe. The victory I achieved on the national level is the starting point of the path to the world level. The 1800 couples are three times the number six hundred, which represents the realm of Satan's dominion. Established on this basis, the 1800 couples' standard indemnifies the families in Satan's realm. (190-275, 1989.06.19)

22 The Blessing of 1800 couples, conducted on the global level, signifies that we have laid the foundation leading toward a global standard. So what are the 1800 couples? The number eighteen is the sum of three sixes. The number of couples corresponds to this and represents our gaining complete supremacy over Satan's world. Having laid the global foundation, we can conclude that we have entered the era in which we can move the nation and the world according to God's Will. (81-112, 1975.12.01)

23 Through the 6000 couples, Christians in the vertical, Abel position and non-Christian peoples in the Cain position worldwide were connected. The fact that I made these connections through the 6000 couples means that the era of Satan's world attacking the family has passed. The spiritual standard of the growth stage has been established on the national level. In establishing the global standard, since the spiritual foundation of Christianity works as the global foundation, the substantial global standard had to be connected to the Christian cultural sphere. To do this, I went to the United States and carried out revival activities nationwide. Wherever I went I was welcomed. In this manner I connected this foundation in

America to Korea as the representative of the national standard. That was how I returned victoriously to Korea. (190-275, 1989.06.19)

24 Through the 6000 couples, even those in prison or hell were able to be gathered together. The number six thousand opened the gates not only to the Cain world but even to hell on earth and in the spirit world. The 6000 couples opened those gates. Since we opened the gates, everything came to light worldwide. The gates of heaven have been opened to any person, even those who are in hell, so all is now open for everyone. (281-044, 1997.01.02)

25 I blessed Japanese and Korean people, 6500 couples, in cross-cultural marriages. Japanese received their Korean partners and Koreans received their Japanese partners. I had been telling those in charge of the Japanese Unification Church for a long time that I would marry elite Japanese and Korean couples. (203-278, 1990.06.27)

26 It is very meaningful that there have been intercultural marriages between Korean people, representing the Adam nation, and Japanese people, representing the Eve nation. Through such cross-cultural marriages, we are connecting a unified family that goes beyond the national dimension. We have transcended the national level and passed to the age of the world level. Up to this point, the nation has been the issue. Satan has ruled based on nations. The issue of how this national standard can be implemented on the family level, allowing for the unification of Japan and Korea, will be resolved by creating a system focusing on the second generation who can unite through their families. That is why the cross-cultural marriage Blessing of the 6500 couples is important. God wished to convey heavenly fortune through Korea; but because Korea did not uphold the will of Heaven, Satan's world invaded, splitting Korea into north and south. This has become a major problem for the whole world. Since the nation was divided, we cannot return to the original homeland unless Korea's fortunes are realigned toward reunification. In connection with this, I performed the cross-cultural marriage of representatives of the Adam and Eve nations, and thus we could surpass the national standard at least conditionally on the family level. (194-117, 1989.10.17)

27 The Koreans and the Japanese who accepted to be married cross-culturally are neither Japanese nor Korean. They are even more than just Asian. From the perspective that they now possess a teaching great enough to lead their own nations, the spouses who have moved to the other's country must be willing to pioneer even China. I am tying Koreans and Japanese into realms of oneness as Adams and Eves in order to dispatch them to the land of the original hometown and thus lay a foundation through which I can embrace the world. That is how this history is unfolding. (234-092, 1992.08.04)

The Blessings of 30,000,360,000 and 3.6 million couples

28 In 1992, the Blessing of 30,000 couples was held on the international level. In 1952, the global Blessing could have been given worldwide centering on the Parents, but the opportunity had been lost. Forty years later, however, we entered the era of global Blessings, and the Blessing of 30,000 couples took place at the formation stage of the global age. (275-282, 1996.01.01)

29 The Blessing of 30,000 couples in 1992 was the formation stage of the international level. Participants put aside everything, including race and culture. Marriage was made by God for the sake of Adam and Eve's love. Adam and Eve embraced Satan and denied Heaven, so you are restoring this through indemnity by affirming the Blessing centering on God and centering on True Parents. (277-136, 1996.04.07)

30 On April 10, 1992, I gave the Blessing to people of eight different nationalities, including Muslims, thereby setting the condition for Muslim unity. Not one of those people—including the Muslims—denied the Blessing. The Blessing of 30,000 couples also was a truly international Blessing. Chinese people and North Korean young people even, were attracted by the Blessing, so they also participated. There were even some people who stopped believing in communism in order to receive the Blessing. This signifies my having given the Blessing on the world level. (243-247, 1993.01.17)

31 It is a happy occasion worthy of cosmic history when thirty thousand couples from among the young people of the world gather in one place to marry. It is an occasion greater than when entire kingdoms celebrate the marriages of their princes and princesses. People from 131 nations participated in the Blessing of 30,000 couples. Even though some people may want to deny it, it was truly a global event. It was at the world level! (234-281, 1992.08.27)

32 The Blessing of 30,000 couples was an international Blessing. With Father and Mother standing as equals for the first time, this was the formation-stage International Holy Wedding Ceremony for the purpose of planting True Parents' victorious authority in nations of the world. The Blessings that followed were the growth-stage International Holy Wedding of 360,000 couples and the completion-stage International Holy Wedding of 3.6 million couples. From the time of the 30,000 couples, I had opened the way for anyone to receive the Blessing, regardless of religion or ethnicity. After passing successfully through the growth period, through the Blessing of 360,000 couples, our intention through the Blessing of 3.6 million couples is to bequeath the Blessing even to people with no religious belief, to set them on equal footing. (280-216, 1997.01.01)

33 In this era we are progressing beyond the Blessings of the 30,000, 360,000 and 3.6 million couples and finally reaching the standard of a global liberated realm. I have now begun to cheer "Mansei!" Up to this point, my life has been miserable. I have walked the path of death, gritting my teeth, in order to usher in the day when everything under Heaven could rejoice. Four thousand years of history would

normally have taken four hundred years to indemnify, but since I cannot live for four hundred years, imagine how serious my heart is. I had to put my life on the line to accomplish my task within forty years. (289-081, 1997.12.30)

34 I am conducting a worldwide campaign to prepare the framework for the global realm of True Parents. That is why I am conducting Blessing ceremonies for 30,000, 360,000 and 3.6 million couples. We have passed through the formation and growth stages. The fact that we have gone past the growth stage signifies that we have gone beyond the national level. We have come to a time when we can recover the realm of Israel, lost in Jesus' time. The time when we can recover the lost nation has now arrived. We have now entered the time of recovering a family, tribe, people and nation that are one with True Parents. I am saying that we are now moving on to a time of royal authority. (277-288, 1996.04.19)

35 The marriage of 3.6 million couples is the completion of the formation, growth and completion stages. By passing through the Blessings of 30,000 and 360,000 couples, we have reached the completion stage. In terms of water level, imagine the tide that comes in over a six-hour period and goes out again by the time twelve hours have passed. The high tide six hours earlier and the high tide six hours later reach an equal level. And the tide that comes in later, which replaced the tide that came in first, can be said to be in front. Like this, we have entered the era of equalization. (282-182, 1997.03.12)

36 Based on our blessed families, we are expanding globally. By forming a global domain of families based on the 30,000, 360,000 and 3.6 million couples, we have entered an age in which God can live on this earth without having to go through the vertical and horizontal eight stages. Not only God Himself but also God's family and the True Parents' family can settle on earth. I therefore declared the Cosmic Sabbath for the Parents of Heaven and Earth. The age in which the Unificationist families of the world can move without hindrance and be welcomed wherever they go is an age in which God can rest wherever He goes. (287-108, 1997.09.01)

37 In order to surmount the final obstacles in the world-level providence, the national messiahs must lead the effort to accomplish the Blessing of 3.6 million couples. When we are victorious in giving the Blessing to 3.6 million couples, the newly blessed couples in each nation will become the foundation upon which the national messiahs can influence the cabinet ministers of that nation. UN ambassadors should be urged to support the idea that the United Nations needs to follow the guidance of the True Parents and work toward establishing the Women's UN and the Youth UN. Each nation joining the Women's UN, the Youth UN and the Student UN, will represent the unity of the Father, the Mother and Cain and Abel. At that point we will start to see the unfolding of one unified world. (282-037, 1997.02.16)

38 Based on the family, we must go beyond the world level. In order to achieve that, the Unification Church has been carrying out large wedding ceremonies.

Starting with the 36 couples and based on the number ten, we blessed the 30,000 couples, then the 360,000 couples and then the 3.6 million couples in order to go over the peak. I'm saying we have gone beyond the turning point. It was difficult to reach that point, but now all the gates of the Blessing have been opened to the world. By widening and raising the horizontal standard through the 3.6 million couples, the vertical standard has also risen proportionally. Just as the Blessing is given beyond tribal, ethnic or national groups, the heavenly world and even the realm of the archangels will all receive the Blessing. (286-167, 1997.08.09)

The Blessing of 360 million couples

39 If Adam had not fallen but had instead received the Blessing, that would have been a historic, cosmic Blessing. However, due to the Fall, humankind was separated from God, so families in the world today are unable to receive the grace of the Blessing on the universal level. In order to recover that which was lost in Adam's family through the Fall, the 360 million couples Blessing will be held in order to stand in a position equal to that which was lost, on the worldwide level. (287-143, 1997.09.14)

40 There were twelve peaks to surmount—passing through the formation, growth and completion stages—up to and including the Blessing of 360 million couples. I never retreated from that path after I completed the 40 million couples Blessing. As a result, everything was made level. That is why there are 400 million blessed couples. The Blessing of 360 million couples was one of equalization—the Blessing of equalization for all citizens of the world. (302-132, 1999.06.12)

41 Now that the Realm of the Cosmic Sabbath for the Parents of Heaven and Earth has been proclaimed, God can come to the earth. Thus now is the time for a great worldwide Blessing to take place through which all the foundations of families and tribes can be connected. We need to sever Satan's bloodline, manifested in all humanity, by blessing the 3.6 million, 36 million and 360 million couples. Not one person of Satan's bloodline should be left behind. (288-065, 1997.10.31)

42 Once the Blessing of 360 million couples is complete, I will no longer conduct Blessing ceremonies. From that time on, parents will bless their own children. This will be known as the era of the liberation of the realm of the fourth Adam. There will be no indemnity. The first and second Adams failed in the Old Testament and New Testament Ages respectively. Even in the Completed Testament Age, we have been persecuted, but now we are entering the realm of liberation. We are entering the original world before the Fall, the age of the liberated realm of the fourth Adam. That's why parents who are not fallen can bless their own sons and daughters. Because they have become couples who have inherited the internal and external ideal created by God, the parents can bless their children. The parents stand in the position of True Parents. The world will thus inevitably become one. (290-168, 1998.02.18)

43 Blessing 360 million couples will demolish all the walls that create blocks in our world. The walls of Satan's world around individuals, around families, around tribes, peoples, nations, around the world, around the cosmos and even around the realm of God's heart will all be demolished. (292-055, 1998.03.28)

The significance of Blessing ceremonies for already married couples and single people

44 Among those couples who were already married before receiving the Blessing are people who married by their own choice. Then there are those men and women who had love relationships but didn't marry. In the free world of today, I must save all those who have not formed families. Already married couples must be saved, as well as all those who could not form families and have gone the wrong way in their love relationships. After that, the direct children must be saved. It was the 36 couples who paved the way to make it possible to open the gates of the Blessing for everyone. Among them there are three types of couples: Adam-type couples, Noah-type couples and Jacob-type couples. Of these types, the Adam couples are the already married couples. Originally, the Lord at his Second Advent—the True Parent—was to have nothing to do with couples who were already married. However, those already married couples were born of the body of Adam before the Fall, and the Lord who comes as the perfect Adam cannot abandon what was born of Adam's body. (242-102, 1993.01.01)

45 The people standing at the stage of imperfection, even fallen people, are sons and daughters of Adam. They are in the position to be returned to the heavenly side. That is why the perfected Adam must appear on the earth and bring all fallen people to a position equivalent to that before the Fall. All humanity can thus escape from Satan's realm. The already married couples are in a position of Adam's family that has formed a love relationship without committing the Fall. (242-104, 1993.01.01)

46 From now on, the Unification Church should bless those in the Cain position. This is the time to bless couples who are already married. Those who married by themselves must receive the Blessing; otherwise, they cannot go to Heaven. Because people married in the wrong way, they fell. People are destined to go to hell through wrongful marriage based on false love, false life and false lineage from false parents. To reverse that, the True Parents must come and marry them in the proper way. That is what the Blessing is all about. It is not only on the level of Korea but on the cosmic level; it transcends racial boundaries. (274-285, 1995.11.03)

47 You must become tribal messiahs. The already married couples cannot imagine how precious is the term tribal messiah. Nothing can be done without tribal messiahship. Therefore all of you should bring up your children and do all you can to have them receive the Blessing. Then your grandchildren will be in a perfected position before God. Through these third-generation children, you need to ask God to forgive your ancestors. (31-283, 1970.06.04)

48 The already married couples, the newly blessed couples and my family need to come together to rescue this nation. Only when the nation is recovered can Jesus' desire be fulfilled. If Jesus' heart is not freed from all the pain over what he could not accomplish, the grief of the Son of God cannot be eased. If the grief of the Son is not eased, God's bitter grief cannot be eased either. Would there be any way to relieve the heart of the Parent? The grief of the Son must be eased first. Jesus came as God's Son on the global level, centering upon one nation. The grief and bitter pain in his heart must be relieved. (58-196, 1972.06.11)

49 If you couples who are already married cannot outperform those who were blessed while still single, you will not be able to uphold the dignity of already married blessed couples. Was there such a thing as the Blessing of already married couples in the Garden of Eden or within God's Will? In order to save you, I have opened the gates through which everything ragged and false can be patched up. This became possible through the inclusion of already married couples in the 36 couples Blessing. (101-286, 1978.11.07)

50 It is wonderful grace to be able to receive the Blessing as a couple on earth rather than as a single person. Originally it would not have been possible to receive the Blessing as a single person. The Blessing in the Garden of Eden meant there should be a man in front of a woman and a woman in front of a man. It is a principle of the ideal of creation that a man and a woman should receive the Blessing from God. Thus the single Blessing is not normative. If you receive the Blessing as a single person, in the spirit world you will have the right to choose your own spouse. Ladies who receive the Blessing from me can choose a partner from among many men in the spirit world. So in the spirit world I have to do the ceremony again. We have permission to do this kind of thing only in the name of True Parents on earth. In the spirit world there have been no married couples until today. You can be married after being born as the children of True Parents, but those in the spirit world were not born as children of True Parents on earth. They were all born of the lineage of Satan's world. They must be engrafted by True Parents and become a family of a new lineage. Receiving the single Blessing is a condition for a future relationship between you who are on earth and your bride or bridegroom who is already in the spirit world. (101-307, 1978.11.07)

51 The time is coming when widows or widowers who have received the Blessing as single people on earth can be blessed with their spouse in the spirit world. In the era after we transcend the national and global levels, when they go to the spirit world they can finally be blessed with their spouse. Until now such things have been impossible. Those of you who received the Blessing for married couples lived separately for some time before being blessed. But from now on, married couples can remain together and receive the Blessing. Since this privilege has been granted on earth, when a married couple with one spouse on earth and the other in the spirit world receive the Blessing together, they stand united in an equal position. The one on earth therefore receives the Blessing with his or her partner in the spirit world. (284-167, 1997.04.16)

Section 5. Registration and the Responsibility of Blessed Families

1 True Parents are the center of each blessed family. In the Garden of Eden, there never was a family that lived with True Parents. It is for you to resolve this. To do so, you must absolutely follow the commands of True Parents. You cannot insist on your own opinion in front of True Parents. Only when your personal concepts disappear can True Parents settle within your family. If this does not come to pass, you cannot realize ideal families. This is not an idea I came up with; it is God's original concept of creation. (277-250, 1996.04.18)

2 Through fallen Adam and Eve, the eight members of Adam's family, including Cain, Abel, Seth and their spouses, all fell. Therefore we must proceed toward the completion stage by setting conditions of indemnity. This you must do while feeling your parents' love. Our lives originate in our parents' love. Only when you go through experiences that lead you to respect this value in life, more than anything else in the world, can you proceed to the new path. (35-234, 1970.10.18)

3 Individual perfection today is not the absolute and complete perfection of the individual but is a conditional perfection. You must understand that during the process of restoration, perfection is conditional. Even though people stand in the position of parents, they do not know the realm of God's heart. Husband and wife have not experienced the power of loving each other so much that they would never trade each other even for the entire universe. Families who have received the Blessing must bear in mind that until they cross over from this fallen realm, they are not in the realm of the perfected kingdom of heaven but the realm of conditional perfection. Once they pass into the spirit world, therefore, they need to go through certain formalities. Only after they pass through these formalities and are approved as having reached perfection can they receive their passports and enter the kingdom of heaven. (100-145, 1978.10.09)

4 The true freedom that God gave us comes with the precondition of responsibility. How much chaos and destruction would occur if people were to insist on and practice the freedom of love only as individuals, without fulfilling their responsibility? The perfection of human beings, who are destined to realize the lofty ideal of love, is possible only when they take responsibility for love. That responsibility has three components. The first responsibility is to become the master of the freedom of true love, knowing how to cultivate and control oneself and be truly grateful to God for granting the freedom to love. This responsibility for a love relationship should not be undertaken merely because of law or social convention. Instead, a person should take responsibility through self-control, self-determination and life in a vertical relationship with God. The second responsibility is toward one's object partner. By nature, people do not want to share the love of their partner with anyone else. The horizontal relationship between husband and wife is different from the vertical relationship between parents and children. When it is divided, its perfection is destroyed. This is because of the Principle of Creation, which is based on the absolute oneness of love between couples. People have the

responsibility to absolutely love their partner. The third responsibility is to love one's children. Parental love is the foundation of a child's pride and happiness. Children receive life from their parents, who have created harmonious oneness through true love, and they want to be raised in such love. The most precious responsibility toward children is not only to raise them externally, but also to provide the life elements of true love that will complete their spirituality. This is the reason the family is important. The heart of a true child, true brother and sister, true husband and wife and true parents can be experienced only in such true family life. (277-201, 1996.04.16)

5 If you use your reproductive organ in an aimless and directionless way, you will go to hell. But if you use it the opposite way, in accordance with God's absolute love, you will go to the high kingdom of heaven. This is a clear conclusion. Now we have a serious problem with youth. In the Garden of Eden, Adam and Eve fell through illicit love in their youth and planted the seed of free sex. In the Last Days, which is the time of harvest, the phenomenon of free sex among adolescents will be an expanding trend. (279-257, 1996.09.15)

6 If you use your love organ recklessly, you will be punished. Your love organ is the royal palace of love, the ancestral garden of love. Love, life, and even history begin from there. It is the origin of the kingdom of heaven on earth and in the spirit world. The origin of God's happiness and the basis for Him to laugh are found there. It is the very place where God can find love and dance with joy. You have to search for and find that place. (256-200, 1994.03.13)

7 Without a nation there can be no nationality, no foundation upon which you can be registered. We need to create a people and register anew. We have to establish the kingdom of God on earth and, as its citizens, love that kingdom and its people. We are to live on earth together with our tribes and family members as the victorious sons and daughters who have inherited the true lineage of the Parents of goodness. Only after doing so can we enter the kingdom of heaven in the spirit world. This is all according to the Principle. (058-145, 1972.05.22)

8 Once a woman is married, her name is entered into her husband's family register and removed from the register of her birth family. Everyone on earth has a hometown. When you are born, your birth is immediately registered in your hometown. You have proof that you are the child of a certain family and the citizen of a certain nation. As long as that nation exists, and as long as the child's parents are recorded, a child who is registered cannot be uprooted and sent away. (177-302, 1988.05.22)

9 A time will come when you will need to be registered. The era of registration is coming in which you will connect to the family of True Father, the royal family. However, even when the era of registration arrives, those who have been unable to restore their tribes will not be able to register. It is similar to the twelve tribes of Israel. You cannot register before you have restored your tribe. Once people come

to understand the need for the restoration of tribes, they will swarm to the Unification Church to become members. What then will happen at the time of registration? Until this time, nothing has belonged to God— neither people nor any of the things of creation. The True Father, who has fulfilled God's Will, must rescue all that Satan, through selfish love, came to possess. He must rescue God's sons and daughters and all things of creation. I do not have a nation at present. The nation therefore must be found. (208-339, 1990.11.21)

10 The time will come when you must be registered. Receiving the Blessing is not the same as being registered. The Blessing is only a symbolic registration. That is why we are seeking to recover the nation in which we can be registered. What kind of nation would it be? It would consist of a trinity: sovereignty representing parents, citizens representing children, and land representing all things of creation. In order for a nation to be established there must be sovereignty, citizenry and territory. The same principle is true for religion. (35-282, 1970.10.25)

11 Because of the Fall of the family of Adam and Eve, everything was registered in the name of Satan. Now, based on your families, your nations and everything in the world must be returned to God and registered in His name. This completely follows the Principle. The Fall occurred in the family. This must be indemnified. Since this principle exists, if there were a world president, he could bring his nations before God to be registered. On the day of registration, every nation would be saved. (184-096, 1988.12.20)

12 We have to be registered in the position of sons and daughters who can be loved eternally by God and True Parents. The registration will begin from this time forth. You will be registered in the Book of Life of the kingdom of God. A new form of registration has to take place centered on the new True Parentism and Godism. At the same time, the organization of tribes should take place. Corresponding to the twelve apostles of Jesus and the twelve tribes of Israel, we need to organize ourselves into tribes. (146-230, 1986.07.01)

13 The Blessing of the Unification Church is a church-level Blessing, not a national one. There are three stages to pass through to arrive at the world-level Blessing. After passing through the era of the church-level Blessing, the reunification of Korea brings about one nation, giving way to the era of the national-level Blessing centered on God's nation. After this comes the era of Blessing in which the physical and spiritual realms are united. We need to pass through these three eras of the Blessing. Originally these three should have been accomplished in the generation of Adam, but this did not occur and it has been postponed until the era of the returning Lord. This must be accomplished in True Father's time. By the year 20001 must give a global Blessing for everyone at once. That is how registration will be accomplished on a grand scale. (290-254, 1998.03.02)

14 The Blessing in the Unification Church goes through three stages: the church, national and world levels. That is why the blessed families of today must go beyond

their current position. Originally, liberated people should receive the Blessing without any indemnity conditions. However, we are caught by the need to offer indemnity conditions. Our church must face the nation, which is persecuting us, and beyond that, the world. We must overcome them all. Only after we overcome persecution and lead our families into the place of liberation, which is the unified world, can God bestow upon us the right of inheritance originally destined for Adam's family. Only then can there be true liberation. On that basis, there will be the realms of the church, the nation and the world. We must go beyond the realm of the restoration of worldwide kingship, leave the realm of Satan's accusation, and liberate the physical and spiritual realms. After we have risen to that position, we have to receive the Blessing. (285-236, 1997.06.05)

15 You cannot find the path of salvation through the ordinary, habitual lifestyle you have pursued up to this point. You must walk the path of complete indemnity. The providence of salvation is the providence of restoration, and the providence of restoration is the providence of re-creation. Thus in order to be re-created you must attain the original position untainted by the Fall—the zero point. At the original position, our concepts and habits, our surnames like Kim or Lee, will not exist. You must go to such a zero point. Viewed from God's original standard of 1 creation, every created being began from the zero point. (213-098, 1991.01.16)

16 Every one of you should stand in the position of practicing absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. The families in the Garden of Eden have nothing they can claim as their own. When they become true sons and daughters, standing in oneness with God and His absolute love, everything in the whole universe will belong to them. Once you have become one in love, everything will become yours. (300-304, 1999.04.11)

17 After receiving the Blessing you absolutely must not fall. What would happen if you fell? There would be no way to be saved, even by True Parents. Blessing means changing your lineage and inheriting the right of kingship that represents the ancestors of three ages. This blessed lineage must never be defiled for thousands and tens of thousands of years to come. We must not pass on the stained bloodline. You must keep your purity. This is a very serious matter. You will no longer be able to ask for forgiveness, saying, "Please forgive us in the name of True Parents." You must pass on a pure lineage. (332-292, 2000.09.24)

CHAPTER 3 Principles and Order in the Family

Section 1. Family Harmony Makes All Go Well

1 A family should consist of parents, a husband and wife, and children. Only then can there be a foundation for happiness. God's purpose in seeking to dwell with humanity is also for His own happiness. God's venturing forth to find a foundation of happiness, fulfilling His ideal, cannot take place apart from human beings. That point of connection can be found only through His relationship with us. Just as we

feel happy when everything we need for our emotional well-being is present in our family, God likewise longs to feel happy in such a setting. (32-198, 1970.07.15)

The family principle of three generations living together

2 The love of God is manifested as parental love, conjugal love and filial love. These three great loves make it possible for people to exist forever, transcending even the most elevated human view of love. This is why people feel joy when these three great loves are united. When they are fulfilled, happiness is also realized. When they are lacking, misfortune sets in. Are motherless people happy? The emptiness they feel translates into misery. Are fatherless people happy? Fatherless people envy those who have a father. Happiness, like love, has no room for envy. If you envy someone or something, you cannot say you are happy. (20-040, 1968.03.31)

3 The grandfather, grandmother, mother-in-law, father-in-law, sisters-in-law and grandchildren should all live together. Living together with God, the three generations corresponding to the formation, growth and completion stages will settle down. You can love God if you know how to love not only your father and mother but also your grandparents. You will be able to love God only when you place your grandparents above your father and mother and know how to love them in that position. So, why are spouses, parents, and sons and daughters indispensable? It is because you can attend God completely only when you have all the members of the family. It is a fundamental principle that you should have parents and sons and daughters. (128-018, 1983.05.29)

4 The grandfather and grandmother are the most experienced people in the world. They are the ones who resemble God the most. Because they are old, they do not sleep very long. So you should think, "Oh, my grandfather is like God, who protects my family without sleeping! My grandfather has become old by protecting us! I can see his age reflected in the wrinkles on his face." This means you should obey your grandparents. Isn't this beautiful? When the grandparents are not sleeping, they are praying, "God, bless my sons and daughters. Please bless them." While praying, they will guide you, saying, "My love, it is dangerous to go out today. Please listen to me." The universe protects those who try to live in the original, ideal way. When they love each other, the grandmother and grandfather dance, the mother and father dance, and the brothers and sisters dance. The universe protects those who live by this model. If someone were about to kill such a person, the universe would automatically prevent it. (107-327, 1980.06.08)

5 You must complete the four-position foundation by attaining perfect maturity as an individual, perfect unity as a couple, and the growth of your children to adulthood. Otherwise, what was meant to be achieved through the three generations of your family will be lost. Like a tree that buds in the spring, grows through the summer, and bears fruit in the autumn, we live our lives as children, couples and parents. When you have your own sons and daughters, you stand in a position equal to that of God. You can participate in His work; you can even kiss

Him. He will then bestow everything upon you, saying, "All that I have is yours." Whoever achieves the standard of the ideal that God desires to see can immediately inherit everything from Him. (393-206, 2002.10.04)

6 The place where the invisible God and substantial human beings unite is the origin. This origin begins with the family—God's family and True Parents' family. This family has to complete the four-position foundation. It should go through three generations—the grandfather's generation, father's generation and grandson's generation. Because of the Fall, God was unable to experience a family of three generations. We should establish a standard through three generations. When we find the standard centering on one mind, one body and one heart, which is the most vertical standard in the world, we need to connect it through three generations. (396-277, 2002.11.11)

7 Your family is the fruit of all the sacrifices of history. With material things representing the Old Testament Age, sons and daughters representing the New Testament Age, and you yourselves representing the Completed Testament Age, we have to repay the debts of these three ages. Since you are in the position to pay indemnity for these historical ages, do not treat your belongings, sons and daughters, or spouse as your own. Following this type of public law, this principle of Heaven, you should become men and women, grandfathers and grandmothers, fathers and mothers, husbands and wives, and sons and daughters who can adopt, evaluate and live according to a fundamental attitude that will lead you to complete oneness with the ideal. When these positions unite together, the family is formed. Unless we build a foundation of love upon which to inherit this ownership and right of dominion, our families cannot form the initial foundation for the kingdom of heaven on earth. (168-217, 1987.09.20)

Family harmony makes all go well

8 In the expression Ga hwa man saseong, which means "Family harmony makes all go well," the character hwa (和) means "to harmonize." On the other hand, in hwahak (chemistry), the character hwa (化) indicates substances harmonizing as their original essence changes. Yet the character hwa (和), as in the word il-hwa (one harmony), does not indicate a change in one's essence when harmony is made. So, whether you are a man or woman, you should harmonize with your partner without changing your essential self. Which is more valuable? Of the two, harmony without changing your original essence is better than harmony at the cost of changing your essence. The union of man and woman is a form of harmony. The unity between adult and child is a form of harmony. The unity between man and woman, old and young, not to mention front and back, right and left, and above and below, are all examples of harmony. All forms of harmony lead to prosperity. This is because harmony is the standard of ideal existence. Everything supports harmony and wants to attach itself to that which is in harmony. You can say that harmony leads to prosperity because it draws everything to unite with it. (173-243, 1988.02.21)

9 It is said that “Family harmony makes all go well.” Ideal relationships between the grandfather and grandmother, husband and wife, and brothers and sisters lead to success and prosperity. Nonetheless, the grandmother and grandfather should not love only each other; husband and wife should not love only each other, and brothers and sisters should not love only each other. Grandmother and son, son and son, daughter-in-law and son, vertically and horizontally, front and back, right and left—everyone should be in harmony. The character hwa means “to level.” In hwahak (chemistry), hwa refers to the unity of substances that change when they combine. But the hwa in the word for harmony implies no change in the essence of those who have achieved harmony. (196-303, 1990.01.12)

10 In the Orient we have the expression, “Family harmony makes all go well.” It means that if you want peace, you have to base it on love. This principle applies to the universe, to the East and West, and everywhere. Would you like to live in a home for the elderly? I do not like such places. Anywhere the parents go, the children should follow; the whole family needs to follow. I am concerned, however, that reality is not like this. If a family cannot live together, where can we find harmony in the world, and how can we live together in the kingdom of heaven? (167-125, 1987.07.01)

11 If someone who loves you very much helped you by giving you \$1,000, you would not want to repay a reduced amount, such as \$900. Rather, you would want to repay it many times over. The original mind is like that. What does this reveal? It explains that actions based on original love produce an output that is greater than the input. This logic is viable. Since we say, “Family harmony makes all go well,” we need to act on that principle. Action reduces the amount of available energy, so why does family harmony lead to an increase? The more you harmonize in love, and the more you invest in loving, nothing gets smaller; everything becomes bigger. (212-279, 1991.01.08)

12 When we say that family harmony makes all go well, we need to realize that harmony requires patience. We will likely go through many difficulties. The one who can deal well with such difficulties will become the central figure and responsible person. A true man does not change, and a true woman does not change either. When an absolutely unchanging man and woman appear, focused on true love, the whole universe will bow down to this couple. (142-335, 1986.03.14)

13 “When we say, “Family harmony makes all go well,” do you think we are talking about harmony coming about based on nuggets of gold? If you simply look at the gold nuggets and keep them locked up, family harmony may be possible. If you dispense them based on your own viewpoint, brawls will break out. However, if you dispense them with love, the more you dispense them, the more you will prosper. But the more you dispense things based on economic motives, the more people will fight over them. Unending divisions will result. But the more you dispense things based on love, the greater will be the unity, harmony and peace that will follow. In love, “Family harmony makes all go well,” as the saying goes. The father

loves the mother, the mother loves the father, parents love their children, and children love their parents—in this way, through harmony in love, everything prospers. (115-254, 1981.11.22)"

14 Looking at the world of life and the world of spiritual death reveals that although origin of death is Satan, the origin of life is God. The world centered on Satan is exactly the opposite of the world centered on God. Are families in the fallen world peaceful or are they in conflict? Because families in the fallen world began in conflict, families everywhere are in conflict. The world that began with conflict in the family, and is composed of families that are in conflict, is not the heavenly world. (44-135, 1971.05.06)

15 The saying "Family harmony makes all go well" is an excellent expression. If a husband goes to work after fighting with his wife at home, he will almost surely get into a fight at work. This is because he will feel the need to vent his anger. If the head of a company goes to the office after a fight at home, he or she will not feel good about the company's employees. Bad feelings that originate in the home certainly spread to the society. (44-134, 1971.05.06)

16 What is the most unbearable thing? It is resentment between loved ones. There is nothing harder to bear than that. Since the seed of conflict was sown in Adam's family, families that quarrel live in the fallen realm, while peaceful, harmonious families dwell in the heavenly realm. They are opposites. Discordant families are at the center of the fallen world. The center of the fallen world is evil. Disharmonious families fight every day. In such families, the father and mother are always in conflict. The husband and wife are in conflict. (44-134, 1971.05.06)

17 We need to be careful that our children do not say, "Mother and father had a fight." If your children say, "Mother and father fight all the time," you will surely go to hell, no matter how well you do otherwise. Our children should say, "My father is like God. He is God in our home. My father is the president of our family. He is the saint in our family and so is my mother." Long ago, the saints said that family harmony makes everything go well, but today the Unification Church advocates harmony with Heaven centering on the cosmos. Heavenly harmony makes everything go well. (101-041, 1978.10.28)

18 We say that family harmony makes all go well, but the Bible says, "Blessed are the peacemakers, for they will be called the children of God." (Matt. 5:9) It means that those who bring peace will be sons and daughters of God. If there were a messenger of peace in this world who was eliminating the causes of conflict, providing a base for unification, and leading a movement toward the one Lord, God would be compelled to pay attention to that person. Since God is the King of peace and the Owner of peace, He watches for the one who has a heart of peace. God has patiently borne tens of thousands of years of sorrow all alone, traveling a painful path by Himself. God has overcome everything alone from His difficult position, but He is not boastful and does not want to make this known, so He continues to

endure everything alone. If anyone were bravely walking the same way in front of God, God would surely notice. It would be impossible for Him to ignore such a person. (101-185, 1978.10.29)

19 There is an old saying, "Family harmony makes all go well," but do you think family harmony is possible without harmony within the individual? If our own integrity is on the verge of collapse, can we foster harmony in our family? If individuals had carried conflict within themselves from the very outset, those who would deny God's existence would be right. But our inner conflict came about because something went wrong. Ideologies such as materialism developed, with the wrong diagnosis of reality. The Absolute Being could not have designed people with conflicting purposes. There can be only a single purpose. However, we are incomplete. Since we have remained an incomplete product until now, the Absolute Being is exerting His power of re-creation to bring us to full maturity. Therefore, throughout history, God has invested in factories that remake people into completed products. Thus, whether people like it or not, new assembly lines need to appear. These are none other than religious organizations. (39-019, 1971.01.09)

20 "Before you try to master the universe, you must first master yourself.' This was my motto at the time I was pioneering the path of truth. I told everyone, "Before you try to gain dominion over the universe or connect with everything in the world, you must gain dominion over yourself." Our mind can become the true owner, true teacher, and true parent. When our body discovers such a mind and feels inadequate to attend this mind, even for tens of thousands of years, heavenly fortune will come to us. Our mind wants to live for the sake of our body, but our body doesn't want to serve our mind. That is the problem. (201-154, 1990.03.30)

21 The problem lies within the self, not within society. If there is a problem in my family, it is not because my elder brother is bad, my elder sister is bad, or my father is bad; it is because I am bad. I must first attain a certain standard before I can be in a position to criticize the standard of others. Only after attaining unity between my own original mind and my body can I proudly enter the one unified world. If my original mind and body are divided, how can I participate in a world where everything is harmonized? I would automatically retreat from it. Therefore, I should not allow my body to become my master. I should not allow my body to suppress or ignore my mind, to exhaust or distress it. I can be happy only when I control my body and direct it to serve my mind; then God will come and dwell within me. It is said that "Family harmony makes all go well." If I want peace in my family and within myself, I need to unite my mind and body. (201-154, 1990.03.30)

22 The universe resembles a sphere. In the solar system, the planets follow cyclical orbits. The enormous cosmos is also spherical, containing hundreds of millions of solar systems. That's why we say everything moves around and around. When we say, "Family harmony makes all go well," it means we need to move around and around in harmony. There should be harmony not just between the grandfather and grandmother; the grandfather and grandson also need to be in harmony,

children and parents need to be in harmony, and husband and wife need to be in harmony; everyone should live in harmony. When we live like that, everything will be fulfilled. When our lives move in cyclical motion, we create a sphere. We need to become well-rounded people. Sharp-edged people cause problems. That is because the universe is in motion. (198-291, 1990.02.05)

Section 2. Ideal Couples and the Parent-Child Relationship

1 When a bride and bridegroom are going to consummate their marriage after the wedding ceremony, they do not need to call their mother and father to teach them how to love each other. Even insects do well without being instructed. Then what should human beings, as the lords of creation, be taught? That which is covered with a veil of mystery should be unveiled only by those in the position of its owners. The original pattern of the dutiful path and of proper education never appeared, so we impart these in the Unification Church. One representative man and one representative woman, having mastered filial love for their parents and siblings' love for each other, must meet and become a perfected couple capable of loving all humanity. This universal man and woman, representing right and left, are united as one. Embodying the value of God's vertical love, they are bound together. (226-337, 1992.02.09)

Ideal conjugal love

2 True love travels along the shortest route. Vertical love travels to only one point, where the vertical axis meets the horizontal at ninety degrees. The shortest path is at 90 degrees, not 89 or 91 degrees. The vertical should go through that point. True love between man and woman should also go through that point. If you seek the shortest route, it will inevitably produce a ninety-degree angle. Love between siblings can also be expressed as a ninety-degree angle. No matter where you apply this principle, it works. No one loses out. In vertical, perpendicular love, heaven and earth become earth and heaven; father and mother become mother and father, and elder and younger brothers become younger and elder brothers. The ideal scene unfolds where everything can turn upside down, mingle together, and still fit perfectly. This explains why my grandparents love me, and why, as a testament to their love, I love my brothers and sisters. The home in which a husband and wife attend their parents and live together with their children is a home of love. A person who does not experience such a family home of love will not have such a home in heaven. (226-292, 1992.02.09)

3 The realization of a family kingdom of heaven will surely lead to the establishment of the kingdom of heaven on earth. Thus, Unification Church families need to realize the family kingdom of heaven. To experience it, you absolutely need a partner. Only through the stimulation you receive in your family and with your partner can you experience the ideal of the future heavenly kingdom in your daily life. Husband and wife need each other to learn this lesson and receive the stimulation that allows them to live eternally. Progress cannot come about without

stimulation. Conjugal love provides the stimulation required to build the ideal kingdom of heaven. In other words, conjugal love pulls future joy into the realm of the present, provides stimulation, and supplies the driving force to bring the couple to that kingdom. Because that love contains love for the nation, love for the world and love for God, it can move freely and universally. (37-109, 1970.12.22)

4 A woman should love one man, but she should love him as a representative of all men in the world. That man represents her father, elder brother, and younger brother. A woman should think of her husband as her father, grandfather, elder brother and younger brother. Through loving her father, her grandfather, and her elder and younger brothers, a woman becomes eligible to receive a partner. A woman should have the attitude of love for all the men in the world, and she should embrace and love her husband as the representative and fruit of all men. This shows her love for humanity. With the heart to love her husband as her father, elder brother and younger brother, and by transcending all nations and borders, a woman can be considered a daughter of God. (83-219, 1976.02.08)

5 What is a true husband? A true husband is one who says to his wife, "I was born for your sake and so I will live for you and die for you." The same applies to a true wife. If a husband and wife are responsive to each other, rise above their self-interest, and live for the sake of each other, their family will surely become an ideal family—a loving, happy and peaceful family. (77-106, 1975.04.01)

6 No matter how capable and talented a man may be, the purpose for his birth does not lie in himself. He was born for the sake of a woman. Conversely, no matter how beautiful a woman may be, even as a proud actress, she was not born for her own sake. Where, then, are the ideal husbands and wives of true love? When a husband thinks he was born for his wife, he will live for her and die for her, and he will appear as the ideal husband. The same is true for the wife. According to this principle, where can we find an ideal person—a happy, loving and good person? Such people cannot be found among those who live for their own sake, but only among those who live for the sake of others. (070-305, 1974.03.09)

7 Blessed families are to accomplish the standard that Adam and Eve failed to attain. They should connect with God's love at their center. By this standard of living in resonance with God's heart, have you accorded each other absolute devotion? You should have absolute devotion to and absolute love for one another. You should become one rooted in such love and become a center of harmony. While looking at a mountain, a husband and wife might ask for whom the mountain exists, and while thinking about the whole universe, they might ask for whom this universe was created. They would surely answer by saying, "It is for me, and at the same time it is for you." This is what a married couple is like. The way for a husband and wife to unite is by valuing God's central purpose and fulfilling the purpose for which this universe came into existence. The husband and wife communicate with each other based on heart, love and personal character, walking the same path. A country bumpkin married to a government minister walks the same path as the

minister. Although that person may have graduated only from elementary school, everyone will need to bow before him or her as the minister's spouse. This is how a husband and wife go together. Between husband and wife, can there be one love for him and a separate love for her? For them, "Your love is my love, and my love is your love." (29-142, 1970.02.26)

8 If a loving husband and wife were asked how long they will be in love, and one of them answers, "As long as we are young," would the other feel good about that? They actually want to love each other until they die, and then for eternity. Saying "until I die" means you intend to love by giving everything you have until death. But eternity represents the entire future and giving your whole self forever. Only with this commitment will your spouse be happy. When young women get married, they will surely ask their husbands, "Do you love me?" When their husbands say they do, they will then ask, "Do you love me completely or do you love me only a little?" Only when the husbands say they love their wives completely will they make their wives happy. It is the same with men. This is how things are in harmony with God. (37-024, 1970.12.22)

9 A husband and wife who love each other while forgetting God's Will should be ashamed in front of Heaven. A family that pursues only its own happiness, without considering the Will of God, will absolutely not develop. If something joyful happens in your family, you have to connect it to the nation, to the world and to God. Then that joy in the family will be a source of pride for the nation, for the world and for God. This is the way of life of a blessed couple. (30-182, 1970.03.22)

10 When you try to serve each other and work for the sake of others, the whole world of creation will follow suit and heavenly fortune will chase you faster than a speeding automobile in a car chase. When heavenly fortune comes your way, you will be able to fly. Because heaven and earth protect couples that follow the way of Heaven's Principle and live for the sake of others, they will never decline. They will only succeed and prosper. That is Heaven's law. Once you become a couple of true love, you need to plant the seed of true lineage. When they unite based on true love and have a baby, they connect with the tradition as a mother and father and reach the point of family settlement. A couple with God's original nature of one mind, one body, one thought and one harmony, who become one with the principles of absolute sex based on eternal love, who display absolute faith, love and obedience, who invest and then forget how much they have invested, and who are a model of heavenly principles, will flourish even when things go poorly, and flourish even more when things go well. Satan cannot enter such a couple. (405-205, 2003.02.11)

Ideal parent-child relationships

11 Parents who have given birth to and raised children understand the desire to receive blessings and feel happiness through their beloved sons and daughters. If they can establish a foundation of happiness and blessings, they want to bequeath

it to their offspring for eternity. Even fallen parents hope that their children will grow up as fine people whom all nations can follow, revere and praise eternally. The parent's heart seeks to protect children from harm and is anxious about them day and night. Even fallen parents have this heart. A mother accepts the smell of her baby's urine and feces. While nursing her child, she whispers and sings lullabies, while continually wishing for the child's success in life. Every parent has such a heart. If a child is incompetent or lacking, or suffers from a disability, the parents' hearts suffer to the point of breaking. If this situation is then resolved, their relief and joy goes beyond the pain they had felt. (20-209, 1968.06.09)

12 Unification cannot be brought about by force. If it could, the world would always be controlled by the one with the greatest strength. Nonetheless, when you talk about having love, the greater person is the one who gives greater love. The greater person lives for the sake of others. The person who is higher should serve the one who is lower. Unification occurs not by domination but through service. That is why all children go to their mother's bosom when she is near. It is possible only in love. Parents who are suffering and in difficulty have their energy and stamina restored when their children come to hug them. We might think that a strong hug would cause more pain but, in fact, it generates more energy. Love and hugs are sources of happiness. A collision with love revives and reenergizes people who have become tired and worn out. (147-093, 1986.08.31)

13 From the viewpoint of a parental heart, a mother, no matter how attractive she may be, will feel happy if a passerby compliments her baby, saying, "Wow, he's so much better-looking than his mother!" Even though this implies she is less attractive than her baby, no mother would protest and grumble, "What? Is he much more attractive than I am? Does this mean I am much less attractive?" Rather, she would be unable to contain her joy. This is an example of the maternal heart. Whose heart do you think this resembles? Mothers are resultant beings, not causal ones. A family that hopes that the son will achieve less than his father will decline. If the father is the president of his country but his son's accomplishments fall short of his, and if this pattern were to continue for some generations, that family might gradually decline and end up in a miserable state. (41-283, 1971.02.17)

14 What is the source and motivation of parental love? The love between a man and woman is changeable, but parental love toward the children born of conjugal love is unchanging. Why? Parental love, which is unchanging love, does not originate from the horizontal conjugal relationship. Parental love originates from a certain vertical flow. Who is the source of that vertical love? It is God. We need an absolute subject partner of unchanging love in the original position with whom we, as object partners, can establish a steadfast relationship. Vertical love is not the kind of love that a husband and wife can enjoy for their own pleasure. Vertical love does not adjust to your self-centered desire to love or not love. But even if you try, you cannot sever it. Your horizontal position affords you no power to change it. Thus, the love of parents toward their children never changes. (48-155, 1971.09.12)

15 The moment a baby's umbilical cord is severed, a loving heart naturally arises in the parents. Every life form, whether on a high or low level, is created such that it cannot resist loving and protecting its young. Because the act of loving inspires parents to invest and offer their lives as foundation stones for their children, it is clear that parental love is the closest to eternal and unchanging love. This does not mean that parental love can match that absolute nature. It cannot become absolute. Nonetheless, it can serve as a foundation for humankind. It can become a firm foothold in this world, an eternal foothold. Where did parental love come from? It is not learned from the advice of one's father or the admonition of one's spouse, and it does not come from one's own decision to love. It happens naturally. Love is something that comes naturally. (48-156, 1971.09.12)

16 As a child, I would often observe bird nests. Once I climbed a tree to look inside a nest and the mother bird started pecking at me. I brushed her aside. She flew away but returned repeatedly, desperate and willing to die to protect her nest. Observing this behavior, we cannot deny the powerful instinct of animals to risk their own lives to protect their young. The same can be said of people. You should be able to invest your life for the sake of love. That is the way of a true person. Which people are truly good? They are those who establish love as their root and try to protect their loved ones even at the cost of their own lives. (186-018, 1989.01.24)

17 What is the limit of parents' love for their children? Parents love their children beyond their childhood years, through adulthood, and even into eternity. If a relationship is established between a parent and child, through which both feel increasing worth and value, then infinite strength and infinite stimulation—something infinite and new—will arise within that relationship. (32-013, 1970.06.14)

18 What is the origin of love? Love comes from your parents, not from you. There can be no result without a cause. Because you know that you are not the owner when it comes to love, you should not impose your will on others. When you come before your parents, you should say, "Yes, mother and father, you are right." When your parents remind you, "No matter how great your reputation or power, you cannot do things that deviate from your duty to your parents," you need to reply, "Yes, yes, yes, mother and father, you are right." This is based on love. It is because parents are the subject partners and children are the object partners. The subject partner serves the object partner and the object partner follows the subject partner. This is the principle of heaven. Because he is born in accordance with heavenly nature, even an ignorant or uneducated person has a basis for understanding this heavenly principle. Therefore, even the mightiest champion needs to bow his head before his parents. If this principle is violated in a family, that household will lose all its value, and collapse. (050-135, 1971.11.06)

19 Parental love is the first love. We learn of the love between father and mother through our parents, and children who observe their parents' love for each other

feel incomparable joy. Children who have been raised with the empowerment of true parental love become well-rounded people who understand the dynamics of love. They experience receiving one-to-one vertical love when loved by their mother or father, and receiving two-to-one vertical love when loved by both parents. This unique inheritance is possible only through parental love. (62-016, 1972.09.10)

20 Children should be able to say, "My mother and father are the best in the world! They are representatives of God." When children see their parents' unchanging hearts and minds, they should think, "We must emulate our parents' love and unite with each other." When they can say that, the ideal family is right there. Our mind and heart seek an object partner with whom to unite. If this unity does not occur in a marriage, we lose everything. Thinking seriously about and striving hard to achieve this oneness is the proper way for both men and women. For this reason, we need to build families in which the father and mother are united with God's heart and love, and in which the children resemble their parents in their unity with God's heart and love. (97-277, 1978.03.26)

21 There was a time when I was praying deeply in a mystical state, seeking to understand the original foundation of the universe. I received this answer from God: "It is the relationship between father and son. It is father and son." We understand that our parents gave us birth, but where is the highest meeting place between parents and children? They meet at the central place where love, life and the ideal intersect; then love, life and the ideal are in one location. At that place, God is love, and so are we; God is life, and so are we; God is the ideal, and so are we. The first avenue through which these things can be established is the parent-child relationship. We are all born through the unity in love of our mother and father and their mutual relationship. Thus, in that environment of love, at the junction where two lives are united, our life emerges. A husband and wife should not dislike each other; rather, they should view each other as ideal. When a couple unites in love, conjugal love is fulfilled. At that time, a husband's love becomes his wife's love, his life becomes her life, and his ideals become her ideals. (069-079, 1973.10.20)

22 God's seeds, the seeds of the ideal of creation, are children. No matter how loving a husband and wife may be, their conjugal relationship lasts only one generation if they have no children and thus do not experience parenthood. Without a man, a woman cannot learn to love a man; she cannot know the meaning of love. A man or woman cannot know what love is without a partner. To know love, we absolutely need a husband or wife. The hope of God, too, has been to see His object partners. Are there men or women who want their spouse to be worse than they are? Are there parents who want their children to be worse than they are, or children who want their parents to be worse than they are? We all want our subject and object partners to be more wonderful than we are. (401-229, 2003.01.07)

Section 3. Ideal Parent-Child and Sibling Relationships

1 What are children? Through our children, God educates us and lets us feel how much He loves us. Through our children, we can also understand the joy God felt when He created Adam and Eve. When our children are born, we feel love and joy, and we come to know how God felt when He created our human ancestors. Because we need to learn how to love children the way God does, we need to have children. (142-119, 1986.03.06)

Why we should try to have children

2 We should strive to raise our sons and daughters as princes and princesses. Likewise, we should attend our father and mother as king and queen. That is a family principle in the heavenly world. In such a family, there can be no fighting. With one command, anything can be quickly achieved. The fundamental principle in such a family is to live for the sake of others. Otherwise, there will be no peace. (218-263, 1991.08.19)

3 Originally, Adam and Eve should have been a prince and princess. God's sorrow is that He could not teach His prince and princess how to lead their lives. We need to resolve God's sorrow, which originated from this lost opportunity to teach them. Adam and Eve were a prince and princess. Originally, the boy was a prince and the girl was a princess. Those who can enter the kingdom of heaven are those who have experienced the heart of a prince or princess. Without that, no one can enter the kingdom of heaven. God could not teach Adam and Eve, as His son and daughter, to become a prince and princess. They were never taught to be brother and sister. If they had been properly taught, the whole world could have been united based on the bonds between brothers and sisters. Originally, human beings would have experienced the hearts of a prince and princess and the realm of the royal family in the heavenly palace. Consequently, they could have entered the kingdom of heaven. (226-130, 1992.02.02)

4 Children are meant to inherit the kingship of the future. You should have the attitude that you are raising the king's descendants to be dispatched themselves as kings and queens of great nations. You should educate your children because you want them to rise in the world. When children are born, every parent and nation hopes they will become true parents, true teachers and true owners. Children are the kings and queens of the future. (221-025, 1991.10.20)

5 Sons and daughters are the third manifestation of God. The first manifestation of God is your grandfather and grandmother, the second is your parents and the third is your sons and daughters. We must love our sons and daughters as we love God. Even worldly parents do that. Parents want their children to love each other, without fighting, more than they love their parents. While receiving parental love, children should love each other with even more love. We should match our father and mother's standard in our own lives, and think we will live even more admirable

lives than they have. We should try to lead happier lives than our ancestors did. This is the standard. Those who lead their lives in this way can go to the kingdom of heaven. In the Garden of Eden, there were no means of instruction. However, we now have the original texts by which to teach the heavenly way. Unless we become the royal family of the kingdom of heaven, we cannot enter that original kingdom of heaven. The family is the living environment and platform upon which we can teach the contents of the original textbook. (236-150, 1992.11.04)

6 We learn to love the world by giving birth to sons and daughters and caring for them. Our children link us to the world and to the future. Without children, we cannot connect to the future. Children are given to us so that we can learn how to connect to the future. Our ancestors and grandparents are a source of education about the spirit world. Through them we learn about the spirit world. (135-121, 1985.10.04)

7 When I return home from traveling, I kiss my children. That is my custom. When my children greet me, they always kiss me too. Before they go out, they come and tell me where they are going. When they have good news, they come and tell me. We have to raise our children with this kind of etiquette. God will then look down at us with joy. We must raise our children for God and for the world. Your children should go this way. We have children because of God. We should raise our children for the sake of the world. (47-170, 1971.08.28)

8 In the Bible, there are many stories about love. The more parents love their children, the happier both parents and children become. The more you live for the sake of love, the more love you can capture. This is the universal principle. That is why if you devote yourself to God, you will drink in God's love. (33-331, 1970.08.23)

9 Those who have many children may work harder than others, but they also experience joy that is not felt by those who do not have their own children. Those who have children understand what I am saying. Let us compare those who have raised children with those who have not. Those with children have to endure a lot of noise and complicated situations, but they feel that their lives are worthwhile. Those without children cannot feel the same way. Through their children, people feel the value of their life. The environment of such parents is complicated, but this does not mean that they are unhappy. Their hope for tomorrow is engrafted there. The more children they have, the more hope they have, because their children develop uniquely in all four directions. Such parents can overcome all those circumstances. (35-283, 1970.10.25)

10 Having many children is a blessing. How is this so? How is it that raising many children can bring more blessings? Your realm of heart grows that much bigger, bringing you higher and closer to the standard of the heavenly kingdom. Having many children will mean you have more descendants and family lines. Each of them has the right to inherit all of God's blessings, and God surely will bless them. When

God says, "I give you my blessing," they will receive blessings. Such is the authority they command. (171-021, 1987.12.05)

11 If a couple has no children, everything is over in one generation. Since they do not have ideal relationships of above and below, front and back, and left and right, everything ends with them. Thus, when those without sons and daughters go to the spirit world, they feel out of place. God is at the central point, but they have no foundation to relate with it. Those who raise many children are insulated from sin. They cannot hate anyone. If you raise twelve children, you will be living with people of all twelve types of personalities, and you will understand the motivation behind all that they do. (400-313, 2003.01.11)

12 Why is it that people are not satisfied with just the intimate marital relationship, but also want to have children? Which is better, having more children or fewer? The more you think you are a good, noble and valuable person, the more descendants you want to have with the same qualities. That is our original human nature. (064-167, 1972.11.01)

Ideal relationships between brothers and sisters

13 A family includes parents and the children growing up under their care. Each child has his or her own unique character. Since the children share a common root in their parents' love, each of them can express a unique perspective. Even the youngest child can assert an opinion and not be ignored by the older brothers and sisters. Why can't they ignore the younger one? It is because their assertion is based on their parents' love. Since even the youngest child is united in love with his or her parents, the elder siblings need to acknowledge his or her opinion. They should support that child so that his or her opinion is welcomed. This is family life. (170-064, 1987.11.08)

14 In a family, though the opinions of the elder brother and elder sister may differ, they should honor their parents' will. The will of both the brother and sister should be connected to their parents' will. This connection gives them each the authority to express their unique will when they discuss their different opinions. When an older brother asserts his will, if it is recognized by his parents, he receives the authority to represent them. He can then assert his opinion from that position. The sister gains such authority in the same way. Even the younger brother, if he asserts his opinion while united in love with his parents, has the right to participate in a position equal to that of his parents. (170-064, 1987.11.08)

15 Once you are united with God, things begin to turn, and they produce all sorts of forms and shapes. For example, the love of elder children for their younger siblings will follow the model of their parents' love for them. When a family is united in love in that way, love within the family blossoms. That love then becomes love within the society, and it expands to become love within the nation. In this manner, it later becomes the love of the whole world. (28-170, 1970.01.11)

16 What is the reason you receive parental love? It is because you are the reason your mother and father love and support each other as a couple. Their motivation is for you. When the love between siblings operates with the same motivation, the love between them will never change. When you extend that love to your neighbors, regarding them as one body, and to society, a sound social environment will unfold. Based on the family as the formation stage, the society represents the growth stage, and the nation is the completion stage. (26-153, 1969.10.25)

17 Centering on parental love, the tradition and order of love for the person in the position of the elder brother is to sacrifice himself for and love his younger siblings, as his parents' representative. The eldest brother's position comes with the responsibility to suffer more than any of his siblings, for the sake of his parents and siblings. That is the eldest brother's situation. The parents suffer for the sake of their children more than the children do. They do so because of their love. The parents will not give up, even when they are drenched in tears. They will continue along that path of tears. (113-117, 1981.05.01)

CHAPTER 4 The Education of Children and the Kingdom of Heaven in the Family

Section 1. The Meaning of Education

1 We are to raise our children to be people who are like God. This is the standard for education. What does it mean for a person to be like God? It is not defined by the shape of one's face, how much energy one has, or the extent of one's abilities. Being like God means loving as God loves. It requires perfecting oneself as a person and learning to love as God loves. Then what is God's love all about? If we analyze it, there are three kinds—parental love, conjugal love and filial love. That is all it is. His love is nothing other than these three kinds of love. (076-289, 1975.03.07)

The true meaning of education

2 In order for human beings to be saved, they need education. The human ancestors fell while they were in a state of ignorance. Adam and Eve, who should have moved from the realm of indirect dominion to the realm of direct dominion, did not fully know God's Will. Hence not one of the many great people and religious leaders who came to the earth throughout history was able to prepare the foundation according to God's original standard. No one fully figured out the course that our first ancestors failed to complete, and hence left unknown. No religion, no philosopher or great individual has been able to clarify this. Human history has not flowed in accordance with God's original standard. Rather, it has flowed based on our ignorance, following the tradition inherited from our ignorant ancestors. This is the point on which humankind needs education. (136-198, 1985.12.29)

3 For us to be a mother or a father, it is not enough just to give birth to our children. We have to raise them and educate them. What is the purpose for which we raise them? It is so they can enter the kingdom of heaven. Even if we cannot

give them education on other matters, we should at least educate them so they can enter the heavenly kingdom. We should not leave them unable to go to the place where all their family members and relatives reside. That is why we need to educate them. By this, I mean to teach them about heavenly law. That education is of foremost importance. (208-101, 1990.11.17)

4 The way of filial children is to love their family, which channels the life force of love. The way of patriots is to love in conjunction with the life force of the nation. The way of saints is to connect their love to the life force of the world. People have taught morals and ethics in light of this progression; we need to understand that this way is correct. Loving the world is the way of saints. This is the standard for the moral education of humanity. (111-173, 1981.02.15)

5 Everyone has to take the path of learning, the path of education, but what is its purpose? It is to advance toward a world of greater good and thereby increase one's value. Thus we strive onward toward a higher dimension in order to become one with a center of greater value. Although it may be indirectly, we are all in pursuit of something based on this purpose. (109-264, 1980.11.02)

6 Of all education, which is the greatest? The family is the base, the origin of the kingdom of heaven; therefore the best education is teaching the way of a son or daughter in the family. This teaching of the way should be from God. God is our Father and at the same time our Teacher and King. In God's royal family, princes and princesses would have been taught: "You represent all the men and women who live in the kingdom, even though they number in the hundreds of millions." However, no one has received such education in the position of sons and daughters representing His royal family. Further, no one was ever taught, "When you two unite as the older and younger siblings, you can bring peace to the world. Further, since all the men and women in the country are like your brothers and sisters, and you are in the position of older siblings, you should love your people as your younger brothers and sisters." Even though families are small, each one represents the whole nation, which in turn represents the world and all of heaven and earth. Therefore, with your family as an exemplary model, you should teach your children the principle that applies to all levels in the whole world. That is, loving your brothers and sisters is the same as loving all of humanity. At the same time, teach them that when they live for the sake of something greater, that which is of lesser value is absorbed by that of greater value. This are heavenly principles. (220-345, 1991.10.20)

7 Education does not take place only through a teacher standing at a podium with books, but also through the teacher's words and deeds. The way a person dresses is an education; you can tell a good deal about a person's character by the way he or she dresses. Just as the body reflects the mind, a person's clothes reflect his or her character. In this light, our daily life offers constant opportunities to educate, stimulate and influence everyone around us. If we continually strengthen our

effectiveness in educating people in our daily life, society surely will develop. That is where new hope for our world unfolds. (144-178, 1986.04.24)

8 Schools are places where people are educated from the age of a toddler through young adulthood. Universities provide courses leading to a bachelor's, master's or doctoral degree. Once they are adults living in society, the media provide their education. However, these days, most media are not performing that role properly, but are misleading society and even contributing to its destruction. Media organizations put their own interests first and focus on making money. I am proud that I stand firmly for moral standards and promote them throughout the world. (270-288, 1995.07.16)

9 When we go to school, we must study not only for our personal purpose, but rather to deepen our understanding of nature as God created it, and to grasp God's heart. Knowledge of God leads us to a deeper and higher love. Please understand that the training I am giving you, although strict, is to enable you to learn to love heaven and to love nature, and to prepare you to become a central figure. That is, it is to make you a master of love. When you go out and work in society, although you face bitter winds, think that the challenges you are facing help you share God's love and manifest its true value. (106-139, 1979.12.24)

10 You cannot gain competence in a short time. To become competent at something, you have to go through various types of training and gain experience. The purpose of studying in a school is to inherit what others have learned through experience and practice. At school you inherit what others have learned; you benefit from their effort. But to make that knowledge your own, you have to apply it; you have to put it into practice. In short, by both knowing something and practicing it, it becomes yours. (72-304, 1974.07.14)

11 A true leader will say, "When you die, you should die for the sake of true love." The greatest education of all is that which teaches us how to end our lives in true love. This education is ten times better than studying at Harvard University. The Unification Church is saying, "Let us give our lives for the sake of the highest love, for God, humankind and the world." The highest teaching is that all action, direction and purpose started from love. Men and women, mothers and fathers, sons and daughters, the universe and everything in it, started from love. Those who go to the spirit world after living this way surely will not be ashamed to stand before God. (93-191, 1977.05.29)

The principle and practice of true love and the purpose of education

12 To raise your own children just as I raise you as church members, you have to study Divine Principle day and night. To educate your children well, you have to go out into Satan's world and train yourself in order to learn more. That is not all. To become owners of the world, you need to learn the heart of the parent, the heart of the teacher and the heart of God, and inherit the right of ownership from Him.

After joining the church you are reborn. You then need to be educated and perfected. When you are fully mature, you will come to know God's Will. Then you can say, "I am ready to stand in the position of an owner." When you stand in the position of an owner, you will inherit everything. (205-022, 1990.07.15)

13 God intended to bestow His love through Adam and Eve, but because they did not reach the standard of perfection and establish a partnership with God in love, God was put in a miserable state. That is why He could not stand in the position of the True Parent. The first ancestors should have given birth to true sons and daughters, nurtured them and provided for them. Giving birth to children is the role of parents; nurturing them is the role of teachers, and providing for them is the role of owners. I am not talking about the world; I am talking about a family. A mother and father are parents, but at the same time they are teachers and owners. (204-120, 1990.07.01)

14 To resolve God's sorrow over His inability to educate Adam and Eve, due to their Fall, we have to inherit and teach the "three great subject partners principle." This is the practical way of life based on the principle of true love. If we teach and practice the three great subject partners principle, we can reclaim the right of the eldest son, right of the parents and right of the king. Since Adam and Eve were not properly educated, they could not create the ideal family, which was God's Will. Therefore we have to form families, the foundation for the unity of the whole, by educating children, siblings, couples and parents, in true love. In this way, we can realize the ideal nation and ideal world. Had Adam and Eve received proper education, they would have naturally created a world of oneness. (222-043, 1991.10.27)

15 The teacher is an extension of the parents. The king, the leader of a nation, is an extension of the teacher and the parents. The king is in the place of the parent, the teacher and the owner of the nation. This is the three great subject partners principle that we speak of in the Unification Church. We cannot disregard the Three Subject Partners Principle. We should teach it in the family, in the school and in the nation. Regretfully, no country in the world includes this in its education system. Each nation has a different system. Further, parents have one way, teachers have another way, and the nation has yet another way. Likewise, nations are all disconnected. (263-302, 1994.10.27)

16 What is it that we most need to know? First, we should know God well and know clearly that He is at the center. Second, we should know with certainty that human beings are the center of the world. Third, we should know the ideal nation that God and human beings are striving together to realize. In conclusion, love is the key to connect these great purposes. That is why my motto for education is "Love Heaven, Love Humankind and Love Your Nation." I have been teaching that true education is to enable people to realize these purposes. (195-051, 1989.11.03)

17 What does it mean to “love Heaven”? We are not worshipping Heaven based on a vague concept of God. The idea of “love the nation” is not vague; it is concrete. A nation has its sovereignty, land and people, and if there were a heavenly nation, it would have sovereignty, land and people. So expressions such as “the heavenly nation” and “the earthly nation” make perfect sense. Yet God Himself does not create the heavenly nation and earthly nation. Neither does a king make them. It is their citizens who make them. This means that between heaven and earth, there are people in the middle. Thus they can form the heavenly nation and the earthly nation. All of this is interwoven by love. God needs love, the nation needs love, and the people also need love. (263-299, 1994.10.27)

18 What does it mean to love Heaven? The greatness and power of Heaven, by itself, is only external, and love is internal. Love has the power to move God and to call Him to come to you. The force that attracts God is not that of knowledge, power or money. It is love. I have the motto, “Love Heaven.” If we have the power to move Heaven, Heaven will follow us. Another motto is “Love People.” I am not referring to loving individuals; I mean loving all humanity. Humanity has to follow love. The third one is “Love Your Nation.” A nation follows the one who loves it the most. (186-151, 1989.01.31)

Section 2. The Family Is the Textbook of God's Kingdom

1 The family is a textbook for how to build an ideal land and an ideal nation. The nation is a textbook for how to build an ideal world. There are four textbooks—the family, the nation, the world and the universe. Yet you have to teach about these textbooks at home. This basic education should begin in the family. (118-234, 1982.06.06)

2 The family is a textbook to connect us to the kingdom of heaven. It is the educational textbook. When you apply it to the nation, you will become a patriot; when you apply it to the world, you will become a saint, and when you practice it in the context of heaven and earth, you will become God’s child, His divine son or daughter. All people have that desire. (137-078, 1985.12.18)

The family is the school of love

3 Parents should be the center of the family, and teachers should be the center of the educational institutions of society. Parents rear children by nourishing them, supporting their physical development as well as their emotional development. The school prepares people for their future life in society. If the family is the emotional training ground, the school is the social training ground, like a laboratory. The family is the training ground of heart. Thus, at school we must interact with love and affection as brothers and sisters, and do so in the nation as well. Parents’ education at home is to prepare the children to love their school, their society and their nation. Parents should pass on everything in the realm of heart to their children, who are their heirs. They should lay the foundation of heart for their children by

teaching them to follow their way of life in the family, society and nation. (180-130, 1988.08.22)

4 Do we ever need to be taught how to go the way of evil? People do not need education to go the way of evil. Even without any education, they naturally go that way. This is because history started from evil. People were born with an evil inclination. That is why they need education to act according to the standard of conscience based on morals and ethics. What is the center of that education? It is goodness, based on following the conscience. Although people are educated about goodness, how many live up to the standards they are taught? People will still tend to do evil things. In doing evil, anyone can get a perfect score. (36-057, 1970.11.15)

5 Parents who stay awake at night out of love for their children are close to Heaven. You need to establish an absolute foundation in your family, and say, "This family is like a factory, a production base for the kingdom of heaven." That is why I am telling you to educate and protect your sons and daughters in order to make a happy family. (194-132, 1989.10.17)

6 The family is the model, the foothold on earth for the kingdom of heaven. It has been God's sorrow that He has been unable to prepare a textbook with which to educate human beings to become His true sons and daughters. Why? It is due to the Fall. When will God be able to raise us up to be His true sons and daughters? This has been His hope throughout history. His further sorrow is that He could not prepare a textbook to guide human beings to build a world of love. Among siblings there are brothers and sisters, not necessarily only two; there could be ten or even twenty. But God could not teach brothers and sisters how to live. After Adam and Eve were born as God's son and daughter, they grew as brother and sister. Through them God wanted to produce the textbook for all brothers and sisters. He then wanted to produce one for husband and wife. But He had no chance to do either, and to this day we have no such books. After becoming a couple, Adam and Eve soon became a father and mother. Yet again, God could not produce the textbook to clarify the tradition of parents. (224-268, 1991.12.15)

7 The system in the ideal world is based on the family unit. The family is the foundation for the kingdom of heaven; it is the cornerstone, the foundation on which to build that kingdom. It does not matter how many people there are; if you love them as your family you are welcome everywhere in the kingdom of heaven. That is why you should base your life on the education you receive in your family. In the family are grandfathers and grandmothers, father and mother, husband and wife, and sons and daughters. These represent four generations. We can apply this wherever we go throughout the world. We will meet people the age of our grandparents, the age of our parents, the age of our spouse, and the age of our children. Therefore, those who have experienced love according to the textbook in their family will have no problem wherever they go. Since their way of life accords with the book, they will pass every test. The time will come when everyone will provide food and lodging to those who are living like this. All that matters is this

education in the family. That is why I am saying the family is absolutely the most fundamental textbook. If you live according to the way you were taught in the family, no matter where you go, you will not face any barriers and no one will oppose you. (225-224, 1992.01.20)

8 The family is the center of education. In it you pass the test that qualifies you to enter the kingdom in the other world. Who is the head of the family? The head is the one who most loves the whole family. Who is the head of this world? If you view the heavenly nation as one huge family, the one who most loves the people on earth is the head. Each race may think they are the best, but that is not the case. Although both the East and the West exist, each thinks it is best. Yet neither can exist without the other. The two are bound in a partner relationship. (247-312, 1993.06.01)

9 Earthly families are like production plants that create citizens destined for the heavenly nation. We act as the owners of these plants until we enter the spirit world. The path of life we set up will naturally educate our children. We will not need to intervene; they will naturally learn to walk the right path. Everyone has God within; we do not need education to put Him there. But we are where we are now because of the Fall. As a result of the Fall, humanity has been ignorant of the fundamentals. (254-246, 1994.02.13)

10 The family is the standard of perfection for the individual and the standard of perfection for the church. No matter how well you do as an individual in pursuing the Will of God, if you do not succeed with your family, it is a problem. That is why the family is the issue. In the family there is not only one side, there are two. There are man and woman, and on the foundation of one man and one woman, there are parents and children. Therefore, four directions appear. Looking at this four-directional pattern, we see that it is not human will that creates the family. The family is the place God designed for the perfection of the individual, as well as the starting point of the church. If a problem occurs in the family, you should find the solution in the family, not in the church. If anything goes wrong, you should seek the solution in the family itself, not the church. If you cannot resolve this at home, neither can the church provide a fundamental solution. The kingdom of heaven appears not centered on the individual, but on the family, where four directions and three dimensions meet. (45-216, 1971.07.01)

11 If not for the Fall, men and women would have received perfect love from God as His true sons and daughters in the family. Then we would have been completely one with God. In fact, such men and women would have united totally in love. Such couples would not exist only for their own sake but to educate their children, because they would want to complete all four directions. (53-069, 1972.02.09)

12 The family is the most important school of love in our life. The education of the emotions that only parents can provide equips children with depth and breadth of heart. This is the cornerstone upon which children's character is built. The family is

also the school in which virtues and principles are taught. Children should receive intellectual, physical and technical education upon this foundation of emotional and principled education. This is the heavenly way. (271-080, 1995.08.22)

The importance of prenatal education and children's education

13 You should not be happy merely with having given birth to a son, even if you waited a long time for him. As much as you are happy with your son, your concern should be how to rear that son to become a valuable person. Parents who know the principle of Heaven are concerned about this and balance their affection toward their child. Those who are just pleased with giving birth to their child are making a mistake from the outset. Our concern should be how we can raise a son who can add value to the nation. If you desire to have a son for this purpose, you set a condition to serve the nation from the outset. This is an important matter. (34-023, 1970.08.29)

14 Where does the vibration of love come from? It comes from the mother's womb. Your mother's love is the first thing you receive. She is the first one to create a loving relationship with you. Although your father also loves you, while you are in your mother's womb she pays you a great deal of attention, caring more for you than she cares for herself. To protect you from harm, she is careful of what she says and she does things with a loving heart. Love begins from a mother. (044-106, 1971.05.06)

15 Reflect on yourself and ask, where does my life begin? It starts from your parents. Our life begins in our mother's womb. When a fetus is in its mother's womb, it absorbs elements from the mother in order to grow. If there is anything a baby wants while in the womb, it is that his mother be joyful, happy, and singing all the time. That might be the most important wish of the fetus. That is why prenatal education consists of the pregnant woman listening to beautiful music, looking at beautiful scenes and thinking beautiful thoughts. That is good for the baby as well. (74-012, 1974.11.10)

16 When a woman is pregnant, she gives prenatal education. The hopes a mother has for her baby will be realized as she does this with her child's future in mind. The mind has great power; this is connected to the power of God's mind when He created all things. That is why even now He continues investing again and again, never calculating what He has invested. He invests infinitely, forgetting about His investment. Investing like this does not diminish the amount that remains for Him to give. The more true love is invested, the greater becomes the reservoir. (224-152, 1991.11.24)

17 We need to attend God in our heart. We should educate our children with Him in our heart. A teacher should never allow children to take the easy way out and submit incomplete work. They should be like a parent. No parents teach their children to do wrong. Some teachers might let their students do wrong. The

teacher could become the enemy and subvert them, to their ruin. There can be two kinds of teachers and two kinds of siblings, but there is only one kind of parent. No matter how evil people are, they teach their children to do what is right. (28-084, 1970.01.04)

18 God has had dual purposes in seeking to find one man and woman. He wants to redeem not only Adam and Eve, but also wants to build the four-position foundation by redeeming their sons and daughters as well. Each one of you needs to build your own four-position foundation. That means you must do it yourself. You must become one with God and also make oneness with your sons and daughters. You have to find spiritual sons and daughters, educate them and give them such faith that they can even go the way of death on your behalf. Only then can you finally prepare the foundation for one place of perfect rest. (28-086, 1970.01.04)

19 Parents teach their children to become great people who can serve their country. However, as the world is unfolding before our eyes, the time for teaching children to be great figures for the nation has passed. Now we need to teach them, "Live for the sake of the world and live with the world." I know what you want in your hearts, so I am summing things up like this for you. (28-192, 1970.01.11)

20 How can we as parents bequeath to our children our thought, such that they will make it their tradition? For God, the issue has been how to bring His children out of Satan's world. For this He has been toiling during the six-thousand-year providence of restoration. For us, the issue is how to educate our children while living in Satan's world. We have to carry both crosses. (29-273, 1970.03.11)

21 The best public mission is to work for the cosmos. Our Unification Church is not promoting teachings about the heavens and the earth, but the teaching of cosmism, or the way of thinking that centers on the cosmos, as expressed in the word cheonju (宇宙) In these characters, which mean cosmos, ju (宙) means house. In the cosmos-centered way of thinking, ownership is not by individual human beings; rather, the family is the owner. Individuals do not build nations; families do. The world cannot be built except from families. When its families fail, a nation will fall into ruin. Therefore, family education determines the nation's fate and whether or not it will be blessed. The more families live by public principles, the more the nation will prosper. The more families focus only on their own interests, the more that nation will decline. (31-243, 1970.06.04)

22 If a nation were to begin from one individual, how much would we revere that individual? If that person were to form a family that represented the nation and the world, how much would we cherish and love that family? With our beloved sons and daughters at the center, we have to create new tribes that are separated from Satan. As parents, we have to create a family that endeavors to promote and cherish the bond with Heaven's heart. To do this we have to devote ourselves with all our heart and effort to educate our children in daily life. From the viewpoint of education, our life purpose is to show the way for our sons and daughters, to build

a foundation for their happiness and for the well-being of our nation and people. Living in this way is how we become the origin of a new world; it is a solemn and noble path. We can begin to fulfill our responsibility as sons and daughters of God only when we put ourselves in this position, valuing it as greater than anything else in the cosmos. (34-061, 1970.08.29)

23 We can love different types of people only after we give birth to children and raise them in the family. If we could love people of all ages, from little children to the elderly—if as a man we knew how to love, purely, all the women in the world, or as a woman we knew how to love, purely, all the men in the world—would this not be an ideal world? What is the family about? It is the educational center to introduce us to the ideal world. (109-287, 1980.11.02)

24 The kingdom of heaven originates from the family, so we have to turn the family around, based on true love. For this, the second generation has an important role to perform. Satan is striving to destroy young people. He herds them into drug dens. Shot by the devil's arrows, they engage in free sex without thought to the consequences. Young people in every town should unite with the police to confront gangsters and expel them. Our families will bring hope to towns when our second-generation young people take responsibility to deal with gangsters and educate other young people, together with their parents. Beginning in the family and expanding to the world, we have to create the foundation for a palace of peace within our own families. Those who do this are wise. When there are many such families, they will receive blessings in the future as a people. (208-301, 1990.11.20)

25 Those whose heart is to serve the world just as they serve their own grandparents will face no obstacles on the way to the kingdom of heaven. We need a uniform foundation of education for people of all nations to build a world of unity. For example, as you are about to enter a restaurant, if you see an elderly couple looking worried because they have no money, you should take them into the restaurant with you and treat them well, as if they were your own grandparents. If you live for the sake of others you will be blessed. Such a legacy will never disappear. When you invest with love, nothing is lost. (215-122, 1991.02.06)

26 What is God's sorrow? It is that He has been unable to secure three generations on the horizontal level. God could never see Adam and Eve become a true couple or true parents, and thus He could not see true grandchildren. Achieving this would have made three generations. Since these three generations were turned upside down by the Fall—that is, since we inherited the wrong life, love and lineage from the fallen world—we have to turn everything right side up. This brings us to the conclusion that the grandfather should be in the position of the grandson, the father should be in the position of the son, and the older brother should be in the position of the younger brother. This is unprecedented, as if heaven and earth are turned upside down; it is revolutionary. From the vertical perspective, the grandfather represents the first position, God; Adam and Eve represent the father and mother; and the children represent the princes and princesses. Hence we

ought to attend the grandfather and grandmother, who appear in the family on the horizontal level representing God. This is the original principle of family education. (221-215, 1991.10.24)

27 Parents need to be strict in the family, especially today. These days, parents are required to take responsibility in managing and educating their children, even to employ disciplinary measures so that they will not be tainted by the fallen world. Free sex, public flaunting of sex, and homosexuality are the devil's tricks. Our way, which takes us to the heavenly nation, is 180 degrees different from the way of this world. It is natural that someone like me would be opposed by this world. Therefore, unless I proclaim that I have completed all that I had promised in the course of restoration, I cannot enter the realm of perfection in substance. By achieving the eternal standard of the Blessing, as the partner of true love, I can unite with God, the subject partner who is centered on true love, the ideal of creation. (248-079, 1993.07.01)

28 The grandfather is a special envoy of the kingdom of heaven; the parents are the king and queen of the present world, and the children are the princes and princesses of heaven and earth. That is why a grandfather loves his grandchildren more than he loves his own sons and daughters. After becoming a grandfather myself, I found this to be true. We need to create educational institutions where our grandchildren can study. If we cannot do that, we have failed our mission as grandparents. Our grandchildren will call us to account for this again and again. Our grandchildren should be the parents who begin the re-creation of the kingdom of heaven throughout heaven and earth. We have to become grandparents and ancestors who can fulfill our mission to make it possible for our grandsons and granddaughters to stand in such a position. (295-243, 1998.08.28)

Section 3. Parents' Love and Responsibility

1 When we raise our children, we have to care for them with more love than that with which we care for ourselves. When we fulfill our responsibility as parents, our children come to understand parents' love, and when they have their own children, they will raise them the same way. In this way, children come to realize and share their parents' sorrow and joy as their own, and their parents' responsibility and work as their own. Thus, even if they are not told to do so, the children willingly consider their parents' adversaries to be their adversaries, accept their parents' work and responsibility as theirs, and inherit their parents' circumstances. Raising such children is in accordance with the principles of creation. (29-096, 1970.02.25)

2 The power of love gives insight that is impossible to come by otherwise. The parents' heart of love transcends distance to connect with their children. You have seen such a scene in movies: A child is involved in an accident far from home, and his father or mother sees the scene in a dream and wakes up distraught. This is the response that comes through the line of love; it conveys reality exactly as it is. It is

not just a vision; it is reality that is communicated. Likewise, on earth you can contact God's substance directly through the line of love. (162-286, 1987.04.17)

3 Parents do not expose their beloved children's shortcomings, even though they may have flaws. They want their children to resemble only their own good points. After seeing that a child has done wrong, a parent may spank him or her, but will soon regret it and sympathize with the child. This is a parent's heart. A parent may discipline a child as a response to misbehavior, yet a parent's heart is always to magnify a child's good points, the points in which they see the best of themselves, rather than magnify his or her bad side. (016-172, 1966.03.13)

4 Parents cannot teach their children filial piety just by words. They have to inspire a filial attitude within their children. The child cannot learn this overnight. It requires a long period of consistent influence. Parents should set an example in daily life that inspires their children to emulate them. They should be experts at inspiring this practice of filial piety, based on God's Will. (29-099, 1970.02.25)

5 Parents should set the example in leading a life focused on the Will. They have to teach their children the life of prayer, the custom of family worship, and the life of faith. They should also teach them the importance of pledge service. The parents should conduct pledge service and use that time to educate their children about the Will of God. Parents first need to practice what they want to see in their children. They should be a model of loyalty to the Will. Their children should regard them with so much respect that they would not utter a word contrary to what their parents say. If they do not become such models, the children will not follow them. With regard to church life, children will observe their parents and compare their actions with what they understand of the Will and the Principle. If children see that their parents neglect their church duties and do not live according to church guidelines, but expect their children to live in a principled way, they will surely disobey their parents. (31-268, 1970.06.04)

6 If the parents of today are no different from the parents of the past, they are not qualified to educate their children. Hence you have to be clearly different from the past in your family life and in your relationships with the people of your community. Children have their own understanding as to how people who are walking the path of the Will should behave, and will see their parents from their own point of view. (31-270, 1970.06.04)

7 Children sense whether their parents are good or bad. If you maintain a right heart and attitude toward the Will, someday your children will recognize you and your situation. You, as parents, should bequeath the heavenly tradition even when you die. You exist for your family and your children, but before that you should serve God and your country. In the end, this is the path that will most benefit your children. Only through this can your children gain the fortune of God, the world and the nation. (21-087, 1968.11.03)

8 As a blessed couple, you tell your children to study. But your sons and daughters will not become children of filial piety and loyal patriots just by you telling them to study. What if they say, "Our parents suffered in the Unification Church, so we will not walk such a path"? You need to teach them the way of love that can digest even such suffering. Thus even if they may have to skip meals, parents should take their children around their town loving the people, praying and shedding tears for the nation. The children may dislike this when they are little, but when they grow up they will say, "Our father and mother are the best." They will understand why their mother and father were not there for them, and as they mature they will realize that their parents tried to love the nation, serve God's Will and save humankind, even at the cost of paying less attention to their children. You should not live carelessly. Your worrying about your children does not make them do well in life. What is important is to feed them the food of love. (139-077, 1986.01.26)

9 Children follow their father and mother's example, so please attend and worship God properly in your home. Show your children that their father is a man of prayer. Let them know that their father is serving God and living for the sake of others. Through this, you lay the foundation so that your children unconsciously will come to respect and admire you. (47-331, 1971.08.30)

10 In the future, when your children research your life history, they may discover many stories of misery and difficulties. Yet if they say, "My father suffered like this in the past. To raise me and educate me, my father walked this way of suffering," it will not make them unhappy. Rather, it will make them respect and serve their parents more. We often experience the truth of this. Children cannot be disloyal when they find that their parents never stopped shedding tears for them. (48-074, 1971.09.05)

11 In matters of love, do not be lukewarm. Choose one, either cold or hot. Sometimes you need to be cold. When you raise your children, even though you love them, if they fail to respond to your love, you should be strict, even challenging them. You should not accept the way they are if they are just thinking, "Okay, whatever." For this reason, once I gathered the church leaders and scolded them. They responded, "Whoa, what kind of teacher is this?" I can be a most frightening person. Although I am a good-hearted person, I also can be the most difficult person to relate to. I can be merciless toward evil, and for the sake of goodness I also can be as fiery as a sizzling hot, thousand- degree furnace. (103-033, 1979.01.28)

12 Love's original nature is to live for the sake of others. Giving to others from within one's original essence is the nature of love. Where did that love come from? It came from God. Since God is the subject partner of absolute love, the original nature of love is giving. Parental love is the closest to that original nature; that is why parents always want to give to their children. If your child does not accept your love, you should show that child even greater love; then even a child who behaves like a hoodlum will be able to repent and turn around. (48-182, 1971.09.12)

13 Parents have to be able to represent God. You should say to your children, "Children! Please love your brothers and sisters more than you love me; please love your neighbors, your country and the world more than you love me." If you educate them in this way, you will stand out as true parents among parents. In this way, your sons and daughters will move forward and your family will develop into a center of greater goodness. (95-152, 1977.11.11)

14 There are three things you should leave behind when you conclude your life on earth. The first is the way of the Principle; you must leave behind the fact that you led your life in the way of the Principle, according to the Will. The second is to leave good descendants on earth. The third is the education of your descendants to be good and effective for the sake of the world. These are three core responsibilities. (101-201, 1978.10.30)

15 You should leave for your sons and daughters a tradition that teaches them how to lead their lives well. By fighting hard battles in your mission countries you are leaving behind a tradition for your descendants. This is a great opportunity to educate your children based on your experience, reporting to them, "We worked under these kinds of hardships." It is your opportunity to establish a tradition that you can leave behind as your legacy. Tradition is the issue. What you have done will remain; it sets an eternal tradition. (71-019, 1974.03.24)

16 Unless you set up a tradition for your family, you cannot set up a tradition for your people. If there is no tradition among your people, there will be no citizens in the nation. Blessed families need family law. We need standards for children's education and laws for the family. Otherwise we will fail as parents, and when our children call us to account for this we will have nothing to say. The family law is that before you love yourself, you have to love the nation, the world and God. A wife should be able to testify out of respect for her husband, "My husband loves the nation, the world and God even more than he loves me." (21-087, 1968.11.03)

Section 4. Children's Education

1 What is it that parents should give to their children while educating them? Education should not be about knowledge but, rather, about love. Both father and mother should teach how to become one by loving one another. They should become a father and mother with whom God is pleased, and the mother and father should be pleased with one another. At the same time, they should strive to be parents whom their children like; then the children will want to make their parents proud of them. This is how parents should educate their children. (51-172, 1971.11.21)

2 Whether centered on God or Adam and Eve, the key is the four-position foundation. No matter how you look at it, it is the same four-position foundation. For this reason, we should receive education about love from God, based on His love. What is the origin of this education? It does not begin from human beings.

Since God is their Parent, Adam and Eve should be educated about love by God. How is the standard of Adam and Eve's value determined? It is in accordance with the education they receive from God about love. For how long did Adam and Eve require this education? It was necessary until they figured out God's standard of value for the completion of love. In other words, they should have reached full maturity based on the love they received from their Parent. (51-172, 1971.11.21)

Love, original sexuality, and education for the Blessing

3 Becoming a parent puts you in a position to represent God. Thus, as a teacher, you have to teach your children the principles of love, the love of the family and the ideal of the nation, and raise them to become owners of the family and nation with proper qualifications. To this day our children are being educated in schools that do not provide the most essential education. They provide technical education. The home should be the place of character education. This is where parents bequeath the original lineage. Parents have a solemn duty to establish a tradition connected to lineage with a perspective of thousands of years, and to pass it on to their children. But this is not predestined; rather, it is a destiny we are responsible to accomplish. We cannot change our mother and father. We cannot exchange our brothers and sisters. Knowing this, we need to establish the family tradition in the presence of God and bear fruit as true parents and true teachers. By this means, we are recreating a lineage based on love. After doing so, we need to leave behind us the position of true owners of a true lineage that can last forever. (316-169, 2000.02.11)

4 Blessed families must think concretely, not just conceptually, about God's sovereignty, God's people and God's territory. It is now time for us to take action, taking responsibility for this mission. Every step we take should be toward this purpose. Even when educating children, parents have to think about how to raise them to become people who can fulfill the Will and mission. A mother should think this way even when she nurses her baby. If we live like this, although we are only individuals, we represent the life, hope and value of the whole, with a value that can stand before heaven and earth. (12-134, 1963.01.25)

5 Needless to say, you have to educate your children well. But in addition, you should guide them to receive the Blessing at an early age. When three generations have received the Blessing they can be bound together. Before you die you need to have three generations blessed. This is how you can fulfill your responsibility. Just as the Israelites were connected through three families, Adam, Noah and Abraham, the standard for you to be connected is three generations. What should you do to achieve that? You should create your own tribe based on your sons and daughters and relatives who are to fulfill the same conditions. On that foundation you can be free and accommodating with your tribe and they can be the same toward you. (31-283, 1970.06.04)

6 Toward your wife you should think, "In terms of receiving God's three kinds of love, she is the best. She is the best daughter in the world, she is the best wife in the world, and she will be the best mother who has ever existed." You have to educate your children so that they can say proudly, "My father and mother are the best in the world. No one except God is better than they are." Education within Unification Church families should achieve this standard, and it should be publicly recognized. God should be able to say, "That's right," and your descendants should say, "Yes." My children say to me, "After God, my father is the best." You too have to teach your children to think this way. (047-220, 1971.08.28)

7 Parents teach their children to love their brothers and sisters and to love their mother and father. At the same time, they need to teach them, "As much as I love you, I love my country. Please love your country as much as I do." If you teach them in this way, they will understand. You do not need to educate them in other things. In the end they will understand, "In my family, my father and I live like this, and all other families in the nation should also live like this. Establishing a nationwide and worldwide foundation together with my family means becoming a patriot in my country." (95-052, 1977.10.23)

8 You have to teach your children to love the world more than they love their own country. I am teaching not just the way of a patriot for the nation but the way of a saint for the world. Since this way of the saint involves the laws for governing a nation, I am also teaching you how to fulfill the dutiful way and become a prince or princess in the kingdom of heaven. (148-127, 1986.10.05)

9 You have to be true mothers and fathers who, even while racing ahead, can say to your children: "If I die now, you must take this baton and keep running. I am going this way of suffering to save the world. I must do this in order to enable a new world to emerge. That is the hope of God, the hope of True Parents, and the hope of your father and mother. And that must be your hope too. I believe this unchanging hope will allow everyone to find happiness; that is why I am going this way." At the moment of your death, you should be able to say this to your children and ask them to commit to carrying on your work. (148-131, 1986.10.05)

10 As parents we need to have the educational resources by which to teach our children. We should be able to testify: "My beloved sons and daughters, you should not be indebted to your parents, brothers and sisters, or neighbors. I tried my best all my life, applying myself intensely, to avoid debt, until my fingers became bent and their skin as coarse as horsehide. My hands became like this through serving our neighbors and living for the sake of others." (85-136, 1976.03.02)

11 A true teacher is not one who teaches academics but one who teaches love. Of course, parents are one with their children based on love and the blood relationship, but they should also be teachers of love. That is why we parents should teach our children saying, "You should behave this way as brothers and sisters, you should behave that way as husband and wife, and this and that way

with your relatives.” Thereby we can educate them with love so that, through harmony and unity among family members, they can bring prosperity to the family and finally become owners of love. This is the duty of parents. (198-063, 1990.01.21)

Parents must show the example

12 Brothers and sisters need to follow the example of their parents loving each other. Daughters represent the mother and sons represent the father, and they need to learn the tradition of love with which the parents love each other. However, since there have been no true parents from whom to learn such love in Satan’s world, we now have to teach our children to follow the example of the True Parents through the way of filial piety. In the Unification Church, in view of our relationship, and the relationship between my family and your family, your children will take after the heart that you have toward me. Children learn heart from their parents. You have to be people about whom your children can say, “My parents carry on, no matter what difficulties they face. Their way of life transcends time, the environment and their standard of living.” At the same time, you have to set the tradition in your family that your children will listen to your directions and follow you in any circumstances. Your children should be able to say, “This is the way our parents went, so we have to go this way too. Considering all the circumstances, isn’t this what we should do?” You should have your children follow your example by serving your own parents as a couple. By doing so, you set the standard by which to educate your descendants. (30-087, 1970.03.17)

13 Parents should educate their children about Heaven. In teaching your children, the first step is for you to set the example. Before instructing your children about filial piety, you should be a child of filial piety. If you first become a devoted son or daughter, according to Heaven’s law, you will establish Heavens tradition of filial piety. On this foundation, you then teach your sons and daughters the way of loyal patriots in the heavenly nation. If your children cry for the Republic of Korea, teach them, holding their hands and with tears in your eyes, “You are people who actually have no nation. This nation is not your true nation. There is another country that, in a real sense, we have to serve.” You should feel God’s concern as closely as you feel your baby’s breathing when you hold him or her to your bosom. You should teach your children while shedding tears and feeling God’s concern. Only then can you expand the depth and breadth of your children’s education. (30-113, 1970.03.17)

14 You need to have the mindset that whatever you own belongs to the Father. Sons and daughters should offer everything to the Father. For this, you should inspire your children to emulate Jesus in their loyalty to Heaven. In every possible way, you parents need to encourage your children to follow the right path of the Unification Church. This is what you need to do. To achieve this objective, it is you who first has to follow this path, for only then can you teach and educate your children to do the same. It violates the heavenly principles if parents try to educate their children to do something they have not done themselves. I teach you only

that which I have established as a foundation, by bringing victory through my own practice. (23-322, 1969.06.08)

15 Personal fortune should support family fortune; family fortune should support that of society; the fortune of society should support that of the nation; the nation's fortune should support that of the world; the world's fortune should support the fortune of heaven and earth, and that in turn should support God's fortune. If you live with the heart that your daily life is connected with the world's fortune and God's fortune, your life represents the realm of life on the world level. No one under Heaven can stop such a person. Do not become a husband who brings shame to his wife. Your wife is God's envoy. Your children are God's envoys. Their role as envoys is to serve as your closest aides, monitor you and educate you to follow the right path. You must not be a father who feels shame before his children. Do not feed these envoys from Heaven with stolen goods. You cannot attend Heaven or your ancestors after committing fraud. (163-034, 1987.04.18)

16 When you educate your children, I hope you can say, "I went this way for the sake of God's Will, so I want you to go this way too." When a husband, wife or parents die, they should be able to say the following words as their last will and testament: "In my conscience I have not one iota of shame. Please follow the same way I have gone. This is the best gift in the whole universe I can give you." This is the will of all wills. You can add, "If you do as I bid you, the world will be yours; God and the universe will belong to you." (125-106, 1983.03.13)

17 As a couple, we should be able to show our sons and daughters an example of how a husband and wife should live. Our children should be inspired to say, "Our father and mother have such a good relationship. I want to marry as soon as possible and live the way they do." It is the father and mother who should be able to teach the children how to lead their lives. Everything depends on the father and mother. (260-297, 1994.05.19)

18 The family is the headquarters of education. When I married my wife, we promised to each other that we would not show our tears in front of our children. What sin do children have? No matter how angry, bitter or sorrowful we are, no matter how much we have been crying, when we hear their voices as they come to greet us in the morning, we need to show our children the same face we showed them yesterday. A mother should hold her children lovingly and let them kiss her and then kiss their father. (251-098, 1993.10.17)

19 Where there is no unity between husband and wife, there is neither freedom nor peace. If you really want peace through the unity of husband and wife, first you have to unite your mind and body absolutely. This is the first article of my education. To this day, many religious leaders have thought that they themselves were good, while the world was bad. Yet that is not the case, because they have not achieved the first article. If a mother and father, as a husband and wife, do not live in unity, heaven and earth will ignore them. On the other hand, when a couple is

united and three generations of a family are united, the whole world will come to you. (243-170, 1993.01.03)

20 You have to be filial sons and daughters and loyal patriots. Until now, from God's viewpoint, there have been no real devoted children, loyal patriots or saints. You have to pray for your brothers and sisters as you would for the world. When you do so, along with the Parents, you can be recognized as a holy son or daughter, and stand before God. This is the formula. You have to educate your children by showing them how you attend me in your home. Teach them, "This man went through a path of suffering that changed history. By him the world is blessed. Let us attend him in our family. It will be a great blessing for our family to do so." (283-080, 1997.04.08)

21 As fathers and mothers, please do not let your children see you quarrel. You should never allow this to happen. You should promise this between husband and wife. This applies to my family too. To this day, my children say, "Our mother and father never fight. They are the best mother and father in the world." We have to teach our children to think that their parents are better than any king, that they are the hero and heroine of hope, greater than anyone else. If you have a son he should be able to say, "I want to be like my dad." Your daughter should be able to say, "I want to be a woman like my mom." You have to raise your children like this. This is true education. (90-123, 1976.12.21)

22 Your children should be able to testify that they never in their life saw their mother and father fight. I know there are all sorts of situations that can arise in life, but even so, you should not point fingers, push and shove, or drag each other down. No matter how upset the father is, he should not look at his son with an angry face. This is my philosophy. That is why my children think their father and mother are always experiencing peace and love as a couple. They think their mother is the best of all mothers and their father is the best of all fathers. The mother and father are each a second God. When you ask your children, "Do you want God or do you want your mother and father?" they should answer, "I want my mother and father." Even God likes that answer. That is something precious. The education that leads to this has the highest value of all. (165-094, 1987.05.20)

Section 5. The Path that Children Must Follow

1 When you reach your twenties, you are bound to marry and start a family, for which you have responsibility, and then you enter a competition. All families are competing. Even brothers and sisters compete among themselves, and parents compete in society to maintain their livelihood. In this way, everything is a competition. In order not to fall behind, you should not let yourself make the mistake of following your own interest. You cannot afford to lose a year or even a month, but should keep going on a clear path to benefit your family. Even figuring out the best way to go is a competition. If you fall behind by a year, it will be more difficult to catch up. Children will come, but you are already a step behind. It is like

shooting an arrow. You may have the same energy and stamina as everyone else when you finally aim and let go, but the arrows of those who let go first will fly first. For your arrow to catch up, you have to provide several times more propulsion, and not many people can do that. Therefore, during the time of your youth, the question is how you assimilate each year. That's why you need to set a clear goal of your own, and follow through with it. Before your ship sets out on a voyage, you have to know where it is going. You set the direction, start the engines, and then head out to sea. If you have to come back after you started your journey, you will face more difficulty. (120-314, 1982.10.20)

2 If you follow your original mind, the whole universe will open up before you. The original mind is faster and more forceful than a flying bullet. Once you enter such a state, you can converse with your own mind. You can hold a conversation with yourself. As soon as you consider doing something, the answer as to what to do will already be right in front of you. Being in such a state of spirituality, would you not know where to go? The way you ought to go surely will unfold before you, and the forces of the universe will help you follow it. Even if you feel pushed into a place where you are tested, once you are there, everything will assist you. In fact it is only then that you will be able to do great things. This great power undergirds the lives of true men and women. They are aware of this infinite power, and it propels them forward in the direction they wish to take. They can tell in a second if their direction is wrong. You make this decision through your own effort, but from then on, everything will be taken care of. To get there, you need to decide by yourself on the direction you should take. This is something you alone must determine. It is something you yourself know best. (120-327, 1982.10.20)

3 Your youth is an important period. The decisions you make then will affect your entire life. If you decide something and you push through with it for forty, fifty or sixty years, holding on to it and making effort day and night, whether you are eating or working, asleep or awake, you surely will become a world-class person. So once you decide something in your youth, you should follow through, even for your whole life, no matter how difficult it is. Even if your children and parents oppose you, the nation and world oppose you, even if God kicks you away, you have to continue. If you keep going like this, you will become a global figure. The time of your youth is that important. (100-102, 1978.10.08)

4 In your studies, you may have a favorite subject. Think about the importance of choosing what to study. The subject should be something that you value, that suits your aptitude and catches your interest. It should be something that you will enjoy all the time, when you are a child, a young adult, middle-aged and in your senior years—in the past, present and future. You have to focus on and study that subject. Then you have to explore eminent figures in that field of the past, present and future and compare yourself with them. If you are not yet good enough, you need to double your effort until you reach the top in your field. If you pioneer the way to become the world's best in your field, you can take the position of teaching

prominent leaders in every field. Then this world can be restored in a short time. (100-118, 1978.10.09)

5 When thinking about your future and deciding the area of expertise you will pursue, look deeply into your original mind and discuss it with God. You know your own character best. You know the talents you have. Follow where your original mind wants to lead you. No one can steer a boat before deciding which direction to go. When the pilot turns the wheel over to you, you will have to find the way by yourself. (120-314, 1982.10.20)

6 It is good to pray and practice devotion. Why is it good to pray? When you are focused in your mind, your powers of observation quicken. You will find that when you listen to your teacher's lecture at school, you already know what will be included in the test. You will know whether he or she will ask this question or not. You will be able to read the teacher's mind. It is as if you raised your spiritual antenna. The higher you raise your antenna, the more you will hear sounds that are very difficult to hear. Likewise, those who practice devotion have a connection to the future world. Revelations and prophecy come to those who practice devotion. Further, when you study, if you aim for higher results in order to develop a better future for the sake of humanity, for God and for the whole, then good spirits who were experts in that field will come to you. They surely will come. (100-122, 1978.10.09)

7 In the Last Days, we have to emphasize maintaining purity. We have to emphasize true love and true family. Without these we cannot correct this world. This is obvious. In the world there are many kinds of people, but they do not have a pure lineage. The problem of lineage has become so complicated through all the ups and downs of history. Who can solve it? Unless we solve the problem of lineage, we cannot return to the heavenly kingdom. (279-078, 1996.07.24)

8 If we were to ask God, "Within human beings, where does Your love dwell?" what would God reply? Where is the holy of holies in which God would want to dwell, the place of His settlement in the human world? Put it this way to God: "Where is the place where both You and human beings want Your absolute love to settle and stay?" We can conclude that this place of union between God and people is nowhere other than the reproductive organs. This is a revolutionary declaration. It is here that world peace, which brings everything into unity, begins, and from where the perfection of the ideal world expands. (279-073, 1996.07.24)

9 We live for those we love. We would not exchange them for the whole world. Love is absolute, unique, eternal and unchanging. The place where that love can settle is within each of us. There is no higher hope than finding and uniting with our own counterpart of love in that place of settlement. That is where God is; that is where the root of the universe germinates. That is where the root of love is created. What is the motivation for man and woman to relate? Even for those who do not know God, the motivation is love. We cannot deny this, even physiologically.

No one can deny the fact that all created beings move in pairs, as subject and object partners, male and female. Why was this pair system created? Love made it that way. (279-073, 1996.07.24)

10 God invested all His heart and devotion in making your most precious part, your reproductive organ. This organ is not bad, but it became bad because at the time of the Fall it was misused to destroy God's world. Happiness is related to it. History is related to it. Originally it was holy. The Bible refers to it as a place known as the holy of holies. For people, where is the holy of holies? The human body is a holy temple, and the reproductive part is your holy of holies. Heaven punishes the misuse of it. Its misuse can ensnare the whole tribe. You do not know how much I have had to suffer to recover this foundation. I had to carry the cross of love. I had to go through incredible suffering; I was dragged over the pass of tears, the pass of the cross, while being whipped and shedding blood, to fill the abyss of bitter sorrow. I tell you: do not get too close to a man or a woman. Unless you go through a very serious process, you cannot reconnect to the destined pure lineage. (183-087, 1988.10.29)

11 In these Last Days, the time of harvest, the unprincipled love that Adam and Eve planted in the Garden of Eden is rampant throughout the world. A woman does not own her reproductive organ, nor does a man own his. Woman is born for man, and man is born for woman. The owner of a woman's reproductive organ is not herself; the owner is her husband. The owner of a man's reproductive organ is his wife. If he uses it selfishly, it will ruin him. God, being wise, assigned the ownership of each person's reproductive organ to his or her marriage partner. (183-086, 1988.10.29)

12 Those who are called by God are responsible and destined to protect the blessed lineage, without stain, for thousands of generations. Those who cannot do this will not enter the kingdom of heaven. This teaching is not mistaken; it is correct. You must build the kingdom of heaven by yourself. You do so by uniting your mind and body based on true love. (263-110, 1994.08.21)

13 After you experience love in your family, you have to expand that love beyond the bounds of the family. To do this you must sacrifice for the greater love. Your family must sacrifice for the sake of your tribe and your tribe for the sake of the nation. Once you set up the condition of expanding your love through sacrifice, you will connect to the ideal realm of love everywhere. Once you open this environment of love, you can enter the kingdom of heaven. In reality, even if your love does not reach that level, if you practice such love only within your given environment, you will pass the test and be able to enter the heavenly realm in the other world. Even if you stay within the boundary of the village, you can join with and share the benefits of those who loved the world and heaven and earth. (133-139, 1984.07.10)

14 What is the principle of the Unification Church? It is that the individual has to sacrifice for the family, live for the sake of others, and lead a life of love. The

purpose of the family is to serve the tribe and live for that which is greater. Thus, with a heart that you are representing the entire Cain world, you need to live for the sake of others. If everyone in the family—the grandfather and grandmother, father and mother, husband and wife, and sons and daughters—lives with the same heart, you should be able to go freely anywhere in the heavenly world. You can even go to the realm of the patriots without any problem. The place where we live like that is the kingdom of heaven on earth. (133-140, 1984.07.10)

Section 6. The Kingdom of Heaven in the Family

1 Where did the Fall begin? What was the Fall that happened in the family? What can possibly fall down in a family? It can be nothing other than love. Do you think the Fall happened through the eating of a literal fruit? Could the original sin result from eating a fruit? People say that eating the fruit was the sin, but what fruit could cause one's descendants for thousands of generations to be sinners? This is a matter of lineage. If the root of sin is planted into lineage, it will last forever through heredity. The only way this can occur is through love. The misuse of love, illicit love, was the cause of the Fall. (23-167, 1969.05.18)

The course we must go for the restoration of the family

2 Due to Adam and Eve's Fall, God could not relate to them as the true ancestors or parents of humankind or as His sons and daughters. Adam and Eve were God's only son and daughter, but they fell to a position where He could not relate to them as such. If they had reached maturity, He would have blessed them as a couple and recognized them as His object partners of joy and comfort. Yet they failed to become His object partners, as children or as bride and bridegroom. God had endowed them with infinite value in proportion to His hope for them; yet because of their Fall, He experienced from them neither the filial heart of children nor the heart of comfort as a husband and wife. God had hoped that Adam and Eve would establish the way of filial piety and loyalty so they could stand before Him as the ancestors of hope and the sovereigns of all humanity. (20-082, 1968.04.28)

3 God is the King and Lord of true love. If He is the King and Bridegroom of true love, to say that He needs a Queen as His partner is absolutely within the Principle. In front of God, who is absolute, the first true man and woman are the people who can become His partners in love. You need money, knowledge and power, but if you do not have a spouse, these are all in vain. A husband needs his wife and children, and a wife needs her husband and children. The family is where we live with our loved ones. Families who attend God, the subject partner of love, become the base on which begins God's kingdom of heaven on earth, centered on His true love. Just as we wish for our loved ones to be infinitely more valuable than we are, God also wishes for His partners in love to become beings of infinite value. This is the status of true men and women. Adam and Eve were to have become such a man and woman. (270-238, 1995.06.07)

4 Due to the Fall, God lost the True Parents and the children of Adam's family. God lost His true son and daughter. God has had no family that could inherit His lineage of true love. Because we inherited false love, false life and false lineage through the fallen parents, our mind and body came into conflict. Adam and Eve turned into enemies, and bloody wars broke out among their sons and daughters. The providence of salvation, through which God has worked to resolve this conflict, is the providence of restoration. In this providence, a son and a daughter whose minds and bodies are united, representing those who were lost, must become husband and wife in absolute unity. Their sons and daughters must unite with them absolutely, centered on God's true love, and build a true family in which all live eternally in attendance of God. Then this family unites with Christianity, the religion in the position of the bride, to establish a blood relationship with God. Together they re-organize, through God's true love, the family, tribe, people, nation and world of oneness. That is the completion of God's providence of salvation. (270-243, 1995.06.07)

5 What is God's purpose in establishing religions? His Will is to form a beloved family, tribe, people and nation centered on His most beloved son and daughter, in whom His flesh and bones can become one. Then what is the Messiah? He is the one who comes to earth with God's eternal true love as his root. He is the first to perfect the ideal that all religions pursue. The purpose of God's providence of salvation is for him to expand true life and true lineage throughout the earth, centering on the true love that was lost, and finally recover the ideal family. (270-243, 1995.06.07)

6 All things exist for human beings. The ultimate objective of history must be a model family, which includes material things as well as children and parents. This is the basic foundation of the universe. Without parents, children cannot be born; those children should have dominion over the material world centered on their parents. Adam and Eve should have had dominion over the material world. All of this should have come about simultaneously. (35-277, 1970.10.25)

7 The family of Adam, the ancestor of humankind, was invaded, so this family must be redeemed. That is why Jesus had to come as unfallen Adam. As such, he is the second Adam. Since Adam, the first ancestor of humankind, became the fallen ancestor, God, in order to establish His original Will, sent Jesus as the true ancestor who has nothing to do with the Fall. Through that true ancestor Adam's family should have been recovered. (20-335, 1968.07.14)

8 Every conceivable incident has taken place in the family. This began in Adam and Eve's family. Through their wrongful union, Adam and Eve drove God out of their family. Also they caused the expulsion of the angelic world, they lost the world of creation, they lost the value of humanity, and they lost love. All of this occurred because of the wrongful union of a man and a woman in Adam's family. (100-276, 1978.10.22)

9 A redeemed family substantiates the hope of history. God has been guiding the providence for six thousand years until now in order to redeem one family. Where should this hope, the substance of history, be realized? It should be realized in our present society, not some time in the future. This culminates in the Last Days. This redeemed family is the core of hope in history and the core of hope of all people today. It is the core of the past, present and future hope of humankind. The countless saints and sages who came and left this world longed for this family. (21-051, 1968.09.01)

10 The term “restored family” appears for the first time when the returning Lord receives his bride. This family had to be restored; it is the family that all humanity has hoped for. Throughout the past six thousand years, countless faithful religious believers who sacrificed their lives at the hands of rulers and politicians, ardently wished that the Lord would come and alleviate the bitter sorrow caused by their enemies. Yet the Lord cannot do that alone. If He could, He would have done it long ago. That is why God’s family has to appear and lay a new foundation on earth. In so doing, it should be able to transform Satan’s world with the explosive power of the heart. (21-044, 1968.09.01)

11 What is our deepest sorrow? It is that Adam and Eve were unable to form a true family as the True Father and True Mother in the Garden of Eden at the beginning of history. This was God’s bitter sorrow even before it was ours. God created human beings to establish such a family and build the kingdom of peace on this earth. Nevertheless, His dream for this family was shattered; as a result God has been guiding the prolonged history of restoration for six thousand years, harboring bitter grief. To this day, God has traveled innumerable treacherous paths of suffering to complete this process. The returning Lord bears the responsibility to resolve this history. Then what should he do? He must form a family, not in mid-air, but upon the earth. Only then will there emerge a true tribe, people, nation and world. (21-051, 1968.09.01)

12 The coming Jesus will have to establish the family of God’s hope—the True Family. Until now humanity has been seeking true love, but in fact there should have been no such thing as false love in the family or in society. Essentially, the one true family has to appear as the center of God’s love and the center of the greatest love for which all humankind has longed. Without such a family, God cannot form a tribe and a people; without such a people, we cannot realize God’s nation or world. It starts in the family, the only place where the highest standards can be realized—the highest ideal God desires in His providence of salvation and the highest standard that people can attain. (32-198, 1970.07.15)

13 Throughout the ages, religions have sought one man. Yet they did not encourage marriage, and have refused to change that stance. If they continue like this, they will perish. Nonetheless, we have reached the point where that man has been recovered, and a woman has been recovered for him. The Unification Church is the

group that initiated this recovery of women. Consequently, the Unification Church is the church that is working to restore the family. (30-218, 1970.03.23)

14 Until now the purpose of religion has been to save individuals. However, the purpose of the Unification Church is the salvation of the family, rather than the individual. Although we seek salvation, it is based on the family, and while seeking the kingdom of heaven, we do not speak of a husband going to the kingdom of heaven while his wife goes to hell. Both of them go to the kingdom of heaven together. Likewise, we do not let our parents go to hell. Instead, we bring them to the kingdom of heaven, along with our children. The Unification Church teaches the way for us to go to the kingdom of heaven, bringing our entire beloved family and tribe. Hence it is on a different level from other religions. Religions thus far have emphasized celibacy, but the Unification Church puts primary importance on the family. We go the family-centered way, but our families are for the sake of the world and for the sake of God. This is the way we Unification Church members are to go. (34-359, 1970.09.20)

15 The love of parents, husband and wife, and children are what motivate us to forge eternal bonds of oneness. These bonds of love transcend laws, systems, all contexts and circumstances, and even ourselves. No social system or nation that ignores this can endure. The Unification Church's purpose is to attain family salvation in addition to individual salvation. This is what makes the Unification Church different from other religions. (34-328, 1970.09.20)

True families and God's kingdom

16 Our view of life is centered on the cosmos; the "cosmos" here refers to heaven and earth. From this viewpoint, each person has a mind that symbolizes heaven and a body that symbolizes earth. These two, mind and body, are to unite with God inwardly and outwardly. In the original state in the Garden of Eden, Adam and Eve, each with united mind and body, should have united with each other, making God their center. Had they completed a family centered on God, God would have dwelt in that family. (20-308, 1968.07.14)

17 Culture drives history's development. The world of culture is driven by the purpose of seeking one embodiment of true character. That is, it is seeking one being with a character that embodies truth. Therefore history seeks truth, true words and the true way. Then what is ideology or philosophy? In the beginning, there was no need for such concepts. If you nevertheless want to name it, you would call it "Adam's philosophy," "Adam's way of thinking" or "Adamic thought." Adamic thought is neither communism nor democracy. It is the parent-centered way of thinking. (21-331, 1969.01.01)

18 Godism is what we can call the way of thinking Adam and Eve would have developed had they not fallen, but attended God as their Father and grown up as His son and daughter. This way of thinking accepts and assimilates the whole,

centered on God, and draws all people to harmonize with the subject partner. It encompasses both the individual and the whole. Therefore we accept one another, and no divisions come about. Nonetheless, because of the Fall, that philosophy did not emerge. We have had to recover it. This is Godism, which is the philosophy of sons and daughters centered on God. The Unification Church also introduces “cosmos-ism,” which refers to the way of thinking based on the cosmos—heaven and earth. It advocates that sons and daughters become couples and establish families centering on God. This is a cosmic worldview. In the word for cosmos, cheonju (天宙) the second Chinese character, ju (宙), means house. I chose the character meaning house because a house is a place where a family, with a husband and wife, dwells. (21-331, 1969.01.01)

19 To really love the world, you first have to love people. To really love people, you first have to love your spouse. A man must love a woman, and a woman must love a man. That is a couple, husband and wife. Those who are bonded as a husband and wife will be able to love the world with the heart of love they have for their spouse. In other words, a woman who loves her husband should honor all men of the world as she honors him. She should likewise love and honor all women of the world, recognizing that they are loved and valued by their husbands. It is the same for men. Each man should honor all women of the world as worthy to receive the love he has toward his precious wife. He should also honor all men as worthy to receive the same quality of love he receives from his wife. We should go forward on the path of love like this, step by step. It must not be ambiguous. Therefore, the family is the standard for the formation of a nation. It is the standard for the whole world, no matter how big. For this reason, the Unification Church advocates a worldview centered on Heaven’s family. We call it the cosmos-centered worldview, because cheonju (the cosmos) signifies Heaven’s home. (51-169, 1971.11.21)

20 Unification Church members have to live according to cosmos-ism, a way of thinking centered on heaven and earth, Heaven’s home. This means to build God’s home, which should be maintained based on Godism. God is the King of the world, the subject partner who maintains the households of the world. He should be able to lead everyone to do so, based on Godism. Therefore, Unification Church blessed families, who live where this worldview is taught, should live for others, not just for their husband or wife. We were never meant to live that way. This is different from the past. We move forward based on the family. We must be saved, but salvation is not for the individual alone. We absolutely cannot go to the kingdom of heaven alone. The Unification Church has introduced this new teaching on earth. Who will be the owner in the future? The family will be the owner, the family of God’s tradition. (59-149, 1972.07.16)

21 The teaching of the Unification Church is the way of thinking centered on the cosmos. For the fallen world, a teaching is like a ship in which we can cross the waters. It is a means that can guide us through a certain time and process only. When we talk about the cosmos-centered way of thinking, the word cosmos means something like a house. Why a house? It is because we cannot build the kingdom of

heaven without the family, which dwells in a house. To become the Third Israel, we have to go through the house; in other words, we have to go through the family. To build the kingdom of heaven in the Garden of Eden, we have to go through Adam's family. When the members of that household honor the law, the order and the teachings of the family, and their descendants for thousands of generations inherit these practices and expand them horizontally to the worldwide level, the kingdom of heaven will come about. (158-299, 1968.02.04)

22 The cosmos-centered way of thinking is based on True Parents. It is rooted in the idea of the Parents. This should be the outlook of your home, your nation and yourself. Whose view of life would the world have embraced had there been no Fall? It would have been Adam's view of life, the way of thinking centered on True Parents. It is the way of thinking centered on the Father and Mother. There can be no ideology higher than that. That is why the Unification Church strives to resolve matters of the heart based on Heaven's viewpoint, within the framework of the original ideal family based on True Parents' worldview. As long as we apply this teaching and system in our families, the Unification Church will not perish. (26-201, 1969.10.25)

23 Where does the kingdom of heaven begin? It begins from the family. Then what is our ideology? We have a family-centered ideology. The word cheonju juui (cosmos-centered way of thinking) contains cheon, meaning Heaven, and ju, meaning house, so it means the philosophy of Heavens house. Only this explanation makes the meaning of the word cheonju (the cosmos) clear. The sixty-six books of the Bible are filled with words that express the desire for the ideal family. Furthermore, what is it that all men desire? It is to have an ideal wife. The greatest desire of all women is to have an ideal husband. Consider a woman who earned a doctorate. No matter how proud and famous she is, her deepest desire remains to meet an ideal man she can love and bear children with. This is the root of happiness. The ideal of the Unification Church does not lie anywhere else. It begins and ends with the family. (26-103, 1969.10.18)

24 God's ideal is not something vague that exists only in His mind. It is not intended to remain a mere concept, but is to be realized in the actual lives of people on earth. It refers not just to the personal daily lives of men and women as individuals. God planned to realize His ideal based on the foundation of family life. When the ideal is realized in the family, children who are true and ideal will appear. Those children will bring forth the tribe, people, nation and world that will eventually realize God's ideal world. God's ideal is to realize this world, which begins not from the individual but from the family. (101-086, 1978.10.22)

25 What is the way for a man and a woman? It is the family. The foundation of the family is a man and a woman in complete unity. That is where it begins. Without harmony in the family, everything will be shattered in confusion. Man and woman should not have different ideals. They should have one ideal in accordance with God's ideal. That is, these three, God, man and woman, create a family in which

God's ideal begins centered on one man. By doing so, the ideals of both the man and the woman are realized and embodied. (101-085, 1978.10.22)

26 Where do we expect the ideal of love first to be realized? Will it begin out in the world? Will a nation create it? The action of love is relational and not individual; it has to begin in the home. Even if someone were to unify the world, if he were unable to unite his own family he would be an unhappy person. The kingdom of heaven starts in the family. Do you think that after Jesus said, "Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand," he went on to say, "Singles, come here and the kingdom of heaven will be realized"? No, he did not. What did Jesus say? He referred to himself as a bridegroom, which implies a bride. He was speaking of the family. The Messiah has to return in order to find his bride. That means he is coming to make his home. God's ideal of a principled family had never been realized, so He intended to make Jesus' family the first model family in history. It would have been a textbook to educate all people, connecting families and bringing about a unified world, realizing the concept of the kingdom of heaven on earth. (92-088, 1977.03.20)

27 In our families we can sing of happiness, of freedom and the ideal, and we can embrace the world. This is the ideal world, the world where we can be satisfied. Nothing is lacking in that world. Within our families, we are satisfied whether in our hearts or in material things, and we offer gratitude and glory to God. In this way we can enter the kingdom of heaven. What kind of people can enter the kingdom of heaven? It is those who attend their parents at home, share their happiness, freedom, ideals and satisfaction with their brothers and sisters, and overcome difficulties to return glory to God, in a joyful place of dominion over the creation in heaven and on earth. (12-258, 1963.05.22)

28 The earth is where we determine the foundation of God's ideal. Where on earth? It is in the family, where a man and a woman unite as one in love, centered on God. When we mention the kingdom of heaven, what comes to mind? It should be the place where God, my family and I have reached unity. Even if you went to that kingdom, if God were not there, it would not be the kingdom of heaven. God's presence is absolutely required. But will God's presence alone be enough? If you do not have your own ideal partner, even God's love will have no value to you. Therefore, in the spirit world, those who have lived ideal family lives are the closest to God. (90-083, 1976.12.19)

29 To love our parents is to love heaven and earth; to love our children is to love humankind; to love material things is to love the whole universe. We have to love our parents, children and material things in our daily lives. These together are the microcosm of the universe. We have to set this tradition in our family. Establishing such a tradition in the family is absolutely necessary. We have to set up the tradition by reclaiming the family, and seek the ideal world in our family. If there had been no Fall, we would have loved our spouse and children and would have

attained total oneness. We naturally would have gone to the kingdom of heaven. (129-267, 1983.11.13)

30 In the world today we hear many people saying, "The world should become one." They all want to see a peaceful and happy world. In religious terminology, we would say that we need to build the kingdom of heaven on earth; we need to build an ideal world. But even though people say this, and even though the whole world wants this and tries to make it happen, they have yet to learn that this can only come about through the family. For this reason, unless we actually build a worldwide foundation upon which we sing of the ideal in the family, build peace within the family, and sing songs of love and happiness in the family, no matter how much we dream of the ideal world, or the kingdom of heaven on earth, that world will not come about. (159-174, 1968.05.10)

31 How will the kingdom of heaven in the family come about? If the mother and father are united completely in love, the sons will want to have wives like their mother, and the daughters will want to have husbands like their father. With the mother and father as a plus and the sons and daughters as a minus, they will unite as one perfect family; that is the kingdom of heaven of the family. At the place where this kingdom is realized, God's ideal can settle in the four-position foundation. The Principle states that the perfection of the ideal of creation is the perfection of the four-position foundation. (96-030, 1978.01.01)

32 The Unification Church has a clear viewpoint. Therefore today, wherever you go, if you are equipped with the Unification Church teaching, nothing can block you. You should build the kingdom of heaven for tomorrow with this confidence. We advocate building that kingdom in our everyday lives through our own efforts. We build the kingdom of heaven of heart in our own families, in our family life, and expand it to the environment, through our own efforts. God wanted to build an eternally blessed paradise so that He could dwell on earth. In our generation we have to build what God intended, together with Him, and offer it to Him. With all material things, with our sons and daughters, with our brothers and sisters, we have to lead our lives in praise of God. Otherwise we cannot call ourselves His sons and daughters, who live in accordance with the Principle of Creation and the principle of the four-position foundation. (26-057, 1969.10.18)

33 What is true love? It is the combination of parents' love, husband-wife love and children's love. Unless we set up the tradition of making sacrifices for one another, relationships of love will not last for long; they will break down. Because parents make sacrifices for their children, this bond never breaks. Further, children who have grown up receiving genuine love from their parents can never be disloyal to them. Moreover, blessings will come to the family of the husband and wife who relentlessly strive to serve and sacrifice for each other, with each saying to the other, "You have lived for my sake." Such a family is the blessed land that God can come to visit. (43-324, 1971.05.02)

34 Again, I am saying that we have to change our families, one by one. The organizational structure of the Unification Church is based on families; families are the center. The focus has shifted from the individual to the family. Until today you may have disregarded the importance of the family, but in fact it is essential. Now is the time in which the family, which you have neglected, will emerge with absolute authority. For this reason, the Blessing has unsurpassed value. (22-334, 1969.05.11)

35 Tribes will emerge centered upon blessed families, so please accomplish your mission as tribal messiahs. In the future we will establish churches around the leaders of tribes. All blessed families are leaders of tribes. In the future, the Unification Church will not have services based on sermons; they will be based on testimony. We will focus on testimonies that can bring honor and pride to our families. Thus, all family members will participate in such services together. We will learn from the testimonies of exemplary families. Families with little to report will receive guidance. In this way we will be able to build the kingdom of heaven in our families. Unless we do so, the kingdom of heaven will not be realized on earth. (23-063, 1969.05.11)

36 Only a husband and wife who love each other can enter the kingdom of heaven. A couple that lives in love on earth is already living in that kingdom. Jesus said that the kingdom of heaven is within you, didn't he? But today the Unification Church says the kingdom of heaven is within your family. If we do not realize the kingdom of heaven in our families, we will not fulfill the purpose of the Unification Church. If we do realize it, we are fulfilling that purpose. With this in mind we should walk the right way, centered on the Principle. (37-110, 1970.12.22)

BOOK 6 TRUE CREATION

Chapter 1. The Significance of the Creation

Section 1. Learning from the Creation 585

Section 2. The Meaning of the Creation of All Things 590

Section 3. Nature and the Lessons It Offers 599

Chapter 2. The Essence and Order of the Universe

Section 1. Love Is the Essence of the Universe 607

Section 2. The Principles of Existence and Action 609

Section 3. Order and Law in the Universe 618

Section 4. Creation and Evolution 622

Chapter 3. The Creation's Lament and True Stewardship

Section 1. Our Relationship with the Creation 628

Section 2. The Creation's Lament and Our Response 632

Section 3. True Dominion over the Creation 637

Section 4. Our Attitude toward the Creation 643

Section 5. Restoration of the Original Eden 647

Chapter 4. A Vision for Nature and the Ocean

Section 1. Returning the Creation to God and the Pursuit of Leisure Activities 652

Section 2. The Original Museum of Creation 654

Section 3. The Era of the Ocean 659

Section 4. The Deep Meaning of Ocean Fishing 668

BOOK 6 TRUE CREATION

CHAPTER 1

The Significance of the Creation

Section 1. Learning from the Creation

1 Whenever I look at nature, I think deeply about how God created all these things. I have such a sense of awe and wonder when I think about how all the trees and plants were created. We should have a sincere concern for and interest in everything around us. Only after we grasp the details of things can we manage them well. But even through simply appreciating the original value of nature, we will receive a great blessing. Then we will comprehend the fact that nature was made for us. However, people don't know how to look at nature. Nature is truly a

mystery. When we come to know nature, we can hear wonderful music even in the sound of the wind. This also helps us greatly in our life of faith. Nature is the closest thing to our own bodies.(014-101,19640620)

Nature is the first scripture

2 Since human beings were fashioned to be the lords of creation, we need to stand as models in front of all things of creation. From the position of children attending our Heavenly Father, if we find life's lessons in all things of creation and harmonize with them, we will be naturally attuned to the principles of heaven and earth. Animals cooperate with one another to protect their own kind. When a lion approaches a herd of zebras, they form a circle around their young and protect them by kicking with their hind legs. Lions too, even though they may fight over their prey, still share it. Thus we learn from nature how to harmonize with one another and how to live together. That's the way of our life.(350-264,20010818)

3 I have a love for literature. I truly enjoy reciting poetry. Nature provides a setting in which everyone can feel inspired to recite poetry. People should be proud of their environment before they are proud of themselves. They should say, "The mountains are good, the water is good, the fields are good and my house in these surroundings is good. Therefore I feel good." God created the environment first, and only after that did He create Adam. Everywhere in this environment are subject partners and object partners. There is nothing in nature that does not exist in pairs. Those who can feel, in the midst of nature, that they are model representations of the universe and owners of it, are happy people. I found the Principle in nature.(394-236,20021012)

4 When I step outside in the morning, I listen to the twittering of the birds. The sounds may seem much the same, but I wonder, "Why is that one chirping like this?" If a bird is chirping alone, I can discern without a doubt that it is singing to call its partner. Often I will hear a bird call from here, and then one responding from over there. They tweet back and forth and then come together and meet. I am so sure when a bird is chirping alone that this will happen. It's always like this. That's why I truly love nature. I am saying you should take an interest in nature. In the course of seeking out the Principle, I took great interest in everything. I would have a question, and then pay attention to a myriad of things, and from among them, the answer would emerge. When that answer aligns with the east, west, south and north, I know it is correct. This is the Principle.(069-171,19731031)

5 When I go to a beautiful, scenic spot, I look at that place and evaluate it from the viewpoint of heavenly fortune. I try to connect that place to heavenly for-tune. That is why, in the early days of our church, I visited many mountains. When I see a country's mountains, earth and water, I can intuit the character of its people, You can drink the water anywhere in Korea; it is so clean and pure. We must restore nature first. Before we go out overseas, we must deeply love our country's natural environment. The one who knows how to love the land where he was born knows how to love his own body. The one who knows how to love his body knows how to love his own mind. The one who loves his own mind is the one who also loves God.(014-102,19640620)

6 You should go into the deep and mysterious world of God's heart through the spiritual path, thereby becoming able to appeal to nature in tears. You should say to nature, "Before my circumstances, there are your circumstances. I know you are in this pitiable situation because of me, and for this I am sorry. Please wait a little longer." You need to become a person with this attitude and heart. We travel the path of the spiritual seeker to learn this attitude and heart. In the past, people of prayer described nature as the "first scripture." They affirmed that we should study nature, which was created by God, before we read the Bible.(020-271,19680707)

Nature is our textbook

7 All of nature was the model to teach Adam and Eve how to practice ideal love. It was a textbook of love and a natural museum of love—a museum to teach love. Thus nature serves to carry people toward their completion and perfection. Nature exists in order to perfect love. The mineral world pleads with us, "Please complete your love;" the plant world begs us, "Please make your love perfect." The animal world says the same thing. They all want to see people completely ripen and mature their love—that is to say, they want to see God's love perfected. When that time comes, a world filled with abundant love, a world that can become one, will come about. That is why they want to see the perfection of love. When God's love, human love and the universe's love are all perfected, everyone will be able to say for the first time, "Oh, we are happy!"(131-126,19840416)

8 God manifested the world and all things of creation as a model all people could follow. Human beings were meant to become the lords of creation. Isn't the fact that we were unable to become such lords shameful? When we hear male and female birds calling out to find their young, we cannot help but feel how contradictory our human lives are. I am telling you to go out in the morning and look at where the birds are flying. The male flies to where the female is, the female

flies to where the male is, and both of them fly to where the fledglings are. If you go to South America, you will see thousands of parrots flying around, gathering together in one place and singing. It is the same with geese. Other kinds of birds, such as magpies, also gather to feed in the morning.(608-068,20090219)

9 In the beginning, Adam and Eve, born as Gods children, were meant to gradually grow in the realm of God s protection. As their intellect developed, they would have come to realize why God created all things, and God would have educated them through the created world. The created world, where everything is in motion, provided resources for the education of Adam and Eve, who were our original ancestors, and it was a textbook teaching them how to live. The world was a model and a museum showing them how to lead an ideal life. By observing all things around them as they grew, they would naturally have learned how to relate to each other in love. Whether they looked at the insect world or the world of higher animals, they were meant to discover that these living things are made in interacting pairs, in order to do things for each other, call to each other and love each other. Even though Adam and Eve were immature, by looking around them they would have learned the principles of the world as their intellectual capacity developed. As they grew toward maturity, they would have come to sense the reality of love. On coming to know love, they would have mastered everything.(137-127,19860101)

10 Children's favorite toys are usually things that move. They intuitively like lively creatures such as puppies and insects. Children like moving, dynamic things, such as flying creatures and wild animals. This is how people are. Their interest is aroused when they see the natural world and the earth in motion. Of course, their level of interest in different things varies, but people find it interesting to contemplate these things. In this way they learn about the attributes of love in themselves. Observing how insects and higher animals live, we see that they all exist in pairs. Considering this, we can see nature as a museum and a textbook to educate human beings, the object partners of God's love, about the ideal of reciprocal relationships. (137-211,19860103)

11 People were created as subject and object partners; they were created to have mutual relationships. The world too, full of all things that were created for the sake of humankind, exists in harmony under the principle of love; it fulfills its purpose of life and God's ideal when it receives peoples love. For people as they grow, especially for the maturing Adam and Eve, the created world of all things was made as a textbook of love and as a museum that endlessly displays the essence of love. Adam and Eve, representing God's masculine subjectivity and feminine receptivity,

would have learned how to love through nature, the textbook of love, grown to their full perfection, and united with each other horizontally. The horizontal unity of Adam and Eve would have represented the completion of the ideal of the object partner, and this was God's universal hope of creation.(135-012,19850820)

12 From the perspective of the standard of true love, Adam and Eve were meant to grow up observing and learning from nature's garden of love, created according to the pair system. They were to have become aware of what they were to do as they grew up, through all the natural things and events around them. The creation existed as the museum of love for the education of Adam and Eve. As they grew, they would have watched the birds and butterflies, noticing that all these creatures exist as male-and-female pairs. Eventually they would have come to understand how these creatures developed affection for each other and brought forth their young. When they reached full maturity, Adam and Eve were supposed to realize for themselves that man is the prince of God's love, representing plus, and woman is the princess of God's love, representing minus. Then the woman would have come to believe, "That man is the very man I need!" and the man would have thought, "She really is the woman I need!"(201-162,19900330)

13 In spring, the trees blossom and butterflies and bees dance in and around them. They do this in accordance with the principle of love. When new buds open on the trees and the branches start to grow, they quicken in order to whisper in love. The trees grow and, when the time comes, they bear fruit. Relationships expressing the principle of love are evident in the plant world. All this is educational material for us. When you look at nature you can see that what I have said is well founded. Even God moves based on the relationship of love between subject partner and object partner. Accordingly whatever plant you consider, it acts based on the principle of true love. The mineral World is the same. Therefore we have veins of gold and of silver in the earth and veins of blood in the human body. The mineral world serves a purpose higher than its own.(133-071,19840708)

14 All things of creation love each other. In the worlds of animals, plants and minerals, such loving interactions are evident. For their partners they dance, they sing, they fly and they crawl. When you look at all this and ask, "what are they doing?" you can begin to learn from them. What is nature? It is the museum that was to educate Adam. It was a living textbook to educate Adam. Wherever Adam went, Eve was to follow; wherever Eve went, Adam was to follow. Adam's sphere of activity was broad because he was a man, externally active. Looking at nature he would exclaim, "Look at that! What are they doing?" He would pay careful attention

to discover how animals got together, how their bellies grew bigger and how they gave birth to their young. He would have learned from this.(134-194,19850720)

15 When Eve became a teenager, her breasts began to grow. She would also have noticed how animals feed their young. As boys and girls grow, the strength of their attraction toward each other surges. For no apparent reason, teenage boys and girls feel marvelously attracted to each other. Likewise, we can imagine that Adam and Eve would have felt a strong attraction toward each other. They would have seen how male and female animals meet and kiss. They would have learned everything from them. Nature was supposed to educate them. The whole world of creation was to be the educational resource to stimulate Adam and Eve.(134-195,19850720)

16 God created out of love. From the beginning to the end, He invested everything. Therefore He said, "I am the Alpha and the Omega, the beginning and the end." (Rev. 22:13) Such total investment is possible only due to love, because only love contains everything. God created the universe for love, and He lives for love. He created because He needed an object partner for His love. He created human beings as the model and then placed them in the east, west, north and south. Thus the entire creation, everything in the mineral, plant and animal kingdoms, was created in pairs. Everything in the world, based on the pair system, constitutes a textbook to enable people to learn the process of seeking ideal love. Even male and female insects make love. Everything in nature is educational material.(173-211,19880218)

17 Everything in nature is scientific. The whole universe is a museum of science. Even the four legs of a table are learned from nature. Human beings by themselves cannot create anything. The universe is the treasure chest of all knowledge. The universe is nature's university. The natural environment in which fish and animals live is no different from that of human beings. They all breathe, they all see. Even small insects have eyes. If they didn't have eyes, how could they find their partners? They all have sensory organs, they exist in pairs and they multiply.(247-152,19930502)

Section 2. The Meaning of the Creation of All Things

1 God did not create all things of heaven and earth on a whim. He did not create them without a purpose or direction or without a specific philosophy. Rather, He created them with a great purpose, based on a magnificent universal philosophy. Therefore the philosophy inherent in God's heart is present in all existing things,

from the tiniest creature to the incredibly vast universe. With such a philosophy then, for what purpose did God create all this? Beyond any doubt, His deep purpose was to see an ideal world based on His love, that is, a world of true love in which we communicate with love, are joyful in love, live in love and die in love.(009-164,19600508)

2 Why did God create heaven and earth? It is because, even though He is the Absolute Subject Being, a subject partner alone cannot experience joy. One cannot produce joy alone. Rather, it comes about only through mutual relationships. Peace also comes about through mutual relationships. Therefore even God cannot play the role of God when He is alone.(058-210,19720611)

The purpose for which God created all things

3 We understand God as the subject being of dual characteristics. But God needs an object partner for love, which is why He created everything in heaven and earth. That is why, for example, the atomic world has electrons surrounding the nucleus, the world of chemical compounds has positive and negative ions, the plant world has stamen and pistil, and the animal world includes male and female. Everything exists in pairs. Because of the nature of love, God made them in pairs. Everything in creation is born in love, lives for love and must complete the purpose of love.(223-300,1991117)

4 When God saw everything He had created over six days, His joy was infinite. When God said, "It is good, it is good" over and over again with such a joyful heart, to whom was He speaking? He was speaking to all the things of creation. He was talking to all things with such an eager heart. However, all created things lost their original value that God had praised as good in the garden of Eden. To this day, God has not been able to realize His Will and take pride in His creation. When we think of this sad reality, God's originally joyful words, "It is good to behold," became instead words of sorrow.(005-238,19590208)

5 Why did God create heaven and earth? Although He is the Absolute Being, He cannot feel joy alone. No matter how much it is said that God is happy, if He is alone He cannot be truly stimulated and so He can't really feel joy. No matter how much the Absolute Being may declare, "I am the Absolute Being, the master of love and master of life," if He is all alone He cannot feel the stimulation of love. By Himself and completely alone, God cannot feel all of heaven and earth stimulating life within His own body.(038-152,19710103)

6 How could God create the universe and human beings? He could do so because He possesses heart. Life can arise only where there is heart. Where there is life, movement and development can take place. The work of creation must have a purpose, as it is the nature of heart to aim toward the realization of the original purpose. Therefore it follows that the purpose of creation is to bring joy that will satisfy God's heart. This joy is derived from the creation, especially from human beings when they resemble Him.(065-258,19721126)

7 When God created the world, He was joyful. After the Creation, He said, "It is good to behold." God felt joy. What is joy? It is what you feel when you accomplish a certain purpose. God felt joyful over all the things He had created, because His sense of purpose was embedded in them. So what kind of world is the restored world? Simply stated, it is a world where people live with multidimensional connections of heart through which they can praise God as they behold each individual entity in the universe.(009-168,19600508)

8 Before the Fall our ancestors should have become the proud and glorious substance of original heart by bringing all creation to a glorious condition in front of God. They should have made all things into symbolic object partners of joy, object partners of beauty, and object partners that could stimulate God's external and internal nature. That this never happened became God's deep sorrow. You would be the happiest of people if you could live in the garden of Eden—in harmony with God's heart, in harmony with goodness and in accordance with God's ideal, and if you could feel the stimulation of goodness from everything around you, and if you could experience even one hour of glory in which you could call God your Father.(006-337,19590628)

9 This entire created world came into being for whom? It is for me. It is to bring us joy. Therefore we should take the initiative to create an environment in which we can feel happy through the results of our efforts. It is God's intention to develop a high ideal of love. When we love all things and, as a result, all things return beauty to us, we will become the center of harmony. The life that you intend or wish for is not the important thing. What is important is the center. You must find the center of your current life. But how can you find the center? How can we fallen people, who lost the center of harmony, rediscover that place? You are not required to be bigger than all creation to become the subject partner. Rather, you need to be confident, thinking, "I must become the subject partner." In other words, "Through the authority of love, I should stand above you." You need that kind of confidence. A subject partner must be absolute. The universe must unite and be in harmony

with the one Absolute Subject Partner. You need to be in that place. You need to stand in the place where you can integrate all things.(029-133,19700226)

10 How can we feel the joyful heart of God when He created all things? You must all experience that heart. Whether you like it or not is not the issue. If you want to feel that heart, you had better meditate in a garden from morning to sunset. You need to lose yourself in the realm in which you are unaware of the passage of time. Then, when you breathe in, the air of the cosmos will flow into you with the power of life. You should live like this, infused with the cosmic power of life. If you live like this, when you breathe out, all beings on earth will awaken. When you sleep, all beings will harmonize with the rhythm of your sleep as your responsive object partners. This is the position of the Absolute Being who governs the entire cosmos. In that place you stand in harmony with all things. When you breathe out, all things will receive your breath; when you breathe in, all things will give to you. When you have this kind of relationship of love with all things, you are giving and receiving on a cosmic level. However, you should not stop at experiencing this kind of relationship. Rather, you need to continue until you become a central being of harmony.(029-134,19700226)

11 The universe is so awe-inspiring. How wonderful is our world when you understand that God created the universe for us, that He did not create it just for His own entertainment or for fun, but through devoting Himself out of profound love for us! We should be deeply grateful in realizing that our Father created the entire cosmos just for us. With that heart we need to walk through the garden looking at flowers, grass and trees, listening to and appreciating the chirping of birds, admiring the flowing water and the gentle breeze. Looking at all this, you cannot but realize in your heart how wonderful this world is!(087-320,19760627)

The world created through absolute faith and love

12 Absolute faith, absolute love, absolute obedience! This was Gods attitude before He began His creation. God created all things with absolute faith, thinking, "This shall be as I say!" This is absolute faith. The things He created were the object partners of His love. God created everything, from the tiniest insect to everything in the plant and animal kingdoms, as the object partners of His absolute love. His sons and daughters were supposed to eat the object partners of God's absolute love and grow. We owe our lives to the earth, to the things of creation, to the air and the sun. Nothing belongs to us. There is nothing we can boast of. Since We have to live by eating the things that were created as the object partners of His absolute love in

absolute faith, then not only must we treat them with absolute faith and absolute love, but also, standing as owners, we have the responsibility to digest these created things only after investing our lives for them.(373-148,20020331)

13 When God was creating this world, even when He created a single flower, He imagined this as a beautiful object partner of His love in the future and created it with absolute faith, absolute love and absolute investment— and then forgot about how much He had invested. He invested everything, holding back nothing, because even the tiniest thing would become the flesh and blood of His beloved sons and daughters and therefore would be His own flesh and blood and body. So absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience are not vague terms. That is to say, before creating, God knew that even a single grain of sand could become a nutrient to form the flesh, blood, bone and bone marrow of human beings, the substantial incarnations of His love. So God created even a single grain of sand with absolute faith, love and obedience.(458-197,20040709)

14 In the creation of all things, God sought to make the world His object partner. So He invested and invested without ceasing, and forgot how much He had invested. In this way, the great universe was born. When God invested endlessly with divine love that embraced everything, the original substance of His creation possessed unlimited power. That is to say, when the creation becomes an absolute infinite minus, absolute infinite power appears. Movement begins. Absolute minus creates a vacuum-like realm, and this causes a typhoon. When an absolute minus appears, it descends vertically. Once it descends, the whole universe turns upside down. The top becomes the bottom, the bottom becomes the top, and everything is mixed up completely. Because this infinite, eternal movement occurs endlessly, this universe exists forever.(307-295,19981121)

15 God created all things based on absolute faith. Because God created all things existing in the universe as inherently precious, if people attack one another without faith in the inherent value of all things, then these people should feel ashamed in front of the creation. Such faithlessness is shameful in front of the flowing rivers; it is shameful in front of the flying birds. Even grasshoppers and other insects must be regarded as being better than fallen people. Even insects lead their lives with original faith and trust. When we think that all things, created in absolute faith, have that kind of value, it is shameful that we human beings fell and could not find faith and trust. This is shameful in front of God and in front of the plants and trees and insects in the fields. Even in front of microbes, we are shameful beings. Even microbes lead their lives faithfully. God became God because He set up absolute faith and acted with absolute love.(284-040,19970415)

16 Have you ever seen the things of creation muttering and complaining to God? No, because they have absolute faith and obedience. They never complain, even though they sacrifice everything. Minerals do not complain when plants absorb them. It is the same when plants offer themselves to animals, and animals to people. And it should be the same when people offer themselves to God. The same. We need to offer our lives to God. Because God created everything with the tradition of absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience, if we remain self-centered, we cannot return to God.(467-180,20040904)

17 There is not a single being in all of creation that exists entirely alone. Rather, all things exist in subject-object partner relationships. They were all created as part of a pair system. The concept of absolute faith derives from the fact that the universe was created according to a pair system, for the sake of love. That is why, based on absolute faith, you can connect to the way of love. Based on absolute faith, the seed of true love can be planted. It is the same for the mineral kingdom, the plant kingdom and the human world, Adam and Eve should have reached perfection where they represented the full value of creation, in the place where true love could be planted. You need to be a substantial being of love, as God has been, with absolute faith. In front of God, you need to have absolute faith and absolute love.(298-011,19981231)

18 God created all things in Eden with absolute faith. This was similar to farming—creating all the things His beloved sons and daughters would eat. For God, this meant absolute investment. God forgot His prestigious position while He was creating at the zero point. Since the universes movement is spherical, when you keep pushing it, it turns. The universe has to be the perfect entity that fulfills the ideal of love. Once everything is interconnected, God will come to unite with it, and the worlds of heaven and earth, the worlds of mind and body, will move as one based on true love. The family, tribe, people, nation, world and heaven and earth will be united as one. The spirit world and physical world will rotate eternally for one purpose. This is the kingdom of heaven on earth and the kingdom of heaven in heaven.(300-241,19990323)

19 The Principle of Creation predetermines certain relationships between human beings and all things of creation, among human beings themselves, and between human beings and heaven. First, nature is the synthesis of all things, all individual embodiments of truth, which are to exist in harmony and unity. The absolute role of nature is to enable people to realize their absolute value as subject partners, exercising a dominion of love over all creation in the position of absolute object partner. Second, when we consider relationships among people, we have three

generations within the family. This is where we learn the personal relationships between up and down, right and left, and front and back, as well as between vertical and horizontal. Each person, as an individual embodiment of truth, is to substantiate his or her absolute value and pursue a life of harmony and love through the interaction between subject partner and object partner. Third, what about the relationship between people and God? God, as the Creator with an absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal nature, is in the subject-partner position over all creation, which is His overall object partner. He continuously interacts with all things in the realm of His own Principle of Creation. This is because, even though He is the Absolute Being, without a relationship of giving and receiving with His most essential object partner—human beings—He cannot feel joy. (547-261,20061208)

The environment God created for human beings

20 Before God created heaven and earth, He must have spent some time thinking about His creation, and He must have spent some time in preparation. That is to say, before He finalized His plan for creation, He must have thought about it first. Then He would have gone through a process of preparation before executing His plan. This is how He created heaven and earth. Heaven and earth are like this, and that means that God Himself must be such a being. For God, there is a time of thinking, a time of preparation and a time of execution. Through that process He created all of heaven and earth.(013-107,19631108)

21 From the point of view of the Word, and compared to the Word it-self, the creation of substance represents a more developed form. Only when substance appears can joy spring forth. When joy flows, the harmonious work of creation blossoms. When sub-stance reaches a certain level of development, finally love is added. This is the method of God's creation of all things. So first there is thought, to which the Word takes a plus position and forms substance, and finally love is added. Through this process of creation, all things came into being. When God moved from the thinking stage to the systematic stage of the Word, that is, from the stage of abstract thinking to the stage of concrete and logical formation inherent in the Word, He felt incredible joy.(029-315,19700313)

22 When a writer sees her idea ex-pressed in her completed work, she feels joy. Furthermore, if her work is made into a movie or a play, she feels even more joy. When her thought is developed into a more systematic theory and then formed into something substantial that many people can relate to and feel joy from, her work gains yet greater value. Looking at human beings with regard to God's idea for

the creation of heaven and earth, we can discern that He invested limitless devotion in their creation. God carefully considered the process and the forms He would use in creating us.(029-315,19700313)

23 God created human beings through the Word. Before He created them, He searched for the right shape and, on that basis, He set up the connections they would have with all other substantial, created beings. When these substantial human beings stood as the central beings of the entire creation, wasn't God so joyful? He would have been ecstatic to see the value of His creation being established right there. Once Adam stood in that position, God created Eve on that foundation. From there, love came forth for the first time. Love will assuredly come when the value of the counterpart in love is realized on the horizontal plane.(029-315,19700313)

24 When God created all things, what did He make first? He created the spirit world, then all things and finally human beings. He created human beings to become one with Him in love. First, He made the spirit world; second, all things of creation; third, human beings and, finally, love. Through love, God and human beings were to unite. In the process of re-creation, unless we fulfill the condition to reverse and indemnify this failure of love, we cannot find the path back to God.(141-186,19860222)

25 What does God need? Since He needs true love, when He created the universe He had to create the best environment. So God created the best environment first, and then made the subject and object partners that He could feel the greatest joy with—a man and a woman. The ideal of creation centers on true love where that man and woman become one, which actualizes the vertical love axis with God based on their true love. All people should be in harmony with this. Every individual needs to participate in this and move in tune with the environment in a counterpart or object-partner position. Otherwise it is like dancing with a right foot but no left foot, or having only a right leg and no left leg. It is like being disabled in love. This is not what God wants.(173-024,19880201)

26 When God created all things, He did not begin with human beings. First, He made the environment, and in that environment He began to work with the idea of subject and object partners. In this environment, God unfolded all creation in pairs with relationships as counterparts: in the mineral kingdom, the plant kingdom, the animal kingdom and in everything, including high and low, positive and negative, male and female and man and woman. Even in the mineral kingdom, plus and

minus become linked, existing in unity. The same form of unification exists among plants, animals and throughout the world.(218-213,19910729)

27 When we consider the principles God used in the creation of heaven and earth, we see that He did not first make the central beings and then the environment for them. Rather, before creating human beings, God prepared an environment based on relationships. In order to create human beings, He first made soil, for example. He established the internal based on the external. This is the principle by which heaven and earth were created. Things that existed at an earlier stage have become the basis for greater things at a later stage, and things with lesser value have become the foundation for things of greater value. This is the principle underlying the creation of heaven and earth. In creating human beings, God first made the human body and then the spirit.(152-319,19630818)

All created beings resemble God's dual characteristics

28 If we observe the universe, it shows us that everything exists through a reciprocal relationship formed between the dual characteristics of positivity and negativity. This principle applies in every case, beginning at the level of minerals. A molecule is made of atoms held together through positive and negative charges. In the case of many plants, reproduction depends on the union of their male and female parts from the stamen and pistil. These dual characteristics are more pronounced in the case of animals. Animals, including fish, birds and mammals, exist in male and female forms. Also, Gods greatest creation, human beings, can be divided into men and women.(201-204,19900409)

29 God is the subject partner with harmonized dual characteristics. On what is His position as the subject partner based? It is based on love, and that is why a horizontal foundation is necessary. God's desire to have a stimulating foundation that would be spread out in many directions led to the expansion and development of the created world. God created everything so He could always stand in the position of experiencing joy. God works through the vertical relationship, but when there is no horizontal foundation there is no connection. So without a horizontal foundation in the object partner position, human beings cannot come under the dominion of God's love.(193-218,19891004)

30 The created world resembles Gods characteristics. All created things exist as the divided forms of His dual characteristics, and they are connected to their counterparts as subject partner and object partner, as well as being in reciprocal relationships of up and down, front and back, and left and right. What is the

purpose underlying all these relationships within this kind of environmental system? The answer is that the world of creation moves with love as its purpose.(106-057,19791209)

31 Everything in the created universe exists in pairs and belongs to the realm of reciprocal relationships. Since God is the incorporeal subject partner, He absolutely needs a corporeal, substantial object partner. God also has dual characteristics, so He can manifest His invisible character in substantial form as He creates. When we consider the created universe from this perspective, we can see that even the mineral kingdom functions through the relationship between subject and object partners. In the case of the molecule, positive ions and negative ions are in a subject-object relationship, as are protons and electrons in the case of the atom.(228-140,19920327)

32 When we look at the universe, we can see that everything in the mineral, plant and animal kingdoms exists in pairs. There is nothing in creation that is without a partner. Then why is everything in heaven and earth in pairs? It is not simply to produce off-spring. Rather, it is to realize love. That is why male and female, plus and minus electric charges and positive and negative ions all attract each other. The dimensions are different but, in the final analysis, they all unite based on love. There is nothing in the universe that doesn't thrill to love.(195-137,19891107)

33 When we look at nature, we see that nothing in creation exists and survives completely by itself. Everything has reciprocity, existing and surviving for its object partner. Even the tiniest entities in the mineral and animal kingdoms, provided they pursue reciprocal relationships, receive energy and maintain their functions. Everyone recognizes that existence requires energy. The entire universe is composed of energy. Then, what is energy composed of? Energy cannot be generated without action. So what needs to happen if you want to have action? Action cannot begin of its own accord. In the scientific world, this can be confirmed through experimentation in a chemistry lab. Furthermore, in conducting an experiment, no matter how hard you try to manipulate elements to initiate a certain action, you cannot make it happen by human energy alone. Elements do not behave like that.(059-075,19720709)

34 We can think that even God breathes. He breathes with an invisible breath. Because the earth resembles God, it also breathes. Then what is breath? On earth there are magnetic fields. If you place a magnet next to another magnet, it turns around according to a certain pattern, as if it were alive. This is because it resembles God. The earth also resembles a human being. On the earth's surface,

trees are like human hair, the soil is like our skin, with rocks underneath, like our bones, and lava flowing, like our bone marrow. Thus everything symbolizes human beings.(085-153,19760303)

35 The universe is the manifestation of God Himself. In other words, that which God imagines is manifested and realized in all things of creation. Therefore the universe must resemble God. God's character can be found in everything we see. When we look at the universe, we can see that it was created by God, but when we look at it as a whole, we realize that it is an object partner of God.(085-154,19760303)

36 In our family we live our lives centered sometimes on our father, sometimes on our mother, according to basic principles. The same patterns of relationship appear in the mineral, plant and animal kingdoms, which also follow these basic principles. Our bodies also are made to function through systems based on our five senses. When we consider the fundamental principles governing all these things, we inevitably discover the concepts of subject-object partner relationships and dual characteristics.(125-072,19830313)

Section 3. Nature and the Lessons It Offers

1 When I was young, my sphere of activities was very broad. As far as my eyes could see, across the fields and all the way to the mountaintops, there was nowhere I didn't explore. I had to go even over the mountains. Seeing the morning sun peeking over the mountains, I would wonder what was out there. And so wherever I went, you would never find me sitting down to rest. In this way, my heart of faith was cultivated in the mountains and rivers of my hometown. I still remember the water, the trees, the land and the spring breeze in my hometown. All these vivid memories live in my mind and heart. Even the dialogue with God that I experienced through my prayers is still vivid and clear.(221-071,1991 1023)

My childhood immersed in nature

2 When I was a child roaming through the mountains, I carefully observed every flower. There was no flower I did not know. I loved nature so much that I would forget to go home. Sometimes, after playing until sunset, I would fall asleep on the hillside, and my mother and father had to come and find me and carry me home, even at midnight. I was that fond of nature.(203-185,19900624)

3 I could identify all the birds in the mountains. When a new migrating bird came through, I wanted to know what the male and female looked like, but at that time there were no books available about birds. So I had to follow these new birds and

do my own research. All week long, forgetting mealtimes, I would wait until a bird appeared. Then I would follow it until I found its nest. I would see its eggs, and confirm, "Aha! This bird has this kind of eggs!" My heart would not rest until I had satisfied my curiosity; only then could it settle down.(162-213,19870412)

4 There was a big tree in front of our house. It was quite a large tree, and there was a magpie's nest in it. Once I knew the bird had laid its eggs, I really wanted to see the eggs. I could not rest until I saw them. Finally I climbed the tree in the evening to look, and then I climbed the tree again at dawn to look at the eggs before the mother bird left the nest. For several days, each time I climbed up I found one more egg. Since I climbed up so often, in the end I became good friends with the magpie. In the beginning, the magpie would screech and threaten to peck me with her beak. But since I went up every day and did not harm her eggs, finally she grew quiet and didn't mind me. In this way, I observed what she was doing in the nest and what kind of food she fed her young.(051-270,1971 1128)

5 Magpies actually build rather large nests. They apply mud to the inside of their nests to make them very solid, Also, they know from which direction the wind blows, and they make the entrance to their nests on the opposite side. The first time I climbed up to see a magpie's nest, the mother magpie cried out noisily. But after I had been up once or twice, I saw her lay her eggs. I climbed the tree every day twice a day, in the morning and at lunchtime. At first the bird caused quite a commotion, but after I climbed up and down the tree like that for a week, she realized I wouldn't harm her and calmed down. During rainy periods I could not climb the tree for a few days. When the sun returned and dried everything out, I would climb up and the magpie would be so happy to see me, chattering, "Caw, caw, please come up!" When you are intimate with things, you can go anywhere. What would happen if you loved the things God created more than you loved God? If you love a painter's art more than you love the painter, you win the artist's heart. It's the same between you and God. When you love God's handiwork in nature, He will come to you. He will teach you, "Here is why this is like this." Nature is that precious.(278-119,19960501)

6 When I was a child, there was a chestnut tree just outside my room. It stood next to the outhouse. It was a very tall tree, its leaves so fresh and brilliant and shiny green. Cicadas clung to the branches; it was the highest place around. They seemed to know that the highest place was the best place to sing. They needed to sing from a high place for their song to be effective. You cannot imagine how happy I felt whenever I heard that sound. It's so refreshing. You should stop and listen to their

song sometime. Village women would often stop their sewing to listen, drawn into a dreamlike state by the sound.(233-144,19920801)

7 When a bee buries its head deep in an acacia flower, totally engaged in sucking the nectar, with its abdomen jutting out, even if you pull on its abdomen with tweezers, it will not let go, even if its body is pulled apart. Isn't that incredible? It is shocking to think that someone would pull a bee apart, but it is even more shocking that the nectar's taste keeps the bee sucking anyway. When I saw this I thought, "Oh, this teaches me something. I must be like this."(186-303,19890206)

8 When I go to the ocean, I can do all kinds of work. I know what kinds of crab and what kinds of fish live in the sea. The ocean is quite far from my hometown, so I could go there only when vacation time came, and then I went to the ocean every day. I caught crabs and eels, searching everywhere along the shore. I learned about everything that was going on there. Next I tried fishing. I found out what kinds of fish lived in different locations, and I began fishing in those areas. In particular, I was the champion at catching creatures like eels.(144-294,19860426)

9 During summer vacation I caught more than forty eels every day. Actually eels live in rather deep water. They don't like to show themselves. Instead they stay inside deep holes to protect themselves. They feel safe and comfortable with their bodies covered in the hole, even though their heads or tails may poke out. That is their natural instinct. Their holes look something like crab holes, but I can tell at a glance if it is an eel hole. I am an expert at that.(180-242,19880822)

10 When a hen is sitting on her eggs to hatch them, she keeps her eyes wide open and keeps turning the eggs with her feet. By the end she loses most of the white feathers on her underside. That is how intently she focuses on hatching her eggs. Do you think she would feel good or bad, sitting like that for such a long time? I was so interested and curious about this when I was young that I looked into the henhouse every day. In the beginning the hen tried to chase me away, but when I looked in three times every day, in the end the hen just accepted it. When you watch a hen hatching her eggs, she is adamant about protecting them, as if saying, "No one can touch my eggs! I will never forgive that." The hen behaves like a queen with great authority, and she will not forgive anyone who harms her eggs. Even the rooster does not dare to challenge the authority of the hen. If you asked a rooster to sit on the eggs, he would surely run away after less than three hours. The hens instinctive power to sit and hatch her eggs is the power of love.(175-241,19880424)

11 Magpies always make their nests in big trees. Magpies are considered auspicious birds. When a magpie chatters, "kawk, kawk, kawk!" we say good news is coming. It is interesting to observe a magpie's behavior. When you see a magpie's nest, you can tell from which direction the wind will blow this year. If the wind will be from the east, the magpie prepares by building its nest entrance to the west. No one teaches a magpie how to build its nest, but each one is a masterpiece made of twigs. You might think such a nest would leak when it rains, right? But as a final touch, the magpie plasters the inside of the nest with mud. This blocks the wind. Also, the magpie arranges the twigs to slope in one direction so that when it rains, the raindrops will flow outward rather than into the nest. The twigs are also arranged in layers to prevent rain from flowing into the nest. I wonder who taught the magpie such amazing workmanship.(141-033,19860216)

Nature's lessons in true love

12 When we think about all things of creation, we can see that everything has been prepared for the time when True Parents and God's true love will appear. Everything in the mineral kingdom is in love; everything in the plant kingdom is in love. Butterflies, bees, animals—all are bound together in love. The flowers emitting their fragrance and putting forth their blossoms, together with the many sounds of nature—all are symbolic expressions of love. What is the relationship between a butterfly and a flower? A butterfly flits around looking for the flower, while the flower opens itself and displays its beauty to the world. This is how all things play together and move to the rhythm of the universe. Considering that God created the whole universe with love at its center, we realize how wonderful God is who made all this—this beautiful garden and harmonious museum of nature—for me. In summer, the cicadas sing in pairs, responding to each other. This is like a song of love. Everything is a textbook for us.(132-158,19840531)

13 When I was in prison in Danbury, there was an area where the ground had been leveled by a bulldozer to make a sports field. During the rainy season the construction had to stop for a while. Near the construction site was some wet land, and during the break from construction a waterfowl laid her eggs and hatched her young. The bird might have thought that was a safe place, since no one was present at the time. However, after the rain ended, people began to walk around there. The bird's nest was less than two meters from the path. At that time I noticed a very mysterious thing. When people passed by without noticing her or her nest, the mother bird kept silent. But if anyone caught her eye, she would rush out with a noisy fuss, "caw! caw! caw!" If someone took one step closer to her, she was ready to die to fight off the intruder. She was very small but not afraid of attacking a big

person. She was ready to fight to the death, with all her might. This was amazing to me. Who taught her to do this? Did she learn this through the educational system or through some academic theory? She responded this way because of love. Love needs no education.(139-197,19860131)

14 Among fish, the model of love between male and female is the salmon. That's why I love salmon very much. This fish leaves its birthplace and travels thousands of miles through the oceans. When they are about four years old, they return to their birthplace. In Alaska, because of the cold weather, there are not many insects for the baby fish to eat, so the parents die and let their young eat their bodies so they can grow well. What about human beings? We are meant to be the lords of creation. So if we are inferior to a fish, is that acceptable? If love has such great power in the animal kingdom, what should it be like among human beings, the lords of creation and masters of true love? The issue for us as human beings is how to attain the highest ideal of conjugal love. Not all the principles I discovered are from the Bible; I found out many things from nature.(279-049,19960609)

15 The salmon dies after laying its eggs. The salmon's love for its young is greater than the mutual affection of a condemned couple facing the day of their execution. Before the female fish lays her eggs, she and the male make a hole in the streambed to protect them. This is truly an ideal couple. After the eggs are laid, and after they tend them, the couple dies. When I saw the male and female salmon dying, I was shocked. Their bodies become food for their young. If there is a Creator, why do you think He created the salmon in this way? Observing these fish, we cannot but be led to grasp how important our children are and how important love is. It is only natural to suggest that God created the salmon as a model to show that love and our children are the most precious things. We also need to be able to offer our lives for the sake of love and for our children.(128-260,19830828)

16 Salmon travel thousands of miles in the ocean, swim around for four years and then find their way back to their birthplace by scent. They invest incredible effort to spawn their young, making salmon perhaps even better than human beings, right? One male and one female meet once, lay their eggs and die. In the place where the parents die, the baby salmon eat their mother and fathers flesh in order to grow. Surely the greatness of love, the greatness of children raised through love, is expressed in this. Because of this, the reality is truly that "I" am the being who represents my parents' life. Children are one's heirs who can go one step further and move toward a higher love. In this way, love itself moves to an ever-higher place, eventually reaching the realm of God's love.(144-238,19860425)

17 Every being is from a different lineage, the place of settlement is different and the foundation of life is different. A river flows into the sea. Water flows to the sea, and then rises into the air, forming clouds. Through changing weather, it falls to the ground as rain, snow and hail, becoming water again. Birds catch fish and eat them, and some fish eat birds. The plant and animal kingdoms are all connected through the food chain. Animals can eat plants, and some plants can eat animals. Both plant and animal plankton exist. These feed all the smaller creatures in the ocean, even minute forms of life. That is how these creatures survive.(614-107,20090716)

18 What is the basic standard of creation? Even though God is an absolute being, He is looking for the object of His love. That is the beginning of creation. Before He created His object partner in love, He created the environment. The environment is created so that God's object partners in love can take in nutrition and grow. That intake of nutrition is not by force. Because the objects of God's true love, that is, human beings, take the position of subject partner to all things of creation, all things of creation automatically unite with and are obedient to them. This is the fundamental spirit of creation.(498-259,20050608)

19 The universe is filled with all beings existing as pairs on their own level, but ultimately, they follow the principle of being absorbed into higher levels of love. Thus, minerals want to be absorbed by plants, plants by animals, and finally all of creation by human beings. Thus all beings are either eaten or absorbed. They reach a higher level of love and ultimately attain the position closest to God who is the origin of love. In this way all beings make this place their ultimate destination. This is the essence of true love. Darwin's theory of the law of the jungle must be reinterpreted in the context of this logic of true love. Even ants and microorganisms want true love so much that they would die for the sake of the owner who loves them. Based on this principle, human beings, created as the highest partners of God, are in the position where they can consume and possess all creation. Human beings already eat many things of creation, but | they should do so with the heart that I represents the true love of God, the Creator. If they are unable to do this, the universe will be unable to continue its existence.(316-239,20000213)

20 Certain birds, such as penguins at the South Pole, lay their eggs by the sea. They form groups that travel more than one hundred miles to a distant place where they hatch their young. They persevere over this long distance even through wind and storms. The females lay their eggs and hold them between | their feet. They move them between their feet and cover them with their feathers to keep them warm and remain stationary for long periods, without eating, to hatch them. During this time, the male and female pass the egg back and forth to each other, persevering in

this fashion until the chick hatches. At this point, the parents feed the chicks food from their own stomachs. The males stomach may be very large, like that of a pregnant woman. The chicks that are born as a result of their parents' love and devotion are very thankful for the food chain that led to their birth.(415-162,20030814)

21 To protect comparatively greater things, lesser things may be sacrificed. That is the principle. It is not a sin for human beings to eat plants or beef. This is to protect these foods; they are sacrificed for their own protection. This is development. It is a leap upward to something higher from that which is lower- The plant matter you eat forms human cells. Isn't that a great leap? This is because human cells afford a broader dimension in which to connect with God's love. Without knowing this, people speak of the law of the jungle and the concept of evolution. They interpret these through the concepts of struggle and class. The relationship between high and low is that of subject and object partners, but in their concepts, there is no notion of subject and object partners.(118-198,19820601)

22 The law of the jungle is a concept of struggle. By this interpretation, all things in the universe struggle with one another. There is no understanding of the higher purpose or the ideal of love that moves the whole universe and establishes the foundation for God's ideal of life. The idea that unity comes through struggle is a result of the Fall. In Hellenistic philosophy, nature was understood as an enemy. The logic of survival of the fittest arose from this mindset. By this theory, unless you contend with the environment, you cannot survive. This mindset is the result of the Fall. Marx and Lenin looked only at resultant things. They viewed the human mind as the origin of everything but saw that even the mind was engaged in struggle. Since they viewed everything from the perspective of struggle, they could draw no other conclusion. This was because they had no concept of the completion of the ideal of love, of the family of Gods kingdom, or the unified foundation of Gods settlement and kingship in the kingdom of heaven on earth and in heaven.(415-162,20030814)

CHAPTER 2

The Essence and Order of the Universe

Section 1. Love Is the Essence of the Universe

1 The two Chinese characters *woo* (宇) and *joo* (宙) in the word *woojoo* (universe) each mean "house." The universe is a home. The first and second characters are both "house." We love our home and our children. Where do such philosophy and tradition manifest? Not in the nation but in the family. The family represents the universal family, and its sons and daughters are the ancestors of countless generations. This is the original standard of creation. God created all things in order to express His love for Adam and Eve. After God created Adam and Eve, God and His children were to love all things of creation, which are sacrificed for humankind.(300-266,19990324)

2 God prepared everything in the created world as a textbook inspiring His beloved son and daughter to establish the ideal of love. That is why everything exists in a pair system. The mineral kingdom operates through the subject-object partner relationship. In atoms, protons and electrons interact through subject-object partner relationships. Without this interaction they could not continue to exist. Without movement there can be no eternal existence. Therefore, God created the universe so that everything can reach the central point through human beings. As human beings grow up, they can learn everything from nature. Under the bright moonlight on an autumn night, as the stars are twinkling, insects perform, like an orchestra. Why do they do that? They are singing of their ideal and looking for their mate. They are whispering in an atmosphere of love. Birds and animals, too, express their pursuit of love through joyful or sad sounds. Insects exist at a lower level, away from the center, yet they still face the central axis on a straight line, and their life turns based on that central point. God created everything to do so.(137-059,19851218)

3 The universe is the womb of our second mother. We are all now living in our mother's womb, the womb of the mother universe. Just as we depend on our mother's flesh and blood in the womb, so we presently are living by taking in the essence of the universe. If the universe stopped providing for us, we could not survive. A lot of sacrifices are being made. There is the saying, "the survival of the fittest," and you may have wondered why God made things to be that way. Well, that saying is incorrect. The innate desire of everything in the universe is to participate in a higher realm of God's love. All creatures hope to return to the core of the universes love through the body of a higher being. That is their desire. Therefore, the cells of our body should be the cells of love that connect directly to God.(123-111,19821219)

4 What is the original root of the universe? From what did it begin? It began from love. Scientists say the universe consists of energy. Observing interaction, they

know energy is present; where there is energy, there is interaction. Then what comes first, energy or action? During a boy's growth to adulthood, the power of love in relation to the opposite sex is not operating. A boy grows as he interacts with the creation. He gradually matures through the interaction of his mind and body. At that point, when he meets a woman, horizontal energy ignites. Interaction is necessary in order for energy to be produced. From where does that interaction come? It comes from the relationship between subject and object partners. People consist of mind and body; every being exists according to the pair system.(247-120,19930501)

5 How did the universe begin? When we look at God, who created everything based on the ideal of reciprocal relationships, we can see that the universe began with the principle of living for the sake of others—investment and selfsacrifice. Then what was He seeking to achieve by expending Himself in order to create His object partner? Both subject and object partners invest everything of themselves, and they gain love. They do not mind how much they exhaust themselves if they can attain love. Love is based on this concept, and this is why God began His work of creation centered upon love. He did not end up losing anything. Why would God have invested everything if He thought it would result in loss? Within love, there is an energy that can more than fill everything; therefore, God did expend and invest Himself, but He comes out to find love in return. True love does not diminish with investment; it grows bigger. Movement in itself consumes energy, whereas true love grows stronger the more you invest.(237-126,199211 13)

6 Since love has the capacity to create, it never grows tired. With a heart of love you never get tired. If you have a heart filled with love, no matter how much you invest, the energy spent is always replenished with more energy than is used up. This is the power of love. This is why even though it may be hard or painful, you don't mind making that effort. How could you continue if you did not like it? On the path of true love there can be no such thing as a heart of antipathy. In God's essence, the concept of an enemy does not exist, and the concept of evil does not exist. This is because His essence dwells within true love.(237-130,199211 13)

7 The central axis of the heavenly king-(tern and of the whole universe is love. love is the origin of life and lineage. Since everything is created focused on love, their motion conforms to the axis of love. Motion cannot occur haphazardly, It takes place only between subject and object partners, so everything moves in its position after forming a love relationship. Everything that moves has a purpose, which is to continue its existence as a result of eternal love. Action does not occur meaninglessly.(208-079,199011 17)

8 God did not create heaven and earth for Himself. It was not for Himself that He created all things, but for the sake of His love. The universe began from love. Love is the center. Therefore, the absolute God needs an ideal to which He absolutely will want to submit. Where there is complete obedience and complete liberation, there is complete happiness.(198-237,19900203)

9 Love started the universe and is connected to everything in the universe. Even something as tiny as a blade of grass exists based on love. Minerals were formed through positive and negative ions, which move for the sake of love. From the tiniest creature to the biggest, everything is connected in love. What kind of love is that? It is godly love. Everything is interlinked with true love at the center. That is how God created the world to be.(289-129,19980101)

10 When true love creates a realm of heart, no matter how small it may be, it connects to the universe. Whatever occurs within that realm creates waves that reach everywhere, even to the spirit world. This is because the entire cosmos, including the spirit world, exists under the principle of God's true love. God connects to humankind vertically and horizontally and through front and back relationships. These are the origin of all ideal relationships of true love among people. Such relationships can be perfected only in ideal families that have established the four great realms of heart.(260-129,19940501)

11 In the autumn, insects get together to perform as an orchestra all night long. From the morning and throughout the night they play. They sing in wonderful harmony with all their different tones, an orchestra spreading in all four directions. People wonder, "What are they doing now?" They are actually kissing and loving each other. These are the sounds of love. They are not making music but voicing the sounds of love, the sounds of kissing, hugging and loving. It's an orchestra of love. These sounds are not secular; they are holy.(217-307,19910612)

Section 2. The Principles of Existence and Action

1 Everyone recognizes that the universe exists. In order for it to exist, energy is required. The question is whether energy or existence comes first. Without energy there is no existence. But energy cannot exist without interaction. Before energy there has to be action. To initiate such action, the prerequisite condition is that there must be a subject and object partner. The undeniable truth is that energy is generated through the interaction between a subject entity and its object partner.(052-316,19720203)

All entities in the universe are in subject-object relationships

2 When we look at the world of creation, we see that the animal and plant kingdoms and even the insentient mineral world function in subject-object relationships, according to the principle of yin and yang. Molecules have yang (plus) particles and yin (minus) particles. Scholars of this world believe that the universe is made of energy, but they state this obscurely, without explanation of where energy comes from. Did energy just appear all at once? Does it exist first, or does action precede energy? This is the same question as whether the chicken or the egg comes first. Energy derives from action and manifests through a step-by-step process. Electricity does not generate energy by itself; only when positive and negative charges interact does an electric current flow. Such interaction produces power.(240-167,19921213)

3 The universe is comprised of energy, but before there is energy there has to be action. You need interaction between positive and negative charges to occur if you want to create electrical energy We convert such energy into the light that we use by channeling it within an electric light bulb. So, before energy there is action, and before any action there is a relationship between subject and object entities. God created the world as an environment for human beings. In any environment there must be subject and object partners. Such is the law of existence, without adherence to which there would be no existence. We know there are neutrons, but even neutrons have their object partners. Although shadows disappear at noontime, they still exist. My shadow stays within the space I occupy. Everything consists of reciprocal relationships.(252-067,199311 14)

4 Which do you think came first during the formation of the universe, energy or action? Action had to be first. But nothing acts alone, so in order to generate action, a mutual relationship between two distinct entities is needed Give and receive action cannot begin if one side expects to lose energy. Even though a subject partner sees it will benefit, because it will be good and will add to the environment, it must give; Thus, the relationship between subject and object partners is formed. What; then, is the subject partner? It is the one that gives first. It is responsible to protect and nurture the object partner in the relationship. That is why we must recognize that relationships between subject entities and their object partners precede any action.(207-249,199011 11)

5 What is the most mysterious thing on earth? When God began His creation, what was His first concept? It was love. Because God created with the concept of love, He created the universe so that all beings need to have an object partner of love. That's why nothing in our environment exists without a partner. To exist, everything must be in a relationship of subject and object partners. Subject-object

partnerships always connect with a larger realm; for us this does not stay within the family level: it expands to the tribe, nation and world. When any entity stands as a subject partner, a corresponding object partner will appear. If one side takes a certain stance, the other side will take a supporting role. This is how the universe avoids conflict and maintains peaceful interaction and harmonious movement.(218-325,19910822)

6 Interaction produces the fundamental energy of the universe; this is like the loving relationships of giving and receiving in the physical world. Thus, all entities without exception exist in subject-object partnerships—otherwise this universe could not exist. Since the most precious thing is love, if you cannot give or receive love when you want to, that is the saddest and most sorrow-fill thing. Why did God create the universe? The simple conclusion is that He needed love. Therefore we are born in love, live in love and pass on in love. From where does the supreme love come? It comes from perfect unity be-tween subject and object partners. When no force can separate the two eternally, that is the time when the supreme love appears. Because of love, unification can occur; because of love, all life is connected; because of love, we can realize the ideal.(048-009,19710831)

7 Power cannot force subject and object partners to interact, nor can money or knowledge. Only something that both partners appreciate can unite them; that is why we need the concept of love. Why did God make the mineral kingdom with ions of positive and negative charges? It is so that they can interact based on love. In the plant kingdom there are stamen and pistil. What we didn't know is that before the flower of a plant comes to be, there is the concept of subject and object pairs. Likewise in the animal kingdom, we see male and female counterparts in species from the largest to the smallest.(276-237,19960224)

8 Within the relationship between subject and object partners, where would God, the king of wisdom and the center of everything, place the origin of true love, true ideals, true happiness and true peace? This raises a serious question. Given the existence of subject partners and object partners, the issue for God the Creator is whether to base His ideal on the path of living for the subject partner or living for the object partner. Upon which would God base the ideal origin of true ideals, true love and true peace? Would He fix it so that the subject partner lives for the object partner or so that the object partner lives for the subject partner? If Gods original ideal were such that God told His object partner to serve Him as its subject partner, then anyone in the position of a subject partner would tell their object partner to do the same. This would block the way to their unity.(075-318,197501 16)

9 The world of nature has a principle of development through cycles. Let's look at this natural law, which has been in existence for hundreds of millions of years. Everything exists in pairs. For example, human beings exist as men and women. The mineral and plant kingdoms are also like this, while in the animal kingdom there are males and females. Male and female animals have existed like this for hundreds of millions of years. Within this system is the concept of love, although it exists in different dimensions. Such is the central principle in the world of nature, which ensures the continuation of the bloodline based on love. In the same way, human beings exist as men and women. The unchanging law is that through love they can leave descendants who are better than them. This is an unchangeable principle. No one can invade it. No one can change it.(189-256,19890501)

The pair system is a principle of existence in the universe

10 All things of creation, including the mineral and plant kingdoms, came into existence through a relationship between a subject partner and an object partner based on love. Thus, love is the ideal common denominator in relationships. Since all things of creation are resultant beings, they cannot come to exist without a cause. We call the causal being "God." In the realm of love where God is the center, everything exists within the pair system. Even in the mineral world, everything exists through relationships of subject and object partners. This is the same in the mineral, plant and animal kingdoms and the human world.(173-036,19880201)

11 The whole universe consists of plus and minus. For example, molecules are made of positive and negative particles that, like everything else, exist in complementary relationships. Atoms contain protons and electrons. Reciprocity of this type is fundamental to the composition of the universe. Within the plant kingdom there are relationships between stamen and pistil, while the animal kingdom has male and female animals and people relate as men and women; everything is accomplished with a reciprocal partner. Because all things were created to have a partner, everything eventually should form one united system. Since God is the subject partner of the universe, everything should function with God at the center. Unless the realm of reciprocal relationships achieves oneness with God's purpose of creation, God cannot experience joy.(247-184,19930509)

12 God created all beings in the universe for the perfection of human beings. In order to create such perfect beings, He created everything—including each individual cell—to exist in pairs. Because everything contains and supplies nutritional elements to the bodies of men and women, it is all necessary; it is all medicinal. Just because there are a lot of them, we shouldn't disdain dandelions

growing along the road. Since they are individual embodiments of truth in their own right, dandelions will spread their families for tens of millions of years for their own purpose without their species ever changing. No matter what changes may occur in human history, dandelions will continue to exist and spread, unchanged, as dandelions.(381-224,20020614)

13 All the world of creation is connected in a pair system. The mineral world and everything else function in plus and minus relationships. On Earth we can see the plus-minus action of a magnet, which is stronger than Earth's gravity. All elements function in the same way. The movement of consciousness occurs through the current that flows due to interaction between plus and minus. At the center of this pair system is an axis that connects the partners and protects them; that axis is nothing other than love. So the elements in the mineral world unite with their counterparts of their own accord. If they had no common standard, there would be no way for them to unite, even if God ordered them to. Without such counterpart relationships, even if some scientist spent a thousand years in a laboratory ordering entities to unite, they would not listen to him.(197-165,199001 13)

14 You need to create your own environmental realm. God created the sun, earth, air and water as components of the environment. There always needs to be subject and object partners within that environment. This is the formula. Since all created beings exist within a pair system, this is true for environments within the mineral, animal and human worlds. Why are they made up of subject and object partners? It is for the perfection of true love. Without a subject partner, we cannot reach perfection based on love. This is the formula. Not knowing it, none of our ancestors attained perfection.(293-225,19980526)

15 Look at this world and the universe. In the mineral world there are positive and negative particles; the plant environment includes relationships between stamen and pistil, while the animal kingdom has male and female animals. We now have evidence of male and female bacteria. Everything in creation is meant to reach unity on its own level, based on love. Through observation we know that the universe is based on the pair system. Thus, when the ideal love of man and woman, who represent heaven and earth, comes together, the rest of the creation can connect and unite. Just as the foundation needs to be laid before a house can be built, God created everything within the pair system for the sake of humankind. You may have seen that among animals, when the male and female are roaming around together and the female is attacked, the male will protect her to the death. After giving birth, the pair will risk their lives for their young. Such is the way of love. It is because this is the nature of the original root.(222-123,1991 1027)

16 When you enter the deepest level of true love, you can communicate with all of creation. You can communicate even with the rocks and the plants. In the world of true love, all things are able to communicate with one another. This is because everything that was created according to the pair system lives for the sake of uniting under God's love, and such true love resonates. When you are within the realm of true love, you can experience God's internal and external worlds. As such, you can naturally get to know, without being taught, about the spirit world and about God, and about how to attend your parents and your nation's king during your earthly life. Love does not choose its avenues carelessly. It has its own formula. There is but one path love takes, and no other.(238-031,199211 19)

17 Who teaches about love? The natural world is our teacher. The animal that run about in the hills are male and female, as are the butterflies; everything exists in a system of pairs. When the flowers bloom, the twittering and chirping of birds can be heard in the beautiful hills. For what purpose do the male and female birds sing? There are three reasons they do so. One is to express hunger, another is to express love and the last is to call to their young. They are singing because of love. (208-253,19901120)

18 On the path of true love, everything becomes one automatically. All entities in creation, no matter how small, are made in pairs. Even after thousands of years, the pair system will remain unchanged. No created being can change the design concept of the pair system. It is eternal. All the phenomena surrounding us teach this. The original, unfallen creation teaches us this fact. Trees, for instance, never stop growing they never rest. All living things grow continuously, day and night, throughout the four seasons. All things of the created world follow that original path.(386-179,20020717)

Aspects of existence and the principles of action and interaction

19 Why is it that the act of giving leads to prosperity and growth? It is because this act is in line with the original principle of God's creation. God created not by taking but by giving. When we give, everything increases. When we change our attitude to one of giving, then everything will increase. When we receive again and again, we are diminished. Why is this? It is because when we go along with the principles of God's creation, the universe supports us. The whole universe supports us!(183-324,19881109)

20 Everything in the universe needs energy in order to exist. However, energy doesn't arise by itself. For energy to exist there has to be constant action. Only

constant action creates energy. In other words, for energy to exist, action is required. And if this energy comes into existence through action, then how is this action maintained? Since nothing acts on its own, there must be subject and object partners; this is an ironclad principle. Subject and object partners don't interact in order to remain as they are; rather they interact in order to advance to a higher level. This is the principle.(055-253 19720509)

21 All things must have a dual structure in order to exist. When God creates, He acts for the sake of others based on His deep love, and invests again and again, forgetting how much He has in-vested. This reveals the core of our great universe. For example, the solar system and the countless heavenly bodies in the universe are round in shape. Everything moves in relation to a central nucleus. Love is the same. Love for humankind emanates from the realm of God's heart and serves as the axis of the entire universe. It has moved history continuously toward God's own perfection and the completion of His ideal of creation. You will see that it is the same in the spirit world. All existence consists of subject-object partnerships in an atmosphere of love.(218-266,19910819)

22 In order to develop, we always have to seek to reach a position better than our present one. Action occurs only when something can be added; if the result will detract, action doesn't occur. Only when two become one does development ensue. When there is no unity, there is absolutely no development. This is an ironclad principle of the universe. Unity comes only when both partners find that their value will increase. If it were a principle that interaction leading to a minus brought unity, this world would disappear. If the principles logic were based on a rule that things unite by becoming smaller, the whole world would regress. If there were such a principle in the world, even if one side of the world were to develop, the other side would decline. There is no such law.(055-252,19720509)

23 Subject and object partners interact only when their action will lead to something better; otherwise they will not interact. This is an ironclad principle of the universe. In a chemistry lab, you can never force certain elements to bind with certain others. If you tried it, the end result would be negative. The elements know that their interaction would detract from both, so they do not interact. God will not even let them relate with one another. That is a principle. There are some elements, however, that naturally relate with one another without hesitation. They know that their interaction will always form something bigger and better. They engage with one another because they are in the position to add something. So, no matter how much you try to prevent it, they will interact. This is the principle according to which this universe was created.(055-254,19720509)

24 In atoms, electrons surround the protons. Protons and electrons interact because their purposes harmonize in forming an atom. Their individual purposes cause them to unite. God too is an existent being, albeit on a higher level. Existence means that He also has to be a real being of substance. In order to exist eternally, He too must have internal subject partner and object partner characteristics with dual purposes perfectly harmonized. What does this mean? In the end, it means that God exists as the harmonization of the characteristics of a subject partner and an object partner.(052-317,19720203)

25 If all subject and object partners are completely united in eternal love, the universe is responsible to protect them eternally. If any third force tries to destroy them, the force of the universe will remove it. This represents the principle of existence of the entire visible world The principle is the same everywhere, including the world of love, the spirit world and in the current reality of our world on earth. This universal principle functions everywhere. This is why we have to live according to the Principle.(139-193,19860131)

26 It is difficult for created beings to harmonize on a straight horizontal line. A line is something that connects two points. There is no harmony on a straight line, because on a straight line, the farther things move, the farther apart they become. They will never come back together. That is why the starting point of this world and the universe was not a straight line. It is great to have three starting points; When you go around three points, you create a sphere. From the status of moving along a straight line, how could entities have found the three-point basis for a sphere? Moving in one line, they cannot do this. We have to acknowledge a third power's intervention. Thus we find the logic behind the existence of God. The origin of creation surely must have begun with either giving or receiving action. Which one do you think came first? If at first God's action had been to receive, the whole universe would have come to attach itself to God. There would have been nothing but God. If He had intended just to receive, nothing else ever would have existed.(240-298,19921213)

27 How did motion begin in the universe? There can be no motion on a straight line. A straight line connects two points, but brings nothing into harmony. The harmony of creation begins with a third point. From that third point, a curve is formed through which a circle is created. When circular motion begins, going through these three points, they are connected. Does this movement begin with a pushing or pulling action? Unless you resolve this question, you cannot resolve the fundamental questions of the universe. Movement begins with pushing. Which is easier? Pushing is easier. Pulling requires twice the energy, so it would not make

sense to start there. Therefore, investment begins with us pushing.(239-059,19921123)

28 The world is round. The moon and the sun are round. The atomic world and the molecular world both have rounded features, but they could not have become that way on their own. It is certain that nothing rounds off itself. The interaction between any subject and object partner demonstrates real and smooth harmony, and has to be circular. All existing beings need this realm of the ideal. Because they try to interact and create a relationship, they naturally become rounded. What kind of people are well-rounded? They are people who do not collide with anything, no matter which direction they take. No matter how much they are pushed down, they do not resist, but pop up somewhere else without altering their essential character. (164-077,19870426)

29 In the universe, even the air wants to embrace something round, not something with corners. Nature embraces that which is round. This is the ideal shape, which wastes nothing. What is the original reason for this? The rounder something is, the longer it lasts. The less rounded something is, the more friction and waste occur. That is why people appreciate that which is round. When we say something is harmonious, it means it does not have sharp edges but is spherical. It is the same with our eyes, nose, mouth and every part of our body; they are all rounded.(145-184,19860504)

30 When we look at the world, we see that everything follows the principle of revolving. If energy moves in a straight line, it is constantly dissipated. The first principle God employed for the purpose of creating the world was to utilize the energy emitted in a straight line and make it revolve. Therefore, the principle of the world is the principle of revolving. At the same time, it's the principle of motion. When you study chemistry, you research and analyze materials and observe the phenomena of their motion and action. You come to know that nothing goes against the principle of revolving. Everything is turning 360 degrees. The universe revolves, society revolves, and our mind also revolves. If anyone knew how to revolve around the heart of God, who is the center of the universe, that person naturally would revolve when God revolves. As long as God revolves, the universe will revolve. When God revolves, we revolve and all creation revolves as well.(005-028,19581109)

Section 3. Order and Law in the Universe

1 Earth, on which we live, is orbiting constantly around the sun in accordance with the law of the universe. The sun rotates on its axis just as Earth does. The sun, with a volume 1.3 million times greater than that of Earth, is moving constantly. There are vast galaxies in the universe whose mass is hundreds of billions of times greater than that of the solar system. Such galaxies, which we call micro-universes, constitute the countless star clusters of the universe. Considering them together, we call them the macrocosm. God, who created this enormous universe, whose radius spans billions of light-years, has moved this great universe along for millions and billions of years in accordance with unchanging laws. God is moving all these celestial bodies with a power that goes far beyond our imagination and senses. The more we think about God, who created this universe, the more we naturally come to bow our heads before His grandeur and greatness. The Creator of this great universe is our Father, who looks after us, our God who protects us, and our great living Master.(005-342,19590308)

2 We can see that the universe is not devoid of order. It is in motion based on mathematical formulas. That is why it has been in motion without error for countless eons. The development of science today involves the development of formulas. In engineering we solve problems through mathematical formulas. Likewise, scientific civilization has developed based on formulas. A formula is the perfect organization of units. Units must be connected. A formula means that the beginning and the end connect and fit together perfectly. When you are solving a mathematical problem, you have to produce the outcome using the formula you had at the outset.(229-266,19920413)

3 The universe is not a nebulous construct. It has order. It rotates in an orderly way. There are many types of movement, but there is one main type. It is like the movement of a major river with many tributaries. In the great universe too, centered on one axis, all movement follows the flow of the mainstream. Since our world stands at the finish line, we inevitably conclude that all the movement of the universe is centered on one purpose.(229-266,19920413)

4 God has to be an absolute being. He has to be unique, unchanging and eternal. The laws He established also have to be absolute. We come to this conclusion because this universe has continued to move for myriad years, for billions of years, according to those laws. The animal world, the plant world and the world of microorganisms continue their existence based on formulas and laws scientists can discover. Mathematics can explain all this. We find that microorganisms, animals, plants and everything in the whole universe move in an eternal orbit according to law, and this sustains their existence. So do you think it is acceptable for people, as

the lords of creation, to exist randomly, with no law and order, merely counting on their fingers? That is not how it should be.(172-035,19880103)

5 The vast universe moves according to a principle expressed as a formula. The formula is based on units and combinations of units. God created the universe from an archetype based on a formula that it follows exactly. That is why it can be expressed using mathematics. Electricity can be explained by mathematics, can't it? We can solve problems by applying mathematical formulas. Formulas involve units and quantities based on one, two and three. The units should be appropriate to the problem, and correspond to the formula. Otherwise you can't find the correct answer.(214-019,19910201)

6 When we consider the natural world, even though we cannot see the movement of our world and the vast expanse of the universe, we know it all exists eternally following universal laws of rotation and orbits. Who knew that after summer, autumn would follow, and after autumn, winter would come? Who knew that spring would follow winter? The universe adheres to its course, maintaining its self-existence by keeping everything in orbit through all seasons.(176-289,19880513)

7 The universe is an expansion of the family. A family has a top, middle and bottom, left and right, and front and back. This is a principle. When we talk about top and bottom, we mean parents and children; when we talk about left and right, we mean husband and wife, and when we talk about front and back, we mean elder and younger siblings. Through what do they become one? It doesn't happen through power, knowledge or money. Then what can bring it about? It is love. It is not ordinary love; it is true love. This is an absolute truth. Otherwise they cannot form a sphere. Then what do the top, middle and bottom in a family serve as? They serve as a textbook of love, a textbook through which we can encounter universal love. Having a textbook means we can go out into society and put it into practice.(128-023,19830529)

8 If we think that the universe exists to establish the law of love, we will look at this world in a different way. What would be different? When we see a pair of sparrows chirping in the springtime, we will wonder, "Is our couple better than the sparrows?" When we see the sparrows feeding their babies, we will think, "Oh, loving our children like that is a basic principle" It is the same law for everything. Do you think a mother bird feeds her babies because she is too full to eat? She will feed her babies even if she is hungry. Where do you find this universal law of love in the world of humans? You cannot find it through your teacher; you cannot find it through your king; you cannot find it through your husband; you cannot find it

through your wife. It survives only in the place where mother and father love their children. This is because parental love reflects the love of God for human beings. Parents' love for their children comes from that love.(097-163,19780312)

9 No matter how great you are, you have to adapt to the four seasons— spring, summer, autumn and winter. In winter, if you say, "Oh, I like summer, so I will keep wearing my summer clothes," you will suffer. You have to march in step with the seasons. When spring comes, you have to wear spring clothes. Unless you change your clothes, some problem may arise or you may be caught out in some way. When winter comes, you have to wear winter clothes. Likewise, you have to follow heavenly law and adapt to the environment in order to receive the protection of the heavenly principles. If you can adapt and survive in every environment, you can face the universe from the position of an eternal subject partner.(101-066,19781028)

10 The universe began with the principle of motion and the action of energy. Everything needs to conform to the law of heavenly fortune, which is in rhythm with the universe. The principle of the four-position foundation accords with the law of heavenly fortune. Therefore we have to support and protect the law of the four-position foundation and adapt ourselves to this law. If a robust result does not appear, it means we have not succeeded at that. In other words, no matter how much a husband and wife give to and receive from each other, if they have no children, they are disappointed. The universe turns based on the four-position foundation. If you cannot accomplish anything beyond a three-position foundation, you are not one with this law. In this case you naturally will feel sad and distant from God.(021-348,19690101)

11 Where does joy come from? It comes when the body responds to the desire of the mind. When the mind and body become perfect subject and object partners and form a perfect four-position foundation, the body moves according to the desire of the mind. This produces joy. Heavenly fortune, the principle of the universe, protects you so that you can come closer to a meeting point with God. This is why you feel happy. On the other hand, if you act against your conscience, the elements of your heart that are in relation to God will disappear, and in the end God will no longer be your subject partner. This is because, according to the principles of the universe, if the subject partner exists alone, even though the object partner does not oppose it, an energy of repulsion inevitably arises. This repelling force manifests in sorrow. I am the cause of my own joy and sorrow.(021-347,19690101)

12 Sometimes we are so sorrowful that our heart breaks. Why is that? What force acts to make us sorrowful? Emotions arise because a universal law within the great fortune of the universe directs the life force. If you do not live in accord with universal law, if you oppose it, it will repel you. The universal energy sometimes pushes and sometimes pulls, but when it becomes a strong repelling energy, you cannot be happy. When one spouse in a married couple that is living together dies, the other cries. This is because the remaining partner cannot fit with the standard of the universal law, and so it repels him or her. The depth of sorrow only increases. Then what produces happiness? When you harmonize with the universal law, the power of the universe embraces you. The greater the harmony, the stronger it comes to embrace you. And the stronger it embraces you, the closer you will come to the internal center. That brings joy. So sorrow and joy do not arise from within you. They arise based on these principles of power, that is, the universal law. (024-223,19690817)

13 In the universe we can see two forces at work: attraction and repulsion. Attraction arises from seeking to transform into a larger reality; our mind too is attracted to merge with the larger reality. Attraction does not occur randomly. It is generated by interaction. What attracts and unites two small things to each other? It is the surplus energy that enables the subject partner to go beyond itself and embrace its object partner. I have to go beyond myself to embrace my object partner with a greater energy. Thus it is possible for two to unite as one. If your motive to embrace is to make something smaller, then unity will never occur. Only when you try to go beyond yourself, embracing something greater, will universal power protect you. This is the relationship between subject and object partners. (141-273,19860302)

14 What is illness? When one of our organs is out of balance and damaged, if we don't quickly correct it, the universe will repel us, saying, "You have not met the standard of the principle of co-existence." Because of that repelling force, we feel pain. Why do we feel sad? It is the same. If I am in a peaceful state, with mind and body united, harmonized with the environment and moving forward toward something greater, the universe will protect me. If I stand in a position of loving and being loved by everything around me, in this environment in which everything is connected and coexists in a correlated realm of interaction, the universe will protect me. However, if I go against this, universal energy will repel me, and I will feel sad. (141-274,19860302)

15 We cannot explain existence in this universe apart from the idea of partnership. The universe protects those who realize this idea. It protects them without fail.

Thus, when a man and woman strive to unite and live together as one, based on eternal love, the whole universe will protect them. No one can invade from any direction. Within our body there are paths of giving and receiving. Being ill means one of these paths is blocked. If the plus or minus path is blocked, we do not meet the universe's standard. The universe protects us when we realize the ideal of partnership, but the universal force will repel us to whatever degree we fail to match that ideal. Repelling force appears as pain. If I poke you, it hurts, doesn't it? Pain is not caused by illness but by universal energy. It is a warning: "You feel this way because you did not succeed in giving and receiving, or in creating a harmonious relationship between subject and object partners. Unless you release that which is blocked and create harmony, you will have no place in the universe." The universe protects that which is in harmony.(197-030,19900107)

Section 4. Creation and Evolution

1 For scholars, the problem is whether the theory of evolution is correct or the idea that God created everything is correct. Which concept is logically prior: the concept of evolution or the concept of love? Which comes first? The concept of evolution does not come first, for its existence presupposes the prior existence of love. Evolution presupposes a pair system as the basis of the universe, The theory of evolution explains only the apparent structure of the universe, but the essence is not like that.(228-061,19920303)

The idea of love preceded evolution

2 Although all birds are similar in shape, there are many different species. Can a sparrow and a bunting mate and reproduce? They cannot. Between an amoeba and a human being there are countless species. Could an amoeba mutate into a human being all at once, disregarding these stages? Between an amoeba and a human being there are numerous connecting stages. The process that led to human beings could not happen randomly on its own; that is utterly unreasonable. The differentiation of species is absolute. In considering whether concept or existence comes first, materialism emerged among those who think existence came first. Nevertheless, true love is the only thing that can connect everything.(228-061,19920303)

3 A big question these days is whether the theory of evolution is true or the theory of creation is true. Who determines the direction of evolution? Can a being do so by itself? Can a developing being make this decision on its own? Another question

is this: How can such a being gather, cultivate and increase power in order to form a relationship with the realm of the ideal? Such things become possible only with God. The question cannot be answered by science. The desire for union with God exists within all matter, just as it does within human beings. It is the very purpose of material existence. In this sense, human beings are the representatives of the material world and the synthesis of all the elements in the universe.(111-127,19810208)

4 God is the subject partner to human beings. He is the subject partner of the world of created things. This being we call God is the center of all action. Scientists today say that this universe is made up of energy, but they do not realize that before energy can exist, first there must be interaction. Confusion arises from not knowing that interaction between subject and object partners is the source of energy.(131-214,19840504)

5 Within any environment, all things exist in relationships between subject and object partners. These relationships are a necessary condition for existence. If relationships are absent, the force of the universe, a natural force, will repel them. All existing beings, no matter how small, from the mineral kingdom to the animal kingdom, want to become object partners—beings with substantial form that can receive Gods love. All atoms are essentially elements of love, which makes them want to be absorbed by minerals. Minerals, having absorbed these elements of love, want to be absorbed by plants. This process continues on to higher levels until it reaches the human level, the level of beings in the position of God's object partners of love. Even human beings have the goal to go through the human love organs. If there were no such process, no living things could maintain their existence. Lower beings are to be absorbed by higher beings. By being absorbed, they attain a higher value and become higher beings.(264-284,19941120)

6 According to the formulae and principles that govern energy, can the output be equal to the input? Can the energy produced through an action equal the energy that generated that action? When there is action, energy is consumed. Action entails consumption. So it is impossible that the output of energy can equal the input. When action takes place, the energy is always reduced. What evolutionists say would mean that action leads to beings having higher energy. But they have no formula to justify this. If such a formula existed, the world would turn upside down. Therefore, evolution from lower to higher species requires another source of energy.(055-256,19720509)

7 If the interaction of subject and object partners diminished them, they would not engage in it. It is a principle that they interact only when it serves a shared higher purpose. From this point of view, evolution would not bring about development if it were not guided by a higher purpose. Development requires an increase of horizontal energy; otherwise there is no development. Yet this energy can absolutely not arise except through interaction that has a purpose and an object partner.(054-013,19720309)

8 We must solve the problem of the theory of evolution. Communism adopted the concepts of the theory of evolution as if they were true. Yet it is invisible things that are truly valuable. Can you see God? Can you see your conscience? Can you see love? These are the three most precious things to human beings. God, the conscience and love are the three most precious things, yet they are invisible. Everyone knows that the conscience exists. Is there anyone who denies the existence of the conscience? Is there anyone who denies the existence of love? It is invisible to the eye. Yet because it is invisible, it can go anywhere and become one with anything. Can visible things enter in this way? Since love is invisible, it can even enter our cells. There is nothing it cannot go through. Herein lies the origin of this logic: No one can restrain love. The universe cannot stop or block true love.(239-069,19921123)

9 How did the universe originate? Neither the theory of evolution nor the theory of creation can explain it. Before either the concept of creation or the concept of evolution, there was male and female. Male and female came into being because of love. This is the formula. Because of love, there is man and woman. Men cannot find love in a world of men. Women cannot find love centered on other women. When a man finds a woman, and when a woman finds a man, that is when they find love.(280-060,19961101)

The unity of religion and science

10 Because God gave us the responsibility to complete His comprehensive unified thought, we research and develop natural science as Unified Science, and we draw together the world of the mind through religion. From the end of the sixteenth century, religion and science were divided, but today, in the Last Days, we have one unified focus that brings the two into one to achieve a single purpose.(003-106,19571006)

11 Today the development of science, and the modern civilization based on science, has succeeded in unifying the realm of external thought. We have a realm of unified

thought on the world level. But internally, it is not science but religion that reveals the original human nature and character. Religion has to complete the mission of building an internally unified world, in which all people are one united body. Today science and religion are in conflict with each other, but it shouldn't be like that. God created the body of Adam and breathed the spirit into it so that Adam could stand as God's representative. Phenomena similar to this must take place in the Last Days. (003-106,19571006)

12 Science studies the resultant world, while religion studies the world of heart. Until today, ideology has set forth the logic of cultural history. These three systems developed independently and separately, meaning religion according to religion, science according to science, and ideology according to ideology. Since God is one, He could not have been the one to divide them. In the Last Days, we should unite these three centered on God.(165-252,19870527)

13 Only the Unification Church can connect the highest points of religion, science and ideology. The Unification Church is the only place on earth that bases one unified ideological system in a religious ideal. Therefore, it is a logical conclusion that God is working through the Unification Church. This is not due to the work of human beings. In our time, God rapidly developed science, notably space science, because we are entering the age of ideological change by which to unify the entire universe. This scientific development can serve to expand and unite religions to embrace the entire universe. There was no other way for religion, science and ideology to unite.(165-252,19870527)

14 God is the origin of religious truth as well as scientific truth. God is the very first preacher and at the same time the very first scientist. I have a firm belief that these are fundamental truths of the universe. This is the cornerstone of my life's work. As a disciple of the living God, I have tried to present God, who can be seen substantially through this physical world and who appears so clearly through the spirit world, in a deeper, wider and clearer context, and to explain the fundamental aspects of God's existence in one unified theory.(133-277,19840903)

15 The purpose of science is to realize humanity's dreams. However, in the past, because of the barriers among people and nations, the amazing inventions wrought through science could not contribute immediately to the well-being of all people. Some people are interested in restricting the benefits of science to their own nation. However, the civilization made possible by science should benefit all humankind. Specific nations or factions should not possess it exclusively.(065-255,19721126)

16 In the past several centuries, science has been divided. Through the analytic method, scientists have specialized in many narrow fields. Recently, through the synthetic method, a new and hopeful trend is appearing to consolidate and unify this divided knowledge. The emergence of Unified Science is the most conspicuous example of this tendency. Beneath its many divisions, science has worked toward one goal, one direction up to the present time. That is, each specialized field has sought, in its own particular way, the realization of a world of well-being. There is no doubt that it will continue toward the same goal in the future.(065-255,19721126)

17 In human life, science can only be a means; it cannot be an end. The purpose of human life is to realize God's purpose of creation. A human being is a unified being of both physical and spiritual bodies. Hence, on the foundation of physical life, he or she is to lead a life of value, a life of love, truth, goodness and beauty. To put it simply, we need science and technology for our physical life, but we have to apply them in the framework of spiritual life. Science that disregards or fails to emphasize that life is based on values actually destroys human value systems. This contributes to today's reality of fear and insecurity. We can deliver humanity from this unfortunate situation only by searching for and discovering the authentic value perspective. Science in its turn has to align with this value perspective that, needless to say, has to be based on absolute values.(106-053,19791123)

18 Where can we find absolute values? They can be found only in God's love. Beauty, truth and goodness based on God's love are absolute values in themselves. It is therefore reasonable to conclude that we can liberate humanity from the harm caused by the misuse of scientific technology only when science itself recognizes God and applies technology in the same direction as God's love.(106-053,19791123)

19 God has two important tasks that He needs someone to accomplish before He sends the Messiah again. One of them is the creation of a highly developed material civilization. To say that God's Will is accomplished is to say that God's kingdom of heaven on earth is realized. This doesn't mean only a spiritual kingdom of heaven but also an earthly or material kingdom of heaven. It is necessary for God to prepare a vessel to contain the highly developed spiritual culture that will come into being with the Second Advent of the Messiah. This vessel is a highly developed material civilization. Moreover, in God's ideal the world is one nation, in which people will live in close contact through advanced means of transportation and communication made possible by the development of science. This development is a very important element for the construction of the kingdom of heaven on earth.

It is a necessary and indispensable condition for the creation of the culture of a unified world.(100-245,19781019)

20 The main mission of science is to improve humanity's material existence, and Unified Science will contribute to our effectiveness in that work. However, just as the original human being is a unified being of spirit and body, true social life involves harmonizing the spiritual and material, and the ideal world is a unity of love and creative action. The improvement of material life alone does not make for the realization of a world of true happiness. This leads us to the conclusion that in order to accomplish our mission, we need to integrate Unified Science and Unified Thought. Accomplishing this integration, resolving the long-standing problem of the relationship between science and religion, will help us establish the unified world of prosperity, happiness and goodness.(065-262,19721126)

CHAPTER 3

The Creation's Lament and True Stewardship

Section 1. Our Relationship with the Creation

1 It is a misunderstanding to think we belong to ourselves, even though we proclaim ourselves to be the lords of creation with dominion over all things in the visible world. Our body is not our own. Our mind is not our own either. If we were asked on what grounds we claim these as ours, we would not be able to answer. If the question of our ownership were resolved, it would mark a historical starting point for the resolution of all problems. However, today people live on earth without even thinking about this matter. Seeing that people today have become so disconnected from their origin, God's sorrow now is greater than the sorrow He felt at the loss of the whole universe through the Fall. If there were anyone who felt this sorrowful heart of Heavenly Father, and shared His heart, the providence centered on religion could begin from that person. The way to rediscover God is to pioneer from that point of connection to His Heart. All beings have the earth as their parent, the universe as their parent and the Creator as their parent. Therefore, you are not just one individual existing on your own.(004-095,19580316)

The earth is our second mother

2 It is the earth that nurtures our body. The earth is our parent, providing all the essential elements that the body needs. However, no one on earth recognizes this. In addition to the earth, we also have parents who gave us birth, the parents of our mind and body. However, humankind doesn't have only two kinds of parents. Beyond these, we have our absolute, eternal Parent, from whom we derive our innermost value. But if we are unable to recognize and understand that we have an eternal Parent, humanity will remain in a lamentable state. Therefore, if we do not have one moment, one period of time during the course of history in which we can understand the eternal, absolute Parent, we will not be able to take our place in the garden of rest. We need to understand that we have an eternal Parent with a deep heart. This is not our earthly parents, who will fade back into the earth, but the Parent who can shake up and guide earth's history and the history of all humankind. This is our Parent in heaven, in other words, the One who created us. Thus, we have three great parents.(009-016,19600403)

3 We think it is only our parents who gave birth to us, but that is not the case. The origin of the body is the earth. We are born from our parents but we resemble not only them. Therefore, we seek something beyond our parents, something new and greater. It is a fundamental principle that reason and motive are behind a divine outcome; therefore our longing for absolute values must derive from such a parent. A true person should be able to communicate in heart with the earth. If the earth, as our parent, gave birth to us, then we should become people of heart who live on the earth for its sake. Furthermore, a true person is one who knows Heaven and is concerned with our Heavenly Parent's Will. Such a person will work hard today and tomorrow to reach the destination of goodness. A true person endeavors to understand absolute relationships.(009-017,19600403)

4 The body is made entirely of elements borrowed from the universe. Therefore, if all things in the universe demanded to recover what was theirs from the human body, everything would be taken away from us. From this we can deduce, "I am made from the universe; the universe gave birth to me." Thus the universe is the parent of your body. What follows is, "I am the substantial form, the encapsulation of all the elements of the universe." Then we can all say, "I am the universe in motion" or "I am the universe in action." Given that we are the living manifestations of the universe, we must love the universe.(105-106,19790930)

5 When we sit in nature and gaze upon our surroundings, we feel something mystical. If your heart flows with love for nature, loving people will come naturally. Gazing at flowers, butterflies and all created things in nature gives us hope. You should think, "I am begotten from nature. You too are begotten from nature.

Therefore the whole universe exists for you and me." How wonderful it would be if you could feel this!(105-107,19790930)

6 The earth is the field in which we can sow and harvest the seeds of love. We grow by absorbing life elements from the earth. A mother's body is like that field. Just as we absorb life elements from the earth, a baby is born after growing in its mother's body and absorbing nutrition from her flesh and blood. On earth the child grows, becomes a perfected individual through life in a family, and is harvested when he or she passes into the spirit world. The spirit world is like a storehouse for things harvested in autumn, while the earth is like a field from which the harvest comes. To become a good fruit, you must fully mature in the field. Only when you have experienced the realm of ideal love through loving relationships of all kinds—up and down, right and left, and front and back—can you go into the storehouse of God's king-dom. There, immersed in God's love, you live with God eternally as His ideal object partner of love. This great universe, the cosmos, is our home. The great universe is our home, and being able to govern it as we wish, living eternally with God in His love, is the greatest happiness, the greatest liberation, and the greatest freedom.(332-225,20000923)

7 The human body is about three-fourths water. The earth sustains its children with invisible air and visible water. This is why we say the earth is our second mother. Because the earth provides all the elements for our life, we must love the earth more than we love our own mother. After growing up this way, we fly into the spirit world. First we pass through our mother's womb, then through the world of air. At last we enter the spirit world and are liberated there. This is our final destination. This is the kingdom of heaven centered on God.(428-209,20031219)

Human beings are the center of creation

8 God created the beautiful and intricate natural world of creation to provide a safe environment for Adam and Eve and to serve as a foundation for their external biological development. Within this safe environment, human beings were to grow and develop. God's deepest interest, however, is that human beings develop their inner nature and loving character. Human beings are meant to resemble God's true love and become fully spiritually mature through experiencing true love. Therefore, God created the power of love as the strongest among all inner, intangible forms of energy.(279-206,19960820)

9 The Korean expression, "In all creation, human beings are the most precious," is indeed correct. Like us, God also needs an object partner of His love. That is why He

created human beings. Because of His ideal of love, which places human beings at the center, God created all things in the universe to resemble us so that they could harmonize and be absorbed by us. When we look at the created world, we can see that everything exists in pairs. The mineral, plant, animal and human worlds all exist in pairs. In the mineral world, positive and negative ions interact. Among the elements there are none that combine randomly. If the reciprocal conditions do not match, even if God Himself commands it, they will not unite. Conversely, if the reciprocal conditions are right, even God cannot stop them from coming together. On a minute level, even in the mineral kingdom everything is designed to correspond to God's model of ideal love, combining and functioning within this model.(201-146,19900330)

10 The fundamental order of the universe is based on the principle of existing for the sake of the other. The creations ideal, as well as the hope of human beings, is a world of true ideals, true love and true peace. Therefore, the principle of living for the sake of others is the starting point of Gods ideal, and for all happiness and love. When looking at the universe, we can see that nothing exists for its own sake. The animal world exists for the plant world; the mineral world and plant world exist for the animal world; and all of these together exist for human beings. Then for whom do human beings exist? We exist for God. Yet God too exists for all things, since He made them and is the source of their growth and development.(135-234,19851211)

11 Human beings are the most advanced beings and contain within themselves all the building blocks of the mineral, plant and animal worlds. Thus human beings are the fruit, microcosm and model for everything in the existing world. Nevertheless, since humans are resultant beings, we can deduce that we came to exist because of a first causal being, and that we resemble that being. This means there must be an absolute subject being who created human beings as His object partners. If we are beings of character, then the subject being must also be a being of character. The field of philosophy defines this subject partner as the First Cause and Absolute Being. Religion refers to this absolute being as God.(089-226,19761127)

12 All things in creation have dual purposes, an individual purpose and a higher purpose that serves the greater whole. Therefore the universe is like one massive organic entity with dual purposes. Within the universe, an entity that has completed its individual purpose by uniting with a subject or object partner cannot exist in isolation or in a fixed state. Every individual entity assumes either a subject or object position in relation to a partner and moves toward a higher direction and purpose. The universe is an entity that unites everything within itself as subject-

object partners, with shared interests and a common purpose, and contains within itself an energy and universal power that serves the common purpose of the whole. Then what is the nature of the strongest, most perfect mutual relationship that creates eternal harmony and unity between a subject partner and an object partner? It is the relationship of giving and receiving grounded in love. The motivation of love, however, does not originate from human beings. The fundamental origin of love is the absolute, unchanging, causal subject being. In religion, this first causal being is called God.(102-057,19781125)

13 When we examine the process of God's creation, we see that first God made all things of creation as the foundation upon which to create human beings. We were God's final masterpiece. Everything began from God. Culminating with the creation of human beings, God wanted to experience unity and equilibrium with human beings and all things of the natural world. Human beings' mission is to stand as mediators, connecting God, the spirit world and the physical world.(501-280,20050723)

14 God made all things as a foundation upon which to create His sons and daughters. On this foundation everything is related and connected. This is true from the animal kingdom to the mineral kingdom. Plus and minus exist in the mineral world, just as stamen and pistil are found in the plant kingdom, and male and female in the animal kingdom. The greatest masterpiece of all, created by amalgamating all things of creation, is human beings, with internal nature and external form. All entities appear in symbol, image and substance so they can connect and relate with all of creation.(144-237,19860425)

15 The world functions harmoniously through various systems and relationships. In this complicated and diverse world, we need an ideology that can teach us how to become true owners. This ideology should apply not only to human relationships but also to our relationship with all things of creation. What kind of person is a true owner? A true owner is one who considers the welfare of others before his or her own, practicing a life of service and devotion to others. He or she leads a life of true love. A true person is a true owner who loves, protects and nurtures all things with true love.(567-258,20070704)

16 Things that are woven together through love become one. This is the phenomenon of connection. A single strand of my hair and I resemble each other. When you look at a strand of your hair, it looks like nothing special. You may think it has no relationship with you, but it does. All things of creation are like that strand of hair. Love functions in mysterious ways. All things of creation have their own

capacity to respond to emotions, such as love. If you raise flowers in a caring environment with music, they will grow well. The buds will not fade before they bloom; they will blossom fully. If you let chickens listen to music, they too will grow well. Everything grows well when in harmony with its surroundings, but if there is discord, it wilts.(185-035,19890101)

17 Why did God create the environment? He created the environment as a place for plants and all things of creation to grow so they could provide nutrition for human beings. The fish in the ocean, the plants in the fields and mountains, the grass and trees, all provide us with nutrition. For example, many things can be used as medicine when we are sick. There is nothing that is not useful. In fact, the most distasteful thing could prove to be highly medicinal. In some instances, the poison of venomous snakes is considered to be the best medicine.(406-133,20030309)

Section 2. The Creation's Lament and Our Response

1 In Satan's world, all things of creation are under his dominion in the name of his children. The nations in Satan's world are also under his dominion. This is why God and the creation are lamenting. This is why we need to restore the creation to God through indemnity and liberation. In order to do this, God's son and daughter need to establish dominion over the creation. Adam and Eve together should govern the creation, which desires to be ruled by God. In turn, Adam and Eve's descendants need to unite and take dominion over all things.(023-331,19690615)

All of creation is lamenting

2 The Fall of human beings caused the fall of the created world, causing all created entities to lament. There are two realms of lamentation, that of the human world and that of the creation. In the created world, the state of the world is determined by the state of the people. It is because of the human Fall that the creation entered the realm of lamentation, consequently bringing human beings into that realm also. Thus we need to liberate the creation first. The process of recreation needs to be done in this order because God created the natural world first. We must first liberate creation from its lamentation. Then, upon that foundation, we can return to the original state in which God created us.(172-049,19880107)

3 In the creation we have the mineral kingdom, the plant kingdom and the animal kingdom. Lamentation begins from the mineral kingdom. Because Satan's lineage permeated the creation, all things are trapped and cannot relate to God as their master. Everything is blocked. That is why all creation and all human beings are in distress. In the spirit world God laments, as do the angels.(403-215,20030122)

4 Because of the human Fall, God has never experienced a single day of the ideal for which our ancestors longed. God has not had a single day of joy based on His original ideal. The creation was lost and could not receive God's love. We can only restore the world and recover the world of God's love by correcting this. In the Bible, Chapter 8 of Romans says that because of the human Fall, God, humanity and all of creation came to lament. How did all this lamentation come about? As a result of the Fall, God lost His loving sons and daughters, human beings lost their loving Parent, and all creation lost the master from whom it was meant to receive love. In this way, lamentation befell the universe.(087-177,19760602)

5 It is true that the creation is lamenting. It laments not because of its own pain, but because God is lamenting. In all directions, all things of creation grieve. People should realize that they too are in a position to grieve. But who among humankind understands this? Who can resolve this agonizing situation? God cannot do it alone. The things of creation also cannot resolve it. Satan certainly cannot do it. Only human beings can resolve this painful situation. At the very least, we should share the sorrow of the creation.(011-319,19620323)

6 From a historical perspective, during the Old Testament Age the providence of restoration was advanced through the offering of sacrifices. Initially God led His providence to unite people and the creation by requiring sacrifices. Later He led the providence to unite people with Himself. This has been the history of the providence of restoration until the present. From now on, however, the providence will advance through your initiative. Thus you need to be the one in the position of a sacrifice who unites with the creation. Then, upon that foundation, you should unite with God. Through this process, history, which has been flowing in a vertical line, will unfold horizontally in your family.(023-331,19690615)

7 To have dominion over creation, man and woman must first unite in love. Only after this can they have dominion over all things of creation. This is the Principle. When God created and blessed Adam and Eve, He said, "Be fruitful and multiply, fill the earth, and have dominion over all things." This means that you can have dominion over the creation only after you have a family.(026-195,19691025)

8 Human beings cannot have dominion over all creation until they become bride and bridegroom and have a true family. To have dominion over creation, they must wait until the original standard of Adam and Eve is restored. Creation was supposed to be governed by human beings who had attained original love. In order to grow properly, all of creation wants to receive love and respect from original human

beings. That is the eternal place where all created things want to dwell.(026-195,19691025)

9 The entire creation laments because the human Fall turned everything upside down. This is the reason all things of creation have been waiting for the sons of God who have the authority to overcome the realm of lamentation. The creation can finally be governed only through the families of the sons of God The creation has been waiting for this time, and the mission of religion is to bring about this time. Until then human beings have no authority to take dominion over the creation.() 026-196,19691025

10 No one today has earned the privilege of taking dominion over the creation based on love. Until we mature enough to embrace all things with the original heart of love, we are not entitled to eat and digest the things of creation. All of creation should be governed by true families. If all things of creation lived with loving families, do you think they would lament? No, they would not. All things of the creation want to be governed in a place where love flourishes. Human beings have never been able to elevate their level of heart enough to create that kind of place. If we don't advance to that place of spiritual maturity, we will never have dominion over the creation. In order to be owners of that place of love, we must unite as bride and bridegroom. According to the original law, a bride and a bridegroom form a family, and then govern all of creation based on true love in their family. To do that, we must restore the lost position of all humankind. Because we have not been able to restore our original position, we do not have the privilege of governing the creation.(026-196,19691025)

11 All your basic necessities, even the domes on your back, came from the creation, so you should not treat them merely as objects for your daily life. You should treat each item as a microcosm of the whole created world and recognize its value. Likewise, you need to make your life an offering and create an environment where God can dwell with you. Unless we live this way, we cannot establish the foundation to become true families who govern creation.(023-330,19690615)

12 Since Satan's children have control over all of creation, all things belong to Satan. We must restore all things to God. According to the Principle of Restoration, all created things should first have belonged to the ancestors of humankind. Of course, all things should belong to God, but from the viewpoint of God's blessing to human beings, all created things should have belonged to the ancestors of humankind. First they should belong to the parents of goodness, who have no relationship to

the Fall. Afterwards they can belong to the children of goodness.(023-332,19690615)

13 Restoring myself alone does not complete restoration. First I must be united with God, and then I must unite with all things of creation in order to be in a position to declare, "All creation belongs to God." After that I can say, "These created things belong to me." Before something belongs to me, it should belong to God and to True Parents. Otherwise it cannot be mine. Everything that belongs to me must first be offered to the public. In order to lay the foundation to restore Korea, I must consider all material things from a greater perspective, beyond my individual self. I must treat all material things as public.(023-336,19690615)

The true owner who resolves the sorrow of all things

14 To capture God's heart, the heart that existed before the creation and will remain forever, is the condition required for us to earn our value as lords of creation. Once you possess God's heart, you are ahead of everything. Our value is determined by our relationship with the center, the root, the heart. This has been God's heart from the very beginning. When you issue commands with this heart of God, all creation will respond, "Yes! You are right! Thank you!" That's the way it will be. So why are God and all things of creation sorrowful? It is because this relationship of heart was cut off. The history of restoration and the history of resurrection have progressed to reestablish this severed relationship of heart. Once we own God's heart, no one can oppose us when we say, "You are our Father, and we are your sons and daughters." No one will deny it. There is no way to deny the relationship of heart between parent and child.(011-320,19620323)

15 We need to learn what kind of people we must become in order to restore the lost original standard and live in the kingdom of heaven. We should understand that all created things have a love relationship with God. Furthermore, we should feel that all things of creation are a reflection of the Parent. All creation is a reflection of the heart of the Parent, whose entire heart and soul went into the creation of all things. All things expect to be loved, valued and treated well as the representatives of the One whose hands created them. However, since the human Fall, no one has treated the creation in this way How could all things of creation not lament? That is why the Bible says, "The whole creation has been groaning."(009-175,19600508)

16 Since we are responsible to liberate creation, which is sighing and lamenting in sorrow, we should be able to touch a single tree or even a single blade of grass and experience the heart and care that God invested in its creation six thousand years

ago. We must be able to shed tears at the sight of one solitary plant along the road, or while holding onto a tree, and say, "How lonely you must be, having lost your master!" I have wept profusely while grasping a rock. I have shed tears while feeling the blowing wind.(009-176,19600508)

17 We need to love and be proud of all creation in heaven and earth that was created by God with His whole heart. God made all things of creation for the well-being of His children. Creation is our inheritance, which cannot be bought for any treasure, not for silver or gold. Yet this precious heritage has been neglected and treated with contempt. That is why all created beings are lamenting. When I look at the mountains, I can sense their sorrow, I can sense the grieving of the fields and the lamentation in the blowing wind.(011-207,19610717)

18 You need to become sons and daughters who attend God. After earning the title of Gods sons and daughters, you should become lords of creation who can take responsibility for all created things. You should love the creation with your whole heart, just as God has loved us for six thousand years, without discarding us in our sinfulness. Regardless of whether or not somebody is watching, you should be able to hold a single blade of grass and say, "Father, how hopeful You must have been when You created this blade of grass! Isn't that right? How You must have longed to show this proudly to Your beloved children? How long this single blade of grass has been waiting for the moment You could proudly show it to Your beloved children! How sorrowful has this poor blade of grass been, not being able to experience that day?" (011-207,19610717)

Section 3. True Dominion over the Creation

1 God is the owner of the world. So who should control this earth? Naturally God, the owner of the world, should rule over it. If not God, then those who represent the owner and receive His love should rule the earth. Since God is the owner of this world, those who follow the way of loyalty to God must rule the world. To sustain humankind forever on earth, we need an ideology that teaches us to accept God as the owner of the world and build a world of greater value, the eternal world. What is that ideology? It is Godism. When we become the sons and daughters who receive God's love, we can say, "This world is mine."(031-250,19700604)

All things should be publicly managed

2 All things of creation should be governed by public law. Creation is in the domain of public law. People, as well as all things of creation, are in the domain of public

law. A nation also exists only within this domain. When people put self-interest before the greater good, the nation cannot endure.(031-238,19700604)

3 A public person can manage and rule all things of creation according to the public law that governs the universe. That law is heavenly law. Once you master these heavenly principles, your actions will not be sinful even if you need to be forceful. It is not a sin to take action against evil. If someone doing evil refuses to listen to your admonition three times, it is not unlawful to use the force necessary to stop him. Therefore, you need to live for the greater purpose, always distinguishing between good and evil. No one is more fearsome than one who lives for heaven and earth.(031-240,19700604)

4 If you ask all things of creation, "Do you want to be governed by public or private law?" they will answer, "We want to be governed by public law." Why is this so? Just as people want to rise to the highest realm of goodness, created things long for this also. Then by whom do the world and all things of creation want to be governed? They want to be ruled by the more public-minded being.(031-244,19700604)

5 You must become a person who can manage all things of creation in a public-minded way. When you eat, you need to know the value of the food you are eating. As you eat, you should ask the food, "What kind of person's mouth do you want to enter? What kind of face should I have for you to become my flesh, my bones and energy, and what do you want to leave behind for the sake of the world?" Even though when rice is eaten it ends up inside someone's stomach, every grain of rice wants to be eaten by a good person. It wants to be consumed by the more public-minded person.(031-248,19700604)

6 That which is public should never be considered lightly. That which is public can even kill someone. Today people are trying to stop air pollution in the cities. This is natural, since an unclean environment is harmful. Water should be kept clean, too. Like air and water, all of creation is public. The sun, for example, is the prerequisite for life on earth; its value is infinite. Yet we receive the sun's priceless light for free. Have you ever seen anyone with money in his hand, trying to buy the light of the sun or eat the light of the sun? Have you ever seen anyone pay a single cent to receive the sun's light? If somebody sold the sunlight, would you buy it, yes or no? Water, air and light — none of these natural things belongs to the individual.(031-249,19700604)

7 Your management of the things you have owned so far, your material possessions, is only temporary. You are just the manager. In order to manage things properly, all your things should be dedicated to God by offering them to Him through the True Parents. In other words, only after going through the process of belonging to God and True Parents can everything become truly yours. You should clearly understand this concept. Through historical experience, we may be used to the concept that certain things belong to certain people, but things cannot remain like that. All material things must go through the name of True Parents, and go through God's name. By going through this process, all material things can be re* stored for the first time. You are not the real owner of things until they are restored; you are merely the manager of your possessions. Until the time come when all material things are returned to their true owner, you need to be responsible as a manager. From this point of view, we must distinguish clearly between public and private things.(023-334,19690615)

8 We must distinguish between public and private things according to a clear hierarchy. Through the process of establishing a hierarchy of public to private things, we should then clarify the standard of public and private things, and lead our lives based on firm principles. However, in this world everything is usually upside down. Commonly, private things are treated as valuable while public things are neglected. This is absolutely not acceptable. We must treat public things as precious. If we want to complete the restoration of material things into private possessions, we first need to make them public by changing them into church possessions, then national possessions and finally, world possessions. In this manner we should treat public things with greater care. Using this paradigm, people are higher than all created things, while God is higher than people. People often say, "I am first," centering on themselves. However, the restoration of the world is unthinkable centered on the individual. Although people are higher than their possessions, God is higher than people. We must be able to relate with all things of the material world focused on God's love.(023-335,19690615)

9 What you have now is not yours. The house you live in is not yours, the food you eat is not yours, the daily necessities you use are not yours. You should not forget that all of these are public things and have a permanent relationship with the world centered on a public figure, God, our Father, and should be bequeathed generation after generation, eternally. You should think to yourself, "The clothes I am wearing, my lifelong foundation, and even my own body, are not mine"(152-296,19630726)

10 Misuse of public things is a sin. Unification Church members must be absolutely clear regarding public things. The Fathers things are holy. If all created things are

holy, then your body, which consumes these things, is holy. If all created things have unlimited value, then your body, which lives by consuming those things, has unlimited value. When you recognize your value as a public being, you can create a unified family with great public value. Based on this family we can move on to the tribal level; based on the tribe, we move on to a people; based on a people we can build a nation; and based on that nation, we march toward the world level. Smaller things are absorbed into the bigger field. We should move forward through sacrificing lesser things.(152-296,19630726)

11 We should strive day and night to make the Father's country our country, the Father's people our people, and the Father's possessions our own. This means you are meant to act, live and exist harmonizing two reciprocal bases while experiencing God's heart. Because this is God's act of creation, relationship without heart is a sin; being separated from heart is a sin. Whenever we meet our brothers and sisters, we should invite God to be present with us and connect with His heart. Whenever we deal with material things we must also relate to them with God's heart.(152-297,19630726)

12 Are my possessions public or private? This is the problem. All of us must go beyond the concept that things belong to us. This is one of the greatest lessons we must teach humankind from now on. We should reject the concept that things are "mine" and replace it with the realization that things are "public." Nothing in the created world belongs to a certain individual as his own possession. If you boast, "This is my land," you will be ruined, because it is public land. You are just the manager. If you care for it as a public manager according to the universal principles of governance, you will be able to manage it forever. Otherwise, you will lose it.(031-247,19700604)

13 Nobody understands the law of public management of the created world. We will finally reach the era of liberation of all things that the Bible talks about when we establish the true value of all things of the created world. Unless we know their value, our use of things is not management; it is abuse. Therefore, all things of creation need a true owner. Until today, the things of creation have never had public value or authority. All things want to be governed from that position. This means that they should be ruled by true love. That which is true is not self-centered.(031-247,19700604)

14 A wife lives for her husband, children live for their parents, parents, grandparents and grandchildren all live for the family. Living in love like this, for the sake of others, is happiness. When everyone in a family tries to make everything

"ours" rather than "mine," the family will prosper. When the grandfather conserves everything without wasting anything, and the father, mother and children do the same to expand what belongs to all of them, the family will prosper. Thus when family members use money and save it for the sake of the whole, the environment of love in that family will expand. That ideal becomes real when we expand it to the society and world on the foundation of such families. We must not center on ourselves.(167-215,19870719)

15 Unification Church missionaries are trained to live without the luxuries of Western civilized society. We have a new culture called "the sleeping bag culture." Wherever they go, our young people do not feel they are strangers. Our Unification Church missionaries live without luxurious furnishings and use only the most basic household goods. When you become a missionary, as you witness to sorrowful people, you must have a tearful heart. You should allow them to recognize that God is a God of sorrow. God is yearning to cry with people who suffer in sorrow. (130-280,19840207)

16 I have seen you throw away things you should not throw away and consume things that you should not consume. By every possible means, we have to find a way to save even a single cent for the sake of the world, for the sake of God's Will, and for the restoration of this country. We need to develop a way to save and become more efficient in financial management.(077-032,19750323)

17 From the viewpoint of the Principle, wasting is a sin. From the time we are born, we are supposed to consume a certain quantity of things. If we consume more than we should it is considered a sin. When we die, there should be something left over. If not, our descendants will be indebted. Is there anybody who can speak and teach about this? Before our schooling, the Divine Principle is our teacher. Nature is our teacher; even the ocean is our teacher.(193-103,19890831)

18 What are we striving to do by saving, economizing and suffering? We are trying to do something good for the next generation. Consequently, we are striving for a system of thought that can create a foundation we can be proud of in front of the world. After ten years, a hundred years, or a thousand years of bequeathing a tradition based on thought, Koreans will surely become a venerated people throughout the world. Therefore, I ponder how to guide people based on this principle. Although this approach may seem to be the worst one at this particular moment while we are being persecuted, I predict that this thought system alone will remain and prevail as time goes by. For this reason, I embarked on this path.(109-105,19801026)

Dominion over all things and health

19 When you are fasting, you realize how much time you really have. You realize just how much time you spend eating three meals a day. How much effort is wasted just thinking about what to eat, constantly going back and forth opening the refrigerator door to eat an apple or drink a Coke? It is important to get accustomed to eating only at mealtimes. If you do this, you will not get sick; rather, you will become healthier.(131-289,19840504)

20 Even when hungry, you should not completely fill your plate with food. You should be satisfied eating three-fifths of your plateful. Only then are you a wise person. You should learn how to be frugal in everything. You should save the maximum and then find out the minimum you can live with. Train yourself to use only the minimum for at least three months until you reach your limit. After you do this, you will see what happens.(057-198,19720531)

21 Before loving God you must love everything in front of you—the food you eat, all different types of material things, the creation, and your own body. You love your body by absorbing the creation into your body with love. Your first parents are the parents who gave birth to you; your second parent is the earth. Because you receive all the elements your body needs from the land, you should love the land.(290-054,19980202)

22 You have heard the saying that if you release animals and fish with love, your descendants will prosper. This is correct. If you live in your homeland you don't catch local diseases. The saying, "A body and the soil are not separable," means you walk on the land, breathe the air, eat the grains and vegetables, and drink the water. If you find one, two, three, four, five, six, seven or even several hundred places just like your homeland, you can travel to those places during your life. The time will come to make the whole world your own liberated homeland. In the ocean, water currents flow to balance east and west, so fish grow well. Air also does not flow randomly; it flows according to differences in temperature to achieve equilibrium. We too need to learn how to attain balance. For example, starting in primary school we should learn how to care for plants and animals so they do not become extinct. When we learn this kind of balance and care for the natural world, it will be possible to achieve one unified world.(491-294,20050327)

23 According to the Principle, a completely mature person must be healthy, united in mind and body, and in harmony with God's heart and absolute value. No matter how strong your spirit, if your body is not healthy you cannot be a sound person.

Conversely, no matter how strong your body is, if your spirit is not correct you cannot embody a completely mature person. Realizing this, you need to make constant effort to maintain proper unity between your mind and body.(271-150,19950827)

24 All creation is precious, like Gods fine, soft hair. Even those particles we pick up from touching objects or petting animals, which mix with our bodies' sweat and fall off, were once part of God. Likewise, if we love everything that we eat, we will not get sick. God created all things in the universe as object partners of His love. If we love the things God created just as God loves them, consume them on behalf of God, and become people who reflect God's personality, then they will provide us with nutrition and keep us healthy. We are not meant to get sick and die. To avoid this, we must become one with God's love, life and lineage. We need to become Gods representatives.(384-182,20020703)

25 How fortunate human beings are! We conduct an orchestra of love, and in accord with the rhythm of love, we live eating the animals and plants that maintain life in the universe. This means that we live off the fruits of love. Flowers and leaves are the fruits of love. How happy are we who eat these fruits! Those who eat the fruits of love suffer no disease. They know no illness. Even if there were just one piece of bread remaining in the cafeteria when you got there, you would think, "This bread passed through countless hands throughout the world, many means of transportation, and prevailed over great hardships to get here. This bread has been made and given to me as the fruit of the efforts of many people, as the fruit of their love. As the owner of love, I shall eat this bread thinking of it as my partner." Those who have no such appreciation are bound to fall ill, while those who eat with appreciation can resist all illness. People who eat the fruits of a world filled with love possess miraculous energy.(217-307,19910612)

26 If you eat with a heart of appreciation and love, the food that enters your mouth will say, "I deeply appreciate being absorbed into your body, becoming your flesh and blood and giving you energy to love God." When you eat beef you must think, "This beef has come to me as the fruit of love, after being raised from a calf with its mother's love, and raised by its owner with love." You will never know illness if you consume the fruit of love while appreciating it in oneness with God's original love.(217-308,19910612)

27 All the foods we eat are fruits. We are eating the fruits of the creation, the original bodies containing the seeds of beauty, the microcosms of all living things of beauty. We need to be mindful of their value as we eat them, and that we are doing

so in order to grow and become complete through this valuable love. If we eat with this attitude, there is no reason that we should fall ill. In fact, we will surely grow in good health.(146-109,19860617)

Section 4. Our Attitude toward the Creation

1 When we wake up and open our eyes, we see all of creation unfolding before us. From the creation we indirectly and intuitively receive certain impressions and, by responding to them, we develop our senses. Even the smallest creatures are connected to us. Even though we ignore them, these seemingly insignificant creatures are connected to us and lead their lives every day according to the ideal of the heavenly principle. Why is this so? From the perspective of the purpose of existence, all creatures from the smallest to the greatest, that is, human beings—who are the lords of creation and rule over all things—everything lies within the realm of the ideal of love and can embrace God's ideal for this vast universe. Movement occurs as small things are absorbed by larger entities governing larger spheres, thus fulfilling the purpose of the universe. Small things are absorbed by bigger things, becoming the building blocks of their material form. This relationship leads to the realization of one purpose based on one great ideal. We cannot deny that this is the way history has been progressing, and the way the physical world has been following the principle of heaven toward the fulfillment of one purpose.(009-164,19600508)

The value of all things of creation and the destruction of the natural world

2 Throughout my life I have thought, "Even if I am the only one, I should understand the sorrow of the precious things of creation made by God. We value national treasures housed in palaces, yet we do not cherish the precious things of creation made by God." Those with the heart to say, "Though everyone living on this earth may be ignorant, I will understand," can become a new people able to govern humankind in the future. This is not a concept, but a fact. Who values all things of creation more than they value the family treasure handed down through generations? Diamonds are considered to be the most valuable and precious stones in the world. People hold on to them and refuse to let them go. Who in this world values creation more than diamonds? Where can we find such people? God will say, "I hear you!" upon seeing those who understand in their hearts what He has created, and who weep when they hold the things of creation.(009-177,19600508)

3 Nature is an exhibit that God has given us as a magnificent gift. He pre-pared this gift for the birth of His beloved sons and daughters, who were to live in love for

others. Every bird and plant was a decoration to bring beauty into the lives of His beloved sons and daughters. Even the pebbles along the road were created as decorations for a nation, since God knew that His sons and daughters would be the owners who would rule over the nation. It is the same with flowing water. God did not want things to be dry and monotonous, so He created the natural world fit for a prince of dreams and hope who would inherit this infinitely colorful and harmonious garden, this world of love. Hence we learn from all things of creation.(175-187,19880416)

4 No matter how precious a work of art in a museum, can it have more value than a living work of art? Who has loved this earth, the museum of all things and the work of God, more than God has? Has anyone loved the earth more than they loved their national treasures? Can a gold crown from the Silla Dynasty sitting in a museum compare with one dandelion growing alongside the road? If there were a king who understood God's heart and who took care of the creation with a heart that said, "I feel sorry and ashamed because I cannot love you from the position of an original king whom God has loved," the tufts of grass would want to follow that king and be with him eternally. This is how people should live.(175-187,19880416)

5 You should have such a mind that, when observing nature imbued with God's love, you say, "Can the precious items possessed by the kings of this world, or by people of great fame, compare with this? Can any artifact compare with this? Can a glamorous dress worn by a famous lady compare with this? Without that heart, we are committing sin before the natural world without even realizing it. Is there anyone who looks at a living creature and asks, "What items produced by human hands could compare with this? No matter how great someone might be, could he or she ever be greater than God?" A person who deeply cherished all creation, in which God totally invested His heart, would surely be a child of God. Such a person would not need to pray, for he or she would live with God. God guides people into such a position.(009-176,19600508)

6 Pollution is destroying nature. Since World War II, fish have been dying from water pollution and birds have been falling to the ground from air pollution. We have to protect the water and the air. Water, air and sunlight are the most important. People today live without knowing the value of these things.(337-053,20001022)

7 Nowadays, pollution is a serious problem for humankind. Since World War II, because of pollution the oceans are becoming dirty and fish are dying. The same is happening to the animals in the mountains and to the birds. Some countries are

selfishly dumping their waste into international waters and the oceans are dying. Because of worsening pollution year after year, fish are deserting shallow waters and moving into deeper waters, where they are eaten by deep-water fish. Then the deep-water fish die after eating these smaller fish. This is why the food supply for fish is diminishing. This is a big problem. We need to purify the polluted ocean waters. We need to purify the water so that the fish can live.(520-034,20060309)

8 Pollution is hastening the destruction of humankind. The worst kind of pollution is water pollution. Before people die, animals die first. The fish in the oceans are dying, the birds are dying, and the small insects are dying. Since World War II, because of air pollution, birds have been dying and, because of water pollution, fish have been dying. Now because of pesticides, small and large animals are dying. In the future, if people are fighting, what will happen? We are producing more carbon dioxide than oxygen. The situation could worsen until humankind perishes. No matter how great you are, if you have no water and air is scarce, you will die. What use would the land be? No grass would grow. Therefore we need to love the water and the land, and we need to protect the fish and the animals.(367-174,20020121)

9 People have ravaged our God-given environment, causing the death of many animals. We have killed the best gift God has given to His sons and daughters. Therefore I teach that we should become second creators, loving the gifts God has given us on His behalf. After living such a life of love we can go to heaven. Recently I heard that in Korea people are killing magpies, thinking they are harmful. I don't think we should worry about that kind of thing. Instead, we should prepare one year's food supply for the magpies and raise them with kindness. Then let's see what happens. I used to prepare and give food to pigeons and other birds, and I found that the birds recognized my kindness. The magpies would greet me with a "caw, caw, caw" when they flew by; the pigeons would greet me with a "coo, coo, coo"; and the sparrows would say, "chirp, chirp, chirp." If you become a true owner, birds will not pass you by without greeting you. Because I fed them every day, they expressed their thanks.(333-252,20000926)

10 People are dying because of pollution. We need to protect the animals and insects so they can survive. Who can take responsibility for this? God cannot take on this responsibility. We have to take measures to balance the food chain. On the national level, we must establish long-term legal measures to ensure a sustainable food supply. All the regions of the world should do the same.(418-138,20030916)

11 In order to survive, human beings need air, water, sunlight and soil. We therefore must be grateful for these things. Even when we release something dirty

into the air, it eventually falls to the ground. Therefore, we need to protect the earth and fertilize the land. When we provide fertilizer to the earth, seeds of life emerge there. A mother is like the earth; she always takes care of the dirty things at home. The members of the family rely on the mother for cleanliness. In contrast, men, in the process of initiating things, often ignore the value of the earth and just randomly stomp on it.(358-103,2001 1102)

Protecting and loving nature

12 When you love nature and protect it, your behavior becomes a model for how to love people. Children are the same. They learn how to love people by playing with their toys and loving their pets. Those who live like that with nature often go to a higher level of spirit world than those who lead a religious life because they have reached a higher level of heart. When you reach your seventies or eighties you had better go back to nature. When your memory grows dim and your physical body becomes weaker, you had better go live in nature. Living among all the natural things created by God, loving them and managing them as their master, you will be able to go to a higher level of heart, the kingdom of heaven.(311-310,19990915)

13 In the garden where people of true love and husband and wife of true love are living, beautiful flowers want to blossom, and lovely birds and beautiful animals want to come and live close by. You should understand that their original nature drives them to do this. All things naturally follow such people, who are destined to prosper.(146-109,19860607)

14 We have to go back to nature, live there, and love all the things of God's creation. When we feel the heart of God, who created the soil, water, plants and animals for us, we inherit all the things that belong to Heavenly Father. By doing so, we return joy and glory to the original heart of God, Creator of all these things. For instance, we harvest the grains that we grow through our year-round toil and, during the winter, we rest. Year after year we gather the harvest, offer it to God, and return glory to Him, as we do on Thanksgiving Day. When spring comes the next year, we begin again. When we live this way, based on a desire to return glory to God, God will bless us and we will prosper.(354-163,20010920)

15 God is working to save humankind. If God is a big tree we, as the branches, should resemble the tree. Therefore, we must assist God in His work and help Him find lost humankind. So wherever you go, east or west, you should foster loving relationships with people. Those who don't know how to love other people don't know how to love nature. Also, people who don't know how to love nature cannot

truly like others. Saving humankind is God's work. However, we should be able to love people and nature, living with God's love in our hearts. Liking something is not enough. We need to live in love.(320-083,20000329)

16 You should know how to love nature and love people. Those who cannot love people or love nature cannot truly love God. Because all things of creation are symbols of God, and people are beings of His substance, those who learn to love all things of creation and to love people will come to love God.(070-182,19740209)

17 When you love the mountains, love water and love all things of creation on Gods behalf, everything will be fine; you will be healthy. These are the three conditions. That is why I chose the name Sansuwon, "the garden of mountains and waters" for our hiking club. I like mountains and often go where there are beautiful mountains and water. We need to love the creation on behalf of God. We also need to love the ocean. By loving all things of creation, we can become their loving master. The person who loves something most is its owner; this is the unmistakable conclusion.(449-199,20040513)

18 When you love all things on earth on behalf of God, you will naturally receive as much love from God as you give to the things of creation. This is why you need to love the creation. By loving all things of creation and by loving people, you are entitled to receive Gods love. Those who dedicate their lives to loving the world, the universe, and all humankind, who love these more than they love their own lives, will naturally receive the same amount of love from God.(081-335,19751229)

Section 5. Restoration of the Original Eden

1 Whenever we think about the original garden of Eden before the Fall, we immediately think about God. Then we associate it with Adam and Eve, whom God blessed after He finished His six days of creation. The garden of Eden was home to our original, sinless ancestors and all things of creation, which had not been invaded by evil or sin. All things were created for human beings and human beings were created for God. Sadly, human beings have not lived for God and, as a consequence, all things of creation have been unable to harmonize with us. Because of this, when we think of the garden of Eden we feel profoundly sad and sorrowful; our mind and body are pervaded with the feeling of how everything has been mistreated.(006-334,19590628)

God's heart dwells in all created things

2 We should not look at the things of creation with a hollow heart. Since every being in this world of God's great creation lives and moves based on the purpose of one love, God's energy indwells even the tiniest, most insignificant being. God created all things in six biblical days. Yet even the beings He created on the first and second days were related to God's larger vision of the great universe that would appear after the six days of His creation were completed. From this we can firmly conclude that nothing was created without being deeply rooted in God's heart.(009-167,19600508)

3 We value the relics left behind by famous people in history. We value the items they cherished during their lifetimes. But if a single grain of sand falls in front of you, you should realize that it is connected to God's heart. It is the work of the Creator, who is higher and greater than anyone else, made lovingly with His own hands. It is the fruit of His heart. Anyone who understands its worth and treats a grain of sand as if it were as valuable as the entire universe is certainly a son or daughter of God.(009-167,19600508)

4 In a field, no single blade of grass is untouched by the hand of God. When we look at a tree, we can see God's unlimited inner heart growing and flowing through that tree. Not only the grass and trees, but the animals playing in the fields, the insects, and every kind of bird—they were all created by the hands of God who invested His inner heart completely.(006-338,19590628)

5 How should we think about all the things that God created and loved so much? God created all things and said, "This is good to behold!" But we should consider, if God loved a blade of grass the most, which kind of grass would He love best? If you could think about this without any time constraints, you would feel the grace of God's heart as He created all things, before the creation of human beings. Holding a single blade of grass, you would feel joy in your heart, realizing that it was an object of hope and that it had been created by God's hand. If there were someone like that, even a fallen person, who shared God's heart at the time of creation, he or she could be God's friend.(006-338,19590628)

6 From among the people who revere God's heart, await God's ideal and seek His restored garden, there are many people of true heart who sing God's praises and strive to attain divine joy. Yet few remember that God's inner heart is connected to every blade of grass, every insect and all things of creation, and that He feels joy through them. If someone invested all his energy to make an insect, and someone else loved and appreciated it with all his heart and mind, more highly than even its creator, nothing would delight the creator more.(006-339,19590628)

7 Science attempts to explain the formulas, axioms, principles and laws of the created world and of all things in nature, Literature attempts to express the inner lyrical sentiment of nature, while the arts in their various forms express the apparent or hidden beauty of nature. Philosophy also tries to explain the basic principles of nature. Religion, however, is on a higher level than all of these. Then what is it that true religion should explain? It should explain the deep emotional feeling that flows through the heart of nature. This is religion's responsibility.(006-340,19590628)

8 It is unimaginable that human culture would exist separate from nature. We cannot speak about human culture apart from nature. No matter how much people boast of their influence or assert their power, if they ignore nature, it is all of no use. Nature not only enriches our lives, it is indispensable to our earthly lives. Therefore, if you cannot feel the heart that flows within all natural things, you cannot enjoy true happiness in your life and you cannot rise to a position of glory where you can relate to God.(006-340,19590628)

9 Even when you contemplate a blade of grass, you should be able to do so from God's perspective. When you look at a flower, you should do so with the heart of God. When you look at insects, birds or all other animals, your inner feelings should connect with the heart of God. If there were a person like this who could connect with the heart of God, even one who could not explain nature through the logic of science using formulas and definitions, could not express feelings through literature, could not display the beauty of nature through art, or had no energy to feel the love of nature, still that person would be a great scientist, writer, artist, philosopher and religious leader.(006-341,19590628)

The qualifications for us to become lords of creation

10 Every day our eyes are stimulated by the things of creation. However, we often take these things for granted, as if they were commonplace. If we human beings had not fallen, all of nature would have conformed to God's original ideal of nature based on goodness. We should reflect upon how our original ancestors looked at and felt about nature, and upon God's original feeling toward nature.(006-33719590628)

11 Have you ever wished you could enter into a mystical state or into the realm of God's grace and look at a flower from that perspective? Have you ever regarded a flower with the same sincere heart you would express toward an ancestor you longed to meet? Have you ever looked at the mountains and rivers and felt such

incredible inspiration from nature that you spontaneously burst forth praising God? If you have never had this kind of experience, I can only conclude that you are not qualified to be a lord of creation.(006-344,19590628)

12 When you open your eyes in the morning and look at the natural world, your original nature is stirred and you are inspired with a fresh ideal. As for the human world, the more you see of it, the more despair and sorrow it arouses in your heart. If original people who had not fallen populated the world, the value of human beings would not bestir sorrow in the heart of the beholder. Human beings were not created with the same value as a blade of grass, a flower or a tree. We were meant to be noble beings who could not be exchanged for anything in the created world. Human beings were supposed to be born with incomparable value, representing the glory of heaven.(009-097,19600424)

13 We should not frown on or lament the environment we see around us, and we should not despair at social injustice. Instead, we should become people who are able to forget our sorrowful hearts with the joy of looking at a single blade of grass growing. Such a person will remain into the new age. A person who seeks a relationship with God is one who seeks the ideal and the world of heart. When you look at a blade of grass, try to feel the amazing heart behind it. God is there and eternal life is there. You should not look at a mountain peak with the same feeling from one day to the next. If we could experience a different feeling in each season—spring, summer, autumn and winter—and could sing of each unique feeling, wouldn't it be wonderful? Such a person is one who can harmonize with all of nature.(006-342,19590628)

14 What kind of nature are we looking at; what kind of land are we standing on? Sadly, this land is fallen land. Instead of a land of happiness, it has become a land of sorrow. When we look at the creation, rather than feeling that it is good, we should feel the sad situation of all things of creation, which remain in the realm of lamentation. Even as we enjoy gazing at a place of scenic beauty—the mountains and rivers, for example—we should also be able to feel deep sorrow and connect to our Heavenly Father's heart.(006-345,19590628)

15 While holding a blade of grass, rather than feeling happy we should be weeping in sorrow. Even though we feel inner joy hugging a tree, we should be able to shed tears. While gazing at mountains and rivers, we should be sighing deeply. We feel such emotion because deep in our hearts we miss the original garden of Eden. God, as the Creator, is the one who feels this most deeply. A person who looks at nature with such a heart cannot help but long for the garden of Eden. If we long for

the original Eden, we should also long for the original person who can govern all things of creation in that garden.(006-346,19590628)

16 If we ask God if He had even one hour in the original garden of Eden together with Adam and Eve, singing and sharing their feelings about nature, the answer would be "No." I'm sure God wanted to say, "My son, look at that mountain! I made it in such-and-such a way. Look at the grass and the trees. I made them like this and like that. See, I made all of this for you, for your happiness." The fact is God never had a chance to speak such words to Adam. Why not? It is because Adam was not yet mature. We should understand God's deep desire to say such things to His children. We need to understand God's heart and situation. Since Adam was emotionally immature, God was unable to speak like this.(006-343,19590628)

17 Our hearts should long for the original garden of Eden. We should become people who long for the world that God has loved with boundless love, the world in which God's love continues forever, the world in which we can sing and be-come forever intoxicated in song, the world in which we leap and want to keep leaping forever with God, the world in which, once we act and take responsibility, our deeds have eternal value and our responsibility endures forever. God's sorrow is that he could not find people with such a heart. God, who is leading the providence on this earth, must eventually find such a person. By loving nature we can elevate our emotions; this is why we often sing about mountains and rivers.(006-343,19590628)

18 If there were a person who could stand up for and call out to God, with a deep heart and a sense of mission to restore all things and people, our Father, God, would surely acknowledge that person. If there were a person looking for the original garden of Eden with such a sincere heart, he or she would be the original, true person whom God, humankind, and all things of creation would be proud of. Then all created things in the original garden of Eden, the people living there, and God, who would visit there, would not be separate. Instead, centered on this one person, with God above and all things below, they would all live together harmoniously in one home. This person would be the one whom God could love, the one for whom all people could live, and the true owner whom all created things would respect.(006-351,19590628)

CHAPTER 4

A Vision for Nature and the Ocean

Section 1. Returning the Creation to God and the Pursuit of Leisure Activities

1 What is the purpose of loving nature? It is to love people. What is the purpose of loving people? It is to love God. What is the purpose of loving God? It is to determine ownership, to determine who be-comes a son, a daughter, a father or a mother. Then, in order to make that determination, what needs to be decided? First the positions are decided, and then the order of all created beings is established. Through this process everything is interrelated and interconnected.(126-195,19830419)

2 Who is the owner of the created world? Adam and Eve, as the substance of God, should have become the ideal owners. The entire creation was mobilized for the sake of Adam and Eves perfection. Since the whole creation was born out of love, it needs to receive love. But now, because of the Fall, there is no owner to love the creation the way God loves it. All of creation laments this loss. In the future, when one person appears in spirit and flesh as Gods substantial body, all elements of the universe, all created entities, will come together for the sake of the perfection of one man and one woman. This is because everything was created for Adam and Eve's perfection. God had originally intended for creation to stand in this noble position for the sake of His counterpart, human beings. God wanted His beloved object partner to have a greater love, surpassing all that He had invested. Surely such a heavenly order exists.(405-192,20030211)

3 Destined to be the owner of all things, Adam wanted to know what lived in the water and in the mountains, and he wandered around catching animals and insects. Adam should have loved every-thing God created, and become intimate with Eve only after she reached maturity. He was supposed to learn what was in the dirt, what the mineral world consisted of, how plants absorbed elements of the mineral world in order for them to grow, how animals ate plants, how larger animals ate smaller animals and how human beings were to eat some of the larger ones. Adam should have known all these facts and have understood how God loved everything He created. As their owner, Adam should have loved them in the same way.(485-015,20050125)

4 If there had been no human Fall, all of heaven and earth would have belonged to us. God would have belonged to us,too. However, because of the Fall, we lost the right to own anything and had to give up everything. So we need to return to God, saying, "I, who am of heaven and earth, would have belonged to You. You would have belonged to us; everything belongs to You, God." The purpose of salvation is

to reconnect to God, to be born again and to regain the position to take dominion over all of creation.(009-170,19600508)

5 Fallen people are in the midway position between God and Satan; it is undecided which side they belong to. To decide this, I myself must first determine that I belong to God. Then I need to unite all of creation, all peoples and all nations together, connect them to God's love and return everything to True Parents and God. Finally, the ownership will be decided based on God's love.(166-287,19870614)

6 We need to take all material things away from Satan and return them to God; we need to return our body to God; we need to return our mind and heart to God. No matter how appealing this idea may be, liking the idea alone is not enough. We have to deeply grasp it and communicate with God in our heart. God is in me and I am in God; what belongs to God is mine, and what belongs to me is God's. Once we connect in heart, everything we have offered so far—our mind, our body and all material things—can be united and their value confirmed in front of God. To do this we offer devotions.(008-149,19591206)

7 Based on true love, we should live interesting lives. We should be able to converse with animals, live in harmony with all of creation and be in harmony with God. Then there would be no barriers. There wouldn't be different cultures. There would be only one culture of love. The culture of love is the culture of hobbies, so our hobby is love. I can love my wife and my children within the sphere of the whole world. The expansion of my family is like a cultural festival in the realm of the object partner. The kingdom of heaven on earth is where we participate in and enjoy that world culture with one heart. The "hobby culture" is the original culture of love that has nothing to do with the Fall. The hobby culture is the culture of the kingdom of heaven on earth.(276-211,19960224)

8 In the future, we need to return to the countryside and make farming our hobby. We should grow our own food without pollution and live a "hobby life." Otherwise this world will perish from pollution. I have created these new terms: hobby life, hobby farming and hobby industry. I am not pursuing vested interests: I do not intend to sell the fish we catch. Because fishing is a hobby, we can release the small fish. Also, when we eat, we will not eat alone. We will share with others. We will do this because it is our hobby.(252-295,19940101)

9 In the future, industry will promote leisure activities. In the future age of technology, thanks to industrial automation, people will not need to labor so much. A time like this will surely come. We are already entering that age. Even now, with

the press of a button machines do the work. In the future, factories operating around the clock, manned by just three or four workers, will do the work of thousands of people. That kind of industry frees us to promote leisure activities.(191-075,19890624)

10 When people grow old after working industriously all their lives, they should return to live in the natural world. After feeling and living with God's love, this is their destined path to go to the heavenly kingdom. God likes the hobby life. Many hobbies are related to creation. All kinds of activities are waiting for you. You will never tire of them. As your hobbies accumulate, you will automatically draw closer to God's world. This is the best life people could wish for.(279-062,19960609)

11 God did not force Himself to create; He created in order to feel excitement. We too need to feel God's excitement at the time of creation. We don't have hobbies be-cause someone tells us to; we have them because we want to. We are irresistibly attracted by them. Getting enough sleep becomes unimportant; we cannot live without pursuing our hobbies. Certainly, having hobbies does not depend primarily on money or other circumstances. And we do not engage in them for the sake of making money. Everyone needs hobbies. Therefore our hobby life, the hobby industry, hobby research, and so forth, should all be carried out in joy together with God. Only then can the beloved sons and daughters of God appreciate and pursue hobbies, for they be-long to God. Otherwise they will remain Satan's possessions.(281-263,19970309)

12 In the future, no one will want to work in a factory. In that future era we should be able to travel all over the world. In today's world people lead such busy lives; they are pitiable. They live under stress and have no hobbies; they are all slaves. Everyone is part of a machine-like process. People live more than 80 percent of their lives without self-awareness and follow mechanical routines. Therefore, in the future we must develop the hobby industry. It will be different from today's leisure industry.(252-201,19931230)

Section 2. The Original Museum of Creation

1 We need to understand that due to the Fall everything in creation was sacrificed, and that we failed in our responsibility as owners. Therefore we need to connect to nature, embrace everything in creation with love, and reconnect it with God. Who can do this? Since it was Adam and Eve who separated heaven and earth from God, the blessed families, as perfected Adam and Eve, need to resolve the wounded feelings of heaven and earth and reconnect everything to God. When God observes

all things of creation in the Pantanal in Brazil—with its flat, wide wilderness of clean water—He should be able to see a playground where everything lives and plays happily. We and our descendants need to grasp the original heart of God when He created this area; we should long to see everything in creation living happily. When we bring God, True Parents and all of creation together in one heart, easing the longing of their hearts, we will be qualified to be the owners. For this reason, the Pantanal is an important region. In the future, the Amazon territory could provide the resources for a great renewal of humanity. (322-076,20000514)

Building a new Eden in Jardim, Brazil

2 How uncomfortable a place is Jardim? Yet you have to long for Jardim more than any other place, even though you may never feel comfortable there. You have to shed tears of desire to go there. You should yearn for it when you look at the moon and when you look at the sun. You should look at all the life forms of creation that are under the care of that sun, and express your yearning to go there. You need to wash from your heart the sorrow you felt while making conditions to be an offering in front of the God of grief. Jardim represents the original starting point where all of creation is gathered, like a museum of the universe. Therefore the area of Jardim is a focal point for all of creation. You need to go to Jardim, where the primal creation exists, and shed your blood and sweat for at least three years for the sake of the liberation of the homeland. Because water symbolizes the world, you have to labor and build heaven in the midst of water. You need to do the same things True Parents have done. (303-159,19990817)

3 We must quickly care for and restore the creation that was destroyed due to the Fall. We must reintroduce to the world the species that have become extinct. For this reason we need a bird museum, for there are over fifteen hundred species of birds in Brazil. We should establish a bird museum for those fifteen hundred species of birds, and also a museum of insects. Once these museums are built, the people of the world will visit Jardim as an educational center for children, since Jardim will be where museums appeared under God's providence. We are developing Jardim in order to create an environment where God can enjoy watching His creation. That means Jardim is like Eden. (294-056,19980610)

4 We are raising many parrot species on our Jardim farm. Parrots can live together with people naturally. The ostriches frequently come to us because we feed them. They have become so close to the people now that they do not run away when someone approaches them with food. We should create a world where Adam can

mingle with the creation, just as when God was happy to behold His original creation. I am working toward that now.(278-104,19960501)

5 No matter how dirty water is, it always finds its level. No matter how bad a person is, he should know how to balance himself. My coming here to Jardim doesn't mean I have some special relationship with Brazil. People representing the five races of humankind are living here. Although I do not speak their language, I don't think they are a different species. They are my kin, my younger brothers and sisters. I am reuniting with them after living separately for six thousand years. Therefore, even though we don't share the same language, habits or customs, they naturally welcome me with joy.(276-091,19960204)

6 I researched the area within two hundred kilometers of Jardim to see what kinds of fish inhabit the territory. Myriads of mosquitoes bit me while I explored this area. Did I do that for money, for fame or for political support? I did it to save dying people, my brothers and sisters. If I do not think in this way, then who will save the people of the world? Has any politician or nation ever thought like that? With this focus, we will mine the resources in the ground and export them, in a way that the local people want to have it done. If they need something, I will provide it; if they need a factory, I will build it.(276-199,19960219)

7 Many kinds of fruit grow in the vast open grasslands. Many kinds of birds and animals live there. Countless fish live in the rivers and lakes. If you have nothing to cook, you can go out the back door where a river flows and catch a fish, fry it and eat it. Brazil is such a country. There is no place like it in the world. If you cast a net in the water, you can catch many fish at once.(267-060,19941227)

8 In Jardim we can breed fish throughout all four seasons of the year. We can raise fish and provide them to fishing ponds all around the world. I am interested in the Pantanal wetlands, which have as many as 3,600 species of fish. I should catch these fish and raise them in 3,600 fishing ponds on a fish farm. I will develop a method to breed those fish and expand this operation to different parts of the world.(270-056,19950504)

The Pantanal holy ground

9 For Korea and Japan, the Pantanal is on the other side of the globe. It is at the south end of the earth. But the Original Holy Ground, the Root Holy Ground and the Holy Ground of Victory were all established there. The Pantanal provides the base to start the garden of Eden. It is significant as the place where the perfected True Parents first established a foundation of love. The Original Holy Ground was

set up in a hotel in the Pantanal. It does not matter whether it is on water or anywhere else; a palace will be built in the Pantanal, even on the water. Even though humanity is suffering, we must prepare a holy ground in the kingdom of heaven on earth that can be eternally praised. In doing so, the results of our effort and devotion will appear. The issue is who will begin this effort. Japan should do this on a national level, maintaining the holy ground and making it a famous place. Therefore, all management of the Pantanal is under the Japanese national messiahs' responsibility.(304-111,19990910)

10 The Pantanal is a place that can become a primordial treasure house for the animals and plants originally created by God. I am establishing an international movement to protect and preserve Gods creation.(304-255,19991108)

11 The Pantanal wetlands are half the size of Japan. There are some 3,600 species of fish in its lakes and rivers. How many lakes and bodies of water are there worldwide that have the same water temperature and similar circumstances? I am studying each of these by category, in order to create places where we can raise fish; then this can be done worldwide. A world-class, professional aquatic research team is now studying the different types of water, their varying temperatures, and what species of fish are living in each.(271-039,19950815)

12 There are many kinds of plants and 3,600 species of fish in the Pantanal. There are also thousands of species of fish in the Amazon River. Imagine so many types of fish! There are countless types of plants in the creation, including food crops and trees. God did not create by performing magic tricks like those in the fictional story of the Korean folk hero Hong Gil-dong, where things simply appear upon command. God had a plan and created these things so their structures are in line with the laws of the natural world and climatic conditions.(291-165,19980311)

13 In the Pantanal nature exists as a microcosm of creation as it was when God first created it. Why did I come here? I did not come alone; God came with me. He loves all of creation, which has been sacrificed throughout history. In Noah's time God did not judge the fish. I came here to the Pantanal to create a bond with the fish, which the flood judgment did not touch, in order to pave a path through indemnity for creation to return to God. We need to love everything that God created. I have the responsibility to protect the creation. We should increase the number of species. We should not exterminate any species, thereby making the creation less than when God first made it.(300-267,19990324)

14 You cannot imagine how many fish live in the Pantanal. If you throw something in the water, it quickly vanishes, eaten by the fish. It disappears in a lightning-fast instant. The fish instantly eat up even dirty things. There are many species of fish all mixed together, and each species feeds on different things. When they eat, they are in effect tirelessly cleaning up the water. They are not living for their own sake. They are cleaning up their surroundings as they live together and help one another, and thereby they bring order to the environment. This is nature's cooperative system.(293-284,19980607)

15 From the day I first understood God's Will, I loved the spirit world and humanity. In loving humanity, you have to love people more than your own family and nation. You need to love humanity and then love creation. You have to love everything on the land and all created things in the water. Doing so is a process of re-creation. Through God's love we need to connect with humanity. Through human love we need to connect with the earth, including the realm of water. For this reason I am offering my utmost devotion in the Pantanal.(296-019,19981010)

16 Human beings are responsible to prevent the extinction of the species created by God. How many species have human beings brought to extinction? There are 3,600 species of fish in the Pantanal. I have built a fish farm and I can multiply them at any time in places around the world that have a similar environment, so they never will become extinct. My work is focused on these things, and I am now going to begin this vast project.(300-089,19990301)

17 In the future, a fish farm taller than a city building needs to be created, in which to raise 3,600 kinds of fish. Imagine controlling the temperature for each type of fish with a computer—those from the sea, those living in fresh water, those living in the Arctic regions and those living in tropical areas. We can raise 3,600 species of fish from the entire world in one building. Using a city building would not be a problem.(296-190,19981109)

18 Do you want to follow the life of True Parents who, with God's love, have been trying to liberate the realm of nature that has been in distress? Or do you want to live a closed life in the city, polluting the air, destroying the environment and blocking your children's emotional growth? Since I love nature so much, and all Unification Church members love to follow me, it is possible for us to build an ideal kingdom in harmony with nature. So I am going to build a museum and have every type of creation exhibited there. I will prepare specimens and put them on display. I will create a farm for the fruits of the sea, where you feel you are in nature just by looking at it. I will begin a movement to create museums in each town as a symbol

of love for animals. Then the town with the most species can become a world-renowned tourist spot. I will also gather many species of plants and trees to put on display.(288-073,19971031)

19 If fish were constantly being caught, they would all disappear. That is why we need to breed and raise fish. I am thinking of building a zoo with the animals from the Pantanal and the Amazon River valley in South America. There should be a city in which insects are raised. Then whenever someone strikes a bell, the birds that want to eat the in-sects will come to eat. A city needs to appear in which insects can be raised to feed the birds. The birds are dying because there are not enough insects. We need to build towns in which to raise insects, birds and animals.(292-024,19980322)

20 In South America there are rivers that flow north-south and rivers that flow east-west. Unification Church members should live along the Paraguay River and the Amazon River and become their owners. How wonderful it would be to educate people who visit and let them experience living with nature! To connect this area to modern civilization and city life, I will build a town with a museum displaying the millions of species of insects in this vast area. All those who research insects should come to the Pantanal. I will also build a fish farm to raise 3,600 types of fish. I will build an aviary and a botanical garden.(288-075,19971031)

21 In order to form a harmonious society, all members of the community should share the same standard of living. Mutual prosperity can come about on the foundation of shared responsibility that is voluntary and based on love. In an ideal world there would be no corruption or inequality and no Fall. Such a world comes about only when true love is practiced. The practice of true love is a prerequisite. Our movement is historic in building a community of true love among people of different races and traditions. The world is facing a serious environmental crisis. Environmental pollution and the destruction of nature are insults to the beautiful holy world created by God. People without true love use the natural world for their own selfish purposes. One of the serious results of the Fall is that, because Adam and Eve failed to inherit God's true love, people have been unable to love one another, love animals and love the land. All of creation is longing for people's true love.(271-075,19950822)

Section 3. The Era of the Ocean

1 Water is like the progenitor of life. So we need to love water, which also represents God. We need to love the ocean. In every scenic spot there are beautiful

forests and bodies of water. Water creates harmony. Water has an absolute character but no form. It fits the shape of whatever contains it. If you understand the philosophy of water, it is like perfecting the sixty-six books of the Bible and being able to become a son or daughter of God.(262-292,19940801)

2 The Christian ceremony of baptism involves going into the water and being born again. Since every living thing starts from water, which is the origin of life, you can go into the water and come out clean and reborn. If you observe water every day and let your mind move with it, the blood of your body will be refined. While gazing at flowing water, have you ever felt that your mind is being washed clean? We need to love water. I am saying that loving water is the same as loving all of creation. This is a fundamental idea. When loving water, should you love lake water or seawater? Should you go out to the sea every day or not? If you are on a boat with the winds blowing and the waves running high, your blood swirls around and never goes bad. Your blood is purified.(262-292,19940801)

Learning from the sea

3 No matter how numerous they are, how large or small, all rivers flow toward the vast oceans. Once they reach them, all their waters are mixed together. The Black Current flows in the Pacific and is one of the currents that circulates through thousands of miles among the five great oceans. This is possible because of the moon's gravitational pull. Because these currents circulate in this way, the five great oceans can all be in motion. They act as the supporting pillars of the entire ocean system. When filth and other things come into the ocean waters, they are all mixed up and move toward becoming one. This is the purpose of the ocean. Even if a large river were to constantly supply fresh water for tens of thousands of years, the ocean has the ability to absorb it all and still have room to spare. The ocean is great because it remains unchanged, no matter what enters it.(210-202,19901223)

4 There is no deception in nature. If a place is high, it is high, and if it is low, it is low. Nature will equally supply the higher place and the lower place without objection. I have learned from nature to give everything freely without objection. When I go to a foreign land and find people who have less than I have, I open my storehouses and share all my rice even though I might have none left for myself. I do this to make things even. I learned that from water. For this reason, I like water. God's judgment did not touch the fish living in the water. I always prepare offerings in front of God. I always release the first fish I catch, whether it is big or small. You have no idea how wonderful it is to release at least the first fish!(300-141,19990302)

5 The ocean, when calm, is mystical. It has the power to draw people in like a captivating, beautiful woman, a queen of mystery. The ocean may look silver, but it can also take on a jade color. At other times the sea assumes other hues. No matter how well a girl may dance, her beauty cannot compare with that of the ripples stirred by the passing of a gentle breeze on the water. Imagine the seagulls at the ocean. Some are sitting and floating on the water, others are flying. All of them are calling; whether their cries are sad or joyful, they all sound beautiful. How wonderful it is when the waves rise up and swoosh down. They are tipped with gold as they sparkle in the sunshine. When we see this, we are amazed by the seas unending changes.(128-250,19830828)

6 The ocean is like a beautiful woman. Sometimes it resembles a dancing girl. But once it gets upset, it can be more furious than a lion springing at you in the wilderness. Sometimes the waves are more than ten meters high, rising and falling. The cries of the seagulls cannot compare with that sound. The waves seem to say to them, "No matter how well you sing, or how good a comic actor you may be, you cannot compare with the grand force of my fury" The waves are so audacious.(128-250,19830828)

7 Natures power is enormous. That is why people who love the ocean cannot be arrogant. The ocean has that kind of greatness. If you peek into the deep ocean, you will find all kinds of fish living there: fish that are gold in color, others that are yellow and blue, and even fish that are colorless. When you compare the land with the ocean, which is more beautiful? The land, with its variety of birds, flowers and butterflies, is beautiful but limited. Flowers do not move. Land dwellers pale in comparison with the profusion of beautiful sea creatures that dance about in dazzling, brilliant colors. So which is more beautiful, the land or the ocean? The ocean is more beautiful. Why did God create water? We can say that He made it specially for His own enjoyment. He hid its depths away and did not open them to the public. God probably had more interest in the ocean than in the land.(128-251,19830828)

8 In the world of love, you can go anywhere you want. Does the seawater say, "I am Pacific Ocean water; all water from Asia is polluted, so I don't like it"? Wherever the water comes from, the Pacific Ocean takes care of it all. Dirty water is quickly absorbed and goes the same way as clean water. Therefore no matter how serious pollution may be, even if all humankind disappears, the Pacific Ocean will still be blue. No matter how much suffering and how many ordeals it must endure, the ocean's blue color will never be altered. Likewise, the power, the content and the

authority of love will always be as constant as the ocean's blue.(214-275,19910203)

9 You cannot imagine how fearsome and horrifying the waves and the winds are during an ocean storm. But even the strongest wind is fulfilling its mission. If wind did not exist, there would be no waves in the ocean and the fish would not survive. The wind blows to supply oxygen to the ocean. Waves supply oxygen to the water. That is why even when the waves are roaring and the wind is blowing strongly, you should taste the ocean and say, "You haven't lost your taste!" The ocean is salty. If I can think that way, then the currents and rushing waves are not unpleasant. You don't realize how much philosophy can be found in the ocean. People who have lived only on land will face considerable obstacles when they try to engage in ideal activities in the spirit world.(119-254,19820913)

10 When you visit the ocean, you can learn many things. It undergoes changes several times a day. There is a saying, "A person's mind changes between morning and evening," but the ocean does not change only morning and evening, it changes every hour. On a fine day, if you go to a certain area, the waves might be mild. Yet when you go to another area, the wind will be blowing. It might not be a strong wind, but different in mood. Just as peoples' faces are all different, so are water and mountains. Climate also differs depending on the height of a mountain. The ocean exhibits beauty in all sorts of forms and figures.(263-018,19940816)

11 Whenever I had time, I would always go out to sea. I would go out to sea and be buffeted about. Despite the hardship, the purpose was to calm my spirit and prepare for trials and greater battles ahead. Though I was often exhausted from having gone without sleep, I would stay alert, set my own standard and strive to maintain a horizontal balance in my daily life.(073-270,19740929)

12 We can conclude that people who do not know the realm of the ocean are very limited in their sphere of happiness. If there were a Lord of creation, He would enjoy hearing praise from people who appreciate both the mystery of the sea and the beauty of the land, based on a correct knowledge of both the land and sea. We can imagine that He would not approve of praise for only one realm.(128-259,19830828)

13 When you look at the ocean, you should not regard it simply as the ocean. You have to consider it a gift from our Heavenly Father. In the process of recreation, we review everything. A great revolution begins here. The value of a great victory can sprout from this point of view. So we may ask, to whom would all things of creation

wish to belong? They want to be possessed by the one who receives God's love. That is the truth. They want to belong to the person whom God loves. Everything in the plant and animal worlds, even the microorganisms, all want to belong to such a person.(112-307,19810425)

14 I like things that are stimulating. I can move forward and penetrate things where there is a lot of movement and change. For this, the ocean is better than the land. The ocean is constantly changing. The wind blows, there are sudden periods of calm, the waves rise and fall; there is constant change. Therefore I prefer traveling by sea to traveling by land. On land, the thoughts of the morning can remain unchanged all day. The land remains as it is, no matter how much you move around. But the ocean is different. When I think I'm going in one direction, I could actually be going the other way. It keeps changing that much. This kind of constant change is very stimulating. When the ocean is calm, the land cannot compare with it. It is unbelievably, mysteriously still. Sometimes I feel it is like a pane of glass. It is so beautiful I cannot help wanting to touch it. Sometimes I have the mind to want to drink it. For this reason I go to the ocean, with the thought that I am marching forward with one mind, even though the ocean keeps changing. If you don't have this kind of stimulating experience, you cannot do great work.(079-270,19750901)

15 To this day I have been a pioneer. I have opened the way and taken the lead. Just recently our company built a boat and I personally took people out to sea to train them to become captains. I would teach them to think, "The wind may blow and the waves run high, but could they block the path of this man? Here I am, going out to solve the global food problem for the sake of heaven and humanity and to carry on life to the future generations." Is that not the attitude of a great man? I like that kind of person. The prosperity created here will remain, and the whirlwind of history will subside here. The ocean is where young people should want to go, and aspire to go. It is a place where joy and sorrow are interwoven. It allows you to leap forward and go beyond the world. In this way, countless young people who go out to sea can find hope. The ocean can be the source, the wellspring that invigorates people's dreams for the future. This comes in relation to the sea.(109-153,19801101)

16 I go out to sea with a great deal of passion. If I lost this passion, problems would arise. Devotion has to be made continuously for thousands of years. Indemnity conditions cannot be set while sitting comfortably, but they can be made by going out to the ocean and offering devotion. Today must be better than yesterday, and tomorrow must be better than today. If I continue offering devotion until the day I

save all the people who are starving, even if I die in the process, I believe that the Will of God will be accomplished on earth.(279-309,19960922)

17 Because of God's absolute love, He made all the things of creation in a fascinating way. How amazing that creation fully provides for the needs of families in the future kingdom of heaven and ensures their well-being! Even the flow of water exists to assist in the functions of heaven and earth. On the sea's surface, water becomes vapor and circulates to revive all of creation. All things live within a realm of cooperation and help fulfill humanity's ideal by cooperating with one another rather than being in conflict. God, using earth as His stage, raises His children and uplifts them to the kingdom of heaven.(284-047,19970415)

18 Although I am Korean, many Western people recognize that my work is not only for Korea but also for the entire world. There is no doubt that I am working for the sake of the world. For this reason, with courage and valor, I am building a global association, even in the face of persecution on land and sea. In that sense I made a fearsome declaration when I came out with the title Ocean Church after building this project based on religion, as opposed to conventional thinking. This is a fearsome course I have laid out. From this point on, what am I going to do with Ocean Church? It is not simply about going out to the ocean for training. The purpose is to love the ocean and achieve dominion over it. To me, taking dominion over the ocean means I will nurture it in accordance with the original intention of the Creator and make it the center stage for bringing the world together.(128-249,19830828)

The ocean has unlimited resources

19 We should love the ocean. We need to pioneer it. We cannot afford to ignore the ocean; it covers an area about three times the area of land. Who do you think is going to develop the resources that can be found at the bottom of the ocean? We can find oil—black gold—on land, but the ocean is three times larger, so we can expect to find perhaps three times more oil under the sea. So far, this has not been sufficiently developed, but from this point on we need to increase our ability to tap these ocean resources.(294-173,19980614)

20 Water has no one expression. It takes on the exact form of its container and fills it completely, so it can have a myriad of shapes. In a small container it is very small; in a big tank it becomes huge. In a house, it can fill the whole house. The huge oceans are some of its faces. The Pacific Ocean and the Indian Ocean are faces of water. Water has so many shapes. Most of the treasures on planet Earth can be

found at the bottom of the ocean. I am very interested in this part of the world. I don't want what others have already touched. All the treasures at the bottom of the sea can be mined. Their quantity is huge. We have developed technologies that permit tunneling even tens of kilometers under the ocean floor from an island, in any direction. Conquering the ocean is important work.(263-019,19940816)

21 Where can we find a solution to the problem of world hunger? The oceans that cover about 75 percent of planet Earth are a treasure trove of natural resources. The ocean has an abundance of valuable resources that promise a bright future for all human beings, who are suffering from a lack of resources and dying from various kinds of pollution.(20110217)

22 The vast resources of the ocean are much greater than those on land. When we consider the issue of fuel, the time of using oil, gas and electricity will soon pass. Electricity has its limits. Now the remaining source of energy supply is nothing other than the ocean. There will be no other path but to develop hydrogen power.(094-131,19770730)

23 In the future, science will uncover means to create an unlimited supply of food. The reason we cannot do so now is because the costs are very high. The cost of fuel is so high. However, when hydrogen power is developed, we will have an unlimited supply of energy. We will have an overabundance of energy. Then we can make as much food as we want, so much that we will not know what to do with it all. Since it will be boring for us to eat all that food alone, we will approach people on the street and say, "Come and share some of this food with me and let's talk for a while." We don't know when that time will come, but I am saying we should start preparing now. We need to create those circumstances so that our descendants will be able to live comfortably.(141-223,19860222)

24 When you look at the ocean it appears very monotonous; there is nothing to see but the horizon. But in reality it is extremely complex. Moreover, its resources are far more abundant than those on land. In fact, the ocean is a place of unlimited treasures. All the precious things that people like can be found locked away in the ocean. So what do you think is necessary to tap the ocean? Think about how America was developed, and how many people undertook all kinds of adventures to find and mine precious minerals in the American West. At that time, adventurers and fearless, courageous men were given rights of ownership. Similarly, unless you undertake many adventures and challenge your limits, you cannot become the owner of a treasure. Up to this point, people have fought to gain control of the

routes on which ships travel across the oceans, but they have not valued ownership of the resources that actually exist in the sea.(128-247,19830828)

25 Who will be the owner of the oceans in the future? If a great cataclysm were to occur, land could rise up from the middle of the ocean while dry land could sink into the sea. If a land mass greater than that of the United States appeared in the middle of the Pacific Ocean, who would be its owner? No one can say this kind of thing is impossible. Nobody knows when such a thing could happen. There are also volcanoes at the bottom of the sea. Until now, it would have been no problem to say, "Everything outside two hundred nautical miles from any coast belongs to me." No such person appeared, but such a time will definitely come. The day will come when people will fight over the oceans. At that time, the people who want to be the owners of the ocean will need a dauntless pioneer spirit. There is no other way to become the owner of the sea.(128-248,19830828)

26 The future leaders of the world will be those who can protect and preserve the oceans. The time is coming when humankind will invest and devote all its power, culture, traditions and national resources into developing the riches and treasures that lie at the bottom of the sea. However, the key point is who will be in a position to command the oceans and pursue that development. When I am faced with this problem, I ask myself, as the founder of the Unification Church and True Parent responsible for human history, what base of operations am I going to leave for the future of the church? That base is located at the seaside. For the future, the fishery industry and aquatic industry in the oceans have unlimited potential.(220-011,1991 1013)

27 The North Pole has snow more than eight hundred meters deep. There is fresh water that accumulated thousands of years ago. It is not polluted but clean, even after ten thousand years. It is similar at the South Pole. If we were to build a cultural city like New York City below the ice, do you think many people would come to see it or not? This could actually be done. Just thinking about it is exciting. If you built a tunnel through the ice, it could last for ten thousand years; it would not collapse. By spraying cold water on the inside surface once a year, the ice would stay frozen and remain solid.(302-100,19990601)

28 The time has come when we can farm under the ice. We can even get flowers to bloom there. If you go to Alaska, the tall mountains are covered with glaciers, and grass grows in the central regions. South of there, flowers bloom and people go fishing. You have no idea what a beautiful and enchanted land it is. It is lovely, with clean water and clear air, a perfect, ecologically balanced environment. If you ever

visit Alaska on vacation and enjoy it, you will want to live there and never leave. Because it is such a place, I am exerting myself and investing in all these projects.(220-014,1991 1013)

29 Young people should develop an interest in the ocean. The reason I go out to the sea and stay there for twenty-four hours at a time is to establish a tradition of having loved the ocean. People who work as seamen and go to sea usually come back six months to a year later. Because of this, most women don't want to marry them. For this reason, the global trend has been toward a reduction in the number of mariners. Therefore, we should become strong in the ocean businesses and, in the future, we should become a leading force in the marine industry. The time will come when we will concentrate our efforts on the ocean more than on the land. Please understand my purpose in taking an interest in the ocean, and why you should also take an interest in the ocean.(073-143,19740816)

The oceans and the task of feeding all of humankind

30 The sea is a world treasure containing two-thirds of the world market of raw materials. This is critical from the viewpoint of carrying out Gods restoration providence based on His Will. Do you think there are deposits of diamonds in the ocean, or not? I estimate there are twice as many diamonds in the ocean as on land. Furthermore, in the sea we also find seaweed and fish, and these can be used as food. The area of the ocean floor covered by seaweed is vast. The supply of fish in the sea is almost limitless. Would a person who thinks of such things not develop an interest in them? Anyone who thinks about these things would be more interested in the ocean than the land.(089-028,19761003)

31 The resources we can get from dry land are limited but those that come from the sea are unlimited. One fish can lay several million eggs. Considering this, the resources of the sea are unlimited. If these eggs were hatched artificially, it would be possible to hatch nearly 100 percent of them. By correctly adjusting the feeding process and providing other raw materials, it is possible to harvest unlimited resources from the sea. The ocean is unique in this; that is why I am thinking about matters of the sea. In the future, whole families can live under the ocean. We have to think about homes beneath the ocean's surface. We can also set up aquatic businesses in the ocean. In this way we can develop unlimited resources and expand them.(207-218,199011 11)

32 The only way to resolve humanity's food shortage is to farm fish. In the future, there will be buildings by the sea with hundreds of floors. With the press of a

button, everyone will be able to farm fish. If you own just one hundred pyeong (0.8 acre), your household will be able to generate enough income for all your children to go to college, and you can live comfortably. Science is advancing swiftly during our lifetime. It will allow us to draw in seawater that is tens, hundreds or even thousands of miles away. We can build fish-farming structures in the mountains, as many as we need. Without doing so, humanity's food shortage cannot be resolved. That is why I am so serious about this.(191-084,19890624)

33 Salmon live in the ocean but they swim up to fresh water to breed. We need to build fish farms that will somehow allow some species of freshwater fish to live in salt water and some species of saltwater fish in fresh water. Do you know why? We cannot catch and eliminate parasites one by one. So to protect the fish, why not move those saltwater fish to fresh water? Within one month the parasites will be gone. This is a simple idea. If we have two-week cycles, we can do it regularly. It is possible to control such a process, by which we could swap the freshwater and saltwater fish. You cannot compare this output to that of a land-based ranch or farm.(226-344,19920209)

34 If you are fishing in barren waters, you may need to build a fish farm. The time has come when you can farm fish, transport them somewhere and then go fishing for them there. If you build a fish farm somewhere with the right climate, you can transport any type of fish anywhere and stock the ponds so people can catch them. You can transport them in a boat, release them and catch them again. Also, the time will come when you will be able to easily hunt any animal, even tigers. You will be able to breed wolves and release them in the hunting grounds. You will be able to hunt bears. You also will be able to breed other animals for hunting.(275-105,19951103)

35 I am researching tuna to find a solution to the food shortage facing humanity. I want to breed huge numbers of tuna and release them after two months, when they are big enough not to be eaten by other fish. Tuna travel at an average speed of ten miles per hour; when they swim fast they can reach five times that speed. They are among the fastest fish in the ocean. The tuna is such an amazing fish! Usually when it swims its dorsal fin is depressed, but when its prey is nearby it opens its pectoral fins to go in for the kill. Its power is like that of a torpedo. Tuna travel throughout all five oceans. When we release tuna after breeding them artificially, our food problem will be solved and there will be no pollution issue. That is why I am now developing the tuna fishery business.(126-203,19830419)

36 At the South Pole there are small shrimp-like creatures, called Antarctic krill. Every year 150 million tons of krill die there. The amount of fish currently being eaten by people every year is less than 150 million tons. These krill have the highest quality of protein. Fish cannot compare to that. So I have thought about how to process krill. That is why we are making krill into powder. God created them as fish food. But the uneaten krill all die. Every year, countless dead krill float about in the sea, leading to pollution. To solve this problem, after years of study, I have decided to produce krill powder.(273-051,19951021)

37 Every year 20 million people die of hunger around the world. I am the one who should solve this problem, and as a representative of all humanity, I should also solve the problem of the destruction of the ozone layer caused by environmental pollution. I have to pay attention to all fields of human life. If I can't do so, you should, even though you have to shed your tears and sweat. You should be determined to leave your footprints on top of mine. The way of the Principle lies in following the footsteps along that path. You cannot skip past those footsteps. Even our descendants in the generations to come must follow the exact same way of the Principle. This is the path of indemnity.(246-204,19930416)

Section 4. The Deep Meaning of Ocean Fishing

1 Catching tuna is not fishing; it is more like hunting at sea. I imagine you are hearing the term "hunting at sea" for the first time. Catching one tuna is far harder than killing a large bull. One tuna can weigh more than one thousand pounds. Some tuna are five hundred, six hundred or even seven hundred kilograms, which is bigger than a bull. It is exciting to catch such fish! We drain all the blood out, since tuna will spoil if the blood is left in it for an extended period of time. In an instant the water becomes a sea of blood. At that moment I cannot help but think, "Oh, I am so merciless to do this to this fish!" Whenever I feel that way, however, I think, "I have to do as God does, who uses us as a sacrificial offering for the liberation of humanity." Also, I feel better when I tell myself, "Well, these fish were caught from nature and I never invested myself in raising them, but from now on I will raise fish and offer them as a sacrifice" For this reason I am involved in the fish farming and marine products industries.(219-198,19910829)

Ocean fishing for a healthy mind

2 It is so interesting to see fish swimming in the sea. There are small fish in the shallowest areas at the edge of the ocean, and then as the water gets deeper you find bigger fish. The smallest fish are eaten by slightly larger fish, and the slightly

larger fish are eaten by fish that are even larger, and the cycle keeps repeating itself. What is interesting is that the young have a similar appearance, whether they are baby whales or baby tuna. Baby Alaska pollack and baby tuna look similar. The food chain represents a process that all things take part in. There is no complaint. The offspring of the big fish are not born so large that they can eat all the small fish. They all start in the same position. God is fair like this.(264-286,19941120)

3 The deeper you go into the ocean, the greater the differences in temperature you will find. The species of fish change entirely, even with a temperature shift of only one or two degrees. Although most people do not know this, the fish of the world search the five oceans for a compatible temperature layer in the water that may only differ one degree from other layers. It is mysterious. Even though one day you may see unlimited numbers of fish in a specific location, as if the ocean were half water and half fish, when you return the next day you may find not even one. This is due to the difference in water temperature. The fish disappear entirely when the water temperature changes by even half a degree. To people, a one- or two-degree difference is not an issue, but for fish it is huge. People can live in the Arctic regions, the tropics and the temperate regions, but this is not the case for animals.(200-263,19900226)

4 When we go ocean fishing we are not just going to a place where the horizon is flat. To catch fish, we must go where there are rocks on the bottom. There are creatures living on the rocks and fish gather there. When you observe the water flow and see waves, there are fish there. If you go to a place where the waves are three to five meters high, you will find fish. You need to be near such a place to catch fish.(268-310,19950403)

5 I know exactly what temperature is right for fishing. I already know what species of fish are found at certain water temperatures. When you drop the fishing line a couple of times, the fish already nibble the bait. So if I reel the line in fast, the fish come up. When the line is reeled in slowly, the hook tends to sink down. While slowly reeling in the line, you should know how fast the water is flowing on the surface. By assessing the water temperature, I know at what depth the king salmon will swim. Usually salmon remain on the bottom because they find lots of food there. Crabs and other small sea creatures live on the seabed, so the salmon like to gather there.(263-139,19940821)

6 I don't go out to the ocean only for the sake of fishing. The spirit of Alaska is the spirit of the salmon. Salmon come back to their birthplace to lay their eggs after swimming four to five thousand miles. For human beings the course of restoration

is similar. We should know how to go home even though we are thousands of miles away. No fishing is more exciting than catching salmon. You can't imagine how strong they are! Usually for other fish, winding the reel a few times is enough, but for salmon you must wind it many more times.(236-125,19921104)

7 I am quite good at fishing. I have fished day and night for forty days at a time. The fish I try to catch are not the kinds that immediately rush to eat the bait. I am waiting for the big one even as I say, "Bite this! Gather here, little fish!" But I am waiting for the big fish to come, and I will catch that one. Likewise, when you witness to people it is the same. You go out to witness without knowing whether anyone is coming or not. However, the time will come to pull in the line. We need to wait. It doesn't matter how long; we need to be patient, with high expectations. Since we have this standard, we don't need to be impatient or in a hurry to witness to everyone at once.(152-033,19630303)

8 Sitting in a boat with a fishing rod gives you a feeling of immense freedom, beyond description. Can you take a walk on a boat? You only have a small space in which to move about and cook your meals. Can you go to the theater or go out to meet your friends? You cannot even listen to music because you need to remain silent. For this reason, you must gaze at the ocean and talk with the sea and the heavens. It is the greatest feeling to be at sea alone in the very place where the ocean and heaven become one. Out there God is alone and I am alone, so we can get together and unite in heart. I might be the only one in history to go out fishing thinking these kinds of thoughts. Why do I continually go out to sea? There are many spiritual benefits. If I stay at home all day I become distracted and end up thinking about the missionaries around the world, church problems and other matters, and I can't deal with all I have to take care of. But when I go out to sea, I can think more comprehensively. Because of this, I love the ocean so much. I believe that is why the concept of cultivating oneself through fishing came about.(079-270,19750901)

9 Whenever I go fishing, or anywhere else, I always think a lot. If you go fishing ten times you think ten times; if you go a hundred times you think a hundred times. If you think one hundred times while going fishing ten times, you can advance ahead of other people.(221-085,1991 1023)

10 Hunting is exercise for the sake of your physical health, and fishing is for the sake of your mental health. You tend to reflect on your life and think a lot when sitting down and fishing. It is amazing that you can actually have such a time. You can analyze your past and plan for your future. It can be your most important time. You

can calmly reflect on yourself with dignity. This is absolutely necessary. In the East, this is called cultivating oneself through fishing. After fishing for a couple of years, you will want to free the fish and put aside all thoughts of eating the fish you catch. That is the true way. The desire to eat simply vanishes. Thus you can cultivate your mental and ethical development. By learning such things you can rid yourself of cruel tendencies. If you are a leader of a certain department, you will become a gentleman toward your people. Fishing provides a way to cultivate your character and create harmony among people.(252-208,19931230)

11 History is creating a new world. No one can tell me I'm wrong about this; I'm not ashamed to say it. When I see the face of a fish, I speak to it. All day while fishing I say, "You have never seen a person like me, right? My purpose is not to catch you. I want to mobilize you, and based on this fishing ground I want to solve the problem of hunger for humankind. Did you know that is the purpose of your creation? If that's the case, the one who catches you will not be doing anything wrong."(247-033,19930421)

12 When I fish, I say to the fish, "Please come. I am your owner, your master." Then all the fish come to me and I feed them. Because of that, I can always catch more fish than others around me. Other fishermen feel this is strange and cannot understand it. If you do things centered on the vertical God, this is what happens. In that circumstance, also, a different, brilliant ray emerges. You have an average light, but I emit a special ray of light. The fish see that light, so even if I push them away, saying, "Don't come," they still flock to me.(248-036,19930530)

13 When I go fishing, I always free the first fish I catch. I free it with the heart of God, who released it after creating it. Also, I have not eaten any of the fish I have caught. Even so, I cannot allow the fish to die a natural death when there are 20 million of God's sons and daughters starving to death every year. I say to myself, I catch you to save the 20 million starving sons and daughters of God. Fish are caught on my hooks much more often than on the hooks of others. This is because of my devotion. Whether animal or plant, since the principle is that they were created to serve human beings, fish should feel grateful for my attitude. With this mindset, if I go to a fishing tournament, I can catch fish just fine when others cannot. It is because of my devotion. I think, "Hey, fish, I cannot dive into the water museum that God created, so why don't you just jump out of the water so I can appreciate the joy God wants me to feel?" Then the fish come and it is easy for me to catch them.(276-147,19960218)

14 If you have true love everything is possible, everything unites. From the animal world to the plant world, and even to the venomous snake, everything protects me. When I go fishing I say, protect me. I tell the fish, "This is for true love. I am trying to save all the people who are starving. God is shedding tears out of His desire to feed them. With that heart, I am catching you. I'm catching you not for myself but for my posterity, all human beings, and so you have to forgive me" That's how I think and what I say. So I always release the first fish that I catch, instead of eating it, as a sacrificial offering to God. Anyone who is given love is willing to offer their life. Suppose there are twelve people on my boat; still I catch one-third of the total catch. Those people say, "The fish recognize you, Father, so they are biting your bait!"(278-105,19960501)

15 Trying to catch fish from a boat on the blue ocean can be compared to God's providential work of restoration and salvation. The fish represent fallen people. If you prepare everything, use good bait, and tie a sturdy line to a fine fishing rod, you should catch many fish. But you will not be able to catch a single fish if your skill is poor, the line is weak, the bait is spoiled or the fishing rod is worthless. It is all the same. Our life of faith is like catching fish.(277-017,19960317)

16 If you want to succeed in this world, you must put yourself in the position of a fishing rod and set it up with a good fishing line and good bait. Only then can you fish effectively .Fish are not caught easily. You reap the harvest when all the corresponding conditions are met. Without these conditions, you cannot bring in the harvest. We are not living alone. We live together with all of creation, with all humankind, with heaven and earth and with God. We must see with the eyes of all humankind, with good eyes, good senses and good bodies. We should realize that God sees and owns our five senses and our body. The person who lives like this and feels like this doesn't need religion.(277-017,19960317)

17 For fishing, the best bait is love. In fishing for all the people of the world, Gods bait is love. With what bait could you fish for history and for God? If there were any bait that could catch God, wouldn't you want to prepare that bait? That bait is love. If there were any bait that could catch history and catch heaven and earth, it would be love.(145-228,19860511)

18 Now our time has come. The time that God has been longing for has come. The one time for which so many people, so many saints and sages, shed their blood has now arrived in front of our eyes. This is our time. I feel it is like a big fish now circling our hook, eyeing the bait that looks and smells so good. I am ready to yank up the rod as soon as the fish strikes. In this respect, I think fishing is such a

wonderful hobby. You wait with your rod even past midnight, until three or four o'clock in the morning, almost falling asleep. In the distance you hear a dog barking and a rooster crowing; at that moment the bell on the fishing rod rings. You snap back to life in an instant with all senses alert. It is so quick, faster than lightning. If you have this kind of spirit, unity in the world will come. Even if your eyes are closed and you are snoring, when a fish bites, you are holding the rod straight up and so are instantly alert. That's how it is. That joy, the taste of that moment, is truly heavenly training.(040-221,19710201)

A vision for the future of humankind

19 We need to conquer the oceans in the future. By myself alone I will recover all the gold, silver and treasures in the sea. After thinking about it, I concluded that we have to dig many tunnels. For this reason I came up with the International Peace Highway project. If I could drill a tunnel under the sea and construct a road, then create a door, wouldn't it be fun to open that door and catch a fish? How wonderful it would be if we could directly supply ships with oil from under the seabed using a pipeline? There is an unlimited supply of oil under the ocean. How great it would be if we could provide oil from a pipeline with one press of a button.(116-327,19820102)

20 Human beings should be free to go anywhere. If they want to go to the ocean or mountains, they should be free to do so without any national boundaries. They should be able to live beneath the water as well. The age will come when, through scientific advances, we can build a submarine and live freely underwater. Otherwise humanity will have no place to live. A submarine sinks by letting water into its tank until it becomes heavy enough to sink. With the push of a button you can control the inflow and outflow of water and accordingly dive or rise in the water. Therefore we can live in the water. There is no better place in heaven and earth than that which lies deeper than ten meters. If you go down thirty meters it is very calm. A truly serene world emerges, an underwater kingdom. If you go up in the air, however, you can encounter trouble with lots of wind and constant change. The air currents and atmosphere are capricious and it can suddenly storm. That is why I believe living in the ocean is an ideal way of life.(262-272,19940801)

21 In the future we will be able to live beneath the ocean. That's why I have initiated research on a five-person submarine. When the wind is not blowing, the calm sea lets you feel like a billionaire, a master of the ocean. You don't know how mystical and awe-inspiring this is. Think what it would be like if a husband and wife could look over the great ocean on the crystal-clear surface of the sea when the

winds are calm, dreaming about their love nest while talking about their future together. That would not be a problem. If a storm should descend, they could dive in their submarine thirty meters below to safety, A time will come when we will be able to live freely under the water. There-fore you do not have to worry about the Republic of Korea being small.(233-052,19920720)

22 In the future there will be a shortage of food on land, so we will live in the ocean. In the ocean we will eat fish instead of meat, and we will eat seaweed instead of vegetables. If you were a leader, wouldn't you have such a plan so we could live in the ocean in the future? Isn't there enough oxygen in the water? We can supply oxygen by extracting it from the water. What is the percentage of oxygen in ocean water? We could never consume it all. In the near future, the time will come when we will conquer the ocean.(116-327,19820102)

23 I am preparing for the future world. I am not doing this because I love the ocean. It is difficult being at sea. My entire body was sore after one week of this. Still I pushed myself, telling myself "there is so much to do; do not use your age as an excuse" I could not rest. After about ten days, even if I went out early in the morning and stayed out until midnight, I had no physical problem whatsoever. Nonetheless, those people who fished with me were dozing while holding their fishing rods. Since I was the commander, in a position to give orders, I always thought I had to catch the first fish. Thinking like that, I anticipated when the fish would take my bait. That kind of determination is awesome.(189-295,19890617)

BOOK 7 EARTHLY LIFE AND THE SPIRIT WORLD

Chapter 1. The Nature of Life and Death

Section 1. The Three Stages of Life 677

Section 2. The Dual Structure of Human Beings 686

Section 3. The Meaning of Death 539

Section 4. What Is Heaven? 695

Chapter 2. The Nature of the Spirit World

Section 1. Understanding the Reality of the Spirit World 702

Section 2. Life in the Spirit World 713

Section 3. Angels and the Angelic World 720

Section 4. The Path to the Kingdom of Heaven 724

Chapter 3. Earthly Life Prepares Us for Eternal Life

Section 1. Eternal Life 733

Section 2. Preparation for the Spirit World 738
 Section 3. Developing Our Spirituality 752
 Section 4. Blessed Families and Eternal Life 758

Chapter 4. Returning Resurrection and Divine Spiritual Works

Section 1. The Last Days and Returning Resurrection 767
 Section 2. Divine Spiritual Works and Spiritual Phenomena 772
 Section 3. The Returning Resurrection of People in the Spirit World 777

BOOK 7 EARTHLY LIFE AND THE SPIRIT WORLD

CHAPTER 1 The Nature of Life and Death

Section 1. The Three Stages of Life

1 We were born through three great parents. The first parent is the material world. We were created as the center of the material realm, as composite material beings made from every essential element extracted from the material world. From this viewpoint, these material elements are our ancestors that gave us birth and the material world is an expansion of each of us. The universe is such that material entities can reach fruition only when aligned with the ideal of love. All cells are meant to live comfortably, regulated by the ideal of love. If they were to get upset at each other, everything would go awry. The second parent is the term for our natural parents who gave us birth in the flesh. They enabled us to be born with a definite form. However, no matter how hard they try, those parents cannot become the owners of love. They can be the owners of our life but not the owners of love. The owner of love is God. God exists in the universality and eternity of love, because He is the subject partner of love, the Parent centered on love. Thus, our third Parent is God. In this way, we have three great parents. (298-304, 1999.01.17)

Life goes through three periods

2 Human beings live for ten months in the womb, a hundred years in this physical world and for eternity in the spirit world. Our face has three levels: the mouth, the nose and the eyes. These represent the three ages of human life. Our mouth symbolizes the age in the womb, the material world. Our nose represents the age on the earth, the earthly, human world, and our eyes represent the age of heaven, the spirit world. The water in the womb of the mother is a universe of freedom for the baby. Even though the baby has to stay hunched up at all times and cannot kick wherever it pleases, and its nose and mouth are blocked, that place is still a universe of freedom for the baby. The vessel that supplies the baby with all that it

needs joins at the navel, and the baby can breathe only through that umbilical cord. Yet that world is still a universe of freedom for the baby. (298-304, 1999.01.17)

3 When you were in the womb, did you have thoughts such as, “I will go out into the world and eat honey, rice cakes, rice, beef and everything else with this mouth”? No, in fact, you were breathing through the umbilical cord and thinking, “If I leave this place, I will die!” To us it seems that a fetus should feel stifled and yet the baby in the womb is anxious about going out, and says, “I wish I didn’t have to leave.” Nevertheless, when the time comes and the water breaks, everything comes rushing out. Naturally, along with the gush of the amniotic fluid, the baby is safely delivered and everything is fine. (49-287, 1971.10.17)

4 Life on earth is analogous to life in the womb, for here we are surrounded by air, just as we lived bathing in the waters of the womb. We are living in an air pocket. The very moment we think of as the hour of death is actually our birth into our third life. Dragonflies start out as larva, and as such they swim in the water; then they come out onto the land and crawl for a time. Then they fly freely to and fro, feeding on insects they had never even thought of eating while they were living on land. They fly around with the entire world as their stage. Many insects develop through three stages of life. Most insects have wings. Considering the fact that even insects live in the water, on land and in the air, would it do if we human beings, who are the lords of creation, lived only on land? We have wings of a higher dimension. (49-288, 1971.10.17)

5 The period in the womb is the age of water. A baby inside the mother’s womb is floating in water. Simply considered, we may feel that the baby would find it difficult to live in the mother’s womb because it is constricted. Isn’t it obvious that the baby would have to take in and pass water, since it is living in water? For that reason, babies in the womb live by virtue of the conduit connected to their stomach. By what means is the baby in the womb supplied with nutrients? It is through the umbilical cord connected to the navel. For the baby in the womb, its navel is its mouth. (299-069, 1999.02.04)

6 A baby in its mother’s womb breathes, but through what? It is through the umbilical cord, which is connected to the mother’s body. However, we know that the baby is also connected to the second world, the world of air. After its time in the womb the baby pushes out, and everything behind it is destroyed. At the moment the baby cries for the first time its windpipe and nostrils, designed for breathing air, embrace that world of air. The nostrils are the wonderful supply route. While in the womb the baby prepared for the world of air, but in the process of coming out and connecting to that world, the umbilical cord and the amniotic sac—in short, everything that enabled it to live in the womb—are destroyed. The umbilical cord used in the womb is destroyed. At the same time, the baby appears in this universe and meets its Mother Earth. Then it begins to live on elements

supplied through its mouth. The body breathed through the umbilical cord while in the womb. To be able to breathe through the nostrils, the air pipes, the body prepares them in advance so that when the baby comes out into the world of air it can change its mode of respiration. (139-213, 1986.01.31)

7 You are born on earth in order to experience love. You need to breathe in the air we call love. You need to breathe the air of love from your mother and father. You should go through everything in life while being supplied with the air of love. Once you are born as a baby in a family, you need to follow a path similar to a sine curve, going up along the curve and coming down. You are born as a baby and eventually, over time, your body breaks down. You are born as a baby, and you go back to being a baby again. When this takes place, what is about to happen? You will detach yourself from the world of the second womb and connect yourself to the respiratory organs of the third world of love. You leave behind your loving parents and siblings and enter the world of love that is in total harmony with the Original Being of the great cosmos, God. The spirit world is filled with air of love. Therefore, while you live in the earthly world, you should equip yourself with a supply line that will enable you to breathe that love. Hence, you need to have experiences with the spirit world. You need to develop into someone who can feel love spiritually and breathe the air of love. (139-213, 1986.01.31)

8 When we leave this planet Earth, which is like our mother's womb, and pass on, we will breathe with the respiratory organs of love, that is, with our windpipe of love. We can gain eternal life only when we connect to the third age of love. By connecting to that love, we can return to God. We return to the spirit world by binding to the respiratory organs of love. Yet we still have some distance to traverse to return to God, the Original Being. Because the Original Being is the origin of the seed, it must return to Him after bearing fruit. (139-214, 1986.01.31)

9 The womb, in which we all spend time, is a world of water. The human body is three-quarters water. This earthly world is the world of air. Yet your eyes, ears, nose and other sensory organs designed for life in this world of air are not needed while you are surrounded by water. Did you breathe even once through your nose during the months you spent growing in the womb? Had you tried to do so, you would have died instantly. Why then does a fetus need a nose? It is there because you are preparing for the next world. In the next world, the earthly world, you live in an air pocket, not a water pocket. What should you do in an air pocket? Just as you prepared your five physical sense organs while living in the water pocket, when you are living in the air pocket you need to prepare your five spiritual sense organs. You prepare the five spiritual sense organs, corresponding to the ears, eyes, nose, and so on, through which you can absorb love when you are in the heavenly world. When you cross the hill of death, those sense organs open up. You will need those five spiritual sense organs in the infinite world. (302-167, 1999.06.13)

10 Water symbolizes the age in the womb. Next, the earth is the age of air. We are born from our mother's womb and then we live in the age of air. Next, the spirit world is the age of the eyes. It is the age of the sun, the age of sunlight. Love can be said to be light, because it illuminates, and so it is the realm of light. Human life has three stages. A dragonfly first lives in water, emerges and lives on land and then sheds its skin and flies around feeding on other insects. It passes through three distinct periods. This is also true for us as the lords of creation. When our time in our mother's womb concludes, do we come out embracing everything we used there, or do we separate from it, our connection to it destroyed? If we were to remain tied in any way when we came out, we would be in serious trouble. Conversely, if the umbilical cord were severed while we still needed to eat and breathe through it, we would die. But when we come out of the womb, we need to sever that umbilical cord. It must be cut off without hesitation. We come out destroying everything of the past. (299-038, 1999.02.01)

11 When the time comes, we must all end our life in our mother's womb and begin our life on earth. Regardless of whether we desire it or not, the law of the universe operates this way. Then a new, vast and boundless world unfolds before us, one which we had never dreamed of or imagined. Our life in water ends and our life on earth begins. A span of ten months in the womb transitions into a span of one hundred years of life on earth. People lead diverse lives and go through changes as they prepare for the spirit world, the world we go to after we die. That is why I tell you not to worry about dying. You are simply moving to a better place. (447-158, 2004.05.01)

12 Just as we never imagined life in the world during our time in the womb, while we are living in the flesh we cannot imagine the very different, eternal and infinite world that is waiting for us. It is not a world of despair. Our life of one hundred years in this limited earthly realm transitions into life in the eternal realm transcendent of time and space. While living in the womb, we are supplied with nutrients from our mother through the umbilical cord, and our earthly life depends on the three basic elements of the universe—water, air and light—as well as nutritive elements. Once we enter the spirit world, however, we no longer need material nutrients; we live breathing love for all eternity. In the eternal world, we eat if we want to and we do not eat if we would rather not. No matter who we are, we live our life in three stages: ten months in water, one hundred years on earth, and eternity in the spirit world. (447-158, 2004.05.01)

13 After the age of water come the age of land and the age of light. In this regard, a person lives through three successive ages. The solar system, with the sun at its center, is always in daylight. On the other hand, night follows day on planet Earth. The spirit world is always in light. There are the ages of water and of air leading to the age of love. Love must never be extinguished. Like the light of the sun, love must be there at all times, night and day; whether morning, afternoon or evening,

whether at the North Pole, the tropics, the South Pole or anywhere else, love doesn't change. We will go to the spirit world to enter the age of love. The spirit world is like a storehouse for fruit grown and harvested during the four seasons. It is bathed in a light like that from the sun. (313-224, 1999.12.19)

14 At first, we were nurtured through our mother's placenta. The womb is the vessel in which we grew. We kicked away everything completely as we broke away, emerged from that container, and were born. Similarly, our physical body is the container for our spirit self and we will break away from it too, and fly away. Accordingly, human beings pass through the world of water and of land and finally come to live in the eternal world of true love, which is a world of light in the sky. In the spirit world, because love is the life element, we carry out all instructions given through love immediately. Nothing is impossible. In that world, even if a billion people were to have dinner at the same time and place, the amount of food necessary for such a feast could be instantly prepared. (298-313, 1999.01.17)

15 The light that illuminates the spirit world is that of true love. True love is like sunlight both in the earthly world and in the spirit world. That is why we leave behind the regime of living through our nose and come to live through our eyes. When you live through your eyes, you know everything with crystal clarity and nothing escapes you. After the world of the nose we enter the world of the eyes, the world of light. The fact that it is the world of the eyes tells us that our eyes that see this world will also see the spirit world. Through them, we can see whatever we like. We can see the Heavenly Parent; we can see the earthly Parents; we can see the vastness of the heavenly kingdom and how it compares to the earthly kingdom. We come to know that the spirit world and the earth are one reality, not two separate realities. Our eyes are made to see both. (391-161, 2002.08.21)

Preparing the respiratory organs of love while on earth

16 As soon as a baby is born and cries for the first time, it begins to breathe through its nostrils; thus it connects to the second world, the world of air. When it leaves the world within the womb and connects to the world of air, it must discard the umbilical cord and amniotic sac that have sustained its life in the womb. These are destroyed and simultaneously the baby is born into Mother Earth. Thereafter it feeds through the mouth and breathes through the nose. But the food we eat on earth is the nutrition necessary for the life of the flesh; it is not the original essential element of life. The essential life element is love. Therefore, while we live in this world, we also need to breathe the air of love provided by our mother and father. (298-305, 1999.01.17)

17 Life is short. Ten years can pass almost without you knowing. Everything is decided in the thirty years after your marriage. The path of life does not wait for you forever. Life is busy. We all have to die at some point. Do you have confidence

that you will not die? You will surely die, and then you will go to the spirit world. Life on earth is but an instant. It is like the months spent in your mother's womb. (143-334, 1986.03.21)

18 Since air in the spirit world is composed of love, if your spirit self is not prepared, you will not be able to breathe when you enter the heavenly realms. The world here is a world of air, but the next world is the world of love. You have to prepare your spirit self to feel love. Otherwise you will not be able to establish relationships in the spirit world. Then you will have bigger problems that will take millions of years to resolve. (265-326, 1994.12.01)

19 After our earthly life, we must go on to the third stage, the world as it was originally meant to be, and live in that world of love. Therefore, we need to equip ourselves with respiratory organs suited to the world of love and we need to break out of this physical body, just as a baby bursts from the amniotic sac, destroying it in order to be born. That is why a woman experiences labor pains. In the same way, death is like a second ordeal of labor pains. What do we need to prepare during our life in this physical body? During our time in the womb, we grew the organs with which we would breathe air. Similarly, during our life in the flesh we need to prepare a windpipe that breathes love when we go to the spirit world. When you break out of your body, you go beyond the limited environment of your past life, breathe through your love windpipe and live with unlimited freedom. (274-105, 1995.10.29)

20 Those who breathe love while on the earth do not die; rather, they live. While breathing inside the mother's womb, we are preparing a windpipe suitable for the future world of air. Though we are alive, when we disconnect from the placenta that connects by a cord to our stomach and come out, we are transformed to exist on a new, higher dimension and we are supplied with higher dimensional elements. We emerge and receive an infusion of air. After you emerge from the womb, what are you preparing for? It is love. It is not only air which you are infused with, but love; you receive elements of love. You are not living only to eat. Then what should you be filled with during your life on earth? You should form a new character of love during this time. (139-214, 1986.01.31)

21 Until now, no one noted that while you are in the womb, in the age of water, you prepare five physical sense organs that you do not need there. Those organs are not necessary in the womb. However, once you come out into the world of air and sever the umbilical cord, you need them. Similarly, while you are living in the age of air you need to prepare five internal, spiritual sense organs. These are not external, bodily organs. They are the five God-centered, internal organs you need in order to lead a carefree, unlimited life through which you harmonize with the world of love. (297-186, 1998.11.20)

22 In your present life you have a nose and eyes through which you can smell and see the natural world in a limited way for one hundred years. But there is an eternal being inside you, staying still and waiting, with its nose, mouth and ears closed until the moment of its birth. In the same way, senses are inside you, waiting to see the eternal sights, hear the eternal sounds, smell the eternal fragrances and taste the eternal flavors. They are like your earthly senses. When that moment comes, each of us will be able to go everywhere, listen to everything, smell everything and eat everything. (117-289, 1982.04.11)

23 When you go to the spirit world, you will sing songs of love and speak words of love. If someone speaks to you in song in the spirit world, you will want to respond likewise. If you are spoken to through a dance, you will want to reply with a dance. You will rejoice eternally and never tire of dancing. When dancing starts in one place, all of heaven will dance, and when singing starts somewhere, there will be singing everywhere. You will dance with your beloved spouse. When you end up dancing with another in the spirit world, you will say to yourself, "This dancing with you is so I can love my beloved spouse one hundred times more." When you dance with someone else and hold each other's hands, you will feel the impulse to find your beloved spouse and love him or her thousands and tens of thousands of times more than ever. When you go to the spirit world, there is no need for you to work and there is no nighttime. Your eyes are always open. Your organs are working all the time. And what work are they doing? What kind of work will you enjoy doing when your eyes are always open and you never need to sleep? It is love. When you possess such an ideal of love, if you say, "Let such-and-such a thing appear!" it will appear right away. You will live surrounded by original love. (107-331, 1980.06.08)

The spirit world is where the fruit of love is harvested

24 Why were we born? We were born because of love. To bear the fruit of love, we are born through the love of our parents and we grow up within the embrace of love. After that, we raise sons and daughters whom we can love in place of God. Then what happens when we grow old? We feel everything that parents can feel in the world. Through everything we experience in our life on earth we feel God's presence, and we become a fruit of oneness with Him. It is similar to the way trees bear fruit. Just as a fruit that has absorbed elements from all parts of a tree is harvested, we need to return to God's embrace, for such is the purpose of our birth. That is why God created us, so we can become one with Him through love. Therefore love is the standard of infinite value, unequalled in the entire universe. In the place we become one with love, there is nothing that cannot be found. There, everything has achieved perfection. That is the ideal world to which people alive today need to go. If we call that place the spirit world, it is the spirit world; if we call that place the kingdom of heaven, it is the kingdom of heaven. Such fruits can enter the kingdom of heaven. It is not a place that individuals can enter. Only those eligible as an object partner of equal value, who have borne fruit centering on love

and who have inherited the right of ownership of God's love, can go in. (142-121, 1986.03.06)

25 The first parent is the parents who gave birth to you, but the second parent is the earth. The earth is the second parent of your body. The earth supplies you with the elements that help your body grow. After passing through the second parent, you enter the third parent at the time of death. You cannot enter the third parent without being prepared. You need to resemble the form of God, our Original Parent. Why do we marry? It is to resemble God's form. God is a being of unified dual characteristics. God's characteristics divide into two separate entities, a man and a woman who need to come together in union. They are like the seeds and they return to the position of God's original nature. However, for those seeds to be perfected, they have to traverse the path of the duty of love. This means they need to be born and receive love, grow up with love as their goal, live their life centering on love and, even when they pass on, pass on in order to return to love. Unless you set out focused on the goal of living for others, your path will take you in the wrong direction. (138-099, 1986.01.19)

26 You need to be stronger than your environment. You need to inherit all the elements so that you can bear fruit in the future, and your motivation to bear fruit has to be strong. Only then, after passing through the course to fruition, a course connected with history, can you remain as a fruit that is indispensable to human society. When a person is born, that person has to master the environment without fail. That does not mean that mastering the environment is an end in itself; you need to pass through a process by which you inherit new life and bear good fruit. After going through this process, you need to occupy a position that can show proper and practical results. For example, the owner sows seeds of grain. They sprout, grow and bear fruit, and then the owner harvests and stores them in a barn. Just like that seed, you need to go through a process of being harvested, because you are needed for a certain purpose. (36-011, 1970.11.08)

27 Life on this earth is but a fleeting moment. Therefore, a person who cries and weeps for a child who has gone to the spirit world has not yet broken free from ties with the fallen realm. When this person goes to the spirit world, he or she will be blocked by a wall. A person is born from love, lives through love and returns to love. Since its origin is the seed, the fruit will produce new seed. When you ask the reason human beings are born, the answer is that we are born for ideal love. Since this is an eternal love, you will always have your mother and father, your husband or wife and your sons and daughters. Hence, love is precious. Because love begins from God and God is absolute, love cannot change. And because love is eternal, people are born for God's love, live for the sake of love and after living their life this way, stand in the position of the eternal object partner of God, living with God forever. (143-312, 1986.03.21)

28 In the world of air, the spirit is attached to the body, which nourishes it like a fetus. When the body grows old, the spirit wants to kick it away and leave it behind. If God sees the physical body insisting that it will not die, what will He do? Will He laugh, pity it or scold it? Just as a baby is born and becomes its parents' object partner of love, we can conclude, based on the principle, that we need to be born again in our spirit body and become an eternal object partner of God, our spiritual Parent. Just as a baby is born into this earthly world where it can share love with its mother and father, we need to be born into the spirit world where we can share love with God, our Parent, who moves through the eternal and infinite realms. Without taking the position of His object partner, we cannot possibly become His children. (116-175, 1982.01.01)

29 The invisible God develops through the visible Adam. When Adam becomes the owner of love and has his own sons and daughters, he feels the realm of substance horizontally on God's behalf. The substantial fruit of the two nations appears, centering on the incorporeal God, Adam's realm of substance, and the grandchildren. This perfected fruit becomes the substance of the spirit world and the physical world, and is able to go anywhere. (326-316, 2000.07.16)

30 Since our ancestors were raised in the bosom of God, we cannot but wish for God Himself to live in comfort and happiness forevermore. Would it do for God to feel unhappy? We wish for God always to be wonderfully happy. A baby in the womb wishes the same thing. After the absolute God created Adam and Eve, and while they were growing up, He was surely in a state of infinite hope and infinite happiness. He must have had dreams for them. This is true for us as well. It is similar to the fact that we live for a time in our mother's womb; then we are born and our lifetime of living in our physical body begins. How is our current life on earth different from life in the womb? In that we are growing in the embrace of our universe, it is the same. (74-013, 1974.11.10)

31 We are born in love that represents God; we live in love, we reach the destination of love by having sons and daughters and we return to God to live with Him eternally. In other words, our life begins with love, matures with love and is harvested as the fruit of love. Death is the point at which the fruit of love is harvested. We received our parents' love, shared the love of husband and wife and loved our children. Therefore, we have to harvest the fruits of God's love that have ripened in the internal world of love, scattered throughout our lifetime, and take them with us to the spirit world. When I become completely one through love, I come to resemble God. If a husband and wife unite and realize completely those three stages of love, when they go to the spirit world they will become, for eternity, the object partner god in front of the eternal subject partner God. This takes place when a husband and wife pass away with true love as their center. Thus, we begin with God and end with God. (298-312, 1999.01.17)

Section 2. The Dual Structure of Human Beings

1 Human beings were created with a dual structure. This dual structure consists of spirit and flesh, mind and body. When do they become one? You cannot fully unite the two as one merely by cultivating your mind and offering prayers, no matter how spiritually awakened you become. The body has five major senses. The mind, including the spirit and the conscience, also has five senses. There is only one power that can bring the cells of these five external, physical senses and five internal, spiritual senses into oneness so that they resonate completely and are filled to the point of exploding. That is God's love, which is the common denominator of everything in the universe. Without that love, unity between the mind and body is impossible. (137-067, 1985.12.18)

2 In the relationship between our spirit and body, the spirit is the more important. The physical body continues for about a hundred years and then it dies, but the spirit lives eternally, transcending time and space. Regardless of how well people dress and how luxuriously they live on earth, in the end everyone dies. Accordingly, before passing into the spirit world we need to successfully harmonize the spiritual and physical standards and achieve, through our lifestyle, a perfect union of the spirit and the flesh. That is, during our life in the limited earthly world, we have the responsibility to perfect our spirit within our body. (524-103, 2006.04.10)

3 Each of us has a spiritual self and a physical self. In the Unification Church, we refer to these as the spirit and the body. Originally, the spirit and the body are supposed to become one. Ultimately they have to become one. And at what place do they become one? At a place of resonance. This is like the vibration of a tuning fork. When you strike one prong, it produces a tone that resonates perfectly with the other. Like a tuning fork, our spirit and body also achieve unity through resonance. (226-074, 1992.02.02)

4 When do the spirit self and the physical body become one? This is the question. When God's love comes into our heart, our body automatically and actively reacts. It is not God's wisdom, ability or power but only His love that can bring us into a realm where our body and mind resonate in complete unity. What is the one focus, the ideal standard, desired by your five physical sensory organs, such as your eyes and nose, as well as by your five spiritual sensory organs? It is neither God's power nor His wisdom. It is His love, the center and the standard point of everything! (138-255, 1986.01.24)

5 When our spiritual and physical selves harmonize and resonate with each other in God's love, the spiritual cells and physical cells interact perfectly. When we open our eyes and they are working perfectly, we can see everything throughout heaven and earth for the first time. When we use a highly efficient microphone, our voice will ring out fully everywhere. Similarly, once our physical and spiritual selves

become one and attain an explosive state through the power of love, that complete union emits a light on the same wavelength as the heavenly world, the earthly world, and even God Himself. (171-103, 1987.12.13)

6 All created beings in this world exist in pairs based on the ideal of reciprocity. That is why the number two is so necessary, from the smallest being to the greatest. In human beings, an individual's mind and body must become one. Then husband and wife have to become one, and then the spirit world and the physical world have to become one. From the beginning, these entities were meant to be united. (374-143, 2002.04.08)

7 Between the body and the spirit, the more important is the spirit. Our flesh lives for one hundred years within the limited realm of time and space before disappearing into nothing, but our spiritual body has the power to transcend both time and space. Accordingly, our essential purpose is to recognize our historic responsibility and fulfill it. Regardless of how well you may live physically, in the end you will die. Then which is more important, spiritual standards or physical standards? We do not live based on physical standards. The flesh exists for the spirit and not vice versa. You should not cling to the lifestyle that secular people follow. You should find a more worthwhile basis for existence, with your physical body and spiritual body united substantially. This will serve to strengthen your physical body also. (020-326, 1968.07.14)

8 From God's viewpoint, is there any difference between a young person, a middle-aged person and an elderly person? God looks only at the spirit self. He can see if a spirit self is young and active and has a self-disciplined character. He does not see the outer shell. He sees what will be left from inside after the outer shell has been cast off. (121-211, 1982.10.27)

9 What happens when we go to the spirit world? We become God's body. A person becomes the body of God. It is recorded in the Gospel of John and in 1 Corinthians, "Do you not know that you are the temple of God?" (1 Cor. 3:16; cf. John 17:21) Human beings are thus the temple, the house where God can dwell. Then how can you come to resemble God? When you reach the completion stage of your portion of responsibility, God dwells within you. Oneness is created between you and God and through that love, unity of life is achieved. Your life is assimilated into God's. When a man and a woman become husband and wife and have a family, their love brings them into unity. In the same way, the power of that love brings them into God. (130-022, 1983.12.11)

10 Human beings have both a mind and a body. Above our mind is our spirit and above our spirit is God. This is why we can become perfect when we become completely one with God. Though a person is only one small entity, because he or

she represents all of history as well as all future relationships, he or she possesses cosmic value. (4-268, 1958.08.03)

11 Would you like to live eternally on earth, or would you prefer to live eternally in a substantial world of incorporeal love? You would say that you prefer to live eternally in the world that has become the substance of incorporeal love. So when God tells you that He wants to show you the spirit world, would you be able to follow Him with your physical body? That is why you need a spirit. This is not a delusion but a fact. If we assume that God exists as the center of the invisible mind and that He requires an object partner, wouldn't He wish to take human beings with Him, show them every part of the eternal ideal realm He created, and give them all of it? (111-112, 1981.02.02)

12 We can see the incorporeal body through our spiritual eyes. In the center of that incorporeal body is the spirit, and that part corresponds to the human mind. That is the place where you can meet with God happily, without other people learning about what you are doing. If God and you love each other in such a place, no one can take that love away from you. That place is the final destination of vertical love and the starting point of horizontal love. (52-260, 1972.01.02)

13 The spirit mind is the union of mind and spirit, and it moves toward a single goal. As such, with our conscience centered upon God, it can motivate us to achieve ideal personhood based on the unity of our spirit and flesh. Our conclusion can only be that if we did not have a spirit mind, we would be unable to search for the origin that can connect us to the spirit world and true love. When the spirit mind comes into us, our body rejoices and everything follows it. The two become one automatically. Until now, our biggest problem has been the separation of our mind and body. When God's spiritual power comes into us as the origin of our spirit mind, our mind and body become one naturally. Unless a revolution occurs at this fundamental level, unless we discover the origin that can govern everything that comes from the root, we have no path to the ideal. Only through a strong motivation can results come. (91-143, 1977.02.06)

14 The mind is vertical and the body horizontal. The mind is the vertical "I" and the body is the horizontal "I." There are the two. The vertical "I" is the mind and the horizontal "I" is the body. Their structure is the same. Everything in creation shares this. If one goes up, another comes down. Consider the example of a tree. The roots absorb nutrients and the leaves also produce nutrients. The leaves receive sunlight and their chlorophyll creates and supplies nutrients. The roots also absorb nutrients from the ground. These nutrients interact with each other. In Principle terms, they are the vitality element and the life element, ever giving and receiving in a relationship similar to that of mind and body. (216-162, 1991.03.10)

15 We need to eat spiritual food. When you are hungry, which should taste better, physical food or spiritual food? To survive and stand on God's side, you should enjoy the taste of spiritual food more than physical food. The flavor of a life centered on spiritual power should far excel that of a life based on physical might. (131-211, 1984.05.04)

Section 3. The Meaning of Death

1 We wish to resemble God, and it is only natural that God would cherish the hope that we would resemble Him as His sons and daughters. For this, human beings must be born again, assuming a form that can resemble God. God and human beings are eagerly waiting for the day on which they can fly together forever. The day of our death when we discard our physical body is the day when we are reborn as people who can fly. That being so, should we welcome death, or grieve over it? Naturally we should welcome it. And when we die, what are we dying for? We should declare that our death will be for God's true love, that is, love for the sake of others. If this is so for us, we will shed our physical body in order to participate in the realm of activity of God's infinite love and for the sake of the world of God's love. (297-256, 1998.12.19)

2 If you fall sick and are about to die, you typically lapse into a coma. You are in a state in which you are not sure if you are dead or alive. While there in the spirit world, you see everything about the place where you will live. Your friends and relatives who are already there come and greet you. The vast kingdom of heaven that unfolds before your eyes is so dazzling and splendid that you exclaim, "I should hurry up and come here." Your life continues and eventually you transition to that world. As you head toward different places, each better than the last, you pass through a first, a second and a third gate and enter the next world, where you are welcomed. Death is not something that should dismay or dishearten you. You are not going down; instead, you are making a leap. In short, you ascend. Therefore, you should not fear death. Death comes in accordance with a natural cyclic law, as the process of moving you to a better world. (196-271, 1990.01.02)

Beginning a new life

3 People generally think that everything ends when we die, but that is not the case. Because there is a spirit world, life continues as it is. While on earth you need to prepare to enter the spirit world. Since you breathe love in the spirit world, in order to breathe freely there, you should keep love at the center of your life on earth. If you do not center on love during your physical life, you will be unable to breathe freely in the spirit world. Because the spirit world is a world where you breathe love, you can think of it as a world in which love is your air. Your second new beginning is referred to as death. Hence, there is nothing to fear. Death opens the door to a new beginning. (249-281, 1993.10.11)

4 Between life and death, which is stronger? Is life stronger than death or is death stronger than life? In Satan's world, death is stronger than life. After coming to know God's Will, you should not dread having to die. Only by dying can you resurrect. So what is the death mentioned in the Bible referring to? It does not signify ending our eternal life that comes from God. Instead, it means ending the life we inherited through the fallen lineage of Satan's world. This is why those who seek to lose their life for God's Will shall find it. (34-047, 1970.08.29)

5 At the end of our physical life, we go through a second birth. This is death. The place where we experience our second birth, the place where we go after death, is the spirit world. As we enter that world, God, who is our third Parent, bestows upon us true love that represents the entire universe. We are supplied with the true love of God's ideal. That is why unity will surely be achieved in the spirit world. At the moment of death, we leave behind our second world, the world of air, and we need to connect with our third world, the new world where we are designed to breathe love. We leave behind the love of our parents and of our siblings, go to the spirit world and ultimately enter the world of true love in harmony with God, the Original Being. Since the Original Being planted the seed, the fruit needs to return to the Original Being. (298-311, 1999.01.17)

6 The reason we die is that our ability to love in our physical body is limited. If we want to possess the true authority of God's boundless true love as His object partner, our limited physical body will not suffice. This is why we need to transform into an incorporeal spirit. We do so to share the ideal of love equally with all of heaven and earth. For this reason, the moment of our death is not the doorway to a path of pain; it opens the door to happiness through which we can possess universal true love. Death signifies a transition from the earthly world, where we can only crawl and walk, to a world where we can live and fly freely. To qualify as a traveler who can enjoy true love with the entire universe as his or her stage, and to enter that world, we are made to pass through death. Death is nothing less than being born anew. (298-312, 1999.01.17)

7 Someday we will discard our physical body and go to the spirit world. As human beings born into this world, we need to be prepared for death. We need to endure hardships, through which we develop good character. That will become our true self in the eternal world. You will be born as a good and healthy baby only if you receive good prenatal care inside your mother's womb. Your life on earth is similar to your life in the womb. So you need to model yourself after God's external form and divine character in order to grow properly. And even when you are fully grown, you need to overcome obstacles at the risk of your life. (14-017, 1964.04.19)

8 Because our death is a second birth, it is not something tragic. If Adam and Eve had not fallen, they would have lived in a realm of resonance with God. Their body and mind would have been in resonance. When we live on earth centering on love,

we achieve love that has the same standard wavelength as the love of the spirit world. As we do so, we can perceive the spirit world while living on earth. Just as we are born of our parents on earth, live together with them and learn from them and thus perfect our life on earth, we are born again centering on God, the Parent of love in the heavenly world. We who have perfected the five spiritual senses live together with our Heavenly Parent in the eternal world of love as God's sons and daughters, His friends and His body. That is why death is not the end. Death enables us to smash the boundaries between the limited world and the infinite world. By dying, we cross that summit, entering our second life. (306-209, 1998.09.23)

9 Death is similar to coming out of the womb, where we lived in a world of water, and in the process destroying the umbilical cord and the amniotic sac. Death is our second birth. It is our departure from this limited world, where we breathe through our nose, and our arrival in the place where we can receive God's love. That is what death is. This is why we have a first ancestor and a second ancestor. Our path of life is such that we leave this world where we received our parents' love and we seek out the place of the love of God, our infinite and eternal Parent. Embraced in God's bosom, we form bonds of infinite life and love and return to the original homeland where we can live eternally. There we breathe love, just as we breathe air now. We originated from God, and by achieving this real authority of love we incarnate God. In love, our value is equal. (298-295, 1999.01.16)

10 Since human beings were born from the world of spirit, they have no choice but to return to the world of spirit. The Korean word toraganda (to die, to return) is interesting. To where are we returning? It is not to a cemetery. It is to our place of origin. We did not begin life in a cemetery. The word implies crossing the vast expanses of history, even beyond its beginning point. It does not mean to return as a Korean even if one was born a Korean. A Korean who dies does not return on that path as a Korean. We return to the original world that brought forth the ancestors of humankind. It means returning to the place where the Creator is. Since that is where we originated, it is to there that we return. (141-270, 1986.03.02)

11 If someone died of old age, the Korean expression is that that person "returned." When someone asks about our deceased grandparents, we say, "They went back," don't we? To where did they return? They went back to the spirit world. Since we originally come from the incorporeal God, the incorporeal world is our original homeland. From the incorporeal world we come to the corporeal world, multiply on this earth and then return to the incorporeal world. This is the path by which we go back. We originate from the incorporeal Father, then we are born through our corporeal father and mother and we live in the corporeal world. Later we discard our physical body, return to our original form and go to the spirit world. (242-168, 1993.01.01)

12 Once we are born, it is inevitable that we will die. But where do we go after death? We do not dissipate like smoke. We go to the spirit world. When we go to the spirit world, we will find there is a territory there. Who, then, is the owner of the spirit world? It is God. Therefore, we should become the sons and daughters of God. If we do not become God's children, we cannot enter Heaven. (208-109, 1990.11.17)

13 You may not know the reality of the heavenly world, but I do. I enjoy a spiritual gift from God, giving me clear insight into that unknown world. Digging into the root of that world, I found its principles to be quite simple. Only those who live for others in line with God's universal principles, that is, who live for the sake of the original ideal, can enter that world. The world that is structured along those lines is the ideal heavenly kingdom. It is the original homeland that humankind should seek. We are fallen human beings exiled from our original homeland, but we are destined to return. Nonetheless, because we cannot return through our own efforts alone, God had to set up a specific path through the course of history by which we can return. (78-117, 1975.05.06)

Going to the world of God's love

14 Whether we know it or not, we are headed for a certain destination. We are getting closer both when we are moving and when we are resting. Not just you but also this people, this world and even heaven and earth are headed there. This is an undeniable fact. Where will you go after you have lived through this life on earth? This is an important issue that everyone needs to resolve. Religions have mobilized to resolve this issue, as have philosophies and history itself. You too cannot deny that this destiny completely captivates you and pulls you along. Whether you can resolve this issue in your mind or not, you are destined to go. This body will see its end and be buried in the ground at the time of our death. Yet will this mind, this life, this heart, these thoughts and even this hope be buried together with our body? A person who is unaware of this, and who has not resolved this in his or her mind, with a clear view of his or her purpose, will surely suffer misfortune. (8-194, 1959.12.20)

15 If God is the Parent of humankind, what does that tell us about how and why He created us? When the God of love created us, we started out from the place where He had us participating in His love. It is our path of life to start out from the heart of God. We are to grow up in the embrace of His love, reach maturity and form a family in God's love. We are to become mature people who can develop our love to a global level on earth and finally return to the embrace of His love. (135-267, 1985.12.15)

16 Because we are spiritual beings, our life is eternal. Why have some people practiced loyalty before Heaven, walking the way of death for Heaven with hope in

their hearts, though they followed a path many would not have wanted? They have done so because they felt something that ordinary people could not feel; they knew heavenly values that ordinary people did not know. It was for that reason that they could tread even the path of death. You may encounter adversity or sadness in your course of life. Unless your mind becomes stronger than death, you will inevitably feel regret when you face death, and retreat from pain and sorrow. (6-055, 1959.03.22)

17 You are born from your father and mother, but where do you come from, fundamentally? You come from God. You are born through your father's seed and your mother's womb, yet your mother and father did not create you. You were born so that you could seek out parents that are true, True Parents. You need to find True Parents through the universal Parent and through your natural parents. That is why the moment of your death is a time of jubilation when you go to meet your True Parents. There you will find the true love of True Parents. This is the spiritual kingdom of heaven, a place made up of love. It is a place abundant with the love of the True Parents. That love is a love based on the principle of service and sacrifice, in keeping with absolute law. To become eligible to stand for the test, you have to love the universe. Your life on earth is the training ground for you to love humankind, and the examination room. This is the basis of the universe. If you undergo such experiences and live with such love during your life on earth, meeting the standard, then when you pass on you will surely come into the presence of God. (105-109, 1979.09.30)

18 People aspire to resemble God. God's plan is to enable us to resemble Him. We therefore need to be reborn into a form that can resemble God. Both we and God eagerly await such a day. The day of our death is the day of our birth as such people. Therefore, should we welcome death or not? We should welcome it. When we are asked what we are dying for, we should answer, "I am dying for the sake of God's true love." Accordingly, we discard our physical body so that we can participate in the realm of activity of God's infinite love, and for the sake of the world of God's love. To die means to be born into a state of being enveloped in God's love. However, in this world people protest, saying, "Oh, I'm dying!" The moment you transition through the point of death is the moment of your second birth. You can experience the joy of leaving the realm of limited love and of entering the realm of infinite love. You cannot establish a relationship with God unless you liberate yourself from the fear of death. (116-173, 1982.01.01)

19 Human beings inherit a purpose for their life, but then they live for different purposes. For what reason are you asked to "love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your strength and with all your mind"? (Matt. 22:37) It is so that you can become God's child. Therefore, you should be willing even to risk your life to love God. This is what we are meant to do, so we cannot go and die in the lowliest of places. Instead, we need to die in the highest

place. We should die centering on the heavenly kingdom. We should die in the one and only heavenly kingdom in heaven and on earth. Even in dying, there is a proper method and a proper place. The usual Korean way will not suffice. You need to die in the highest position, centered on the nation of God's heart, which passes through heaven and earth. You need to die at the very center of the heavenly kingdom. Your death should be such that the universe welcomes you with flags flying. (34-184, 1970.09.06)

20 A person who lives cherishing Heaven's hopes can joyfully surmount even the peak of death, which is otherwise an object of grief. That is why, when you face death, you should not have resentment, nor grieve over things of this world. Instead, you should rejoice and stand before Heaven speaking boldly of the value of your death. God is looking for such sons and daughters of hope. God cannot help but love a person who feels Heaven's joy in such a situation. If there were a throng of such people raising their voices to Heaven, God could not help but answer their cry. (6-055, 1959.03.22)

Section 4. What Is Heaven?

1 Heaven is a vast place. It is a world bigger and wider than this universe. But even though it is a world whose vastness is beyond description, if the people you love are somewhere in that world, no matter where, they appear instantly when you say you want to see them. And they know right away your frame of mind as you yearn for them. As soon as they arrive, they greet you, and knowing what is on your mind, they say, "Thank you for thinking like this about me." That is why there is no need to explain in the world of mind. Without having an explanation, you can feel it all. When you go there and meet someone, you know right away that he is going to say this or that. You listen to him, even though you know what he is going to say. So how wonderful this world is! True love passes through the shortest route, and true love is the quickest of all. Even if a beloved child is somewhere abroad, as soon as the parents think of that child, they will already have left, seen that child, and returned. Love transcends distance. Because true love travels the fastest, this whole vast universe can be the stage for your life's activities. Since it transcends time and space, there is no sense of distance. It is as if everything is right before your eyes. (210-092, 1990.12.01)

The kingdom of heaven is a world abundant with God's love

2 The kingdom of heaven is the world of God's love. It is a world where the air you breathe is love. That world is filled with life. There is no place in it that doesn't throb with life, and everyone is bound together through blood ties. Since its people are descendants of God's one lineage, if God feels sorrow over something, the entire spirit world feels that sorrow as if it were one body with God. And when God feels joy, everyone feels that joy. In this way, God's love is moving the vast kingdom

of heaven. In response to this love, the living realm of all created things is beautiful art based on the subject-object partner relationship. Just as we are connected by lineage, everything is woven together, so when God is happy, we are happy, and when God is sad, we are sad. (226-113, 1992.02.02)

3 Jesus said, "The kingdom of God is among you," (Luke 17:21) and that the kingdom of heaven is centered on God's love. Because the love of God is the center, all relationships in the kingdom of heaven are based on God's love, and a universally well-ordered environment comes about. Then, to reside in that realm, what kind of person do you need to be? Only those who harmonize with the essence of God's love can reside there. People who are not like that cannot experience it. What, then, can harmonize with the essence of God's love? Self-centeredness is worthless. Only investment for others, of one's life, one's devotion and everything one has, allows one to live continuously in the realm of God's love. (46-036, 1971.07.18)

4 In heaven we can take satisfaction in what we have prepared and in having led a life of attendance. Then what kind of people can go to heaven? Not those who believed in the Lord in order to receive blessings, that is, those whose main wish was to receive blessings. Heaven is the destination for those who live preparing their hearts to attend God. It is a place where even those who die during their time of preparation can go with joy, for they leave behind a life of attendance. Resurrection takes place there. After preparing to attend, you need to lead a life of attendance. Then how can you lead such a life? Try feeling that which is around you; observe your environment. The details of life do not appear easily. How to lead a life of attendance is the crucial question. We should think about this in our everyday life. (8-304, 1960.02.14)

5 Heaven is a place we cannot enter without establishing relationships of heart. It is the original nation, the nation of original nature which can govern everything. It cannot belong to you based on personal feeling. Rather, it is based on deeply felt bonds of heart. Ultimately it is where we are to communicate on the level of the heart, rather than on the level of personal sentiments. The purpose of God's providence on earth is to lay the foundation upon which we can go beyond sharing ordinary sentiments, and sing out our honest and most poignant emotions from the depth of our hearts. (8-290, 1960.02.14)

6 Even though Jesus came to establish the original homeland, he was unable to do so before he left this earth. Though he said, "The kingdom of heaven is among you," Jesus was not able to see the kingdom of heaven with his own eyes. Likewise, our most respected forebears and the martyrs, sages and wise people who have come and gone in history were unable to see that place or usher in that day. All those who inherited the lineage of evil from the fallen ancestors have yet to establish ties to the original homeland. This is why everyone is in search of the ideal. In reality,

people are pursuing the original homeland. What kind of world will that be? Not a world where people are enemies to each other, or envious of others' success, or resentful when others rejoice. In that world, one person doing well represents everyone's success; one person rejoicing represents everyone's joy. The original homeland is where, when one person rejoices, everyone rejoices; and when one person feels content, everyone feels content. (18-102, 1967.05.28)

7 Make your life a joyful one with God in the center. Make it the kingdom of heaven. In that kingdom you practice a life of giving. God also has to give. Parents have to give to their children. Even after giving something good, a parent desires to give something even better. As a parent, even if you have dressed your baby in the best clothes and given him or her nice things to eat, you are not satisfied. Instead you say, "I wish I could give better things." Desiring to give something better after you already have given is the heart of a parent and also the heart of God. (34-141, 1970.08.30)

8 Heaven is the place where husbands and wives go after raising the sons and daughters to whom they have given birth. It is the place they go while guiding their sons and daughters, their grandchildren and their clans. Further, it is the destination of the entire nation. Heaven is realized in that way. No matter how much the religious believers of today wish to go to the kingdom of heaven, it is not a place that you can enter alone. You can never go there alone. (41-300, 1971.02.17)

9 The kingdom of heaven is what you experience after you have been born of the original parents of goodness, formed a husband and wife relationship, given birth to sons and daughters, loved them and bequeathed everything to them in the harmonious universe where God can rejoice with all creation. The kingdom of heaven is not somewhere the father can go without the mother. It is where everyone—father and mother, sons and daughters—is meant to go. (41-231, 1971.02.16)

10 What is our greatest desire? It is to possess God's love. Even if we have possessed God, if we cannot possess the love within Him, which is even more precious, God cannot be ours. Thus we need to possess God's love. When His love first becomes mine and mine becomes His, the internal and the external become one. A nation based on such love becomes an ideal homeland without upper and lower classes. When we lie down in such a place, we feel that there is nothing in the universe that does not appear good and that does not exist for our sake. Since God's love is like that, the heavenly world, that is, the kingdom of heaven, which is to be the destiny of people today, is filled with love. (39-211, 1971.01.10)

We are the mediators between the kingdom on earth and the kingdom in heaven

11 In the process of creation, God made all things and made humankind. Everything began with God at the center. God's Will was for oneness between Himself and all people, and for equilibrium for all things in the creation. We human beings stand in the middle, between God and the created world. Thus we can function as the mediators between the spiritual and physical worlds. (067-143, 1973.06.01)

12 There is no doubt that God's creation of heaven and earth was glorious. First He created the substantial spirit world. He then created the substantial physical world as a representation of the spirit world. Finally He created Adam and Eve as the central embodiment of the physical world and spirit world. Adam and Eve were destined to move together in rhythm with heaven and earth. The necessary implication was that if Adam and Eve changed, heaven and earth also would change, and if Adam and Eve's center were broken up, the center of the entire universe would break up, and if the center of the entire universe were to break up, the center of the Creator also would break apart. (1-064, 1956.05.23)

13 There is a reason God created human beings as two separate entities, man and woman. First, God exists as the subject partner with harmonized dual characteristics, but because He has no external form, He needed a form through which He could relate to the substantial world. Since the creation includes a physical world, God absolutely needed a body that would enable Him to communicate with and act freely in that world. It could not just be the body of the man or the body of the woman. It had to be the bodies of both Adam and Eve together reflecting the image of God. Without form, God is limited in His ability to relate with the corporeal substantial world. Accordingly, if Adam and Eve had become one while attending God and if, after becoming perfect, they had married and given birth to children, they would have become the external, horizontal, substantial True Parents, while God would have become the internal, vertical, substantial True Parent. If this had happened, Adam and Eve would have stood in God's position and resembled God one hundred percent, both internally and externally. And if Adam and Eve, resembling God completely, had become the True Parents of humanity, all humanity would have come to recognize them as God's substantial form. Second, God created human beings as separate entities, man and woman, for the perfection of love. When Adam and Eve became the perfected substantial forms of love and achieved complete oneness, God intended to dwell within them and become the Parent of true love for all humankind. Adam and Eve, who thus would have stood in the position of God's external form, then would have been able to reproduce children and form an ideal family and an ideal world. Once this happened, the spirit world and the earthly realm would have been connected through humankind. (516-066, 2006.02.03)

14 God has no external form; He is invisible. Even in the spirit world, God cannot be seen. Nonetheless, God needs a body. God created all things because He needs an object partner. Through it, He can assume a physical form. Perfected Adam and Eve

were to have become God's body. So originally, when they went to the spirit world, Adam and Eve were to have become the king and queen of the family, tribe, people, nation and world, and of the cosmos. Thus in the spirit world they would have represented God. (242-167, 1993.01.01)

15 God's vision of the ideal of creation included the kingdom of heaven in the spirit world, but He created all things because He wished for a concrete kingdom of heaven in the physical world where He personally could reside. In other words, God created the world and everything in it to experience the glory of both the spiritual and the physical kingdom of heaven, with Himself and Adam and Eve as the center. He did not plan on establishing the kingdom of heaven in heaven and on earth just for Himself; He created them for humankind as well. God's purpose for creating heaven and earth was so that human beings could live in the kingdom of heaven on earth and afterward in the eternal world of the kingdom of heaven in heaven, centering on Adam and Eve. (1-282, 1956.12.16)

16 What kind of people can live in the kingdom of heaven on earth? What kind of spirits can live in the infinite spirit world, the kingdom of heaven in heaven? People that have received the love of Jesus and the Holy Spirit on earth and, going beyond that, received the love of the Father directly, lived together with Him and become the victors of harmony based on the ideal of love—only they can live in that kingdom. (1-284, 1956.12.16)

The kingdom of heaven is to be established first on the earth

17 According to God's Principle of Creation, the kingdom of heaven must be perfected first in this earthly world. Originally God created us such that, after living in the kingdom of heaven on earth while in the flesh, we naturally would discard our physical body, move to the kingdom of heaven in the spirit world, and live eternally. Then what should the kingdom of heaven, which we need to construct on earth, look like? The original family and the kingdom of heaven have the same structure. Basically, in a family there are the original parents, the original husband and wife, the original children, and the original brothers and sisters. When this family becomes one centered on true love, harmony and unity come about automatically. On that foundation, with true love, true life and true lineage woven together, they can take on an even higher purpose. (474-175, 2004.10.30)

18 If human beings had not fallen, they would have become the perfected true children of God, with God as their Parent and His true love at the center of their lives. Perfected human beings were to form the bond of true husband and wife surrounded by God's love, give birth to and raise true children. Together they were to establish the kingdom of heaven on earth and live together there, and then with their entire family they would one day live in the kingdom of heaven in heaven. If your father went to hell and your mother went to heaven, how could she feel it was

the kingdom of heaven? If the parents went to hell and only the children entered heaven, how could anyone call that the kingdom of heaven? The kingdom of heaven is a place where the family enters together and lives in an eternal realm of peace. Accordingly, God can settle His ideal of creation only where heaven has been made real in a family on earth. This is where God longs to dwell. (443-174, 2004.03.23)

19 You must realize that you absolutely need your grandfather and grandmother, father and mother, husband or wife, and children. Those four stages encompass all of humanity. Then you have to love your nation more than you love your family, and love the world more than your nation. To live in the spirit world, which brings together the past, present and future, you need to practice such love. The kingdom of heaven on earth is established here on earth, and the kingdom of heaven on earth creates the kingdom of heaven in heaven automatically. It is the place where people who have practiced the four stages of love can go. (277-192, 1996.04.15)

20 If the first ancestors had not fallen or sinned, but instead had conformed to the Will of God, God could have rejoiced when they died. Would they have had any regrets? If you have lived without bitter anguish, if you have been able to rejoice and offer praise before God, and if God Himself is happy with you, then upon your death you will be in the kingdom of heaven He created. That is the kingdom of heaven of God's original intention. People with deep bitterness are not meant to go to that kingdom of heaven. You cannot enter the kingdom of heaven while in torment. (41-228, 1971.02.16)

21 The kingdom of heaven that God desires is not established only in the spirit world. The kingdom of heaven God desires is established first on earth, and then in the spirit world. The spirit world is populated by the spirits of people who have passed on. That world and this earthly world cannot remain separated. To possess a victorious substantial self and to embody heaven's ideology, you need to uphold both heavenly ethics and human ethics. You need to live the ideology of the kingdom of heaven in your daily life. Then you will be in accord with both heavenly and human ethics. That should be the ideology of the kingdom of heaven for individuals and, at the same time, for the family, society, nation, world and cosmos. Your very being should manifest the ideology of the kingdom of heaven. (2-226, 1957.06.02)

22 As the incorporeal subject partner, God longed for an object partner who could provide the universal stimulation of love in history, for which He had yearned since the beginning of time. How great that stimulation will be when He encounters men and women who have become perfect object partners, both corporeal and incorporeal! God created Adam and Eve on earth because the kingdom of heaven is to be established first on earth. After they live an ideal life on earth, their spirits are to dwell in the eternal kingdom of heaven in heaven. (135-011, 1985.08.20)

23 At your home, please take care of nature so as to make a good environment. A person who has given his or her best for this will have a proportional right of ownership in the next world, the kingdom of heaven, which is hundreds of times bigger than this one. You attain this stature on earth. Do you want to be well off there? Or would you rather find yourself in a room in the spirit world just big enough for you to touch foreheads and look at each other's faces? You should live in such a way that you will be able to fly, dance, sing, and go wherever you please, seeking out hundreds and thousands of places. What is the most desolate place in the world? If you go to such a place and find that the soil is barren, you should want to make that place green by yourself, even if it means you have to invest precious resources from your own country. You should at least set a model standard, as does Manmul Peak on Mount Geumgang. The time has now come to make many things. Even after having done so, establishing a beautiful kingdom of heaven remains for us to fulfill in our lives. We need to become the owners, creating an environment where we can live in joy. (481-185, 2005.01.04)

CHAPTER 2 The Nature of the Spirit World

Section 1. Understanding the Reality of the Spirit World

1 It is important for you to understand the spirit world. What happens when you learn about what your ancestors from thousands of years ago are doing in the spirit world? By understanding clearly that you will inevitably face the same fate, you can transcend difficult problems on this earth. Because I know all this, I do not despair no matter what persecution I receive. Because I know much more than this, because I know where the highest value lies, I can ignore and overcome all difficulties. (320-245, 2000.04.16)

World of the light of love

2 The spirit world is the original garden of God's eternal ideal. How wonderful is the original garden? It is beyond description. Even if you were to gaze at just one of the secrets in the palace of the heavenly kingdom you would not tire of the sight even after ten thousand years. Your lifetime on earth is a mere instant. The spirit world, on the other hand, is eternal. Compared to your life in the spirit world, your life on earth is shorter than a breath. (69-341, 1974.01.03)

3 The spirit world exists for this world. And this world exists for the eternal world. It is wrong to say that the spirit world does not exist. I am doing this providential work because the spirit world does exist. You may say, "Where in this world is God, and where is the spirit world? I don't know" But the spirit world is the place where you find God. What does God exist as? God is true love. His hopes can only be realized through love. (117-307, 1982.04.11)

4 In the spirit world there are no shadows. It overflows with the sunlight of eternal morning. The white light is so bright that it changes to purple and takes on silver and golden hues. The light produced by electricity is similar to the light of love. An electric light illuminates when a positive charge interacts with a negative charge. In the same way, God's internal nature and external form come together and manifest as something similar to lightning. It is the light of eternal true love. That is the essence of eternal life. You need to arrive at that final destination. (292-266, 1998.04.26)

5 The spirit world is an eternal place that seeks eternal elements. A spirit person who has experienced love on earth will unfailingly and automatically be drawn into that world. That person gravitates to the part of the spirit world that has as much love as he felt here on earth. Then what kind of place is the spirit world? It is a world of harmony brimming with love, where everything is imbued with love. It is not wrong to assert that this entire universe is put in motion by a single press of the button of love. Accordingly, the place where all light bulbs of love light up is the kingdom of heaven on earth. And the kingdom of heaven in the spirit world is where love light bulbs can fully light up with greater intensity. That is why, when you harbor love in your heart and pull on the rope of love, everything will be pulled toward you. (112-017, 1981.03.15)

6 The spirit world is a world of intuition where within a week you can surpass the knowledge of any scholar, however distinguished or great. By seeing things through the light of your heart, you will automatically understand the world and all its related interconnections. This is because from the viewpoint of the heart they are in a certain relationship with you as your subject partner or counterpart. (210-312, 1990.12.27)

7 Once we dwell in the spirit world, through the power of true love we can meet people, however distant, in the twinkling of an eye. And no matter how far away people are, if they are visiting for love, they can travel back to their hometown in an instant. The spirit world is a limitlessly expansive world, but it is also a world in which we are able to go back and forth instantaneously over infinite distances on account of love. Love travels at the highest speed. But if you do not have the foundation of unified love in your mind and body, you will have nothing to do with that world. Accordingly, the origin of unification is not something that just happens in the external world; it is something that you initiate. (216-192, 1991.03.31)

8 In the spirit world you will fly. You will fly around so fast you will not even be seen. Since true love has the highest speed, God, who possesses true love, can leap across the vast universe in one bound and work in different places at once. You will all be able to do the same. In the spirit world, the entire universe, no matter how vast, will be the stage for your activities. There are many dream mines in the spirit world, with an endless supply of gold, silver and precious stones. And when it

comes to flowers, when someone they like or someone they love approaches, even if the flowers have been sleeping, they will open their eyes and mouths wide and welcome that person. (213-277, 1991.01.21)

The hierarchy in the spirit world

9 When you consider the spirit world, what kind of structure does it have? It has the same structure as that of God and His object partner, humankind. The spirit world was created in the form of an object partner to God, similar to a human being. This is why all people, created with the same external form as God, become one person resembling Him. Up to this point, God has continued to create human beings, people of character representing the universe. They include the yellow, white and black people. But they are all in a sense one person. Each of you is like a cell that makes up a part of God. This design of God's is similar to the cells composing our body. To God, we are people who exist as the individual cells of His body. He is our Father, and we are like His flesh. This is why God wants to make people. The structure of the spirit world is also like this. (072-190, 1974.06.16)

10 When you go to the spirit world, you will notice that it resembles a person. As such, it can become one with God, its subject partner. Then the boundary between the entire spirit world and the entire physical world becomes fuzzy. When God jumps, the earth will jump and when God laughs, so will the earth. That is how it is. Once you go to the spirit world, you will see that it is structured like a person. (91-280, 1977.02.27)

11 What is the structure of the spirit world? Because the spirit world evolved not through True Parents, but through false parents after the Fall, it is not as it should be. Only a spirit world untouched by the Fall should exist. The spirit world will return to its original state only when God's providential Will for salvation is fulfilled. The coming Lord of the Second Advent must reorganize it after completing the Will on earth. The spirit world needs to be restored. (293-090, 1998.05.24)

12 Paradise, the middle realms and all the religious realms exist in the spirit world. Hell is connected to those realms of the spirit world. In the spirit world that is connected to hell, married life is not permitted. All such things are forbidden, although spirits may hide in corners of hell and perpetrate fallen acts. Even those who belong to the realm of paradise live by themselves. (314-144, 2000.01.02)

13 The spirit world should be a world that is aligned with the vertical "noontime," without shadows, bathed in bright sunlight. Instead it is a mixture of good and bad. It consists of the highest spirit world, the first spirit world, the second spirit world and the third spirit world. Moreover, different animals live in each of these divisions. In the highest spirit world animals praise their masters. They are all friends. (565-239, 2007.06.12)

14 You cannot enter the kingdom of heaven by yourself. Our original ancestors should first have grown to maturity, established the true ideal of God-centered love, lived as such people on earth, become parents, left behind the seeds of true love and then entered the kingdom of heaven. To this day, however, there have been no God-centered parents who were able to leave the seeds of love on this earth. Because the foundation to leave such descendants could not be established, the kingdom of heaven remains empty to this day. (140-046, 1986.02.01)

15 What is the structure of the spirit world where God dwells, of the kingdom of heaven where He resides? Its organizational structure is very simple. The people who can go to the kingdom of heaven and paradise are not those who lived only for themselves. Such people are not permitted to go there. The kingdom of heaven is a place where only those who were born for the whole and lived for the whole can go. (77-189, 1975.04.06)

The kingdoms of heaven and hell in the spirit world

16 Through the Fall of Adam and Eve, this planet Earth came to be under the rule of Satan and hell was created in the spirit world. Therefore, the territory in which Satan can rule extends to the realm of hell on earth and the realm of hell in the spirit world. This is why they need to be liberated. If there had been no Fall, hell on earth and hell in the spirit world would never have existed and only the ideal kingdom of heaven would have been established on earth and in the spirit world as a single, continuous reality. However, because of the Fall, two worlds that could be ruled by Satan came into being. Satan's dominion over these worlds therefore needs to be nullified. (168-303, 1987.10.01)

17 If the body and mind are not united, that realm of disunity becomes Satan's territory. Neither hell nor heaven exists separately from you. They are both within you. Only when, centered on love, you can work to discipline your body, transcend your own life and love and serve others beyond your individual lineage, can you bring a complete end to this evil, profane world. Through such heavenly teachings, when God's ethics are established in the family, the tribe, the people, the nation and the world, this will become the kingdom of heaven on earth. The people who live in the kingdom of heaven on earth will transition, just as they are, to the kingdom of heaven in the spirit world. (196-328, 1990.01.12)

18 The original palace of true love is the reproductive organs. True love is absolute. Because true love is unique and unchanging, it is absolute. That is why, when we study past generations, we can see that when love is in disorder it leads to the breakdown of the family, the society and the nation. In the case of Sodom and Gomorrah, the family, the society and the nation broke down because the order of love was destroyed. The result is nothing but destruction. It is hell. Consequently, heaven and hell do not exist separately. That is why, even if you live in a hellish

environment, it does not mean you will go to hell. Whether you go to heaven or hell depends on you. The basis for the corruption of true love is you and only you. The only place where true life and true lineage can be violated is the reproductive organs. By no means should they be defiled. (224-130, 1991.11.24)

19 What kind of place is the kingdom of heaven on earth? If there is a place on earth where people do their best not to become indebted but instead try hard to help each other rid themselves of debt, that place is the kingdom of heaven on earth. Then what kind of place is the kingdom of heaven in the spirit world? The kingdom of heaven is not a place for people with debts. The kingdom of heaven I know does not have people like that. Those who, during their life on earth, worked to get rid of their nation's debts, humanity's debts and all debts in front of God are the ones who can go to the kingdom of heaven. On the other hand, those who become indebted to their nation, to others and to God end up not in heaven but in hell. The position of a person who has striven to get rid of debts is always a victorious one. Such a person was victorious in the past, is victorious today and will be victorious in the future. The kingdom of heaven is a place you can go with the authority of having triumphed in getting rid of debts. (085-133, 1976.03.02)

20 If you are fifty years old, and you have lived more than twenty-five of those years for the sake of the universe in accordance with heavenly principle and heavenly law, then you will go to the kingdom of heaven. If you have lived in such a manner you can traverse the boundaries to dwell in the good spirit world. But if you have lived your life of fifty years putting yourself first more often than not, you should realize, even though it may be disappointing, you will go not to the original homeland of goodness but to the homeland of evil, that is, hell. If you have lived for yourself more often than not in the past, you should end that life and disavow it, endeavoring to make the rest of your life one in which you live for the nation, the world, heaven, earth and God. If you do this, from this point on you will go toward the ideal world of heaven. (78-119, 1975.05.06)

21 It is written in the Bible that "the kingdom of God is within you." (Luke 17:21) This means the kingdom of heaven is the place that is in oneness with God's love, and that love should be in your heart. The words, "You are in me and I am in you," are also not an abstraction. (John 17:21) These words are possible when they are rooted in love. Fallen human beings are finding their way toward that day in which God's love can be manifested through their body and mind. The explosive love of God will shine forth. And the body, which has been twisted out of shape over thousands of years, will be able to become one with God. That day is a day of fear and revolution in Satan's world and a day of ecstasy and victory in Heaven's world. When you stand in that position, you will know God's love. It will be so wonderful that your cells will tingle. You will feel all your bones and flesh harmonize and bond together. You will feel as though all your five senses have become one. (94-268, 1977.10.01)

22 Blessed families should all be able to become sacrificial offerings for the nation. This is the starting point to determine whether you will go to heaven or hell. Going to heaven or hell is not determined by how well you know the Bible or how well you can speak. What matters are your actual results for God and your heart. In the end, the boundary between heaven and hell is a boundary of heart and a boundary of actual results. (32-231, 1970.07.19)

23 You should liberate your conscience. Your mind is the checkpoint of heaven and your body is the checkpoint of hell. Does your body drag your mind around or does your mind have true dominion over your body? For those who follow religion, their minds give clear direction to their bodies and for those who do not follow religion—in ten cases out of ten—their bodies drag their minds around. The latter live consumed by themselves. That is the difference. Each of you is the starting point of hell, therefore, and also the starting point of heaven. If you live according to your mind you will go to heaven and if you live according to your body you will go to hell. If you live for the sake of others you will go to heaven and if you insist on living for your own sake you will go to hell. (252-257, 1994.01.01)

24 There is no marriage in the spirit world. Think for a moment about how serious a problem that is. By comparison, missing an arm or a leg is really not a problem. That being the case, should you complain or not? You cannot complain. You should rejoice. Even while shedding tears, you should go forward, rejoicing and happy. You yourself determine whether you go to heaven or hell. That decision does not lie with me and it does not lie with God; you are the one who decides that. When you habitually complain, you end up in hell; yet when you go forward with gratitude for situations you could easily be complaining about, you end up in heaven. (96-122, 1978.01.02)

25 What about the spirit world? Since confused people go to the spirit world and gather there, that realm is certainly chaotic. People who develop the habit of stealing will always end up stealing something. Thus people who stole on earth will naturally want to get something for nothing in the spirit world. Because it was difficult to handle such people in the spirit world, hell originated. God did not make hell; it came into being through people. Do people first prepare a trashcan, and then start building their house? It is only after building and living in the house that one comes to need the trashcan. The existence of hell is similar to that. (148-028, 1986.10.04)

26 To commit suicide is the worst of sins. Because suicide is an atrocity that actually destroys parts of the universe, such a person should go to the lowest level of hell. Once you know this fact, you cannot commit suicide. You are the being who connects your parents' lives. In other words, you are the union of the two lives of your father and mother. They are connected together in you. And you are also a

participant in your parents' love. You are one in body with your parents' love. You are one in love. (107-036, 1980.01.20)

27 Hell is such a place that, once you are trapped there, you can never get out by yourself. You do not truly realize the fact that your mother, father and relatives are going to hell. You just say, "Things will work out somehow," and that is it. But try to realize that your beloved parents really are going to hell. Human affection is such that, if you found out that your parents were going to prison on earth, you would cry your heart out and try to liberate them by doing anything and everything. How much more, then, would the sons and daughters who are connected to their kin through heavenly love try to do if they learned that their parents, relatives and brothers and sisters were going to a prison from which they would never be able to escape? You do not know anything yet. You do not know whether there is a hell or not, and even if you have an idea that hell exists you do not know what kind of place it is. It is undoubtedly a vague idea for you. However, you will know when you die. You will know all at once when you die, but then it will be too late. (34-267, 1970.09.13)

28 When the Lord of the Second Advent arrives, he will create a new ideal realm in paradise, which is not heaven, and at the bottom of hell. Cain and Abel will be restored in the bottommost pit of hell and the new realm of God's family will be created. Through the realization of the new realm of God's tribe—the new realm of God's people, nation and world—everybody on earth has to be restored through indemnity. Cain and Abel need to be restored through indemnity. People have to absorb and digest everything and build a unified world, then organize the empty realms of the spirit world from the earthly world. Without a major upheaval in the spirit world there will be no way for God to release His sorrow and realize His cherished Will to build the heavenly kingdom. That is why Jesus said, "Whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven." (Matt. 18:18) The kingdom of heaven will not be established in the spirit world without first being established on earth. The astonishing reality is that without establishing the sovereignty of the heavenly nation on earth, the good sovereignty cannot be recovered in the spirit world. (143-030, 1986.03.15)

29 The path to the kingdom of heaven does not appear in the place where you are thinking only about yourself. When you realize that you are far away from Heaven, you need to smash that self to pieces. Only when you overthrow that self will a direct path to heaven, or even an indirect path, open up. However, those who promote themselves and try to make those in the object partner's position adapt to them, or who place themselves in a subject partner's position and try to push their way through the realm of the object partner's position, will be unable to relate to the kingdom of heaven. The realization of the kingdom of heaven begins with each person. Even if the kingdom of heaven were completely built, if you have not become someone who can respond when the kingdom of heaven calls, you will

have nothing to do with it The kingdom of heaven is a place where we have overcome Satan, not only overcome ourselves. The kingdom of heaven cannot exist in the social environment of the fallen world or in the place where we pursue our own fallen habits and customs. As Satan persistently controls our habits and environment, the kingdom of heaven can arrive only after we have overcome the circumstances wherein Satan has taken up residence. (46-075, 1971.07.25)

30 The kingdom of heaven is realized in the place that contradicts Satan's world. Otherwise it could not be the kingdom of heaven. Even if a place in Satan's world bore the name of heaven, it would be nothing but a deception to fool people. The concept of heaven can be established from the position of subjugating Satan, of denying and indeed eliminating everything to which he can relate. Heaven is affirmed on the basis of having denied and removed Satan's negative historical legacy and all the contents of a satanic lifestyle. While these are still in place, we cannot introduce the contents of heaven. (46-075, 1971.07.25)

31 What kind of people should you Unification Church members become? Ideally they should become people who know how to enter the internal world, how to go out into the external world, how to come in after going out and how to be able to travel north, south, east and west. We are trying to create people who can establish the internal world as the subject and then take dominion over the external world. The external world was invaded by evil, so if you go to that world you are present in hell. But if you go to the internal world, you are present in the good spirit world, that is, the kingdom of heaven. If you can freely travel to and from the internal and external worlds you will have the freedom to go to hell as well as heaven. Since I know this fact, I am asserting that we should try to become people who will be welcomed wherever we go. That is also what God wants. (116-178, 1982.01.01)

The spirit world and physical world are one and are perfected on earth

32 Knowledge of the spirit world and God includes knowing about the environment. That environment is actually similar to the environment of human life on earth. Even when you die and go to the spirit world, you may not know you have died. You may simply think you have come to a different place. For instance, if you had been living at the North Pole, in the middle of an ice field and then traveled to a tropical place, you would suddenly find that it is hot all year round; the trees are always green and their leaves and other things differ from what you have known. In the same way, when you die, you may feel just like that; you may not realize you have died. You may think like this because the two worlds are so closely interwoven. (338-273, 2000.11.30)

33 We all ultimately have to go to the spirit world. We call that place the world after death, but actually it is not just that. Why is it not just the world after death? Because it is a world connected to true love. Since it was begun based on true love,

when you stand in the position of true love, you are directly connected to the spirit world. That is why true love is so great. Then what is the spirit world? It is the place where, once you have filled in all the gaps between the heavenly world and the earthly world, you can experience a realm of life where the two worlds share the same values. From this place you can tour the world after death. (290-051, 1998.02.02)

34 If the substantial spirit world is the sun, then our relationship to it is like the moon, a reflector. Our individual selves are like mirrors. The truth is the spirit world is connected to the earth both internally and externally. Thus, the spirit world and the physical world are one. If you do not know this, you cannot pass the test in the next world. This is important. The Completed Testament Age is not about the individual; it is the age in which you need to realize the God-centered family. (310-034, 1999.05.28)

35 The Blessing in the Unification Church turns the spirit world and the physical world upside down. By overturning them, we bring about the turning point from which the unification of the spirit world and the physical world can take place. This is the age of transition through which the spirit world and the physical world are connected and transformed. When these two are turned upside down, Satan is exiled, all evil ways on earth are brought to an end and we cross over into the age in which God can have direct dominion over us. We therefore need to have a clear understanding of the nature of the spirit world. If you do not understand the spirit world, you cannot fulfill the foundation of the family. Only when you know about the spirit world can you bring everything into its fullest realization. (310-035, 1999.05.28)

36 The spirit world and the physical world are united through true love. Because of the Fall, there was no true love, and so the spirit world and the physical world could not be united. Because there was no true love, the minds and bodies of individuals became divided and religion and politics branched off. Everything should be united under true love. Only then can the individual, family, society, nation, world and cosmos all be interconnected. We need to bring this about with our own hands. Otherwise we cannot inherit the original kingdom of heaven in the spirit world and the kingdom of heaven on earth. (216-106, 1991.03.09)

37 In the spirit world, you cannot eat if you do not have God's love. You do not have the right to eat. Hell is a place where you cannot eat even though you can see the food and you cannot act even though you know what to do. Unless you have found the precious center where the spirit world and physical world are united based on God's love, and you have united your spirit and body to live your life in the kingdom of heaven on earth, you cannot possess the eternal ideal world and own the heavenly kingdom. (91-173, 1977.02.06)

38 The spirit world is the internal world and the physical world is the external world. The world of the mind is the internal world and the world of the body is the external world. That is where the boundary is. It is so deep it appears black. The distance between your mind and body is equal to the distance between God and this world. The providence of restoration has been carried out for six thousand years to unite the worlds of your body and mind. The more the body and mind are united, the more the boundary can be eliminated on earth and what has been sown on earth can be reaped. In this way, a cosmos in which the spirit world and the physical world are united centered on God is brought about. That is why the arena where God seeks us out and we seek God is not in the world; it is within us. Our body and mind are the base for that. (072-158, 1974.06.09)

39 It is a principle that a perfect minus automatically gives rise to a perfect plus and that a perfect plus automatically generates a perfect minus. This is a principle of the creation of the universe and a law of existence. If we live properly on earth according to this principle, then the spirit world becomes connected. The problem is that this is the first time in history that this has happened. Spiritual problems are only resolved when they are dealt with on earth. However, each time this happens, indemnity must be paid. You do not understand what this historical time is or how to deal with this global era, but I know and I have taken responsibility for the way of indemnity alone, in front of history and the universe and before the spirit world and the physical world. Because I know when indemnity is required, I also know clearly what happens in the spirit world and on earth when the indemnification process breaks down. (131-226, 1984.05.04)

40 One hundred years on earth is just a moment. The fallen people living in this world live their lives believing that this world is the best there is. They do not know anything. They are like an unborn baby in the womb. When you come to know God, you should live your life in such a way that when you go from the earthly world to the spirit world you will become a cell of love and one with the activity of love. (519-215, 2006.03.04)

41 Life on earth is for the sake of the perfection of the spirit world. The spirit world is the place where our spirit selves will eventually live. If our spirit self fails to accomplish a model standard in the flesh on earth, and if our spirit and flesh cannot experience love on earth, we will not be able to breathe when we go to that world. On this earth, our mother breastfeeds us and we receive love from her. We are loved by our parents and our siblings. It is similar in the spirit world. Our spirit selves are meant to go there and be embraced in the bosom of God, our original Parent, receive love from Him and live at the center of His love. To do so, we first need to be able to experience love through the five sensory organs of our physical body during our life on earth. We live our life on earth for the sake of our complete maturation and so that we can enjoy total fulfillment in the spirit world. (308-125, 1998.11.21)

42 The spirit world is our homeland. It is our original homeland. This earth is the original homeland of our bodies and the spirit world is the original homeland of our minds. The place we will go after this is the spirit world. That is why we need to train ourselves to be able to live there while we are still on earth. Only then will we encounter no difficulties when we go there to live. (207-072, 1990.11.01)

43 The earth, not the spirit world, is the place to achieve perfection. It is possible to reach perfection on the earth, with true love as the center. It is not possible in the spirit world. This is why you need to have children. They are the ones who will become the citizens of the kingdom of heaven. They will become the citizens of the ideal heavenly kingdom. So you need to have many sons and daughters. The original ideal necessitated twelve directions. Therefore, I want the ideal of twelve directions. (217-130, 1991.05.12)

44 Love is something you cannot forget. As the very root of life, love is always with you, even when you are working and whether you are asleep or awake. In living your life, you need to think about God and True Parents. By doing so, your mind and body can stand in a realm of peace, stability and satisfaction. A person who has led such a life will continue to do so even after going to the spirit world. On earth you expand your internal life. That expanded internal life comes to the surface when you go to the spirit world. Because love is internalized, it is as if we and God are cells of the same body. The spirit world is a world in which you yourself become one of those cells. When you attain such a level, God will definitely come into your mind. It is a world where you live together with God. (218-128, 1991.07.14)

Section 2. Life in the Spirit World

1 Just as God the Creator made all sorts of things based on His concept of true love, in the spirit world we too can create anything by exerting our original power based on love. Based on love, when you desire this or that, it will appear in its finished form. If you say, "Let such and such a tool appear!" it will be created at once. How wonderful is that? And when you have tens of thousands or millions of people present at a banquet hall and you wishfully think, "I will prepare such and such kinds of food," the meal will appear without a hitch. If you wish even for a suit of gold, one will appear instantly. (217-293, 1991.06.02)

2 Because the spirit world transcends time and space, you can travel billions of miles in a second. That vast world exists beyond time and space. You can look back a thousand or even tens of thousands of years. What would you wish to see? Whom would you wish to meet? If you are a man, you would want to meet your wife, and if you are a woman, you would wish to meet your husband. (209-017, 1990.11.24)

Life in which thoughts become reality

3 In the spirit world, when you think, "I want to do such and such a thing," it actually becomes a reality. That is why in the next world whenever you wish for something with an earnest heart of love, it is made possible. It is a place where if you desire to make ten million beautiful outfits and dress your loved ones in them all at once, you can actually do that. If you want to dress your beloved in clothes woven of gold thread, that clothing will appear just as you imagined it. It will appear right before your eyes. And when you think, "I want to wear the same thing!" you will already be wearing the same clothes. Then all spirits in the heavenly world will dance to the one-two-three, one-two-three rhythm of a waltz, and a banquet will be held in heaven. This spirit world of glory is where the people with the greatest love can go. It is an amazing world. All created things become our objects of harmony in that glorious place. (215-109, 1991.02.06)

4 Everything sustains its life through cyclical movement. That which no longer circulates returns to the earth. What kind of being is God? God is like the mind of the existing universe. Now, you know who God is, do you not? In fact, He is the mind of the universe. Can you see your mind? The spirit world is a world of life where the mind manifests as form. It is a place that transcends time and space. In the spirit world you can freely eat whatever you want. There is no need to worry about food or water. There is no need to worry about what to drink or what to wear. It transcends everything, be it food, clothing or shelter. Would you need a car there? Would there be car factories, food factories or clothing factories? There would be no such things. In the spirit world you can go back and forth covering billions of miles in an instant. You can do so with the power of love. If you wish to see someone you love, that person will appear immediately before you. (210-226, 1990.12.23)

5 How is life in the next world? You will not worry about what to eat. You will not worry about where to live. You will not worry about what to wear. This is because, according to your spiritual state, everything you wish for will become possible. We will eat in the next world too. We will also be able to feel the flow of our blood and the beat of our pulse. It is the same. Though we will have spirit bodies, they will work the same way. When I say I want to eat something, it will appear at once. Whatever you want to eat, when you say you want such and such a thing, it will appear right away. Where do these things come from? The spirit world is the world where we will be able to mobilize the original world, the world where we can work actively on our own initiative. It is thus not power, knowledge or money that gives us the authority to mobilize anything. It is love. (194-042, 1989.10.15)

6 In the spirit world, food, clothing and shelter are not a problem. You can do as you like with regard to them all. When you stand in the realm of oneness of love in the position of God's object partner, you can do the things that God does. You can do anything. You can transcend billions of years in an instant. Love moves at an extraordinary speed. When you visit the place where your loved one is, it will take

no time at all. You can come and go in a flash, so you can instantly meet your object partner of love. There are no obstacles in this absolute realm. It is a world that goes beyond limitations and transcends time and space. Such an infinite world has been prepared for humanity. (259-058, 1994.03.27)

7 What will you do in the spirit world? Will you try to earn money there? Will you need clothes and a house? Everything you want will be instantly provided. The spirit world is a place in which you can resolve everything at your own level. If you desire something and order it to appear, it will appear right away. However, if you ask for something just for yourself, it will not appear even if you cause a huge commotion and uproar. Conversely, if you speak from the position of the heavenly prince who loves God and loves the world and say, "I need it to attend the King," everything will appear instantly. The spirit world is a world in which anything imaginable is possible. (129-101, 1983.10.01)

8 Would Adam and Eve have paid for the food they ate in the Garden of Eden? It was all free. Because God, who created the environment and everything in it, bestowed infinite value upon human beings, when we go to the spirit world we are naturally provided with things of infinite value. The spirit world where God dwells is our original homeland. We do not pay for the food we eat there. We will be provided with everything, beyond our imagination. (263-079, 1994.08.21)

9 You have no idea how immense the spirit world is. It is an infinite world that transcends time and space. If you call out, "Whoever lived on earth with such and such a heart at such and such a time before coming here, show yourself!" that person will appear in the twinkling of an eye. It is a world in which intuitive feelings become real. If you say that you wish to host a banquet for a million people at once, it will not be a problem. Food and fruit will not pose a problem. They will appear instantaneously according to your wishes. There are no kitchens there. You do not need to worry about anything in that place. There are no food-processing plants or car factories. There are all kinds of flowers. You can create your own house in any way you like, corresponding to the level of your heart of love. (224-106, 1991.11.23)

10 Nothing can stop our activity in the spirit world. Everything is connected. That world transcends time and space, so people who lived eons ago can be with you. Everyone can appear young; they can appear any age they like. You can meet anyone freely as you wish, so explanations and excuses will not be necessary. You will know everything at a glance. You will know right away whether someone is ranked below, beside or above you in love. When you meet men who were grandfathers in past ages, you will know their rank of love right away. Those rankings are absolute. Highly ranked people naturally stand in a place that matches their rank; they do not act carelessly. It is different from the physical world. (194-133, 1989.10.17)

Your earthly life determines your place in the spirit world

11 When you go to the spirit world you will find that your life has been recorded one hundred percent in a spirit world “computer.” Everything that has been recorded will be revealed. The conscience is like a computer’s hard drive, the contents of which will be exhibited in the eternal world. Everything is contained in it. With the click of a button, all the recorded details of your life, starting from when you were a baby being held and breastfed by your mother, will be known through the images of your mind. Every day, that computer is recording your life in order to carry out a complete appraisal of your being. The day this appraisal happens is the day you die. No one can tell a lie in the presence of that all-powerful computer that appraises people. The images in the spirit world appear as a world of shadows. Everything is recorded. (246-189, 1993.04.16)

12 You cannot deceive your conscience. It records everything about you as if on a videotape. The detailed record of your life is assigned a number and stored in the spirit world. Someone will receive you and guide you when you go to the spirit world according to the brightness of your spirit. After you are ushered in, your number will be pressed and everything will be shown right away. Everything from the time of your birth to that moment will be revealed in an instant. It cannot be helped. Your conscience will weep bitterly. The ratio of your good versus evil thoughts, words and deeds will determine whether you end up on this or that side of the boundary between heaven and hell. The spirit world does not move at random. It is a mathematical world. It moves according to logic. God is the King of scientists. Heaven is not operating arbitrarily. (284-024, 1997.04.15)

13 Whether human beings like it or not, as fallen descendants of Adam and Eve we each have to surmount the steep pass of indemnity even at the risk of death. No one can avoid this. You must traverse this path. If you go to the spirit world without going through this in your lifetime, there is no way to know how many millions of years it will take you in the spirit world. There is no indemnity in the spirit world. Since it is a liberated realm of perfection, it is filled with the waves of love. There is no indemnity or re-creation. There is no reproduction either. Since there are no such opportunities, once you are fixed in a position, that is the end of it. Knowing these things, God sent the Messiah to the earth. There still remains the path of indemnity through the eight stages of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world, cosmos and God. You cannot, however, go through that path all at once. That is why God has led history through the era of indemnity on the individual level, the era of indemnity on the family level, and then, passing through the four-thousand-year history of Israel, all the way to the era of indemnity on the world level of the Christian cultural realm. (229-245, 1992.04.12)

14 In the spirit world love comes first. Our foremost wish is to go before God, the subject of love. Since I know this, even though I have had to go all my life bearing

the cross and shedding blood and sweat, I never worry. I know very well where I will end up. My only concern is that the spirit world is such that once you go you can never come back here. Once you have gone there, you cannot return. In that world, if you come to know things about cleaning your spirit and then try to resolve your issues, it will take billions of years. In that place there is no way to clean up such things. In this physical world, however, there are many difficulties and ups and downs, aren't there? Even in one day you encounter a variety of troubles, and the more troubles you meet, the more skin you can shed, like a snake. On the other hand, in the next world, the spirit world, though there is the stimulus of love, there is no indemnity that can rid you of your sins, so it takes countless eons to do that. (243-179, 1993.01.03)

15 Losing God is like losing the great supervisor of the entire universe and like losing our own father. That Father is not the one we call father only during the short period of a hundred years or so that we live in the flesh. He is the Father we will call Father eternally and endlessly. For all eternity, when He rejoices, we should rejoice with Him, and when He grieves, we should grieve with Him. This is determined on the earth. That is why the people who have lived their lives on earth in a place where God can rejoice and have upheld and followed the way of principle, the way of faith, can go to the kingdom of heaven, and the people who have lived in a place where God grieves go to hell. We, however, are living in a place where God grieves. These circumstances were brought about through the Fall. (9-136, 1960.05.01)

16 People do not give birth to babies in the spirit world. It is a vertical world. It is a spherical world with God at the center. There is no need to give birth to babies there. Because God needed a horizontal foundation, He created physical human beings. The physical world is a field of reproduction. All citizens of the spirit world will come from this planet. Then why are people on earth practicing birth control at present? This is in accordance with Heaven's decree that the wrong lineage not be multiplied further. What about the blessed families of the Unification Church? For you, the question of how many citizens of heaven you can multiply will determine your wealth. Your own children are more valuable than spiritual children. Spiritual children are not related to your Blessing. Your position in heaven will be determined by how many children you leave behind. (205-099, 1990.07.07)

17 When your heart stops, it is said you have died. The heart of a spirit self, however, never stops. The root of that heart is God. Because we have received the root of God, as a person resembling God we harvest the fruit of the heart when we enter the spirit world. Then what will it be like when you go to the spirit world? The spirit world is the same as the physical world. Your spirit self is a better and more divine version of yourself. Its senses are more multidimensional than your five sensory organs. On earth, we can feel the pulse of life through the horizontal or vertical elements or through the relationships of up and down and front and back,

but in the spirit world that pulse of life will be cosmic. It will be that much greater. (306-261, 1998.10.01)

18 What is the center of all value of life in the spirit world? Among those living in the spirit world, each individual belongs to a certain society. Just like on earth, the spirit world also has families, tribes and nations and is connected to the world. The spirit world is the place where everyone now living on earth, whether they like it or not, will one day reside. From uncivilized to civilized, all sorts of people who came and went throughout history congregate there. However, people who lived on earth cannot suddenly change their nature in the spirit world. There is a saying, "What is learned in the cradle is carried to the grave." It is difficult to correct your personality problems. So would the spirits in the other world be noticeably different from people today? Would they suddenly change? That is not possible. You are harvested in exactly the same form in which you lived here on earth. All the spirits in the spirit world are, after all, just the spirit selves of those who lived on earth. In this regard, the spirit world is not very different from the world people live in today. (141-268, 1986.03.02)

The life where husband and wife live as one in flesh and spirit

19 If a couple is truly one in heart, when they go to the spirit world, the man can become the woman and the woman can become the man at any time. If you look into a woman, there is something of a man inside, and when you look into a man, there is something of a woman inside. It is very much the same as God's dual characteristics. Since internal character and external form became divided, in order to return to the original being, they must ascend the ladder of love. As the standard of creation originated from love, one must ascend this ladder to return. In the end, our final destination is to be with God. (205-099, 1990.07.07)

20 Mothers and fathers also go to the world of death. I myself must go there too. For a being created through the organ of love, violating that organ leads straight to death. There is no way to forgive that. We should firmly implant this principle in ourselves. Based on that love, God harmonizes with human beings, and human beings become one with Him through love. In other words, they become God-like. When the divided dual characteristics of God are completely united as one through love, you will see when you go to the spirit world that two people are joined as one. At first glance, you will see that someone is certainly a man—but inside resides a woman in harmony with him. Everything is united when seen through the eyes of love. Even those who are superficially ugly look beautiful, and of course those who are beautiful also look beautiful. (205-342, 1990.10.02)

21 When you go to the heavenly kingdom you must go through a wedding ceremony. Dressed in ceremonial garments, you enter, stand before God and greet Him with love. Husband and wife have a love relationship in front of God. When

they make love, God Himself rejoices. At the same time He envelops them from the vertical position. Not only the feelings of the horizontal couple but those of the entire universe flow and intoxicate them. They thus enter an unimaginable world that is like a kaleidoscope. When they love, something amazing happens: two invisible streams of energy come together and unite completely as one and are assimilated in the world of light. This way of life is brought about with true love. (306-218, 1998.09.23)

22 When you go to the spirit world, you will see that there is not only the Heavenly Father but the Heavenly Mother. Can a living being come to exist without both a mother and father? Just like that mother and father, behind Adam and Eve you can find God, who has been divided and then united as one. That is why the way to heaven comes through the mother as well as the father. If this ideal had come to pass, who would have been the central figure in the spirit world, the kingdom of heaven in heaven? When your mother and father, who lived here in substantial form, went to the next world, they would have become the king and queen of the eternal kingdom of heaven. (90-196, 1977.01.01)

The coexistence of good and evil spirits

23 The spirit world can be divided into two: the good spirit world and the evil spirit world. Spirit world really exists, even though people living on earth do not know it. Even in the spirit world, good and evil spirits are fighting each other. There are battles even in the spirit world. Evil spirits are connected to Satan, and people living on earth today are living in the realm of their rule. Why is that? Regardless of whether they were good or evil, all our ancestors passed away to the spirit world. Good spirits stand on the good side only because they have set the condition while living on the earth of having separated themselves from the fallen world. But from God's point of view, they cannot stand in the position of perfect goodness. On the way toward God's original ideal world—an ideal realm of goodness to which original humankind can go—good spirits are trying to advance and evil spirits are blocking the way. The evil spirit world and evil earthly world are connected at all times. They are in constant communication. Good spirits are those who on earth were confronted by the evil world and who faced opposition in their lives but surmounted it before passing on. They are the spirits who passed away as religious believers. (134-009, 1985.01.01)

24 Since all kinds of people are gathered together in the spirit world, including those who killed and those who were killed, sometimes such things as knife fights and vendettas break out there. This is why there are so many divisions and barriers blocking the way to the ideal. Evil spirits sometimes go to their enemies' descendants on earth and cause them to have fatal accidents. All such resentment must be resolved. In order for this to happen, they must first be resolved on earth. To do so, you need to provide a better option. Unless you give such spirits a better

way than that which brought about the enmity— something nobler than killing in retaliation—they cannot be appeased. (191-205, 1989.06.24)

25 The spirit world is the storehouse where our numerous ancestors from throughout history reside. It is where the countless people on earth today and the myriads to come in the future will all go and live. In the spirit world there are good and evil realms. If everyone died and went into oblivion, then that would be the end of the story. However, if the spirit world gathers all of humankind with at least some ability to relate with God, then the spirit world is inevitably divided into two parts: that of goodness and that of evil. The question arises as to what the evil part is and what the good part is. God would wish for the good and evil to harmonize in both the spirit world and the human world. Therefore He will pursue the way for both sides to reach the fulfillment of their purposes, and at the same time fulfill the purpose of the whole. (126-083, 1983.04.12)

26 If the fruit of love had been harvested and stored in God's warehouse, heaven would have been secured. We would have become the family, nation and citizens of heaven. But instead this fruit went bad midway and fell to the ground. Thus we became the family and citizens of hell. This tragedy is called the Fall. In other words, we fell. We have to acknowledge the fact that the place we are living in is the hell we have fallen into; this cannot be logically denied. Even if we hate to do so, we need to acknowledge these two facts: that we are fallen and that we are living in hell. We were supposed to bear the fruit of love and go to the storehouse of the kingdom of heaven, but instead we are rotting in the warehouse of hell because of the Fall. (282-016, 1997.02.16)

Section 3. Angels and the Angelic World

1 We know that God created the angelic world as well as the human world. Then what kind of world is the angelic world? Only when people become like fragrant, beautiful flowers and bear fruit will the sweet home of love finally be completed. All life force starts from there and all living beings will be able to harmonize there. People are the origin of this harmony. If, centered on such people, the angels of the heavenly host had formed an internal realm of harmony where they, like butterflies and bees, could interact with human beings, then the world would have become a flower garden of harmony. There, God, people and angels all would have rejoiced. All created things would have been immersed in love and a spring feast of love would have begun. (31-124, 1970.05.03)

2 Adam and Eve, the archangel and God were in the Garden of Eden. The archangel was supposed to take responsibility for and nurture Adam and Eve until they received the Blessing. That was his mission, but he fell. This means his thoughts became consumed with himself. God's creation, however, is built on His ideal; it has nothing to do with the archangel. Because all things were created in accordance

with God's Will, they were created based on God's own thoughts. The values, contents and purpose of all things lie in bringing joy to God. Their purpose was not to bring joy to the archangel; the center of their purpose was God. However, God alone could not complete His purpose. God wished to perfect the purpose of creation revolving around Adam and Eve. In His own heart, therefore, God could not help but incline toward Adam and Eve rather than the archangel. Look at a baby. If it sees its mother embracing any other child, it wants to push that child away. This is the case even for an infant who knows hardly anything at all. Similarly it stands to reason that the archangel felt a similar jealousy. In summary, Adam and Eve must become perfected and complete God's purpose, the purpose that will bring Him joy. This has nothing to do with the archangel. The sole mission of the archangel was to protect and raise Adam and Eve, to help them receive the Blessing and form a family. (250-061, 1993.10.12)

3 In Eden, the archangel fell and became Satan, so it came to be that there no longer was an archangel in Heaven. Therefore, Heaven has endeavored to find and establish a being that can take the place of the archangel and be equal to his mission. This being must be stronger than anything in Satan's world, which extends from the spirit world to the physical world. First, a person representing the archangel must be found. This replacement for the archangel should not be a person who is less capable of fulfilling the archangel's mission than the being that became Satan. A being similar to the central archangel must be put in place, someone who can defeat and subjugate the fallen Satan and pledge greater loyalty before Heaven. This global representative of the archangel—that is, the central representative who can overthrow Satan- must be established on the foundation of a certain connection with Heaven. This is not something that can emerge all at once. This authoritative power must be gained through a path of much suffering that separates that power from the evil environment and all evil influences. Going beyond the realm of the individual to the family, tribe, people and nation, Heaven has no choice but to carry out the providence of attaining the victorious realm of the archangel on the foundation of at least one nation. (50-192, 1971.11.07)

4 The archangel seduced Eve. To fulfill the historical providential mission in the archangelic realm, it is therefore not enough for only the archangel's representative to be perfected. Because the archangel took Eve away and made her fall, that is, because he dragged her to the evil archangelic realm, the good archangelic realm must prepare to return Eve. Since Satan took Eve away and usurped the position of the first human ancestors, a person in the position of the archangel on Heaven's side must fulfill the mission of negating this process and prepare a bride. In place of Eve, who betrayed the Will of Heaven, a bride who can inherit Heaven's Will must be prepared. When this bride is prepared and when the bridegroom also appears, everything within the archangelic realm must be returned together with the bride. By seducing Eve, Satan took everything away from Adam and God, so the

archangelic realm on Heaven's side is in a position where it must return all that.
(50-194, 1971.11.07)

5 Originally Adam and Eve should have ruled over the angels with God as their center, but this was reversed and the angel came to control Adam and Eve. This is why indemnity is carried out through the second son, who represents the side of Adam or God, by having him win over Cain, who represents the side of the archangel or Satan. Because Abel stood in such a position, God accepted his sacrifice gladly. Knowing that Abel had returned joy to God, Cain should not have felt sorry that God did not accept his sacrifice. He should have loved Abel and approached the presence of God through Abel. If he had done so, the foothold for the providence of salvation would have been established right then and there. Cain, however, felt overwhelming resentment at Abel's receiving love from God, and beat his brother to death. In the end, just as the archangel dominated Adam, so Cain, who stood in the position of the archangel on Satan's side, struck and killed Abel, who stood in the position of Adam on Heaven's side. Here we can see the fruits of both spiritual and physical sin manifested. (53-202, 1972.02.21)

6 The innumerable Christian spirits, that is, the countless spirits connected with Jesus, should be in a position to fulfill the mission of the archangel before the coming Lord. What is this mission? It is to pave the way for Jesus to confront Satan spiritually and bring him to submission. Just as John the Baptist blessed Jesus in the Jordan River and thereby bequeathed everything to him, so the spirit world needs to bless the coming Lord. Otherwise we will not see the beginning of the providence on earth. This is why the path that Christians have tended to follow has been to abandon the physical world and concern themselves only with spiritual matters. To Christians, the physical world has not so much importance. (50-205, 1971.11.07)

7 There have been many people of faith until now. They all say they are the ones who move this world. It is the same as when John the Baptist and Jesus proclaimed, "Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand." Then what do these words, "Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand," mean? What is different between the proclamation of John the Baptist and the proclamation of Jesus? One is external and one is internal. One is of the angel type and one is of the Adam type. Adam inevitably must appear with the assistance of the archangel. This is because when God created Adam, He did so with the assistance of the archangel. In addition, the archangel had the mission of protecting and raising Adam. The ones who are supposed to carry out this mission today are the Christians and the many people of faith who have become enlightened. Such people are spread out all over the world. Among them, there is one person who can carry out this global mission. Jesus lost his body because of the archangel. He died because of the archangel. That is why the person who can complete the mission of the archangel on the global level has no choice but to go over the summit through which the death of Jesus can be

indemnified. For such a person to be born, his family necessarily must go through a history of suffering. (46-204, 1971.08.15)

8 For thousands of years since the time of Jesus, various religions in charge of the mission of the spirit world have continued to engage in the battle to create the substantial archangel who can serve Adam as their representative. To create this substantial archangel—a person like John the Baptist—the world was mobilized, in particular Christian believers. It is said that in the Last Days the Holy Spirit will pour out on us like water. But this does not mean spirits will come to earth and alter people by pouring themselves into their bodies. Nor does it signify the appearance of an immature Adam, that is, a person like Adam before the Fall. The spirit world has been endeavoring to create a person like a restored John the Baptist. (46-204, 1971.08.15)

9 At the Second Advent, the Cain-type spirits in the angelic world have the mission to expel Satan from this world. After that, the Abel-type spirits in the spirit world have the mission to carry out a movement to integrate the religions of goodness on earth. Because evil fortune will gradually disappear on earth as time goes by and because the good spirits have the responsibility to root out all the minions of the one who fell from the position of the archangel, the power of Satan on earth will disintegrate and decrease at a faster and faster rate. (158-131, 1976.12.26)

10 If you wish to go to the kingdom of heaven, you must obtain a document of surrender from Satan. Without getting a document that proves you have loved even Satan, you cannot go to heaven. That is why the Unification Church works the way it does. Even though we could treat those who oppose us as enemies, we have to love them, which is an astonishing way of doing things. We have to love our enemies. We have to pray that they receive blessings. There is no other way. Unless Cain and Abel become one, there will be no restoration and we will not be able to return to our Parents. (48-317, 1971.09.26)

11 Even if the fallen archangel accuses God, because God is still God the archangel has no choice but to follow the laws He established. God is the Absolute Being. Therefore, although the archangel has fallen, God still has to govern all created things in accordance with the laws and rules He established. This means that however God intended to relate to the archangel before his fall, God has to continue to relate to him that way after his fall. That is why the archangel says to God, “You are supposed to love me until the perfection period and beyond.” (52-087, 1971.12.22)

12 Satan accuses God, grabs Him firmly and holds on, saying, “I know You are God, the eternal and immortal subject being and the great supervisor of the Creation of heaven and earth. You are the original being of truth, the original being of love and the original being of principle, so in accordance with Your laws and principles, You

cannot change. For this reason, even though I have fallen, do You not have to practice the principles You established? So as a being of principle, You have no way to bring Your sons and daughters to the original ideal world without loving the fallen angel. The plan You made for me, the archangel, before the Fall is that Your children cannot enter the heavenly kingdom unless they love me and You Yourself love me. Even though I have fallen, You still must follow that principle. Therefore You should love me. If You do not, You cannot be the true God.” (129-215, 1983.11.05)

13 Satan is the enemy who violated God’s love. He is a thief who entered the house while the parents were asleep, murdered the father and raped the mother. So who is Satan? He is the enemy of love who violated God’s beloved Eve, God’s partner in substantial form. We need to have a heart that is able to offer the daughter we love to an adulterer such as that and still bless him. You cannot love the enemy merely by forgiving him. Would Satan thank you just for that? We must have such a heart that we are able to bless our enemy even after giving him the person we love most. This is the last crucial condition we need to accomplish. (34-279, 1970.09.13)

Section 4. The Path to the Kingdom of Heaven

1 You represent the history of the resurrection of your ancestors. In a sense you are their bodies and you wear their faces. How long is this history? Some say it is hundreds of thousands of years. In the end, the purpose of the long, arduous course of history has been to give birth to one person, which is each of us. To create one such person from, say, the Kim family, countless ancestors came and went. Thus we are the fruits of human history. Do you think a fertile seed will come out of you? Do you think that your next generation will surely become a heavenly fruit? Do you think that a well-ripened Unification Church will come out of your heart? Would it be acceptable for this fruit of six thousand years to fall to the ground without ripening, and become a fallen fruit? Should you say, “Oh no, it looks as though I might fall from the branch. If the wind blows a bit more, I am going to fall. Father, please do not shake me; leave me be!”? There may be some people who are like that. On the other hand, there may be others who say, “Even if Father strikes me with an axe and shakes the branches as much as he pleases, unless the branches are torn off, this fruit will never fall down.” Which group do you belong to? (46-155, 1971.08.13)

The fruits of our earthly life

2 As human beings, we are caught between the good God and His opposite, the evil Satan. That is why when you live your life in pursuit of goodness, the God of goodness is with you, and when you stand on the opposite side, the evil Satan is with you. This is the fate of humanity at present. Therefore, what people need more than anything else is to live yearning for God and seeking for goodness,

leaving behind only goodness. By doing so, we can stand on the side of the God of goodness. Otherwise we will end up on the side of evil. Only when human beings absolutely believe in God, who exists centered on absolute goodness, and try to find the way by which we can become one with Him, can our life's journey begin from goodness, go through the process of goodness and bear the fruit of goodness. After we have lived our lives to the end and weighed every good deed against every evil deed, if there are more evil deeds than good deeds, we will end up under the dominion of evil. But if there remains even one more good deed than evil deed, we will end up under the dominion of goodness. (57-013, 1972.05.21)

3 If we were to take away one good deed for every evil deed in our lives, each of us would hope that, in the end, what would remain would be good deeds. But our life's journey is such that it is more likely that rather than good deeds, evil deeds would remain. What if we were to add up all the people living in the same era, and we eliminated one good deed for every evil deed for each individual? If we found that evil deeds remained rather than good deeds, then the conclusion we would reach is that the people living on earth during that period were on balance not good people but evil ones, and furthermore that this society was not a good society but an evil one. (57-012, 1972.05.21)

4 Good and evil are not determined in your thoughts. Rather, good and evil are determined through your life. Heaven and hell are determined not through the world of your thoughts but on the stage of your life. This is important. When you get on a streetcar and take a look at the people around you, you should be able to tell at a glance which of them is in a bad mood and which in a good mood. Those in a bad mood have less spiritual power than others. But those in a good mood are elevated above the others. If there is a person who has spiritual experiences, you should be able to discern that immediately. You should be able to know at a glance who such people are. Even animals know whether they will live or die. How then can people, who are the lords of all creation, live without knowing about their own lives? We become ignorant because we are engrossed in self-interest and selfish desire and turn our backs away from God, but once we come to live together with God, we will know and understand. (40-294, 1971.02.07)

5 Can you go to the spirit world with confidence or not? If you can go there with confidence, heaven will be waiting for you, but if you go there without confidence, hell will be waiting for you. In any case, you will go there. A well-ripened fruit will go to the storehouse of the kingdom of heaven, and an unripe fruit will go into a stinking trashcan. Therefore, no matter how difficult it is, you need to reach perfection on earth before you go to the spirit world. Thus you need to bear good fruit. You should say, "I will go to the hell of the eyes. I will go to the hell of the mouth. I will go to the hell of the ears." You need to go through the hell of the five sensory organs to be able to go to the kingdom of heaven. That is why, while you are on earth, you have to see what you do not want to see; you have to smell what

you do not want to smell; you have to hear what you do not want to hear; and you have to say what you do not want to say. Even though I know everything there is to know about this vast world and even though I know everything clearly about the spirit world, the path I am walking is the path of hell. I am pioneering a path no one has ever walked before. (292-263, 1998.04.26)

6 When God created all things, He did so through the Word. When He seeks us out, He does so through the Word. If you claim you come from God, then since He sowed the Word, you have the responsibility to reap that Word and reclaim it as our Father's. The Last Days are a time when we must harvest the ideal and prepare for it to be substantialized. The substance is realized through the Word. Throughout history God has been seeking the substance thus molded through the Word. That was the purpose of the coming of Jesus Christ to this earth. God first showed fallen people the Word, not the substance, because these two must be restored in reverse order. They need to be reclaimed in the order they were lost. Though He desires the substance, He first has to sow the seeds of the Word in the heart of each and every fallen person. Then, based on the Word, we come to complete the substance and form it into a body of life. (5-146, 1959.01.11)

7 When Adam and Eve lost their faith, their substance and their love, their lineage was also lost. Therefore this process needs to be reversed. When Nicodemus came before Jesus and asked what he should do to enter the kingdom of heaven, Jesus answered, "No one can see the kingdom of God without being born anew." Then Nicodemus asked, "How can these things be?" and Jesus replied, "Are you a teacher of Israel, and yet you do not understand these things?" (John 3:3-11) Because Nicodemus was a teacher of the Jewish nation, Jesus spoke about the most important thing as simple fact rather than speaking through symbols or analogies. He essentially said, "You cannot enter the kingdom of God unless you are reborn." And in being reborn, if you are inferior to Adam and Eve, you cannot enter the kingdom. When you are reborn, you need to be better than Adam and Eve. This is the Principle. Otherwise you cannot ascend to the restored, original position. (58-043, 1972.06.06)

8 The Fall is the breaking of the connection between the Word, the substance and the heart. You therefore need to know the Word and practice it. In practicing the Word, you need to move forward with the heart of the parents. Only those who have taken substantial action to accomplish restoration through indemnity can be blessed. This should not be done in word only. Speaking, by itself, is not enough. Only by actually carrying out the Word will you become members of the tribe of heaven—in other words, the life spirits of the nation. Then you need to become divine spirits. You must do so and then be registered, thereby finding your way to your own position. This is the course of restoration. Therefore you need to be registered. Once you are connected and registered as a divine spirit, you will not commit wrongs. You are adhering to a law more demanding than that of Satan's

world. Isn't that true in today's world as well? Can the citizens of one nation be punished according to the laws of another nation? That cannot happen, because they are of a different nationality. When you enter such a realm, the laws of that realm apply to you. This being the case, once you have risen above Satan's world, you are following a more stringent law. Since you have fulfilled the laws of Satan's world, the laws of this earth are no problem. This is because you have paid the necessary indemnity conditions. Thus you will not go to hell. (150-311, 1961.04.15)

9 God the Creator is the plus and the creation is the minus. What is it that pulls them? They are pulled by love. Electricity flows between plus and minus on its own, doesn't it? Human beings are also brought together through love. What happens when you go to the spirit world? You return to God. In the end, you return to God. When you go to the spirit world and call out, "God!" then from the center of the spirit world the answer, "Yes! Here I am," will come. And when you ask, "Where are You?" from the center of your mind the answer, "I am here," will come. This is how the conscience and the spirit world form a relationship. (192-268, 1989.07.09)

10 What began from God returns to God. If we say we have returned to God, will there be two bodies? There will be only one. One is the cause and one is the result. That which initiates and pushes something outward is love and that which pulls it back inward is also love. There is nothing else. This is why it is said that the heart of love flows through history. History pushes it outward. Love returns to the beginning. There is no power other than love that returns to the beginning. The life force comes about through the pulling power of love, the power that pulls in. Centrifugal force and centripetal force are also brought about through the power of love. A man becomes a complete divine spirit when his life force is connected to that of a woman through love. For a man and a woman to become completed, the two have to become one. (192-269, 1989.07.09)

The secret to entering the God's kingdom in heaven

11 What has to be done to return to the presence of God? Adam and Eve have to become one. Adam and Eve need to be restored. Unless the fallen Adam and Eve become one, there can be no liberation of sorrow and no salvation. Only when the two are united as one can the parents be restored. Therefore we need to restore them. That is how the Principle works. Why do they need to become one? It is to liberate God. This is the conclusion. Brothers and sisters, you have to love one another and you also have to love your enemy. Without loving your enemy, you cannot liberate God. To liberate God and the parents, you need to love your enemy. You cannot become one without loving your enemy. Then what has to be done after we have loved our enemies? We have to restore the parents. After we restore the parents, we have to restore God. They have to be restored all together. The Fall meant that the siblings, the parents and God were lost all at the same time through an unprincipled relationship of love with Satan. These also have to be restored all at

the same time. That is why without setting the condition of having staked your life and devoted it to love for the sake of overcoming this situation you cannot enter the kingdom of heaven. (37-256, 1970.12.27)

12 What is the secret to going to the kingdom of heaven? It is to restore the four-position foundation. All sixty-six books of the Bible exist for this purpose. The hopes of six thousand years of history are also pinned on this. The liberation of humankind from sorrow depends on this. The four-position foundation is absolute. You will be in serious trouble if you cannot fulfill it. You will not be able to enter the kingdom of heaven. If you cannot enter the kingdom, what will you do? In that case, your sons and daughters who receive the Blessing will lament for tens of thousands of years. Will you let such a thing happen to them simply because you did not fulfill your responsibility? If that happens, they cannot be descendants who are completely restored. The spirit world we talk about in the Unification Church is like that. There is no getting around it. (27-261, 1969.12.14)

13 You can never enter the kingdom of heaven unless you establish the four-position foundation and pay indemnity. This is why Jesus has worked so hard until this day. This is why I too have labored to this moment. I have toiled to sort this out. There is no other reason for my labors. It was for the realization of the four-position foundation. At the time of Jesus, the three disciples, Peter, John and James, were necessary as a foundation to establish that. This being the case, from what position can you enter the kingdom of heaven? Since the kingdom of heaven was lost in Adam's family, it must be restored from within the family. Did Adam and Eve not fall through illicit love? It was at that point that the kingdom of heaven was lost. To restore this, the lost positions of Cain, Abel and Seth must be found and restored. Without becoming the parents in place of Adam and Eve and establishing these three sons, the four-position foundation cannot be established. This is the formula. (27-260, 1969.12.14)

14 This current day is the global era. The white, black and yellow races are three brothers. When you think about this, you may wonder, "Can different races truly come together and live in happiness?" But there is no fighting in the kingdom of heaven. The kingdom of heaven is a place where you go not according to your race but according to your achievements in love. In chapter five of the Gospel of Matthew, it is written, "Blessed are the peacemakers, for they will be called children of God." (Matt. 5:9) When you meet the son of God you feel joyful. But when you come face to face with the son of Satan, the longer your meeting lasts, the more fear and anxiety you feel. In this regard, your siblings are precious to you. People who live for the sake of their siblings automatically go to the kingdom of heaven. Wherever they go, they will be welcomed and recommended. Those who live for their siblings become central figures. How can you practice brotherly love that matches the standard of parents' love and the love of husband and wife? The answer to that question is the secret to realizing the kingdom of heaven on earth.

In the end, this joyful giving and receiving is the key to entering the kingdom of heaven. (66-126, 1973.04.18)

15 How is the kingdom of heaven to be realized from now on? To realize the kingdom of heaven, we need to go beyond nationality and national boundaries and love the people of the world whom Jesus did not get a chance to love. We need to love the people of the world. Transcending barriers of nation, race and tribe, we need to love anyone and everyone, be they people from the deserts of Asia or the wilds of Africa, as if they were our own children. If people have the heart to love like Jesus from the position of an elder sister or younger brother, then they are equal to Jesus, the Son of God. And the world where such practice is universal is the kingdom of heaven on earth. Only when we go forward in such a way, again and again and again, can we enter the kingdom of heaven. Otherwise it will be impossible. (41-256, 1971.02.16)

16 We need to enter the kingdom of heaven. You cannot enter the kingdom of heaven without going through the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos. From the very beginning there has been a path to the kingdom of heaven, but up to this point not one person has entered. This is because there has not been one person who could subjugate Satan at every stage, going through the way of the cross from the individual level to the levels of the family, tribe, people, nation and world, thereby establishing the foundation of victory. Because Jesus could not establish such a victorious foundation when he came to earth, he too was unable to enter the kingdom of heaven and until now he has offered his prayers from paradise. (13-263, 1964.04.12)

Preparing a certificate with which to enter the kingdom of heaven

17 Since the Fall took place not in God's presence but with Satan as the subject, we need to subjugate Satan in order to free ourselves from the fallen realm. We have to be able to say, "Satan, you rogue! Since I am where I am now because I united with you, I will subjugate you and return to God!" If you do not obtain the certificate that states that you subjugated Satan, you cannot receive God's love. Jesus too prevailed over the three great temptations. We cannot enter the kingdom of heaven without obtaining Satan's signature confirming that we were historically victorious. No matter what it takes, we must obtain Satan's signature. When Jesus overcame Satan's three great temptations and triumphed, Satan acknowledged it in tears, right then and there, and said, "You are eternally different from me." (24-337, 1969.09.14)

18 Jesus inherited the heavenly kingdom, but he did not inherit the world. Then who inherited the world? Cain did; so the world is Cain's country. For this reason, Abel has to inherit the heavenly kingdom, and he should also receive a certificate issued and guaranteed by Cain's world. To go to the kingdom of heaven, you need

to obtain a certificate from Satan. Fallen people are bound by these two principles. Since they have not been resolved, history has been prolonged and repeated through the past six thousand years. But now we have come to understand this. In the Bible it is written, "You will know the truth, and the truth will make you free." (John 8:32) As we now know the truth, we have to love, even if we have to clench our teeth. To what extent must we love? We have to love even Cain who is our enemy. (34-278, 1970.09.13)

19 Christianity has passed through a history of seeking the true olive tree while pioneering a miserable destiny with countless people throughout the ages. The true olive tree refers to the Son of God. Once he comes, you need to receive his sap as well as a branch from him. You need to engraft yourself to that branch. When this takes place, all conditions tied up in history—all our ancestors throughout the ages who offered indemnity conditions but were caught by Satan—will be resolved. You must receive the graft on a foundation not of fertile soil or in a warm nest, but in a stony field. This is because you have to receive a certificate from Satan confirming that you have restored the original nature that has never before existed in Satan's world and also confirming that you can become God's child. This is not something God can do for you. If it had been up to God, He would have done everything six thousand years ago. (17-124, 1966.12.11)

20 It is not the judge who authorizes a release from prison. Then who can do it? It is the prosecutor who gives permission. Without obtaining the endorsement of the prosecutor's office, you cannot be released. In this court, the prosecutor is Satan. Without Satan's approval God cannot say, "You are my child, I will save you!" You have to get Satan's approval without fail. Have you received Satan's endorsement or not? You must get Satan's approval. What does the Unification Church teach? It teaches the way to obtain Satan's approval. This approval is not only spiritual. You need to receive it as a substantial being of both spirit and body. (17-124, 1966.12.11)

21 Only when you do not go against heavenly law can you enter the kingdom of heaven. If you are barred from entry based on heavenly law, what will you do? Even members of the Unification Church cannot enter the kingdom of heaven if they have disobeyed heavenly law. All who do wrong are caught. You may dream you will go to the spirit world at the level of a divine spirit simply because you believe in the Unification Church, but that will come to nothing. Then what should you do? There is a secret method to be found here. You, the members of the Unification Church, should lay down a victorious foundation. Only then can you stand in the position of the parents. (37-256, 1970.12.27)

22 Now the Unification Church will surmount the global peak. Now no one can destroy the Unification Church, and no one can send me to prison. You should not just be busy with married life and having children. Instead you should be busy

preparing a certificate that will let you enter the kingdom of heaven. You do not know when you will die. You may be involved in a car accident and go to the spirit world at any moment. All kinds of things occur. You never know when and at what moment you will go to the spirit world. If the blessed families neglect this matter and go to the spirit world after simply enjoying their lives by themselves, can they stand before Rev. Moon of the Unification Church? Since blessed families are at the completion stage of the growth period, they have not yet reached the global level. Since they are in the completion stage of the growth period, they need to go beyond the world. Since there is such a process, they have to go through it. (146-338, 1986.08.10)

23 Are you busy getting married, busy managing your household or busy making preparations to go to the spirit world? We should lead our lives so as to be in rhythm with the spirit world. All people need to live in rhythm with the spirit world. When you members of the Unification Church go to the spirit world, you will find that the conditions I have taught you are inscribed on the gates and you will be asked certain questions. Everything I have taught you to this day is written there as the conditions of entry. If you cannot answer correctly, you will not be able to go in. You will have to wait somewhere in the intermediate level of the spirit world. In that place you will have to wait for me to arrive in the spirit world. (146-340, 1986.08.10)

24 We need a nation. There are many nations, but the nation we are moving toward is a different one. It is God's nation. You cannot enter this heavenly nation without receiving a new certificate of citizenship in that nation. Satan cannot accuse those with such certified citizenship no matter how hard he tries, through east, west, north and south or through the past, present and future. (148-288, 1986.10.25)

CHAPTER 3 Earthly Life Prepares Us for Eternal Life

Section 1. Eternal Life

1 Throughout their lifetimes people live in their own way, according to their own desires. "Living" refers to everyday life, whereas "lifetime" refers to one's entire life, that is, living one's whole life. Furthermore, religious people use the words "eternal life." Eternal life means not just living a lifetime on earth but a lifetime that continues forever. The way you connect your lifetime to eternal life is important. This is your lifelong responsibility. In addition, your lifetime is determined by linking together your everyday life from one day to the next. (197-186, 1990.01.14)

2 Your lifetime consists of the connected, continuous days of your life. What determines the value of your entire life? It is not determined after you have lived your life to the end. Your daily life, day by day, determines it. Therefore you have to

live life well. Living life well entails living the days that make up the entire course of your life in a meaningful way. When you say that you have lived well today, it means that today is a memorable day in your life that you can be proud of. The day you can say you have lived well would surely be the most valuable day in your entire life. If you lived one day that was worthwhile, for your entire life that would remain an unforgettable day. Where does the concept of eternal life come from? (197-186, 1990.01.14)

3 God is the eternal subject being of love and the eternal root of love. It follows that the object partner of such a subject being would be eternal as well. Eternal love means you invest your whole life and forget that you have done so. On the path of true love, even when you have invested your life and know you are dying, you still rejoice and try to invest it again. Then who is the true owner, the true husband, the true teacher, and the true parent? The one who invests his life and forgets he has invested and who tries to live for the sake of others again and again is the true parent, the true teacher and the true owner. Heaven and earth resonate with someone who reaches such a state. The words spoken by Buddha, "Throughout all of heaven and earth, I alone am the honored one," refer to his having reached that state. When your mind and body are united and you enter heaven's vast and infinite realm of love, you see that the entire universe brightens up. In other words, the realm of resonance opens up. However human beings, who were supposed to have eternal life, fell and lost their spiritual life. Had they been united with God in true love and connected to His life and lineage, they would have automatically attained eternal life. There would have been no need for a savior. There would have been no need for religion. Our minds and bodies would have been united. (213-080, 1991.01.14)

4 We were created to be the objects of God's love, the object partners of God, the absolute subject. God deems true love more precious than even His own being. He is the absolute and eternal center of life. His ideal, based on true love, is even more eternal. We are the objects of that love. What are the attributes of love? Love is the unity of a subject partner and an object partner. It can unify a nation. It allows you to share any place with God and follow Him anywhere. You can inherit all of His wealth, His eternal life and even His heart of love. You can inherit God's heart of love, which is with all created things and dwells in the hearts of all people. How precious you are! I went through a miserable course to discover this and I have come to stand on that foundation. What a joyous thing this is. It is a sublime and noble position that cannot be exchanged for anything. It is an amazing grace, whereby I can stand in the same position as God and share the position of eternal true love. This concept of eternal life cannot be found in Korea or in the world outside. I was born with eternal life and am destined to go and enjoy eternal life in the spirit world. It is an instant leap. (216-115, 1991.03.09)

5 We, the object partners of true love of the Eternal Being, exist on a different level from other living things on earth. We live within a restricted space on earth and cannot move so freely, but the spirit world exists on a higher dimension and we can do anything there. We can transcend time. If we have a desire for something based on love, we can obtain it anytime, anywhere. There are no limits or bounds. The place where God resides is the original hometown; it is the original hometown of the parents. It is a place where we can do anything. When we go to the spirit world we will be free. We will become completely one with that world. We will enter it as easily as winking. (216-116, 1991.03.09)

6 When people have completed a masterwork with devotion, they keenly desire to preserve it and leave it to their descendants for many generations to come. What about God? Would He love humankind, born as His beloved sons and daughters, for a little while and then stop? No, He would desire to love them eternally. This is why if we could become perfect and receive God's love eternally, then God would wish to keep us by His side for all eternity. Because this is the way the Absolute Being receives joy, people must exist eternally, as He does. It is not enough unless they remain with Him for all eternity. If our ancestors Adam and Eve had become such people, they would have attained perfection and all of God's wishes would have been fulfilled. The perfection of Adam and Eve would have been the complete fulfillment of all God's cherished hopes for human beings, whom He created as the center of all things. (41-023, 1971.02.12)

7 How can we grasp the concept of eternal life? It is through love. The path of faith is not preparation for one's life on earth but rather for one's life in the eternal spirit world. When people pass the age of forty or fifty and the day of their death draws near, they become serious about eternal life. The older people become, the more serious they are. Our ideology fades as we grow older, but when we hold the concept of eternal life, we become more serious as we grow older. Thus in the future only religious doctrine can manage the world. No matter how often our environment changes, no matter what comic or tragic circumstances come our way, we will be able to handle any problem if we have a firm concept of eternal life. God created Adam and Eve as His object partners of love. That is why we need to become objects of love and live as such. It is not enough to just talk about it; we need to actually feel it and experience it. (230-023, 1992.04.15)

8 Before anything else, you need to know God. You need to know without a doubt that God exists. Next you need to know clearly what kind of place the spirit world is. If you do not know about the spirit world, you cannot know about God. Because Adam and Eve lost true love when they fell, we lost eternal life. That is why God, the spirit world and eternal life are the key issues. The fact is, only when people know God and the spirit world and form an eternal relationship with both can they have eternal life. Since God lives eternally, it naturally follows that His sons and daughters should also live eternally. (328-174, 2000.08.02)

9 The most important thing is eternal life. However, people do not know whether the spirit world exists or not. If you came to understand that you would inevitably live for eternity, you would not just live for yourself or commit a sin under any circumstances. If you do not know about this you can never go to heaven, regardless of what religion you believe in. You cannot go to God's ideal world. Therefore you must invest in true love and true life. (205-261, 1990.09.09)

10 If there is a being who eternally lives for the sake of others in the eternal world, that being will become the eternal owner. Who is such a being? It is God. Since God is our Father, the entire universe is drawn to us. Eternal life can be found here. Eternal life does not exist in a place that is not like that. This is why the Bible says, "Those who want to save their life will lose it, and those who lose their life for my sake will find it." (Matt. 16:25) This means that you have to overcome death, for without overcoming death you cannot truly live. (205-259, 1990.09.09)

Our eternal life is determined through the practice of true love

11 When God seeks an absolute object of love, that object can only be human beings. Thus in Korea we have the saying: "Among all creation, the most precious are human beings." If we conclude that we are the Creator's objects of eternal love, we can logically say that, as object partners united with that love, we also live eternally. Thus eternal life is the automatic result. An important religious question is how to establish the logic of eternal life based on the relationship of love. Eternal life is not within a man or a woman, nor is it within God. Eternal life is in the love of God. (218-211, 1991.07.29)

12 No matter who they are, all people desire the best. When you reach the highest position, God belongs to you and you belong to Him. Then you become God's child and you also become God Himself, and the universe belongs to you. If there were something that God created to be loved and treasured, would He throw it away after one day, ten years, or a hundred years, or would He want to keep it for eternity? God would want it to be with Him eternally. So it is with humankind. Would it be good if we were born and then died and that was it, or should we live eternally? People should live eternally. This is because we are the object partners whom the absolute God can appreciate and love absolutely. If God liked us for only one or two days, ten years, or a hundred years and then threw us away, it would not be love. Love is such that the more you love the more you wish to be together. (39-342, 1971.01.16)

13 What must we do? We have to live eternally. Isn't that good news? We live some eighty years in this evil world. While you may say that there is no difference between the death of an ant and that of a human being, there is a difference. We are different because we are spiritual beings. How is it that we can become the lords of all creation? It is because our spirits do not age. All things can change. Even

pure gold can change. The effects of weathering gradually wear it away. The only thing that is not like that is the mind. When it comes to remaining unchanged, the mind holds the highest authority. (159-278, 1968.05.19)

14 Eternal life becomes possible through true love. This is because the starting motive, the process and the purpose of creation are all perfected through love. Results come about through a process. The perfection of the mind and body is possible only through true love. Love is the only thing that can bring to fruition the ideal of the infinite origin, cause and process. Only true love can do that. God exists eternally, not through money, power or knowledge, but based on His intrinsic true love. He cannot experience joy alone. He needs a partner. Even the almighty God is lonely by Himself. He desires vertical, horizontal and front-and-back object partners. That is why it is impossible to walk the path to eternal life without true love, the love that leads to God. (218-134, 1991.07.16)

15 What is essential for eternal life? It is love, love! You cannot live eternally by yourself. Only love can be the basis of eternal life. At the same time, it is also the basis for the accomplishment of a purpose. Since heaven and earth were created through love, we begin with love, we live with love, and in the end, the full glory of love must unfold. We should know that glory comes from love. (25-260, 1969.10.05)

16 When you live in the realm of true love you can go freely to God's dwelling place, the throne of the heavenly nation. You can become God's friend. God created humankind because of love. Since He is the eternal God, the absolute God, and the immortal God, human beings who live in accord with love have eternal life. This is only logical. Thus true love is eternal. To attain eternal life you need to live in that realm of true love. (211-273, 1990.12.30)

17 How do you live eternally? Christians say that you can attain eternal life and be saved by believing in Jesus, but that is far from the whole story. You can be saved only through love. From the viewpoint of God's Principle of Creation, only a true person can be God's partner in love; hence, if you have true love you can have eternal life. Once you enter that realm of love, even while on earth you can envision your future home in the spirit world. (215-053, 1991.02.06)

18 We need to be conscious that we all live eternally. In addition, we are people who practice true love; we practice that love on earth. Everything we do on earth, even working in a factory, is connected to our eternal life. Therefore we should think, "The work I am doing is training for eternal life and provides opportunities to cultivate eternal life." You will always need eternal life and true love. You will need them eternally. (216-127, 1991.03.31)

19 All beings exist in pairs for the sake of love. This is to achieve the harmony of love. God first needs eternal life, then eternal love. From this perspective, if God is eternal, He needs an eternal partner. Where in the universe is that eternal partner? We naturally conclude that human beings live eternally based on the pair system. We need eternal life. Why do we need to live eternally? Since we are to perfect the ideal of love through the pair system, and since we need God's love and perfect love through mutual relationship with Him, thus we inevitably live eternally. (111-109, 1981.02.01)

20 When the sun rises, all buds turn toward it. Buds on plants, on shrubs, even on big trees, all turn toward the light of the sun. People are born from love, they grow up in love, they live in love and they die in love. However they do not just disappear. Since God, the subject being, is eternal, unchanging and unique, when we become His object partners of love, we also live eternally. The theory of eternal life originates from this point. It does not begin from life. (142-145, 1986.03.08)

21 Your sons and daughters are the fruit who represent you. That is why you cannot help but love them. Since God loves us, as His sons and daughters we also represent Him. Eternal life is connected through love. Therefore, you need to live in an environment of love in order to create an environment conducive to eternal life. To attain the substantial realm of love, we need to have a substantial experience of love. (218-135, 1991.07.14)

Section 2. Preparation for the Spirit World

1 Though we live in this world, we know that the spirit world also exists. We also know that this world and the spirit world are not separate; they must be connected. Where will we go when we leave the physical world? We are on this earth while we live in the flesh, but we are proceeding toward the eternal world. People are born, go through the springtime of their life in their teens, twenties and thirties, reach their prime, and go on to old age. Thus their lives come to an end, like the setting sun. However, those who know the existence of the spirit world know that a lifetime on earth is but a fleeting moment, and the eternal world awaits them after death. Our lifetime is merely preparation for the world of eternity. (140-121, 1986.02.09)

The importance and purpose of our physical life on earth

2 At one time or another you will go before God. The path that leads to the presence of God, the path of your destiny, is one you walk alone. Have you ever considered what you would do if, after traversing that path, you were not welcomed by God? Would you wish to be born as an only child, or as the son or daughter of a person who owns nothing? Would you like to be born in such a pitiful situation? You would not. Everyone would prefer to be born into an affluent

environment, into a rich family and a rich nation. You would prefer to have the nation welcome you and usher you in from the moment of your birth. In light of this, into what situation would you want to be born when you enter the spirit world? Your fate—whether you will be born into an affluent environment or welcomed anywhere in heaven or on earth—is determined by the short course of your life on earth. (22-318, 1969.05.11)

3 In the future we will come face to face with the next world; that is our final destination. We must be born anew into that world. Whether you find yourself in the situation of a lonely, only child or in an affluent environment where you are welcomed, is determined by how you walk your current path. (22-319, 1969.05.11)

4 Life on earth and eternal life in the spirit world are not separate; they are connected. They are both important, yet people who live on earth today are unaware of the concept of eternal life. They think that only life on earth is important. Even Unification Church members do not understand that the way we live on earth determines our eternal life. Eternal life begins in the present moment; thus you need to be constantly aware of it, in relation to the kingdom of heaven. If you do not understand this, you will go astray. Everything you do now determines your value in the spirit world. The two worlds move facing each other. If the physical world ascends, so does the spirit world, and if the physical world descends, the spirit world goes down too. If one turns, the other does likewise. You have to realize this point during your life on earth and live in a way that enhances your eternal life. Eternal life and the present world are not separate. You cannot grasp this if you do not clearly distinguish between heaven and hell. Therefore you need to feel the importance of both eternal life and life on earth as you work. (217-085, 1991.04.16)

5 You should know how precious your physical life is. Only during this period in your physical body can you resurrect the universe and unify all of heaven and earth. Not even God and all things combined could be exchanged for the physical world. God and the universe cannot be perfected without a human being in a physical body. Therefore the entire cosmos could not be exchanged for a physical body. (91-192, 1977.02.13)

6 Our time in this physical world is very short. Once you realize this, you will not want to waste time sleeping or eating. You will eat while you walk, sleep while you walk, and play while you walk. The more you do so, the more blessings you will receive—blessings that no one has ever received before. Inheriting all of God's blessings is a historical thing. When you do this for the sake of the nation, your name will be remembered by that nation. (80-226, 1975.10.23)

7 People on earth have bodies, but they face limitations in their physical lives. Spirits, on the other hand, do not have physical bodies, but they live in a world

without limits. People have bodies on earth, but the earth is not their eternal dwelling place. Spirits do not have bodies, but they reside in their eternal dwelling place. If you were to list the points of contrast between earthly people and spirits, it could go on and on. And if we were to look at the aspects that earthly people and spirits have in common, we would see that life on earth and life in the spirit world each constitute one half of a whole, and only one half. Then what do the body and spirit need to do to bear perfect fruit? You can bear perfect fruit only when you conclude your life on earth successfully before your physical and spiritual selves separate. On the other hand, when an unripe spirit goes to the spirit world, problems arise. (293-256, 1998.06.01)

8 How important is your life on earth? You live only once. It is a short moment and it comes only once. Compared with eternal life, earthly life is but a point in time. It is a mere instant. You need to rise above your life in the flesh and prepare for the spirit world. Keeping this key point in mind at all times, you need to stand in the center and guide everything and conquer everything in your life. Otherwise you cannot achieve the perfection of your individual self. (207-100, 1990.11.01)

9 If something had gone wrong during your time in your mother's womb, your life on earth could have been completely ruined. Similarly, if something were to go wrong in the physical world, your life in the spirit world, the world of love in which you live with the eternal Parent, would be ruined. Therefore you need to know how precious the earthly world is. This is where you need to love; you need to love during your life on earth by serving your parents, your siblings and your nation. What kind of person can lead others and bring them into harmony in the earthly world? The one who steps forward on behalf of the parents to care for others, and volunteers to do the difficult tasks, is the one who can become the central figure. Those who have fulfilled the responsibility of an older son or daughter go to a higher heaven in the spirit world. (306-220, 1998.09.23)

10 Things do not happen by chance. In preparing for the future, there is no easy way. However, in considering how to spend his or her life, the person who knows that youth is the time to prepare for adulthood has a bright future. The prime of life is the time to prepare for old age and old age is the time to prepare to go to the spirit world. Our lifetime is a period of training and preparation, a course that disciplines us to acquire a great universal character. (147-188, 1986.09.21)

11 Your eternal life does not begin when you die. It begins the moment you learn about the Will of God. If there were a gap in your life, or you were stuck in one place, even for one instant, your path to eternity would stop. Therefore, when you walk the path of faith in your life, you should not delay going that way and put it off until next year, or the following year. If you live in such a manner, you will die without having lived even one day in oneness with the Will. If you live like that you cannot go to the kingdom of heaven. No matter how good your nation, if you have

not lived even one day victoriously, how can you go to the heavenly kingdom? If you have not had even one victorious year, how can you enter the eternal world? These are the questions we must address. (37-220, 1970.12.27)

Training for the kingdom of heaven

12 Life on earth is training to adjust yourself to your eternal homeland. This life on earth is not eternal. It is merely a period you pass through, like your school days. If you fail during this period, you are in serious trouble. Do not become a failure. Instead, achieve success in your family, in the nation and in the world. Once you gain success in the world, you can enter the kingdom of heaven on earth. Someone who has lived in heaven on earth, and was appreciated by everything there, will also be welcomed by everything in the kingdom of heaven in heaven. Someone who has repeatedly invested for the sake of others with love, and has forgotten that investment, will be close to the throne of God on high. Since that person's nature is like God's, he or she will stand in the position of His child and will automatically be close to Him. The spirit world is the world of the original homeland, the original home, where God dwells eternally. Since we began from that place, we will return there. (257-052, 1994.03.13)

13 At the time of creation, God's mind was at peace in the heavenly kingdom because He had provided human beings with the formula for achieving equality in love. Therefore God cannot be accused. The same formula still applies. Who is the textbook of love? You yourselves should be model fathers, husbands, sons and leaders. Therefore I am training the mothers and fathers, then the family members, and then the nation. You are being trained to live in the kingdom of heaven. This training connects the individual, family, society, nation and world. (102-125, 1978.11.27)

14 You need to be trained to qualify to enter heaven in the next world, the spirit world, which is the original homeland. To qualify, an individual, a family and a tribe must become a model of complete oneness, which seven generations of descendants can follow. There should be no fighting among them. They should not struggle with one another over personal possessions. (310-110, 1999.06.15)

15 If there is a family, it should be a happy family and the nation should also be a happy one. There should be no concept of struggle, only harmony. In the heavenly kingdom in the spirit world, harmony reaches the highest standard and you have to measure up to it. The spirit world transcends time and space; as quickly as you think of it, you can travel from one end of the world to the other and back. You can't imagine how fast it is. Light travels 300 million meters in a second. If in your life on earth you cannot keep up with the rhythm of that world, you will fall behind when you go there. From now on, those who do not know about the spirit world

cannot become citizens of the heavenly kingdom when they go there. (519-213, 2006.03.04)

16 If you want to go to heaven, you need to qualify. You need a ticket to enter the kingdom of heaven. You cannot go in freely. In the spirit world, everything about your life is known immediately. There is a computer in the spirit world. Manmade computers are amazing, but the computers in the spirit world can show your entire life in a minute with the touch of a button. You cannot lie. Every detail of how you were born as someone's son or daughter and how you lived your life is revealed. (250-110, 1993.10.12)

17 Just as your conscience knows everything about your life, every detail of your life is recorded in a computer in the spirit world. When you go to the spirit world, just by entering your name in the computer your whole life is revealed in an instant. Since the spirit world transcends time and space, you can instantly see the record of every detail of your life, right then and there. Thus the conscience is the start button of the computer in the eternal world. Entries are made on the basis of what it knows. All the deeds that have caused you pangs of conscience are entered just as they are. A life that has no such misgivings is recorded as a clean life. Therefore you cannot make excuses when you go to the spirit world. You will see clearly how you have lived your whole life. The earthly world is the training center where, with the knowledge that the spirit world exists, you prepare to go to that world and be ushered in. (256-250, 1994.03.14)

18 To go to the kingdom of heaven you should be able to say, "I am the representative of the Old Testament Age in which Adam failed; the representative of the era of Jesus, who is the center of the New Testament Age; and the representative of the Completed Testament Age, representing the era of completion." Once the realm of parents has been completed for each of these three ages, Satan can no longer remain. In such a place there will be no more obstacles. When these three ages are complete, the world will have no problems. Satan will disappear and the gates to hell will be opened. A highway to the kingdom of heaven will be laid down. Then families will automatically be connected to the eternal kingdom of heaven. That will be a land of freedom. (302-290, 1999.06.26)

19 If your mind and body are not united, you cannot enter the kingdom of heaven. Since you have come to know this principle, you need to subjugate your body, even if it means sitting on it and forcing it to do what the mind wants to do. You must attain perfect dominion over yourself before attempting dominion over the universe. You have no idea how difficult that is. The body is strong, and so is Satan's world. I have fought this difficult battle. In that battle you have to give up everything—your nation and your clan, your mother and father, your husband or wife, even your own body. You must fall down into the hell of imprisonment. If God tells you to go out and pioneer, you should go all the way to hell and start

pioneering your way back up. Only then can you become a person needed by God. (412-307, 2003.07.02)

20 When you work hard witnessing and raising funds, why do people persecute and accuse you? It is to help you find the heart that you are lacking. It is to help you find love. It is to help you become people who can love others. Without undergoing such a course of training, you cannot become heavenly people, no matter how much you try. In other words, you should find love greater than that in Satan's world. Otherwise you cannot go to the heavenly kingdom. Only those who become people of love can go to the kingdom of heaven. At that time, God will be the Lord of Judgment, Jesus will be the Lord of Judgment, and I will be the Lord of Judgment. Therefore you need to practice love. This is the task we face. It is the task and command issued in accordance with God's law. (103-238, 1979.03.01)

21 You are subject to judgment by the Word. If you do not listen, you will be held accountable. So you need to actualize the Word. If you fail to take action to substantiate the Word, you will face the judgment of substance. There is judgment of the Word, of substance and of heart. You must face these three great processes. First you will be judged by the Word of the Principle. (103-236, 1979.03.01)

We must clear away our sins

22 The Unification Church says that the providence of salvation is the providence of restoration, but is there any way we can avoid that path? We cannot avoid it. We carry the burden of the fate of the Fall on our shoulders. How big is that burden? It is as big as the world and the universe. Therefore, as you live your everyday life you should think, "After all, I will die one day." When you were born you did not think, "I will be born," but you were born anyway. Even when it comes to dying, whether you think about it or not, whether you want to die or not, if you try to die you may not die and if you try not to die you may still die. It is not something you can do as you please. That time will inevitably come—the final, fateful moment. That cannot be changed. Therefore if you have anything to indemnify you need to do it before you die. This is the challenge. Because the Fall happened on earth, it must be cleared up on earth. This issue needs to be restored on earth before we go to the spirit world. It will be impossible once we go to the spirit world. (165-061, 1987.05.20)

23 If God's purpose is our complete salvation, He should be able to cut off our rotten parts. Only then could He be a great God. What kind of God do you wish for? Do you wish for a God who would pat you on the back and say, "Poor body, born into this sinful world, you have suffered so much to remain here this long. You have done well"? Or do you wish for a God who would deal with your body without pity? Which God would you prefer? In His heart, God wants to do away with our fallen bodies all at once. The body is an antenna through which we communicate with the

fallen world. Original sin entered the human world through the body. When you hear this, you may be offended. However, those who feel offended must atone for their sins. When the work of atonement takes place on earth, unity will be achieved automatically. Therefore unity is not such a difficult thing. All that needs to be done is to chastise the body. (18-319, 1967.08.13)

24 Everything will be completely revealed in the spirit world. The bad things are revealed first. Only after you have cleared all that up can you enter heaven in the spirit world. Otherwise you cannot enter. Even if your eyes are closed, such things will be revealed and punishment required. Consequently, until you have cleared up all the bad things, you must continue to be educated. You need to be trained. You need to undergo intense training. (287-204, 1997.10.30)

25 To triumph over your body you must completely uproot and overcome Satan. You can go to the kingdom of heaven only after you have overcome Satan. You cannot defeat Satan after casting off your physical body. Since the physical Fall occurred on earth, you must correct it on earth, while you still have your physical body. If you fail to fulfill all that you need to do while on earth, you will go to hell for all eternity. Thus when you triumph on earth and stand in the position of goodness on Heaven's side, you will go to the kingdom of heaven for all eternity. (65-294, 1973.01.01)

26 The twisted, sinful result brought about when our human ancestors failed to become true parents—the twisted sin committed through the failure to form a true people, a true nation and a true world—still remains before God and humanity. Who can take responsibility for this sin? People who have gone to the spirit world cannot resolve the sins they committed on earth. Therefore, unless someone on earth takes responsibility, the people in the spirit world cannot be liberated. All people living on earth must clear up the sins they have committed before they can go to the heavenly kingdom. Then who on earth, as a representative of history, can clear up the sin that corrupted everything? This must be done by some person, some religion or organization, but the religions and people living on this earth today do not know about this mission. Since only the Unification Church knows about this, we who know should take responsibility. (79-068, 1975.06.01)

27 The history of sin should be cleared up starting with ourselves. If you stand in a position that brings a minus to history, you will end up in hell, but if you stand in a position that brings a plus to history, you will end up in heaven. When you compare the standards of this era to your own, if this era is greater than you, you will go to hell, but if you surpass this era, you will go to heaven. That is how it is. We who have merely followed the fortune of heaven and earth to this day, should recover the day on which we take control of the fortune of heaven and earth. God has continued to carry out His work for six thousand long years, yearning for that one day. Throughout the six-thousand-year course of the providence of restoration, God

has wandered around in search of one hero, who can shake off the historical grief that has followed the fortune of heaven and earth, and take dominion over this fortune. (5-272, 1959.02.15)

28 Hell came about because of me, and the kingdom of heaven also exists because of me. The two are divided. Originally, if we had not fallen, such a state of separation would not exist. The mind is on the right and the body is on the left. The people who follow the body go to hell and the people who follow the mind go to heaven. There are two paths. All our five senses have two tendencies. Then what do we need to do? We need to cut off one completely. Our bodies contain Satan's blood, Satan's life, and Satan's love. How can we remove them? We need to extract all of them, which have been sown throughout history. Thereupon, we need to implant God's love, God's life and God's lineage in ourselves once again. Then our eternal life of hope and eternal happiness begin. There is no other way. These are not my words; this is how the Principle works. That is why we need True Parents. True Parents are the root. From them spring the true trunk, true branches and true leaves, and from these a forest is formed. There is no other way, and it is not easy. (207-023, 1990.10.21)

29 The kingdom of heaven begins in the heart. What kind of heart? It begins with the heart that has triumphed over the world. Even if the kingdom of heaven were all around me, if my heart were evil and I could not picture the kingdom of heaven or be moved by it, then that kingdom would be useless to me. The capacity to welcome the kingdom of heaven is not derived from my environment. Rather, it is within me. I, myself, am the problem. (46-024, 1971.07.18)

30 Where is the support beam that can uphold the kingdom of heaven? It is in our environment, but more importantly, it is in our hearts. If you cannot describe the kingdom of heaven in your heart, you cannot be part of that kingdom, even if you are within its environment. Without determination we cannot take perfect action. Perfect action can arise only from perfect determination. The question is, therefore, how much does our mind yearn for goodness? Our yearning is connected to historical goodness; no matter how bloody or tearful a situation we face, we must overcome it through the way of goodness. Even if we must struggle in a lonely situation at the conclusion of history, we will not try to avoid it but will fight our way through it. The kingdom of heaven begins from our resolution and determination to pioneer an unchanging way and to create an environment in which our bodies unite with our minds. In the kingdom of heaven, the mind and body do not act separately. We can advance toward that kingdom only when our minds and bodies are united. (46-024, 1971.07.18)

31 It is very difficult to break a habit. This means that since we have been living in Satan's world until now, we have cherished the self-centered habit of thinking, "I should be superior to others." This habit has become fixed. It is more deeply

ingrained than your dietary habits. It is based on history. Since the day of the emergence of the devil, our habits have become deeply rooted. So how do we eradicate them? If you tried to dig a pit and bury them all, it would never be big enough. This is a serious problem. To get to heaven, you need to have God-centered habits. (213-020, 1991.01.13)

32 If your insides were filled to the brim with water, would it be clean water or muddy water? It would contain dirt and rocks. If you look at water after a heavy rainfall, how dirty is the water? All kinds of filthy things are carried down rivers. The water in you would be dirtier than that. Think about whether you are any different. Therefore, you need to be stirred up and filtered. You need to go through a filtration system. No matter how difficult it is, you need to look right and left and make your way out through the pieces of dirt. Will this work if you are egotistical? If you are, you will get clogged up. If the water contains clumps of dirt, it will get clogged up and will no longer flow. (97-061, 1978.02.26)

Absolute obedience to True Parents

33 There is only one set of True Parents, on earth and in the spirit world. There cannot be two of something that is absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal; there is only one. They are the unique center of the entire universe. Everything is connected to that place. Therefore, they are the center. You need absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience with regard to that center, which is the True Parents. Had the family of Adam reached perfection under God, it would have been the first perfected ancestors of all humanity. Then when the spirit world and the physical world were united, with the family of Adam at the center, that would have been the starting point for the True Parents. (344-307, 2001.05.01)

34 Why do you need to attend True Parents? It is because they represent the spirit world and God. Since the first parent, the second parent, and the third parent have formed bonds of heart and have been brought together in love, by attending True Parents you can gain the qualifications to take part in their victory in the realm of heart. Because of the Fall, everything was divided. We have not become filial children to the Creator of the universe, to the parents who gave birth to us, and to the spirit world. Yet by attending True Parents, we can be recognized as having the qualifications of filial children. That is why you need to follow with perseverance. (105-113, 1997.09.30)

35 The only way to earn the privilege of inheriting everything from God is through the path of love. If a person of true love brushed past you, you would not be upset; instead you would be delighted. Everyone welcomes such a person. The reason I am teaching you these things is to make you people who can go to the heavenly world, people who can breathe with and match the rhythm of the heavenly world. Thus you need to receive this kind of training while you are on earth. Only then will you

be able to dance in the place you are meant to dance. Otherwise you will be offbeat. I too will have to go to the spirit world at some point, will I not? Satan will not be able to follow. (147-117, 1986.08.31)

36 When you hear about the spirit world, you should pay immediate attention. You need to attend God and follow in the footsteps of True Parents, who have paved the way to attend God. The path I have laid down was accomplished with great difficulty. I laid that foundation from the desperate position of a living offering. You have no idea how difficult it was for me to establish each foundation, one after another. That is why God and the entire spirit world are telling you to obey me absolutely. I am not someone with whom just anyone on earth can form a connection. You have met me through a special grace. I am doing this to save the world. (329-264, 2000.08.11)

37 I have been consistent in everything I have done throughout my entire life of suffering. The words I spoke fifty years ago are the same as the words I am speaking today. What I am telling you about the spirit world today, I began speaking about fifty years ago. Since then I have continued to follow that formula. Therefore those words will remain eternally in the next world. You need to focus on those words and pass over the summit of suffering. That is why I am telling you to practice absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. In Satan's world, where can you find such a thing as absolute faith? Absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience are the promises I made to God. You need to hold on to me. Abandoning your nations and everything else, you need to cling to me. You need to practice absolute faith. (330-032, 2000.08.12)

38 God needs True Parents and you also need True Parents. We will enter the era of settlement at high noon only after establishing a global realm of unified families who have the lineage of true love, as the center of the blessed tribe of the spirit world and the physical world. We have to completely obliterate the place where Satan stands. We should live our lives without shadows twenty-four hours a day. If you live and die in such a manner for the ideal of creation, then even if you die somewhere far from home, a tower of God will be built in the place where you drop. (418-182, 2003.09.19)

Living with knowledge of the reality of the spirit world

39 We need to know about God, and next we need to know about the spirit world. Through the lineage of God we have to negate everything of Satan's lineage that has lasted until now. We need to completely overturn it and create a different world. We need to live our lives with a clear understanding that, just as night and day are opposites, if the lineage of Satan's world is night, then the lineage of God is day. It is important that we are not ignorant of God and the spirit world. We need to understand that, as sons and daughters of God, we are all one, all part of one

tree with one lineage. This is important. That is why we need to clearly know all the facts about the spirit world. We need to decide to which part of the spirit world we will go. If it is the higher part of the spirit world, we need to have expert knowledge about that part. Then we need to live our lives accordingly, matching the rhythm of that place. (338-182, 2000.10.29)

40 We will all go to the spirit world in the future. Though life on earth lasts for only an instant, the spirit world is eternal and unchanging. Therefore, when you go to that unchanging world, you will not be proud of yourself if you are changeable. Why is it that the Unification Church today teaches about the internal condition of all people from the viewpoint of a parental heart? It is because brotherly love or compatriots' love can change when the situation changes. Only the heart of a parent is unchanging. That is why the unchanging heart of a parent can remain as the heart of the object partner when you go to the next world, and can match the rhythm of that eternal world. Moreover, if there is a natural environment that you have loved with such a heart, then that environment will also remain as an unchanging object of heart. If there were a place you could never forget in your life, it would not be a scenic spot, but rather a place that is connected to you in heart, with an unforgettable story behind it. You would miss that place all your life, and you would remember it all your life. This is because the unchanging heart of genuine love is connected to that place. (23-204, 1969.05.25)

41 You must not be ignorant of the spirit world. Only when you know about the spirit world can you swim through the troubled waters of this world and survive. Heung-jin is in the position of elder brother to all members of the Unification Church, as well as to everyone in heaven and on earth. Everything Heung-jin has given to the spirit world and the physical world as the mediator was made possible by Heung-jin and True Parents. Only when you adopt the words of True Parents and Heung-jin as the absolute standard by which to lead your lives can you become participants in the liberation of the heavenly world and the earthly world and thus become owners of Cheon Il Guk. If you do not believe the facts about the next world even after they have all been laid out before you, you have no excuse. Heung Jin sacrificed himself and went to the spirit world to take responsibility for fully mobilizing it to complete Cheon Il Guk In the liberated kingdom of heaven on earth. Therefore you should attend him as your elder brother and follow him in place of the parents, the king and even God. Thus you can come to know about the organization of the spirit world. If you do not believe it, you will encounter serious problems. (398-183, 2002.12.14)

42 The spirit world is our homeland. While on earth, you need to live in accordance with the standard by which you can return to the homeland and live eternally. You cannot live your lives on earth as you please, the way people have done until now, in ignorance of the spirit world. By knowing about the spirit world and living accordingly, when you leave this world you can stand before God and connect to

the kingdom of heaven. Otherwise it will be impossible to do so. That is why you need to clearly know all the facts about the spirit world. (295-122, 1998.03.05)

43 What will you do in your life? You should leave a legacy of love behind when you go. This is the conclusion. Even if you lived in the center of a tomb of love, you would have no regrets. No matter how dreary your life in that tomb, you would have no regrets if you had lived in love. If we say, "Let us leave a legacy of love behind when we go!" our way of life will remain for eternity. If you die having lived this way, God will bless you, and in the spirit world God will bring His sons and daughters to welcome you. At that time, if there are no rings on your hand, God will put a diamond ring of the heavenly kingdom on your finger and if you are not well dressed, God will dress you in the richest apparel worn by the royal family of the heavenly kingdom. (97-169, 1978.03.12)

44 If you live with your spirit self and physical self as clear as crystal, you will have no problems when you go to the spirit world. You cannot enter heaven if there is any kind of flaw. Therefore your life on earth is important. When you go to the spirit world you will be just as you were when you lived on this earth. There are no exceptions. Your entire being will be transparent. That is why you have to do well during your earthly life. You should offer devotions and engage in self-reflection many times a day, according to a principled standard, living twenty-four hours a day, from morning to evening, in accordance with heavenly law. (294-027, 1998.06.05)

45 The higher spirit world is a place where the people who have lived for the sake of God and the entire world can go. That place is the kingdom of heaven. The heretics of spirit world are people who think only about themselves. For such people there is no future. This is also true in this world. If you think only about yourself today, can you find happiness tomorrow? To be successful, you need to overcome the pain in this hour of this day and prepare for tomorrow. Only those who practice and go through preparatory training today can seize tomorrow. Those who are satisfied with living only for today have no future. From the perspective of the future, it is clear that those who will be honored tomorrow are not the ones who are merely enjoying themselves today. They are those who give of themselves here and now. (66-100, 1973.04.15)

46 The heavenly realms are where one lives in love for the sake of others; where one lives not selfishly, but for the greater good. One who pursues only personal gains regards everyone else as an enemy; this is true even in the spirit world. One who lives for a greater cause, for the sake of the greater good, can naturally go anywhere. One who lives for the sake of the world does not need to live for America. America is included in the world, as is Korea. All nations are included. On our path, what direction can families go to be welcomed by everyone? It can only be the way of love walked for the sake of others. Our way cannot be blocked even

in Satan's world on earth; even that world has to accommodate us along the way. (215-175, 1991.02.17)

47 Why do we need to marry? It is to experience the love of a parent, the love of a couple, and the love of children. Why is this important? The spirit world is a place abundant with such types of love. You need to marry and form a family in order to train yourselves to be in sync with the spirit world. What you have is not yours. It belongs to God. You need to raise your children thinking of them as the children of God and the children of the universe. A husband and wife do not exist only as two selves. They represent heaven and earth. In that state, wherever you go, your sons and daughters will follow you, all things will follow you, and even God follows you. When you can say, "I have become a victorious person with nothing to be ashamed of before this universe," God will reply, "Yes! Since you have triumphed, I will give you the gift of My love." (92-182, 1977.04.03)

48 How can we go to heaven? We need to live immersed in the love of God. We need to love Him more than Adam and Eve did, and we need to love Jesus more than Peter, James and John did. Otherwise we cannot restore the object realm of true love in which God can love us. Only when this is restored will all go well. Do not worry about not having money, and do not concern yourself about not having sons and daughters. Just continue to follow this path for ten or twenty years. On the way, you will scale high and steep mountains. You may feel that you are gradually descending, going through nothing but hardships, but actually you are gradually ascending. The Unification Church grows by receiving blows. If there are ten people living in a household, the one who endures again and again despite opposition from the others, and who lives for the sake of the public purpose, becomes the master of that family. In other words, that person will soon become the master of the heavenly nation. (142-289, 1986.03.13)

49 When you go out into today's world, you will find people who are like your grandfather and grandmother, your father and mother, and your brothers and sisters. So love all the people of the world with the same love you have for your own family. They are not strangers. Become people who can feed others when they are hungry and help them when they face difficulties. You are born into this world, and you need to prepare to live in accordance with the rhythm of love in the next world. (132-273, 1984.06.20)

50 Heaven is the place where unfallen people who have received the Blessing on earth in God's bosom of love, had sons and daughters that God is fond of and grandchildren in whom God can rejoice, and have received His love, enter all together as a family. The kingdom of heaven is not a place you can enter without your children. Paradise, on the other hand, is a place where everyone enters separately, regardless of the affection they shared as a couple or even if they are parents and children. Paradise has nothing to do with the family. Would such a

place be heaven? Heaven is the place where the family attends the parents and where all interaction is centered on God. Could parents live happily in heaven if their children were making an uproar in hell and screaming that they were about to die? Is such a place the kingdom of heaven? This is not what the Unification Church teaches. It teaches the way to liberate hell. (19-105, 1967.12.31)

51 Your life of faith will be easier if you understand that God's providence is alive, moving along with the history of the earth to pave the path to eternity. Otherwise it is not easy to bring the providence down to earth and make a foundation of faith in our lives. By clearly understanding the limits of our time, we can bring down and settle our foundation of faith on earth. Since I am cooperating with God in this work on earth, the spirit world, where God's Will awaits fulfillment, can interact with us today, enabling us to grasp the concept of living eternally with God. In our earthly lives we are preparing for our eternal lives. They are directly connected. Unless they are connected, you cannot maintain your life of faith. (198-008, 1990.01.20)

52 What kind of people are those who can enter the kingdom of heaven? First of all, we should be people whose hearts are aligned with God's heart. If God yearns for the eternal ideal centered on His eternal purpose, our hearts must be one with His for eternity. It is not enough if our hearts are aligned with Him for ten years but then lose that alignment. Our hearts must be eternally aligned with the eternal God. To achieve that, what must we do? We must become children God can be fond of for all eternity. As such children, we should not appear as objects of sadness. Next we must be in accord with God's body. Here, body means the direction we are heading. While our thoughts represent the central point of the four directions, our body is the expression of the direction we are heading. (47-257, 1971.08.29)

53 Before desiring heaven, we should desire God's heart, and before desiring God's heart, we should think about how we should conduct our lives. We first need a heart of attendance. Our original nature reveres and yearns for the sublime and the precious. Even though we are fallen human beings, we were created with the original heart to attend the sublime and precious heart of God. If we have not led a life of attendance based on heart, we have nothing to do with heaven. To live a life of attendance we need to make preparations. After passing through a process of preparation, we need to practice a life of attendance. The place we go, after preparing for and practicing a life of attendance, is the kingdom of heaven. The destination of people who have attended God in their hearts is the kingdom of heaven. Heaven is where one's life of attendance is praised and highly esteemed. It is our destiny to go there. (8-291, 1960.02.14)

Section 3. Developing Our Spirituality

1 You do not know what great grace and blessing it is that I have revealed in detail the root of the spirit world. At present, not everyone believes in the spirit world.

Since there are many disbelievers, those who do believe will receive blessings. They can become the trunk and the first branches that grow out from the trunk. Once the central trunk and first branches of a tree develop, even if that tree lasts for a thousand years, it will grow and develop on the basis of that trunk and those branches. (392-243, 2002.09.22)

Experiencing the spirit world through prayer and offering devotions

2 There is something called the gate of the mind. You will know this when you pray. You get a different feeling depending on the time of your prayer. Praying at one o'clock in the morning is very different from praying at three o'clock. You will see for yourself when you experience this. When you go into a deep, mystical state and pray, you will see that you feel differently depending on the time of your prayer. What you feel in the morning, at noon, in the evening, and at night are all different. The feeling within our mind differs in the same way that our physical senses respond differently to the changes of the four seasons. Therefore, in offering prayers, you should know at which time you can pray well. The time when you can pray well is the time when your degree of correspondence with God is the highest. At that time you will discover the gate of the mind. Once the gate of your mind is in perfect accord with that of God, they revolve around each other and reach a certain level. At that time the path opens up so that you can experience what God feels. To reach such a position, you need to cultivate your mind. (76-127, 1975.02.02)

3 In general, people who are spiritually adept may not have clear perception with regard to the truth. They start out strong on one side, but they are weak on the other side. Since they are not consistent throughout, they cannot make their way forward. At one time or another, they will roll over and fall down. Conversely, if the side of truth is big but the spiritual side is small, that person cannot keep going. Therefore you need to make an effort to balance these two aspects in your daily life. The Bible says to worship "in spirit and truth"; that is, with prayer and with truth. This means you need to reach a level where you can balance the two aspects and harmonize them. Human beings are meant to mediate between the spirit world and the physical world. You therefore need to become people who can mediate by standing at the center of the spirit world and at the center of the world of truth. Unless you become such people, you cannot attain the position of perfection. (76-137, 1975.02.02)

4 When you offer devotions, God's grace will come to you. Those who have practiced a life of prayer will know this. When you pray, a great and mighty power will come to you. Thus, through that power, the eyes of a person who prays can see in both the physical world and the spirit world. God has carried out His providence through the religious foundation to make a connection between the supernatural realm of substantial ideology and humankind. By stimulating people's core

emotions, He causes them to desire to go to such a realm. By so doing, God is trying to connect us to the transcendental plane. (18-067, 1967.05.21)

5 What Saint Paul saw and experienced in the third heaven of the spirit world became the driving force that enabled him to carry out his mission tirelessly for fourteen years. You need to have such an experience. This also holds true for me. I too have a standard that I aspire to. Though I have not told you about it, I have a non-negotiable standard that dictates, "I will do such and such." With such a conviction, I plow my way through to the end. With this unyielding conviction, I will plow my way forward no matter what hardships and troubles I face. (27-128, 1969.11.30)

6 We speak of God's heart. If you wonder where His heart is and you listen while praying, you will hear His voice say, "Listen closely to what Reverend Moon is telling you. Do not make him sad. Make him happy instead." That is what you will hear, and this is what He will teach you to do. And if you stay awake because you miss me so much, you will find that the spirit world opens before you. The spirit world will open, so that you can sit where you are and see what I am doing in America. Such things will take place. This means you have reached a realm in which you can experience a higher level of faith, where what was previously obscure becomes real and substantial on the physical plane. This fact will usher in a great revolution in the religious world. That is why you need to have such experiences. (76-152, 1975.02.02)

7 You have continued to work from the time you joined the Unification Church until now, but you should think about the position in which you are working. You should think about your direction and your location at all times, and consider whether you are leading a self-centered life or working to harmonize the world centered on Heaven. Thus through your prayer you will come to know that God is with you. You will know this as soon as you close your eyes. You will know it even if you do not pray. When you go somewhere and speak, you will find yourself talking eloquently. If you meet a conscientious person, you will be drawn to that person right away. Everything is reciprocal. If someone becomes your subject partner or your object partner, one of you will attract the other. Even if you are meeting someone for the first time, that person could become your object partner. The essence of this principle is eternal and unchanging. Likewise, if you go to a place with receptive people, you will feel pleased and will be compelled to speak. Even if you had not intended to speak, your mouth will open up. (230-030, 1992.04.15)

8 You need to think about who you are going to meet today along the way. Wondering what kind of person the first person you meet will be like, what the second and third people you meet will be like, you should pray, "Father, what kind of person will it be? I wish to meet a person who is like this, but what kind of person will it really be?" When the person you meet is exactly the person you

imagined in your prayer, then you will feel pleased. Through such experiences, your spiritual senses will develop. As soon as you go out on the street, you will feel you are going to meet such and such a person today. The human spirit goes beyond all limits. If you think, "I will meet such and such a person today," and you actually meet such a person, you will be surprised and will exclaim, "Wow!" In this way, there are many instances in which your thoughts and intuitions from the spirit world actually come true in perfect accord with one another. You need to accumulate such experiences. (30-151, 1970.03.21)

9 The life element of the spirit world is love. It can be likened to the water that sustains the life of fish and the air that sustains our life in the human world. Love is like the air. When your physical body and all five senses are in harmony, you experience a corresponding relationship with the spirit world, through which your cells breathe love, move in rhythm with Heaven and breathe together with God. You need to have faith based on experience and actual feeling. As a husband loves and respects his wife every day through real life experience, so divine love and human love should be harmonized through real life experience. (211-065, 1990.12.28)

10 When the mind moves and the body reflects that motion, there is no consumption of energy. If our body were to block the waves of energy from the spirit world, it would not respond. However, if those waves could pass freely through, our bodies would respond with a kind of vibration and spiritual experiences would come to us automatically. If you have a spiritual experience too suddenly, you will suffer side effects. Therefore you need to experience these things naturally. In the spring flowers naturally bloom on trees, but in order for a tree to blossom, it needs to grow big enough. If a tree has only just sprouted, could it blossom? Would it work if you pulled on it to make it grow more quickly, wishing it to have flowers? If the tree were uprooted, that would be the end. Flowers must bloom naturally. Therefore I am telling you that you should not rush on the path of faith. Since it is the path through which the history of a thousand years is created, you cannot tread upon it hastily. (37-123, 1970.12.23)

11 You need to cultivate the field of your mind in line with the gate of your mind. In order to cultivate this field of the mind and pioneer its direction, you must discover God, the subject. However, you may feel that God, the subject, is obscure. If you want to connect to God, you must focus your mind and set out from your mind, for there is no other way. If you illuminate your mind from within, you can come to know its direction clearly. Then you will follow it naturally. You may have been praying facing east, but once you enter a mystical state, the direction will have already changed. Based on this, there really is a gate of the mind. (76-144, 1975.02.02)

12 In order to have spiritual experiences, first you need to pray. You need to focus your mind. If you can, you should descend to the zero point. What is the quickest way to achieve this? To go to the zero point, the quickest way is to humble yourself. That is why people who practice Zen meditation focus on the question, "What is the mind?" The answer is very simple. As God is the eternal, ideal subject of goodness, the mind can at any time achieve the position of an unchanging object partner in front of that subject being. This is referred to in the Unification Church as the spirit mind. If you go into a mystical state in prayer and engage in a reciprocal relationship with God, then transcendental power appears in you. It is when he reached nirvana that the Gautama Buddha remarked, "In heaven and earth, only I am the honored one." (76-143, 1975.02.02)

Do not ignore your intuitions or revelations in dreams

13 There are times when we find it easy to pray. There are also times when we find that we cannot pray, even after we have purified ourselves and offered devotions. It sometimes varies depending on the room. It also varies depending on the location of the room. That is inevitable. It varies depending on the location because north, south, east and west exist on the basis of a central point. Further, it varies depending on the direction. Even in the mountains there are places where you can pray well. Also there are places where evil spirits gather. Those are the shady spots. Spiritually, there are shady spots and sunny spots. After several experiences you will be able to know for yourself which are which. Intuitions, dreams, revelations and visions are inevitable phenomena as we open up and develop a relationship with God. Therefore we should not ignore them, but should strive to apply them in our lives. (76-144, 1975.02.02)

14 What is important in your family life? If I appear in your wife's or child's dream and teach something, you should believe it. If your daughter receives my teaching, you should believe her words as if they were God's Word. You should treat that teaching as absolute, creating a family environment in which you can become one with it and follow it. If a husband fails to receive that teaching, then God will surely give the teaching to the wife instead. When that happens, you should know that God is close to your family and should regard your wife's words as God words. In time you will come to know whether doing so was a good thing or a bad thing. (31-287, 1970.06.04)

15 In Korean there is the word ahmshi, a kind of intuition about something. What do I mean by that? For instance, you may be casually walking down the street and you happen to see a bird that had been sitting on a fence fly away. The fact that the bird flew away makes you feel something intuitively. Such phenomena will start taking place in your daily life. And the number of these inklings will increase. Somebody may say something that seems random to you and yet it may cause you

to have a realization about something else. The number of such experiences will gradually increase. (76-130, 1975.02.02)

16 When you pass the stage of receiving intimations, what kinds of phenomena will take place? You will start receiving revelations in your dreams. Such dreams are not the ones you have when you are sleeping deeply. Saint Paul experienced the third heaven while half awake. While you are half awake and half asleep, you will feel the sensations of such phenomena or voices coming through your five senses. You should not let such phenomena just pass by. Instead, you should compile them and analyze them scientifically in order to understand what kind of connection they are trying to establish with you. By doing so, you will certainly grasp their meaning. That is why your unforgettable revelations through dreams, or other such phenomena, will come true one hundred percent. (76-131, 1975.02.02)

17 Whatever people or things you are connected to when you are half asleep will connect to you substantially, in reality. You may be singing with someone in your dream and that song you are singing will not only be a song in the dream but will actually be sung by someone next to you. Such phenomena will take place. What does it mean? It means that you have entered a realm wherein your state of mind can resonate on the spiritual level. You should regard such things as very precious. Then what will happen next? If God exists, where will He appear? He will appear not in the air but through your mind. Why then are you unable to experience such things? It is because your mind has not yet firmly established its existence and you are people who are dragged around by your body. Once your mind has firmly established its existence and a position of a higher dimension of character has been formed, the situation will surely be different. (76-131, 1975.02.02)

18 After you pass through the stage of revelations, you enter the stage of visions. In this stage you enter the spirit world and have various experiences throughout the day. You are connected to such a world. You can reach a state where you feel God in your daily life. Unless your faith is based on such experiences, you cannot apply the great Will of God to your everyday life. Therefore, people of faith without such experiences cannot be trusted. You should know how precious is faith based on experience and develop it. Then the spirit world will work through you. Spiritual power will enter your body like electric power. When this power finds its way into you, which is similar to coming in contact with high voltage, then a power that is stronger than your awareness enters your body; that is an awareness of another world. (76-134, 1975.02.02)

19 To have spiritual experiences, you need to offer prayers and devotions. You should never ignore the visions or dreams that appear to you. The matter of how you can control them and apply them in your actual life, the realm in which you should practice them, is a most important aspect of your life of faith. (76-153, 1975.02.02)

Section 4. Blessed Families and Eternal Life

1 Blessed marriage and eternal life begin from True Parents. They cannot exist without True Parents. True Parents need to resolve these astonishing matters and bring about the unification of the spirit world and the physical world, as well as unity within the earthly world. The world is bound to first oppose me and then follow me. Without going before God and receiving the royal seal, the unity of the spirit world and the unity of the physical world cannot be achieved. No matter how much the earth opposes me, it cannot block the way I am meant to go. The time will come when the angelic world and the spirit world will be mobilized. Ancestors will be mobilized to bring paralyzing nightmares and to grasp the necks of those who do not follow me, similar to what Satan has been doing. (467-121, 2004.09.03)

Blessed families are the key to the gates of the kingdom of heaven

2 After marrying, the moment when a couple first experiences conjugal love is the moment of their perfection as a man and a woman. They reign supreme. The man is the antenna that represents God's entire plus world, all male characteristics and right-sided things. The woman is the antenna that represents God's entire minus world, all female characteristics and left-sided things. Their union is like the point at which a negative charge and a positive charge meet, at the top of the antenna. The place where a man and a woman make love is where they achieve perfection as a man and as a woman. The royal palace of love that can settle on earth as the center of heaven and earth begins from that point. Then the origin of love can finally emerge and connect to our life. Our lineage is connected to that place. At the same time, a nation comes forth from that place. The kingdom of heaven on earth and in heaven begins from the place where the gates of the first love are opened. (261-017, 1994.05.15)

3 The Blessing given in the Unification Church opens the path that fallen human beings must follow at all costs. No matter how much people oppose it, the Blessing is of great importance because it allows us to connect the spirit world with the physical world. Today most people of faith think that salvation means individual salvation. They believe that if they practice their faith well, they will go to the kingdom of heaven. However, based on God's original ideal, people are not meant to go to the kingdom of heaven alone. Rather, they are meant to go together with their beloved spouse and their beloved family. (143-235, 1986.03.19)

4 Who has the key to the gates of the kingdom of heaven? Adam and Eve should have had the key to heaven and they should have opened the gates on the levels of the individual, family, tribe, people and nation. Now that blessed families have been organized, they should be brought together so that the gates to the kingdom of heaven can be opened with the key. This can take place on the foundation of the joint Blessing of the spirit world and the physical world in complete unity and

oneness, which has been established on the worldwide level. Thus the kingdom of heaven, which has remained vacant for millions of years since the time of Adam and Eve, can be filled all at once. (316-213, 2000.02.12)

5 You cannot go to the kingdom of heaven alone. You can enter the gates of heaven only after you have your ideal object partner. In order for fallen human beings to enter, they must go through the history of restoration, the history of resurrection, and the history of re-creation. I am giving you the Blessing to open the gates of heaven. By establishing the Blessing, I have opened wide the gates of heaven, which were closed to you. Though the gates are open, you cannot enter by yourself. Only families can enter. In other words, you need to have sons and daughters and enter the kingdom with them. Yours is a historical family with historical fruits and accomplishments. Since God's six-thousand- year history of restoration went through the eras of the first Adam, the second Adam, and the third Adam, you need to go through three sons, and those three sons need to have their own object partners. Then you can enter the gates of heaven as a family. (152-240, 1963.05.25)

6 Heaven is a place that people from both the spirit world and physical world can enter through the gates of True Parents' love. If Adam and Eve had not fallen and had entered heaven as loving true parents, their family would have become the model for all families. Thus God's original model family would have entered heaven. In this case, all families that were connected to the love of the realm of the royal family, inheriting this tradition through history, would be like branches sprouting north, south, east and west from the one central trunk. That is why they all would have entered heaven according to the law of integration. Only in this way can a unified world come about. (231-077, 1992.05.31)

7 According to the principle of the universe, the three stages of parents, couples and children are supposed to unite and form a four-position foundation. Those who fail to reach this standard are expelled from the realm of those who pass, and so they feel anguish. Based on these three stages, and centered on God and on Adam and Eve, the vertical world and the horizontal world can unfold. This reflects the Principle. That is why the horizontal world can unfold only when Adam and Eve have sons and daughters. When the horizontal world grows, the vertical world is formed naturally. The horizontal foundation of the body is the sons and daughters and the horizontal foundation of the mind is the spirit world. From there, God can finally go to both the spirit world and the physical world for the first time and thus the kingdom of heaven can be realized on earth. (96-030, 1978.01.01)

8 What is the Completed Testament Age? It is the age of the settlement of the family, and extends to the settlement of the tribe, people and nation. That is why I have declared the complete settlement of Cheon Il Guk. Everything is done now. The spirit world and the physical world will become one. In the spirit world, the paths from hell to paradise and the kingdom of heaven have all been opened as

well. However, the decisive reorganization of those places can only be carried out on earth; it cannot be done in the spirit world. Is there such a term as the establishment of kingship in the Bible? Can you find the word homeland there? The Bible does mention the realm of chosen people. Everyone must go through the gates of the Blessing; not even the chosen people can go to the kingdom of heaven without receiving the Blessing. The path of faith should be completely focused on receiving the Blessing. (367-237, 2002.01.22)

Blessed families and the spirit world

9 When you receive the Blessing, the way to the kingdom of heaven opens up before you. But even among blessed families there are people who have carried out fallen acts, so paradise and hell arise in the blessed family spirit world. These realms are within the realm of God's dominion. Just as good angels helped God in His work, since the entire spirit world is supposed to receive the Blessing, these blessed spirits, in the position of ancestors, assist those on earth. Henceforth, when the descendants of such ancestors are born on the earth, the ancestors are supposed to guide them to receive the Blessing and protect their children of direct lineage. By doing this, along with their descendants, they can cross over to a new world that has nothing to do with Satan. (342-011, 2001.01.09)

10 Couples who were blessed on earth will be together even when they go to the spirit world, which is an eternal world. No matter how many couples and children there are in this fallen world, they are scattered and separated in the spirit world. They are separated, and they do not know where the others have gone. Without a reciprocal connection, they cannot even meet one another. They are all separated in the spirit world according to the state of their spirituality. But as I have told you, if they are united with love at the center through the Blessing, the whole family will dwell together in the spirit world. (250-335, 1993.10.15)

11 When you go to the spirit world, no one tells you to go to hell. You go there on your own. You go to the place that matches your own level. Even in the case of Unification Church members, though the goal is to go to the same realm, where you come to dwell will depend on your spiritual state. Then in what ways are blessed families different? The members of a blessed family cannot be separated from each other no matter how hard they try. When you pass to the spirit world, if the wife failed to fulfill her responsibility, the husband must take joint responsibility and resolve this. Whether the wife has done wrong or the husband has done wrong, or whether it is the sons and daughters who have done wrong, they are all involved. Since the kingdom of heaven is a place where the family must enter together, the family must be united. If a member of that family has done wrong, the whole family must wait until the wrongdoing of that family member can be resolved and atoned for. That is why, one way or another, each family member

needs to reach perfection on this earth before passing into the spirit world. (242-110, 1993.01.01)

12 When you go to the spirit world, you have to live in protective confinement. You have to wait for thousands of years. Even in the case of those who are blessed, do you think your sons and daughters will not ask, “Mom, why did you make me this way? Why did you drag me here?” Do you think your sons and daughters will just stay quiet? Your families are at different levels. So you will go to the place that is appropriate to your level and stay there for a long time. Then your ancestors and your sons and daughters will accuse you, saying, “Look at the problems you’ve caused. Why couldn’t you do better?” You will have to stay there for as long as those accusations last. This is not easy. So you should do well while on earth. You should do all that I ask of you. (207-099, 1990.11.01)

13 Unless you advance step by step along the path I have taken to the realm that is liberated and free, and report on my behalf, you will be caught. Otherwise you will not be able to enter the kingdom of heaven. Groups of Cain- type and Abel-type people who fight at the gates cannot enter the good spirit world. Heaven will restrict them. That is why, even if members of the Unification Church have received the Blessing, if they fail to enter the gates of the kingdom of heaven because of their wrongdoing, a paradise and even a hell for blessed families will be created in the spirit world. (469-307, 2004.09.22)

14 If you go to the spirit world after ten years or a hundred years and you say, “Heavenly Father! I have come here. Since I know True Parents, I will go to where they are,” do you think you can actually go there? If you are not connected to the missions of the tribal messiah, the national messiah, the global and the cosmic messiah, you cannot enter the kingdom of heaven and live freely. What a fearful and serious position this is! When you think about the present situation, how could you possibly deny and ignore that? (491-323, 2005.03.27)

15 If you live as you please after receiving the Blessing, you are out. You only have a document; you do not have the substance. The kingdom of heaven is the substantial world, so when you enter the spirit world it will not be enough if you only have a certificate without the substance. The same is true for me. Even if I am the Lord of the Second Advent, without the substantial realm of the spirit world, I cannot assert the substantial realm on earth. That is why the spirit world needs to be liberated. (362-038, 2001.12.04)

16 Every day you must know the reality of the spirit world, which is the subject world. In our daily lives, while we are eating or teaching our children, it is regretful that we do not know the reality of the spirit world. This is more important than the record of the lives of our ancestors or the traditions of our nation. We live together with True Parents, the Parents of Heaven and Earth, knowing their actual

circumstances. We know the heavenly world and the earthly world. It is the responsibility of each of our families to eliminate everything that blocks us from attaining the ideal standard, no matter what sacrifices we have to make. You have not yet become liberated central families. You are in a position where you need to go beyond your nation and your world. If you fail to do so, you will have to stay at your current level in the spirit world. (382-141, 2002.06.21)

17 The paradise and hell that came about because of Satan's lineage will be wiped out all at once. Then based on the best, ideal blessed families who are closest to God, the kingdom of heaven of the highest class will be formed. Underneath that, the paradise for blessed families will form. Furthermore, just as there is the middle spirit world for Buddhism or Confucianism, a middle spirit world for blessed families will be created. In fact, many classes will be created. Next there will be a prison for blessed families. But this prison will not be a prison of hell within Satan's realm. Until now, things have happened in such a way that descendants saved their ancestors. Now that the principled first son's position has been established and there is no indemnity to be paid, the elder brothers or parents who have sons and daughters or relatives in hell, or anyone they know in the lower places, can go and help them whenever they wish to. They can lay down a bridge. Thus such people can be restored quickly. (329-256, 2000.08.10)

18 The kingdom of heaven is originally a place for families to enter. Have blessed families reached the highest position in the spirit world? Even in the case of blessed families, if they cannot surmount the realm of the eight stages within the fallen realm, they have to stay where they are. This is why, even though all blessed families have been liberated, the kingdom of heaven for families, paradise for families, middle spirit world for families, and hell for families have all come about. However, though this earth is under Satan's dominion, it is not eternal, and your ancestors who have gone before you are tugging on your legs to drag you forward. They are pulling you up. That is why restoration can be much quicker. At present, we are teaching people to once again live the religious way of life. (326-307, 2000.07.16)

The best gift to take to the spirit world

19 What gift can you offer when you stand before God in the spirit world? It is neither money nor the prestige of an academic title. Neither is it the affection you have for your loving spouse, nor a well-lived life, nor any other such thing. Such things cannot be gifts. You should take your love for God and your love for the world to that place. That is what remains. In John 3:16 it is written that God so loved the world, testifying to His love. That is why He sent His only begotten son. His only begotten son is the person who came to love the world. For this reason, if your faith is based on love, you will not perish. You will be saved. Since the Lord loves the world, you should love the world together with Him. (98-330, 1978.08.13)

20 Do you have a special gift you can take to the kingdom of heaven? When you go to the spirit world you will see the martyred, loyal servants of God lined up before you. In front of them, do you think you will be able to open up the bundle you have brought? What kind of suffering has the Unification Church gone through and what kind of hardships have you gone through? Without going through whatever small hardships you have had, how could you say that you have lived for the sake of the nation and the world? It should be only natural for you to say, "Though I have suffered, I do not think of it as suffering." But you still have some way to go. You should be able to go to the spirit world, open up your bundle, and say, "These are the gifts I have prepared from my whole life, so please accept them!" Considering the fact that when women marry they take large bundles of things with them to their new home, should you go empty-handed with only your spirit self when you go to the kingdom of heaven? (32-071, 1970.06.21)

21 This earth is the endless producer of the citizens of heaven. No one has realized this. The life course of the original couple living on this earth should have been one in which they gave birth to sons and daughters as the citizens of the kingdom of heaven and raised them to become perfected people. Therefore, when a baby was born, that baby would have become a gift they could take along when the time came to go before God. Without such gifts, you cannot hold your head up proudly. When you return to your hometown, what can you boast of before your parents? Just as you would boast of how well you have raised your sons and daughters, the same would hold true when you go to the spirit world. When you go before God, there is no better gift than bringing God's children, the citizens of heaven, whom you have raised on this earth. Things like money, power and knowledge are not important. (229-015, 1992.04.09)

22 Parents with many sons and daughters have many object partners of love, so when they go to the spirit world they can freely meet anyone in all directions. There are no evil women among those who have given birth to many children. Why is this so? It is because they have the mind of a mother who wants to raise her children. When they go to a village, they compare other children with their sons and daughters. If they are not as good as their own children, they think, "I wish I could help them." Mothers naturally ascend to a higher state of love in the realm of daily life. Those who have raised many children are thus in the highest place in the spirit world. (239-156, 1992.11.24)

23 What kind of place is earth? It is a factory to produce the citizens of the heavenly kingdom. Heaven is vast and unchanging. It is infinite. So even if each person gives birth to a hundred children, there is no overpopulation because heaven is so spacious. It is a world that can accommodate any number of people. Therefore you should not practice birth control. When you go to the next world, what matters will be how many citizens of the heavenly kingdom you have made and brought with you. You should know that when you bring many true sons and daughters of the

heavenly kingdom, they are to your advantage, for they will serve as data in determining your rank in the heavenly world, as the basis on which you can win commendation. (202-040, 1990.05.01)

24 When you go to the spirit world in the future, what should you take with you? You do not go there with money. You do not go there in the name of the Unification Church either. Therefore what you should do from now on is to see how many sons and daughters you can create for God to love before you go there. Everyone can do this. When people give birth to babies, they can have only a limited number of children. What do you have to go through in the process of restoration? When you create many spiritual sons and daughters from among those in Satan's world for God to love, this accomplishment connects with your ancestors and opens the way to liberate them. This is the greatest gift you can give in the course of restoration. (230-025, 1992.04.15)

25 When you go to the spirit world you do not take money with you. Each person needs to restore more than 120 people. The citizens of the kingdom of heaven were all lost. By engrafting them, we bring them back to their proper place. For you to go through the twelve pearly gates in the spirit world, what matters is how many citizens of the kingdom of heaven you have recovered from Satan and restored while you were still on earth. To do so, you must shed tears, sweat and blood. With the heart of re-creation, you should invest your heart more than the fathers and mothers, husbands and wives, and sons and daughters in Satan's world, investing your heart and shedding tears, sweat and blood. Otherwise you cannot claim any citizens of the heavenly kingdom as your own. Your position of glory and your proximity to God in the next world will be determined according to this number. (211-352, 1991.01.01)

26 What can you boast of when you go to the spirit world? You can boast of the number of lives you have saved. The first person you saved, the second person, how many beyond your own tribe, how many people from how many nations you have connected to new life; this is your wealth. This, and only this, is your wealth. You will miss nothing in the spirit world because it lacks nothing, but if you did miss something, it would be true people. Thus those devoted subjects who labored diligently to raise true people will naturally become glorious sons and daughters in the heavenly world. (30-148, 1970.03.21)

27 It is more important to harvest citizens for God's kingdom than to eat. However, people are not clear about this. This should be their principal occupation. It is the main occupation of people who live on this earth. Among the things you should do in your lifetime, there is nothing more important than this. In this world, having a job and a successful career and saving money all slip away. No matter how much money you amass, it will be of no use in the other world. Material things are not necessary in the next world. There is no need for knowledge. Even if there is

something you have never learned, your mind will already know it. You will come to know everything within a week. (230-030, 1992.04.15)

28 In going to the spirit world, the kingdom of heaven, what you need are spiritual sons and daughters. You need spiritual children. By witnessing you can resurrect spirits. Therefore the work you carry out on earth does not affect only the earth. You are carrying out that work in order to bring an end to all that was defiled through the Fall. (362-303, 2001.12.13)

29 Heaven is an infinite world where everything is connected by bridges of love. If the people you have witnessed to are spread across the world, through them paths will be formed over which you can travel to and fro, covering a much wider area when you go to the spirit world. Everyone will want to connect and relate with you. Just as on earth you connected to others through ideology, a similar structure will be organized around you in heaven. It is like having many students you have educated. When you pass on to the next world after resolving everything on earth, you will be able to resolve things in the spirit world through your relationships in a much wider realm of activity. (230-026, 1992.04.15)

30 You should not let time fly by aimlessly. Only when you have given birth to and raised sons and daughters during your younger years can you leave behind a foundation that you can be proud of before your descendants. Only when those children become great people can you be proud before history. If you do not have historical accomplishments that you can be proud of, you may be able to join the ranks of your family and your town, but you will not be able to join the ranks of your nation. To reach the national level, you need accomplishments that can remain in the historical tradition. Everyone desires to leave behind something for the nation, for the world and for heaven and earth. Therefore you need to know clearly that your life purpose is to establish your realm of ownership. When you follow God's Will, like it or not, you can never consider giving up. (230-027, 1992.04.15)

CHAPTER 4 Returning Resurrection and Divine Spiritual Works

Section 1. The Last Days and Returning Resurrection

1 How do we characterize the times we are living in? When we look around the world, we find many people suffering from mental illness. This is because the spirit world and the physical world are intersecting. When the two worlds intersect, it is not the good people who are aware of this first. Who knows this news the fastest? It is not the good people who learn of it first; rather, it is the enemies who oppose them. This is because the enemies always immediately strive to intercept the news meant for the good side. In the same way, when the spirit world comes down to the earth, it is not the good spirits who come first but the evil spirits. (75-251, 1975.01.05)

Phenomena of the Last Days

2 As a result of the Fall in the Garden of Eden, Eve became an enemy because of the archangel, and Adam became an enemy because of Eve. They became enemies to each other. Now everyone is an enemy. Therefore even your children are your enemies. You cannot trust them. When the Last Days come, even your mother and father will be your enemies. Your siblings will be your enemies. A time will come when nations become such enemies that their relations are rent all to pieces. When such a time comes, where will we find ethics and morality? When the time comes in which global trends are tossed about as if in a raging storm and we can neither discern our direction nor distinguish between what is good and what is false, we should know it is the Last Days. Now is that very time. (50-213, 1971.11.07)

3 What characterizes the era of the Last Days of the world? When all people of the world place absolute importance on individualistic love, the Last Days have come. This statement derives from our understanding of fallen love. The global era that exalts individualistic love is the era of the Last Days. It is an era in which people go their way, pursuing love fixed solely on themselves while denying love for their nation, love for their own people and love for their family. They stand not on the side of human ethics or morality but rather follow the desires of the flesh. (130-171, 1984.01.15)

4 Your body and mind are in conflict, husband and wife are in conflict and parents and children are in conflict. Everything plunges into chaos in the Last Days. In the face of my teachings, people in the spirit world are falling into utter confusion as they try to cling to the religious views they have held until now. To be able to return to earth, spirits need to have actual accomplishments they can show to the Unification Church members and to their descendants. They cannot return to earth without actual accomplishments. I have walked the entire course of indemnity that makes returning to earth possible. I am the king of Abels on behalf of God. In the original family of Adam, Cain killed Abel, and this act has been repeated throughout the ages of history until today. In this world of Satan's bloodline, God cannot intervene. Why suddenly, in the Last Days, are the saints and the elders in the spirit world completely reversing their positions? It is inevitable; the spirit world has to be shaken up all at once. (556-160, 2007.02.18)

5 This time, today, is when the Will of God manifests upon the earth. On the earth today both Cain and Abel exist. As is written in Chapter 13 of the Gospel of Matthew, on this earth there are both wheat and chaff. And as the Gospel of John states in Chapter 10, there is the good shepherd who enters by the gate, and at the same time there is the false shepherd who does not go through the gate, but climbs in by another way. We need to face the fact that if we do wrong, these very phenomena can occur in our church. (3-207, 1957.11.01)

6 The Bible teaches that the Messiah will come in the Last Days. The term “Messiah” refers to a person who has to restore three things: eternal truth, eternal character and the true love that true parents give to their children. This is why Jesus said he was the bridegroom who came to find his bride. In the Last Days, the Lord of the Second Advent must walk a course opposite to that of the Fall. (52-092, 1971.12.14)

7 The Lord is the subject being. Therefore, when he comes to the fallen world, he has to speak the truth. When people hear that truth, both their body and mind will be bound to him. When human beings fell, they wept; they shed tears of grief as they were dragged away by Satan. But in order to return to God, they must be drawn to the Lord with gladness. Such a movement of reversal must happen in the Last Days. Since human beings went over to the other side after being led by the words of Satan, all people in the fallen world can be brought back to this side led by the words, the message, of the Lord of the Second Coming. That is why his words have to surpass those of the archangel and he has to stand in a position where God acknowledges him. On that foundation he can lead all humankind with authority. (52-092, 1971.12.14)

8 We have been told that in the Last Days we should anoint our heads with oil, go into a closed room and pray. It is a time when we should not listen to what others say. It is a time when we should listen only to the words of the bridegroom. Not even my pastor or my companion in faith can support me when I reach the final summit. If I am bound for heaven and he is bound for hell, he will cling to me and pull me back. It is the same as if my beloved friend is drowning and when I go in to save him, that friend clings to me and pulls me down. At such a time I cannot feel pity for him. There is no leader who can save my life. Such a time is coming. In the districts, nations, religious organizations and societies that experience such a time before others, chaos will ensue. People will be unable to trust each other. A pastor will not be able to trust an elder, nor the elder the pastor. A lay believer will not trust the church council; sects will not trust one another and associations and political parties will not trust each other. The citizens will not trust the president; the president will not trust the citizens; the people will not trust their country and they will overturn it. Everything will be engulfed in a melee of mistrust. In a world where we cannot trust anyone, chaos will reign in all directions. In such a place, all we can do is trust ourselves and seek the position of faith that Heaven can acknowledge. (10-203, 1960.10.02)

9 Now chaos from the spirit world will unfold on the earth. The chaotic spirit world will attack the earth. This is why nowadays many people are suffering from mental illness and have become half-crazed. The number of people who mutter to themselves, for example, will increase gradually. From the spirit world, billions of spirits will invade the earth. Why do they do so? It is because religion has been unable to fulfill its proper role. Religion failed to stand up as God wanted it to. It

was supposed to stand vertically, its eyes on Heaven, in relation to the people on the horizontal plane, but it has collapsed completely. This is why the spirit world is invading the earth. Don't we view an insane person as possessed by a ghost? Why do spirits enter people? It is in order to use them. Conscientious people, especially those who are literary or who are engaged in disciplines related to art, are more sensitive than ordinary people. They have taller antennae. Such people are affected by such influences first, and mental illness is a global phenomenon of the Last Days. (155-190, 1965.10.27)

10 At this time, billions of spirits are attacking the earth in order to occupy it. The phenomenon of mental illness is one aspect of this. Around the year 2000, you all may be able to communicate spiritually, be it with evil spirits or good spirits. Against the counsel not to engage in war, we may have no choice but to fight. Such a time may come. The mission of the Unification Principle is to defend us against this eventuality. From a high radio antenna comes a ringing sound. This is like the phenomenon of mental illness. The most fearful thing is if only evil spirits are mobilized and invade the earth. In that situation, the question is how things will turn out. No matter how many people there are on earth, they will end up being attacked by evil spirits. This is why God has been preparing for this. Centered on the good spirits, He is expanding His foundation in the spirit world continuously. (55-030, 1972.04.23)

The returning resurrection of spirits

11 If you fail to equip yourself fully during your time on earth and you end up going to the spirit world with Satan claiming dominion over your mind, how will you be able to manifest the works of God? It will be extremely difficult. If you fail to fulfill your responsibility on earth, you will have to set up your descendants in your place. You will have to set them up in a position like that of a messiah who can save you. You will have to help them and cooperate with them, taking their circumstances into consideration. You will have no choice but to cooperate with them, so that through them you can fulfill the responsibility you failed to carry out while you were alive. This is the phenomenon of returning resurrection. (30-176, 1970.03.22)

12 Originally human beings should not have been under Satan's rule. They should have lived in the realm of God's direct dominion. As a result of the Fall, however, they came to live in the fallen realm. In order to escape from that realm, they have to pay indemnity as individuals and as families. Without indemnity they cannot escape. Therefore spirits unfailingly come forth through the phenomenon of returning to earth in every historical age. Some people interpret this as transmigration or reincarnation. This spiritual phenomenon applies to you as well. If you practiced your faith on the individual level only, and died, because you never had a family, you would have to go through the level of the family and eventually the levels of the tribe, people, nation and world. You have no idea how many

billions of years that would take. The time needed would be nothing short of infinite. (54-279, 1972.03.26)

13 We know very well that through his death Jesus substantially testified about his entire hope to all of heaven and earth. On the way to the cross he prayed, "My Father, if it is possible, let this cup pass from me; yet not what I want but what You want." (Matt. 26:39) As he prayed he surely realized, with intensity unrivaled by anyone, that the more the fear of death washed over his heart the closer the day of hope drew near. In other words, he felt that after going beyond the death of his physical body, a new world of hope would unfold before him, and he yearned for that world. Because he hoped for resurrection in an eternally liberated body after his physical death, and he yearned for it, after he died he was able to resurrect in glory. (6-047, 1959.03.22)

14 The central root, central trunk and central bud are connected to me. As the mainstream, the central root, central trunk, central branch and central bud are connected in a consistent flow to the individual level and the family level. In short, they are alive. They have gone through the returning resurrection. All those who connect as branches to the Lord of the Second Coming can live. By doing this, everyone from Adam's family to the world level can stand in the position to be resurrected simultaneously. It is a work of engrafting and perfecting in only a few years what has multiplied for tens of thousands of years, so the kingdom of heaven of individuals and the kingdom of heaven of families on earth, and even the kingdom of heaven in heaven, can be completed at the same time. (243-217, 1993.01.10)

15 I could not do two things at once, so I had to carry them out separately. For that reason, centering on the spiritual standard, I established Heung-jin as commander-in-chief of the spirit world. The Lord of the Second Advent came to earth, centered on God, and in the opposite direction I sent Heung-jin from earth, centered on me, in the position of the Lord of the Second Advent of the heavenly kingdom. I have united the divided spiritual and physical worlds. I had my son carry out the work of the realm of resurrection in the spirit world in place of his living father, with the authority of the Blessing, based on the fact that the spirit world did not have a connection to the love of True Parents. Since the ceremony of rebirth, the ceremony of resurrection and the ceremony of eternal life can now be performed, and based on this supreme foundation having been laid on earth centered on the First Israel, the Second Israel, which is the United States, and the Third Israel, which is Korea, the boundary line dividing the spiritual and physical worlds has been abolished. (441-244, 2004.03.05)

16 Now there is nothing to worry about. We can just let things take their own course. What will happen is that spirits from the spirit world will return to earth. The failure to fulfill God's providential Will to save the spirit world through three

ages—the Old Testament Age, the New Testament Age and the Completed Testament Age—will be completely reversed and thus will be realized automatically. Through the completion of the Old Testament, the New Testament and the Completed Testament Ages, the providence automatically sets its direction and moves forward. The spirit world will set its direction centered on God and centered on the earth; the earth will not move ahead of it. The right of the eldest son will be restored based on the original standard, and God, our cosmic Parent, and the Lord of the Second Advent on earth, that is, the Parents of Heaven and Earth, will establish their lineage through a new ideology based on the Blessing and they will move forward horizontally. Thus the gates to the kingdom of heaven on earth and in heaven will open automatically. There everything will be overturned and the entire spirit world will come down. (402-289, 2003.01.17)

17 We should wait eagerly for the day of resurrection. Heaven has to be resurrected through the earth. We think the base of resurrection is in heaven, but it is not. It is on earth. This earth is the center. The base of resurrection and the place of resolution are on this earth. If resurrection does not take place on this earth, the resurrection of heaven, the resurrection of humankind, the resurrection of all things and the resurrection of people in hell will remain mere words. Therefore a resurrected person must appear on earth first. In the spirit world, there are hell, the middle spirit world, paradise and heaven. To this day, people who have shown loyalty to Heaven have gone to paradise. Even Jesus is in paradise. In achieving the purpose of resurrection, the indirect destination is the spirit world and the direct destination is the earth. The spirit world is the place that must be resurrected, but the earth is where resurrection must happen first. Therefore only when we first can declare on earth, “I have been resurrected; I have concluded the purpose of resurrection,” can we go to the kingdom of heaven in heaven. (9-085, 1960.04.17)

18 What is the meaning of the phrase “opening of heaven and earth”? What people would be eligible to participate in the first resurrection? It is those who have passed through the gates of the Blessing. That is why even the elderly in their eighties need to become young again. That may sound strange, but even grandmothers and grandfathers need to marry their spouse again. This is because, in order to establish the nation of the Third Israel and become its citizens, we need to pass through the gates of the Blessing. (19-105, 1967.12.31)

Section 2. Divine Spiritual Works and Spiritual Phenomena

1 The spirit world and the earthly world are not two separate worlds cut off from each other. Under the fundamental principle of existence they have a mutual relationship of giving and receiving, that is, mutual exchange. We began our association originally as the Holy Spirit Association, with the aim of achieving unity through divine spiritual power. What is divine spirit? It does not refer to distributing transitory spiritual power or spiritual activity. It is the power of God’s love through

which the spirit world and the human world can harmonize and resonate based on true love. The Unification Church movement of course moves the hearts of people through a lifestyle of true love, living for the sake of others and investing oneself for others, but also through gaining the spirit world's cooperation. (260-135, 1994.05.01)

Spiritual phenomena and our attitude toward them

2 In the early days of Christianity, all manner of wonders took place, including speaking in tongues, carrying out works of the divine spirit and uttering prophecies. Because there were so many works of the divine spirit in the early church, ignorant people who did not understand the content and who encountered spiritual works here and there became confused. To overcome that confusion, they said, "The words of the Bible are best." In the Bible we read that "In the Last Days I will pour out my Spirit upon all flesh." (Joel 2:28) This foretells that in the final days of Christian history, the phenomena of the early church will reappear in the world. Many groups will arise and will be accused from all quarters of being insane or heretical. The Unification Church is one such group. (6-184, 1959.04.26)

3 When those who have received an outpouring of the spirit do not know the reason for it, Heaven enlightens them. When they open their eyes, they see the spirit world, and when they act, they behave like the people in the spirit world. Their eyes, hearts and actions may be completely out of the ordinary. They may look like lunatics. Long ago, did Jesus appear to be a normal person? In the eyes of many people of the time, he must have seemed like a fool or a dullard. In the future, such spiritual phenomena will sweep through us, sweep through societies and sweep through religious bodies. Therefore around the world today the number of patients suffering from incomprehensible mental illnesses and diseases of the nervous system is increasing. A world of fear, a world of anxiety and fretfulness, is fast approaching. This is because Jesus, the Son of God, lived his whole life engaged with the Will, with fretfulness, anxiety and an agitated heart. That is why similar phenomena will sweep the world. When that happens, people will not be able to find their direction, try as they may, and events will come to pass in which what is true seems false and what is false seems true. An era is coming in which what is false will gain power and what is true will lose power, an era in which what is false prospers and what is true loses its voice. We need to pass through such a period. (6-184, 1959.04.26)

4 The more the Last Days advance, while some people are seized with dread, others will be seized with joy. Such developments will inevitably emerge. While there are some people who are extremely evil, there will be others who are extremely good. Something that is extremely evil cannot invade an extremely good person and something that is extremely good cannot have anything to do with an extremely evil person. Even God will not be able to hold on to this society. A time will come

when even a spiritual person, even a person who has received the grace of Heaven, will be unable to unite this world, try though he might. When that time comes, the people living in the extremely evil world, the people who have failed to form a connection with Heaven, will surely find themselves subject to judgment. A time will come when a state like this will unfold in your heart: the mind desires to go this way, but the body desires to go that way. Those who struggle due to their failure to set the conditions to be able to unite their body and mind are surely bound for hell. (7-237, 1959.09.20)

5 God carries out His providence centered on a specific religious denomination. At the time of Jesus, He developed His providence internally in advance, without anyone knowing, centered on the families of Joseph and Zechariah. In the very same way, right after the liberation of Korea, Heaven prepared the content of this providence unknown to anyone. Thus, there had to be a group that could fulfill the mission of the archangel. What was lost spiritually will have to be found substantially, and the time to do this was the time before the liberation, so in that period one person who could carry out the mission of the archangel in the flesh had to come forth. This is why, from among the people who can communicate with the spirit world, some came forward claiming they were Peter or Paul, or asserting, “I am John the Baptist.” The twelve disciples did not have faith in Jesus, so to atone for having failed to lay a foundation for him, their spirits had to come down to lay this foundation substantially on earth. Such work has been carried out until this day. (50-207, 1971.11.07)

6 What is Jesus’ greatest sorrow? It is that he was unable to establish a substantial realm on earth with his disciples. The twelve disciples were unable to unite centered on Jesus; Joseph’s family was also unable to become one centered on Jesus; Judaism was unable to unite and the nation of Israel was unable to unite. Jesus tried to manage the situation based on the twelve disciples, but everything broke down. Jesus left behind the model spiritual standard, but because he could not establish the substantial standard, we need to reproduce the model of twelve disciples who establish the base of spiritual victory and work with the Lord of the Second Advent on the earth. After the foundation has been laid—that is, once the disciples who did not believe in Jesus and expelled him can believe in him and work again—the work of the Second Advent can begin. That is why in the time before the liberation of Korea, among those who could communicate with the spirit world, people claimed to be Peter, John, Paul or Abraham, and people representing many of the prophets who have come and gone in the course of history appeared all at once in the spiritual groups in the horizontal world of Korea. (50-208, 1971.11.07)

7 Up to the present day, because evil spirits have come down to earth and carried out their work, there have been phenomena such as mental illness and the degradation of people’s character, but this will not be the case henceforth. We will conquer our bodies, form a realm of resonance and immediately enter the higher

realm of spiritual experience. A realm of noble character will be formed. (259-163, 1994.04.02)

8 There are only two kinds of spiritual phenomena: those that are caused by God, and those that are not. We can tell right away; that is, when we classify spiritual phenomena as good or evil, we have a standard that tells us what a good phenomenon should be like. We should not move forward unless we check the phenomena according to that standard. Every few hundred years or so, a period of great transition or extensive spiritual phenomena comes about. When this takes place, a nation either perishes or prospers. If evil spirits are mobilized, it perishes. If good spirits are mobilized, it prospers exceedingly. How could the fortunes of the world get mixed up with all this? It is not a simple thing. Then what is the purpose of these spiritual phenomena or of religion? The reason Heaven stirs up spiritual phenomena in the course of the providence is in the end for the perfection of humankind. (227-117, 1992.02.11)

9 The works of an evil spirit and the works of a good spirit begin in the same way, but their results are different. In both cases, there is trembling, a disturbance and the overturning of things. There seems to be no difference between the two. But what comes of these works in the end? When carried out by an evil spirit, rather than profiting the world or benefiting heaven and earth, the results of such works profit only the evildoer. When you do something, it should benefit not only you as an individual or a family where you are the center. If it is done egocentrically, whatever the good intentions, it will eventually come to naught. To some extent, the spiritual phenomena of the providence of God at the start may appear the same as the evil side. But God's providence sets its standard on the world level. A church with a purpose other than the liberation of God and the liberation of humanity cannot endure through the Last Days. That church will go its way based on greed and naturally collapse. Its leader will be taken away. And when that happens, that church will not connect to the environment of the age. This will be because the leader did not understand the situation he was placed in. (163-134, 1987.05.01)

10 We who live today can witness spiritual phenomena in the world. It is a historical fact that, no matter the age or time, the realm of life for religious believers and non-believers alike has intermingled with the spirit world in accordance with each person's relationship to the spirit world. We know that people lived in this way throughout history, even if we do not believe in religion, through dreams and various mystical experiences. Good spirits and evil spirits dwell in the spirit world and, owing to their influence, people on earth are divided into good and evil. This is logical. Then what is our concept of a good person and an evil person? There are those who receive help from good spirits and others who receive help from evil spirits. From these two sources of help, we can judge whether a person is good or evil. (131-167, 1984.05.01)

11 I think an age will come in which we even can invent instruments that will help us see spirit-world phenomena. When that comes to pass, no one will be able to say there is no world of the spirit. When your spiritual eyes are opened, you can see the spirit world. You will be able to perceive through your senses all the phenomena, everything that exists, in that world. If you could see such things as you would a weather forecast, you would not say, for example, that there is no God. Then it would be natural for religion to disappear. If there had been no Fall, this would have been such a world. Things turned out the way they did because of the Fall. In the process of restoration, this earth is a training center for us, to bring us into reciprocal relationship with that world. (256-250, 1994.03.14)

You pay the price for working miracles and wonders

12 God's cooperation comes about when we apply principles and rules in our life. God does not like mindless faith. What happens to people who chase after miracles and wonders and declare, "Just believe and it will come true"? When a person works miracles and wonders, what happens to him and his clan? In the case of revivalists who were famous in Korea, whose names were well known in the past, did things go well for them and their descendants? Things did not go well. Why is that? When you blindly ask for something and it comes true, you inevitably have to pay the price for what you blindly asked for. If you perform miracles despite not possessing such ability, you are performing such acts by the power granted to you by God. When you do such things with the power of God, Satan will accuse you for the blessings and the things you received but did not merit. It is the same as everything crumbling when there is no foundation. (084-079, 1976.02.22)

13 If Moses had not performed miracles and wonders, he would not have failed. That means that if Jesus had not performed miracles and wonders, he would not have died on the cross. Miracles and wonders are not good things. They draw down a great deal of sacrifice for just a smile. Nowadays, where are the preposterous groups of people who unthinkingly believe in miracles and say that through miracles and wonders they will sort out heaven and earth and settle everything in the world? (136-285, 1985.12.29)

14 Jesus, who walked the course of restoration, didn't perform miracles and wonders happily. If you think he worked miracles and wonders because he was joyful and comfortable, that is a big misunderstanding. Since he had no place to lay his body on this earth and no place on which he could rely in the universe, he was in a situation where he had no choice but to appeal to Heaven. We must consider the resoluteness of Jesus who was in such a desperate state. When he was in sad and pitiful circumstances and raised his hands and called out, "My Father!" miracles occurred there. Those miracles and wonders appeared through circumstances in which he called out from a place of such extreme sorrow that even his bones and flesh were melting from sheer grief. (5-227, 1959.02.01)

15 If I pray, I can perform any number of miracles and wonders. However, no matter what circumstances arise, I will not do so. What is the use of fixing temporary circumstances? Even if I fix them, is it of any use in heaven? It has no effect. Quite a few people have performed numerous miracles in Korea, but I have never done that publicly. Even when I am insulted, for example, I remain still. Since I walk alone, I must prepare by myself the path I will go. I believe that people who do not prepare fade away. After making all the preparations, I went on the big stage of America and shook it up. I said Christianity had done wrong and should repent. (237-291, 1992.11.17)

16 If I had lacked wisdom, I would have ruined everything. If I offered prayers to cure illnesses, a thousand or even ten thousand people would have been cured. However, I do not want to do that. Instead we have to educate people. Spiritual works are for the moment, but the truth lasts for ten thousand years. Now it is your time. You can do anything, even cure others' illnesses. With just a look, you can cure leprosy and all other disorders. If your passion is set aflame and you forget to eat or sleep because of your love for Rev. Moon of the Unification Church, any illness can be cured. You will even forget you are sick. And after you have lived for a year forgetting you are sick, your illness actually will be gone. The miracles and wonders of the Bible are nothing. Looking at it this way, I have carried out countless such works. (299-285, 1999.02.18)

Section 3. The Returning Resurrection of People in the Spirit World

1 I bestowed upon some individuals on earth a special marriage Blessing with spirits who lived and passed away thousands of years ago. Those people are living with those spirits now. They wanted to marry them because they expect that the chance of their going to the kingdom of heaven through marriage to a spirit in the spirit world is better than through marriage with a person living in this world at the present time. The couples' bodies and minds are always united, just like God's, so they do not fight. Therefore the body and mind of those who marry such spirits while living on this earth will not fight with each other. And if the spouse on earth comes to be bound for hell, the spirit spouse can say, "Follow me! I will guide you." Then they automatically go into the heavenly realm. If people know this background, everyone might want to marry a spirit. (337-071, 2000.10.22)

The reason spirits return and cooperate

2 You know about the Heaven and Earth Blessing, do you not? Through it, the divided spiritual and physical worlds are united, and the people who are now in hell can be sought out and blessed. After you join the Unification Church, you have to rise above the level of the nation. Because your mission is on the global level, you can pull out and bless those who are in hell for crimes committed against a nation.

You can carry out a liberation movement with your mother, or your relatives, or anyone on earth related to you by blood, at the center. (342-191, 2001.01.12)

3 Do you think I have bitter feelings now? I have laid my hands upon everything to which I was called. Now is the time for fighting. Having stirred the invisible spirits to come down to earth, we must act as their leaders. Since we couldn't act as the leaders of this world, we should at least become the leaders of the people who have passed into the spirit world, the leaders of our ancestors, shouldn't we? Everyone is wishing for that. I have bestowed the Blessing upon innumerable people from the religious realm, and permitted the blessing of their sons and daughters and the blessing of the spirit world. I tell you, find your way to places where you have a connection of heart. Go and bless generations of people in your religious denomination, even without sleeping. (365-287, 2002.01.12)

4 The question is whether we have set the standard that will allow people in the spirit world, unknown to humankind, to mobilize and testify to us. The spirit world also demands such conditions. Since the spirit world knows God's heart, if people with that standard on the earth appeal to them, spirit people will mobilize to help with the work on earth that actualizes the ideal of the heavenly kingdom. The reason spirit people cannot come to earth is that we have erected fences of lamentation. (4-060, 1958.03.02)

5 All spirits in the heavenly world receive the Blessing as elder siblings and ancestors, and they protect those on earth from all directions—east, west, north and south—so those on earth can perfect the ideal family of the Abel realm. In other words, the entire spirit world returns to earth and cooperates with those on earth by protecting, nurturing and accompanying them so they can enter the heavenly kingdom in a satisfactory way. These spirits are blood relatives who possess the love, life and lineage of God. They share the one, unified heart that goes beyond the boundaries of village, nation, race and religion. They are of the same universal bloodline. Their color is universal. (375-094, 2002.04.13)

6 In the spirit world there are no such concepts as far and near. Since that world transcends time and space, no matter where your home is, it is in your field of vision. This is why spirits can help you at any time, across any distance. In such a manner, spirits moving in the spirit world come down to earth frequently, following their network. As the number of spirits who come down to a village increases gradually and they start relieving one another, they can carry out a campaign to eradicate the evil spirits in that village. Thus the environment is naturally purified. They carry out that kind of campaign. They come down to earth and form connections centering on their relatives. When they return to the spirit world, their efforts become indemnity and form a proportional foundation for them to go to a better place. Therefore even the spirit world will enter an era of competition. (251-280, 1993.11.01)

7 Now the ancestors in the spirit world must be deployed to the earth, and who is the person who can deploy them? God cannot deploy them; to do so would violate the Principle. I am the one who must deploy them. No matter where they were born, they are to return to their birthplace, their hometown. All will return. You enable your ancestors to rise above paradise and go to the kingdom of heaven by having them participate in Blessing activities. This is logically correct. Do you know what virtuous people have lived in your hometown and passed on? You should surpass them. When we think that the spirits who died with sorrow and regret are returning to the earth, and that they are coming to where we live to cooperate with us and attend us as if we were their elder siblings and their rulers, we should become the best there is. (355-041, 2001.10.03)

8 If God were to look down upon this neighborhood, He couldn't help but shed tears because the people here are destined for hell. That being the case, you should feel of your own accord the desire to shed tears in His place. When the power of resonance enters you, enabling you to shed tears with the heart of God, the entire spirit world is mobilized. As human beings, you should be moved to tears in God's presence. You cannot communicate with the spirit world unless you reach a position where God can say, "Thank you! The descendants of the fallen Adam and Eve are much better than the Adam and Eve of old," and then be moved to shed tears Himself. Only when God is moved to tears, asking, "How could the descendants of fallen Adam and Eve, the descendants of traitors, come to be like this?" will the spirit world come to your assistance. It is from there that the spirit world opens. Anything less than that will never work. This is the Principle. (96-282, 1978.02.13)

9 We have to mobilize the spirit world. How can heaven be built without mobilizing the spirit world? It cannot. Heaven is supposed to begin from the True Parents, not from the fallen descendants who have existed until now. Just as the angelic world helped when Adam was created, the spirit world should come down to earth and help at the time of re-creation. Otherwise it cannot be achieved. (162-115, 1987.03.30)

10 When your entire family comes to believe in God, and the grandfather and grandmother, sons and daughters and grandchildren take charge of this and that responsibility, the family can function as three generations. When this happens, you restore your parents and thus, all at once, your grandparents and their parents and their parents' parents— in short, your ancestors over thousands and tens of thousands of generations. The age is coming when the spirit world can return to the earth. The system on earth determines the system in the spirit world. They become one. When such an amazing thing takes place, will not the spirit world be overjoyed? This being so, the era of the victory of religion has now come. In other words, the era of the victory of the spirit world has come. (96-251, 1978.01.22)

11 Thanks to the coming of Jesus upon the earth, the good ancestors who preceded him were able to transition from the form-spirit level of the spirit world to the life-spirit level. Likewise, your ancestors have come into a realm of special privilege where they can return to earth through the conditions you set on the earth. If you understand this aspect of the Will and become a branch of the victory, then you are in the position where you can become a life spirit and your ancestors will cooperate. In the same way, you should become the base upon which thousands of generations of your good ancestors can return to earth. The era of Jesus was one in which the spirit world helped conditionally for the sake of resurrection to the life-spirit level, but now is the era in which you can achieve the divine-spirit level at which spirit world helps unconditionally for the sake of resurrection. Since such an era has come, there is no greater blessing. The point is that the spirit world is helping you. (14-022, 1964.04.19)

12 On earth, we have transcended the Blessing, the world and everything in it, and have come into the environment in which everyone can acknowledge that. Furthermore, as we have the environment everyone needs, the question now is how we can set the standard for the accomplishment of liberation and create joy. You all need to carry out this task. Aren't you supposed to make God happy first? When God rejoices together with your ancestors, the entire spirit world, tens of thousands of generations, can rejoice. They are as one body. Therefore you have to know God, and you have to know the spirit world. Isn't that how people need to live? What does it mean when we tell ourselves that we want to love others, want to make a good impression and be outstanding? It means we want to create an environment that can be better and leave good future generations. Doesn't it mean we want to establish wonderful descendants in the coming generations, who will stand as the nucleus and who will affect the nation and move into the most prominent positions? It is very simple, an unavoidable conclusion. To the degree you do not receive this, you will be disciplined in both the heavenly world and the earthly world. (338-279, 2000.11.30)

13 In the Unification Church we have the spirit world liberation ceremony. There are ceremonies for ancestor liberation and for ancestor Blessing. The blessed family members of the Unification Church cannot attend their ancestors just as they are. We can attend them as heavenly families representing God only providing we have blessed our elder and younger siblings, our mothers and aunts and any others in spirit world. Now that time has come. It is not idol worship. (415-241, 2003.08.15)

14 Until now, many babies have gone to the spirit world. Does the word "Blessing" exist for them? It does not. But True Parents came to earth, severed the lineage of Satan's world and resolved all conditions of indemnity. As a result, based on the blessed families in the spirit world, those who died as babies have been raised until they are sixteen years old, and then blessed. Children grow even in the spirit world. When the parents care for their baby and the family commemorates the day on

which the child was born, the baby grows. When conditions are offered on the child's behalf, such growth is possible. And if there are good ancestors, ancestors of several generations, the baby can be raised within the realm of their care. I gave the Blessing to the babies who had gone to the spirit world and who have been raised to the age of sixteen and above. (374-023, 2002.04.04)

Establishment of the right of the eldest son in the spirit world

15 In the spirit world, Heung-jin is the firstborn son of love, in the realm of love. All the others in the spirit world stand in the position of his younger siblings. The positions are reversed. That is why we can say that the standard of heart for the right of the eldest son is settled in a principled position. In other words, with regard to the realm of heart, Heung-jin is the firstborn son in front of all people in the spirit world, and in front of Jesus and all the saints. That is why from the viewpoint of the realm of heart, Heung-jin is the first son and the people who are born after him are second sons. Heung-jin can thus bequeath the right of the first son to the realm of the second son. But Satan did not want to pass on this right. In fact he did not; instead he stole it. On the other hand, Heung-jin, with the right of the eldest son, gives all the blessings he has to the earth. That is why he can connect heaven to earth. Heung-jin unceasingly endeavors to pass blessings on, whereas Satan's world has been trying not to bequeath everything. Since Heung-jin formed a conjugal relationship and established the foundation of a married couple, the walls that have divided the people in the spirit world are demolished. Those spirit selves can meet and cooperate with one another. Thus they will have a foundation on earth through which they can cooperate and fulfill the hopes they could not fulfill during their lives on earth in the past. This is possible through the heart. Thanks to the True Parents' foundation of having paid indemnity, the global realm for which they paid indemnity has come under their dominion. It can therefore be said that those who have connected to the realm of heart, becoming one with Heung-jin with True Parents at the center, can participate in the realm of dominion that True Parents have established on earth. (131-054, 1984.04.01)

16 By virtue of Heung-jin's passing into the spirit world during his youth, as the beloved child of the True Parents, he and the spirit world are positioned to be in unity. The spirit world is thus connected to True Parents' family. He becomes the first son of the spirit world. He becomes the eldest brother there. Consequently the realm of True Parents' love is extended to the spirit world. Jesus is to attend Heung-jin as his older brother. In this way everyone there will come to connect with one another. Then through their returning resurrection to earth, with a storm of spiritual support, Satan's world will begin to decline. It will fall drastically. The barriers that were erected after the Fall between the spirit world and the physical world will be eliminated. Through Heung-jin's passing, the spirit world connected to the earth in the realm of True Parents' love; therefore we have entered an age in

which the walls between the earthly world and the heavenly world have crumbled and interaction between the two worlds is possible. (225-086, 1992.01.02)

17 People of the free world should love Heung-jin. Since Heung-jin set the condition of having loved all the people of the world rather than his own life, you are also spiritually connected to the bonds of love through which you can love others rather than your own life. Heung-jin went to the spirit world in place of his father. For that reason, when you love Heung-jin it is as if you are loving True Father. You can make such a condition. Loving Heung-jin forms a relationship of love with True Father. Until now in the spirit world, there has been no center through which the spirit world could connect with True Parents. Through Heung-jin's passing, however, all the spirits who love him are considered to have made the condition of loving True Father. Furthermore, they are connected to the Unification Church. The Unification Church members on earth set the standard of fighting at the risk of their lives. In the spirit world, Heung-jin set the condition of becoming the representative of the spirit world that could connect True Parents' love with the earth. He thus stands in a position unprecedented in history. On earth, he showed an example to Unification Church members that they must love God's Will even at the cost of their lives. His message is "Love True Father." For the sake of the world you need to walk the path of loving True Father. As a result of Heung-jin going to the spirit world, the spirit world was given the opportunity to love him. He thereby enabled a relationship of love with the True Parents on earth. Therefore for the spirit world, the day he arrived there was the most joyful day in history. He is the one who has opened the gates of the spirit world as the messiah of love, whereas on earth he opened the path of martyrdom. This is the reason Unification Church members should love Heung-jin. (130-202, 1984.01.15)

18 Since Heung-jin is in the spirit world, he is the protector, taking responsibility to teach people. Those in the spirit world should resolve to make effort and to participate in his training to remove their shame over what they failed to accomplish on earth. True Parents are not a hollow shell. They are moving forward based on all substantial authority centered on the spirit world. This is why I can give the Blessing to people in the spirit world. Since the substantial authority of the True Parents exists in the spirit world, by blessing in unity those on earth and in the spirit world, the blessed people are destined to go to the kingdom of heaven. The kingdom of heaven is empty. In order to populate it, the Blessing must be given on earth. Without the Blessing on earth, there can be no Blessing in the spirit world. (304-307, 1999.11.12)

19 I will go to Cheongpyeong, take good care of Jesus' family, establish ties of brotherhood between Jesus and Heung-jin and bless all the Christian apostles. The Unification Church stands in the position of Abel, and Christianity stands in the position of Cain. How can we bring them together? They need to be completely united, both spiritually and physically. Heung-jin, a true child, stands in the position

of Abel. He is in the position of the eldest son. Jesus is the eldest son on the Cain side. By connecting the earthly world with the spirit world, the Unification Church and the Christian world can be blessed at the same time. In addition, white people, black people, people of all races should be blessed with each other so that in the future there will be mixed race descendants. Then there will be no more fighting. Who will resolve the very troubling racial problems in America? Who can bring that conflict to an end? This is something beyond the power of any person or organization in America. Even the religious community cannot resolve it. This is possible only through me. (292-314, 1998.04.27)

20 I plan to build a center for experiential education, even in the spirit world. We must teach the traditions of the world's faiths and religions and, second, the secular philosophies related to them. We must teach Unification Thought, which can overcome communism. Because the spirit world is divided up, people there do not know these things. We must teach them that God is their Parent and teach them to become His beloved sons and daughters and establish ideal families. (300-315, 1999.04.15)

21 Presently a thorough cleanup is taking place in the spirit world. I will probably leave the earth and go to the heavenly world in the not-too-distant future, but the citizens of those realms are not yet prepared. They are waiting for that time. For that reason we are holding one hundred-day workshops to create new, good spirits who can receive the Blessing through their descendants on earth, and they are waiting for the day of my arrival. Paradise and hell came about due to false parents, so it is True Parents who must set things straight and become the eternal and unchanging rulers of all eternity, based on the one sovereignty of the purified heavenly kingdom of God, on earth and in heaven; that is, the unified kingdom of heaven. God's ideal of creation is that the True Parents be the Lords of glory and splendor, reigning over all nations in peace and prosperity for tens of thousands of generations. We need to establish that world. (381-103, 2002.06.11)

The cooperation of ancestors and the responsibility of descendants

22 You need to know the truth about how terrifying and fearsome the relationship between you and me is. If you take a wrong step, you will ruin everyone in your family and clan and among all your relatives. If you take a right step everyone, from your ancestors in the spirit world to the present members of your tribe and even your future descendants, will live. In other words, you are standing in the awesome position whereby your actions determine whether or not they will live. It is still the case that I have to bring completely ignorant people with me to cross over to the global level, so even if you cannot become my substantial object partner, at least be like my shadow and follow me. (306-319, 1998.11.02)

23 You must liberate your ancestors. To liberate them you have to love your ancestors in the spirit world and invest in them more than in your family and relatives on earth. Otherwise your ancestors who have gone to hell will not be able to come back to earth. Therefore you should be able to stand at the center, call those families together and help them. Only then can you be one with them. Those who invest more than others become central figures. (307-190, 1998.11.08)

24 What should you consider most important in your family? You should hold on tightly to the teachings about the spirit world and about the True Parents on the earth. That is the path through which you can go over the walls in the spirit world and head toward the original, liberated kingdom of heaven. That is why you need to conduct hoondokhae. When you make a mistake on earth, what will your ancestors do? Until the present day, Satan, having overturned the world of Adam on the earth, has dispensed blessing or misfortune as he pleased. Actually he dispensed misfortune, not blessing. This makes it necessary for the descendants to offer devotions in order to be freed from the misfortune brought on by the archangel. This is what we are doing. In contrast to the actions of the archangel, the blessed families offer devotions for the sake of their descendants. Receiving the Blessing means the blood of True Parents has been bequeathed in a spiritual sense; therefore blessed families have no blood ties with Satan. (333-089, 2000.09.24)

25 From now on, when you go to your hometown for the Chuseok holiday you should hold a feast for your ancestors, but not only with your own relatives. If you celebrate that day, attending your ancestors and offering it to God, that celebration will connect to a celebration in heaven. It will not be only for your clan. When heaven and earth are harmonized, this world becomes one. Then when you go to the next world, how much will the spirits who attended your feast welcome you? They will receive you as their ancestor. Through this work of liberating the spirit world and honoring those spirits, with one body and one thought in accordance with the instructions of True Parents, the spirits can come to earth and cooperate with you. Since you have bequeathed the grace of liberation to those ancestors, they will always gather around you and assist you. Thus the evil fortune of Satan, which leads to unhappiness, will be unable to invade and heavenly fortune will protect your environment. (335-071, 2000.10.01)

26 Through True Parents we have become ancestors who engender a new bloodline, and a blessed tribe through whom the realm of liberation can unfold. Our tribe will be of God's eternal and unchanging family and lineage. When this happens we will bid Satan farewell forever. This is why we in the Unification Church honor our ancestors. Does Christianity allow memorial services for ancestors? The Unification Church has such a tradition. It is not a secular tradition. The realm of the tribal messiah that connects the succeeding generations by serving the Heavenly Parent, the heavenly kingdom and the heavenly ancestors, becomes the royal domain in which we can attend our ancestors for thousands of years. It will become

the nation where we can attend the king in the eternal reign of peace. Only after having lived in such a nation can your parents, family and clan go directly to heaven. (220-222, 1991.10.19)

27 Now great chaos is arising in the spirit world. If you do not receive the Blessing, become the messiah for your family and your tribe, and perform the liberation of your ancestors up to seven generations, problems will arise. There is a saying, "He who gives the disease offers the remedy." All your ancestors are giving you diseases and offering you remedies. If you commit an improper act in Satan's world for which you have to pay indemnity, it is a serious problem. Restoration through indemnity is not possible. You will be caught and taken away; if you are taken, it is faster to set things right in the spirit world. Such an era is coming. There will be no indemnity period. Were not Adam and Eve punished immediately after they fell? It will be like that. Your ancestors will do everything. In the past, people tried to achieve restoration through their descendants, but now restoration will be achieved through the ancestors. Unmarried men and women on earth have been the body of Satan, but since we have blessed our ancestors in the spirit world, that "body" no longer exists. We have to transform them into good spirits. By blessing even the evil spirits who are on the earth, we transform them into good spirits. Everything is reversed. (301-214, 1999.05.01)

28 If you stand idle in the future, I will use whatever incentives or pressure it takes to guide you to heaven rather than to hell. I will do this even if I must be strong with you. In the future, when God's Will has been completed and the Constitution enacted, results will appear instantaneously. You will not need to make effort to love your enemy, because everything will happen according to law. For the time being we are trying to save Satan's world and restore the right of the eldest son, so we have no choice but to work as we do. But these conditions will not last; changes are going to take place suddenly. This is the nature of the time we are in. (302-325, 1999.07.02)

29 Because your ancestors come down from the spirit world to supervise you, you have to adapt to that. If you oppose them they will give you no peace. Your ancestors know that if the spirit world becomes biased against you because you violate its laws, the path for your tribe will be blocked. So they work to prevent that from happening. If you do not change, they will take you away or deal with you in many other ways. The enemy Satan, who comes from a different bloodline, has been doing this until now, but from now on your ancestors will do this. They want to cooperate with you and help you, because it is their own clan that will move forward and benefit. They will give you blessings so you can multiply as many sons and daughters as are needed. On the other hand, the ancestors of bad people, who only degrade things, will restrict or eliminate those people. (449-065, 2004.05.12)

30 Your family is the third generation in front of God. Your family represents True Parents. Therefore you should be better than I am. I was persecuted but you are not. Your own nation and the world welcome you; heaven and earth testify to you. Until now they were blocked from doing so. However, now everything has opened up, the entire spirit world, every corner of it, exists as one current. From now on, if you do not do what you should on earth, the spirits will take you away. If I tell some one's ancestors to take that person away because he or she is not working, they surely will do so; otherwise those ancestors who were being abandoned would fall into the pits of hell. It would be a serious issue for those who had made their way up to paradise to fall all the way down to hell. The ancestors would be filled with such sorrow. Such difficulties have arisen in God's providence of salvation, and they will arise again. (361-252, 2001.11.25)

31 When you go to the next world, your ancestors going back thousands of generations will be gathered there. Some generations of ancestors will have ended up in hell, and others will be in different places. Every ancestor will be at a different level. Those who lived for the sake of others will be able to go to the kingdom of heaven. This is why the saying, "If there is harmony in the family, all is well," is realized through me. Live for the sake of your family. If you serve your grandfather and grandmother at least three times, they will recognize what mistakes they have made. (213-183, 1991.01.20)

32 Today should be better than yesterday. What constitutes better? It is giving your ancestors the Blessing. You should bless your parents and grandparents on the earth, your ancestors in the spirit world, and your family and relatives. Centered on your clan, you should bless your descendants and save your ancestors, who are in the position of Cain. If the way to the Blessing is blocked, no one will save them. If you clearly know this and yet fail to carry it out, who will take responsibility? No one will. You have to take care of your own clan. (402-025, 2003.01.12)

33 You who are on earth should become brothers to the eldest brother in the spirit world. On earth, you should cooperate with and consummate the work being done by the eldest brother. This cannot be done in the spirit world. You need to keep this in mind; you should pray daily for your ancestors and ask them for assistance. Only then can you fulfill your responsibility to make everything right on earth. When you complete what your ancestors failed to carry out on earth, the heavenly world can be liberated. This is crucial; you have to understand it in detail. Not only your life but the lives of all your ancestors depend on your settling this. You need to carry out on earth, as the younger sibling, what your eldest brother is doing throughout the spirit world. The final responsibility rests not with those in the spirit world but with you. (424-099, 2003.11.04)

34 When we go through the gates to the kingdom of heaven, a paradise for families and a hell for families will emerge. Our ancestors need to indemnify this. Through

their sacrifice, the sacrifice of hundreds of people, our ancestors have to set up one family to represent the tribe. The Unification Church on earth should be the center, not the saints or renowned ancestors in the next world. When Unification Church members ascend, they should connect to the living members of their tribe and, on that basis, to their future descendants. Only if they reach perfection and enter the kingdom of heaven can others follow them. That is why we are currently uniting our tribes. (475-063, 2004.11.07)

35 Adam and Eve failed to stand in a public position, and thus left behind a condition for accusation. Had they stood in a public position and succeeded in the way of sacrifice, they would have been free of accusation from their descendants, all of humankind. You are standing in a similar position. Therefore you should always keep in mind, "I represent three eras." The spirit world is in your hands; in other words, your ancestors are at your mercy. The spirit world, your relatives, and your country are all in your hands. Even the task of setting the right tradition for your future descendants is in your hands. Whether you as one person do well or poorly will determine whether your ancestors and relatives in the spirit world can be liberated, and whether your descendants can become the liberated chosen people. (66-076, 1973.03.17)

36 Thanks to the help of your ancestors, you came to join the Unification Church and to lay your foundation up to this point. Nevertheless, if you break the laws of Heaven they will take away everything, even your own children. Further, when you come to the spirit world, they will take you to another place in the spirit world and make you wait at the gates to the kingdom of heaven. You will not be able to enter. Even when your grandfather and grandmother and your friends follow and enter the gates of the kingdom of heaven, those who boasted of their knowledge, money or power, or deceived the church about their marriage, will not be able to enter. They will have to wait in front of the gates. (490-175, 2005.03.13)

37 Since we have mobilized the spirit world, those in the archangelic realm that have received the Blessing are our ancestors, and yet are not ancestors. There is the archangelic realm and there is the blessed archangelic realm; this division into two came about because of the Fall. Our ancestors are in the archangelic realm, and those who have been blessed can come down to earth and protect the members of their clan—those who are already blessed and those who should be blessed—and serve them as elder brothers. The nation and the world can be brought together based on the unity of these two. Therefore you must not fall behind them, you must not lose out to those in the spirit world. You must work proudly, standing at the forefront. (369-286, 2002.02.17)

38 Families on earth are in the position of Adam's family, the original blessed family, and in the elder brother position. Since the lineage of those in the spirit world was changed, they need to come down to earth. The younger brother must be

engrafted to the older brother and become one with him. Based on the standard set when the Holy Spirit and the substantial mother united, on the foundation of the elder brother on earth and the younger brother in the spirit world having united, the mother has to achieve oneness within herself. Then, with the mother who is one in spirit and body at the center, the families whose siblings are united come together and attend the parents. Then the brothers on earth, whose relationship had not been based on their connection to the parents, establish their relationship, reach perfection, and become one with the heavenly world. Then the blessed families in the spirit world can serve the blessed families on earth as their elder brothers for the first time. Because they attend them as their elder brothers, the right of the eldest son is finally restored. When the right of the eldest son is restored the spirits enter the position of being one with God. (356-089, 2001.10.09)

39 Because we proclaimed True Parents and the Completed Testament Age, the good angelic world is coming down and expelling all the evil spirits of the evil archangelic realm. This restores the spiritual right of the eldest son. Because that had been reversed, everyone on Satan's side attacked God. Now the era has come in which God's side attacks, not only in the spirit world but also on earth. Because I knew such a time was coming, I told you to fulfill your tribal messiah responsibility. Tribal messiahs are the true parents of their tribe. They are the ancestors. Once they have secured their position as ancestors, their descendants will follow them automatically. Be bold and self- confident. The restoration of the right of the eldest son, restoration of the right of parents, the restoration of king- ship and restoration of the realm of the royal family bring history to a conclusion. On this basis I declared True Parents and the Completed Testament Age. What does this mean? It means that the right of the eldest son now belongs to God and True Parents. (256-053, 1994.03.12)

BOOK 8 LIFE OF FAITH AND TRAINING

CHAPTER 1. What is a Life of Faith?

Section 1. A Life of Faith ... 793

Section 2. The Purpose and Goal of a Life of Faith ..801

Section 3. The Path of Faith ... 810

Section 4. Stages in a Life of Faith ... 817

Section 5. Experiences and Challenges on the Path of Faith ... 823

CHAPTER 2. Training the Mind and Body.

Section 1. What is Training ... 828

Section 2. The Goal of Training ... 834

- Section 3. Training in Faith ... 840
- Section 4. Training the Body ... 856
- Section 5. Life with the Goal of Mind-Body Unity ... 861

CHAPTER 3. Our Life of Faith and Course to Emulate True Parents

- Section 1. Our Life of Faith and the Providence of Restoration ... 868
- Section 2. Our Course to Meet True Parents ... 871
- Section 3. Our Course of Rebirth through True Parents ... 871
- Section 4. Our Path of Growth by Following True Parents ... 880
- Section 5. Our Way to Perfection through True Parents ... 884

CHAPTER 4. The Believer's Path in Relation to True Parents' Course

- Section 1. Our Life Mission ... 889
- Section 2. A Life of Accomplishment ... 896
- Section 3. A Life of Caring for Others ... 903
- Section 4. A Life of Inheritance ... 906

BOOK 8 LIFE OF FAITH AND TRAINING

CHAPTER 1 What Is a Life of Faith?

Section 1. A Life of Faith

1 In leading a life of faith, you cannot be a spectator. You follow me, but you should not practice your life of faith centered on me; you have to practice it centered on yourself. So you must preserve your way of faith irrespective of what others do. A life of faith centered on Heaven is a life of gratitude and contentment in the deepest sphere of the heart, unlike any experience you may have with a person who is close to you. Our life of faith should be such that, no matter how evil the world may be, we can look at heaven and earth and say, "I am grateful; I am happy" If we cannot feel this way, then in this sad circumstance, we must determine ourselves anew and pray, "I am a sinner. Please grant me the courage I lack." (153-136, 1963.11.15)

A true view of faith

2 With faith, nothing is impossible. We need faith. We need to think, "The prime subject partner is God and I am His object partner. The perfect plus creates the perfect minus. Hence I was created to reach the position of a second God, second

Jesus and second True Parent, and I can attain this position.” You may wonder how I am able to undertake worldwide activities by myself, alone. It is because I have this kind of philosophy, and because I work on the national level. Thus you need to clearly promise me, “We will inherit your philosophy and live according to it!” (131-326, 1984.05.19)

3 I have brought four great truths to the world of faith. First, I clarified the relationship between God and human beings. I also gave a clear explanation about the portion of human responsibility and indemnity—things that no one in history had known about before. We did not know why human beings are as they are today. I made this point clear. I then explained why life is difficult for conscientious people, while evil people live well. No one has known about the law of indemnity or the problem of Cain and Abel. Finally I explained why, even though people seek goodness, situations often get worse, little by little. This is an issue of lineage; it is due to our blood being tainted by Satan. This question has been unresolved due to the fundamental ignorance concerning the problem of lineage. All the problems of the world are related to the issue of lineage. (161-153, 1978.01.18)

4 A life of faith until now has been a quest to find the true self. It has been a quest to rise from the position of fallen Adam and Eve and create the original sinless self. Now, what is God's ultimate wish? First, it is for sinless individuals to form families based on His love. Then through such families whom God can love, the tribe, the nation and the world can be redeemed. This is God's overarching Will. (5-110, 1959.01.04)

5 Heaven made limitless efforts to enable us, human beings living with our earthly human hopes, to go over the peak of death with new hope and to live with reverence for the eternal world. Therefore, people who live a life of faith should not live embracing only our earthly hopes but should live dreaming of the eternal world of hope that can conquer even death. To achieve this aim, we practice our life of faith continuously. (6-046, 1959.03.22)

6 Anyone who can experience God's heart, so that he or she feels every shock and impulse within Heaven's sphere of heart, is unstoppable. No matter what kind of persecution he or she faces, even walking the way of death, such a person would be relentless. This heart touches the mind and moves the body. Devout believers in this secular world today, walking step by step through their daily lives, are thus advancing toward the infinite realm, even if they don't realize it. (6-069, 1959.03.29)

7 God does not want Christians with a life of faith that puts their denomination first. Even though I put up the signboard of the Unification Church, my concern is, “When will I be able to take it down?” Although you may be identified as Unification Church members, the question is, when will this type of identification cease in this land of Korea? Unification Church members all over the world are exerting their utmost effort to relieve God’s sorrowful heart. With devoted and loyal hearts, these members walk a path of tribulation in God’s place. Unification Church members with the highest level of resolve are ready to sacrifice themselves for this work. This is a blessed path to be on. (015-215, 1965.10.10)

8 It is with grave concern that God looks upon your notion of faith. If I were not on this earth, I wonder how many of you would remain. I bet a fight would break out. I am looking at you and wondering, how many among you are willing to die for God’s Will? You have to be serious about this. You need to reflect on the issue of how much devotion you have offered for your wife and children in your family, and how much devotion you have offered for the members of your church. (42-166, 1971.03.04)

9 A person who is unable to sow seeds of compassion will not have an enduring life of faith. The same applies to me. Even though it was because of my public position that I was late for a service, I enter with prayer. There are times when I am unable to attend Sunday service. Whenever this happens, I offer a prayer of repentance. The members put their faith in me and offer sincere devotions, seeking for blessings and solutions to life-or-death situations. So, as the person bearing the subject partner responsibility for the members, if I am unable to attend a Sunday service, I offer a prayer asking for forgiveness. Such prayers are necessary. (43-115, 1971.04.25)

10 We need to sacrifice and advance for the sake of the world. The time required to achieve a goal will be reduced in proportion to the sacrifice made by the person seeking to achieve that goal—the amount of sacrifice offered for the sake of the object partner. We in Korea must live for the sake of Korea, but if Korea is unwilling to live for the sake of the world, we must live for the sake of the world. By raising people or descendants who share my faith and philosophy, and by establishing a foundation whereby my philosophy can be bequeathed to posterity for tens of thousands of generations, Unification Thought will be the thought that engenders a new global culture. This is my view, and it is God’s view. (45-198, 1971.06.27)

11 You need to have zest in your life of faith. In the past, when I sent you out to the countryside to witness, I used to visit the Tongil business two or three times every

day. I also visited Cheong- pyeong every other day. What was the purpose of having such a hectic schedule? I had a zest for the work. I could feel what ordinary people could not feel. In that situation, when I offered devotions going from place to place, all the cells of my soul became alive, generating spiritual power. We need this kind of experience. Thus whether it rains or snows, we need zest in our life of faith. (127-145, 1983.05.07)

12 The Lord comes to this earth to establish the kingdom of heaven on earth. What kind of place is the kingdom of heaven? It is where those people go who are qualified to attend the Lord and who successfully lead lives of attendance. The kingdom of heaven is the world where, before the entire universe, we can be eternally proud of preparing and actualizing a life of attendance. Do you know what people are doing in the kingdom of heaven? Some may think it is simply a place to play and walk around, but it is not so. Even to play and walk around, you must have made preparations and real-life conditions. However, people often pray for blessings without making any real effort. Therein lies the primary reason that divinely inspired people have difficulties as they advance. Even tremendous grace from God will not last beyond seven years. (8-307, 1960.02.14)

13 Expecting blessings unconditionally is not true faith. What then must we do to receive blessings? All humankind on earth today descended from Adam over the course of six thousand biblical years. Our hearts should reach the standard where we can tearfully embrace all the people of the world. Otherwise we cannot establish a connection with this world. This means that when you see a pitiful beggar, your heart aches unbearably; when you see a person with shabby garments, you cannot dress fashionably; when you see a hungry person, you cannot eat. Your heart cannot seek personal comfort when you are concerned about others. (8-307, 1960.02.14)

14 There are two types of religious people in the world. One type is those who hide their shortcomings and seek material comforts, blessings and the welfare of their own religious denomination or people. Religions that focus on receiving blessings will disappear. Since we came to know this, the Unification Church emphasizes personal sacrifice to help God and liberate Him. What is to be achieved through unification? It is the liberation of God. Originally the true God, in the ideal world under His dominion, would have sung songs of praise and happiness with the first human ancestors, who would have attended Him. But instead, because of God's miserable situation, we seek to liberate Him. This is an amazing plan. That such an idea has emerged in the realm of religion is tremendously joyful news to God. (176-243, 1988.05.11)

15 A life of faith is about resolving the issue of death while on earth. You may not know much about convicts on death row but I know well, having lived with them. You have no idea how serious such convicts become when facing death. When a holiday such as Chuseok approaches, those convicts reflect on it as if it were the last Chuseok in history. When the wind blows or a typhoon hits, they observe it in the same way. They say, "This typhoon will be the last one I experience while I am on earth." They spend their last days looking at all things with a serious heart, a new feeling and a new appreciation. Among those people who walk the path of faith, I wonder how many have such a serious attitude, and how many value their life as a divine life and face each day with new resolve. This is an important question. Because I am in this serious place, I keep going this way. (160-025, 1968.12.29)

A life of faith is a life of attending God

16 Faith means living in attendance to God, living together with God and attending Him. If we do not walk such a path, we feel uneasy. We feel physically uncomfortable and we meet obstacles in our environment. A life of faith is a life of living together with God and attending Him. The sun rises in the morning, reaches its zenith at noon and sets in the evening. This is unchanging. It will not change in tens of thousands of years. If an orbit goes awry, everything goes awry. We need to go out and find the mind of love, the path of true love. The person who inherits true life and true lineage becomes part of God's family and always lives with God. Living with God also means living happily with nature and coming and going happily in our daily lives. (277-016, 1996.03.17)

17 In our lives of faith, there is the communal life of faith and the individual life of faith. In the communal life of faith, it is possible to receive shared grace, but it is difficult to receive personal grace. In order to receive personal grace, we must lead a life that is close to God. Accordingly, our devout prayers and constant daily efforts to come closer to God lead to greater depth of faith. (269-070, 1995.04.07)

18 In order to undertake a mission in the Unification Church, you need to renew your determination as a person of faith. Before that, it is important that the center of your faith is well grounded. You will be unable to practice a life of faith that can manage the world if you do not realize that the center of your faith is even more important than the world. You will also be unable to identify the attributes of faith. If you want to climb to the top of a mountain, you have to be ready to climb despite the conditions. Similarly, you should undertake a major action only after confirming again and again in your mind that you are going the right way. Otherwise you

should not undertake such an action, and before you take the first step you have to strengthen your resolve ten thousand times. If you do this, you will be able to resolve whatever crises you face as you go forward. That is a life of faith. (27-113, 1969.11.30)

19 A life of faith is not aimless. A life of faith is like gathering the equipment required to reach a mountaintop, the summit of the highest peak. Hence when faced with an obstacle we should not make a detour around it. Instead we should proceed through the obstacle. When faced with hardships, we should determine not to give up, and be ready to face even greater difficulties. With an indomitable spirit we should strive to discover the subjective self that can digest all difficulties. (27-113, 1969.11.30)

20 People pursue lives of faith in the belief that they will prevent evil and leave a legacy of goodness. What is humanity's greatest hope? It is to become beings of perfect goodness. It is written in the Bible, Matthew 5:48, "Be perfect, therefore, as your Heavenly Father is perfect." As the absolute subject partner of love, God's greatest desire is for human beings to stand as His object partners of love. Human beings too want to be beings of goodness as object partners to God. As the subject of goodness, God does not want His object partner to be suffering in under the yoke of evil, accused by Satan. There is no doubt about this. Thus as the absolute subject of goodness, God wants people to be absolute objects of goodness. Was this God's wish from our very birth? Of course. After our birth, does God want us to live that way throughout our lives? Yes, of course. God has always wished that we would be good and will always wish this. (057-014, 1972.05.21)

21 Faith means believing in and reverently attending God. Where is the endpoint of such faith? Where is the final destination of the faith that endures all, overcomes all? It is the place where we can jump on top of God and take a ride. It is the place where, more than attending God, even if we held onto His hair and danced on Him He would say with delight, "Good, keep on dancing!" That is the endpoint of our faith; we need to rise to that level. In this sense, there is nothing you cannot believe in. If you have such a foundation, there is nothing that is beyond the grasp of faith. (44-254, 1971.05.23)

22 In the Unification Church we attend God as the object of reverence in our daily lives, and we promote harmony and unity based on God's love. This was my motivation for founding the Unification Church. Our religion began on the best theoretical foundation. It is not a wild fantasy. From its inception, the Unification Church presented concrete substance. (083-312, 1976.02.15)

23 A life of attendance means that, even after living this way for a thousand years, you still do not think about yourself. You should not think, "I have spent decades in the Unification Church attending Reverend Moon." I don't like that kind of person. I myself have forgotten everything I have done in attending God so far. When you continue on, forgetting everything, a greater life of attendance awaits you. God is like that too. (301-188, 1999.04.26)

A life that finds hope through faith

24 A person of faith should pray with a public mind, for a greater cause. Then how can such work unfold horizontally? We should not merely daydream about this; we need creative ventures that can make it real. Hence as people of faith, we need to struggle endlessly with our environment and strive to realize our ideals through innovative lives. A life of faith means the way of the greatest pioneer, the way of the greatest warrior and the way of the greatest evangelist. Such achievements lead to the way of the greatest victor. This is the life of faith we must lead. (28-271, 1970.02.08)

25 We should believe in ourselves, place our hope in ourselves and love ourselves so we can say to God, "Dear God, please accept my love, please rejoice at my hope and in my faith." When I do so, God should be able to respond, "Yes!" This is the aim of our faith, the purpose of our hope and the reason we long for love. If we achieve this, we will meet the Lord, and thereafter we will live with Him. (7-165, 1959.08.30)

26 The issue lies not in the small mistakes you make here and there but in whether you can go forward with absolute faith and obedience to God. If you do not have results, take heart and have hope. Having hope requires absolute faith and a record of striving to achieve results. Representing all men in the world, I have to overcome a path of tribulation greater than that experienced by anyone in history. I came with authority certified by the spiritual and physical worlds, but you did not. Hence if you have no accomplishments, you can get by with faith. What kind of faith should it be? It cannot be self-centered faith that is pleasing only to you. Even if you accomplish the Will with such faith, God will not like it. The more you insist on doing things your own way, the more you distance yourself from God and from me. It is not right to say, "I will do what I like and not what I dislike." God has to like what you do. That is where the real issue lies. The same applies to me. This is why I exhort you to have faith, even though you may not practice it as you should. If you believe, you can get by. (033-100, 1970.08.09)

27 Unification Church members absolutely need to believe in my words. They need to seek hope and faith as they did in the past. In those days members may not have known the entire providence yet they moved forward, filled with hope and longing for love. So even if you are unable to reach a certain place on your path, you can still believe in my words, have faith in God's love and advance according to my guidance. There is no other way. You need to go through this course. Even if you may be victorious on the individual and family levels and receive God's blessing on those levels, you must keep going through the levels of the tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos. Overall, you need to go up through seven levels. You need to pass through seven stages to reach God. There are seven summits altogether. To reach God we must have absolute faith in God. Whatever God orders, we must absolutely obey. (014-256, 1965.01.01)

New life through repentance

28 Some people say they will begin their life of faith when they grow old, that they will go to heaven by having faith when they come close to death. They couldn't be further from the truth. You cannot go to heaven that way. The time when you begin your life centered on God is important. If you begin your life of faith in your twilight years, it amounts to having spent a lifetime betraying God. In that case you have to repent proportionally to your betrayal. Those who persist in saying that when they are old they will somehow have faith and then go to heaven are foolish. (32-032, 1970.06.14)

29 Some members here have lived a life of faith knowing God's Will for only one year, others for more than ten years or half a lifetime. The issue then is whether you have stood still, made progress or retreated. You need to clearly know where you stand and then you can go over the next hill. You may have made significant progress in the past, but if you are at a standstill today, God's living vitality cannot be with you and you cannot maintain a loving relationship with God. You may have made tremendously positive strides in the past, moving forward with boundless value, boundless vitality and the boundless power of love, but if you are now at a standstill you are already separated from God. (32-019, 1970.06.14)

30 Repentance is absolutely necessary for fallen humanity to enter God's realm of life and love. If one hundred points worth of sins have accumulated through our ancestors up to now, that much greater effort and repentance is needed. Hence when we speak of our life of faith, we cannot leave out repentance. We were born through countless generations of ancestors. If our ancestors were good, then as their descendants we will automatically be within reach of God's realm of life.

However, if we have evil ancestors, we will find ourselves far removed from God's realm of life. For a person who is distant from God's realm of life to draw near to it, a period of repentance that outweighs the evils committed by his or her ancestors is absolutely necessary. Unless this person completes this task, he or she will be unable to access a world of vitality greater than his or her own. Because of this, the path of faith requires heartfelt tears of repentance. (32-024, 1970.06.14)

Living by the Word

31 If you have been living a life of faith for ten years, you should have had some experience of struggling to unite with God's heart in those years. If you experienced great joy while carrying out a particular mission, that should stimulate you so that one day you will completely fulfill your task. This idea should be deeply embedded in your heart, so that when you are surrounded with difficulties you can say, "When the spring comes, I will exert myself one more time for this, to the farthest reaches of heaven. Wait and see. When that time comes, I will do this." We need such conviction. (043-105, 1971.04.25)

32 Faith is necessary to provide the motivation for action. When the Bible teaches us where to find the kingdom of heaven, it does not say merely to believe in it; rather it teaches that the kingdom of heaven lies within us. That heaven is within us does not mean that the subject partner's position depends on the world of the object partner. I determine the kind of subject partner I will be. It is clear that human beings have the impetus that determines this. (46-071, 1971.07.25)

33 You need to apply the faith you have learned, either spiritually or through me, in your endeavors. Where you do so, there the kingdom of heaven will unfold. When we look at this centered on God, we are in the second position and our environment is in the third position. There are three stages—formation, growth and completion. Since I am in the central position, I can perfect heaven and also perfect the world. Thus in the Bible, the second position is always a problem. Whose position is the second position? When looking at God and the created universe, it is the human beings' position. (76-157, 1975.02.02)

34 The human being is the connector among three points on a line. Therefore when human beings reach perfection, we will also witness the perfection of God and the universe. Thus in my pioneering course, what I need absolutely is spiritual experience and practice in coordinating these two worlds. If spiritual experience refers to the spirit, practice refers to the truth; if we call spiritual experience the right hand, practice is the left. When I perfectly align spiritual experience with

practice, I emerge as a son of God representing the entire universe. (76-157, 1975.02.02)

35 You need to have some accomplishments. The issue is whether at least one person on a battlefield achieves noteworthy results. I am not interested in worthless practices. As representatives of God, our families and our nation, we must shed blood in the fight to obtain results worthy of respect. We cannot do this while laughing. However, when we go forward with life-or-death determination, results commensurate with our efforts will naturally emerge. Now is the time to invest our best abilities and leave a legacy of achievements. (217-080, 1991.04.16)

Section 2. The Purpose and Goal of a Life of Faith

1 It is dangerous to fall into a routine life of faith. Such a life of faith becomes a condition for Satan, who is always busy trying to find reasons to accuse us. As people walk the path of restoration, Satan does not want to yield even one person. He continually looks for any opportunity to invade people by any means or method. In this sense, strict religious precepts are beneficial. When individuals fulfill indemnity conditions, Satan can be separated from them on the individual level. However, Satan may again invade on the family level, the tribal level or the national level. If you lead a worldly life guided by habit, you will tend to get easily caught up in a conventional lifestyle that is not a true way of life. It is better for you to unceasingly practice true love and sacrifice yourself for others, for only then can you overcome Satan. Accordingly, although it may be difficult, when you practice the way of righteousness for the public good, you can experience tremendous fulfillment. We all need to lead such lives. (167-100, 1987.06.30)

Reasons for living a life of faith

2 We human beings have a conscience and a physical body. The more we are pulled by the body, the more the body dominates us and the more its desires control our life, the less powerful our center will be. If we follow the desires of the body, we will be pulled down to the point where the sphere of our conscience dwindles to zero. However, if we control the desires of the body, we can grow in our vertical faith. We have not yet grown spiritually to reach the standard of perfection before God. In order to reach that level, we need to do our utmost to offer conditions of devotion greater than any worldly love. Only when we invest greater love for God than our love for the world can we reach the completion level of the growth stage. Then by fulfilling our portion of responsibility centering on the realm of oneness, we can pass beyond the jurisdiction of the indirect dominion into God's direct

dominion, the realm of perfection. This view is based on the Principle. (271-281, 1995.08.28)

3 The purer the religion, the stricter it is toward the body. For example, among Christians, Catholic priests and nuns lead celibate lives. This means they are expected to sacrifice themselves in order to serve others more. Christians encourage each other with ideas such as, "Seek to become the cornerstone, not just a brick in the upper wall," or "Become a pillar that holds up walls, not an ornamental facade on the gate." The Bible's teachings all go against the desires of the body. We cannot let our fallen mind and body do whatever they want to. This is why we do the opposite of what delights the body. It is because only then can the desires of the body be mastered. The highest and purest religion is the one that is best at leading believers away from bodily desires. (18-068, 1967.05.21)

4 The path of faith we follow does not allow us to insist on our own personal opinions or concepts. Absolute faith has no concept of "I," "me" or "mine." When we say our faith is absolute, it means there should be nothing that holds us back. To become one with God we will need to put aside any insistence on our own view. This means we unite completely with the desires of our subject partner, God. Complete unity means we have no shred of desire to impose ourselves. In the path of faith, if circumstances allow us to egocentrically assert ourselves, it is not the kingdom of heaven. No matter how devout our faith, if we are in the position to pursue our own hopes and desires as we please, it cannot be the kingdom of heaven. Like me, you need to think seriously about this fundamental issue. (046-082, 1971.07.25)

5 When someone faces insoluble personal problems, he or she needs to seek help from a senior, someone who is spiritually higher. The person should honestly report the situation and explain, "I do not exist for myself or live on my own; I exist for those who follow the One." Then if that spiritually higher person instructs him or her to go left, he or she should go left; and if that senior person says to go right, he or she should go right. Whether the spiritually higher person wants the person to go up or down, that person should do as asked. If he or she can say, "I am here at the command of my leader, not for my own sake," he or she will overcome all difficulties. That is to say, we need companions in our life of faith. People without companions are lonely people. Those who have companions can support and protect each other. They can find ways to overcome the challenges that arise in their life. Those with no companions have to resolve by themselves any problems that crop up. But this is truly a challenging task; problems assail us from every direction and we become unable to make it on our own. (42-251, 1971.03.21)

6 Because the lives of fallen human beings began from Satan, unless we deny ourselves, we cannot be linked to God's life. Accordingly, there is no other way except to lay down our own life. At what point can there be unity between our life and God's life? This occurs at the point we are willing to give up our fallen life—that is, where we willingly go to the end, even to the extent of sacrificing our own life. This is why the path of faith is the path of living for the Will, the path of uniting with the Will even at the risk of our life. (038-079, 1971.01.01)

7 When I hear you laugh while you're talking in your room, I can immediately sense whether your laughter brings something positive or negative to God. I can feel it. You too need to cultivate good habits and develop your spiritual senses. Nothing in your surroundings is meaningless. Everything can be used as educational material, as a textbook for self-development. We need to have such an outlook on life. Then even when you are alone, you will not just act as you please. If you live with such an outlook on life, you will not mistreat anyone, whether an acquaintance or a stranger. You cannot treat a person casually simply because he or she is a stranger you meet for the first time. You really do not know who that person is. Therefore, in our life we need to develop our spiritual senses by relating with our environment centered on the standard of heart. People who never fail to find meaningful value, and delight in any situation or incident, are no longer practicing a faith that is merely conceptual. Such people practice real faith. Their life of faith is to live together with God. (040-285, 1971.02.07)

8 A life of faith must be fervent. Its fervor must exceed a hungry person's craving for food or the desperate heart of a lost child looking for his or her mother. This is because a life of faith pursues the goal of faith, which is not visible to the eyes. Is God's Will visible? God's Will remains invisible until it is realized through human beings. In the world around us, people plan, design, budget for and then execute a project; but God's Will is neither visible nor tangible. It is difficult to seek for the invisible world and substantiate its objectives in reality. Your eyes can see only what is visible. You cannot feel, see or hear what cannot be physically seen, felt or heard. Your five senses necessarily enable you to feel, hear and touch only what is perceptible in the physical realm. (61-143, 1972.08.28)

9 What is the path of faith? If a person can sense something from the invisible world more strongly than from the visible world, that person will never be exhausted. The external world seeks for the visible and revolves around it; but the path of faith pursues what is invisible. Therefore when you are so caught up in the external world that you lose sight of your spiritual goal and purpose, you will feel drained of energy in your life of faith. (61-143, 1972.08.28)

Regaining the parent-child relationship with God

10 What should be the goal of Unification Church members in their life of faith? Their goal should be to walk the path of the cross, in the shoes of a servant, with the heart of a parent. We are unworthy to be considered even as servants. We have the body of a murderer who killed the Father. So we must walk the path to indemnify this. Jesus was innocent, yet he walked that path. Therefore we sinners who actually killed the Father should walk this path a hundred times, even a thousand times. (13-055, 1963.10.16)

11 You desperately appealed to God with a sorrowful heart, yet you could not find Him. It is due to the Fall that you could not find God. It is due to the Fall that human beings could not establish a parent-child relationship with God or a relationship of love with Him based on the heavenly norm. Therefore, we need to understand the causes and circumstances of the Fall and clearly reveal the identity of Satan. Only then can we human beings be restored to our original position. We do not need a lip- service parent-child relationship or even one just based on a covenant. We need to recover a living parent-child relationship with God. Even if our bones and flesh melt and we have to endure excruciating pain, it is only when we invest all our heart and mind for His Will and bring victory that this can happen. (2-235, 1957.06.02)

12 Imagine the glory of God's creations, which He made with His own hands and which were substantiated by His Word. Yet today heaven and earth do not reflect God's glory. This is woeful and infuriating; it does not reflect God's motivation and purpose for creating. His creation was defiled and God's intention and purpose of creation were violated due to something unexpected—the Fall of the first human beings. The Fall became the source of suffering, grief and misfortune. It is the source of everything human beings detest. An adversary wielding a knife is not our true enemy. The Fall is the real enemy of humankind, the enemy of all things and the enemy of the Creator. What is the origin of this enemy? It originated millennia ago with the first human ancestors. Therefore, if we are to dig out the root of evil and sin, we must desperately battle this enemy, and eradicate the origin of the Fall by blasting it out of existence. Only then will the enemy be unable to relate with human beings on earth. As long as he remains, evil will still be rampant in the world. Believers ought not to battle over the results of the Fall; rather their first priority ought to be finding the Fall's originator. We need to identify the enemy's den and how he caused the Fall. The problem of the Fall needs to be resolved fundamentally between the three parties: God, human beings and Satan. Unless

this is done, we will remain at a loss over how to resolve human suffering. (11-333, 1962.04.17)

13 Human beings should be able to call God “my Father” from the position of His true sons and daughters. This is the hope of humankind, the hope of all creation and the hope of God. Therefore, we are destined to work for the restoration of this relationship, so we may live on earth as true sons and daughters of God. As of now, our only wish is to build our relationship with God as our parent, based on true love. (3-029, 1957.09.15)

14 Amid the joys and sorrows that represent heaven and hell, I took my first steps to question and search for the origin of the universe. I discovered that its core is the parent-child relationship. Therefore the foundation of restoration is the parent-child relationship. This relationship must be completely restored. Accordingly, the history of God’s providence is of the restoration of the original relationship between the Father and His sons and daughters. (19-016, 1967.11.02)

15 In order to stand before our absolute Father as His true sons and daughters, we need to overcome the world of doubt, the world of death, the world of sin and the world of fear. Once we understand what the essence of the life of faith that Heaven expects of us is all about, we can do no less than reach that standard and, having reached it, stand before Heaven. Unless we do so, we cannot become our Father’s true sons and daughters. When you are armed with such a faith, you will be able to establish an eternal bond with God, enjoy eternal goodness and eternal life, and be eternally freed from pain. And you will be able to live eternally within the heavenly realm. This is something to remember. (3-022, 1957.09.08)

16 People separated from their parents or from their husband or wife feel sorrow. They are also unhappy if they don’t have a nation that can protect them and their families. These situations draw people together in close relationships. People sometimes feel sadness even in their ordinary relationships. If they are unable to create bonds based on an eternal worldview, wouldn’t they also feel empty? Even if people acquire everything they need and want in their life on earth, they are still bound to seek an eternal relationship with Heaven. (3-052, 1957.09.22)

17 We who follow the path of faith should aim for that which is unchanging. We must restore relationships that are unchanging. We need to realize that such bonds are made not separately from our daily lives but from within the sphere of our lives, with everything connected in oneness. We need to know this and live our lives while actively relating with God. Only through relating with God in our lives can we

reclaim our true value and allow God to dwell in our heart, attaining oneness with Him. In other words, when you experience God's substantial presence, which allows you to live in such a way, you will realize that this has unlimited value. When you create the environment in which universal values can be actualized, the value of both individuals and the whole will start to grow centering on you. (3-052, 1957.09.22)

18 Unificationists' view of faith differs from that of any other religion. Up to this point, Christians have had a vague faith based on the Savior Jesus and the Bible. However, our life of faith is based on the word "Parent," meaning God, and is focused on cultivating the parent- child relationship with God. Parents and children have an inseparable relationship. That is true from the moment we are born and throughout our life until we die. Therefore, we cannot live or engage in any activity apart from our parents. This is especially so for the Parents who are the center of the history of the universe. They are not just ordinary parents who come to earth for their own family members; they come having achieved the absolute bond with God. This is why, unless you are connected to God and True Parents and unite fully with them, you cannot accomplish your responsibility or fulfill your purpose. The most important thing is that the three—God, True Parents and you— must always be in total oneness. (24-131, 1969.07.20)

19 What do all people and all things of creation lament over? It is that we cannot participate as members of the heavenly family. This is the lament of the cosmos. The purpose of our life of faith is nothing less than to find God and call Him Father. God has carried out the providence of restoration for six thousand years in order to welcome the day when all people will rejoice as brothers and sisters and recognize Him as their Father. (7-265, 1959.09.27)

Spiritual maturity

20 Why did Jesus claim to be the begotten Son of God? The reason he made a statement that was so hard for the people of his day to believe was because he wanted to give them the benefits of instantly making a leap forward in faith through having believed in him. If the people had boundless faith in Jesus, their cries would have reached Heaven and their faith would have grown with great strides. The higher the level of your faith in the center of the heavenly kingdom, the greater the works the spirit world can do through you. If you possess boundless faith, then according to the quality of your character, you will be able to immediately feel the realities of the world beyond your physical senses and beyond the physical universe to a degree you cannot imagine. Unfortunately, human beings

lost this amazing ability. If a believer has the ambition to ceaselessly advance toward the infinite world, he or she will have to face a cosmic battle. He or she will have to vanquish the forces that insist that human beings remain within a hemmed-in realm of faith. (3-021, 1957.09.08)

21 Human beings were originally meant to reach perfection in both spirit and flesh. As long as Jesus remains only in the position of our spiritual parent, he can give us only spiritual salvation, which is one half of salvation. Accordingly, there is a need for the returning Lord to come to earth to give us physical salvation, in the flesh. Then the returning Lord is to unite the spirits of all who believed in Jesus together with Christians on earth and offer them all before God to inaugurate the Third Israel. Just as baptism enabled believers to become citizens of the Second Israel, believers need to go through the gate of the Blessing to become citizens of the Third Israel. (19-096, 1967.12.31)

22 Wrongful love led Adam and Eve to the Fall. In order to reverse this through indemnity, human beings need to go through the gate of the Blessing and be joined as brides and grooms in God's love. Otherwise, they cannot enter the kingdom of heaven. The responsibility to establish the Blessing was something that not even Jesus was able to fulfill. It is therefore the responsibility of the returning Lord, the Savior, to complete this task. Unless the Lord returns and takes up this task, and unless he controls the root of everything on earth, there is no way that he will be able to straighten out the entanglements on earth. The entire responsibility for giving the Blessing is his to fulfill. (19-096, 1967.12.31)

23 Because he was crucified, Jesus could not become the True Parent with a physical body. Although God's lineage was spiritually established, the manifestation of True Parents, who have both spirit and body, could not be realized. The spiritual True Parent, Jesus, is limited to the spirit world, making only spiritual salvation possible. He did not accomplish physical salvation, namely, redemption for the sins committed in the flesh. Accordingly, Christianity has only had a spiritual father and a spiritual mother—Jesus and the Holy Spirit. Therefore, when the True Parents come, we will need to be born anew through them, conditionally or symbolically reentering the womb of the Mother. For that sake, we have been groping our way forward on this course. (055-117, 1972.04.01)

24 Between the spirit self and the physical self, the spirit self is the more important. The physical self has a lifespan of seventy to eighty years in the limited physical realm, after which it decomposes. However, the spirit self transcends time and space. When you understand the historical responsibility that human beings are

meant to fulfill, you must fulfill it. No matter how much you enjoy your life while living in the flesh, your body is destined to perish. Fleshly life is inevitably going to end. (20-326, 1968.07.14)

25 John the Baptist did not attend Jesus on the family level. Therefore Jesus had to indemnify this on John's behalf. Likewise, because the Christian cultural sphere did not attend the returning Lord, I, in the position of John the Baptist, had to establish the Unification Church in place of Christianity. Hence at the time of the Second Advent, the Unification Church is similar to Judaism on the global level. The United States, which is in the position of Israel, and the free world, should have become one with the Unification Church, but they are opposing it, as is Korea. Until such unity transpires, the Unification Church has no nation and can only carry out the providence of spiritual salvation, just as God carried out the providence of spiritual salvation through Jesus in the New Testament Age. If in the Last Days, Christianity, which has the global spiritual foundation, totally unites with me, then establishing the physical foundation will be no problem at all. (246-142, 1993.04.07)

26 We first need to free ourselves from Satan's world. We should also develop emotions different from those of worldly people. That is, we must deeply experience God's love spiritually and hate what Satan loves. We must also sacrifice ourselves for the sake of the entire world. If, centering on me, you are victorious on the individual, family, tribal, national and global levels, we can recover the spiritual Israel and the chosen people and establish them as the Third Israel. When this happens, God can save humanity spiritually and physically through us. (052-042, 1971.12.12)

27 Which is more important: spiritual standards or physical standards? We should not place physical standards in the primary position. Though the flesh exists for the spirit and the spirit for the flesh, do not cling to ways of the secular world. You should take the more meaningful position by concentrating your spirit and flesh on the essence of life. This is the path for those who uphold the Unificationist worldview. As it is, there are many people who care more about the body—about what to eat and where to live—than about living according to a spiritual standard. Everyone is caught by the conditions they create. (20-326, 1968.07.14)

Sharing our lives with True Parents

28 What is the one foundation that can be the starting point for the realization of God's hope and humanity's hope? What is the one foundation that, for believers, marks the starting point of victory? The origin of God's bitter sorrow is that human

beings descended from the false parent, Satan. Therefore we must become people who can obey the True Parents, based on our sacred relationship with them. This will finally liberate the cosmos and open the gate to the heavenly kingdom. (42-291, 1971.03.27)

29 A true family consists of a true man and a true woman who become true husband and true wife and then true parents of true children. Our core purpose as a man or woman is to become a true parent and as a couple to become true parents. After becoming true parents, we have sons and daughters and establish a family. This is why in the Unification Church we say, "Let us have faith in True Parents" and "Let us believe in True Parents." We needed to say this because we weren't certain that what we believed was true. But once we know with certainty, we move beyond the point of mere belief or faith. Formerly we believed because we did not know with certainty; now that we do, we no longer need to simply believe. Furthermore, until now we did not know why we were born, what it really means to become a husband or wife, the significance of children and what family is all about. But now we no longer need to believe in True Parents' family because we can know True Parents' family. We know True Parents, so we no longer need to just believe in them. Put away the concept, "I believe in True Parents," and instead think, "I know True Parents." With that, we can share our lives with True Parents. We can live with them. (287-140, 1997.09.14)

30 The Messiah is the perfected True Parents who have nothing to do with the Fall. When the True Parents appear, they become the axis by which God and human beings can be linked to each other. God is the spiritual True Parent, and when Adam and Eve reach perfection they become the substantial True Parents on earth. Because of this axis, there is unity. Religions until the present did not have the standard of True Parents; hence there was no way for them to link human beings with God on earth. Therefore religions have advocated offering devotion so that believers could establish a standard upon which to build a reciprocal base with Heaven and meet the Lord in spirit. For this reason many believers have lived their lives cultivating their spirituality by making repeated conditions of devotion, gradually building their own spiritual bridges to encounter Heaven. (268-234, 1995.04.02)

31 Every single human being must follow the path to sever from the false love, false life and false lineage they were born with and to live a new life by being engrafted into true love, true life and the true lineage. Religions emerged to help us subjugate the body and forge unity between the mind and body. Therefore, as a religious believer it is important that you attain the state of mind-body unity while living on

earth, become one with your spouse in true love, and give birth to sons and daughters who can go to the kingdom of heaven. How can people give birth to true sons and daughters who can enter the heavenly kingdom unless they live a life of faith? This is why religions emerged for the subjugation of the body and for the unity of the body with the mind. They are to bring people into unity with the True Parents through an engrafting process. This is how false olive trees are transformed into true olive trees that bear true sons and daughters who, after completing their earthly lives, will proceed to the eternal world, the kingdom of heaven. This is the ideal of creation. (263-283, 1994.10.15)

32 True Parents advanced from the lowest level of hell up to the height of heaven and are moving forward with true love. When we follow True Parents' will and become one with them in heart and one with their ideal of life, there will be no distance between us and True Parents. Then what they have erected and indemnified vertically will unfold for us horizontally. The standards of the eight stages are required only until redemption is accomplished on the eight levels—that of an individual, a family, a tribe, a people, a nation, the world, the cosmos, and finally the level of God's liberation. When all that is accomplished horizontally, individuals will be able to freely advance to the family level, our family to the level of the tribe and our tribe to the level of one people. We start from the individual level, advance to the ends of the earth, and then come back. (295-126, 1998.08.19)

Section 3. The Path of Faith

1 Because human beings are born as descendants of the fallen first human ancestors, we can neither find the path to God nor enter the heavenly nation unless we overcome the obstacle of the Fall. Furthermore, as beings encumbered with fallen nature, it is impossible to find the way to reverse the Fall on our own. In order to reverse the Fall, we cannot rely on our own power, but must rely on the power of a third party. Such is the plight of people living today. Fortunately, Heaven has not forsaken us. Throughout history Heaven has toiled, taking responsibility to guide us in reversing the conditions of the Fall. (076-091, 1975.02.01)

The path we must go in accordance with God's Will

2 When we talk about the true path of faith, "true" means there is only one path. What then, is the object of our faith? It is the absolute God. A life of faith is about seeking and finding the destination of hope desired by God, in accordance with His Will. A life of faith is not about what I want; it is not about the desire of those who lead a life of faith. Confusion has occurred within the global community of faith

because people have not understood that a life of faith should be centered upon accomplishing God's Will, not centered upon oneself. (265-312, 1994.12.01)

3 Everything depends on oneself. It is up to each of us whether we achieve perfection or fail to achieve it. It is the same regarding whether we succeed or fail in life. Our life of faith is no different. Although our faith may be constant throughout our life, our conscience urges us to strive after ever-higher goals. Reaching the highest standard is, however, no ordinary undertaking. The higher we climb, the closer to the peak we are, until ultimately we realize that everything ends in unity. It is difficult, though, to reach that point of oneness: historically, our conscience has sought the purpose of goodness, yet the perfection we desire as human beings still eludes us. (249-010, 1993.10.07)

4 In the Unification Church, your life of faith requires you to raise the standard by which you evaluate yourselves as you walk with God in your daily lives. When you go to the spirit world this higher standard will be your asset. It will also be the determining factor deciding whether in the new era you will be remembered in history as a hero or an outcast. (25-215, 1969.10.04)

5 Each one of us needs a victorious standard, a starting point from which we can accomplish our mission. This means we must establish a victorious standard from the subject partner position. Naturally, unless we establish a victorious standard, we will not be able to accomplish our purpose. Where must we establish this standard? It must be created within ourselves. (29-265, 1970.03.11)

6 When Jesus came to earth carrying God's entire mission on His behalf, standing as the one responsible for ending a cosmic struggle, the issue for Jesus was always to focus on his relationship with God. God was to be the center of heaven and earth and Jesus the substantial center. Jesus was constantly mindful of this fact. If any gap between himself and God had opened, or a conflict over their purpose had arisen, they would not have been able to progress toward victory. (29-265, 1970.03.11)

7 Deep in his heart, Jesus carried the conviction that the Father and Son must always be united. In other words, centering on God, the victorious subject partner, Jesus was fully aware that in order to prepare a victorious foundation as a subject partner on earth, he needed to attend God in his heart. It is from this standpoint that Jesus referred to himself as the temple of God. Achieving a victorious standard means to create a foundation of unity, of becoming a temple centering on Jesus, the substantial manifestation of God on earth. In other words, to complete a victorious foundation, a standard must be established. Otherwise the completion of

restoration, the accomplishment of Jesus' mission, would be impossible. Therefore, unless we establish a standard of faith and begin, we cannot claim that we have attained a victorious foundation. This is true no matter how long we have practiced a life of faith or how difficult our course may have been. In conclusion, the most important point is to have one moment that defines the standard of victory within oneself. (29-266, 1970.03.11)

8 When you seek what is true, you need a heart that longs for what is true. When you yearn for the truth in which heaven and earth can take delight, you must realize that you have to prepare yourself to match the standard of what is true from Heaven's perspective. The means of existence may differ between the true God, true truth and true human beings. However, from an internal point of view, all three move in the same direction. In other words, God and truth move in one direction and coexist eternally. When we look at today's world, we lament that this world has not become a true world. Furthermore, when we look deeply within ourselves, we lament not becoming true people and deplore not finding the true God in our lives of faith, despite yearning to do so. This is the agony faced by those who lead a life of faith. (4-187, 1958.04.20)

9 No one who lives a life of faith at the risk of his or her life wants to see his or her faith simply crumble amid life's tribulations. The more seriously we practice our faith, the greater the trials we encounter and the more we want our faith to become deeper, wider and more enduring. If God is a serious God, then when He looks at each of us, we want Him to look more seriously at us than others look at us. Furthermore, as believers we all desire to leave a legacy in this world related to the cause most dear to our hearts. (44-322, 1971.05.30)

10 As believers, we say we will become God's children. Yet what is God's wish? God's ultimate wish for us has nothing to do with the mundane matters of our daily lives such as eating and sleeping. These activities are common to everyone. The Bible clearly tells us, "Therefore do not worry, saying, 'What will we eat?' or 'What will we drink?' or 'What will we wear?' For it is the Gentiles who strive for all these things... But strive first for the kingdom of God and His righteousness." (Matt. 7:31-33) (104-097, 1979.04.15)

11 A life of faith involves overcoming the constraints of our environment, making breakthroughs every day and constantly seeking new paths. Unless we do so, we cannot enter the kingdom desired by God. Since we often lack energy and since our habits and daily lives do not meet a high standard on our path of faith, we need to

uphold God as our standard and adjust our daily lives accordingly. (071-272, 1974.05.05)

The path to eliminate the fallen nature

12 Originally human life was meant to begin with living for others, with God at the center. However, due to the Fall, human life did not begin with living for others. It began with selfish thinking, living for oneself and creating self-centered relationships. Since we are striving toward the goals of eternal freedom and peace, we must shed the self-centeredness and fallen nature that put our personal desires before the greater purpose. We need to become people who transcend ourselves and live for others. (2-165, 1957.04.07)

13 Before we can be proud of ourselves, we first must admit we are fallen people. Prior to showcasing our qualities, we first must confess the nature of our sins, while admitting that we come from a sinful history and that we are imbued with fallen nature. Although this is the reality of our fallen state, we try to circumvent it in all kinds of ways. Heaven must cleanse all the guilt that stains history and resolve the resentments resulting from these festering historical crimes passing down through the lineage. (006-336, 1959.06.28)

14 Among your colleagues, teachers, students or relatives, is there anyone who likes those who make excuses? Yet people are prone to blaming another person and scapegoating others when something goes wrong. A common excuse is, "Why are you only blaming me? He also did that; my brother did the same thing." This is wrong. A person who makes a mistake should be honest. Yet often, someone who has committed an error tries to implicate others. Such behavior is from fallen nature. In order to correct this fallen inclination within ourselves, we should be honest in our daily life. We must have even greater honesty in front of God. (45-251, 1971.07.04)

15 When perfect parts are put together for a particular purpose, a perfect object is made. For example, to build a house, the doors and all the related components should be perfect. Only then can a house be completed. When we consider this, we realize we need to pursue perfection. Therefore, Jesus said, in Matthew 5:48, "Be perfect, therefore, as your Heavenly Father is perfect." The standard is that you too must reach the perfection of Heaven. You must without doubt pursue the values of an object partner who comes close to the Absolute. What is required is a perfected object partner who stands unashamed in front of the Absolute. In order to achieve this, we need to analyze our daily life. We must set aside our daily life and even our

thinking. We must analyze our five senses and entire body. We must feel and sense everything differently from how we did before. (60-047, 1972.08.06)

16 When you assert yourself in front of fallen humankind, it can be inferred that you still have your fallen nature. From this point, you must completely break yourself down. If you cling to the shape and elements of your fallen nature, you have more to do to reach total self-abnegation. Taking oneself apart completely means total self-denial. The true, original, ideal hope of human beings cannot be attained by the self-assertive way of fallen people. This is the conclusion. This is why, as God pursues providential goals through religion, the path He upholds is not that of self-assertion but the path of absolute self-denial. Unless we set the standard starting with total self-abnegation, there are no means for fallen human beings to fulfill the Absolute Being's principle of partnership. (60-048, 1972.08.06)

17 We must completely detach from our fallen nature. To cut free from fallen nature, we first must dissociate from our individual selves. Hence we must be victorious as individuals—and then on the levels of the family, people, nation, world and finally the cosmos. This would be the realm of complete freedom from fallen nature. When we finally discover ourselves as object partners to God, having overcome our fallen nature, we will immediately realize that God is watching over us, and come to know that, instead of simply believing in God, we are with God. (61-171, 1972.08.28)

18 When you stand in front of Heaven, you have to reveal your shortcomings and recognize that you are a sinner. You need to become a lump of clay God can shape and mold as He pleases. This process is impossible if you assert or even acknowledge yourself. Thus the biblical saying, "Those who lose their life for my sake will find it" is validated. (Matt. 10:39) There is fallen nature everywhere in the body: there is fallen nature within these eyes, in these ears, in these lips. We must completely eliminate fallen nature. If God leads us one way, we must follow; if God takes us another way, we must go; if God tells us to extend our hand, we should do it; if God commands that we retreat, we must retreat. We should be absolutely willing to do as God wishes. (069-276, 1974.01.01)

19 Changing one's perception or understanding is a frightening and difficult task. Once acquired, a bad habit is difficult to change. This is why we have the adage, "Habits formed as a toddler continue until old age." Although you may have been in the Unification Church for decades, you have not rooted out your secular habits. You may say the words, "Sacrifice for the providence; sacrifice," but have you really sacrificed? If given the choice between a comfortable path and a path of trials and

tribulations, can you confidently say you would go the path of sacrifice? No. This disposition toward taking the easy way out is the result of secular habits transmitted historically. Even St. Paul exclaimed, "Wretched man that I am! Who will rescue me from this body of death?" (Rom. 7:24) This wretchedness is also a result of habits accumulated over a lifetime. St. Paul lamented, "Wretched man that I am!" because he saw within himself two laws at war with each other. His inner being delighted in God's law but his body followed Satan's desires. He thus added, "Who will rescue me from this body of death?" (172-192, 1988.01.21)

20 Habits formed over a lifetime cannot be eliminated, even though you try until you die. Thus it is logical to say that habits and fallen nature that have been passed down over millions of years cannot be rooted out with efforts made over a few centuries. This is a serious issue. You speak vaguely about fallen nature, but this fallen nature was not inherited through something being eaten. Fallen nature has been inherited through flesh and bone; it has been passed down through lineage. These habits have been mixed with flesh and blood. Fallen nature has taken root and cannot be removed with human energy. It has grown into a gigantic tree gathering up all the people of the world. (183-018, 1988.10.29)

21 We need to be aware of our fallen nature and the bitter sorrow of the Fall. Think about Adam and Eve crying after being chased from Eden. Remember this, and let us cleave earnestly to our Parent, yearning to be one with Him, with the determination to go forward- even if we have to spend tens of thousands of years crossing over the peaks of death. If we are unable to achieve mind-body unity, we will have no relationship with the foundation of God's victory, even as that foundation spreads across the earth. (254-038, 1994.02.01)

The path to find my original self

22 You cannot rejoice in who you are, since you are not your original self. You must recognize that your situation is sorrowful. Your grief, however, should not be directed toward the world. Even when you feel pain, your pain should bear no relationship to the anguish of the secular world. When you feel sadness and pain, your sadness should come from being unable to find your true self. No matter how great the anguish and suffering of the world, they do not exceed the sadness and pain people experience being unable to find their true selves. Given this situation, for whom has God been searching until now? God has been searching for each of you. This is why you need to uncover and strengthen your true selves. Otherwise you have no relationship to a true family of true individuals, a true society built upon true families, a true nation of true societies, a true world made up of such

true nations, or to the cosmos that bears this ideal world that perfectly centers on the substance of oneness. The first standard for all these levels of goodness is individual perfection. (5-065, 1958.12.21)

23 By disobeying God's Word, humankind lost God's Word, lost His substance and lost His love. Can you imagine God's heart as He spoke the Word, His heart as He created human beings to be His substance, and His internal heart anticipating the pride He would feel through that substance? We are the ones who lost God's Word, failed to embody Him and failed to embody the love that could create the garden envisioned by God. Hence we must realize that we are all sinners who cannot take pride in ourselves. On the contrary, we are beings who are incapable of establishing initiatives on our own and unable to find any basis to discover the foundation for the Sabbath within our own minds. (5-176, 1959.01.18)

24 Our mind constantly redirects us along our way. It tells us, "Turn around. Return to the ancient place. Return to the deepest place in your mind." This is why Buddhism encourages us to meditate. The reality of our life on earth is that through our original mind's guidance we sorrowfully seek our original selves. Once we have purified ourselves and returned to the ancient place, it is excruciating to recall our past, even in dreams. God's goal is to eliminate this kind of sorrow-filled life. We should be living in the new, ideal world, enraptured with renewed hope. (7-279, 1959.09.27)

25 In the secular world, people seek good food and wear fashionable clothes. In contrast, the basic attitude of a religious seeker should be to eat simple food by choice. This is opposite to the way of the world. When you look at religious seekers, you see that despite eating humble food, wearing shabby clothes and leading impoverished lives, their way of life and their purpose is to find the original relationship—the love that can embrace them eternally. (044-192, 1971.05.07)

26 The original place of the Will is where God dwells. Therefore that original place is sacred. When we transcend all levels of creation and measure our coordinates from all directions, we can determine exactly where we are in relation to the Absolute. However, if we are mistaken in measuring and are not aligned with the original point at 180 degrees, we cannot reach it until we realign and straighten ourselves out. Given the context of our sinful history, this is the inevitable conclusion. We need to realign ourselves with all four directions in order to find the original zero point. And in order to find that zero point, we need to clearly understand the original center. Only when we fully unite with the zero point can we reach that original center. Until we understand this, we cannot recover our position

as a second, resultant being, totally united with the Will, through which we can achieve a new beginning. This is logical and no one can object to it. (127-209, 1983.05.08)

27 When God created Adam and Eve, He invested Himself wholeheartedly based on that original relationship. In the same fashion, we must transform our fallen selves and strive to return to our original position, by investing several dozen times greater effort than God did, using all His creativity through thousands of years of history. In the history of restoration, the effort to secure a foundation of goodness has run to hundreds of attempts and has taken tens of thousands of years. (475-253, 2004.11.12)

28 The human body and conscience began to fight once they were placed under the realm of Satan's love, within the devil's dominion, which stands opposed to the original mind. The critical issue is how to resolve this fight between our conscience and our body. Resolving the issue at the personal level, however, is not enough. Each of us must repair the global environment, which has been overtaken by satanic forces. The environment should not contradict us; it should adjust to us. It should even follow us. Unless we accomplish the correct order of dominion, we cannot move in the direction to which our original minds aspire. (143-122, 1986.03.17)

29 We must ask ourselves, "What kind of being am I?" We are divine princes and princesses with cosmic value who are meant to find the crown of glory at the end of our lives, inheriting all of creation and the entire universe. Is it acceptable that people with such value be sold for a bowl of rice, or be the puppet of a group of worthless outlaws? Absolutely not! We must find ourselves. We need to bear the responsibility for our own restoration and rebuild our original nature. We have to ask, "Where is my original self?" We are searching, full of hope as we struggle to reunite with our true selves. We must uncover our self, which is connected with the origin of history, with cosmic law, with today's reality and with the future. (151-079, 1962.10.07)

Section 4. Stages in a Life of Faith

1 If you look at the Chinese character for shin (信), meaning belief, you will see it is a combination of the characters for person (人) and word (言). Belief therefore means a person's word. "Word" here signifies the means of communication that connects two people. When there is an absence of relationship, not a word is spoken. But when two people speak there is immediately an underlying giving and

receiving. So, to form a relationship, we need belief. Moreover, the foundation for a relationship emerges from a connection established with love. But such a relationship cannot be established arbitrarily. A connection is possible because the necessary conditions of energy are there and somehow the levels of both parties' objectives coincide. (20-025, 1968.03.31)

The stages in establishing our faith

2 Hope always supports faith. What does faith demand? If a person has perfect faith, faith demands that he match it in value with substantial effort. Faith means standing for and believing in the person who has matched the ideal of creation, who is in accord with principled law, and who has not fallen, but has reached perfection, and then is acting accordingly. The one who is victorious in this kind of faith will realize his hope. God's love comes naturally to the one who achieves victory in faith and hope. (14-249, 1965.01.01)

3 Since God's formula based on principle requires absolute faith, He had no choice but to command Noah to build the ark on top of a mountain. Noah faithfully accomplished his task over 120 years. That is how the number 120 could be reclaimed. Noah invested his entire life in carrying out God's command. After the flood, Noah's sons realized that their father had been correct, and they respected him, saying, "We thought our father was insane. But, as he predicted, God's judgment came to pass and only our eight family members are left. Our father's words were true. He is a prophet and a man of God." Nevertheless, after the flood, when Ham saw his father lying asleep naked, he felt ashamed and called his two brothers, saying, "Father is crazy. Now he's sleeping naked." Then they took a garment and, walking backward, covered Noah's naked body. With this act, the brothers completely denied Noah's God-ordained position. That they opposed him in the end is undeniable. Therefore we must practice absolute faith before God. We must devote absolute faith only to God, not to Satan. The one who dedicates absolute faith only to God will surely be blessed by God as the father of faith. God cannot help but love such a person. (054-076, 1972.03.11)

4 When we look at faith and practice, there is always a gap between the two. Faith always precedes practice, not the other way around. Only when fallen human beings have strong faith can they practice it vigorously. But God does not look at faith only. God requires faith as a bridge to a better outcome through practice. In spite of this, people neglect the practice and focus primarily on faith. This is at odds with what God desires, but this is the way people generally practice their faith. (046-070, 1971.07.25)

5 God began the creation with absolute faith. So to accomplish the providence of restoration, He also had to begin it with absolute faith. However, absolute faith must be practiced with absolute love as the center. Love is the subject partner, and faith is the object partner. This is why everyone yearns for absolute faith; this desire centers on love. The purpose of love is to give birth to the universe. Absolute faith is needed for creation. In order to create this immense universe, God has to invest His entire mind and body and continue to invest unto eternity. (403-267, 2003.01.24)

6 Absolute faith is about living for others. The absolute God lives for others. During their courtship, young men and women ask each other how much each believes in and cares for the other. In order to lay a path of living for others, the two must become one over time. Absolute faith creates an object partner. On top of that, investment is required, since unity is forged based on true love. One side must begin investing to level things out. But who should do this? A man cannot ask that a woman invest herself for his sake, just as a woman cannot demand that a man invest himself for her sake. Both parties need to invest selflessly in each other in the hope of attaining the greater goal. Practicing this is absolute faith and absolute love. (417-242, 2003.09.10)

7 Why is absolute faith needed? God Himself needs to reach the highest, ideal standard. Based on this standard, the realm of love's object partner appears. Thus God created with absolute faith the realm of the object partner, including the animal, plant and mineral kingdoms. God also invested Himself with His absolute love. God invested Himself absolutely during the mineral era, the plant era and the animal era. After these comes the era of settlement. Unless we reach that final point where our mind and body absolutely do not fight each other, a heavenly world cannot be established. (426-276, 2003.11.27)

8 What is absolute faith? It is all about establishing the order of absolute love. It is all for love. A person who seeks absolute faith for the sake of absolute love forgets about him or herself as an individual embodiment of truth, and invests everything. And when God invests Himself completely, ignoring the internal nature and external form of His own divine character, only then can His object partner become perfect. Thereafter, God can say, "Please make me a Parent who can love His child as the Owner of love." But it is the child who fulfills this request. Neither God nor the father and mother can do this. (461-056, 2004.07.20)

Removing the fallen nature through practice

9 God has toiled up to the present day, seeking to find what was lost. It is not because He is unable to take dominion over human beings. Similarly, God has been fighting Satan and his accusations not because He has no authority. God fights in this way in order to establish the Principle. In this great struggle, God actually permits Satan to act; then He does the great spiritual work of rearranging what Satan has done. Satan cannot accuse God for rearranging what he himself has dominated first. Thus the wisest person is the one who knows how to get even Satan to run God's errands. Such a person will be the ultimate victor. (4-196, 1958.04.20)

10 If you wish to be victorious in battle and become victors representing the past, present and future, you need to know the reality of Satan as he dominated history, his reality as he dominates the present and his intentions for the future. It was for this purpose that Jesus, representing the Jewish people, ascended the Mount of Olives all alone to pray. Jesus devoted his entire life to fighting Satan, the obstructor of the Will of Heaven. In the process, Jesus established a standard of suffering on behalf of the past, present and future. You must follow a similar course. Similar ordeals await each of you on your path. (2-229, 1957.06.02)

11 With regard to the Unification Church, my responsibility is to proclaim all the principles of restoration and carry the overall providence without being encumbered by Satan's accusations. I have paved this road. I have erected the signposts that people can use to find the way to please Heaven in accordance with God's law of love. This is the blessing humankind has received. I, the leader of the Unification Church, have made it possible for people to begin to truly love for the first time in history. This is why the countless people who will learn the Divine Principle through our Unification Church members need to live out those teachings. (157-178, 1967.04.02)

12 We have fallen nature. What are the four main characteristics of fallen nature? They are arrogance, jealousy, anger and deceit. We have been fasting and performing other acts of devotion to remove this fallen nature. To succeed in this, what are we to do in the era of judgment in the course of restoration? We each need to arm ourselves with the Word and become embodiments of the Word. In order to make restoration substantial, we need to remove the primary aspects of our fallen nature. We have four aspects of fallen nature, and we need to go through persecution and hardships in order to remove them. (150-165, 1960.09.04)

13 What is the work of re-creation? It is for that which has fallen to ascend, in the opposite direction, through bursts of energy. As we are on the path to establish

oneness with God's heart, faith is required. But practice is needed even before faith. Yet we cannot act centered on ourselves. We must act from the position of loving God. We must act for the One we love. Unless we establish this properly, we will be unable to go the way of redemption. History bears witness to this. (065-184, 1972.11.19)

14 In the Old Testament Age, God endeavored to nurture a relationship with human beings by inspiring them to make offerings to Him of minerals, plants and animals, consecrated to the side of goodness. People living in that age needed to unite in heart with the sanctified offerings. Fallen human beings have the responsibility to seek true value. Beyond our imagining, God toiled to nurture a relationship of true value with fallen human beings through sanctified offerings. (10-125, 1960.09.18)

15 The Fall occurred on earth, so we must break free from it on earth. Therefore it is not a bad thing that God creates difficult situations for us. By encountering hardships wherever we go, by facing death or being unable to live well, and by living humble lives, we can swiftly remove the impurities of our Mien nature. Our bodies are dysfunctional wrecks covered in waste products that are difficult to remove, but a challenging environment is conducive to removing the pollutants of the fallen nature. Hence the more onerous the situation, the swifter will be our release from indemnity. (242-309, 1993.01.02)

16 Since this world exists as the realm of the Fall, we need to prevail over it. As long as a radio transmitter does not lie flat on the ground but remains erect, even if it must compete with other signals, this transmitter will continue to broadcast globally. Similarly, the transmitter of true love must dominate and exceed the range of the fallen nature's transmitter. So for our transmitters of true love to dominate the realm of the Fall, we need to completely deny everything in Satan's world. Then we can become conditional entities capable of connecting with God. Even then, however, we are not complete entities of perfect love. (273-290, 1995.10.29)

17 The Last Days represents the glorious day of resurrection when human beings on earth come to embody God's goodness. Witnessing is the battlefield on which we, as sons and daughters of God, smash Satan. The arena of witnessing is the arena of tears, in which our ancestors bless and encourage us to fight victoriously, and in which we strive with deep hope to uplift our future descendants. In other words, witnessing is the arena we enter to be resurrected from a servant into an adopted son and from an adopted son into a direct son. God's wish for us is that through these relationships of rebirth we achieve substantial resurrection. We need to

expand the historical standard horizontally by establishing this standard of resurrection. (11-339, 1962.04.17)

18 When walking the course of the providence of restoration, Unification Church members need to progress through the levels of the servant, the adopted son and the direct son. After growing through these three stages, each member needs to love his or her spiritual children or followers in the same way parents care for their children, love them and are ready to die for them. Even as we sacrifice ourselves, to become God's blessed children we should naturally feel gratitude for our blessings, while at the same time hoping that all of them will go to someone else. (15-302, 1965.12.07)

Becoming perfect through true love

19 What is truth? For a man, it is a woman of true love. For a woman, it is a man of true love. What is truth for parents? It is a filial son of true love. What is truth for a filial son? It is a father and mother of true love. What is the truth for human beings? It is God. What is the truth for God? It is Adam and Eve united in true love. Then all is completed. In the family there are parents and teachers. Fathers and mothers teach their children, while husbands teach their wives and wives teach their husbands. People who live this way will become true fathers and mothers, teachers and owners. Such a home becomes a base of peace. Therefore all relationships bear fruit in the family. (203-252, 1990.06.26)

20 What was the starting point for True Parents? It was true love. In the end, love becomes the critical issue. Any family, tribe, people, nation or world that advances based on true love is automatically united. History should have followed the one direction of true love. But instead history has followed a messy, zigzag course. True Parents are called to completely change this situation after going through the levels of the individual, family, tribe and nation. (213-244, 1991.01.21)

21 When the mind and body unite in true love, the mind belongs to the body and the body to the mind. When a man and a woman, each with a united mind and body, become one in true love, they can occupy God. To occupy God, they need to build a bridge. A man cannot build this bridge by himself and neither can a woman by herself. Rather, a couple must join together in true love. For a man or a woman to become perfect, each needs his or her partner. (224-029, 1991.11.21)

22 Theoretically there is no basis on which Satan can approach a family composed of true olive trees. While Satan can approach family members when they are at the top of the growth stage, he cannot when they are at the top of the completion

stage. Completion of one's portion of responsibility leads to unity in true love between the sphere of indirect dominion, based on accomplishments through the Principle, and the sphere of direct dominion. Synergy occurs between the two spheres, and there is nothing Satan can do to separate the two. This marks a new, historical point of transition. (230-341, 1992.05.10)

23 The institution in which the three great kingships are found together is the family. A family is a fortress or palace that holds the past, present and future worlds. In the family, the grandparents, representing the past, should be attended like God, with the absolute respect accorded a great king and queen. The parents are in the position of Adam; they are the present king and queen of the family and its center. The children are the kings and queens of days to come; they inherit the kingdom of the fixture. This is the concept of a royal family based on true love. Families who perfect this are destined to go to heaven. There is no other way; perfection takes place in this way. (246-085, 1993.03.23)

24 The purpose of creation was for Adam and Eve to follow the commandment of God, the owner of true love, and become perfected, true beings. Afterward, Adam and Eve were meant to become a true couple united in God's true love. This perfection of Adam and Eve based on true love would have been the fulfillment of God's wish that they become His extension on earth. Furthermore, their perfection as a true couple would have meant the perfection of God's absolute ideal of love. (282-211, 1997.03.13)

Section 5. Experiences and Challenges on the Path of Faith

1 Do you have mystical experiences in your life of faith, or spiritually experience God's presence? There are some among you who frequently see me spiritually during prayers or in dreams and receive directions from me. This should happen one hundred percent of the time. This is the strength, the pride and the treasure we have. Up to this point, no religion has gone through such an intense kind of experiential process. This is why religions are confused and have become secularized. However, the Unification Church knows that God stands at the very end. Even if the storms and floods of life rage against us and we are about to die, the amazing fact is that we have become men and women who can leave behind a legacy of hope for tomorrow. (087-191, 1976.06.02)

Experiencing God's Word

2 One does not grow tired of hearing words of truth. You need to experience this. If you go to a church that offers words of truth, such that after hearing the same

content a hundred times you still wish you could hear more, you surely have encountered heaven. And when you meet a certain church leader a hundred or a thousand times yet still wish to meet him or her again, do not leave this leader. If one of your arms is amputated, grab this church leader with your other. If you meet such a leader, you certainly have encountered heaven. (010-142, 1960.09.18)

3 If you resolve to attend the Unification Church after hearing the Divine Principle, you will certainly face tests. Or, if you promise to go to a Divine Principle workshop, an accident might happen at home or incidents might occur several times to obstruct you. You must have had such experiences. This formula is certain. This happens because, when you wish to ascend from the individual level to a higher one, Satan steps on you from above. (024-268, 1969.08.24)

4 In order to share the Word with a profound standard of heart, unlike any other, you need to deeply know the Word. To connect with a one hundred percent standard of heart, you need to personally experience and realize the Word deeply like that, then share it. Through our actions, too, we must behave in such a way that we can be liked and respected. (157-047, 1967.02.01)

5 A life of faith is a real battle. We must be victorious in this battle. When a new member seeks to come to church, for instance, Satan is always busy working to impede him or her. Hence in order to overcome this impediment, the spiritual parent must be absolute. This kind of perfect plus creates a perfect minus. Therefore we must not vacillate. We must pursue our life of faith determinedly, without wavering. (198-009, 1990.01.20)

Spiritual experiences and experiences of the heart

6 Through the works of the Holy Spirit, the early Christian church could act in ways to overcome the vortex of persecution. However, these works did not expand to the world, beginning with the individual and progressing through the levels of family and tribe; they remained local. This was the case because the early church members did not clearly establish a direction that such works could have supported. They didn't realize the fundamental purpose that underlay their spiritual experiences, what processes should have followed these works, or what final destination they should have headed toward. (61-017, 1972.08.20)

7 From the beginning, I have worked out solutions to important problems based on reference to the spirit world. I have been testing to see whether the spirit world indeed provides good solutions, due to its standard that goes beyond the nation

and the world. In the spirit world, people transcend nationalities and meet according to their spiritual level. (405-135, 2003.02.11)

8 Henceforth you need to have spiritual experiences. You need to know whether your endeavors will succeed or fail. If you pray fervently, you'll know in advance that you'll succeed. Praying enlivens your mood and makes your body feel more nimble. You can sense it in your body; your body knows. To reach this state, you need to completely cleanse yourself of all notions of self-centeredness and selfishness. (104-116, 1979.04.15)

9 Through the spirit world, every day I guide and instruct the missionaries who are toiling all over the world. You need to realize this in your daily life. If you come in and commit to the Unification Church after listening to the Word for a week, your attitude about life changes. You come to detest your past habits. Then my teachings flow into your heart very well. You come to know what I'm going to say in advance, and cannot but become a core member of the Unification Church. (543-146, 2006.10.29)

10 A life of faith requires deep empathy. Without this profound dimension, you can't know genuine faith. Hence you must experience empathy deeply. What does this mean? When Heaven is sorrowful, each of us needs to feel that sorrow. Deep empathy means this feeling of sorrow floods into you. If you can empathize deeply, you do not need to pray. (255-036, 1994.03.05)

11 Profound empathy is most important in our life of faith. Such empathy leads you to weep unfathomable streams of tears. Have you ever felt tears flowing from your eyes while in a state of transcendental consciousness? This is nothing like the anger and sadness you feel after someone insults you. Your heart is seized with a feeling of grief and tears pour ceaselessly from your eyes. A believer's daily life should essentially be like this. Beyond understanding, deep pain seizes your heart. You feel so heavy-hearted you don't know what to do. (10-202, 1960.10.02)

12 As you practice deep empathic faith throughout your life, you should walk a clearly principled course to reach the standard of an unchanging victor who can represent eternity to all creation. Unless you establish this standard, sorrowful conditions will remain unresolved on earth. If we leave behind such unresolved sorrowful conditions, it will be difficult for us to find God's internal heart when we go to heaven. That is why, as living beings connected to Jesus in spirit and the Holy Spirit in body, we must grow to be substantial manifestations of God's glory. Thereafter we will become substantial embodiments of faith. (1-132, 1956.06.27)

13 To this day, I have offered more devoted effort in front of God than the myriads of Christians in Korea. A person of heart makes progress. Through empathy, such a person expands the realm of heart from the individual to the family, nation and world. When someone offers acts of devotion with heart, God will hold on to this person. If God were to hold on to people who are not like that, He would not be able to carry out His operations. The greatest issue is how someone who has received the command to defend Heaven will advance with faith. One small error can impede the outcome of history and lead to historical judgment later on. This is why all our daily activities—even sleeping, eating and putting on clothes— must be done based on a life of faith. (025-318, 1969.10.12)

14 There are times when I get in a car and immediately sense that something is wrong. At that time, I change my course. I have such spiritual or even physical sensations. These physical sensations come from deep experience through my life of faith. Similarly, there will be times when you feel like holding on to something, be it a lamppost or anything else, and crying your heart out. You must never miss these occasions. If you ignore such feelings a few times, the opportunities for these wonderful experiences will grow rare. Missing these opportunities never benefits you. In fact, the energy producing such opportunities can even transform into forces that oppose and impede you. (33-262, 1970.08.16)

15 Profound empathy with God is a requisite of a life of faith. Through our profound experiences we can fathom God's character and feel the internal bond of deep heart we have with Him. Only through spiritual experiences can we feel these things. Through our spiritual life we can experience a euphoric sense of well-being. Moreover, unless we have this kind of experience, we cannot be filled with new hope for the ideal. Despite receiving fierce persecution from the Romans, even being fed to lions, early Christians were able to persevere in their path of faith. This was not due to some abstract belief but because they had profound spiritual experiences that allowed them to transcend the hardships they faced. (076-124, 1975.02.02)

16 You have to grievously empathize with God, who has been working according to heavenly principles and demonstrating endless loyalty toward humankind in order to realize His Will. You have to compassionately empathize with the heart of God, who has sacrificed resolutely and unflinchingly to establish His Will. In addition, you have to tearfully empathize with the heart of God, who has risen above Himself time and again to recommit to the ideal of the future, with a heart that wants to give endlessly to you. (458-070, 2004.07.07)

Experiencing rebirth

17 In our lives of faith, we need to completely forget ourselves. As we offer and sacrifice ourselves, we need to recognize our own inadequacy. Even as we face death, we must reproach ourselves. We can accomplish Heaven's ideal of resurrection only when we become people of original character who do not boast of anything before Heaven. (2-106, 1957.03.06)

18 On the path of faith, we need to surpass everyone in Satan's world; we cannot afford to be at the same level. Compared to them, our internal heart and character must be so elevated and perfectly harmonious that it would be difficult to imagine secular people rising to that level. Based on such spiritual development, we can enter the realm of resurrection. (2-143, 1957.03.17)

19 We must embrace the realm of resurrection with tears of repentance. By shedding the tears that Adam and Eve never shed, we have to rise above their level. We should not accuse one another with hostility and say, "I sinned because of you. I would not have done it if not for you." We should also refrain from blaming a third party for our sorrow, pretending that "Usually I am a positive and normal person." We each need to deny ourselves and affirm those around us. Each of us must shed tears for the nation and wish for the nation to be saved ahead of us. We should also shed tears for the family and hope for its salvation. (32-099, 1970.06.28)

20 Once we have resurrected our lives, if we advance with faith knowing with certainty that there is a subject partner, God, capable of leading us toward goodness, we must take the position of object partner. We then become one with the subject partner and embrace the meeting point of the objectives of the subject and object partners. At this point we can overcome any adverse environment. Furthermore, however dire a situation we may face, the greater our awakening to the hope and purpose of the subject partner, the Absolute Being, the stronger our feeling that this realization will become a direct source of energy in our life course. (34-224, 1970.09.13)

CHAPTER 2 Training the Mind and Body

Section 1. What Is Training?

1 Training means tempering and polishing one's character. Where do we find the standard for this tempering and polishing? There are two types of people among you: external people, who amount to little more than flesh, and internal people. Taking the Fall into account, we have external fallen people and internal fallen

people. Both need training in order to gradually come to resemble the character of an original person. The character of an original person resembles a child to whom nature bows and whom God kisses and embraces in His bosom. Accordingly, the character of an original person is the standard for your training. (11-348, 1962.06.07)

Becoming an object partner of goodness

2 How much have you done for the Unification Church? Have you existed for the Unification Church or have you sought personal benefit from the church? This point, you need to know, is the line dividing good and evil. Good and evil are not unrelated; when your will deviates from God's Will, good and evil separate. Good continues along the normal orbit while evil follows an abnormal orbit. Today, there are principles of ethics and morality as well as social ethics. However, such principles don't come into play when we serve our own interests. These principles engage when we live for others. Therefore, as a Unification Church member, rather than thinking about yourself, you should think about the Unification Church twenty-four hours a day. Do not detach from the Unification Church, even in your dreams. (071-125, 1974.04.29)

3 Unless we become good people of God, we cannot hope to form families God desires. Furthermore, unless we become good families of God, we cannot hope for a good nation or a good world. Therefore, the biggest issue for each of us is how to find the solution within ourselves. The mind and body relationship thus becomes the dividing line. (065-016, 1972.11.13)

Indemnity through penance

4 Penance is the way to subjugate the body. This is why Jesus said, "Whoever finds their life will lose it, and whoever loses their life for my sake will find it." (Matt. 10:39) This means we need to sever from what the body craves; we need to remove what the body covets. (039-053, 1971.01.09)

5 It is wise to seek the most demanding and austere religion in history. Religious life consists of the conscience occupying the body like a torturer, shouting, "You depraved body, you depraved body," pummeling the fleshly desires into extinction, never to rise again. Our mind has to torture our body, t, (261-303, 1994.07.24)

6 Why is penance necessary in religion? Why do we need to carry the cross? Why do we need to serve and sacrifice for others? These tasks are loathsome to us, but they are how religions urge us to leave this fallen world. We have to deny

everything completely. Blessing in the Unification Church comes from seeking complete self-denial. We have been denying everything from the level of the individual to the levels of the family, tribe, people, the world and even its ideology. The higher one's level of self-denial, the more one's value accumulates. Our value increases; this is the reason for self-abnegation. Hence, religions advocate renouncing the world and leaving one's home. (140-117, 1986.02.08)

7 Religions walk the path of penance, rejecting bodily cravings. When you seek what your eye covets, your spiritual eye will dislike you. The spirit will completely oppose you. We have thought that human beings are naturally self-contradictory because we did not know about the human Fall. The origin of the contradiction within our conscious self is a grand discovery, greater than any other discovery in history. Nevertheless, an even more amazing thing is to understand how the Fall took place. If there is a path leading out of this confusion, we must follow that path, however arduous it may be. Fallen human beings have to follow this course of responsibility. (161-113, 1987.01.11)

8 It is restoration through indemnity, not indemnity through restoration. There cannot be indemnity through restoration. The concept that restoration could bring forth indemnity cannot exist, not even in the Garden of Eden. If it had, God would have acted as He pleased with Adam and Eve. The problem is that the Fall caused a change of lineage; the seed changed. We have to indemnify this. (427-087, 2003.12.04)

Finding the original path through denial

9 In the course of restoration, that which you love most becomes your enemy. To men, women are the enemy, and to women, men are the enemy. Likewise, children are the enemy of parents and parents are the enemy of children. Furthermore, the tribe is the entire family's enemy and society is the tribe's enemy. All are enemies of one another. To purify all this enmity in one fell swoop, we have to deny everything. The person cannot ascend to the heavenly kingdom if they have not experienced sorrow—sorrow as deep as when losing one's family four-position foundation. Until now, God has prolonged the providence over thousands of generations, hoping to build the four-position foundation. Even if we perform our filial duty to God for tens of thousands of years, we cannot raise our heads. We cannot escape from the fact that we are sinners among sinners. (405-269, 2003.02.28)

10 To enter heaven, we have to deny Satan's blood and turn back. We need purity, pure blood, so we must become filial children in a family grounded in pure love and

pure lineage. However, we have not become such devoted children. Neither have we become patriots in the nation. In the family, we have to become pure children of filial piety, pure patriots, loyal saints and loyal divine sons and daughters. We have failed to become sons and daughters who represent heaven and earth with the right of inheritance, so we have to accomplish all this in one generation. (405-282, 2003.03.01)

11 Self-centered societies have gone to ruin. The Fall is about becoming self-conscious and placing oneself at the center, so we must reject self-centeredness. We have to deny ourselves and live for the greater whole; thereafter we will blossom. A plant emits fragrance only after it has received nutrients through its roots and leaves for a year and has blossomed flowers. Accordingly, God will seek us and angels will come to protect us when we become fragrant flowers in full bloom, people who live for the greater whole. This is the wish of heaven and earth. (405-323, 2003.03.02)

12 Do you have a gift that will delight God? Do you have a gift that, when given to God, will make Him say, "Wow, thank you so much!" When God visits you, can you present Him with the gift of a pure family? If you are a couple, there is no better gift for God when He visits than being united in love. What kind of couple is this? It is not a couple where the partners live for themselves; rather, it is a couple where the husband lives for the wife and the wife lives for the husband. God wishes to receive the gift of a family where the husband and wife are eternally united, where they are determined to revere the reproductive organs and to maintain that stance forever. (405-323, 2003.03.02)

13 To manifest God in substance, Adam and Eve had to reach completion and give birth to children. Unfortunately, they became Satan's children. They became the archangel's children. They became children unrelated to God. This is why complete denial is needed. God cannot act as He wishes, because the lineage was stained. This circumstance is like a bandit kidnapping a bride-to-be a few days before her wedding, taking her into his lair, living with her, and having her give birth to his sons and daughters, thereby forming a tribe. How miserable must the groom be as he witnesses all this! Even though we say that God is omniscient and omnipotent, He could not treat the archangel in any way He wished. If God could not kill the archangel, could He kill the children that carry the archangel's blood? This is why God is like a prisoner behind bars. It is as if He has been incarcerated. (492-169, 2005.04.15)

14 Unless we deny ourselves, we cannot return to the position of being the original raw materials of creation. There cannot be any flaws in the original raw materials. For you to settle in the family of original and ideal love, there should not be any cracks through which Satan can enter. Water, air, and even light must not be able to penetrate. (410-235, 2003.07.05)

15 In order to stand in the position to receive love, you have to become one in the position of subject partner or object partner. When the subject partner seeks to give absolutely and the object partner seeks to receive absolutely, the two become one. When the subject partner wishes to give one hundred of something, as object partner, you need to receive all one hundred. When Heaven tries to give us one hundred of something, but we want to receive in accordance with our personal thoughts, opinions or desires, we cannot receive the one hundred that Heaven bestows. When we add our desires and wishes, we can only receive eighty, seventy, sixty or fifty. We are unable to receive one hundred. We have to tell ourselves, "If you wish to receive one hundred, empty out everything. Remove everything, deny and abandon everything." We need to renounce everything and obey absolutely. We may think that obedience is bad, but when a person obeys absolutely, Heaven can embrace him or her completely. (61-258, 1972.09.01)

16 A good person is the person who tries to help others eternally, from birth until death. Furthermore, a good person is one who goes beyond rank, geography, race or historically established traditions to help others eternally. When this person passes away, he or she will be called good. When you endlessly give to others, you become a void, like a low- pressure area. However, since you are pushing yourself in one direction, the spirit world builds into a high-pressure zone. Therefore, when you pass away, the high spiritual pressure will wash over you and all the good deeds committed over a thousand years will burst forth and place you at the peak of a mountain that will stand for tens of thousands of years. (300-039, 1999.02.21)

The path to becoming a victor

17 Neither God nor human beings have been able to fulfill His Will, yet history moves on. It is not because of God that His Will remains unfulfilled. It is because of human beings. In other words, the failure to fulfill His Will came because of the Fall of Adam and Eve. Therefore, the process of history, as well as the course of the providence until now, has been the attempt to reverse this failure in God's Will. To bring His Will to fruition, a person capable of realizing God's Will is needed. God has worked through long historical eras to raise people capable of upholding His Will. There was Adam's family, Noah's family, Abraham's family, Jacob's family and so on.

If and when such historical families had failed in the responsibility to establish a relationship between heaven and earth, humankind would have lost track even of the direction necessary to accomplish God's Will. We have learned these truths through the course of the providence. (28-068, 1970.01.04)

18 When we look at the Unification Church today, we wonder, will the Unification Church accomplish God's Will or not? There are two types of Will, one for the individual and one for the whole. If no one is capable of handling God's Will for the individual and His will for the whole, God's Will cannot be realized. Even if the time has come for God's Will to be completed, if the responsible person fails to fulfill his or her responsibility, the opportunity given to realize God's Will will be lost. The realization of God's Will absolutely requires the appropriate person. After that, the time becomes the problem. Always, what we call time becomes the problem. In addition to the time and the person, the condition to accomplish the Will is absolutely necessary. (28-068, 1970.01.04)

19 What did Jesus Christ have to do to carry out his specific responsibility, the salvation of humankind? Jesus, even he, had to invest his entire heart and soul. Whether awake or asleep, Jesus had to invest his whole heart and everything he had in his mission. This could not be accomplished by his being ordered or coerced; he had to do it of his own volition. Only when he achieved this did hope blossom, the conditions for happiness arise, and eventually the determination of his victory or defeat appear. (29-081, 1970.02.25)

20 We need to erect a protective hedge around us, fortified by our children and our spiritual children. We should grow this hedge to serve as a protective buffer within which to share and discuss any secret freely. Even at the risk of our lives we cannot sell ourselves to Satan's world. Therefore we have to set up a sphere of absolute safety from which God's Will can expand. You need to understand this very well, because you are the experts who will be responsible to carry out and fulfill this mission. (29-100, 1970.02.25)

21 The one who strives for victory will not encounter a supportive environment; rather, he or she will face an environment of adversity. In this circumstance, you have to be able to handle the hostile environment with a steady and reliable heart. This heart is linked to sweat and tears that have come down to us through history. Therefore, however difficult the circumstances may be, our heart must never falter or change. We have to advance with this conviction: "No one can take away this heart burning with the desire to win." A victory without confidence is an accidental victory. We don't need that kind of victory; we need absolute victory gained with

confidence. Such victory is not only a historical victory, but is also the victory of the ideal of creation. You need to have a victorious heart, burning with conviction. If you do not overcome ordeals, you cannot wear the crown of victory. (11-110, 1961.02.12)

22 Since we know that the Principle is irrefutable truth, once we learn it we cannot refuse to follow it or to carry it out. Each of us has to walk this path; we cannot be failures, we have to be victors. Until now I have fought alone; however, just as I have achieved victory, you also can achieve victory. As long as I am here, you need not worry. Go forward, fight to the end, and victory will be yours. I am certain of this. Know this, be confident, and charge forward with passion. (11-215, 1961.07.17)

23 A leader has to seek to feed and clothe his followers better than himself. However, in a critical situation the leader has to send them out, even if they will go the way of misery. How sorrowful do you think Moses must have been to leave his people and go off to pray for forty days? Moses knew that a hurricane would sweep through their midst. Even today, when I see members on the path of tribulation, my heart aches. However, I push them forward because the more my heart aches, the more intensely I feel the urgency of realizing the cosmic ideal. I remember what it was like in the past, to be imprisoned as a criminal. America will go to ruin if you forget that your ancestors wept and pleaded sorrowfully while gripping prison bars. We can obtain victory only by shedding blood, sweat and tears. I have shed as many tears as any filial son. I know that God is the protector of those who seek goodness. Every time you work at the risk of your life, God will open the way for you. (13-073, 1963.10.18)

24 You need only do three things to achieve victory in your life of faith. The issue is how long you persevere. Your endurance and effort will determine whether you go on for a few years or for several decades. The three things are first, to master ideology, second, to have unsurpassable loyalty and devotion and, third, to be the best at performing good deeds. If you commit to these three practices, victory is as good as won. Your perseverance, time period and effort will determine your result and, depending on your effort, you can shorten the time needed for victory from seven years to five years, or even one year. (16-078, 1965.12.26)

25 Among all victories, what victory is the greatest? Originally, God meant for human beings to start from the homeland of victory. Nonetheless, due to the Fall, they could not do so. Thus the world of victory became something for which they had to seek. What is the standard in that quest? Yes, it is the perfection of

character, but while character is of course important, of greater importance is the inner core that moves character. That inner core is love, and that love is none other than God's love. (32-219, 1970.07.19)

26 Facts take precedence over words, and achievements take precedence over excuses. Mere words and excuses don't amount to much. When assessing achievements, facts are strict and cold. What is right will end up as right and what is wrong will end up as wrong. Victory will end up as victory and, in sorrow and misery, failure will end up as failure. This is the historical course of judgment. (058-349, 1972.07.01)

27 We cannot continue our casual carefree life. Through the unity of God, past lords, kings and our ancestors in the spirit world, we have to establish one global family. Inheriting Heaven's lineage, we can completely renew the earth drenched with Satan's blood. We have the responsibility to create one great family, then a nation and world of one culture—the world of Adam's culture. The world of Adam's culture is absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal. I am responsible for it. Now there is no such word as "we." I must unite my mind and body, and then unite my family and my tribe. Afterwards, I must engraft the nation and the world, so that the field of wild olive trees is transformed into a field of true olive trees. (437-112, 2004.02.10)

28 Making ideal families is not God's responsibility. Our human ancestors and our descendants are responsible for this. God cannot deliver an ideal family to you. The malefactor who destroyed the ideal family must do the repairs. We lost the ideal family and the global kingdom of ideal peace. This is a monumental sin among sins. God is absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal. There are no errors in what He creates. (540-252, 2006.09.27)

Section 2. The Goal of Training

1 What should we do to find our lost self? We must remember God's heart when He lost His children. Otherwise we cannot find our original self. We need to return to where we were in order to find what we lost. Likewise, to find our lost self, we must rediscover the heart God had when He lost us. Unless we initiate this movement, we cannot find our true, original self. (5-066, 1958.12.21)

Finding my original self

2 Centered on whom are we seeking our true self? We cannot search with a self-centered focus. Unless we focus on God as we search for our true self, we cannot

return to the original position. This is why so many religions seek God. The religious path allows us to understand our relationship with God and how we should lead our life. (088-064, 1976.07.18)

3 Our greatest treasure is our original self that possesses the attributes of God. Because what we lost is the greatest value, we cannot feel joy or happiness until we recover it. Accordingly, fallen people today scatter to the four winds seeking for their original self. (5-144, 1959.01.11)

4 We need to find the Absolute Being who is the origin of the absolute philosophy, the origin of goodness, the origin of life and the origin of love, yet we are still wandering around looking. As wanderers, how do our direction and angle differ from the direction and angle of absolute goodness? How can we explain that our mind tells us to go left but our body goes right? How can we explain that our mind seeks a higher ideal yet our Anew of the cosmos is actually so limited? We need to look at ourselves honestly in the mirror. When we look at ourselves we see a poor, desperate seeker. Within us are mind, body and spirit. We need to integrate mind, body and spirit to create one unified image. (5-064, 1958.12.21)

5 Unless we endeavor to re-create ourselves and work together with God, we have nothing to do with a state of peace or with God's ideal. We need to shorten the path to that state, be aware that an ideal state of peace is ours, follow the original way created by God and completely liberate and clean up everything that Satan stained people with from the time of their infancy until they go to heaven. Then we have to inherit the heavenly kingship and enter the kingdom of heaven. (550-015, 2006.12.29)

6 Every person is indebted. We are indebted for our life and our lineage. We are indebted to the world of existence that came into being through cosmic love. So we have to free ourselves of any debt. Hence, we must embody the original heart of love with which God created the universe and rise to the point where we can free God. This means that we, human beings, have to recover and return to God everything that He lost, everything that He created through absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. (465-083, 2004.08.19)

Mastery of oneself comes first

7 We live in the era of awakening, in which we can save our lives and those of our ancestors. When we think about this, we realize that we cannot live and act freely. Let us feel substantially how strongly the creation yearns for us to realize the value of our existence within the sphere of cosmic relationships. Let us feel this not only

in our mind, but also in our heart. When looking at people, we have to say, "Human beings are so pitiful, Father! Nevertheless, we are aware of Your Will, which demands that You bequeath material blessings to conscientious people, and requires that we have dominion over our body with a true heart. We are also aware that spiritual beings that are true in character must come under Your dominion." Therefore, even if we are given mountains of gold and riches, if these treasures are not what our original mind seeks, we have to be able to reject them completely. The question is whether we can overcome the pain of such material loss. Our body has greater value than the universe; accordingly, when our mind subjugates our body, it assumes a value greater than that of the entire universe. (4-274, 1958.08.03)

8 Our heart seeks to embrace the world, heaven and earth, and eventually God. This is the heart's purpose. This is why Jesus said, "The kingdom of God is within you." (Luke 17:21) He further added, "I am in my Father, and you are in me, and I am in you." (John 14:20) To what extent are you able to include your neighbors in your ideology and your daily life? Can your ideology and your daily life embrace the nation and the world? You each have a big heart; however, you are fallen human beings unable to contain your body within your heart. Your heart wants to embrace heaven and earth, including God, and bring about His Sabbath. Nevertheless, you are struggling to conquer even your own body. (8-048, 1959.11.01)

9 Each of you has a mind; therefore, should your mind and body become the best of friends or should they be hostile to each other? If the two cannot become friends, on whose side will you stand? When the mind and body are at odds with one another, it is always the body that initiates the fight. The body provokes the peaceable mind. Whether it is the body of a man or woman, this body annoys the mind. Hence, each of us has to achieve unity of mind and body. Nonetheless, you cannot achieve this unity simply with the order, "Mind, body, the two of you must unite!" (18-318, 1967.08.13)

10 How vast is your mind? It may be invisible, but it exists. To illustrate the vastness of your mind, even if you place a hundred or a thousand worlds inside your mind, you will not be satisfied. When there are tens of thousands of diamonds as big as the earth, if you get only one, you will not be happy. This is how unimaginably vast your mind is. Our original mind knows what is good and bad, even without being taught. Has anyone ever said to his or her own mind, "Attention, mind! If such and such happens, it is bad; please guard against that." Our mind does not receive education as to what is good or bad and yet, even when our strong body is challenged, our mind does not flinch. Instead, the mind reacts immediately, faster

than an electron spins. If your thoughts are wrong, your original mind stops you immediately. How much education do you need to reach this level? If anyone could teach this, they would be very popular. Nevertheless, no person, however great an educator they may be, has ever been able to teach this. Yet do you know it or not? Even without education, your original mind knows this very well. (023-021, 1969.05.11)

11 The world is not the issue. Even if heaven and earth have achieved unity, if I am not united within myself, I cannot appear before God. If I say even one wrong word, my conscience knows. Your conscience comes before your parents. Your parents did not give you your conscience. It comes from Heaven, and since its root is God, your conscience comes before your parents. The conscience comes before teachers in the Men world and before your parents. (431-118, 2004.01.13)

12 Do you know when your mind and body began fighting? They began fighting right after the Fall; they became infected at that moment. Unless we completely cure this infection, we cannot enter heaven. The person whose mind and body are in conflict cannot enter heaven. I have struggled to fulfill this standard: "Before seeking to master the universe, attain mastery over yourself." The further you advance and the deeper your spiritual level, the more fearsome the Satan you will have to face. (527-217, 2006.05.28)

13 You have to be mindful always that you are an entity embodying both good and evil. I struggled with this issue in my youth, when I was your age. This is why I created the motto, "Before seeking to master the universe, attain mastery over yourself?" This is Article 1 in our life of faith. Therefore, when you are able to complete and control yourself, which means to achieve the independence that comes with controlling your body, the conflict between mind and body will disappear. (037-122, 1970.12.23)

14 I never pray to receive money. I also do not pray to become successful. What are the three great objectives? The first is, "Before seeking to master the universe, attain mastery over yourself?" The second is, "Let us have absolute faith." The third is, "Let us have absolute love." These are the three great objectives. While I have carried out my mission, even if Satan was cheating me, I persevered with absolute faith until I confirmed the facts. So I am practicing the faith through which I can say, "Satan, even you could not but guide me to the right path." (139-063, 1986.01.26)

15 The perfection of human beings, to achieve the ideal of sublime love, is only possible if we take responsibility for love. This responsibility means that we should

be grateful to God for giving us the freedom to love, and should become the masters of that freedom through self-discipline and self-denial. We do not uphold our responsibility to love based on laws or public perception. Rather, we uphold it based on self-control and self-determination, grounded in a living vertical relationship with God. (282-213, 1997.03.13)

The unity of mind and body

16 There are only two ways to unite the mind and the body. The first method involves pummeling the body into submission, while the second achieves unity without chastising the body. Pummeling the body into submission is not a good method. What then should we do? Until now the mind has been like a balloon, losing to the body every time without putting up a fight. This has happened because the mind is weak. What do you think will happen if the mind's energy level is boosted to be two or three times greater than now? The mind will have no difficulty dragging the body anywhere. The mind will firmly hold the body and pull it. The tires of a car inflate when we pump air into them. What will happen if we pump energy into the mind? We will strengthen the mind's energy. Then if the mind and body fight, which do you suppose will win? We can thus see that there are two methods: pummeling the body into submission, or strengthening the mind. (18-328, 1967.08.13)

17 Love is the mind's source of energy. Accordingly, if we connect to God and generate colossal energy through the action of giving and receiving, we can increase our unity a hundred or a thousand times. We also can realize humanity's cherished hopes, live together for eternity, and take ownership of heaven. The secret to this is love. Love is the elevator leading to unity and the secret to its absolute achievement. (18-328, 1967.08.13)

18 Generally, the greater the sorrow fallen human beings feel on earth, the greater the division among people. Self-centered sorrow leads to division, which is the habit of evil people. Nonetheless, sorrow for the sake of goodness brings together what was divided. This forges oneness between the divided mind and body, to the point that they reach convergence and unity with heavenly law. (4-055, 1958.03.02)

19 We have to achieve oneness, beginning with our mind and body. This is the teaching of the Unification Church. Therefore, after joining the Unification Church, distant strangers become closer even than brothers and sisters. Furthermore, the Unification Church has a higher love that brings a strong bond of unity among brothers and sisters even from different countries, which enables them to attend

Parents who are not their natural parents. This is why people view the Unification Church as the unified world that they desire. When you join the Unification Church you acquire this hope. (18-334, 1967.08.13)

20 When a man or a woman achieves unity of mind and body, what standard determines this unity? It is not the standard of one's mind or one's body. It must be the standard of God's mind and body and the standard of our original ancestors. Thus, we need the original standard of God's mind and God's body. God created human beings centered on His invisible mind and body. Therefore, we need to advance by aligning ourselves entirely with the invisible mind and body of God. Where should you meet with God when aligning with Him? You should meet in love. Unity is to occur in love. (166-232, 1987.06.07)

21 No saint has ever claimed, "The unity of mind and body is the basis for the unity of everything." We have the saying, "Family harmony makes all go well." It is true that family harmony brings success, however, when we ask whether the mind and body of the father and mother are united, the answer is no. If ten people live together, their minds and bodies should be united as one. However, in Satan's world, the minds and bodies of these ten people are at war, meaning that twenty camps are fighting one another. There can be no peace in such a group. (213-011, 1991.01.13)

22 You each need to unite your mind and body. Then you need to achieve unity as couples. When you live for the sake of each other out of love, unity will blossom. Until now, your mind has lived its entire life for the sake of your body. However, the body has not lived for the sake of the mind. Just as the mind has lived for the sake of the body, however, the body needs to live for the sake of the mind, and they must achieve unity. Centered on what should this unity take place? Unity is achieved with true love, altruistic love. We need to become people with united mind and body and unite as husband and wife centered on true love. This is how we can form new branches and grow. Each of us knows this. This is the key to the mind's happiness. If we do so, the creation will delight us, work will not exhaust us and, even if we don't sleep, we will not feel fatigued. (213-205, 1991.01.20)

23 What is the meaning of "unification" in the name, the Unification Church? If God has a mind and a body, then unless God's mind and body are united, He cannot stand in the joyful place of liberation and happiness. If this is true of God, it holds true for the world. The world itself is composed of relationships between subject and object partners; the same goes for societies and families. The providence of salvation is the providence of restoration and the providence of restoration is the

providence of re-creation. Nothing is possible unless it goes through the providence of re-creation. When a man and a woman get together they can form a couple. Unless subject and object partners have a common base, they cannot interact. Unity is achieved in this way. God and human beings must have interaction to achieve oneness. This means the mind interacts and the body interacts. (251-058, 1993.10.17)

24 Where do we find unification? Unification is found where sacrifices and concessions are made. If we practice this, wherever we go we will achieve unity within three years. The one who invests for the sake of harmony and sacrifices their own interests for three years, actively coming and going, will become the new owner and achieve unification. Then the world will be filled with the air of universal true love and enter the realm of liberation. (602-196, 2008.11.14)

25 What has to be done before unification? Unification has to stand on level ground. Without peace, there is no unification. Thus, it is unification through peace. Ignorant people say that peace comes through unification, but those who know recognize that it is unification through peace. Words have to accord with reason, and these words accord with reason. This is an amazing fact. It is a miracle that in daily life, people use language that accords with traditional ideas. It is quite mysterious. (571-250, 2007.08.11)

26 Harmony and unification lead to prosperity, while fighting and division lead to destruction. With division comes ruin. God created each entity to have a partner and form a pair, so division naturally leads to ruin. It destroys everything. So we need harmony and unification. Everything unites and harmonizes as individual truth bodies. Up-center-down; right-center-left; front-center-back: all these prosper because they complement one another. Evil struggles and divides, then perishes; goodness tries to harmonize, even under assault, then unifies and prospers. (506-290, 2005.09.05)

27 Peace and harmony are different. Peace can stand alone on a level plane; however, harmony requires a relationship between two. Furthermore, as for unification, without a nucleus it just wanders around. Having no center is disastrous. The reason we live and work relates to our purpose. Hence, the question of why we work and of why we live is connected to our viewpoint about our purpose. (569-169, 2007.07.24)

28 The harmony and peace that arise in the natural environment through living for others centered on the Principle belong to heaven. On the other hand, whatever

coerces or commands others to serve it is going opposite the way of harmony and peace. It belongs to the world of hell. If you examine your mind and body, you can see that your original mind encourages you to live for others. This is because it knows Heaven's principles. However, because the body stands opposed to God's direction, and since it tells the mind to live for its sake by force, it cannot exist forever and must disappear. (526-065, 2006.05.12)

Section 3. Training in Faith

1 It is written in John 3:16, "For God so loved the world that he gave his only begotten Son..." It is not written that God gave His only Son because He loved America or a particular denomination. God gave His Son for the sake of the world, not for the sake of the Baptist Church or the Presbyterian Church. I am teaching you this point clearly. The Unification Church exists for the sake of the world and for the sake of God, not for the sake of Rev. Moon. This is why I do not go to ruin and neither does the Unification Church; God protects the Unification Church. All perfection begins from true love. We should apply this formula to the entire world, centered on true love. It has to become so habitual that we cannot lead our daily life without practicing this formula. Wherever we may go, we have to live this way. When we see elderly people, we must love them as our grandparents; when we meet people the age of our parents, we must love them as our own parents; if we meet people the age of our siblings, we must love them as we would our siblings; when we meet children, we must love them as our own children. This way of treating people should be both habit-forming and fun for us. (254-198, 1994.02.06)

With true love

2 Rivers flow into the ocean. The earthly world is similar to a river while the spirit world is similar to the ocean. Every human being goes to the spirit World. Freshwater fish die if they are suddenly thrown into salt water; they suffocate. The freshwater fish first need to acclimatize. The Unification Church trains people on earth for life in the spirit world. It is the training center of true love where members learn to live for others with love. The Unification Church is also the training center that aims to develop the substance of love, which is living for others. God lives for the sake of others; therefore, the person who has love for others is welcome wherever he or she goes. No opposition arises against such a person. (256-061, 1994.03.12)

3 It is not easy to conquer with the sovereign power of true love. It is possible only after crossing rows of defensive lines and overcoming many ordeals. You cannot do

it without a foundation. Accordingly, let us look at the current situation of the Unification Church. What historical position does the Unification Church have to establish in the world in order to rule as the owner of the future? This position is not that of an individual; it is higher than that. It is possible to become owners of the future at the individual level if we surpass the individuals in this world. However, we cannot conquer true love as owners just at the individual level. Furthermore, look at the family level. We can become owners at the level of the family if we surpass other families. But this is not our aim. Our aim goes beyond the family to the tribe, from the tribe to the nation, and from the nation to the world. We have to reign as owners at the world level. When looked at this way, it is not an easy task. Unless we overcome the harshest historical course in order to prepare a basis for real victory, we cannot become owners of the future. (45-036, 1971.06.06)

4 True love is like a wrapping cloth that can contain God and the universe and still have room for more. The same is true of God. Given that God created electricity, which travels at 300 million meters per second, God must certainly be faster than electricity. So if we were to travel at this blinding speed, using so much energy, inside the wrapping cloth of true love, we would want to be confident we are wrapped well enough to prevent any accident. However large the universe may be, it is meant to revolve around true love and not to move in a linear fashion. The person who possesses true love possesses the universe, and thereby has dominion over the universe. Our life on earth is the training ground of true love. We are now living in this training ground. (133-318, 1985.01.01)

5 When you live for others with true love, you ascend. When you love yourself, you descend. Where you center yourself determines heaven and hell. When you focus your love on the body, you are Satan's dance floor. Conversely, when you focus your love on the mind, you are God's dance floor. The problem is that you are not entities of love centered on God's absolute mind. If you love absolutely centered on the body, you will crash in hell and perish. (419-204, 2003.10.04)

6 If you love your enemy with true love, you will take dominion over the world of your enemy. This world will come to respect and attend you. When you give and profoundly share true love with everyone around you, more than you give and share with your children and your parents, Satan will immediately flee from you, while God will come and bless you several thousand times over. What is the secret to making Satan run away? It is living for the sake of true love, dying for true love, and loving for the sake of others. However terrible he may be, Satan will abandon all the barricades he erected and run away from the person who practices such love. When he flees, Satan will dismantle the barricades; he cannot leave them

intact. Then what happens? Since the devil will have departed, all the countless people heading for hell's realm of death will turn around 180 degrees. Then the opportunity for eternal life will unfold, enabling people to ascend into heaven. This is how God will bequeath the blessing of eternal life. (419-198, 2003.10.03)

Following the Word

7 I have lived by God's Word and you should do the same. You need to surpass me in reading, memorizing and practicing the Word. As you do so, you should say, "I must follow this path. This is the path True Parents want for me; I must follow it." True Parents therefore wish that you become joyful people, so joyful that you can visit any village and everyone including the village's ancestors will come and attend you. (592-239, 2008.06.10)

8 When your descendants carefully study the Word True Parents left, all people in all nations will approach the path that is close to the eternal kingdom of heaven. Only when your descendants respect the teachings their ancestors left behind more than they pay attention to worldly things, and look upon them as a lighthouse, not only in image but as actual substance, will they be able to move safely forward along the path of freedom, through all the dangerous reefs in the dark ocean. You cannot chart your course without looking upon the lighthouse. The words I am telling you now are that lighthouse. Until now, no one has spoken more than I have about heaven and earth. You need to be able to accept these words as divine words that blossom from the highest world of heart. (424-198, 2003.11.07)

9 In the Last Days, God will judge by heart, character and the Word, not by how much you believed. God is the center of heart. He will set up only one standard of heart throughout heaven and earth. Then there is the standard of character that is united with God's heart. And there is the standard of the Word, which represents God and is united with the center of character and heart. These are the three major stages of judgment. Among the three, judgment by the Word occurs first. In the fallen world, judgment by the Word will come first. (14-177, 1964.10.03)

10 In today's fallen world, searching for the truth has become a trend. Furthermore, history, which develops in tandem with culture, goes out and finds the ideology that is heading toward one global culture. All trends in the world until now have emerged out of thought and doctrines; nonetheless, no thought or doctrine has succeeded in establishing a standard principle through which humanity can unite and harmonize. Instead, thought and doctrines have remained in the dark alleys of confusion. This is today's reality. This is why we need to see the truth emerge that

will move both the communist world and the free world toward unity. After this truth for which history is seeking emerges in this world, it will pass judgment on currently accepted truths. (14-178, 1964.10.03)

11 If you are filled with grace and risk your life as you walk forward, God will speak through you. This is true of the angelic world and it is true of me. Therefore, if anyone among you is so enraptured by the Word that you forget to eat and sleep and lose track of time, you will be able to do what I am doing. The effect of the Word is indeed amazing. (563-273, 2007.05.22)

Crossing the peak of indemnity

12 Because God felt so much sorrow and anguish over the Fall of Adam and Eve that He wanted to kill off human beings once and for all, we who are alive and indebted to this Father cannot live for our own well-being and personal happiness. We have to redeem this fallen world, which God would otherwise have to discard. We do so by faithfully walking the path of filial sons and daughters, patriots and saints, without straying even one step, thus crossing the peaks of indemnity. We will arrive at the original homeland, which is the kingdom of the ideal. Every one of you has to walk True Parents' path together with them; you must follow. Our journey has covered tens of thousands of miles, and there are still tens of thousands of miles ahead of us. (596-140, 2008.08.26)

13 The course of indemnity is time- consuming. It not only consumes time but it also consumes us. Therefore, we all have a personal responsibility to pioneer this course of faith. The questions are, how much has this work consumed your time and how much has it consumed you? The answers to these questions determine whether or not you have removed the elements that require indemnity. Thus, we can see that the path of faith is the path of sacrifice; it is the path of sacrificing our entire self. Put another way, it is the path of investing everything that could make us happy. In addition to this, we also sacrifice our body. We must pay the price by sacrificing for the whole and for individuals. It is reasonable that the longer your sacrificial course and the greater your sacrifice, the more indemnity you will have cleared away in your generation. (031-155, 1970.05.24)

14 More blessings go to those in hardship than to those in comfort. Reaching the highest level involves enduring the direst hardships. This is why I send you to difficult places. But you must be able to say, "I am the only one who can do this." If you do so, you will fulfill your responsibility. When you become the servant among servants, the adopted son among adopted sons and the son among sons, and

receive from your descendants the recognition that you reached the position of eternal blessing, you will have fulfilled your responsibility. You have to walk your path as a servant, an adopted son, a son, a representative of Jesus and the Holy Spirit and, eventually, of Heavenly Father. The course until the position of son or daughter is the realm of personal indemnity, while the course as a representative of Jesus and the Holy Spirit is the realm of indemnity for Heavenly Father. When you fulfill the Heavenly Father's responsibility, you have completed your responsibility and become your true self, who is fully qualified to face the past, the present and the future. (11-331, 1962.04.13)

15 As God's son, Jesus' purpose was not simply to be a man of filial piety connected to the world and cosmos. His purpose was to make a dutiful family. The family lineage was built upon the wrong standard, so Jesus was to re-create the family at the levels of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation and world. All alone, I have carried Jesus' cross, overcome the peaks of indemnity and crossed barriers and national frontiers. Since I achieved victory on the world level, I am causing Satan to end his war against God and am building the peaceful kingdom of heaven on earth and in heaven. (487-084, 2005.02.12)

16 We have to indemnify God's sorrow. Since God is shedding tears for us, it is our turn to shed tears for our brothers and sisters, for the nation and for the world. If a group of people capable of fulfilling this responsibility comes forward, this group will prosper. The descendants of these people will certainly make progress. Even though we do not know what miserable historical events may take place, since we are in the Last Days, we need to know that this is the time for us to judge the two worlds and to build one world. We need to know that now is the historical time in which we should become filial sons and patriots who can comfort God. (60-099, 1972.08.06)

17 When a group of people emerges that can overcome adversity with confidence and courage and start anew, it will begin a new world. However, some groups that have a foundation do not have the courage to engage, and others that seek to engage do not have the resources to begin. We have to have something we can give to those in these circumstances, so they may begin to engage and carry out their work. Advancing beyond this stage does not happen naturally; it requires numerous indemnity conditions and sacrifices. What is needed is a group of people willing to sacrifice themselves, not for personal benefit but for the benefit, victory and value of the whole. (15-079, 1965.09.29)

The principle by which we repair broken relationships

18 Adam, as the lord of creation, should have been able to harmonize all creation through his love, so he could stand before God in the midst of creation and say, "My Father, please receive all glory!" Yet due to his Fall, Adam lost that value. God longs to hear the voices of His true sons and daughters, those who are first to emerge since the creation, calling Him "Father." Today we call God our Father, but He is not actually the Father we can call upon while we are in a position of sin and evil. Therefore we have to escape from this sinful and evil world and enter the ideal garden of goodness, the world where humanity can manifest God's glory while living enraptured in joy. This is a world where, if human beings move, all things of creation move, and if human beings keep silent, all things keep silent, and God the Creator either moves or keeps silent along with them. This ideal garden is where God and humanity can meet in mutual relationship and become one. (3-027, 1957.09.15)

19 God wanted humanity to become one with Him. He created human beings with the vision that they would be enraptured in joy based on His amazing love. Yet through their Fall, human beings brought about deep anguish, not only for themselves but also for God. They have compounded it since then through the continuance of that sorrowful history to this day. Then what is God's greatest hope as He guides the providence in relation to the earth today? It is to bring people born from fallen parents back to His side and say to them, "I am your eternal Father and you are my eternal sons and daughters." To be able to welcome such a day is the historic hope of fallen humankind and the original hope of God. (3-027, 1957.09.15)

20 A peaceful world is possible when nations have good relations with each other. As long as there is even the concept of struggle, there can be no peace. Bonds are formed through relationship. This requires becoming reciprocal partners. It is destiny that we come together, but we need to build relationships to become partners. By relationships, I do not mean those that center on something bad; I mean good relationships. (427-172, 2003.12.05)

21 A relationship is not formed if it is not destined. Buddhism speaks of destiny, but in the Unification Church we speak of relationships. We are one step ahead. We can have a destiny all alone, but relationships always involve two. Because the mind and the body are destined to unite, they are engaged in a relationship. Because a man and a woman are destined to be bound as one, we can say that husband and wife are one flesh. From this perspective, we realize there has to be a center in a relationship. Even for the relationship between father and son, there should be a center that can satisfy the absolute conditions for both the father and the son. The

Chinese character for center (中) encompasses all four directions. (456-117, 2004.06.27)

22 The relationship between subject partner and object partner transpires in time and space, and even though the object partner might be in a lower position, if treated with a big heart, that partner receives great glory. The bigger the heart the parents have, the more the children will resemble them. For a subject partner, there is always an object partner. (546-201, 2006.11.28)

23 If there were molds for relationships, each mold, even though the history of all human relationships is tied up in it, would contain unique personal stories and circumstances. In that case, what would each mold have to do with the mainstream? If we take the example of a tree, a leaf that came out a thousand years ago has the same essence as a leaf that is a few days old. This essence is linked to the tree's central root, trunk and main boughs. The same goes for the branches. Even though there are branches in all directions, their essence is basically the same. (552-212, 2007.01.18)

24 The realm of resonance is the plane where two people become one. Parents are two people; a couple is made up of two people, brothers are also two, and sons and daughters as well. Everything begins with two people. Since there are two, we can speak of relationship. When we speak of a relationship between elder and younger brothers, we infer that there are at least two. We cannot use the word "relationship" when talking about one person alone. Even when we speak of political relationships, we infer that there is a nation and its citizens. When we mention the relationship between subject and object partners, we are speaking of two people. You cannot make a relationship if you are alone. (598-226, 2008.09.21)

25 We need to experience profoundly, in our heart and in daily life, the countless efforts God has made to build a parent-child relationship with us. What is our last remaining hope? On what basis can we stand in front of God, in His grace? This depends on how much we succeed in building the parent-child relationship, which is God's ideal of creation. We discover our value based on how much we put this into practice in daily life. (3-028, 1957.09.15)

26 Birds, fish in the oceans, and all beings of creation possess their own languages of song and dance with which they can converse. Their sounds develop into songs and their steps develop into dances. We must understand that this conversing and harmonizing takes place in relationships based on love. All of creation competes to experience times of love and to intensify such moments of love. Human beings are

the lords of creation. Therefore, if we can produce such lovely songs and sounds of harmony, and love each other ten or one hundred times more intensely, this world will become an environment in which God is intoxicated, and in which He can dwell. (613-264, 2009.07.09)

Section 4. Training the Mind

1 Our mind accompanies us for eternity, while our body accompanies us for a lifespan. Our mind regulates our life, while our body regulates our everyday routine. A life differs from daily routine. A life refers to an entire lifetime, while daily routine refers to each day in a life. Similarly, our mind and body are inherently different. With human beings, the mind controls life while the body controls daily routine. Thus if we do not have meals in our daily routine, our body will die. Furthermore, our mind also eats, but it refuses to do so in situations that go against the conscience. When we examine this, we can see that the mind's outlook is far broader than the body's. (35-091, 1970.10.04)

The mind is the parent among parents

2 If our mind is unable to harmonize with others, we need to train our mind and move it to accommodate everyone completely. Unless we do so, in the Last Days, Satan will put us on trial and accuse us by pointing out our failings, saying, "Listen, you failed to fulfill that condition, didn't you?" (2-139, 1957.03.17)

3 The original mind is the parent among parents because it represents the God of the universe. It is also the teacher among teachers and the owner among owners. Hence, a mind that preserves its purity is the closest parent, closer than any mother in the world. A pure mind is also closer than any outstanding teacher in the world. Furthermore, the mind is better able to guide its servants in the right direction than any owner in the world. (200-297, 1990.02.26)

4 The mind and body differ. From where did you receive your original mind? You received it from God. Your mind comes from God. Your mind comes from Heaven, while your body comes from your parents. Since the body comes from the earth, it consumes what is of the earth; hence, you are indebted to the earth. This earth is made of matter. People are either male or female; we are extensions of Adam and Eve, who were created by God. When we speak of a person, we are implicitly inferring substance. What can we find within a person? We can find the earth, the person and God. We have had the phrase "heaven, earth and humankind" for eons. Heaven is the mind, the earth is the body, and humankind is the people. (26-184, 1969.10.25)

5 God, the earth and humankind are within me. The mind is in the subject position and the body is in the object position. Since the mind is the center of the body, we have a will, a worldview and an advocacy. The person in whom these three are united is called a person of integrity. A person of integrity is a conscientious person whose body moves according to the dictates of his or her mind. She is one who can control her body with her mind. This is why the mind is the center. The mind represents God and the body represents humanity. God has dominion over the mind, the mind has dominion over the body, and the body has dominion over creation. (26-184, 1969.10.25)

6 Human beings have a mind and body. The body is constituted of elements received from one's parents and from the earth. However, there is an issue with the mind. God wishes to establish the mind and body on an unchanging foundation of heart. This is the purpose for which God created human beings and the purpose of His providence to redeem fallen human beings. However healthy and comfortable the mind may be, the reality is that the mind and the body are unable to enter the home of the heart and rest there. (8-045, 1959.11.01)

7 What is it that people have toiled until now to find? People have labored to find the divine heart that can come into the place of the human heart. We have been striving to unite our heart with this divine heart. Once our heart unites with this absolute heart, all attempts to remove this heart will fail. What we have been searching for until now is the heart that no ideology, thought or false owner can invade. If we cannot find this heart, we will not be able to avoid sorrow and sadness. (3-079, 1957.09.29)

The mind's inclination

8 The mind conforms to nature's logic. It seeks to advance eternally toward goodness, very much like the needle of a compass pointing north. The logic of nature does not go astray; it does not evade goodness. This never happens. Similarly, a person's mind seeks to advance toward a specific goal. The mind moves heading toward life; it moves through the heart and it discerns the truth. The mind seeks to harmonize with the whole as it strives to blend with the idea of the whole. It also forms the basis upon which Heaven can instruct one about alternative paths. (7-182, 1959.09.06)

9 We each have a mind. Our mind pushes us in a particular direction, irrespective of time and space, in search of a greater idea. However, although we have been aware of its tendency throughout history, we have been unable to explain its movement

to ourselves. Everyone wants to be recognized and trusted. It is also true that we live with the idea that whatever we think and advocate comes from our mind's movement. Now, when you demand recognition and trust, are you doing so from a position related with the divine purpose? You are not. From this perspective, what is your value? You cannot achieve the ultimate purpose unless, as a subject partner that can move all of creation, you put your mind's aspirations into practice every day and go through a process of honest self-evaluation. God seeks to realize His divine purpose. If we cannot fulfill His Will, we cannot stand tall in front of Him, and we will be unable to raise our heads before God. (7-206, 1959.09.13)

10 Heaven is the subject partner of our life, our philosophy, our love, our mind and our body. From the moment I connect with Heaven, my body is no longer mine, my mind is no longer mine, my heart is no longer mine and my ideas are no longer mine. Only then can I stand as the temple of God and the lord of creation. Then, since my mind has become God's mind, it can represent God's mind. Finally, my life has the authority to move the entire universe. My heart appears as a representative of God's heart and my philosophy is the Father's philosophy. Only then does the purpose in which we place our hope reach its conclusion. (8-203, 1959.12.20)

11 Your original mind urges you to avoid the world's reality, which is stimulating yet painful, and seek the ideal. Every leader needs to confront reality. However, no one knows about this mind that seeks, yearns for and urges us toward the ideal. We have to follow the dictates of this mind. Countless saints in history have followed this mind. In the future, everyone will be like that. We have to affirm this original mind; talking about anything else is useless. If we realize that we are people who should not oppose the mind that seeks the ideal, but should follow it, then even though we do not live in an ideal world, we will be able to connect with the ideal world for which we yearn and of which we dream. Today's world is not ideal, due to the Fall. (7-263, 1959.09.27)

12 All the pain and suffering God has borne on our behalf is reflected in our mind and body. The mind works tirelessly to guide every action of the body toward the goal of goodness, while checking the environment. When the body loses the objective and direction the mind prescribes, and falls into the pit of death, the mind looks to what is good and recommends it to the body. Therefore, everything begins with me. As our mind represents Heaven, the objective sought by our mind and the objective sought by Heaven have to be in accord. (10-227, 1960.10.16)

13 If God is the center of your mind, the objective of God and the objective of your mind must be the same. Furthermore, your mind should be united with the

direction on which God is focused. In order to have mind and body unity, your body should accord with the ideal standard of the earth. In the historical Last Days, the ideal world of goodness will absolutely come. Your body and your daily life should connect with the world that is in tune with the ideology of goodness. When the standard of your mind and the standard of God separate, you face difficulties. When the standard of your physical life is in conflict with the concept of the whole earth, difficulties arise. In that case, where should you begin to mend your ways? The answer lies with you, not with others. (10-227, 1960.10.16)

The path of devotion, faith and prayer

14 You have resolved even to face death in walking this new path of faith. Therefore, if you advance in the direction God's wishes with absolute faith, your path of faith will lead you to discover divine value. Hence, you need to feel the responsibility that accompanies such faith, and become true sons and daughters who practice this faith. Unless you do so, there is no way you can stand before the Father. You will not be able to stand before the absolute Father as a true son or daughter, and a patriot. (3-022, 1957.09.08)

15 If you look from a historical perspective at how God has searched for people, you will see that He has found people through their conditions of faith. On the one hand, God has asked people to establish conditions of faith, but on the other hand He has demanded that people put their faith into action. After you create a bond of heart with God, in order to gain a foothold to erase feelings of sadness, you need to forge the path of putting faith into practice. Only in this way can you establish history-shaping connections. (6-211, 1959.05.17)

16 In order to resolve any awkward situation, you have to report about yourself honestly and truthfully. Sincerely report, "I am this kind of person" and request, "I am a wayward person but You are good; if only You would sympathize with a person like me and kindly show me the path of rectitude I need to follow, I would be grateful." If you engage people with a prayerful heart, your environment will become natural. However, if you persist in your ways, whatever effort you make will not settle your mind. Rather than settling in that environment, you will leave. Therefore, to be able to say, "I am such and such a person and I wish to build a relationship with you," you need to report about yourself sincerely and truthfully. This takes place through prayer. Prayers help rectify your course when you are going astray. If you reflect on your daily life, you will see that your words and actions vacillate and your feelings go up and down. Every moment, as you live and breathe,

you are weighing this and that. In weighing your options, you have to be sincere. (045-247, 1971.07.04)

17 Normal people do not understand my prayers. They need to read them a hundred times to grasp them. When you hear the mysterious sounds of heaven, in order to resonate with them you need profound reverence and feeling. Therefore, you need to connect with nature, with everything. Unless you have that connection, you will not know. The Buddha said the same: "In heaven and earth, I alone am the honored one." He could say that from his being in that state. It is like this when you overcome boundaries. (566-268, 2007.06.22)

18 You need devotional conditions and prayer. Is your position that of a resurrected person? If you are not standing in that position, are you at least ardently seeking it? Are you confident about taking responsibility for the environment in your path of faith? We have not yet accomplished this. This is why prayer is necessary. Prayer has the power to move the goalposts of life and death. It is difficult to offer the ardent prayer that is necessary. How busy would you be if you had to build a great tower stretching miles upward? Seriously, if you had to build a very wide and tall tower, wouldn't you be incredibly busy? If you resolved to build it and projected that it would take fifty years, you would not have a second to lose. (31-317, 1970.06.07)

19 I believe that prayer is the greatest power, because it makes possible what is impossible. In the Unification Church we emphasize prayer, but we do not teach a different method of prayer. It is just the contents of our prayers that are different. My teaching has been, "Do not pray for yourself" I teach that you should pray instead for your mission, for others, and to offer words of comfort to God. (091-117, 1977.02.03)

20 When you face a difficult problem, resolve it with prayer. Why then do we pray? Prayer enables a relationship based on God's standard of heart. When you pray about an issue with a serious heart of concern for God and the nation, God will certainly teach you what was before and what is to come. Such occurrences will take place quite frequently. (33-131, 1970.08.11)

21 More than expanding outward, we need to unite with our mind and find the path that leads deep within. This is the life of prayer today's Christianity talks about. Prayers that seek to connect with God's mind and profoundly experience the essence of God's Word are more precious than prayers about setting certain

objectives and achieving them. This is why we seek a quiet place when we want to pray. (29-318, 1970.03.13)

22 If you lead a life of prayer, you will feel indescribable joy. This state of joy is the state of God's thought prior to creation. Having reached this state, if you are able to stand in the position where you can describe such joy, you will be in the state of God after He created the entire universe. This level is the position of God as He created the universe through the Word. From that state, you have to proclaim the Word. If you do so, people certainly will appear wanting to receive the Word. (29-321, 1970.03.13)

23 If you want to pray, you have to do so before beginning your daily activities. Hence, the most important time is daybreak. Dawn is the most important time. This is the time period that determines the outcome of your day. Pray at this time. In order to offer a profound prayer filled with emotions hitherto unknown and unfelt, do not center your prayers on yourself. Pray for a great objective on the level of the nation or the world. (30-123, 1970.03.21)

24 You have to lead a profound life of prayer, which means you steep your daily life in the providence. You also have to reflect constantly upon how closely you are tying your daily life to the course the church is going and the path God is walking. To do so, your heart has to yearn for church news to the extent that you just go to church or call the church at any time. God surely will dwell in the family in which He finds such a heart. Without such a heart, there is no root that can sustain what is planted; it is the same as having planted nothing. Understanding this principle, you need to reorganize your life to lay such a foundation. (31-293, 1970.06.04)

25 Prayer is more important than eating. This is why I like nature and why I treasure times of solitude. I like the tranquility of the night. You will not have the foundation to experience the richness of life unless you go the way of prayer. In that world, in that space, you can feel and experience a love that is very hard to find elsewhere. On the basis of prayer, you can strengthen yourself and advance your life of faith. I cannot always pull you along. What will you do when I am no longer around? You need to make prayer an intrinsic part of your inner life. You need to pray day and night, so yours will be living prayers. Only in this way will your desires and the subject of your prayers grow and develop as the years pass. This is why you have to be aware of the time in which you are living. Develop your inner life through prayer. (104-112, 1979.04.15)

26 Prayer is not something undertaken with a capricious mind. To pray, you have to find a deep place, a place that can represent Heaven, a place that is the center, not the sidelines. How then should you pray? In order to pray about serious and desperate problems in your life, cleanse yourself and pray in a location that is not on the borderline, and that forever has no relationship with Satan. Those who say, "No matter how fervently I pray, God never answers" are praying in a position where no answers are possible. How can God respond to a prayer you utter while on Satan's side? (123-080, 1982.12.12)

27 The mind is round. There are doors to the mind. However, when you pray, your prayers do not always flow smoothly. As the four seasons are different, prayers are different according to your character. There are times when your mind unites with the direction of Heaven; you must not miss these moments. If you lead a life of prayer, you will immediately sense the coming of these moments; you will already know. Hence, you must prepare thoroughly for such occasions. Then, when such a time arrives, having already made various preparations, you need to open your mind's doors as wide as possible, let the extraordinary force and love of God flow into you, and reach the stage where you can perceive this force and this love. (156-213, 1966.05.25)

28 In the Last Days, we need to offer many tearful prayers. When we pray, we need to shed not only tears but also blood. We went over the hill of tears and the hill of the cross. In the garden of Gethsemane, Jesus offered a prayer drenched in blood. He shed tears as he held and embraced the Jewish nation. It is prayers such as these that vanquish Satan's power. (10-042, 1960.06.26)

29 Pray from the bottom of your heart. When your words and actions reflect your innermost heart, they will become honorable words and actions that bring you no shame before God, Satan or anyone else. God is seeking such people. (2-050, 1957.02.17)

30 If you pray from the bottom of your heart, with religious discipline, crying out to Heaven, your prayer will be answered. However, if you offer the same feeble prayers over the decades, as many people do today, your prayers will remain unanswered. You must pray on the basis of your ability to pledge with a genuine heart of love. You need an earnest heart capable of waiting thirty or forty years after offering a prayer. If you pray with an earnest heart that will remember that prayer after thirty or forty years, your prayer will be fulfilled. There is no need to pray for it over and over again. (7-095, 1959.07.19)

31 When you pray, you should pray with tears and break out in sweat. You should pray with this conviction: "If something strikes me, even if it penetrates my body, it won't knock me down." Even as people persecute and oppose you, you should know that the time when God will answer your prayers is drawing near. As you follow the path of the Unification Church, your hardships will increase when you come close to that time. You need to understand this. (112-055, 1981.03.29)

32 You need to experience a life filled with new sensations that arise from complete devotion to God. When you engage in activities with your heart filled with these sensations, you will witness multiplication and, eventually, development. When a tree is sprouting new buds, each day is different. Each day is filled with life's energy. Every time you lose this feeling, you need to pray at the risk of your life. Pray through the night and accumulate merit in order to progress. When you lead such a life, occasionally God will make it difficult for you to find the time to offer conditions. In such circumstances, however hard you try to find hope, you will not succeed. Also, there will be times when the harder you try, the deeper you will sink into a dark pit. If you find yourself in such circumstances, you need to subjugate Satan who follows you, renew your heart of attendance to God, and fight with greater vigor. (30-133, 1970.03.21)

33 The more we reflect on the course we need to complete, the more we realize that completion is not possible by personal effort alone. This is why people of faith have to pray. As an individual, if you are unable to inherit the tradition that is united completely with God's Will, any effort you make, however great, could produce an outcome that directly contradicts God's Will, irrespective of the loyalty you demonstrate. We have to understand the reality of our present position. (071-276, 1974.05.05)

34 Before praying for your sons and daughters, you should pray for the ancestors in heaven who have invested themselves until now. Your heart has to desire the welfare of humankind ahead of your personal welfare. Before you dance, look at all the people groaning in the pit of sorrow, and worry about them. Even when he was happy, Jesus could not show his happiness in his countenance or actions. Please relate in your heart to Jesus' circumstances. (4-125, 1958.03.23)

35 If you pray according to your own will, it will not work. God will have nothing to do with your prayers, even if you conduct numerous vigils. We have to deny one sphere, embrace the next sphere, and advance for its sake. For example, to hold on to the nation, which is greater, we have to deny the family. Public service means living for what is greater. This is the only way we can leave a legacy. Worrying about

one's own desires or seeking to advance one's family comes later. We have to go forward centered on the greater objective. (28-270, 1970.02.08)

36 Fallen human beings are born in the midst of apparent happiness but pass away in the midst of tears. Nonetheless, the nation will bless those who grasp and shed tears for the nation; pitiful religious groups will bless those who grasp them and weep for them, and the world will bless those who hold on to and shed tears for the world. (4-166, 1958.04.06)

The path of separation to become an offering

37 You have to be able to pledge that you will make of yourself a conditional offering before Heaven. Jesus sacrificed himself as an offering for the sake of the world, heaven and earth, and humanity. For this, he went the way of the cross. Through the cross, Jesus instantly surpassed the standard of sacrifice and devotion that the countless patriots and saints who came before him established. Therefore, in order to achieve a life of universal value, you need to be determined to pledge that you will make of yourself an offering to be presented at a certain time to Heaven, to the world, and to the individual. (2-016, 1957.01.06)

38 From the perspective of the Unification Church, God's Will, my will and your will have to be one. This is the first priority. Then we need to determine a direction and make a conditional offering. Unless we meet these conditions, the fulfillment of the Will is absolutely impossible, even if the time is ripe. The three generations— yours, your parents' and your grandparents'—have to unite in the position of a single offering. When you look at everything in the universe, you see that there is no way other than for these three to become one. (28-082, 1970.01.04)

39 The making of a conditional offering determines the ownership of that which is offered. Because I know all about this, I came up with this definition. How can we determine whether something or someone belongs to the side of good or the side of evil? God and Satan negotiate over the heart of love. No one has known this. Heaven can take possession of an object that belongs to Satan's world only if we develop the way of love, set up the will to pioneer the way of love, stand in the position to find a person of love, and return to Heaven an elevated standard of love. God and human beings can unite through that object only if Heaven has taken possession of it. This is why God can claim ownership over human beings through our sacrificial offerings. (166-070, 1987.05.28)

40 God feels the pain of humanity as His own and rejoices in the happiness of each human being as His own. Therefore, one who takes the position of a sacrificial

offering in front of God should maintain a heart that brings joy to both God and humanity. Then, so that God and humanity can stand in the plus position, that is, the position to benefit, we who are attuned to that purpose need to stand willingly in the minus position, becoming the sacrifice. As the sacrifice, the conditional offering, we are the support group that can resurrect everything that was lost through the Fall. (224-012, 1991.11.21)

41 The Fall was a departure from the essential, altruistic love, which began with an independent awakening of a mixed-up, self-centered love. Since the Fall began with self-centeredness, the world that recognizes self-centeredness has continued to expand as a base for Satan's invasion. If you are willing to sacrifice personal love for the sake of God's love and altruistic love, and if you strive to separate from Satan by stamping out selfish love, you will eradicate totally the base through which Satan has infiltrated. (146-012, 1986.06.01)

Section 5. Training the Body

1 I have mentioned before that the body represents the earth. If we seek to find the place where our body can rest in comfort, we must go through the pain of rebirth. The longer this takes, the more anxious and fearful we become. However, once we get through it, we will find happiness. As the time of delivery draws near, a pregnant mother endures birth pangs that gradually increase. However, once she goes beyond that pain, she experiences tremendous joy. We need to go through a similar process. God loves human beings. After creating us, God blessed us, saying, "Your body will govern the earth and your mind will govern the heavens." (8-021, 1959.10.25)

2 Satan is erecting walls of death, using our body as a foundation for these walls. Satan became God's enemy, but originally he was just an archangel. God is the subject partner and the archangel is a spiritual object partner. However, since a person's mind represents heaven and his or her body represents the earth, the object partner, Satan uses the human body as a launch pad for his activities. This is why every religion advocates castigating the flesh. The aim of religion is not to conquer a nation or advance a particular ideology; it is to conquer the body. Therefore, religions seek to reach the original standard of conscience. Peace begins when we ignore our bodily cravings, open wide the gates of the mind and ascend to the level of conscience that Adam and Eve were meant to reach had they not fallen. (10-095, 1960.07.17)

Maintaining purity

3 Men and women must both preserve their purity. They must not stain themselves before marriage. After chastity, next comes purity of lineage, of the bloodline. Every person who seeks love has to maintain sexual purity and know about the renewed lineage, the lineage of purity. This is why we speak of chastity, pure love and pure lineage. When a man and a woman preserve these three, become one through marriage, continuously live for others, do not keep a record of their good deeds, are not swayed left and right, and persevere in sacrificing while forgetting those sacrifices, they will liberate the world for tens of thousands of years, even if the four corners of the earth relocate, even if up and down reverse, and even if front and back exchange positions. They will bring everything into harmony and realize a world of peace. (439-309, 2004.02.24)

4 The course of indemnity remains before us. Even if we lose all our relatives and family members in one fell swoop, we have to sacrifice everything for the providence, preserve our purity, and follow God's Will. Even if all of our family members and relatives oppose us, we have to follow God's Will. Historically, Noah, Abraham and Moses followed this course. However, they did not lose. They exchanged whatever they lost for what is eternal. Nonetheless, they were unaware that by losing everything they would gain what is eternal. They had a vague idea, but they had no inkling of the specifics of what they stood to gain. (21-209, 1968.11.20)

5 You have to be able to overcome the world's temptations, including the most debonair man or enticing woman. To achieve this, become a man or woman for whom obedience and chastity are of the highest importance. You are to raise descendants who will preserve the lineage of the Blessing for tens of thousands of years. Your task is to protect sexual purity for thousands of generations. The greater the number of such descendants you raise, the greater the number of your relatives who will become part of the royal family. (251-205, 1993.10.17)

6 Love is unique; it is only one. Love is unique and absolute. Since this is the love we desire, each husband has to engage his wife through absolute sex. It is undeniable that heaven comes to a husband through the encounter with his wife. A husband may walk a tortuous path, but unless he seeks the path of love and its righteousness, he cannot enter heaven. The person who comes to introduce heaven to the husband is the wife, and vice-versa. The day the couple splits apart is the day heaven disintegrates. It is also the day the couple's original ideals and dreams shatter into nothingness. (139-064, 1986.01.26)

7 The past and the future are linked together through today. The past, present and future are connected. The fortunes of heaven and earth revolve continuously around the past, present and future. When God renders His final judgment, He will examine our individual life as He does in the Bible, by the Law. Accordingly, we can be completely restored as individuals only if we cultivate in ourselves absolute flawlessness, which is beyond accusation. Now is also the time we have to complete our family on the basis of having perfected ourselves. Our entire family history will be the object of judgment. This is why, at the time of judgment, our family has to be pure, leaving Satan unable to accuse. This is the only way we can redeem the family and complete the foundation for the people. When we complete the victorious foundation for the people, all peoples of Satan's world will be judged. God will personally stand in the position of judge. Only when all the peoples throughout the world turn against Satan and lay the absolutely victorious foundation, against which Satan cannot protest, can we say that we have completed the restoration of the people. The person who leads us to these victories will become the Lord who redeems all humankind—the nation, the world, and all of heaven and earth. (13-210, 1964.03.15)

Achieving mastery over the body

8 What are the limits of the body? When the mind and body fight, over which hurdle do we most need to leap? It is the hurdle of appetite, the hurdle of food. The issue of how we deal with appetite comes with a religious life. We need to eat to live, but we cannot live to eat. After Jesus had fasted forty days in the wilderness, Satan tempted him: "If you are the Son of God, tell these stones to become bread." (Matt. 4:3) Jesus gave the masterful response: "It is written: 'Man shall not live on bread alone, but on every word that comes from the mouth of God.'" (Matt. 4:4) Jesus said that we live by the Word of God. Living by the Word means living according to truth, reason and law. Accordingly, Jesus' response to Satan was a strong rebuke, admonishing Satan for living in opposition to God's law. (037-124, 1970.12.23)

9 We have to conquer the twenty-four hours of the day; that is, we have to conquer time. Love has to transcend the limits of time. Next, we need to achieve dominion over our behavior. Love has to conquer behavior. Now, conquering time means conquering sleep, and conquering our behavior means conquering all desires, including the appetite for food. It also means conquering the sexual urge. Love stands above sexual desire. After that, we have to conquer our worldly desires. (171-022, 1987.12.05)

10 Jesus fasted in order to achieve dominion over his body. Examining every religion, we will see that not one of them is devoid of believers practicing penance. The higher the religion, the more it emphasizes such practices. Perfection begins with total denial of this world. The true religion advances by denying everything. It differs from the secular world's way of thinking. True religion does not begin by affirming what is of the world. It begins by denying what is of the world. We can begin to affirm certain aspects of the world only on the foundation of denying everything and establishing a realm of dominion over the self. At that point, we are transformed into beings of value, re-created in heart, and we become good people. (039-201, 1971.01.10)

11 What has religion been teaching? It has been teaching us to save the soul and conquer the body. This is why religions exhort us to sacrifice in the service of others. Religions also teach us, as we sacrifice to serve others, to go the way of penance, to fast, to inflict pain on the body. Unless we walk this path, we cannot enter heaven. This is the Principle. (48-087, 1971.09.05)

12 Religion is about self-denial. Accordingly, we have to deny everything. Whether it is food, sleep or other things we like, we deny it all. We overcome sexual urges, appetite and sleep. Religions teach us to divest ourselves of cravings for food, sleep and other bodily attachments. Human beings are conditioned biologically to eat and sleep to stay alive. These are things we are meant to enjoy. Nonetheless, we have to subjugate them, because they have led the body on the path of death. (18-067, 1967.05.21)

13 Religion does not begin with approval or affirmation; it begins with denial. We live in an evil world, and if we support evil we become evil. We each need to begin by judging ourselves. Each of us needs to deny him or herself. Self-denial does not mean targeting the evil society. Even though we need to reform this evil society, we need to begin with self-abnegation. The mind and body are fighting each other and we need to chastise the body into submission. But what does it mean to chastise and subjugate the body? It means to do what is righteous. When asked, what sets the criteria by which we subjugate the body, we should reply that it is our conscience. Therefore, we have to deny our sexual urges, appetite for food and other instinctive bodily cravings. We thus need to pray and fast as well as offer vigils. (157-128, 1967.04.02)

14 The various religions established value systems. Why have they collapsed? It is because the religions forsook their original missions, and this resulted in constant disputes and divisions. Thus they lost their power to guide real life. The established

religions do not teach clearly about life and the universe. They cannot clearly distinguish between good and evil or righteousness and unrighteousness. In particular, they cannot answer clearly regarding the nature of God and His existence. As the ability of religion to guide people faded, material possessions turned from a means to an end in life. Chasing pleasure became the norm. Sensual desires and material cravings dehumanize the world. In such tainted soil it is impossible for love, service, righteousness, holiness and other traditional values to flourish. (133-285, 1984.11.03)

15 Where is ascension to heaven or descent into hell determined? It is determined within each of us. The person who feels pangs of conscience together with stimulation coming from the five bodily senses is in hell. The person who leads a life that brings delight to the mind is in heaven. Therefore, it is wise to cast away one's worldly ambitions and evil mind, and to observe the heavenly laws centered on the conscience. (7-238, 1959.09.20)

The path that accumulates good deeds

16 You should not be arrogant and boast of yourself. Before your personal achievements, you should list your family's achievements. But before advertising your family's accomplishments, you need to invest in achieving results in the tribe. Likewise, before boasting about its successes, the tribe has to invest itself for the sake of the people. But Korean members cannot be proud, even if they were to bestow the Blessing upon everyone within the entire length and breadth of the peninsula. This is to say, we have to begin with the individual and ascend eight stages up to God, centering on the world. Only when God finally recognizes your achievements can you be proud of yourselves. (579-269, 2007.11.01)

17 Follow the lead of True Parents. True Parents are the first to enter the kingdom of heaven, and they lay the foundation for others to come and reside there. On this foundation, you live in the kingdom of heaven by virtue of the accomplishments you accumulate on earth. In the spirit world, we determine the level at which we live, and our position, by a statistical evaluation of our earthly achievements. This is done scientifically, not according to what you say you believe or say you have done. (586-012, 2008.02.04)

18 Individuals, while fulfilling their duty to their family, would also like to be able to live for their people and their nation. God is also like that. However, our lot is to choose between these. Fallen human beings' sphere of destiny is that of striving to achieve the greater good. Even God strives to pursue the fruit of goodness for the

people and nation, because it is greater than the fruit of goodness for the family. Likewise, one who strives to be a person of character does not restrict him or herself to the family or the tribe. That person will strive to transcend their people and demonstrate virtue and character on the world level. We cannot deny that we each aspire to become a central person who contributes to the greater good. (28-264, 1970.02.08)

19 Those who display devotion to the world, demonstrate loyalty to God, and fulfill their responsibility to Him can stand as honorable people before the nation, before their people, before their parents, indeed before everyone. Such people feel confident when standing before a mirror. They are able to sing their own praise with a clear conscience. "I have done my very best; there is nothing more I could have done. I have gone the path of death and am unable to do any more on this earth. I have invested all my energy and devoted myself completely. If there is one thing I have not accomplished, it is that I have not guided this people, this nation and this world to be as close to God, as I am. If this failure constitutes a sin, then I am a sinner. Nevertheless, I did my very best." Any person capable of saying this will certainly leave a historic legacy on earth. (045-252, 1971.07.04)

Section 6. Life with the Goal of Mind-Body Unity

1 We have to fix our gaze on heaven. Had human beings not fallen, had everything been right in the fundamentals, we could have lived with our gaze trained below ninety degrees. Nonetheless, due to the Fall, we have to fix our eyes on heaven. It is not suitable for people of faith to look below ninety degrees; we need to gaze at heaven. Therefore, those who stare at the ground while walking are bound to decline. Similarly, those who move with a self-centered mind will decline. We need to correct everything, beginning with our way of life, our body, our mind and our heart. Then where should we set our heart? It is not to be set inside the course of history. Instead, we should place it in the heart of Adam and Eve before the Fall. Through that heart and along with Heaven, we have to digest all the feelings we experience in our current life and in the trends of our time, and resolve everything together with Heaven. Sons and daughters who are able to do this must emerge on this earth. (10-209, 1960.10.02)

2 Love is essential for the unity of mind and body. When parents come to love their children, they willingly endure hunger, hard work, ragged garments and going places they don't want to go. While walking the path of such love, the mind and the body take the same unifying direction. It is the only way to unity, the only means to

unity. If you take this as the standard for daily life and for your entire life, you will not perish. This I guarantee. (48-191, 1971.09.12)

A life of witnessing

3 God trudged through the course of restoration and found the individual and the family, but this individual and family shunned Him. And yet God continues to walk toward the salvation of the world. In the same way, each of us also has to advance. We cannot avoid this path, even though it is perilous, filled with life-threatening dangers and wandering paths of sorrow. We must walk the same path as our Father, and seek to share in His adversity and sorrow. This is the concept of unity. When we truly come to realize the Will of our Father, no matter what hardships we face, we can overcome them. Furthermore, however challenging the circumstances may become, God is our Father and His difficulties are our difficulties. Therefore, we inherit God's tradition and engraft into His heart and history by enduring pain when the Father is in pain. This is logical. Unification Church members have to go this way without rest. Just as Jesus prayed and bore witness, even when facing death on Calvary, we Unification Church members have to bear witness in this world shrouded in the darkness of death. Even in hell, we have to witness to the most miserable of people. (015-340, 1965.12.07)

4 A life of faith is not a side job. It is a main and primary vocation. When you meet someone, who knows what will happen to this person afterward if you do not share the Word with him or her? Do not view this person as simply another person; view this person as your parent, your brother or your sister. If you are late, try to create a condition to meet again. Excuse yourself for having been late to a meeting and having been unable to share the Word, and set up another appointment. (269-072, 1995.04.07)

5 Witnessing is not easy, because it is the activity that enables God to engraft a new life to a person. This is why you need to offer devotional conditions, even if it is for but one person. For how many people have you risked your life and offered conditions? Do not boast that there are a large number of people offering conditions for you. Those who offer devotional conditions for others will be blessed, but the recipients of others' offerings will not be blessed. Hence, we need to be the ones who offer conditions. If the other person does not listen to us in spite of the conditions we have offered, do not feel lonely or sad. Just accept that the heavenly principle works this way. If you have this disposition, you will never feel lonely or sad. (042-174, 1971.03.04)

6 Witnessing is like giving birth. Based on my experience, it takes three times more effort to raise someone into a person as trusting as a child than it does to give birth. We must take responsibility for those people even after witnessing to them. And for someone who has gone astray to return, they have to either feel astonishingly and profoundly tearful, vexed and depressed with themselves, or an unprecedented explosion of heart. (66-215, 1973.05.07)

7 For whom are we witnessing? Yes, we are witnessing for God and for humanity, but we are really witnessing for our children and ourselves. Indeed, we are witnessing for ourselves. Therefore, we cannot hold grudges against others; rather, the target of our resentment should be ourselves. We need to do witnessing ourselves instead of ordering other people to do so. Only then will there emerge that place in which we wish to live. (66-288, 1973.05.16)

8 We have to witness like hungry people seeking food. Just as we recognize the value of food when we are hungry, witness with the same intensity to receive support from the spirit world. This is how an object partner will emerge. Witnessing has to become our main job, because the most important thing is to lead a life of faith. (142-292, 1986.03.13)

9 Adam was unable to reach perfection and marry. Therefore, True Parents must be realized in the fallen world. They have to form a family that will expand to the entire world, give birth to families and form tribes on God's side that together will reclaim what was lost to Satan at the levels of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation and world. Therein is the importance of witnessing. What is witnessing? Human beings are born of the fallen lineage of Satan's world. Witnessing is the process of engrafting God's lineage onto every tree born of the false lineage, completely transforming the false olive trees. Witnessing constitutes this. Witnessing is also the fortune we take to heaven. (484-256, 2005.01.24)

10 Once we receive God's love, we have to share it. Therefore, it is impossible not to witness. We need people as our foundation, our platform on which to attend God above. Hence, we witness. We need spiritual children who can take responsibility even for our sins. Accordingly, witnessing is not for the church, it is for one's self. If we share the Word with God's heart, we will succeed. (18-044, 1967.05.17)

11 If we travel around to witness, God will accompany us. What word do you get when you invert the Korean word for witnessing (전도)? You get the word challenge (도전). If you have enemies, as long as you are with God, He will defeat them and

everything will be fine. Witnessing is a challenge; those who refrain from the challenge of witnessing become lethargic. Your father doesn't like that, your grandfather doesn't like that, your father and grandfather's descendants do not like that, and even your wife and children do not like that. Therefore, the father needs to challenge himself as a father, just as the mother needs to challenge herself as a mother. (555-073, 2007.02.08)

12 What happens when you sow the seed of love and this seed grows? When you ascend to the spirit world, all the people to whom you witnessed will not be someone else's descendants. They will be akin to a new branch growing on your branch and all will be united as one. A tree that has grown new shoots for several thousand years will grow new shoots this year and new shoots next year. Furthermore, you cannot be severed from this tree that is tens of thousands of years old or from its nutrients. Once you are connected to the tree, you will grow. (548-181, 2006.12.10)

13 If you feel restless with a yearning for God and go out into the street and meet someone, you will be able to establish a bond and naturally witness to that person. When you are alone and have no one to whom to relate, God will come personally and dwell with you. If you clasp your hands, light will appear. You will feel it wrapping you in a protective embrace. When this happens, the question is whether you will profoundly experience this heart with a peaceful face, with your countenance manifesting peace, filled with happiness. You should feel the exultation that transports your mind and body and completely fills your every cell. You should feel the complete embrace of Heaven's infinite love. Also, when you dance and sing popular songs and feel the universe's attention, you need to feel your heart cry out to God, "Father!" This is the sound and the realm of heart we need. Every person wants to experience this. If you have these experiences, your witnessing will be successful. (050-324, 1971.11.08)

14 When your heart moves you to witness and tells you, "Let's go witness," there are those who witness because they want to, those who go with the flow, and those who witness because they are scared or afraid for their lives. How should it be for us? Should we witness because we welcome it, because we go with the flow, because we know we'll die if we evade it, or because we are afraid? Which one is it? All of these motives fail the test. How then should we witness? The mind and body stand in the position of subject and object partners, and you start out with joy when the environmental conditions conform to your partner's intent. Your mind was meant to begin with happiness, not sadness. The experience of joy, rather than of sadness, was to come first. What was the Fall? The elements of sadness took

primacy before happiness could blossom. We are people in search of the path of destiny leading to redemption. Therefore, we need to begin with joy and internalize God's Will in a joyful process. (127-209, 1983.05.08)

The daily life of a blessed family

15 As blessed families, we need to bring our heart into oneness with God. We have to become one body with God, united with God's Will. Only when we accomplish this can we become a family that goes forward representing the ideal of creation. No one can determine their value as an individual outside the context of their family. We are the embodiment of God's heart and hope. We are the substance of God's heart, in the position to represent His Will. (12-182, 1963.05.01)

16 Blessed families have to be role models for all humanity and for the countless churches in the world. Our families have to complete and indemnify the responsibilities that Joseph's family was unable to fulfill. Furthermore, we must, as a religious body, overcome and fulfill through indemnity the responsibilities Joseph's tribe, as well as Judaism, could not fulfill. Our responsibility is to resolve and overcome at once on the national level all the failures that transpired on the levels of family and tribe. (29-308, 1970.03.12)

17 What is the blessed family's duty? Their duty is to inherit the nation, the world and eventually the love of God. Blessed families have the authority to inherit the nation and the love of God. This special authority comes from the Blessing, which bestows on blessed families the power to inherit the coming kingdom of God and His love. The Unification Church can speak about the world of heart, and the heart of history, because it brings the love of God and allows us to connect with God and His kingdom. Thus the family is the issue. (35-306, 1970.10.30)

18 Blessed families have to be patriotic, invested in the establishment of the heavenly kingdom. Whether they are asleep or awake, their entire daily life has to move according to Heaven's command. From the viewpoint of the spirit world, blessed families on earth are similar to the heavenly kingdom's emissaries or intelligence agents. Blessed families live in constricted environments, deprived of freedom while being persecuted by Satan's world. Therefore, in order to expose all the wrongs Satan's world perpetrates, blessed families have to risk everything, including their livelihood, get active, and expand their ability. (210-052, 1990.12.01)

19 1 place blessed families in the forefront. However, this is of no use if blessed families do not suffer hardships and shed tears for heaven and earth in their daily life. One who never sheds tears is a false person. In the Last Days, everything will be

revealed. We have to shed tears, but not over what we can eat. We have to shed tears to fulfill our given responsibility. We are engaged in a battle against an enemy. We are officers entrusted with an executive order to capture the enemy's base. It is ours to spend sleepless nights shedding tears due to this responsibility. (13-271, 1964.04.12)

20 Receiving the Blessing resurrects you to the level at which Adam and Eve stood before the Fall. What then should you do? You still have to go through the completion stage, and for that you need to fully understand God's heart. To perceive His heart, you need to know the internal circumstances surrounding God's tireless endeavors to redeem fallen human beings. Just as God offered His only Son and entrusted him with the responsibility to resurrect all humanity, blessed families are to go forward into Satan's world while offering their children. Blessed families are to live carrying their children on their backs in the same manner that Mary and Joseph carried Jesus and escaped to Egypt. Furthermore, when they see their beloved children going hungry, the parents have to say, "We are living this way for the sake of the world; surely our loving Father will protect them." God will certainly raise their children to a position equivalent to that of the Lord who returns to this world in the flesh. So we remain standing until the end to accomplish our responsibilities. Those who demand, "Serve me, I am from a blessed family," will be swept away. (14-125, 1964.07.17)

21 Have blessed families based their life on God and His Will? They have not done so. They have led self-centered lives. We can create the garden of love only when our life's motive, objective and purpose are centered on God and His Will. Then we initiate a give and receive relationship with God as our subject partner, attending Him as object partners. Within that relationship, God's love will pour down. (27-340, 1970.01.01)

22 What kind of people should you become? As families of Heaven, you have to abide by rules and principles. Blessed families lead hard lives for the sake of their tribe. You cannot sleep when others around you go to sleep. You cannot eat when others are eating. Blessed families must raise the families within their tribe. You have to stand in the position of parents raising children. When the families you raise are in pain, you should feel even greater pain. You have to be people who cannot bear the sight of someone in your neighborhood going hungry. You should bring something to that person with the heart, "It is better that I go without food than let you starve. I cannot be one who eats when someone has nothing to eat." (29-106, 1970.02.25)

23 Blessed families know how to embrace and love their babies, but for what purpose were those babies born? They were born because of God and because of their relationship to God. You share secrets with your precious husband or your precious wife, but you did not design your relationship. You met along a public path, following a heavenly principle. God intervened to create your meeting. Because He was involved, the more your children are in misery, the more God feels misery. For this reason, the more that this is the case, the more you should offer conditions, firm up your outlook, and go forward with integrity, following your beliefs and principles, as one in whom God can place His trust. If you do so, you certainly will overcome all obstacles. This undeniable truth is based on my experience fighting for God throughout my entire life. (67-293, 1973.07.22)

24 Blessed families, reflect on the hardships I have had to overcome for your sake, and raise descendants who can overcome hardships greater than those I have endured. This is the view of the Principle. The Israelites who followed Moses out of Egypt had to go a path of tribulation similar to the one Moses followed. Up to the moment Moses set out on his course, he was immersed in Egyptian customs. Nonetheless he had to preserve the realm of the chosen people, not surrendering the traditions that he had to uphold as an Israelite. In this way, the life Moses led until becoming their leader was one of affliction greater than that of any among the people of Israel. Therefore, as they followed Moses, the Israelites should have recognized that Moses' hardships exceeded the difficulties they were facing. With this in mind, the Israelites should have crossed the wilderness and reached the Promised Land of Canaan within three weeks. This was the problem. If you stand in the position of a child, you have to overcome difficulties greater than those of your parents. A patriot in a nation should endeavor to sacrifice more than does the king. This is the Principle. (170-300, 1987.12.04)

25 Blessed families of the Unification Church must find their own nation. You must recover a nation. Adam and Eve lost the nation. Therefore, finding the nation became Adam and Eve's inescapable destiny. Since God and True Parents have intervened, finding the nation is inevitable and is our destiny. We cannot realize it through money or other such means. We can do it only through our blood being shed. We have to stand before the altar of our blood. (459-235, 2004.07.13)

CHAPTER 3 Our Life of Faith and Course to Emulate True Parents

Section 1. Our Life of Faith and the Providence of Restoration

1 In this age, to receive the new Messiah, we must repeat the history of the restoration of Israel. We must become people of faith who absolutely believe God's Word and dismiss the corrupt ideologies of this world. We need such people of faith. We are not distracted by worldly glory or fame. We have to sever our ties with that world and go forward as a separate people, for the sake of the new Messiah. In this way, we discover the historical formula course that can stand within the realm of God's love. (053-277, 1972.03.01)

The way of the Principle of Restoration

2 You have probably heard the Divine Principle lectures several times. They include the Principle of Restoration, the formula for fallen humankind to find God. How does that formula proceed? It is not through knowledge or through mere words; it is through the heart. If we look at Adam's family, Cain and Abel's positions were determined by heart. What matters is who loves God more, not who receives more of God's love. (33-095, 1970.08.09)

3 The Divine Principle is the way to become God's sons and daughters. It also inspires us to become loyal citizens, virtuous women, devoted sons and dutiful daughters. Our original mind leads us to become an elder or younger brother or sister to Jesus, and a devoted son or daughter, man or woman loyal to God. The Unification Church Principle has never been understood before. It is a unique teaching that cannot be displaced, even in the future. Therefore we must be bold. After I debated with the founders of numerous historical religions, God acknowledged the truth of the Principle. In the near future, the Unification Church will move the world. Moving Korea will not be a problem. The Divine Principle is the fruit of the past, of the present and of the future. All people must follow it as a higher truth, a higher ideology, a higher Will, and a higher way of living and acting. (14-321, 1965.01.10)

4 People should follow the Principle. You sow seeds in spring, in summer the plants develop fully, and in autumn they bear fruit. In winter you should put things in order, carrying the essence of new seeds of life deep within your heart. Only then will you have seeds to plant again when spring returns. This means that you should become parents and raise sons and daughters who will resemble you in the future. (026-158, 1969.10.25)

5 Restoration is carried out based on the Principle of Creation. God originally established the law of eternal love centered on Adam and Eve. We have to follow that law; otherwise we undermine heavenly law. Breaking the law of eternal love

negates the value of humankind, and even of God. Therefore, restoration can only be accomplished through re-creation. (207-273, 1990.11.11)

The course of separation from Satan

6 Heaven does not judge humanity out of hatred. The purpose of God's providence is to strike Satan and separate us from him—the one who betrayed God, rules through evil, and made us as we are today. God's goal is not to snatch us and cast us into a cauldron of death. God's goal is to eradicate Satan, who tempted humankind and threw the earth into confusion. Therefore, God keeps warning us through our original minds, saying, "Don't go this way. Avoid this path; go out and fight. View the fallen world as your enemy." The further we go, the more He tries to warn us, as people of conscience, to change our ways. (7-211, 1959.09.13)

7 Separation from Satan does not just happen. It can never occur while living comfortably like the people of Satan's world. You have to do that which is difficult and disliked by the people of Satan's world. Satan dislikes the way of the cross, the way of suffering and sacrifice. Therefore, we have to go down to the bottom. Since Satan likes to go up, we have to go down to the bottom. We have to separate from Satan by going down to the bottom. We fulfill our portion of responsibility only by completely separating from him. (148-198, 1986.10.09)

8 According to the Principle, when we enter a love relationship we are overwhelmed by love. God Himself established this Principle, so He cannot deny it. Satan distorted this law. If God had intervened by striking Satan and banishing him, He would have broken His own Principle of love, so this was not an option. All the problems of history arose from this. Therefore, the providence of salvation is to separate Adam and Eve from Satan and repair this broken situation. (22-247, 1969.05.04)

9 Sacrificial rites have often involved the shedding of blood. There have been many conflicts in the course of history. People have struggled with the power of Satan and the power of evil spirits. God has to separate good from evil. Rather than cutting people in half, God has instructed us to make sacrificial offerings. These offerings divided people between Heaven's side and Satan's side. Therefore when people successfully carried out a sacrificial offering they could, for the first time, go beyond the level of the fallen angel. This is why the practice of religious sacrifice emerged. (076-052, 1975.01.26)

10 We have to make Satan surrender. How can we overpower him? The only way is by embodying the Word. The Fall separated us from the Word. It resulted from our

failure to embody the Word. According to the Principle of Restoration through indemnity, our character is perfected when we are one with the Word. What does it mean to perfect our character and become one with the Word? It is to stand in the position of an unfallen person. Such a person has the authority to subjugate the archangel. Unless you go to the front line and bring Satan to surrender, you have no right to enter the realm of God's love. (60-178, 1972.08.17)

11 You need to set indemnity conditions in order to separate from Satan. Satan has taken root in your body, through your lineage. You are of Satan's bloodline, and thus cannot go to heaven unless you are reborn. You have to be born again. The principle of being born again applies here. Because your lineage is different, you have to be engrafted to a new lineage. You have to deny your entire life and set conditions of indemnity in order to be engrafted to my foundation. (135-325, 1985.12.15)

Restoration to our original state

12 What happened to the garden of heart that existed before the Fall? What happened to the world of our destiny, to that noble position where we could rejoice and relate happily with God? We lost that. It wasn't just that God would have loved Adam and Eve. He would have acknowledged them, saying, "You are my eternal son and daughter." When they fell, they had not yet attained the position where God could give them dominion over all heaven and earth, where all things in the universe would follow their command, where even the archangel would obey them. Instead, they fell because the archangel dominated them. They were the son and daughter of the Master, but they fell before they had attained the full status and authority of the son and daughter. (9-135, 1960.05.01)

13 Before the Fall, God had intended to give all of heaven and earth to Adam and Eve. He intended them to inherit and substantiate His internal nature as well. Upon giving them heaven and earth, He wanted to make them lords of creation. What greater inheritance could there be? From the day that Adam and Eve fell, God took care of heaven, earth and humankind. He had been progressing toward the day that He could say, "What is Mine is yours." God has been working toward this with the same hope, until today. He wants to say, "Even though you are you, you are Me. Your family is My family; your society is My society; your country is My country. And your world is also My world." God has taken on all the work of heaven and earth, while searching for someone to whom He can bequeath it. (10-325, 1960.11.27)

14 By analyzing God's providence over the course of history, we come to understand that God has been looking for the original unfallen Adam and Eve. Through the Fall humankind received the lineage of Satan, therefore we can become God's people only by reconnecting to His lineage. Even though the descendants of Adam and Eve became evil, God sent Jesus so they could reclaim their original position by believing in him. This has been His hope. But until today, how many people have reclaimed the original position of unfallen Adam and Eve by believing in Jesus? Not one. (15-327, 1965.12.07)

15 How much do you really understand that you were born through false parents? If someone has a disease, that person must be healed. If that person is weak, we do not aim only to return him or her to that weak state, but to a state of perfect health. The same applies to fallen humankind. Since people have fallen into an evil state, we have to restore them. To save them, we have to raise them above the level at which they fell. What we call salvation is restoration. People born of false parents with original sin need rebirth through True Parents, who have gone beyond the original sin. (22-241, 1969.05.04)

16 Restoration is like returning to the original seed. The perfection of restoration is the perfection of the seed. Until now humankind could not find that true seed. Through the Fall, Satan seized the central root, the central stalk and the central shoot. These could not grow straight; instead, they were bent over. Thus no one could harvest a perfect seed. All seeds came under the love of Satan, who has invaded the world. (491-155, 2005.03.18)

17 The terms Savior, Messiah and Lord of the Second Advent relate to the level and focus of the course of salvation and restoration. No one has been able to enter heaven. Even Jesus is in paradise. All people have been born from fallen parents and fallen ancestors, and have lived in conflict and sin. But raising people to the level Adam and Eve reached before the Fall will not fulfill our entire hope. Religious people have lived in hope. The original hope of all people is to become perfect and ideal people with the true nature of the ideal of creation, and to realize the ideal world. This is the Will of God. It requires rebirth as an individual who has perfected God's ideal of love. It requires marriage as husband and wife of true love, and then becoming true parents. (404-304, 2003.02.06)

Section 2. Our Course to Meet True Parents

1 We have to search for True Parents and then fulfill our filial duty to those parents. Adam and Eve did not fulfill their duty of filial piety to God. Originally, they were to

have had children only after fulfilling that duty. Then they should have taught their children to follow that way. As a result, a tribe was to appear with a God-centered tradition of heart. In order to establish that tribe, God has worked through six thousand years of history. (15-218, 1965.10.10)

Meeting True Parents

2 We may have thought that if we could only meet God, that would be enough. Yet human beings still feel distant from Him. Simply put, because our ancestors could not become true ancestors, we could not have True Parents and we could not become true children. This being so, even if we were victorious over Satan, we could know God only from the perspective of an adopted child. To have a direct relationship with God, we have to attend the True Parents. (5-184, 1959.01.18)

3 What is our ultimate purpose? It is to return to God. It is to experience love directly with God. To do so, we have to meet the True Parent. If you were to meet the True Parent in his youth, that time should not be seen only as one person's youth, but as a time of historical destiny. It is the time that traverses the age of the adopted child and that of the direct child. Although he is an individual like you and me, he has the unique value of being able to connect the individual to the whole; thus we can become counterparts of the Absolute Being. Therefore, when we attend the True Parents, the value of an individual who began as a servant of servants, or as a servant, or as an adopted child, rises to that of a direct child. Only by attending True Parents can we connect to them and form an eternal bond with them. (36-229, 1970.12.06)

4 In what kind of place would you want to meet the Messiah? Where would you want to meet the bridegroom Jesus? How would you prepare, and how would you want to look when you went before him? These are serious questions. Would Jesus want a bride who welcomed him with a radiant lamp of glory, saying, "You are my bridegroom." Or would he want a miserable-looking bride weeping uncontrollably in a lonely place like Gethsemane, saying, "My ancestors could not fulfill their responsibility"? How would you answer? Before meeting the bride of glory, the Lord seeks the bride of suffering. You attain the qualification to become the bride by going through the destined way of the bride of suffering. This is the course of restoration. If a child seeks to resolve the sorrow of his or her father, the child must experience a deeper sorrow than that of the father. (14-223, 1964.12.27)

5 In the course of the providence of restoration the individual has hurdles to overcome. Until now, the six-thousand- year history has been to find the one lost

Adam. It has taken six thousand years to find one perfect man. At a certain point in time, one individual overcomes all hurdles and attains perfection. Only by overcoming these obstacles can a new eternal bond with God be formed. Today is that time, that age of hope, for which humankind has been longing. Furthermore, the person who has come to the earth as one perfected man is the Savior for whom all people have been waiting. This is our understanding of the Savior, the Messiah. (31-009, 1970.04.08)

6 The True Parents come only once in all eternity. America needs them, Christians need them, Buddhists need them, each country needs them. They are the central figures who are needed by everyone, from the individual to the family, tribe, people and nation. Originally, True Parents should have taken care of all things, but because of the Fall, false parents appeared and all was lost. Therefore, True Parents will come to transform and resolve everything. If you follow True Parents first as an individual, and then as a family, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos, you will go to heaven. Up until now you believed in the Unification Church and followed True Parents as an individual and you wanted to go to heaven, but that's not enough. If your family believes, you follow as a family; if all at once the nation believes, you will follow with the nation, and if suddenly the whole world believes, everyone will go to heaven. (259-317, 1994.04.24)

7 Because God has gone forward selflessly, I could not go forward thinking of myself. God has been looking for a person such as me. Without finding such a person on earth, one who could pay indemnity, He could not resolve his sorrow. God's six-thousand-year history of sorrow dwells in my family. Enemies within and without have persecuted and tried to stop me. God also walked this path. This came about because of our wrongdoing. No one has been able to understand God's deep heart. In this environment, God struggled to find and raise up the family of His ideal. Now that the True Parents have come forth, you too have to walk the same path. You cannot go this way without resolving the past, and you cannot go this way thinking of your family. You need to know how great my internal suffering was. I should be able to forget my suffering by looking at your families. Blessed families should become a shield around the Parents' family, and should be able to demonstrate excellence. They should be families that represent a new world. Even now, there should be people who are striving to become those families. (20-045, 1968.04.13)

8 Until now, you have prayed to your Father as if you were in the kingdom of heaven. But if your Father is in a serious and pitiful situation, you should feel that you too are in such a situation. Even though we cannot express this, in our hearts

we have to share our Father's pitiful situation. We should say, "Father, no matter what sorrow I may have, no matter what difficulty I may face, don't worry." We have to be able to fulfill our filial duty and comfort Him. Unless such a person appears on the earth, there is no way to solve the problems of history. Even if we stand in an extremely difficult position, we should not desire God's sympathy. Rather, we should offer God our sympathy. Jesus appeared as the culmination of our eternal bond with God, which has endured throughout the ages of history. But because Jesus could not fulfill God's Will, the Lord who comes again has to do so. This is the way of the Lord of the Second Advent. This is the path of the True Parents. The True Parents are the result of the hope of history. The True Parents are the historical, conditional, substantial being that God raised up to represent the whole. (31-077, 1970.04.19)

The foundation of faith

9 Through belief in True Parents, the Unification Church has entered the age when we can educate our sons and daughters directly. Therefore if you follow the path of the True Parents, unite in heart and offer devotion, you will naturally become one with them and your conscience will clearly distinguish what is good and bad. You gradually will become brighter. God is not far away. You are object partners of God's love, sons and daughters who receive God's love. We should always be aware that God dwells in our conscience. This means we are one body. We need to feel that God is our vertical Father. We should keep this in mind as we lead our daily lives. If you do so, all of your ancestors in heaven will be with you and the realm of the angels will be with you. Through this, representing Adam's family, you will realize a perfect family and go directly to the kingdom of heaven. (275-163, 1995.12.04)

10 Because the True Parents are the central figures who establish the standard of faith in the foundational period, you need to follow True Parents with absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. The True Parents have explained everything up to the world level, from the ideal of creation through the Fall and restoration. These are not mere words. True Parents have gone this way and built bridges. This is why the completion of the Old Testament Age, the New Testament Age and the Completed Testament Age depends on me. Because the Fall destroyed the object partner that God created through His absolute faith, love and obedience, and because God is looking for that object partner, we cannot help but invest everything with absolute faith and love. (294-213, 1998.07.19)

11 Abraham built an altar where he prayed and earnestly pleaded for Sodom and Gomorrah; his devotion was like a hidden root. Your heart for the area where you

are living and the people of that area should be on fire like Abraham's. Never forget that you are to take over the foundation of faith that Abraham established through his course of hard work, which is like a hidden root. God promised Abraham's family, who are our spiritual ancestors, that they would be the source of blessings. This expanded as it passed through Isaac and Jacob to Moses, forming a people. Through Jesus it expanded to the world scale. Abraham's heart of deep faith and loyalty to Heaven created this connection to God. Do you know the hidden secret that allowed Abraham to become our spiritual ancestor? He loved God and faced Heaven alone, and he lived for the earth. Therefore he could establish the foundation for a deep and wide relationship with Heavenly Father. (1-140, 1956.07.01)

The foundation of substance

12 It is never easy to remove fallen nature. Even when trying to overcome long-term habits such as smoking or drinking, we go back and forth repeatedly. Then how can it be easy to remove our deeply rooted fallen nature, passed through our bloodline for many thousands of years? It is impossible by human effort alone. Even if you make God the center of your life, attend Him with absolute faith, and struggle throughout your whole life, it is a difficult battle. There is no point in even attempting this unless you are ready to attend God as the True Parent, with absolute love greater than the love you have for your parents and children. (442-272, 2004.03.12)

13 When God decides a course of action, He always establishes the positions of Cain and Abel. He teaches us through Cain. From this position, we ourselves have to pioneer the way of sorrow, pain and death. Since enduring and pioneering to the end is the way of restoration, even Jesus ended up being crucified on the cross. Through his resurrection the foundation of victory was laid, and the Holy Spirit descended. This was the decisive beginning from which Christianity spread to the world. (14-254, 1965.01.01)

14 When Cain and Abel spheres are united into one nation and sovereignty, God's eternal, ideal kingdom of heaven on earth is established for the first time. The Unification Church has to go forward for that purpose, leading Cain and securing a foothold for the Parents. We need to do this constantly as they go forward. We need to make Cain and Abel families and Cain and Abel tribes. When we have a base that allows us to go forward and unite Cain and Abel nations, on that foundation our Parents can go forward to the world level. (056-356, 1972.05.18)

15 Christianity is the elder brother that remains with us to the end. That being so, unless we become one with this elder brother, there is no way to avoid death. We are facing that fate. What is God's hope? It is that the Unification Church and Christianity will join hands. This is due to the Principle. The Parents can be recognized only when Cain and Abel become one. Through Cain and Abel, the Parents can be reclaimed. Yet because of the separation and conflict between Cain and Abel, the Parents' way forward was blocked. Only when Cain and Abel unite and form a tribe on the world level will the Parents emerge. When that unity occurs in the democratic world, the groundwork will be laid for a world-level victory. (60-303, 1972.08.18)

16 Today in the course of restoration, if you want to save Cain, you have to triple your effort. This will not work if you only give orders and do not know how to take orders. This is not the correct attitude. Abel shed his blood. It is a significant fact that he shed his blood to prepare the way for Cain to live. That is the standard for victory, and it is the way a pastor must go. As a pastor, you need to ask yourself whether you have taken an Abel-like responsibility for the members. You have to ask yourself if you have sincerely tried to raise up one person, as if it were your life's purpose. (070-150, 1974.02.09)

17 Through the victorious foundation of Cain and Abel's unity, the Parents can appear on the earth. Once they are here, for the first time, we can receive blessings and heaven can start anew. We go to heaven not on our own, but by attending the Parents. We can say that the Parents have already appeared in the Unification Church, but the world-level Cain-Abel indemnity conditions are not complete, and the foundation of the blessed couples is not secure. As an Abel-side family representative, you have to be victorious and receive Heaven's blessing. The neighbors should bow down in tears and say, "Even if the world is destroyed, your family should be blessed." You can only stand in the eldest son position if your community bows down to you and reveres your family. (100-315, 1978.10.22)

Section 3. Our Course of Rebirth through True Parents

1 Everyone on earth should be born again through the True Parents. Born again means born anew. When Nicodemus came one night to Jesus and asked him about the meaning of being born again, Jesus answered him, "Are you a teacher of Israel, and yet you do not understand these things?" (John 3:10) Rebirth means to be born again, to be born anew. What is being born again? A person who was born of false parents is born again through the True Parents. When being reborn and inheriting God's love, life and lineage, one must have absolutely no relationship to the love,

life or lineage of Satan's world. You have to completely erase them from you mind. (211-307, 1991.01.01)

2 As we do the mission of tribal messiah, we are reborn. The way to be born again opens to us. It is a return to the mother's womb. On each level, from the family messiah to the tribal, national, world, and cosmic messiahs, we must go through the mother's womb, the place where God, the Father and Mother are one in love, and come out dyed the color of love. After entering and going to the left, we have to turn around and come out, thus emerging from the womb of the mother of the family. Since we began in a family, when we return to that original standard, settle all things, and emerge, we have no relationship whatsoever to Satan. We have to experience the labor pains of rebirth. In this way, the families that have received the Blessing become true parents. They achieve the position of God's direct descendants with no relationship to Satan, become true parents and make a new beginning. The family and relatives become a tribe of the same color as True Parents, and can go directly to heaven. Thus the tribe and the people are formed, and when they connect with the nation, the nation and the world can go to heaven as well. Training through the Word 3 What teaching is a true teaching? What will it contain? It will teach about the individual, the family, society, nation and world. If heaven and earth exist, it will teach about heaven and earth; if God exists, it will teach about God. There has to be a way to teach about that one path, that direct path; to instruct people how to take that path and persevere on that path. If God exists, there has to be a way to reach God. If God's heart exists, there has to be a way to connect with His heart. (274-187, 1995.10.29)

4 You are receiving training so you can defeat and judge the enemy. In order to do that, you need to study my teaching first. Where did this teaching come from? It came from God's heart at the time of creation and went through the course of restoration. Never forget that fact. Without this teaching you cannot manifest the substantial being; without the substantial being, you cannot express the deep heart. Therefore, when you hear this teaching, you have to listen with your body, with your mind and with your heart. (11-159, 1961.06.01)

5 As you receive training based on my teaching, you should revive the earnest heart that you had long ago when you first followed Father, started on the way of the Will, and longed for the Will. Otherwise you cannot open the door of the kingdom of heaven. You need the ability to see people with a compassionate heart, and you need to live for others. You should long to see members, and long to live with them. If you don't rekindle this heart you will lose the key that allows you to go to heaven. (22-169, 1969.02.02)

6 You have to be able to reject the way of the world, and go the opposite way. Moreover, you have to set the world right by living a true life. You should pray for the success of each person you meet. You should share the happiness of others. Your heart should be full of hope and gratitude to Heavenly Father; your mind should behold the glory of His light, which gives rise to a heart of peace. You should live each day with a heart that can bring people together. If you do this every day for your whole life, when you go to heaven you will be able to sing of the glory of God. Therefore, if you want to sing the praises of God when you go to heaven, you should teach about His Will and fulfill it while you are on earth. (2-252, 1957.06.09)

Spiritual children

7 You have to reclaim your family. In order to do that, find three spiritual children and then, with those sons and daughters, form a four-position foundation. After forming this external, spiritual four-position foundation, your spiritual children have to support your physical sons and daughters, your direct lineage. What do these three spiritual children represent? They correspond to the three archangels in the spirit world. The three archangels attended Adam and Eve from the time they were created. After you are blessed, your spiritual children should attend your children from the time they are in the womb. Here on earth, they are restoring through indemnity the standard of cooperation that the archangels should have maintained. This should have begun before Adam was created and continued through his birth, maturation and blessing in holy matrimony. Therefore, you absolutely need spiritual children. (21-062, 1968.09.01)

8 In order to become a parent, you have to receive the Blessing. And in order to establish a family, you have to restore Cain. In order to be resurrected as an individual, you have to inspire Cain to surrender to you. Adam is in the position of the parent, but in order for God to be released from His grief, and in order for Adam himself to be redeemed, Cain must surrender. By the principle, in the course of indemnity, restoration occurs only if you restore Cain and Abel, with your spiritual children in the position of the eldest son and your children in the position of Abel. If you don't do that, you cannot rise to the position of true parent. It is a fundamental rule that to establish the position of true parent, Cain and Abel have to be restored. Cain must surrender to Abel. (23-239, 1969.05.25)

9 Having spiritual children is the highest ideal for which thousands of generations of religious people have hoped. Even Jesus could not reach that. During his final prayer in the garden of Gethsemane, everyone rejected and opposed him. But we have built a victorious family in the realm of resurrection, a family honored by the

cosmos. It is a blessed family of that value. It is your responsibility as blessed couples to convey the proper tradition to your children. This is the family responsibility. We must not burden our children with heavy indemnity. (055-105, 1972.04.29)

10 Why do we need spiritual children? We need them in order to find the three archangels, to find Adam's three sons, and to find Cain, the elder brothers of Satan's world. It is in order to find the Old Testament Age, the New Testament Age and the Completed Testament Age. The Old Testament Age represents the people, the New Testament Age represents the nation, and the Completed Testament Age represents the world. The Old Testament Age was the period of the redemption of Canaan by the six hundred thousand people of Israel. Jesus took the redemption of Canaan from the national to the world level, and the Unification Church is taking the redemption of Canaan from the world to the cosmic level. The redemption of Canaan is the last gate. The expression of three stages has this meaning. (128-104, 1983.06.05)

11 You eat what you want to eat, wear what you want to wear, and do what you want to do. But based upon those conditions you will be accused. You couples in the prime of life have not been able to raise young people loyal to God. You should be ashamed before God. From now on you should raise up such young people. We should be very grateful that in the Unification Church we have what we call spiritual children. Your spiritual sons and daughters save you couples in the prime of your life. It is for this reason that I tell you to keep going until your bone marrow melts. When you bring tears of hope to the eyes of the young people, on the foundation of that hope, the Messiah can come. (020-096, 1968.04.28)

Rebirth through the Blessing

12 Humanity has to understand the foundation of true love and return true love to God. Only people who have been consecrated, reborn through the True Parents' Blessing, can appear as the true children of God. A person who has not gone through the Blessing cannot qualify as a first fruit. (399-050, 2002.12.18)

13 The Blessing ceremony engrafts people to the lineage of God and cuts them off from the lineage of Satan. It starts with the baby in the womb. The children of each blessed family must receive holy wine in a conditional rebirth ceremony. In that way they are born again. The rebirth ceremony actually is to be done in the womb. The mother in a blessed family is to do that, too, and it is the same for every woman who has not been blessed. They come to stand in the same position as Mother.

Drinking the holy wine is the condition. In this way, everyone is able to inherit the perfect lineage of True Parents. (289-060, 1997.12.30)

14 We must have everyone participate in the Blessing, not excluding even one person. One needs to have the rebirth ceremony when in the womb, the resurrection ceremony after kindergarten, and then the Blessing ceremony, which is the eternal life ceremony. Having set the goal of eradicating sin from the bloodline, our responsibility is to go forward representing God, True Parents and Jesus. We have established the messiah on the levels of the tribe, the nation and the world, and the kingship on the levels of the family, tribe, nation, world and cosmos. If you cannot accomplish these things in your family, you need to unite with the world family. If you were unfilial in your family, even if you were a traitor to your family, by going forward as a loyal citizen of the world, you are freed from all this. We need to sweep away such contradictions in our environment, step by step, and create a higher level foundation to progress toward the future. This is the responsibility of the True Parents and the Heavenly Parent. (299-044, 1999.02.01)

Section 4. Our Path of Growth by Following True Parents

1 The ceremony to change the lineage is the ritual that brings together the lives of the Mother and the Father. By going through this process, you are separated from Satan's world. You must be born again through True Parents; otherwise, it is impossible for you to receive the marriage Blessing from True Parents. You cannot be given the marriage Blessing unless you are reborn and affirm your rebirth by standing before God as a mature man or woman who has inherited His realm of heart and received the right of inheritance. (183-089, 1988.10.29)

Let us follow and emulate True Parents

2 We do not walk this path for our own sake, but because Heavenly Father went this way. We must follow His path and strive to be like Him. He has been laying the vertical foundation in history, upon which to set the standard of history horizontally. We should do the same. We have to recover the Will so that God will be able to govern the world centering on the family. Hence, with a heart of concern, a heart to take responsibility and to act, we have to indemnify in our time the mistakes our ancestors made and bring the day of victory. We must return everything to the Father and the True Parents and proclaim that it is theirs. After we return everything to the Father and True Parents, the day will come when True Parents can say to us, "This is yours," and give everything back to us. Only then will we complete the entire providence. That will be the final day of glorious victory in

heaven and on earth. With this clear understanding you must go forward, with a feeling of concern and sense of responsibility, and fight in God's stead until you fulfill His Will. (152-196, 1963.05.10)

3 God is the perfect subject partner. He created human beings to be His object partners of absolute value, and we are to become His perfect object partners. The way to do this is by emulating True Parents, who already stand in that position. Then we can become the owners of love in true ideal families. Thereupon God, in His absolute position, can secure us as His absolute partners and be liberated. This is our responsibility. (461-167, 2004.07.21)

4 God is our Father, whose vertical love, life and lineage center on true love. Simply speaking, He is the Father of true love. He is the vertical Father. If human beings had not fallen, we would have been the partners of love to our vertical Parent. Our horizontal true love, true life and true lineage would have been united totally with God at a ninety-degree angle. Then we would have reached the position of parents in total union with God. Thus from the vertical and horizontal harmony between God's life, love and lineage and Adam and Eve's love, life and lineage, we would have been born in the midst of utmost joy and happiness. If that had happened, our minds would be eternally in the vertical position, like God, and our bodies would be aligned, like those of Adam and Eve, in accordance with their tradition, True Parents' standard, in a ninety-degree relationship. We would be resonating with God. (197-176, 1990.01.13)

5 What is the conscience? It is the internal self, which originated from the God of vertical true love and resembles Him. That is why we say the conscience is upright. It is vertical. It dwells in the inner place where we inherit God's love, life and lineage. On the other hand, the body is our external self, which we inherited from the bodies of our horizontal true parents. Within us is the internal and external harmony of original love, original life and original lineage. (197-176, 1990.01.13)

6 The human body resembles Adam and Eve, the parents of humankind, and is of their lineage. The human mind resembles the vertical Parent, and is of His lineage. Yet the two of them fight. Why do they fight? It is because something went wrong with their roots. In order for the mind and body to be in harmony, we need absolute faith in God. Before you pray, declare to Heaven, "God is my vertical Father." Live or die, you have to arrive at the perpendicular position that is centered on God's love. When you have secured that position, there are no shadows. There is no need for you to pursue the way of spiritual discipline. The reason we need to

cultivate our spirituality is because we have shadows within us. (199-282, 1990.02.20)

7 We must resemble God. We must be God-like. Once we are in that state, since God and we are alike, the plus and the minus will unite automatically and explode in all directions. Suppose you had been born from the unified love of the vertical Parent and the horizontal parents. Your mind would have completely inherited God's love and life, and your flesh and blood would also have been infused with that love. Also, you would have inherited the love, life and lineage of True Parents, who are the perfect, ideal partners of God. The internal God and the external God would have been united as one within you. True love unites God's mind and body. Likewise, had we been born at the standard of oneness between the internal, vertical True Parent and the external, horizontal true parents of true love, our mind and body would have become one. They would have become one because we would have been in the realm of absolute true love. (201-048, 1990.02.28)

8 The True Parents are the Messiah. As their true children, we are to resemble the Messiah. As tribal messiahs, you should lead your life centering on me, True Father. If you do not, it will be a big problem for you. In the spirit world I will be the standard by which God will render His judgment. If I score 100, you must also score 100. It is a principle that parents want their children to be better than them, so you should do at least this much. (244-190, 1993.02.07)

9 I am not to be the only True Parent; you must become true parents as well. You all must do this. If I am a big tree, you must be like the cells of that tree. To resemble Father, who is a big tree, you must become the seeds. You have to resemble the root. (259-319, 1994.04.24)

10 Each of us as an individual has to resemble God. Thus we have to re-create ourselves. This requires that we walk a path amid a sea of suffering. We need to go through the war zones of history, where the mind and body have no time to rest. It is the path our ancestors had to take and which our descendants, who are linked to the future, will have to take. We may have thought we knew this way of resentment, born of bitter suffering, but we never really knew it. Nonetheless, now that we have come to know it, we must go this way. Human beings lost our authority as the lords of creation, by which we were to have governed the archangel. The one who comes to recover our authority and our original position is the Savior, Messiah and True Parent. The True Parents gather all families and all nations throughout the world and pave the way for us to reach that same position

by conducting the Blessing ceremony, through which we all become blessed families. (284-102, 1997.04.16)

Representatives of True Parents

11 We are the representatives of True Parents. Every man is Father's second self and every woman is Mother's second self. In other words, since God exists as the harmonious subject partner with the dual characteristics of masculinity and femininity, men are born representing the masculinity of God and women are born representing the femininity of God. Reflecting the original duality, as individuals we are branches of True Parents' body from the moment of our birth. Jesus said, "I am the vine, you are the branches," (John. 15:5) meaning that men are branches of Father's body and women are branches of Mother's body. Therefore as a couple, if you can become Father's second self and Mother's second self from God's viewpoint, then no matter how far apart you may be, you will be one in God's love. A person who lives understanding God's circumstances and following God's Will is naturally connected to God's heart. (11-063, 1961.01.01)

12 If you take responsibility on behalf of God, who is the Creator, Father and True Owner, then wherever you go, heaven and earth will help you. Hence you should carry your burden on behalf of the Absolute Being, Father and Owner. If you go forward taking such responsibility, you will never be forsaken. Today, people are looking for those who can take responsibility for their own actions, their lives and their hearts. A society with such responsible people would be an ideal society. Hence, if you take responsibility and go forward at the risk of your life, many companions will come to you. Again I am telling you, when you go out to your mission area, you should be willing to shoulder three responsibilities: that of the Creator who gave us life, that of the Parent, and that of the Owner. If you do not, you can never become a representative of the Absolute Being, True Parent and True Owner. You will be an outcast, dwelling apart from the world. So if you cannot take that responsibility, you should at least serve and attend God with absolute faith. (11-139, 1961.04.07)

13 We have no time to rest. You have to understand how the structure of restoration will expand centered on me and on my family. You must follow that formula and go through resurrection on the levels of the individual, family, tribe, and so on, up to the world level. This will encompass the world to the summit of restoration. You have to follow this formula just as I have. If you do so, not only will you be my representative, that of True Parents and God, you will also be a representative ideal couple in the ideal world. (52-292, 1972.01.09)

14 The Unification Church calls its members family members and says they are sons and daughters who attend True Parents. But as soon as they are brought together as husbands and wives, I separate them and send them out into the world. Right after they are married, they are separated and dispatched to the four corners of the earth—east, west, north and south. If they love God more than their own spouse through all of this, they will end up heroes and heroines of true love in heart. Suppose you could not see your beloved one again on earth. Then you would be able to find your beloved in the spirit world. How amazing this is! There, your spouse will attend you. Your parents as well as your sons and daughters will attend you, giving you even greater love than you would have experienced while living on earth. If you are such a person, you will become the subject partner of true love. You will become God's perfect representative, embodying His very ideal. (104-062, 1979.03.28)

15 To appear as True Parents' representative, you have to become True Father's second self or True Mother's second self and become someone who can substantiate the Heavenly Father's situation and heart. You have come as the substance of Heavenly Father's hope, circumstances and heart, the heart that He has carried for six thousand years. Hence you have to make His hope your hope, His circumstances your circumstances, and His heart your heart. In relation to heaven, you need to walk the path to become a sacrificial offering on earth in front of your Father. You must take responsibility for this. (150-209, 1961.01.09)

16 What is the hope of human beings? It is to become true parents who can raise children who are free from the persecution of Satan's world and able to go directly to the kingdom of heaven. However, that has not been fulfilled. Hence our hope is to become True Parents' representatives and then give birth to true sons and daughters who can go directly to the kingdom of heaven. You all would like to give birth to good children, right? You probably want to give birth to the best children in the world. So far you have been unable to realize that. The question is how to make that happen. Another problem is that the archangel failed to raise Adam and Eve in a way befitting God's son and daughter. Hence, the question is how we can educate God's sons and daughters as people who are needed by God. Furthermore, all of you want to work hard and become a president who can represent your country, or at least his representative, or the head of a government administration office, or the CEO of a company. That is, you want to become a true owner. This is also one of the three great hopes. The first of these is to be a true parent; the next is to be a true teacher, and then a true owner. You want to be successful and become a state governor or even the president of the United States. However, you first have to become the owner of your own home. You have to stand in the position of an

owner who can pass on the tradition to your family, and thus represent your ancestors and even God. (205-020, 1990.07.15)

Section 5. Our Way to Perfection through True Parents

1 God, True Parents, and each of us are absolutely necessary to the completion of restoration. The first human ancestors should have become True Parents centered on God, but they fell. Now, in order to overcome the motivation behind the Fall, the three must find a meeting point. God's Will, True Parents' will and our will must concur. The purpose of humankind is fulfilled when the Lord of the Second Advent comes as the Parent of humankind, reaches the standard of a perfected human being, and unites humankind with God's purpose of creation. Then, through the unity of the parents and the children, the original garden of God's Will is established. When the parents and children forge an eternal, unbreakable family bond in that place, they will accomplish God's Will for the first time. (24-128, 1969.07.20)

2 If Adam and Eve had reached perfection through true love, they would have fulfilled God's desire to have a substantial body. If they had perfected themselves as a true couple, they would have completed God's absolute ideal of love. Furthermore, If Adam and Eve had had good children and thus become True Parents, God would have substantially settled as the eternal Parent of humankind. Moreover, the emergence of generations of descendants through that lineage would have fulfilled God's desire to have an infinite number of citizens of the kingdom of heaven in the spirit world. (283-176, 1997.04.12)

Building relationships of heart

3 God has advanced history in two ways, one positive and the other negative, but now they have to merge. The alpha and the omega have to merge and reach a conclusion. History was meant to begin with True Parents, but humanity, as the children of false parents, lost the foundation upon which True Parents could emerge. Therefore we have to return to God by laying the groundwork for the True Parents to appear. When this happens, the garden of peace will begin. Unless we establish a relationship of heart with God, we cannot become His sons and daughters. (10-144, 1960.09.18)

4 Let us consider our value and the significance of having been able to attend the True Parents, who represent God's six thousand years of hope and longing. How precious it is to go forward as children of True Parents. Even a single hair on your head or one of your fingers is something historic; they belong both to the current

age and to the future. As the ancestors of a new age, you stand in a solemn position. (11-158, 1961.06.01)

5 You have to become completely one with God's love and True Parents' love. At that stage your mind and body are one through true love, and you and your spouse are united. You couples must become one with True Parents and then become one with God. This is how the realm of three generations can be realized. Three generations of couples, with the heart of true love, embody God's love and True Parents' love and love each other faithfully. Real love can take root for the first time in human history only when that is accomplished. We have to progress through these stages: we unite our mind and body, we love our husband or wife completely, and we become one with the perfect love of God and True Parents. (220-083, 1992.10.15)

6 You have to find your original homeland and nation, and seek the eternal kingdom of heaven on earth. Through your love, you have to recover everything that Adam lost. Therefore, you need to shed tears with a heart even greater than God's when He created the universe. Meet your relatives and shed tears for them. Embrace the mountains and streams of your hometown and weep for them. Hope that as a consequence of your original heart, the buds of love will sprout, flowers will blossom in the garden of love, and the fruits of love will be borne. (406-309, 2003.03.12)

7 The Fall resulted in the loss of true love, true life and true lineage. Who lost them? Adam and Eve, who should have perfected them, lost all three. What does it mean to perfect them? It means Adam and Eve should have become completely one with God's love, God's life and God's lineage. There is no father-son bond without a blood relationship. God's family does not come into being. (492-074, 2005.04.06)

8 True love cannot be dissolved. It endures through all time. It remains constant eternally. Every human being seeks and desires true love. Even in hell, parents think about their sons and daughters. Even if parents in hell find out that their sons and daughters are in hell, they shed tears not because of their own suffering, but to pray for their children. (495-197, 2005.05.09)

9 The relationship of cause and effect, subject and object, is the eternal, unchangeable, absolute principle at the center of the cosmos. Observing this principle in human society, we find that the core relationships are those of parent and child, and husband and wife. The first is a vertical relationship between subject

and object partners, the second is a horizontal relationship. If two people unite vertically as subject and object partners, together they become a subject partner in a relationship at a higher level. Two who unite horizontally can become an object partner in a new relationship. Through harmonious give and take, all four become one and enter a three-dimensional realm. They enter a powerful state of being through this harmonious, spherical motion, with love at its center. This is the model for the ideal family, the basic unit of human society. Through this, it is clear that love has the greatest value. (089-226, 1976.11.27)

10 In order to continue our existence on earth while attending the central ancestor of humanity, what do we need first? The parent-child relationship. Whether you are born a man or a woman, your first relationship is that of parent and child. Why is this so? It is because that is the way the universe is arranged. The parent-child relationship descends vertically; without it there would be no vertical connection at all. The vertical connection of the parent and child leads to life. The life of the father and the mother and their lineage is tied together. Parent-child relationships do not just happen. They must be linked by lineage. (191-011, 1989.06.24)

11 The word for cosmos, cheonju (宇宙), is composed of two characters. The first is cheon (天), which is a combination of two (二) and people (人). Then there is ju (宙), which signifies house, and this appears also in the word for universe, wooju. Thus, cheonju, the cosmos, means a family with heaven at its center, a family sustained by heavenly fortune. The Creator, who is the vertical True Parent, connects with the family that is sustained by heavenly fortune. The vertical Creator and the horizontal family connect at a ninety-degree angle, to form a central point of resonance. The vertical True Parent and the horizontal true parents are interwoven. The relationship is of the Creator and created children, of Parent and child. As in the family, this relationship is not manifested only vertically. The horizontal and vertical relationships merge. (304-106, 1999.09.10)

Accomplishing the purpose of creation

12 What could be God's wish? God's wish is to find true human beings, a true man and a true woman. God cannot help but wish to find them. What is the greatest wish of a person of faith? In Unification Church terms, such a person's greatest wish is to become perfect. A perfected person is a true person. The purpose behind God's providence of salvation has been to encourage the emergence of a perfected person, a true person. Unfortunately, God has been unable to meet a true man and a true woman, due to the Fall. Therefore, the course of restoration is necessary. According to the Principle of Creation, the man was created first. God therefore

must first find a true man. His intention in commencing the providence of salvation was to fulfill His original Will and hope after finding a true man. (68-305, 1973.08.05)

13 People of faith have been unaware of God's Will to fulfill the ideal of creation based on His love. The accomplishment of God's Will, the ideal of creation, entails establishing the four- position foundation. What happens when the four-position foundation is accomplished? Heaven and earth finally settle into their proper positions. Heaven is like an upper axis and the earth is like a lower axis. With God's love at the center, they form one realm. At the point of intersection, children are born with a connection to both dimensions, which develop in harmony as they grow, progressing toward a central axis. The four-position foundation revolves around the center and forms the ideal sphere of love. (170-063, 1987.11.08)

14 Those who lead spiritual lives often find their object partners in the world of ideas, which provide them comfort. Despite being fallen, every human being has an inner connection to his or her original, eternal nature. Every person possesses elements of the ideal of creation within his or her heart. Therefore human beings have the capacity to overcome their sin, become perfect, achieve union with God, and live infinitely happy lives. The goal of our prayers is to awaken that inner nature and make it the core of our thinking. By doing this and remaining faithful to God in all that you see, hear and feel, you will be able to bow to God, offer Him glory and sing his praises. Nonetheless, although people today want to enter this state of mind, no one is making serious efforts to attain it. No one truly wants to find and cultivate his or her original nature. (2-193, 1957.05.19)

CHAPTER 4 The Believer's Path in Relation to True Parents' Course

Section 1. Our Life Mission

1 God is calling us to a hopeful future. Those who receive that call follow the path of destiny and not the path of fortune. The path of fortune can change, but the path of destiny cannot. Can you change who your father is or who your siblings are? No, you cannot. They are part of your destiny. God desires to reach and settle in the place that heavenly fortune has determined. History has been developing centered on the path to that place. The starting point of this secure settlement is the True Parents. God has already determined our destiny, which is to become true children with the True Parents at the center. That destiny cannot be changed. (203-186, 1990.06.24)

God's call

2 People hope with all their heart, mind and body that they might finally enter God's direct dominion. Today God has given us not only the mission to work toward realizing this hope and purpose; He is calling us to complete it. To do so, we must restore God's rightful dominion as Lord over us and the creation. We should also praise and thank God for blessing us with His governance. The responsibility to restore God's rightful dominion does not rest with the creation or with the angels in heaven; it is we who must now fulfill that. (1-119, 1956.06.27)

3 God seeks after each and every one of us. Through us He desires to recover the family, the society, and to expand His domain over the world. However, the path to this goal is still obstructed. Throughout the course of providential history, Heaven came down to earth to find each one of us. Now we as individuals must return to Heaven, but our way is blocked. People have sought to realize goodness, denying worldly things and cutting themselves off from the world. They have striven to find what is original, to recover what has been lost and to bring it back to God. Yet they had to confront their own limitations and have faced an impassable threshold. You should feel God's anguish over this history; you should empathize with Jesus' sorrowful heart. You need to feel God's heart to your very core. During the last six thousand years, He has been going through all manner of suffering and grief to personally find you. (004-059, 1958.03.02)

4 Even though your field of work may be limited, most important is who is directing your labor. You must work with the conviction that God Himself has called you for the sake of the nation or the world. Although your environment may restrict you, you should believe that you work for the sake of the nation or the world. Even though you are only one person, you ought to work with that conviction. When you receive a work order, the results will vary depending on for whom you are working. (30-177, 1970.03.22)

5 The path of faith is not easy. Anyone can be called by God, but it is extremely difficult to follow His call. God does not walk behind us; He is always ahead of us. You cannot imagine how fast He moves. He surges so far ahead we can hardly keep pace. Therefore it is hard to come up with a long-term strategy or plan in accord with the providence of restoration. God's providence moves by leaps and bounds. On the basis of our investment of indemnity, it advances from the individual to the family, to the tribe, and so on. It leaps ahead from stage to stage rather than advancing through a steady numerical progression. Therefore if you try to fit your work for God's providence into an annual plan, or a plan based on any other particular time period, you will find yourself frustrated and will fall behind. Considering this, you need to advance on the path of the Will with an earnest

heart. You need to constantly adjust your relationship with God, remaining a minus to His plus. You have to find your proper position in the providence and, as you move along, you must adjust to the providential time. However, knowing the proper timing and when to take a particular action is exceedingly difficult. (040-080, 1971.01.24)

6 You are called for the sake of God and the world. Therefore you should consecrate yourself and apply the knowledge you gained through your education. All of you are commissioned to speak on God's behalf in your own communities, to convey God's love and hope to your neighbors, and to help people work for God and humanity. Utilize your education in your endeavors to awaken the congregations in churches and temples and mobilize them to build a world of peace and freedom with God at the center. (133-273, 1984.08.13)

7 God called me to save America. When I actually arrived there, you can imagine how earnest and anxious I was. Likewise, when those of you who are here in Korea receive a direction from me, unless you are as earnest as I was when I left Seoul to save America, you can never become my partners in heart. My heart is governed by the principle of self-denial; it does not follow the principle of self-centeredness. (147-328, 1986.10.01)

8 I have progressed this far despite severe opposition. Such is the path of restoration; such is the history of restoration in the Unification Church to this day. Therefore do not lose your original spirit of loyalty, but follow me all the way, from the individual level all the way to the world level. When you fulfill all your responsibilities before God, He will give you His seal of approval. God will bless you only when He recognizes you as having accomplished your responsibility. You have to remain faithful until you are notified about that blessing. Only then will you advance and share the same realm with me. If you move forward focusing on me, determined to risk even your life on the individual level, the family level and eventually the world level, you will benefit by resembling me and standing in the same position as me. (164-116, 1987.05.05)

9 When God summons us, we have no right to choose the responsibility we are to assume. Being summoned means that if we are going east and He calls us to go west, we turn around and go west. Simply because we live in the east does not mean we should take directions from those living in the east. We need to take our directions from God, the center of all beings, who represents the standard that is everyone's hope. The person whom God calls must take on the role of His partner and the partner of all things. If God does not call us, we can fulfill our personal

responsibility by going in just one direction. However, once He calls us, He will give us missions to go in many directions, even encompassing the whole world. God called me, your teacher, to represent every individual and to connect everybody to Him, the central figure of the world. I will be able to accomplish my mission only when I am qualified to deal with every aspect of life and every direction—east, west, north and south, plus vertical and horizontal. (188-255, 1989.03.01)

10 God needs people for various stages: individual, family, tribe, people and nation. So there must be a “chosen people,” but what does that mean? It means a people called by God. They are to build the chosen nation, which means a nation called by God. When that chosen nation fulfills God’s Will, God’s chosen world will come about. Once His Will is accomplished, everyone and everything will return to God and become one. Thus, God is called the alpha and the omega, the beginning and the end. (188-272, 1989.03.01)

11 God is the True Parent of all parents. He is our True Parent, our Heavenly Parent, the King of true families, true nations and the true world. We need to usher in the era of everlasting peace and prosperity in which all people serve and attend Him. There is that Korean song that begins, “Moon, moon, oh bright moon, the moon with which the poet Lee Tae-baek used to play” As the words of the song suggest, our hope is that all humankind will attend the True Parents here on earth for thousands of years. Please understand that each individual’s mission and purpose in the Unification Church is to fulfill this hope. (277-090, 1996.03.31)

12 As leaders whom God has called for the sake of His Will, you must fulfill the responsibilities you are asked to shoulder. The Korean people have to fulfill their calling as Koreans, to become messiahs for the sake of the world. The Korean word so-myeong, contains the Chinese character so (召), which means to call, and myeong (命), which means to receive an order. This “call to receive an order” resembles a marching order in the army. You need to fulfill the mission you are called to with that same unhesitating spirit. (600-286, 2008.11.05)

Mission consciousness

13 You cannot imagine how difficult it was for me to climb over each hill in the course of the providence. If anyone says even one word about this, I could weep for a hundred or a thousand years, even after going to the spirit world. So many painful and sorrowful situations have pierced my heart. God wept over Adam and Eve. Yet when I go before God and say, “Here am I, Sun Myung Moon,” I would wish to see God shedding tears of joy over the return of His son. God’s heart has been filled

with unfathomable pain and suffering. Therefore I cannot die until I hear God's own voice say, "Welcome!" as He runs down a stairway of a hundred thousand steps as if He is flying, wraps His arms around me, then climbs back up the forever-long stairway to return to His throne, carrying me in His arms and announcing, "My Will has been accomplished! Aju!" Therefore I can only continue fulfilling the Will on the path of the ironclad Principle that True Parents are destined to walk. In your own path of life as well, you need to establish such a memorable standard as you prepare, during your lifetime on earth, the gift that you will offer to God. Only then can you come close to the Heavenly Parent, because you will be able to claim the right of inheritance enabling you to live with Him and be happy together. Moreover, then you can be given authority in the kingdom of heaven. Please understand this clearly, and walk the path of accepting responsibility throughout your life. (404-162, 2003.01.31)

14 You need to have a consciousness, that is, an awareness, of yourself, your environment, your nation and the world. Based on a new worldview and with your new awareness, you can clear up and overcome everything and establish Abel's position. Once you have done that, you have to win over Cain, and together you need to attend God. By doing so, you can enter the kingdom of heaven, and you become one who is building Heaven's family, nation and world, that is, the kingdom of heaven. Therefore your awareness is the starting point of restoration. (30-067, 1970.03.15)

15 Each of us has to recognize that we are the fruit of historical sins. The same applies to our tribe, and we can view the nations of today's world as extensions of tribes. All ethnic peoples stem from tribes that have persisted for thousands of generations. Looking at a nation's lines of descent, we find that they are the extensions of tribes. Each of us is a sin-filled descendant of our people and our nation. Therefore we have to take responsibility for our nation's sins. We need to be willing to pay the price of sin that our nation—our people—is supposed to pay. Each of us ought to determine that we will pay the price for the sins of the world and for the sins of the present time. This is how Jesus felt when he came as the Messiah. Therefore each of us has to be extremely serious and reach the level of resolve such that we feel that "if I live, the world will live, and if I die, the world will die." (68-318, 1973.08.05)

16 None of you has truly been aware of your real self. Only after you came to know the Will did you begin consciously knocking on the door of your personality. Each of you needs to know clearly that you sprang from past ages and that you are called to build the future. You may think you became aware of this on your own. However,

God guided you to realize this. Also, countless saints and sages shed their blood to bring you where you are today, and they are working even now behind the scenes, hoping you will increasingly develop this consciousness. Therefore you need to feel as if you personally have negatively impacted history, as well as the present, and that you might do the same in the future as well. You should carry on your shoulders the bitter, historical sorrow of Adam and Eve that is embedded in our past. With that awareness, please understand that you must take responsibility for the present and for the future. (11-150, 1961.05.13)

17 Why has the Unification Church appeared in this world? It is to show the way of repentance. We need to show people how to repent for their sins. To do that, what do we need to know? The teaching that one can be saved through faith already exists. But people must understand that they represent the world. Men and women must have this awareness. Please understand that you are to become historical sacrificial offerings and victorious leaders of this age. Since Jesus the Messiah was nailed to the cross, you must have the determination to throw your life into your mission and offer indemnity for his death. He will then sympathize with you, thereby allowing you to participate in the glory of resurrection. That is the Principle. Otherwise no one would be able to enter the kingdom of heaven. (68-330, 1973.08.05)

18 The Fall started when Adam and Eve began to think centered on themselves. In order to reverse this through indemnity, we must not be self-centered, but must put God's family first. From that family emerges a new, ideal world. The obstacle to accomplishing this is our bloodline. Humanity has not known about this until I thoroughly explained it, for the first time in history. This knowledge cannot be found in the realm of self-centered existence. You must turn things upside down within yourself by creating an inner revolution, so that a new kind of family can emerge, focusing on the new True Parents. That family will differ from the families that stem from the Fall, from which developed the perspective of putting oneself first. When we act based on this new family's public mindset, we do not experience a struggle between mind and body. (440-187, 2004.03.01)

A life for the salvation of humanity

19 What is religion's final objective? Of course we know that religious believers seek personal salvation, but we go one step further and seek the salvation of the family. In order to liberate human beings living under evil sovereignty amid sin and injustice, we must first recover the family. We must find the family that, in the true sense, can represent everyone in history, in the present age and in the future. That

family has to set up the standard that all families can follow. It will be the foundation upon which all humankind can rejoice together. Without this family there can be no world peace. Even families that look good on the outside can be in shambles internally. (023-011, 1969.05.11)

20 No matter how hard typhoons may blow, no matter how many mountains of trials and tribulations loom before you, if you ride on a steed of love, no one can stop you. No one will be able to block you on your path. No force can obstruct parents' love for their children. No means or methods can stop them. Nothing can stop a wife from loving her husband or a husband from loving his wife. That is what makes love supreme. No power can stop a patriot's march of love for his country. His love cannot be bought or sold. The path of a holy son or daughter who clears the way for the heavenly law to save humanity, out of love, cannot be blocked. (175-205, 1988.04.17)

21 God established the Unification Church in order to halt the decay of this world. Therefore the Unification Church needs to be equipped with all the necessary tools. In this secular world people are in despair, wandering about without a purpose, facing a dreadful and dismal environment. We need to confront this reality by going the opposite way from the downward path along which humankind is hurtling. Otherwise God's entire providence of salvation may be impeded. (266-304, 1995.01.01)

22 I am working to give life to the world, to heaven and earth. While I take responsibility for heaven and earth, all of you should save your own families and clans. I urge you to save your brothers and sisters and your own mother and father. In addition, you are responsible to subjugate the archangel. Then five generations, from your grandparents to your grandchildren, must unite and follow the True Parents, taking responsibility to recover the heavenly kingdom. Together, you all are to bring the nation and everything back to God. (407-352, 2003.05.20)

23 God's resolute work of salvation throughout history has been to build one world of heart throughout the vast universe. You need to consider to what extent you can be useful in the process and work of salvation. For the purpose of salvation, God needs to employ all creation as His material, including all humanity and even the billions of believers in the spirit world. Yet the question is you. When you act, how will the creation respond to you? How many people out of all humanity will respond to you? How many people among the billions of believers in the spirit world will respond? When you cry out here on earth, how far into the universe do the vibrations of your heart resonate? Your value will be determined by the

measure of its response. Jesus' death resounded in heaven and throughout the entire universe. That response proved that Jesus is the Savior. He is the Savior because of his heart. (9-184, 1960.05.08)

24 It should not be your focus every day to satisfy your personal desires. Rather, you need to lead a life of faith, serving others and sacrificing yourself for a higher purpose. Thereby you should come close to the standard of Jesus' heart. He toiled so hard, concerned only for God's Will and for humankind. From there you have to progress to become God's true child and comfort Him, who has been working unceasingly up to the present with a broken heart. You should feel indignant when you witness unrighteousness. With the heart of God, who wants to give more and more, you need to be willing to go to the ends of the earth to pursue His kingdom, establish it and secure His righteousness. You should also be able to comfort the heart of God, who has been toiling to save humanity in the midst of such sorrow. (3-131, 1957.10.13)

25 God has been striving endlessly to save humankind through His providence. Even though we human beings are fallen, He does not abandon us. Although we fell prey to sin and evil, who is it that rescues us, lives for us and endeavors to guide us to the land of blessing? It is not our own parents, it is not our spouse or our children, even though they love us. It is not our nation, nor is it any of the saints and sages. It is none other than God. (5-214, 1959.02.01)

26 We absolutely have to recover the original garden that has nothing to do with the Fall. Because we are fallen human beings, we need to find the original state that existed before the Fall. We lost God; therefore we must find Him. We lost the original True Parents of humankind; therefore we must find the new True Parents. We must find and occupy the garden of peace where we can live as sons and daughters with God, centered on the ideal of True Parents. Since we have to accomplish these tasks, the term "providence of salvation" presents a fresh challenge to us. (3-047, 1957.09.22)

27 God is carrying out His providence to save humankind. He cannot save the world while standing back as an idle spectator, simply observing all the pain on earth. Therefore He engages the fallen world as if all the pain that humanity experiences is His own. He deals with humanity directly in the realm of their pain, taking responsibility for it. Without God's direct involvement, humanity cannot receive salvation. Therefore He has been fighting alongside people on the path of their sad and tragic history. (14-047, 1964.05.03)

28 We lost God, our Parent. Although we were born from our natural parents, we were born unable to receive all of the Parent's love, which is truly genuine, profound, elevated and precious. We have not been able to live with Him as our Parent. Likewise God, in the position of the Parent, lost His children. Therefore His expectations for us were never fulfilled. He has been dealing with this situation ever since, working in the background of human affairs throughout the long span of history to help us, His children, fulfill our purpose. This is God's providence of salvation. (22-075, 1969.01.26)

29 We need to be saved. We need to heal the wounds accumulated through our historical struggles. Only then can we find everlasting life and be embraced in the bosom of God's love. Even though our families, the society, the nation and the world are opposing us, we have to overcome and move forward as heavenly soldiers. We have to assume Jesus' position, holding on only to God's Will, and advance to save all people, both from the past and in the present, who dwell in the realm of death. (4-082, 1958.03.09)

30 In this world, nothing can be accomplished without unwavering determination. We go to battle to fight for righteousness. Satan's natural disposition is to want to be exalted, but we, on the contrary, must humble ourselves in order to fight him, both with our bodies and our love. We should be focused on a single target. If we shoot out like a cannonball but our eyes, ears and hands are looking and flailing about in different directions, we are bound to miss our target. If we want to win the battle, we cannot hold back. God is prepared to make any sacrifice, under any circumstances, to save humankind. This is Heaven's strategy. You need to vindicate God by protecting the sacrificial altars stained with the blood of your ancestors. (017-223, 1967.01.01)

Section 2. A Life of Accomplishment

1 God has been searching for His sons and daughters and for the lost creation, struggling to recover the world of creation's original nature. God yearns to feel eternal joy by bequeathing this great, eternal and sacred achievement to the owner of the ideal world. You need to know that, despite His sorrow, God longs to bless us all the more. Therefore you should be able to say to Him, "We are new sons and daughters in front of the Will. Please let us stand as true families and become Your glorious incarnations who, as true husbands and wives with true children, can govern all creation." You have to fulfill the mission of serving the True Parents by becoming true children with the right to eternal glory given by God. You need to let the True Parents rest, and then, together with the True Parents, all of us should let

God rest. When this happens, the absolute, good God can finally reign over us as our Father, and over the whole world as King. The kingdom of heaven will be realized on earth. (12-282, 1963.07.26)

Revealing providential secrets

2 Rebekah, standing in Eve's position, made it possible for her two sons Esau and Jacob to unite, and therefore to resurrect her family's position on God's side. Jacob restored the right of the eldest son, and also restored the family that was lost in the Garden of Eden. When Jacob and Esau fought in Rebekah's womb, Rebekah prayed to God and asked, "Why are these two fighting?" God answered dearly, "Two nations are in your womb, and two peoples born of you shall be divided; the one shall be stronger than the other, the elder shall serve the younger." (Gen. 25:23) This meant that the eldest son would descend and the second son would rise. At that point in history, however, the reclamation of the right of the eldest son still remained conceptual. Tamar faced a similar situation. When she was pregnant, her twins Perez and Zerah were fighting in her womb just before their birth. "While she was in labor, one put out a hand; and the midwife took and bound on his hand a crimson thread, saying, 'This came out first.' But just then he drew back his hand, and out came his brother; and she said, 'What a breach you have made for yourself!' Therefore he was named Perez." (Gen. 38:28-29) In this case Perez, still in the womb, reversed the original birth order by which he was the second son, thereby reclaiming the lost position of the eldest son and gaining the right to become an ancestor of King David. God's response to Rebekah's prayer is related to the process of restoration. For more than four thousand years until the present day, this process has been a mystery. Only God and Satan knew the answer. Satan is the false parent. God's hope is the True Parents. The True Parents are the original, true owners of the family desired by God in the Garden of Eden. Today the True Parents have unraveled the restoration mystery. God works through the second son in order to fulfill the history of restoration, and He even goes inside the womb to do so. God's lineage cannot be established in any other way. (277-257, 1996.04.18)

3 Jesus came as the Messiah and with the name of the True Parent, but he was killed; therefore he must come again. He has now come for the second time to work toward reclaiming ownership. I came in accordance with the providential age and resolved all the essential mysteries of nature, the mysteries of God, the secret crimes hidden by Satan, and all the mysteries of history and the philosophers. All who know of this cannot deny it is true. Anyone with an education knows that no matter what your social status, if you graduated from elementary school you are an elementary school graduate, and if you graduated from middle or high school you

are a middle or high school graduate. This is a positive heavenly principle. Even if heavenly sons and daughters are born with the foundation of liberation to enter heaven, they still have to go through Heavens Ph.D. course. Therefore the Unification Church needs show people how to become Heaven's sons and daughters, and even high-ranking ministers in Heaven's realm. This is why everyone needs to walk this path. (408-102, 2003.05.31)

4 True Parents' words are more precious than the American Constitution. There is only one set of True Parents, and their time only comes once. It did not occur in the past, and it will not occur in the future. True Parents will have existed in substantial form only during this age. For all eternity, there will be just this one time. Therefore True Parents are openly revealing Heaven's mysteries, these previously hidden truths. Furthermore, I have already implemented these concepts to create a new reality. Until now Satan has controlled everything, but since I have revealed the truth, all is now clear, and Satan cannot be in charge anymore. God acknowledges this fact. If we follow this teaching, our perfection is not a problem. (246-085, 1993.03.23)

5 Invisible love has the power to penetrate infinitely, and its value lies in unseen things. God's infinite love—love for the sake of others—is the love that is characterized by investing your life in another and then forgetting what you have invested. When you become an object to life itself, suddenly you are stimulated and resurrected in an explosive way. That's why Jesus said, "For those who want to save their life will lose it, and those who lose their life for my sake will find it." (Matt. 16:25) You need to remain at the zero point, unattached. Act as if you are at the point of death. Throughout my life, I have been revealing the secrets of heavenly truth and applying them. So even though the world may shout, "Kill him!" I keep going forward no matter how loud they shout. No matter how difficult, receiving persecution is God's secondary strategy to take back ownership from the oppressors. This is why I never grew tired even though I was persecuted throughout my life. I may look like an insignificant person, but I am the son whom God the owner of heaven and earth and the truth, loves more than anyone else. Receiving persecution can be used as a tactic to take back ownership from one's enemies. (258-051, 1994.03.16)

6 All people need to perfect themselves by passing through the realm of the Principle into the realm of God's direct dominion. The Fall occurred during this process. Humankind fell without knowing God's love. Only God and Satan knew about this. Adam and Eve did not know. The human ancestors fell due to their ignorance. Therefore all human beings cannot help but face this hidden obstacle.

Even the teachings of all the sacred scriptures have not been able to fully reveal this truth. The True Parents, who become the parents of humanity, are destined to reveal it. In order to reveal the reason and logic of heaven and earth, you must clearly know how to fundamentally turn history upside down. (272-298, 1995.10.13)

7 Why does the omniscient and omnipotent God seemingly do nothing about this miserable world? The answer is that God cannot act arbitrarily. Even though He has the power to exterminate fallen humankind at a single stroke, He does not punish or restrain them. The various world religions have not grasped that the existence of a fallen lineage caused the fallen world. Now finally, in the name of the True Parents, all the facts regarding the spirit world have been laid out in detail. The Unification Principle has revealed the motivation behind the Fall, including both God's mysteries and Satan's secret crimes. With this knowledge, in order to harmonize the spirit world and physical world, which historically have been divided and in conflict, we seek to resolve and reconcile the fundamental issues of the spirit world, the physical world and human life. (304-214, 1999.11.08)

Ending the long struggle between Cain and Abel

8 God wanted to use Cain and Abel to clean up the mess created by the Fall of Adam and Eve. Instead God had to bear witness to yet another failure. He had to suffer the horrible event of Cain killing Abel. Although blood was not shed during the Fall, it led to blood being spilled subsequently in human history. Human beings should have learned from this history of bloodshed and reconciled with each other. However, they were unable to do so. Moreover, they did not unite with Heaven. Therefore, for example, God was forced to strike humanity and wash everything clean with the Flood during Noah's time. (64-210, 1972.11.12)

9 Cain and Abel clashed in Adam's family. Due to their division, ages of conflict ensued. Cain and Abel's enmity exacerbated the conflict between mind and body, between spouses, between father and son, between mother and daughter and between siblings. These conflicts are all connected and have expanded to tribes, peoples and nations. They in turn have caused countless divisions and a history of war. (512-258, 2005.12.26)

10 Although Cain had the right of the firstborn son, God put his younger brother Abel in that position. Since then, the tragedy of Abel's spilled blood has expanded to the entire history of humanity, which has been a history of war. People in the position of the elder brother, people of influence, have been blocking people in the

position of the younger brother who sought to follow their parents' way and become true people. This historical Cain and Abel relationship and the problem of their lineage still need to be resolved. The mother and the sons and daughters also lost their right of ownership, as well as their hometown and their nation. These must be regained as well, and because these incidents occurred first in the family, they must be rectified first in the family. (514-203, 2006.01.10)

11 A fight among siblings cannot be settled amicably without the parents' involvement. Parents must stand up to this task. Heavenly fortune cannot manifest until the first son is liberated and the two sons are reconciled. Likewise, your mind and body must become one in order for you to be blessed. This is the Cain and Abel principle. In the relationship between men and women, the husband is plus and the wife is minus. These two represent Cain and Abel; they need to become one and should not fight. Originally the principle was that they become one. However, since they became separated they must unite again. (194-331, 1989.10.30)

12 In the same way that Cain and Abel became kingdom in Adam's family, Catholics and Protestants have become kingdom on a global scale. To unite completely, they need to enter the realm of unfallen Adam. Jesus lost his body; therefore, he was able to become only the spiritual parent, not the substantial parent. Therefore we need the Marriage Supper of the Lamb. The new Lord must come, perfect the realm of True Parents, and then conduct the Marriage Supper of the Lamb. (303-259, 1999.09.09)

13 You know the story of Cain and Abel in Adam's family. If Cain had fulfilled his providential role, Abel could have started on his path. Knowing this, if you look at Jesus' life in the context of history, the age before Jesus belongs to Cain's world, and the age after him belongs to Abel's world. Jesus, God's second son, became the owner of Abel's worldwide realm. He was, in fact, the first leader to begin to construct Abel's world. Before him, Cain's world had prevailed. It was a world centered on the self. That world must be cleaned up and brought to surrender, and then for the first time the two brothers should be able to stand as children united to welcome the True Parents. (15-115, 1965.10.03)

14 The True Parents need to come to this world and resolve Cain and Abel's resentment, caused by Adam and Eve. In this process the brothers need to embrace one another, be there for each other and open their hearts to the point where they would lay down their lives for one another. Then True Parents, with the heart to save all people, can bind all humanity together. That way a new foundation for a heavenly life on earth can be built. (16-189, 1966.03.22)

15 Through the Fall of Adam and Eve, humanity lost True Parents and God. Also, because Cain killed Abel, the love between brothers was lost. Therefore Men humanity was not able to face God and now needs to find God, the parents and Abel. People need to find the type of Abel whom Cain would not beat to death, the type of Abel who would win his fight with Satan. If you find such an Abel, you can become sons and daughters with the authority to judge between good and evil on God's behalf. (16-198, 1966.03.22)

16 When God created human beings, He created Adam first. Therefore when God raises up the True Parents, He raises up Adam first. God has worked throughout history to find one Adam as a seed. He has been raising this seed to reach perfection. God has carried out His providence throughout history, through Cain and Abel in Adam's family, through Noah's sons, through Abraham and through Jacob and Esau. God's providence has developed from the individual level to the family, tribe and national level, and finally culminates at the time of the Second Advent. (52-124, 1971.12.26)

17 True Parents can be raised up only on the foundation of Cain and Abel's unity. When this principle is successfully applied on the individual level, Cain submits to Abel. Hence Abel becomes positioned as the elder brother and Cain, standing in the position of the younger brother, attends and obeys Abel even more than Abel would have attended and obeyed the original, unfallen elder brother Cain. Only then is redemption possible. (131-182, 1984.05.01)

Living to become True Parents

18 The returning Lord's mission is to qualify to be the bridegroom, but more than anything he has to meet the criteria to become a True Parent. To do so, he and his bride have to be acknowledged as the True Parents before heaven and earth and receive God's recognition as a true, filial son and a true, devoted daughter. The feast celebrating the emergence of the devoted son and daughter is called the Marriage Supper of the Lamb. (9-107, 1960.04.24)

19 All the past pioneers who have sought the truth will bestow on us the seal of victors when we digest the sorrow and agony of the ages. Then, before God and the True Parents, we have to stand up as true husband and wife, true children, true siblings, true people and the true nation in the true heaven and earth. Be aware that when you embrace this agonized heart and do not allow it to falter, you will remain as that nation's loyal citizens and virtuous people, and you will assume the position of devoted sons and daughters. (7-099, 1959.07.19)

20 God, rather than Satan, should have become the owner of this world. In that case, Adam and Eve as humanity's unfallen ancestors, as the True Parents, would have become the owners as well. Then their family, in which true sons and daughters would have dwelled, would have become the owner. The original ideal was that subsequently their tribe, their nation and their world would have become the owners. (108-021, 1980.06.13)

21 The term True Parents was unfamiliar to you. The distance between all of you and the True Parents is very great. There are many walls dividing individuals, families, tribes, peoples, nations, the world and the cosmos. The True Parents triumphed by surmounting these walls. Thus, in order for you to inherit the name of true parents, you must also surmount these walls. You can do so by first building a family bridge over the wall between individuals. Then you erect a tribal bridge over the wall between families, and go on to build bridges over the walls between tribes, peoples and nations and finally, at the world level. After you have finished building these bridges, you will be able to cross over all these walls at once and go straight to the top. These bridges will be stronger than stone and iron. (220-197, 1991.10.19)

22 Adam's family could not enter heaven. Therefore True Parents must come and gather all the families of the world. They have to open heaven's gates and enter with all people by perfecting Adam's family, Adam's tribe, people, nation, world and heaven and earth, according to the standard of the kingdom of heaven on earth and in heaven. A path must be opened so the world's people can transcend their nations and move in the same direction. The only viable path is where all families follow the True Parents. That is how each family can be resurrected. Entering heaven will then be possible through resurrection. Adam's kinsmen will be prepared exactly as if Adam had returned and received the Blessing. Adam, who became the false parent, will come again as the True Parent. When that happens, the cosmos will be organized with Adam and Eve as the True Parents at the center of the true tribe, people, nation and world. We cannot enter heaven before this is achieved, before the True Parents have entered first, followed by the children. Therefore we have to be engrafted as blood relatives of the True Parents, connected in a parent-child relationship to the True Parents. We need to become true children of the True Parents. That is what the blessed family is about. The present world is the way it is because the Fall occurred in Adam's family. So the result of turning it upside down is the blessed family. (277-221, 1996.04.18)

23 What will happen in the families that become one with the True Parents and receive the Blessing? What will happen when they enter the realm of ideal oneness

in a subject-object relationship with the True Parents? By following and inheriting True Parents' entire life course, the blessed family that becomes their object partner will be able to make the transition without paying indemnity. You will be able to stand as a true object partner in the realm of the True Parents, qualified to inherit their heart on the level of the family, the tribe, the people, the nation and the world. (263-204, 1994.10.04)

24 If I had not appeared as your teacher, it would have been impossible for all of you to unite. Unity cannot come about without the True Parents. The words True Parents should not be pronounced lightly, just to hear the sound. The world needs to learn the inside story of how far I have run and how high I have climbed to become the True Parent. True Parents are proclaimed now because all the conditions for them to become the True Parents have been fulfilled based on their recognition by God and all the pioneers and prophets in the spirit world. (493-201, 2005.04.24)

Section 3. A Life of Caring for Others

1 If I am the first generation, all of you who have received the Blessing are the second generation, with the responsibility to nurture your sons and daughters. They are the third generation, whom you have the responsibility in God's place to raise as His substantial object partners who can witness to the ideal of creation God had in mind when He created Adam and Eve. The True Parents are the substantial essence of the invisible God. You as their children are in the position of Adam and Eve. Through your blessed families, the family-level foundation will be created to reveal the children, siblings, couples and parents representing the heavenly nation in the perfected Garden of Eden. Please understand that we have a responsibility to become this type of family and move toward Heaven. (254-202, 1994.02.06)

The life of a father

2 I could have taken revenge on many people, but I have been patient and have restrained myself all this time because I know God. Even facing the worst kind of enemy, the kind one can never forgive, I bowed my head and walked in silence in order to uphold the authority of heavenly principles. I bowed my head even though I was treated contemptuously. I had no other choice but to go on in stony silence. Because in the beginning there was no church, I had to find each person one by one. That is why in the 1950s I hardly ate, barely slept and worked tirelessly. I started out by embracing each person with tears. On the personal level, I sought to

alleviate each person's pain, and on the family level, I sought to resolve our people's deep sorrow. (74-254, 1974.12.31)

3 No matter how much fallen people might dance and enjoy themselves, they cannot silence the sounds of anguish deep within their conscience because they have lost touch with their original, infinite value. We inevitably walk a thorny path because of this situation. This kind of anguish exists within all people, men and women alike, and can be resolved only through the cooperation of all people. When I make this connection and go before God, everything turns out well. The whole universe belongs to me. (125-255, 1983.03.27)

4 In my life, I have worked without rest. It has been like a dream. The situation of this tangible world, the world of history, and today's political society all prove my words correct. The Unification Church movement is a profound social phenomenon. We can be thankful to be standing here holding up the banner as we accomplish incredible things. You should feel honored and proud of that. You must have no regrets, even if you die a thousand times, over having been part of these achievements. In the name of God, as a soldier of righteousness and love, you should feel a burning passion welling up inside of you, knowing that, even if your body is destroyed in the process of opening the gates of heaven, it was all worth it. (149-180, 1986.11.21)

5 You know God because I taught you about Him. If I had not taught you, you would never have known Him. It is the Principle that an upright teacher must teach what he knows. The parents must teach the path of love, and the teacher must teach about social institutions. The families that learn these concepts then need to be accepted by other families in society. I also have to teach you how to be accepted by the families of the world. (431-151, 2004.01.14)

6 The providence of salvation was a history that unfolded through God's Word. Therefore humanity has struggled to find the words of truth. After finding the truth, you must pass through the stage of becoming a substantial being. People have long resented that they have been unable to come into their full being. Therefore our hope is that a central figure of substance will come to the earth. This is the idea of the Lord of the Second Advent. What will you do after receiving the grace of being able to substantiate truth? You can become God's heir only by first presenting yourself to Him in the position of a bride, then entering a relationship of husband and wife, and finally passing through the door of God's heart. Possessing the Word and having a body are not enough to make you an heir. In order to become God's sons and daughters you need to become substantial beings who have embodied

the Word, penetrated God's heart, and received certificates of acceptance from God, the great ruler of heaven and the entire world. (8-258, 1960.01.17)

7 Adam fell because he did not unite with God's Word. Therefore he could not become the perfected substantial being, which is the purpose of God's Word. He could not attain the standard of character and integrity required by God. Consequently, there was no one of perfected character who could connect to God's perfect love. God's Word exists for the purpose of creating a substantial being, but love cannot appear if the substantial being cannot reach perfection. We can find no path of harmony until we become perfected, substantial beings. (28-087, 1970.01.04)

8 The returning Lord of the Second Advent substantially embodies God's Word. Thus, up to the present, I have been laying the groundwork at the world level for the sake of God's Word. However, people's hearts must unite with the substantial being, otherwise they cannot stand before God. Christian history has been progressing according to this formula, up to the level of perfection. The person in the subject-partner position must embody the truth as taught by Christianity, being united in substance and heart. The Unification movement is based on that truth. (35-174, 1970.10.13)

The life of a mother

9 There are times when a mother has to go out, leaving her beloved children at home. From time to time she thinks of them, sensing that something has happened to one of them. A mother knows this, but since she cannot return right away, her child must overcome that difficulty alone. Children must surmount these obstacles by themselves. Once they overcome them, they will not stumble again. They must prevail over each obstacle one by one, as a growing bamboo tree forms each joint, one by one. If they cannot do this they will fall down again. Therefore God absolutely does not make a relationship—nor does He interfere—with a child while he or she moves from the individual-level victory to the family-level victory. The child must fight and overcome these things alone until the family level is reached. (28-133, 1970.01.04)

10 A parent's love stretches far beyond national boundaries. Say a mother's son has gone to America, while she lives in Korea. The love of this mother is not restricted by her nation's borders. Even though her body is in Korea, she sheds tears for her son in America. Her sweat and hard work is all for the sake of her son. This would

be impossible without love. Can a mother be forced to do this? Only a heart of love can compel her. (34-254, 1970.09.13)

11 When a son calls out, "Mother," his mother's heart melts. She is so overwhelmed that her very bones feel soft and warm. When mother and son grasp each other's hands, they exchange a power greater than anything in the world. Unity occurs through parents' noble sacrifice. Their love is not a humanistic love. To enable heavenly law and to ease the bitter pain of Heaven resulting from unfulfilled desire, human beings must voluntarily go the way of the cross and embrace all humankind with the love of a parent. The solution to the problem of unification lies on that path. (48-191, 1971.09.12)

12 All men come to surrender before their mothers. No matter how powerful a world leader may be, even if he is as fierce as a tiger, when he experiences his mother's love, he has to surrender. Everything surrenders before love. That is why a mother who raises many children naturally has a heart of goodness. (273-104, 1995.10.22)

13 A mother's loving heart knows no boundaries. A mother's heart of love is not rigid, but round and limitless. Her heart is connected to an infinite peace. That peacefulness and roundness are even more beautiful than the mother's face. To a son or daughter, the mother's face is more beautiful than any other. You need to connect to your mother's love every day, even if you do not like your mother, even if it means you will never go to the most beautiful woman in the neighborhood, or to your aunt's place, or even to your grandmother's home where three generations reside. (275-021, 1995.10.30)

The life of parents

14 The father must be strict, while the mother must embrace with love. If the father's love can be described as a vertical love, then the mother's love is a horizontal love. The children who are born within the harmony of the vertical and horizontal love will come to say, "I am so happy. I wouldn't trade my father for anyone, not even for the president, not even for God." This is because they have come to know both the subjective, vertical, fatherly love and the horizontal, motherly love. In this case, absolutely no one would ever want to change their vertical father and their horizontal mother. (176-248, 1988.05.11)

15 Who can harvest true love? The couple can. True love needs to be harvested and placed in Heaven's storehouse. You are all hauling your sons and daughters with true love, as if you were a freight train. You can transport your children if the

mothers become like the tracks and the fathers like the boxcars. Mothers and fathers also need to become like instruction manuals and textbooks on the path toward a world of true love. (119-288, 1982.09.13)

16 I was born because my father gave me bones and my mother gave me flesh. There is no concept of "I" in such giving. There is only love, life and lineage. Within me is my parents' love, my parents' life and my parents' lineage. Therefore even if your parents want to cut you off, you cannot be severed from them. (297-164, 1998.11.19)

Section 4. A Life of Inheritance

1 You cannot become sons and daughters of God, the great ruler and owner of heaven and earth, or receive His inheritance simply by attending Him. You too will become a ruler and owner of heaven and earth when you receive the Blessing and inherit the lineage of the Parents of Heaven and Earth, who truly attend God. Then you will flourish and grow through being fruitful and multiplying. By fulfilling the positions of true owner and true parents who can rule heaven and earth, you make an internal connection with those who have attained the position of the True Parents. However, you cannot become an owner until you first become a child who fulfills the moral duties of developing the heavenly parental heart and inheriting the heavenly lineage. (12-317, 1963.08.11)

A life lived only for God's Will

2 In any family, what child would not want to live with and attend his or her mother and father? What parents would not want to fall asleep embracing their beloved child? Who would not want to invite God into such a family? I would certainly want to do that. However, that cannot happen until the Will of God is more firmly settled. Thus we have been walking a path of misery. I did not set out on that path for my sake but to establish the moral laws and traditions of the family. I did not mind that I was bloodied and bruised in taking on this responsibility, or that my face became gaunt, or that I suffered terribly and was spit on by others. My main problem was how to establish the right traditions on this earth before I died. I had to do just this one thing. It didn't matter that I would face violent storms time and time again; it didn't matter that I might be as pitiful as a beggar; it didn't matter that I would be imprisoned and branded a traitor. These were not my most serious problems. Up until the present, it has been my whole life's purpose to do only one thing: to leave behind the unchanging traditions of Heaven. (24-102, 1969.07.13)

3 We are united on the road to unification. Therefore it stands to reason that we follow a common path of blood, sweat and tears. When you learn of God's tragic situation, it should make your blood boil. Upon knowing God's sadness, you should naturally shed tears. Even if I face disappointment after investing all my flesh and blood, I will still do anything to alleviate God's pain. I will do anything for the sake of the Will, even if it means that thousands of my disciples have to lead a sacrificial life. That being said, it does not mean I do not love all of you. It is because I love you that, through the Unification Church, I ask you to advance, shedding your blood, sweat and tears, first as a servant, then as an adopted child, and finally as a child of the direct lineage. To be a child of the direct lineage you have to become a person who does not mind facing death, because then you will be able to walk the path of the cross. Just as God called our ancestors to take on the mission of restoration through indemnity, the substantial True Parents today have the mission to pioneer the world indemnity course by calling upon their beloved children. Therefore this work must continue until one people in one nation is completely resurrected. (14-245, 1965.01.01)

4 The essence of the universe is that humankind is one family. Nestled in this web of love, people must discover the love that exists for the sake of the family, not just the individual. They must also find a love that exists for the sake of the tribe, the people, the nation, and the world. This is the path of love and the path of God's Will. A patriot's duty is to move forward, willing to ignore himself, his family and his tribe for the sake of the nation. A filial son chooses to follow his parents' will, even if he has to put aside his own needs and those of his wife and children. The duty of a devoted son requires this. For this reason, the path of God's Will is the path of love, the path of loving greater things first, rather than individual things. (18-022, 1967.05.14)

5 We are now close to being able to return to God's bosom, so each of us should consider what we should do. We do not follow God's Will in order to receive blessings or obtain our own salvation. In following the Will of God, our families are needed to contribute to humankind, and our tribe is needed to contribute to the people, the nation and the world. You must be able to live like this. (32-109, 1970.06.28)

6 What is the path of Unification Church members? We need those who can stand up and fight to defend their country. But the bigger question is how can "I" stand in the place of Jesus? In the course of history, Jesus Christ, who was sent as God's son, could not fully achieve his goal, even though he attained unity with God. Therefore each of us must once again construct and lay this foundation. God's Will cannot

advance unless we, among our first generation, prepare the foundation to connect to and substantially fulfill what Jesus could not accomplish. (038-016, 1971.01.01)

7 We ourselves must go forward as historically resurrected beings. We are not meant to just live into our seventies and eighties for our own sake. God's providential hope is for us to live and develop according to His Will throughout the course of our eternal lives. Therefore we must live according to that Will. It is important to learn how to expand the stage of our life, through our own personalities, so we can proudly say, "My life's purpose is to reveal God's Will. I am living for the sake of God's Will, and this purpose will guide my daily life, inspire my worldview and direct my entire existence." (043-042, 1971.04.18)

8 Even in reading one page of a book, if one reads that one page in serious contemplation, thinking that the Will of God's providence can be revealed through it, he or she will be prepared to act in accord with God's desire. God can use that kind of person. (59-214, 1972.07.16)

9 God's first wish is, "Please relieve my sadness." His second is, "Please relieve my pain." Who will grant God's wishes? God cannot do it by Himself. Even if God wanted to relieve His own pain, He could not. Because we are the source of His pain, there is no other way but for us to alleviate it. We must determine to sacrifice ourselves a thousand times over for the sake of God's people. God could not tell us this deep truth, but Jesus told his disciples, "If any want to become my followers, let them deny themselves and take up their cross and follow me. For those who want to save their life will lose it, and those who lose their life for my sake will find it." (Matt. 16:24-25) Now Jesus' paradoxical words make sense. (066-020, 1973.03.11)

10 All kinds of stories and situations may arise on your path of faith. Some of you may feel you even have to sell your own blood to afford to go witnessing. If you do not have money for travel, you may convince yourself that the distance you need to go is short, and so you decide to walk, climbing at great risk over steep mountains and fields, all the while contemplating God's Will with an unchanging heart. My hope is that even if you collapse you will have no resentment. Please do not hold resentment, even if you fail and end up sacrificing much. How could there be no arrows flying toward you, when you are like soldiers marching forward to build Heaven, holding up the torch? How could the enemy not assail you? This might happen. However, my heart, and the heart of God, do not beat for you alone, but for all people and the world. Therefore once you accept God's Will, walk your path

with joy, even if it might be a path of death. Unification soldiers need to take this kind of path. (154-278, 1964.10.03)

11 Now you know God's Will; therefore you cannot retreat on the road you are traveling. In order to become a patriot and a filial son or daughter of Heaven, you must march on, even before Heaven moves. Now that you know this path of restoration, you have to say, "I regret that, even though I walked the individual path of the cross, I did not know the Will. I am sorrowful that even though I walked the path of the cross for the family, tribe and, people, I did not know the Will. Now that I know, I will take on the national path of the cross." (156-062, 1965.12.07)

12 For those who embrace God's Will, the more miserable a person's path, the more valuable it is. My whole life has been like this. When I reflect upon what I have, I think to myself that I have nothing. I will leave behind everything for posterity when I depart this life. I am doing everything for the sake of future generations. When I pass on I want to leave behind love for the sake of the Unificationist community, and for all people and the world. I do not spend time thinking about leaving behind what I love and what my own children love. (215-044, 1991.02.06)

Living for the sake of God's glory

13 Indemnity can be paid only when you ask God what kind of condition you need to make. Furthermore, making an offering simply because God told you to is not all that a condition entails; you need to voluntarily make an additional offering. The offering God requires is to indemnify something, but the offering you make on your own initiative becomes a condition for you to receive glory. (16-319, 1966.07.31)

14 Sons and daughters of Heaven are ostracized by the world. You all live in enemy territory; you are people who have appeared as leaders in order to destroy Satan's expansion. Therefore you will receive persecution on the family level when you approach your family, and you will receive persecution from society if you go out into society. Jesus, God and all those who died for Heaven were treated this way. Thus a historical hurdle of sorrow lies before you as well. After overcoming these obstacles, you are ready to attend Jesus. Therefore Jesus comes and finds those people who are in the same position as he was and befriends them. (007-331, 1959.10.18)

15 I cannot ask you followers of the Unification Church to walk forward slowly. You need to move quickly and boldly. How glorious this is! With such an attitude you can receive what Heaven sends you and establish a secure foundation for victory.

You must create a region and a world that God will remember forever. You need to create a world where not only you but also your descendants can say to the Father, "May You receive glory for all eternity." The hand that does this work is not only your hand but represents millions of others. You should feel that your hand represents all humanity. You need to realize and believe that your hand will be commemorated by your descendants and that your ancestors can proudly declare it to be the hand of God. (11-330, 1962.04.13)

16 Do you think that just because God gave me one hundred commands, He only expects me to accomplish that much? Would He compliment me after I finished my assignments, saying, "Yes, yes, good." When you do even more than expected, your value grows. When God gives you a direction, can even one of you offer your life to fulfill it? Doing your best means that when God entrusts you with one hundred commands you accomplish even more than that. When you do this, it is a truly glorious thing and God can be proud of you. If you accomplish only 100 percent of what was asked of you, well, anyone can do that. (31-322, 1970.06.07)

17 We have nothing to be proud of. After a battle, you can be proud of yourself only if you were victorious. If you are proud of yourself without achieving victories, Satan will accuse you. You need to fight in place of the invisible God, inheriting the unfinished work of the substantial True Parents, and say, "Father, may all glory be unto You." (11-288, 1962.01.03)

18 You should keep God's original Garden of Eden in your heart, and sing of Heaven's life, love and glory as you go about your daily life. Furthermore, you should inspire others to live this way. In other words, you should represent God, the Creator, and take up His work of recreation. In addition, you need to be loyal to God and offer your time on earth representing all creation. You need to be able to honor the original ideal and to love not only in a favorable environment but also in a challenging one. By doing this, you will become sons and daughters who embody the ideal of creation, and you will live with God forever, in both joy and sorrow, within His realm of eternal love and glory. (2-253, 1957.06.09)

BOOK 9 HOME CHURCH AND THE TRIBAL MESSIAH

Chapter 1. Home Church

Section 1 The Providential Significance of Home Church ... 913

- Section 2. The Purpose of Home Church ... 920
- Section 3. The Completion of Home Church ... 926
- Section 4. Hoondokhae and Home Church Activities ... 934

Chapter 2. The Tribal Messiah

- Section 1. The Declaration of Tribal Messiahship ... 942
- Section 2. The Responsibility of the Tribal Messiah ... 953
- Section 3. The Role of the Tribal Messiah ... 958
- Section 4. The Return to the Hometown ... 968

Chapter 3. The Mission of a Church Leader

- Section 1. The Mission and Responsibility of a Church Leader ... 976
- Section 2. Public Life of a Church Leader ... 981
- Section 3. A Church Leader's Devotional Life ... 992
- Section 4. Giving Sermons that Move Hearts ... 1001
- Section 5. Witnessing and Pastoral Care ... 1013
- Section 6. The Providence of Cain and Abel ... 1019

BOOK 9 HOME CHURCH AND THE TRIBAL MESSIAH

CHAPTER 1

Home Church

Section 1. The Providential Significance of Home Church

1 Home Church symbolizes Adam's family in the original garden of Eden, a family that did not fall but became one in total love, with God as the center. When Home Church starts this way and develops into a tribal-level Home Church and then a national-level Home Church, it can lead to one unified world having the ideal form of a global family. I teach this based on the Principle viewpoint. You ought to understand the importance of what the Unification Church has done in presenting Home Church and establishing it before God, humanity and the entire cosmos. It is the very path that Adam and Eve would have taken had they not fallen at the outset, but had instead centered on God throughout their lives, lived on earth in the midst of His love, given birth to sons and daughters and then entered the spirit world. It is also the path their children and their children's children would have followed. Adam and Eve and their entire lineage with all their descendants would have naturally entered the kingdom of heaven. (102-230,19790101)

What is Home Church?

2 Until now, you may have thought that Home Church is just an institution of the Unification Church, but that is not so. Home Church in the Unification Church is your personal heavenly kingdom. It is your kingdom, not anyone else's, but yours. After Jesus gave Peter the keys to the kingdom of heaven, where did he go? He went the way of the cross. The keys to the kingdom of heaven are the Home Church movement. In other words we must establish tribes, and it is our mission through Home Church to present a model of the tribal system. Jesus said, "Whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven." (Matt. 18:18) If we don't bind Home Church—if we don't make it happen—we cannot go to the kingdom of heaven.(110-265,19810101)

3 I am giving Unification Church members the keys to the kingdom of heaven. Am I going to the cross to die? No. I am going to a higher place, with hope. Jesus left the earth and did not return for two thousand years. After I die I shall be able to come and go any time as freely as I want. When I return, I will not go to the Unification Church but to your Home Church. Home Church is the place where God can reside, where your parents can reside, where your sons and daughters can reside and where your relatives can reside. The institutional church is merely like an office that serves the families in society.(110-266,19810101)

4 As a result of the Fall in the garden of Eden, there was struggle between Cain, who was born the older brother, and Abel, the younger brother. The resentment between them became bitter. We must resolve it; otherwise there is no way for us to find the Parents. For this purpose, God has walked a winding path with ups and downs throughout history. Amid this providence, what the Unification Church offers is Home Church. What is the garden of Eden? It is a Home Church where there is no struggle between Cain and Abel, between the older brother and the younger brother. This makes for one-ness with their parents and oneness between God and the archangel. Thereby everything is unified. It is to make this kind of environment that I, the Teacher of the Unification Church, came forth. I am trying to eliminate the boundary line between the angelic world and Heaven, and between the human world and the angelic world, and to tear down the wall the enemy placed between Cain and Abel. All this is to straighten out what went wrong. Based on this providence in this historical age, when national borders and social systems are being removed, once all become one through Home Church, everything will be restored.(105-338,19791028)

5 If there is one day God will remember, it will be the day we are born anew to live eternally as His friends and His sons and daughters, and are able to receive His love. This will be the day we can participate in the ideal world of love, and it is the day

God will remember as His best day. The Unification Church places importance on the matter of love, because human beings have to create the gateway of love through which they can go to the spirit world after living on earth with a physical body. We place great importance on the family. We need that kind of family. We should seek the ideal family, and that ideal is the fulfillment of God's Will. It is a human being's greatest purpose. Therefore we must go forward on this path. God has desired to see the coming of this age. He has been leading the providence through religion in order to bind together all men and women as His sons and daughters in the same place and at the same time. Home Church was established in order to combine all the previous works of God's providence and erect the foundation for ideal families.(116-180,19820101)

6 The purpose of the Home Church movement is to have you emerge as true men and women. It is to elevate you to a position victorious over the fallen realm. This is an unprecedented one-time event. It has never occurred in any religion or at any previous period in history, and it will not be repeated in the future. Therefore you must overcome any and all obstacles in your Home Church area, to the point that those who had opposed you give you their blessing and endorse you with signed certificates, stating, "This person is a good person, truly a person of God." Once you erect that victorious foundation, then when you embark upon your journey to the next world, you will be able to pass easily through all the gates to the kingdom of heaven and come before God. Wherever your Home Church is, there is the kingdom of heaven. The Unification Church is carrying this historical responsibility to prepare this path for your victory. Think about the fact that such a path has appeared amid the present-day world, which is like a barren desert or hell. Without a doubt this path is the path to life, the path to the bright light, and the path of hope. On this path we can meet God, on this path we can meet the Messiah, and on this path we can meet the True Parents. Moreover, on this path Cain and Abel can meet and become one, and on this path all the enemies who were lost, all tribes that were lost, and all humanity that was lost can be recovered.(104-263,19790527)

7 With the arrival of this age, you can do the work in place of the Parents. When you are working in my place, what you need to do is copy what I have done. I did things on the world stage, but you do not need to travel around the entire world. Instead, the place you should do the work is like an altar that contains in condensed form all the things I have connected while traveling the world. All the people of the world are condensed there; it is the world on a smaller scale. Because you need an indemnity condition to model my worldwide activities, Home Church was instituted.(115-083,1981 1104)

8 Home Church enables us to move from the position of the second son to inherit the right of the first son and return to our hometown. It is the foundation by which we can find and compensate for the failures that took place around Jesus. You need to become the people who can accomplish what Jesus came to do. By establishing these conditions, you will become Jesus' sons and daughters, and by this you will become sons and daughters of God.(101-330,197811 12)

9 When God comes to visit your village, your home should be a place where He can freely teach and instruct about anything in the presence of your father and mother. This is how you should be serving and attending God with your utmost sincerity. You are not simply attending the king or the ruler of your nation; you are attending the One, the Lord who governs heaven and earth. Attending Him should be everyone's ultimate wish. There is no one greater whom we could ever desire to attend, even in our dreams. Then, with gratitude for the fact that you are living in the era when you can actually receive Him and attend Him face to face, you should be able to suggest to your neighbors that they decorate and prepare their houses with cries of "Let's attend God!" The mothers, fathers, sisters, brothers, relatives and all their neighbors should be willing to overcome their tendency to distrust, surmount all the waves of death, and say, "Let's make our neighborhood a place where we can live with God eternally!" We need such a movement, and therefore the endeavor called Home Church has emerged in the Unification Church at this time. Up to this point, religions have focused on the goal of individual salvation, but the goal of the Unification Church is to save the tribes we establish in our communities. We're striving to save all tribes at the same time. The Home Church movement does not advocate the idea that, "I will go to heaven when I die," but rather, "We will receive a communal ticket so our tribe can all go to heaven while we are still alive."(101-262,19781101)

10 You should miss your parents and shed tears for them until you die. You cried when you were born, so while you live you should shed tears as well. You should cry for them with a heart of missing them, and you should shed tears of joy whenever you see them. You have to live such a life before you leave this world; only then can you enter the kingdom of heaven after you die. This is the Principle. However, because you could not do so, the True Parents have come in the present time and established the Home Church movement. Through it, they are giving you a chance to make the proper conditions to enable you to enter the kingdom of heaven. Thus Home Church is the starting point of the kingdom of heaven. The cosmos-centered way of thinking is the True Parents' way of thinking. To center on True Parents' thought means you need to bring your family and relatives to become part of the heavenly kingdom. That is what Home Church is for. You should stand as the center

of your Home Church, then of your family and then of your tribe—three stages. This is formation, growth and completion. Without tribes, a nation cannot be established. This is why we started using the term "tribal messiah" when we inaugurated the Home Church movement. Thus the Home Church movement is the beginning of the heavenly nation, namely, the kingdom of heaven. So when can you meet the Parents? Only when you go to your Home Church.(124-043,198301 16)

11 Cain and Abel must become one. John the Baptist in the older brother's position could not become one with Jesus in the younger brother's position. Because they could not become one, the foundation for the twelve tribes and the seventy disciples to go out to the world was lost. This must be indemnified. The twelve tribes represent the form of the family and the seventy disciples the form of the tribe. Therefore without Home Church, there would be no foundation to restore these numbers and no conditional foundation to go back and forth throughout the world. Therefore even if the Adam figure were to go out to the world, he would have to return. Home Church is the condition by which you can inherit and stand on the historical indemnity conditions I have established. Without it, you cannot enter the kingdom of heaven. I have worked by setting all the conditions up to the global level, and these are condensed into Home Church. It is an altar on which you can fulfill the reduced conditions and win my blessing. How much has God suffered? How much did I suffer and how much did Jesus suffer? Since the altar of victory that was formed as a result of all this effort and suffering will be transferred to you, you also will need to build an altar. Home Church is the vehicle for me to pass down my foundation to you and for you to receive it from me.(122-121,19821101)

12 Looking at the world based on the Principle, there are nations, rulers and peoples, which can be considered as three stages. You cannot have a relationship with me apart from these three stages. Thus when I am working for the world, you should work for a nation, or at least for a people-level endeavor. You need to do revival work that will lead to a supra-denominational movement. For this, you have to make special conditions for 360 homes, which represent 360 tribes. They also represent 360 degrees, symbolizing a perfect sphere. By the lunar calendar, one year is approximately 360 days. Since the providence of restoration is accomplished on the earth, the lunar calendar must be used. The lunar calendar should be the central one. Even if you say, "Based on True Father's victory, I have inherited all the content of restoration through indemnity and the realm of completion for the portion of responsibility," did you really inherit this content? Can you do so simply because you know me? This can happen only after you meet all the required conditions to inherit everything I have accomplished, and declare, "I will inherit

Father's foundation by doing this." And the "this" that you need to do is Home Church.(148-175,19861008)

13 If you fulfill your Home Church mission, you will be liberated from all your burdens. Leading your tribe of 360 families, you will live your life in the kingdom of heaven on earth. This kind of phenomenon will happen. The Unification Church in the past used to focus on individual salvation. The fact that now we have come to live in a world where we are allowed to work for tribal-level salvation through Home Church is astonishing progress. No one, neither you nor me, can go to the kingdom of heaven without fulfilling this mission. It is a duty assigned to all of us in this fallen world. Now you know how God's kingdom can be established. We are living in an incredible age, one in which we can declare the completion era of the providence in which everything fits perfectly from the logical viewpoint of the Principle. This is why I am urging you all to go out to your own Home Church area with the qualification of messiah, with which I have commissioned you. There, at your Home Church, you must eat, sleep, live and become victorious. If you are not victorious there, you cannot go to the kingdom of heaven.(101-341,197811 12)

The Inheritance of True Parents' realm of victory

14 If there is a treasure I am bequeathing to the Unification Church, it is Home Church. After going the way of sacrifice throughout my life, what I am leaving behind for you is the treasure of Home Church. Again, what is the treasure I am leaving behind for the members of the Unification Church? I am giving you the opportunity to proudly inherit the authority of the Unification Church from heaven and earth, from God and Satan; that is the treasure of Home Church. When Home Church is completed, the name "Unification Church" will disappear. God's providence may remain in the realm where Home Church is not yet completed. But in the realm where Home Church is fulfilled, there will be no need for religion or God's providence, for it is where the citizens of heaven will live. What are the 360 homes for? They are to bring all humanity equally to the ideal. In your Home Church area, you should gather people of twelve neighboring communities or at least of twelve nationalities.(108-334,19801019)

15 Our church has not yet established a heavenly foundation on the world level. Therefore I must organize Home Church to place my stamp of victory on the world. That is, at the end of forty years, I will have set all the conditions of restitution needed to completely establish the authority to determine ownership centering on the love of God. Thereupon, when Satan and God testify to my victory and publicly announce, "You are victorious," then the Parents can bequeath to you the right to

determine your ownership of the victory of love. The reason you can inherit it is because we have the title of the True Parents; otherwise you would not be able to inherit it. In order for you to inherit it from True Parents, you should not have any traces of Satan's world or any disposition of a wild olive tree.(137-301,19860103)

16 The most important thing is the relationship between God and human beings. The next is the Cain-Abel relationship. Why is Home Church necessary? It is because through it the first and second sons can be restored. Change of lineage naturally occurs when you receive the Blessing. I have done all this for you, who are on the Cain side. You can inherit it because the child's relationship with the Parent is established. The place where you inherit is your Home Church. You should pray constantly. If you keep a prayerful heart twenty-four hours a day, with a desire to realize the Will for everyone, and then you strive to actualize that desire, you'll reach God, because your life itself will have become a prayer. If that happens, you can live together with me and with God. God will then directly intervene, since you will enter the realm of direct dominion. This is the way the Principle is. Thus if you do Home Church activity, you can meet God. After doing so, knowing that God is a living God, you must have experience of actualizing His Will.(161-154,197701 18)

17 I have gone through the indemnity course for the individual, family, tribe, people, nation and world, and now I am connecting it to Korea. I unified them with the bond of love, and now, through love, I am bequeathing them to you. They are for you to inherit, because love is one. In a relationship of love, both participants have the same value. Even a woman from the countryside, if she marries the president of a nation, will from that day on be the first lady. Right away she will rise to a rank equal to that of the president. Therefore you of the Unification Church must become completely one with True Parents. Your heart of love must be in the forefront. Because I am the True Parent, I must now connect you with the standard that is higher than the completion level of the growth stage, the standard of direct dominion, the place you were originally unable to go. The foundation you need to make, as the condition for me to connect you with that standard, is Home Church.(137-111,19851224)

18 Your family must complete its responsibility. By doing your five percent, you will complete the responsibility of one hundred percent. By fulfilling the five percent human portion of responsibility, you will fulfill all the responsibility that God requires. By doing Home Church, you will be reckoned as having completed what I have been doing my whole life. That is your responsibility. You must be grateful for the fact that I indemnified the portions of responsibility for the nation, the world and even the cosmos, and then gave you the blessing to be able to inherit and

stand on that indemnity by paying indemnity on the family level. To repeat, I myself mobilized the nation, world and even the spirit world in order to finish all the restoration through indemnity. Thus if you just do restoration through indemnity at the family level, I will bequeath all that to you. Only the five percent family responsibility remains.(119-153,19820711)

19 Where is the kingdom of heaven? We can conclude, "It is in my heart and in me." Yet, after having heaven in your heart, you need to have the heaven of the body. Only after having the heaven of the body can you actualize heaven in your family, which is your own Home Church. In that heaven, Satan cannot accuse you; he cannot even live there. It is a place where Satan's activities are not permitted. Hence unless you can become a person who can say heaven is in your heart and body, you cannot establish a heavenly environment. Your Home Church refers to a heaven that includes the environment. What kind of base does your Home Church make? Your Home Church provides a base for you to receive the approval of Heaven. Once you set up that environment in your Home Church, it connects you to the nation and the world.(110-258,19810101)

Section 2. The Purpose of Home Church

1 Until now each individual has sought his or her own salvation through religion. This means that the main focus of religion has been the salvation of individuals. However, we are not seeking individual salvation by itself. Each of us is striving to save our entire tribe all at once. Thanks to you, your whole tribe can receive salvation. Nothing like this has ever occurred in the history of religions or in the history of humankind. What we are beginning to do is unprecedented. The age has arrived when we and our whole tribe can thrive together and when all can receive the foundation of salvation.(102-217,19781231)

2 After Jesus died and ascended into heaven, he gave Peter the keys to the kingdom of heaven. However, I am giving you the keys to the kingdom of heaven while I am still alive. I am not giving them to you so you can be saved as an individual. I am giving them to you so you can save your entire tribe. You are to become the messiah of your Home Church. I am not speaking empty words. Whatever you sow on earth you will reap in the spirit world. Who among you will unearth the greatest number of diamonds from the diamond mine of the universe? It depends on how much effort you make. We Unification Church members are mining the diamond mine of the universe. We are doing it through Home Church.(102-218,19781231)

The basic condition is to restore 360 families

3 If you want to receive the Blessing, you have to restore all things and then restore children. Then, in that world that you restored, you have to restore your spouse. This is because everything was lost due to the Fall. We lost siblings and parents. To recover the parents, you need to build a foundation at some point in time to stand in the position of a parent. As you recover the parents, you must also recover the angelic world and Satan's world, and you must seek out and find God. Here at your 360 homes is where all this is decided. They constitute your family-level heavenly kingdom. If every one of those 360 homes is able to attend you as a messiah, and you establish the foundation that those families attend you as true parents, and then you offer them in front of God, it signifies you will have inherited the position that is victorious over all Satan's bases and his opposition throughout the whole world.(099-262,19780925)

4 Wherever you go in the world, you need to pursue activities in a Home Church area of 360 homes. The people there will become your own clan. If you do not liberate a clan, you will not have your own clan foundation. From now on, you can establish the domain of heavenly nations wherever you go in the world. Regardless of national boundaries, if wherever you go you just pursue Home Church activity, you will establish in that place the foundation for the kingdom of heaven on earth. Then that place will turn into a world that does not need the Second Advent. It will be transformed into a land where the Messiah isn't needed. That clan will be saved when attending you as its head and parent. The leader of that Home Church connects three generations. The first Adam in his day failed to connect the three generations of God, Adam and Adam's children. However, the age has come when you, in your generation, can connect your mother, your father and your sons and daughters to God through the tribal messiah, the substantial representative of God in the age of equalization.(105-159,19791014)

5 The day I allotted 360 homes to each of you was a day of hope in history; it signifies the final destination of religion and the final goal of God's providence. It is the starting point for the complete destruction of the base that Satan has established in this world. If I had not been able to declare Home Church, the world would be destined to a dismal fate. Thus the fact that you can work for Home Church is a limitless blessing. In the course of history there have been numerous kings, fabulously rich people, scholars and celebrities. Yet their renown is of little significance. You must think, "Although I am lowly and unknown, what an amazing blessing I have received! This is all because True Father gave me a chance to pursue Home Church during my lifetime." Thus you ought to love your Home Church more than you love your education and your school. You ought to love it more than fame, more than the people you love, more than your own sons and daughters. This has

to be an inescapable, fundamental rule if we are to erase the history of Cain's world. If we cannot restore Cain, we cannot enter the heavenly kingdom.(109-204,19801101)

6 You should take your 360 homes as the arena of indemnity representing the world. Why is it 360 homes? All the principled numbers are included in 360. The period of one year is included, the number twelve is included, and 120 is included three times over; they are all included in the number 360. The numbers three, four and twelve, which signify significant time periods in the course of history, are included as well. In addition, 360 degrees encompasses the three-dimensional world. Three hundred sixty is a number that combines the four seasons and the twelve months. Three hundred sixty families also represent the 120 countries of the world times three. It describes the three ages: the Old Testament Age, the New Testament Age and the Completed Testament Age. The number 360 contains all this. Therefore you need to make a life and death commitment to your 360 homes. I have worked hard throughout my life to establish a world-level foundation, but as for you, you must now unify your 360 homes.(099-258,19780925)

7 If you fulfill your Home Church activities focusing on 360 homes, you can solve any problem. Three hundred sixty homes represent, from the perspective of nations, 120 formation-stage nations, 120 growth-stage nations and 120 completion-stage nations. Because of this, it is the number of families that can represent the entirety of Satan's world. Therefore, if you establish a foundation of 360 families who welcome you wholeheartedly, you can travel freely anywhere in the spirit world without being accused by Satan's world. You will be able to enter the kingdom of heaven in a flash, through any of its gates, north, south, east or west, and travel in an instant through the entire range of 360 degrees. When your entire tribe of 360 families centers on you as their mother and father, you will be able to bring them, either through the north gate, the south gate, the east gate or the west gate, into the kingdom in the spirit world.(112-194,19810412)

8 The Unification Church should do Home Church activities to unify the Cain tribe. If we do not unify the Cain tribe and then establish the domain of the Abel tribe, there will be no tribal-level foundation for us to attend the Parents. There will be no tribal-level heavenly kingdom. Once we make this tribal-level foundation, we can connect it to the people-level foundation. After we establish the people-level foundation, we can move toward the national-level foundation.(137-180,19860101)

Home Church is the foundation to bring the world together

9 The path of restoration through indemnity I have been walking is not for my own sake as an individual, but is the path representing all the men of the world. It is also the path of the husband, representing their wives and all the families of the world. Additionally, it is the path representing all the parents of the world. Thus it represents the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world and spirit world. I will continue on this path, fixed on love, until I have planted the flag of God's liberation. People who join the Unification Church in the future should not have to walk the same agonizing course I had to go. Based on my victories, they will only have to go through a condensation of my course and will not have to suffer as I did. That is God's desire. I have gone through my suffering course, thinking, "Wouldn't it be good if through the suffering I had as my heartbreaking destiny, I could minimize the suffering of all humankind, helping them prevail through a reduced image of my course, all at once, in one place, representing the world?" This is God's desire, my desire and also your desire. That standard of hope is the destination of the providence and our lifelong goal. This is the origin of Home Church.(108-332,19801019)

10 In your Home Church area, you need to teach by example. I am telling you that when you become a good example, you demonstrate everything by your example. Home Church activities establish God's sovereignty and create His citizens and His territory. Hence you should become a person who can bring results based on love. You ought to win over others by teaching, demonstrating and loving. If you do not have the ability to teach, it will not work. Moreover, you need to take action. Yet to become a person who can really bring results, you need to do everything with love. Then you can become a person under God's care.(118-124,19820509)

11 Christian churches need to put up the Home Church sign. The Presbyterian Church will call itself the Presbyterian Home Church, and Barrytown will be the Barrytown Home Church. I am not telling churches to change their denomination, only to add the words "Home Church." They can call themselves Jesus' Home Church, the Christian Home Church, the Presbyterian Home Church, the Methodist Home Church or the Holiness Home Church. If they do so, then one by one, whether they are from the Methodist Church or any other, people will naturally cease paying attention to their denominational background. Whether they are from the Christian Church, the Church of Christ, the Catholic Church or the Presbyterian Church, we will bring them into oneness.(372-132,20020311)

12 I have established the tradition of the unified realm of the Adam nation, the Eve nation, the Abel nation and the Cain nation. You too should have the standard of establishing this kind of tradition in your family; otherwise there will be no way for

you to connect to my teachings and build the heavenly kingdom throughout the world. I have been opposed by the world, yet from that position I entered the Cain realm of Satan's world, a nation that was historically an enemy nation, and I loved that country more than its own patriots. By doing this, I created oneness with its people and established an indemnity condition by which I went beyond the world's standard of love demonstrated in history. I did not do it by ordering people around. I did it with love. Because I established this foundation by connecting to the people with love, I could climb over the summit of Danbury prison. Now the time has come for nations throughout the world to welcome me. You also need to reach the same realm of heart, since I reached it on the world level. Otherwise you will not be able to inherit the Parents' indemnity course from the family level to the tribal, people, national and world levels. The road for you to go to the kingdom of heaven will be blocked. I created Home Church to open that road.(141-215,19860222)

13 A person in the position of God's son cannot possibly live a comfortable life, even for one day. To hit the target, you cannot use a bent arrow. Don't you agree? Are you going the way of the Will while feeling something different from one season to the next through the four seasons? I have been walking this path thinking and feeling something new and fresh each day for 365 days a year. I have been speaking about the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification for several years. If you had done your Home Church activities, we would not have needed to go through the course of the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification. Everything would have been finished already. However, because you did not fulfill that, you need to focus on your relatives once again. Home Church is the way to set up your family-level foundation.(231-143,19920602)

14 We are specially chosen soldiers who have been mobilized to build the ideal homeland, the kingdom of heaven. Your spouse and your sons and daughters shouldn't forget they are specially selected troops representing God. God's homeland cannot be recovered by individuals. Our ideal homeland cannot be recovered by men alone. It can only be recovered by families. It is a homeland that cannot be recovered unless we fight as families. We must fight as families. If we don't, it is impossible to recover our original homeland. That is why I make my family members go through hardships wherever they go. My family is like a gypsy family driven from one country to another around the world, wandering back and forth. Hence the chief goal of your families has to be to find the homeland where you can settle.(119-112,19820704)

15 In the name of True Parents, I have been making indemnity conditions for all humankind to reach every level— the individual, family, tribe, people, nation,

world, cosmos and even God. I did all this representing you, and I gained victories. Based on my victories, you should be able to inherit my foundation one hundred percent and achieve your own victory during a seven-year course. Can you achieve all that I have achieved throughout my life on the world stage? No. That is why you need your own foothold and foundation on a smaller, condensed stage of the world. That is your Home Church. Where can you meet God? I could meet God in the places where I established a victorious foothold in the battleground of each nation where I shed blood and sweat. I could meet Him based on my worldwide foundation of indemnity. Even though you do not go to the world stage, you need to make a condition of going to the world so you can inherit the entire victory in True Parents' name.(109-184,19801101)

16 Home Church is designed for you to attend God in the family. In this worldwide transitional age, when your families attend God they will create an environment of freedom where indemnity is not needed. Then as soon as I return to you, you will be able to immediately organize activities based on your families and expand them throughout the whole nation. Home Church exists for the sake of the nation and the world. You must not focus only on yourself and your family, pushing church work aside.(234-161,19920810)

17 All blessed families should put up a Home Church sign at their home. Starting now, you need to teach constantly about this. You need to repeat this message in your churches. Should the pastor put up the Home Church sign himself? Or should the head of your country put it up for you? Speaking of the country, a country includes its particular traditional thought. Your family needs to base itself on that traditional thought, as it represents the individual, the family and the nation. Then your family will become an ideal family, standing in a position higher than families in Satan's world. I am talking about a family that will attend God in the kingdom of heaven. Here on the earth, each family must establish Home Church. It is the training ground to become the model for families that can attend God in the kingdom of heaven.(373-088,20020326)

18 We are now in the era of witnessing to families. With my family, an official center has emerged. Since now is the time when this center will be connected to you, we are entering the era of family witnessing. The center of a family is a woman, the mother. The mother must move forward while embracing two children. If sons and daughters become united centered on their mother, every-thing will be fulfilled. Then there will be no problem with the sons and daughters. Therefore families in secular society who have problems will come to you seeking answers. If they ask, "How do you solve this difficult problem?" you can answer, "You just have

to read this book," and give them a copy of the Divine Principle. Once they understand the contents, they will be able to solve their children's problems. If they borrow the book from you during a visit, and if they have any questions, they will ask you when they return. At that time you need to be prepared to teach them in detail.(239-286,19921206)

19 How do we build the kingdom of heaven on earth? We have been endowed with the right of inheritance enabling us to harmonize with all types of love in the heavenly kingdom through Home Church. Because of Home Church, we can become couples who belong to God based on His love, and our children and possessions will belong to God as well. When the whole world turns to the side of the Unification Church and joins it, Home Church will disappear. If all 360 households in your Home Church become Unification Church members and Korea and the whole world become part of the Unification Church, then what would be the purpose of Home Church? The 360 households together will have fulfilled the indemnity conditions for Home Church, and they will enter the kingdom of heaven. In the future, if any problem arises within the self-governing realm of Home Church, it will be a serious matter. Home Church is a system of shared responsibility. A Home Church has its own system of self-correction, and this establishes a sphere of protection that makes it impossible for the shadow of Satan to be around even for a moment. A Home Church is created by binding every relationship with the central current of love. This creates an expanding base of common ownership. Thus Home Church will expand to the people's church, the nation's church and then the world church. When all people of the nation become Unification Church believers, it becomes the national church. This is how the system will be structured.(137-302,19860103)

Section 3. The Completion of Home Church

1 Now is the time we must break down all the barriers in God's providence. What should you do from now on? I cannot bequeath to you everything I have accomplished without a condition. I cannot bequeath it to you for nothing. I tell you, you have to fulfill your five percent portion of responsibility. I have set conditions of indemnity in more than one hundred countries, and with the standard of heart I invested there, I have restored the connection between heaven and earth, which had been obstructed by a wall. Therefore, you also need to set indemnity conditions on a smaller scale that can represent the world. You yourself must establish here and now a foundation that can operate on its own, without the barriers that formerly obstructed heaven and earth. That foundation is Home Church.(105-271,19791026)

2 What is it that you Unification Church members should do? Although you cannot become world messiahs, you should at least become tribal messiahs. If you cannot become tribal messiahs, you should at least become John the Baptists. This is why I am raising the matter of Home Church. For fallen people to go to the kingdom of heaven, should they all have to suffer to the point of death, as I did, to restore the individual, family and tribe? Should they have to be persecuted all their lives and sacrifice themselves? Someone had to be the pioneer to pave that path, and it was I who did it. All you need to do is accomplish a course of indemnity by following the formula.(099-253,19780925)

The foundation for the kingdom of heaven on earth

3 As God loves me, He also loves all people, seeing them as His true descendants. God loves each person and wants to save everyone from the fallen world. We are meant to love humanity as God loves us. If we are people like that, we can receive God's greatest love. In the future there will be no persecution. From the day Satan's persecution ceases, doing all this will be easy. How much has Satan obstructed me as an individual? He has been persecuting me to prevent me from making progress. But although he persecuted me, I drove him away and went forward. How much he persecuted me on the family level! He greatly opposed me on the tribal level as well, but I prevailed over him. You must have pride in inheriting all the victories I gained through these struggles. Your responsibility is to pursue the course of uniting the world by doing what I have done. I paid substantial indemnity, but all you need to do is pay conditional indemnity. The conditional indemnity you need to pay is Home Church activity.(161-152,197701 18)

4 How much do the spirits in the spirit world look forward to descending to the earth? Conscientious spirits—the spirits of people who were good during their earthly life—are longing to come down to the earth. In order to descend, they must do so through their descendants. This is how the Home Church system will develop. On the Home Church base, spirits from more than 120 nations whose background is, for instance, economics, will be freely able to work with an economist in a Home Church area, and the same will be true of spirits working in the Home Churches of scholars in other areas of expertise. That is why we absolutely need Home Church.(162-112,19870330)

5 I pioneered the path of the Messiah on every level—the individual, family, tribe, nation, world and cosmos. I have already laid all the foundations on the levels of the individual, family, tribe and nation. While I was pioneering this path, Satan ruthlessly opposed my work. My life was one of facing continuous persecution,

which I had to fight and prevail over. After World War II, if England, the United States and France—the Eve nation, Abel nation and Cain nation respectively—had become one and united with me, I could have begun my work on the world level at that time. If I had gone beyond the national level and been able to focus on the world, nations would have automatically reorganized. Suppose my work had started that way after World War II and I had been welcomed without persecution on the levels of the individual, family, people, nation and world? Then, in the environment of a unified world, Home Church and tribal messiahship would have been established, and families would have been settled at that time revolving around God and True Parents. Suppose at that time a family had appeared, in which Cain and Abel were united around the Mother. Then a nation would have been established that would have joined together tribes and peoples, connecting them to the world.(244-284,19930301)

6 When we cross over into the new world, religion will disappear. Only Home Church will remain. Families will have True Parents at the center. It will be a unified world, an ideal world that arises like a single tree. By means of the bonds of love centered on the tradition of True Parents, the world is connected like one tree. The spirit world is like the invisible world of nerve impulses, and the visible world is like the world of blood vessels. When the two worlds of nerves and blood vessels are united harmoniously into a single organism, our minds and bodies, which were in conflict, can be united. By the same token, the earthly world and the spirit world must also be completely united.(145-151,19860501)

7 First of all, Home Church is the way for children to inherit the world-level indemnity course of True Parents, who paid the indemnity in order to resolve the failures of history. Second, Home Church is to indemnify the realm of the tribal messiah lost at the time of Jesus. Thereby it opens the way to the realm where we can be tribal messiahs and then go on to the national and world levels. You cannot go forward without indemnifying these two levels. To do so, you need to do Home Church activity. Without it, you cannot go to the kingdom of heaven. You have to shed blood and sweat for your Home Church. You have to shed tears and you have to experience mistreatment. Through these experiences you must come to know about the efforts that the True Parents have made. My hope is that, in the future, the persecution will cease and people will want to learn the Principle of the Unification Church. It is my desire not to leave behind a path of suffering for the children who follow me.(142-307,19860313)

8 The tribal-level messiahship at the time of Jesus was to make the indemnity conditions and lay the foundation to establish the authority of True Parents on the

national, world and cosmic levels. However, in this age we are attending True Parents, standing on the foundation of their indemnity conditions. The purpose of Home Church is to indemnify the failures in Jesus' course. However, in order to fulfill your five-percent portion of responsibility, now it is necessary to indemnify many things that went wrong before. How do you pay indemnity? It is by doing your Home Church activities. That is where you can work to set indemnity conditions on the level of the individual, family, tribe, people and nation.(116-281,19820102)

9 Even if we suffer throughout our lives, we cannot hold up our heads in front of Heaven. Rather, we Unification Church members should be ever grateful for living in the same age as the True Parents; we should shed tears of gratitude for having met them in our lifetime. Even as you live a sanctified life to recover your original selves, and even as you maintain your loyalty in every way possible, you should not forget you are the descendants of sinners who do not deserve to lift your heads in front of the Parents. This is why you needed to cooperate with the Parents on their course. Now that the Parents have completed their work, it is your turn to fulfill your responsibility and work hard for Home Church activities.(143-118,19860316)

10 Starting from Home Church leaders, if people continue witnessing from the first generation to the second and third generations, then one thousand, two thousand, many thousands of people will get involved in Home Church activities. As we do this we are entering the age of registration, and need to prepare a list. Yet we cannot draw it up any way we want. Those who did not do Home Church activities cannot be entered on the list. They cannot become part of the family tree of the heavenly kingdom. Even though they are blessed family members, they will be excluded from the list and their names will be removed from the registry. With this understanding, you must hurry to do everything Heaven mandates. If you go to the spirit world without having done Home Church activity, you will have to work at it in the spirit world for eternity. It will be a huge problem if you go to spirit world without having taken care of your Home Church on earth. There-fore, during this time, you do not have even a moment to think about what to eat, what to wear or where to sleep. Knowing what kind of miserable indemnity course will await you and what kind of path you will have to follow, you should indemnify everything during your lifetime.(143-119,19860316)

11 Your Home Church activities will begin at Gethsemane, from whence Jesus was taken to his trial, and one step further, on the peak of Golgotha. When Jesus died on Golgotha, there was hardly anyone who had compassion for him. Yet when you die, many people will have compassion for you. What a happy thing it will be to

meet death with such a foundation and in such circumstances. You have the freedom in your current earthly circumstances to assemble a group of people who, when you face death, will not run away from you as Peter did, but who instead will say, "I will die in your place." I think it is worth paying indemnity to establish this kind of historical tradition.(103-216,19790225)

12 You have entered the age when, through True Parents, you can be selected and installed as tribal messiahs. You are indemnifying the condition that Jesus tried to make to connect the families of Zechariah and Joseph based on Judaism. Jesus needed to set this indemnity condition, because only then could he have inaugurated the position of the Parent. Only then could he have gone beyond the nation and proceeded to the world. Although Jesus died without establishing this foundation, we can indemnify it by way of Home Church activity. Despite the opposition of Christianity, if you do Home Church you will make the condition to inherit its foundation right there in your tribe. Then you can connect that path to the people, the nation and the world.(124-072,19830123)

13 You are family-level messiahs who attend the True Parents, unlike Christians who have been waiting for the individual-level Messiah. For us, Home Church is the way to prepare our foundation to go out to the world. Through Home Church we will create a unified world where we attend the True Parents as the national-level and world-level Messiah. In this way we march forward toward the ideal kingdom of heaven. When Christians recognize their past failures on the tribal level, they can enter the kingdom of heaven through the new Unification Church and come to attend the world-level True Parents.(124-072,19830123)

14 You ought to understand what I mean when I say, "I worked to find you." Then you need to go to the people of your Home Church and do the same for them as I did for you. Only when you do so will God endorse you as a filial child and bring you to the kingdom of heaven. However, all of you just want to follow me. You think, "I don't like Home Church. I'll only go wherever True Father goes." You should not do this. Even if your father is the president of a nation, you cannot inherit his position unless you do something to acquire it, To become a president of your Country, you need to lay a foundation that will enable you to become one. Even if you were born as the nation's crown prince, to become its king you must learn all the protocols and etiquette that are required of a king. This is what you need to do. In the final course of history, if you obey these words of True Parents and make your own foundation, then God will give you His seal of approval and say, "You are my filial child" and send you to the heavenly kingdom. How amazing is the love of God! The foundation for this is Home Church. You also want to go the heavenly kingdom as

filial sons and daughters, don't you? However, there is no way to receive the seal of a filial son or daughter without going through Home Church. Heaven is where filial children enter. Even though you are a son, if you are a troublemaker you cannot enter. You can go to heaven only when you are recognized as a filial child, and Home Church exists for you to receive that seal.(122-125,19821101)

15 We cannot avoid the path of Home Church if we are to restore the foundation for tribal messiahship that was lost in Jesus' day and the national-level foundation that was lost by Christianity. To describe it in Unification Church terms, the Unification Church is in the position of Abel and Christianity is in that of Cain. It is necessary that we do Home Church on behalf of Cain's family, in order to connect the Cain church to the Abel church. Home Church is where we will accomplish what Jesus was unable to fulfill and what Christianity failed to do. Through Home Church, we can accomplish it and achieve unity. The Unification Church has to unite with the True Parents by doing Home Church. Only then can we enter the kingdom of heaven, the one unified world.(124-073,19830123)

16 Taking into account all my own agonizing history, I have set up the greatest single condition that people can fulfill before God and Satan. It is Home Church. Home Church is the place that can help you recover when you collapse, comfort you when you have difficulties, and provide you with the natural environment to help you accomplish the course of your portion of responsibility. You may be persecuted from time to time, but overall we have passed beyond the age of persecution. We began this work at the transition to the age when we can be welcomed. Thus if you are victorious, you can establish a foundation for all the ideals I want to realize and that God has desired to realize over the past six thousand years. You are now being engrafted onto me. Once you are engrafted, you should grow automatically. But where will you get the fertilizer you need to grow? You'll get it from all the places in your Home Church that oppose you. That fertilizer will help you grow into a big tree. You need fertilizer, but where can you get it? It comes from persecution. The persecution you receive decomposes and becomes fertilizer.(124-335,19830301)

17 We have to do Home Church activity. Yet it will be a problem if you do not clearly understand its purpose. It is needed because a course of restoration through indemnity still remains. The people of Israel had to follow Jacob's course, the nation of Israel had to follow Moses' course and Christians have had to follow Jesus' course. In the same way, since I am the Unification Church leader, the members of the Unification Church need to follow my course. However, following it is not easy, because we have been walking a forty-year course of re-indemnification. If

Christianity and the United States had accepted the Unification Church at the time of Korea's independence, we would not now need to do Home Church activity. A world-level nation would have been immediately organized at that time. However, because things did not go that way, we had to walk a forty-year course of re-indemnification. Since this is the path True Parents followed, the children had to go this way as well. Therefore, for the past forty years we have walked a course of restoration through indemnity for the individual level, a course of restoration through indemnity for the family level, and courses of restoration through indemnity for the tribe, the people and the nation. In order to restore through indemnity the individual level and each subsequent level, it was necessary to fight Satan and be victorious.(142-299,19860313)

18 It is no good if white people say, "I will visit only the white families, not the black families." You have to do the opposite. You have to do that for America to live and for the world to live. When Jesus was on earth, he died unable to inherit the kingship right of the first son. Therefore, it has been God's desire to bring that to the world level and recover it in the Last Days. Now this foundation will be laid based on Home Church. Then even if I am not here, this right will be automatically established.(102-193,19781224)

19 What is Home Church? On account of the history of persecution of the Unification Church, I acquired the right of inheritance as the champion in walking the course of indemnity. Once I prevailed on every level of indemnity in his-tory, setting the world record of indemnity as an individual, the world record of indemnity on the level of family and people, the world record of indemnity on the national level and the world record of indemnity on the cosmic level, thereupon I was given the signature of approval that I had brought total victory, and I was authorized to establish Home Church. Only in Home Church can we finally be free of all levels of indemnity conditions and settle down.(123-170,19830101)

20 In the Unification Church, Home Church is the means to pay world-level indemnity on a smaller, more condensed scale. You should develop your Home Church into a tribal church. In Korea, there are many different family names. If in your Home Church activity you connect people with the various family names, you can create your tribe, your people and even your nation. Because Home Church began with the Unification Church, this will lead to the appearance of the tribal-level church, the people-level church and the national-level church. Why should we do this Home Church activity? It is because we need to liberate Jesus from his bitter sorrow. Without liberating Jesus, I can-not bring you to the position to be married. To achieve Jesus' liberation, given the choice between Cain families and your Abel

family, we must first save the Cain families, and given the choice between Cain tribes and your Abel tribe, we must first save the Cain tribes.(142-084,19860301)

Offerings to establish a global foundation

21 Why do I say you should become tribal messiahs? It is because you need to dissolve the bitter sorrow of Jesus. You also need to dissolve my bitter sorrow. Further, you need to dissolve the bitter sorrow of Adam. What is Adam's bitter sorrow? It is that he couldn't have an ideal family. What is Jesus' bitter sorrow? It is that he couldn't have an ideal nation. And my bitter sorrow is that I cannot have an ideal world. Home Church is necessary to make indemnity conditions that fulfill the hope of Adam, the hope of Jesus and my hope. Home Church sets the conditions to perfect the family, the nation and the world. What I say is based on this principle.(114-255,1981 1020)

22 The time for me to lead the Unification Church has passed. Now is the time for horizontal expansion. Hence when each of you expands the family ideal to encompass your tribe, the world will naturally be restored by that much. The way to expand to the tribe is Home Church. This is my final decision; it is made and settled. From now on, you blessed families must become one while attending Mother and Father. When you have children, then the True Parents have to grant you, as parents, based on God's love, a decree for the right of ownership over material possessions. You need to receive it as individuals, you need to receive it as couples, and your children need to receive it as well. Just as in the Old Testament Age, the New Testament Age and the Completed Testament Age, conditions had to be set for you to receive God's love from True Parents as their representatives. According to the Principle, you can go to the kingdom of heaven only after True Parents grant you the right of ownership. Unless you inherit this right, there is no way for you to go to the kingdom of heaven.(137-287,19860103)

23 All of you have parents, children and belongings. Home Church is the place where all of them appear on a larger scale. Because Adam fell, he lost them all. We must recover them and offer them to God. We should recover what was lost and offer them all at one time to God through True Parents. We have to do this. Then once God owns all this and gives it to True Parents, since they are our Parents, we ought to inherit it from them. Only if you do this will you be entitled to possess your own house and claim your own world. The basis for this is Home Church. It is the place of offering. It is an altar on which you are to make the three offerings.(101-339,197811 12)

24 For the sake of proclaiming Home Church, I must make a movement to spiritually awaken the nation. We must be one step ahead of others. We should proceed from the national church to the world church to the cosmic church. What is a church? It is an institution for separating the people of God from Satan. There are different levels of this institution—the individual, the tribe, the people, the nation and the world. People are separated from Satan based on the level of the church. Even though you are not settled down, you are still here due to the merit of the age. I keep a rope attached to you, stimulating you and pulling you along. If it were not for this, Satan would have dragged all of you away. Home Church is where you can expand your foundation to the tribal level. It is where you as a tribal messiah expand your horizontal foundation by leading your tribe. From the bottom, I have prepared the tribal-level foundation, the people-level foundation, the national-level foundation and the world-level foundation.(244-288,19930301)

Section 4. Hoondokhae and Home Church Activities

1 The words I speak are not my own. They are the words Heaven speaks through me. Hence wherever or whenever you hear these words, your heart is stirred. That is what is different about them. I am not alone, because I speak at the point where the vertical and the horizontal meet, where the mind and body resonate with each other. When my body vibrates, my mind vibrates as well in order to unite with my body. When my heart is inspired, a corresponding change takes place in my body. Each exerts a force on the other. Hence it is not my own words that I speak. The Korean word hoondokhae contains a Chinese character that means, "to sell words." Thus if you keep them to yourself, you will find yourself in trouble. You need to give them out to people. If you store up goods and let them spoil, you will be punished. So if, rather than selling them, you give the words freely to others, the outcome will be even better than if you sell things for money. Therefore I am telling you to share these words with others. This is the original meaning of hoondokhae.(289-296,19980201)

Hoondok family church and the focus of our activity

2 The Chinese character hoon (訓) in hoondok is made up of eon (言) meaning "words" and cheon (川) meaning "stream." Water is an element of all living things. Water creates green zones across the earth and clouds wandering in the sky. Flowing deep or moving high, it brings balance to the earth. Water equalizes everything. The character dok (言賣) is made up of eon (言) meaning "words" and mae (賣), meaning "sell." It means to sell—specifically, to spread—the Word. If you do not "sell" it, or give it out, you need to gather it and use it. The word hoondok

has such meanings. Its power is like that of water that flows and becomes a great river, then makes a sea and gives life to this universe.(290-155,19980218)

3 A hoondok family is created through hoondokhae. Again, you can go to the kingdom of heaven when you experience rebirth, resurrection and eternal life through hoondok church. Your family is the base for going to the heavenly kingdom. You go to the heavenly kingdom from your family; you cannot go to heaven from anywhere else. Your family must be a place where the kingdom of heaven of peace is created. It must happen on earth.(424-119,20031104)

4 After people restore the things of creation, they are to experience love. The Old Testament Age was the age when the things of the creation were sacrificed as offerings. The New Testament Age was the age when the children sacrificed themselves as offerings, and the Completed Testament Age has been the age when the Parents sacrifice themselves as offerings. In order to attend God here on the earth, the Parents have gone the way of the cross, leading their family along with them. When believers on earth pursue activities for Home Church and offer conditions of devotion on its altar, spirits from all fields and levels of the spirit world can return and cooperate with them. Now that Home Church has been changed to "hoondok church," the age is coming when your tribe will join. In the coming age, it will not be just individuals who join but all the members of your tribe. If your family name is Kim, all the Kims will join; if your family name is Park, all the Parks will join. After that happens, the age will arrive for registration in the nation. It will happen soon. From now on, things will happen quickly. Things will move extremely quickly.(511-322,20051015)

5 The family is the starting point of the kingdom of heaven. When you understand its significance, you will know how crucial it is that you make a hoondok church. If there is a church, it should be a family church. As a family is a church connected by heart, that family church should be developed into a hoondok church. If you sow many seeds and gather a fruitful harvest, the heavenly world and all people on earth will be able to eat. That is how you can make a new start and greet the spring. Families who do hoondokhae will have a foundation that can endure the winter and greet the spring on a new level. Thus they will prosper, and prosper even more.(402-261,200301 16)

6 When you sow seeds in the family and they bear fruit, the fruit can go beyond the nation and the world, all the way to the kingdom of heaven. Since that realm is the kingdom of heaven in the spirit world, people's most important endeavor is how much harvest they can collect and offer when they go there. The place where

you will live eternally in the heavenly world is determined based on the result you bring here and now. You should give and forget. Go to the lowest place, and give and then forget what you have given. If you forget what you have given, without fail it will return to you. Because human beings are individual embodiments of truth, when they receive something genuine, it will not simply be forgotten. When people receive a gift prepared with a heart of devotion, they want to return more than they have received. As individual embodiments of truth, they want to create an environment with conditions that foster more and ever greater giving and receiving in a circular motion. Hoondok churches are the foundation, the base, for this.(402-261,200301 16)

7 You cannot enter the kingdom of heaven simply because you were given recognition by the Unification Church. You have to go through proper protocols that equip you to live as a citizen of that kingdom. This even includes taxes. The Unification Church will disappear, religions will disappear and politics will cease. Even nation-states will disappear. The world will become a huge, unified family nation, a single nation whose culture is the world of heart. It will be realized by means of a thorough education through hoondokhae about the life I lived, especially about the aspects of heart. Therefore we have hoondok churches and hoondok families. We must find the church in the family.(426-151,20031121)

8 You need to understand that doing hoondokhae is doing the work of Cheon Il Guk, which goes beyond the standard of religion and the nation. Hoondokhae is attended by your ancestors and their descendants who were the most filial of filial children and the most loyal of loyal patriots in the heavenly realm. By reading the Word and learning together in the presence of heaven and earth united as one, we establish the foundation for the ideal family as individuals who are being substantially re-created and perfected. Then we can move into a new age of education, an age of universal education, to lay such a foundation in front of Heaven.(437-010,20040208)

9 You should create a hoondok church, focusing on your own tribe. This is to build a global human family. Because national barriers will disappear, no matter where people go in this world, those who attend a hoondok church can call that place home. Your culture and your religion will recede into the background, and the time when you talk about those things will come to an end.(526-246,20060520)

10 Be crazy about the Word, and work so hard you even forget about eating. Then all your physical ailments will flee. When I was young I had a lung disease, and everyone said I would die. But I thought, "If I am meant to die, I shall die. But if I

find something so interesting that I keep myself busier than the activity of the disease in my lungs, then even the germs causing my disease will flee." We have to go now into the midst of the democratic world and the communist world and fulfill our responsibility to revolutionize them and harmonize them. We must fulfill that responsibility of the Mother and Father. When you hold hoondokhae throughout the nation, a place where Mother and Father can stand will appear.(402-252,200301 16)

11 Hoondokhae will connect you with another dimension. When you hold hoondokhae, heaven and earth become one, and the entire spirit world descends and cooperates with you. Unless you do so, your life path will not open up and you will be unable to fulfill your goals. This is the reason you need a hoondok church, which is a family church. No families have been able to enter the heavenly kingdom. Even God did not have a family. Since no families have been able to go to heaven, I am saying there are no citizens of the kingdom of heaven. We must reorganize all this.(493-188,20050422)

Home Church activities and community breakthrough

12 Restoration is to return. To where should we return? Regardless of my position, no matter how high I, Rev. Moon, reach under the sun, I need to return to the base of the cycle, and that base is the family. This is why I am talking about tong ban gyeokpa, meaning "community breakthrough." Community breakthrough activities can reverse everything related to origin, lineage, culture and lifestyle that have invaded the families in Satan's world. That is how the word "breakthrough" came to be used.(204-118,19900701)

13 As part of your community breakthrough activities, you should hold revival meetings. They will enable you to set up a vertical foundation. In every family, when the children can shout out to the heavens that their mothers and fathers are true mothers and true fathers, and when their parents can do the same, saying their sons and daughters are true sons and true daughters, then Satan's realm in this earthly world will come to an end. The problem started in the family, and the problem must be resolved in the family. Community breakthrough activities will turn around Satan's families in the world. They will recover the families from his lineage and enable them to reverse their entire way of thinking.(208-344,19901121)

14 We must make a breakthrough in our community. We need to do that because it fulfills the desire of God throughout history. What went wrong starting from the

family must be reversed beginning with the family. The heavenly kingdom emerges with a nation. However, to make this happen, we have to start from a true man and a true woman. First there should be a family that opposes Satan's world. This is why so many terms in the Unification Church are the opposite of something. Even the term "True Parents" is the opposite of something. What about all the parents who have existed up to the present? Since they are the opposite of True Parents, we can say the parents who gave birth to you are false parents. From God's perspective, this is correct. It is also correct from Satan's perspective. Therefore if we emphasize True Parents, then Satan retreats. Because God regards them as important, Satan retreats. That is how Satan can be turned upside down.(210-094,19901201)

15 Why do we have to break through in our local communities? To where is the history of restoration returning us? It has to return us from the fallen world through the gate of the True Parents. Everything that was propagated from what came through the gate of the Fall must turn around, pass through the gate of the True Parents and ascend to the starting point in the garden of Eden. You Unification Church members are the mainstream people who turned around and are now rising. When you do so, you do not need baggage with any old, tattered things from your past life. You have to thoroughly cleanse each and every thing that Satan polluted and purify it to be as clear as crystal. You should have a mind and body of true love, as pure as distilled water. And you should be people who can say with confidence that you have become the princes and princesses of the heavenly kingdom that is appearing on this earth; and that you are its heirs by virtue of true love.(211-129,19901229)

16 The task now is to break through in your communities. Two thousand years ago, Jesus could not establish the domain of his own family and tribe. But today, because the families of the Unification Church are completing their tribal-level domain, the liberation of the tribal-level domain worldwide is taking place in all four directions. I see this as a condition that can spread the realm of liberation to communities throughout the world. It is for this reason I am giving you instructions today and asking for your pledge.(166-259,19870607)

17 Today, the most important thing is where we plant our roots. The place our roots should take hold is not the province. Provinces are made up of counties (gun), and under the counties are districts (tong) and villages (li). However, all these became places Satan took over and occupied. For this reason, we must plant our roots in local communities (tong) and neighborhoods (ban). You should know this from the viewpoint of the Principle. That is why the Unification Church must be single-minded in its goal to break through in the community. We have only one goal, and

that is restoration. All of us, whether in the past, present or future and whether at the formation, growth or completion stage, have only one purpose. It is the same path for all: we must build a rock-solid foundation centering on the local community.(171-299,19880120)

18 Even though you cannot reach the level where I am fighting at the front line of the battle, still, with tears you must go over the peak of your community and neighborhood and then settle down there. You must help your neighbors overcome their sorrowful fate, the fate brought on by the Fall. If you don't do this, Heaven will not cooperate with you. Heaven will not move. Heaven will leave you. It doesn't matter how much I invested; it doesn't matter how well you follow me; if Heaven doesn't work with us, it is no good. Heaven must work with us.(166-172,19870605)

19 While conducting activities in your community, you should work so hard you wear out several pairs of shoes. When you visit the leading people of your community or neighborhood, do not take your car. You must walk. Go about your work on foot, even though you may go through several pairs of shoes. See what happens if, looking all sweaty, you knock on their doors three or four times a day. Most of you will have visited only once, right? Go to your community or neighborhood and give lectures there. Lecture several times a day and with such passion that you are soaked with sweat and have to take a shower or bath afterward. Try it and see if Heaven doesn't help you. See whether or not people are fired up.(167-040,19870614)

20 From now on, you must make breakthroughs in your community. You should not miss even one home. We are in such a time. That is why I coined the phrase tong ban gyeokpa, "community breakthrough." No matter how tired you are, you need to walk day and night to reach even one more home. You must cross your neighborhood from east to west, and south to north, and then walk its perimeter. I am saying you should visit each house at least three times. When you meet someone, what should you do? Give them the most precious gift. What is that? It is to help them become the sons and daughters of True Parents. This is because their lineage must be changed.(202-304,19900525)

21 I have loved you more than my own mother and father. My whole life is full of stories of shedding blood and tears for the Unification Church. I shed blood, sweat and tears to reach out to the individual, family, tribe, people, nation and world. If I hadn't reached each of these levels, Satan would not have been separated from us. That is why I went to America and underwent all kinds of suffering and hardships. Now I am preparing to save the Soviet Union. Since I have completed my

responsibilities on the world level, I am back in Korea to do community breakthrough activities.(203-254,19900626)

22 It is based on the Principle that we must return to the land of our original hometown. That is why I am telling all the members in Korea to return to their hometowns. We need to build the national foundation based upon the foundation of accomplishing breakthrough activities in our communities. With the family as a starting point, we need to go through formation, growth and completion stages. The family is the formation stage, the community is the tribal-level growth stage and the nation is the completion stage. To connect these three, we have to be connected in the family. Otherwise we cannot connect to the tribe and we cannot connect to the nation; nor can we connect to the world. When you expand the foundation in this way, Satan will find no den in which to hide. In this way you can liquidate him. You can build such a foundation quickly; there is no longer any persecution. The foundation is prepared for you to be welcomed.(218-184,19910728)

23 Community breakthrough is not about threatening or intimidating people; it is not about weapons. If you work day and night practicing love based on the Word, then even while elderly citizens sit around smoking and drinking or pursuing other vices, they will praise the Unification Church and say, "I have to let my son or daughter follow the example of that person." If they do that, the evil spirits attached to them, trying to influence them to carouse, will flee. Further, if those elderly citizens see a violent young man become good-natured after he joins the Unification Church, then they will think, "Our children also should become like Unification Church members." If this happens, the evil spirits within them will take flight. In every aspect you need to become a model representing the Principle. You should set the standard as the ancestor in your family. You must become a guide for the ancestors in your family by becoming like a signboard displaying Heaven's principles and rules. The True Parents are the ancestor among all ancestors.(212-101,19910102)

24 Once you complete community breakthrough activities, you should ensure that each family hoists the Unification Church flag. Thereafter, if you have three visitors to your home every day, including Unification Church members, who are happy with your family, through that condition alone everyone in your family can be saved. That is why I am making people indebted to you. Through my practical accomplishments and teaching of the Word, I benefit people spiritually and materially. I have reached that stage. Therefore I could declare the True Parents and be welcomed; I could step on this world that Satan has used as his stage, go over its

summit and stand at the top. The time has come when I can return to Korea, connect the globe with the heavenly realm and then hold a declaration ceremony for the settlement of God's kingship. I am pushing hard for this. Great things can be achieved when our mind and body are united. The time will come when Satan's world will not use the power of the fist; we can bring it into submission through our teachings.(200-346,19900227)

CHAPTER 2

The Tribal Messiah

Section 1. The Declaration of Tribal Messiahship

1 Why do we have the term "tribal messiah"? The messiah is in the position of parents. Now, unless one becomes a subject partner of true love, the term "parents" does not apply. The realm of parental heart, which is to love one's children and do whatever one can for them, is the only original reality that remains in the fallen world. It is diminished, but it is a heart whose true nature and essence in fact has remained, like a live coal, since the creation of the world.(199-186,19900216)

The meaning of and standard for the proclamation of tribal messiahship

2 Where do we go to recover the family? In the providence of restoration, by making indemnity conditions in the tribal realm, we can move toward the restoration of the family. I have set indemnity conditions on the levels of a people, nation and world. This being so, what do you need to recover? Each of you needs to go to the realm of your tribe. You need to go to the realm where Jesus tried to work but was unable to. In your tribal-level realm, you pursue Home Church activities. Even if you are opposed and called names, you need to love the people with tears. Then you go to your family. The purpose of Home Church activity is to train you to love more. You need 360 homes to endorse you as a son or daughter of God. Then when you return to your family, in order to restore your clan, you need to love your family members hundreds of times more than you loved your Home Church.(104-064,19790328)

3 You need to unite with the victorious Messiah and sow the seeds of true life. After indemnifying the disunity of Eve, Cain and Abel in the garden of Eden, you should plant such seeds. The family needs to create an environment for such seeds, and that is the mother and the brothers and sisters. This is where we can declare the starting point of the ideal love and ideal life of the original Adam and Eve who have nothing to do with the Fall. In order to create such a family, I declared tribal messiahship. Jesus came to recover the family. For this, the Cain household and the Abel household had to unite. In the case of Jesus, Joseph's clan and John the Baptist's clan should have united and formed one family. Jesus' family should have been formed in this way. Then Satan could not have invaded. Had this been done, Jesus would have embraced his clan as the tribal messiah. Then the original

standard of the unfallen family, which the people of Israel were unable to establish, would have been restored.(235-111,19920829)

4 Unification Church members constitute a tribe. My blood is flowing within each of them. Thus all tribal members should be able to cry when I cry and rejoice with me when I rejoice. We are kin, bound by blood. We are a unified people. We go over the barriers of color separating the five races and the differing cultural backgrounds separating various national standards, to create and build the new heavenly kingdom. The heavenly kingdom will manifest when we as a people become divine. The world will open up when we live as a people of the divine nation. The cosmic kingdom of heaven on earth and in heaven will come down upon that world. Just talking about it will not make it happen. The individual has to make the final decision and then pro-claim it in heaven and on earth. It must be proclaimed again centering on the family and again centering on the tribe.(168-136,19870913)

5 Now is the time to make the final proclamation centered on the tribe. In order to lead such a work, I have to set absolute conditions of victory, taking a single direction, the same in heaven and on earth, representing all peoples and all nations. Without doing so, I cannot enter the nation, gather all the tribes, and make the proclamation for the final liberation in accordance with the laws of public righteousness. Based on this condition, if you command, "Satan, be gone" your ancestors can come into, and serve as the head of, your family. Changes will come. Pray like this: "Our family loves Heaven. Thus we are willing to sacrifice conjugal love, our love for our children and all our possessions. Representing our tribe, we are willing to make our entire family a sacrificial offering. As Heavens family we are raising our tribe in order to accomplish the liberation of our people. So please accept our offering!" Such a prayer will be received. For the sake of the liberation of this people, the Unification family needs to determine to be the sacrificial offering to Heaven on the family level.(168-142,19870913)

6 You are tribal messiahs. When you recover your Cain tribe, you will automatically recover your Abel tribe. This is why you need to do tribal messiah activity. Only if you do this can your ancestors and good people in the spirit world come to the earth and set indemnity conditions to benefit themselves. This is not possible without the foundation of your Home Church. Without that foundation, even if one of your ancestors were to help you, your family would remain on the family level. You would not connect to the tribe, people or nation, even though I made all that possible for you. Based on this, while I was in Danbury prison, I opened the gates in the heavenly world and in hell and paved a highway from hell to the throne in the heavenly world. I established a highway so that any good spirit within a realm that

receives God's benefit could come to the earth, witness to people and elevate them step by step. Many walls appeared because things went wrong due to the first parents. The True Parents had to break down these walls and open the gates. I have opened all of them and thereby demonstrated how it is done. Home Church is a base with which to connect the earthly realm with the heavenly kingdom. A rocket flies to its destination based on the flight parameters that are set at the launching pad. Home Church functions like that launching pad.(148-177,19861008)

7 Now is the time to set the standard of the ideal family that Jesus could not establish. For that reason, I am dispatching family messiahs. Where will you be sent as family messiahs? To your blood kin, your relatives. I have walked the path of indemnity for the individual, family, tribe, people, nation and world in order to connect them to Heaven. It is not necessary for you to walk the same path of indemnity I have walked. I am sending you as tribal messiahs, in the same position as Jesus. Through the Blessing, you are in the position of having married. You have that foundation. The Blessing connects the individual, family and tribe and makes them one. I have walked the path of indemnity to connect every-thing to Heaven. You have not traveled that course, but even so I have given you the Blessing. The fact that you received the Blessing signifies that your position is better than that of Jesus. Satan cannot accuse those who have received the Blessing, because you are connected to the True Parents through lineage. Satan cannot accuse you on any level—individual, family, tribe, people, nation or world. That is how God sees it. Satan absolutely cannot accuse you. You are in a state of total freedom. For these reasons, I have proclaimed tribal messiahship at this time.(189-147,19890401)

8 The fact is that I have declared that you are tribal messiahs. This means that when you fulfill your responsibilities on behalf of me, the spirit world will support you. In the past, when I was pioneering and in difficulties, the spirit world assisted me. The spirit world is certainly working now as well. Despite persecution, I developed the Unification Church to enter the age of tribal-level restoration; so now, with no persecution, how much more can we develop! It was to restore the eldest son's position, in the era for the restoration of the right of the eldest son, that the Unification Church members went the way of the cross and were persecuted up to this day. During the era to restore the eldest son's position, you suffered so much. This being so, in the era to restore the mother and father's position, should we suffer more or less than we suffered in the era to restore the eldest son's position? We should suffer more. By doing this, the tribal messiahs will liberate Jesus from his bitter sorrow and me from mine.(185-242,19890108)

9 You have to proclaim to your clan that you are their tribal messiah. Whether they listen to you or not, you have to proclaim it. If you do not fulfill the responsibility with which you have been entrusted, who will be struck? Heaven will be vulnerable on behalf of you. That day is coming. That is why I have proclaimed tribal messiahship. I proclaimed tribal messiahship in order to go over that time. Hence now is the time to begin your tribal messiah activities. You have to return to your hometown. If you are not able to go to your hometown, you have to work to save the nation. If you are unable to go back to your hometown, you have to live for the sake of North and South Korea. If you cannot fulfill your responsibility as a tribal messiah, you have to take the responsibility of a people-level messiah who can save North Korea. If you make that effort, you can go beyond the realm of tribal messiah. (207-165,19901109)

10 Jesus was a tribal messiah. At the same time, he represented his people and nation. However, he died because he could not obtain the parents' right in his own family. Hence, now that the Unification Church has liberated the older brother's right, we have to liberate the parents' right. I have designated you tribal messiahs. Today, by establishing tribal messiahship, I am proclaiming with the divine authority of the heavenly kingdom that after you resurrect the situation created by your parents' opposition to the Unification Church, and the failure of the fallen Adam and Eve, you will be a restored family. This is the purpose of the tribal messiah proclamation. Why is this necessary? If you cannot establish the position of unfallen Adam and Eve based on the standard of True Parents, there is no way to establish the hometown where you were born as a home-town of the heavenly kingdom. If you had been born in the original, unfallen hometown, you would have been born of the original Parents. However, due to the Fall the order is reversed, and you should engraft your parents instead. That hometown also has to establish the standard of the unfallen Adam, who should have been born as the original Parent representing the right of the kingship, and who should have reigned over the world. (193-307,19891008)

11 It is just like the time when I pro-claimed tribal messiahship; a similar time is approaching. Hence please re-turn to your hometown without any hesitation or reservations. I also would like to go to my hometown now. I do not want to live here in Seoul. When your influence surpasses the influence of North Korea as a result of your hard work in your hometown, my hometown naturally will be elevated. Without fighting, it will just happen. Therefore the mission of Unification Church families is to establish the land of Canaan, a hometown of the heart, by making more devotional offerings than North Korea does. That is why I am telling you to be tribal messiahs.(187-194,19890205)

12 Do you know why I proclaimed tribal messiahship around the world, starting in Korea? It is because when I do it in Korea, all the countries of the world will unite under my leadership. Think how many people from the spirit world will be mobilized. They are eager to come down to the earth. They are thinking, "This is the time!" with their eyes gleaming, because the time has come when liberation can be accomplished. Thus we can indemnify thousands and tens of thousands of years of history.(188-063,19890216)

13 I placed blessed families as tribal messiahs and set the standard of perfection for three generations of ancestors: Jesus, blessed families and Adam. Thus we can enter the environment in which we can freely embrace the people of the earth. This is why I proclaimed tribal messiahship. This is good news in God's providence. This is the Last Days of human history, when the day of liberation will come. The unification of North and South Korea will not occur just by itself. It is possible only when all of this is woven together. Once the family level and the tribal level are brought together, they will link to the national level. Then the Unification Church and the government should be one.(219-097,19910825)

14 Because Jesus was unable to complete this mission, I appointed you as tribal messiahs and granted you the authority to bestow the Blessing upon your own parents who, like fallen Adam, married as they wished. Thanks to God's grace, your parents could be raised to the position of unfallen parents. This is just amazing! It is like a dream! I proclaimed tribal messiahship to announce that I had made this possible. Jesus was sent alone to be the tribal and national messiah, but I have proclaimed that all blessed family members worldwide are tribal messiahs.(228-174,19920327)

15 You are officially recognized by Heaven's side only when you are approved by True Parents. You can only receive the Blessing when True Parents see your sincere effort and loyalty, and can say out of compassion, "Fine!" after you are officially recognized by Cain, Abel, the Parents and God. This is why you need God to make it possible. You cannot cross the bridge and receive the Blessing unless God makes it possible. This is the meaning of rebirth through True Parents. There is no way to gain rebirth without True Parents. Hence if the tribal messiah misses the chance to build a bridge as the family messiah, the opportunity for rebirth will be blocked. I was aware of this, so I established and proclaimed tribal messiahship to liberate humanity. This is a revolutionary event on a global scale. It is a special grace and a privilege to receive. Please understand how miserable Heaven has been for thousands of years, due to Eve's fatal mistake of one day. How hard Heaven groped for the path of restoration, and at what cost Abel-side persons sacrificed

throughout thousands of generations, to reach the time of True Parents! This has been the course to restore Adam and Eve in history.(265-133,19941120)

The conditions for tribal messiahship

16 I now have given you the name of messiah. Each of you is a tribal messiah. What should you do as a tribal messiah? I have prepared everything that you may need in order to become a national messiah, world messiah and cosmic messiah. I have prepared a mountain of treasures for you. You will inherit them once you become a messiah. They will pass down to you as water flows through a pipe. If you are unable to inherit these things, your descendants will accuse you.(189-248,19890409)

17 God will not help you, nor will I, my children or other church members. Still, follow me. Walk the same path I walked in the past. Afterward, you will have freedom. Afterward, a new heaven and earth will unfold. Up to now there was only one male Messiah, but from now on we shall have the family messiah. Up to the present, the single Messiah was severely opposed. However, now, with the family messiah well secured, accusation will end and without fail you should return to your hometown, take responsibility as a tribal messiah and proudly proclaim, "I have returned as a tribal messiah!" This is for you and your descendants. It is like the time when the people of Israel were divided into the twelve tribes. We have entered the land of Canaan.(189-249,19890409)

18 Do not think only of yourself. Take care of your grandfather and grandmother. Be the last one to go to sleep. Shed blood, sweat and tears and support not only your sons and daughters, your immediate family, but also your extended family. This is like the wilderness course. Among the six hundred thousand people who followed Moses, anyone who had food must have wanted to feed only his own family. But he or she had to offer that food to Moses. It did not matter what tribe the person belonged to; his or her heart had to be such that he or she would willingly die together with the others. Even if a hundred days' worth of food would be gone in one day feeding all the others, Moses¹ twelve tribal leaders had to offer their food to Moses. Unless you live this way of life, you will not be able to bind people in relationships of heart, from the family to the tribe, people, nation and world. Although I established the base to bind together the nations and the world by setting a standard of restoration through indemnity, I cannot set up the base for your tribe. This is your responsibility as the tribal messiah.(187-180,19890205)

19 The Israelites adopted the culture and traditions of the seven tribes of Canaan, and this was a problem. It led the Israelites to ruin. This is a critical point. Nonetheless, it is different now. We are the center. There is no hope in the outside world, which is declining. The world is looking at you as their only hope. Starting now, unite and complete your responsibility as messiahs. Just as God said to Joshua and Caleb, I am telling you to be bold and strong. You now have the Parents, Heaven and a foundation of all the things on earth necessary to restore the right of the eldest son. Hence just move forward with all your strength. From behind, God will support you, and the power of True Parents and True Family will protect you, just as they do today. All you need to do is march ahead on one path. That is the way that will lead to victory.(189-252,19890409)

20 Do not continue to live with the habits you inherited from your mother and father. From now on, be serious about teaching your sons and daughters. If you just leave them the way they are, the Blessing you were given will fall to ruin. This is why I cannot help but dispatch you, making you take responsibility as messiahs. Don't you know you are living in the greatest time in history? The spirit world and physical world, heaven and earth, are watching you. The entire universe is watching you. You are called to become the owners who can lead an era of such amazing love!(189-253,19890409)

21 A tribal messiah stands as the center of the family, and thus is very precious. I am the center of the world-level nation, but you do not have such a position. With you, the five-percent results are not there. Therefore I am telling you to love yourself, your spouse and your family in the way you love God, just as I have loved the world and the nation. Love your extended family the way you love your children and love your family members the way you love your spouse. I am already connecting the nation and the world, so if you do this, you will be connected to them naturally.(187-177,19890205)

22 You are on a path to establish a base that connects the realm of heart of the individual to the realm of heart of the family, tribe, nation, world and cosmos. I hope you can understand the importance of the level of tribal messiah. If we look at the family as the formation stage, then the tribe is the growth stage and the nation is completion. Beginning with the nation, the nation is formation, the world is growth and the cosmos is completion. Beginning from the world, the world is formation, heaven and earth are growth and God is completion. Love is what connects everything. When we look at the principle of development through three stages, the tribal messiah level is crucial to recover the nation.(187-178,19890205)

23 If you belong to the Kim family, you have to fulfill the mission of messiah to the Kim family. You need to think that you are the messiah who represents your clan in order to establish the heavenly kingdom—if you are a Kim, then in the Kim family, and if you are a Park, then in the Park family. You need to think that you are the savior who can save your clan. In order to do so, you have to fulfill your responsibility as the high priest representing your clan.(155-265,19651031)

24 Selfish individualism is ruining the free world today. How we can save the free world from selfish individualism? The answer is simple. It is by living for the sake of others. We can save the world by doing just one thing, which is to live for the sake of others. Can the Unification Church unite all religions? By living for them, we will unite them. We need to live for the sake of others. What is the final destination? What is the solution? In order to break down the barriers and benefit everyone, what should you do? You should become a tribal messiah. Only by doing this throughout the world will we eliminate the conditions upon which people accuse us on every level—individual, family, clan, people, nation and world.(189-110,19890319)

25 Do you know how fearsome the term "tribal messiah" is? If messiahs cannot fulfill their responsibility, they should be willing to die. Unless you are so willing, you should not come back. With this heart you need to fulfill the messianic mission. You must not reject the authority of messiahship. I am saying that even if you lose your life or your household, do not abandon the authority of messiahship. Your mother and father cannot kill you, can they? They cannot nail you on the cross, can they? That is your blessing. Had Jesus had such a blessing, how much better it would have been.(197-375,199001 20)

26 Who, by fighting the world and making indemnity conditions, established the tradition of the return to the hometown? I opened and prepared the way for you to establish the tribal realm and even go to the family. Have you walked the course of indemnity for the sake of world-level issues? You have to become a servant of servants and then, like Abel, a son or daughter. Then, connecting Eve's realm and Adam's realm, you need to return to God. You have to return to God, the Lord of all creation. Such a time is coming. The one, unified vertical realm of heart has been recovered. On that foundation you need to find the realm of heart and enlarge your heart to embrace the individual, family, clan, people, nation and entire world. Do not forget the amazing blessing you have received through my overcoming history's thousands of years of bitter pain and sorrow and establishing the realm of tribal messiahship for restoration through indemnity.(197-375,19900120)

27 I am dispatching the blessed families as tribal messiahs because you represent the families of the world. Hence please be aware that you men and women are setting the pace for all couples in the world. The sons and daughters who are born from such responsible men and women become the ancestors of a different lineage, different from the people who have lived on earth up to this time. Thus you need to become individuals who can enter the kingdom of heaven directly, as God's sons and daughters. You have to believe in God absolutely, believe in True Parents absolutely and love humanity absolutely, with both horizontal and vertical love. When you love with that kind of love, you will settle in the center and secure that place as your own. If you are unable to, you will be unhappy. That is why I exhort you to focus on fulfilling your mission and responsibility on the family level, building an exemplary family, one that really stands out.(188-319,19890301)

The position of a tribal messiah

28 Tribal messiahship, simply speaking, is the work to elevate the Father and Mother to the position of King and Queen. Then, based on the initiating love of Parents, we can return to the original hometown in which we were born, the original hometown of the kingdom of heaven. Without doing this, we cannot have the hometown. If we do not fulfill it, there will be no hometown for us, Without that hometown, we will not have the Parents. And only when we establish this hometown will the hometowns of all people who have lived in Korea connect with the hometown of the heavenly kingdom. Wherever a person was born, it was the place where his or her parents lived. All birthplaces eventually have to belong to the heavenly kingdom. Thus those parents can inherit the position of parents who have nothing to do with the Fall.(194-121,19891017)

29 As tribal messiah, you are the leader who guides a tribe to its hometown within your lifetime. You are the leader just as Moses was during the Exodus. You should not do this blindly. Your destination is your hometown. However, by the Principle you cannot enter your hometown without recovering Cain. Since your older brother's tribe remains in Satan's world, you have to save your older brother and have his tribe join yours. Otherwise they will stay with Satan and be separate from your tribe. When you save your older brother, he will protect you like a hedge. Then when you go to your hometown, you can save your extended family. If this achievement is not in place, even if you witness to your father and mother, Satan will capture them again. They will be taken again. Although you witness to your father and mother, to your relatives, even to the , people of your hometown, Satan will drag them away again. Because of this danger God has no choice but to lead this kind of providence.(102-265,197901 14)

30 On behalf of God, I dispatched tribal messiahs to the world. Even if I die now, tribal messiahs are engrafted to the vertical world and are bound to expand to the worldwide domain. That is why I am now calling tribal messiahs to become the ancestors of Abel-type families. These ancestors have the seed of life. Messiahs are the parents and they have the seed of life. Your family and relatives, including your father and mother, were born from the seed of Satan's world. Hence if you bring the seed of life and engage actively with people wherever you go, you will be victorious.(198-269,19900204)

31 The fact that I gave you the right of tribal messiahship means you inherit the righteousness and results of the religions that have existed throughout history to this day. Although you know nothing of its value, it means that I have given you the ages of history that have been brought into the position of liberation, as if Adam did not fall, Noah did not fail, Abraham, Isaac and Jacob did not fail, Moses did not fail, Jesus did not fail, I did not fail, and there were no cross of suffering and no historical or-deals. In the midst of those names, countless martyrs cry out in the hope that the blood they shed may serve as a foundation for their resurrection as good spirits. Those spirits were persecuted and sacrificed while seeking the Way. Through the blood they shed, they serve as a base for Heaven on the horizontal plane. Their passion to build the kingdom of heaven on earth is in their spilled blood, which is interwoven with the hope of humanity. Tribal messiahship is the culmination of all blessings. Using the Unification Church and the authority of my victories to condense the mistakes of Judaism and Christianity that have passed down vertically, I am bequeathing all the blessings that believers in other religions, including Buddhism and Confucianism, want to receive. This is what tribal messiahship is about.(198-273,19900204)

32 The word "messiah" means the ancestor of the hometown where the clans in the horizontal world dwell. God is the center that holds everything in place. Of primary importance is that God works to establish that place through True Parents. That is why, when I return to Korea from the United States, the center moves to Korea. When I am not here, you feel something is missing. And when I return, all the empty places are filled again and you surely feel hope in all directions. A tribal messiah is a tribal king. The tribal messiah's position is the position of the second parents, which is Jesus's position. The position of those who have received the Blessing from me is higher than that of Jesus. Thus with pride you can say, "True Parents have dispatched me as a tribal messiah." And after you save your tribe, you can be elevated to the position of Adam.(217-125,19910512)

33 Tribal messiahs are given the Blessing and thus are the seeds of all things in the created world from far back in time, of the men and women of the human race, and of all families. They are the seeds. Many families have emerged, but they were not the families that heaven and earth needed or that God needed. They are not the seeds. When I tell you to go out as tribal messiahs, it means to go to your clans and plant new seeds. Because false, wild olive trees grow there, you have to engraft the true olive tree to them and make an orchard of true olive trees. This is the greatest fortune possible to come to your household and kin. It is more precious than gaining the nation, gaining the world and gaining heaven and earth.(197-208,199001 14)

34 With the new experiences and training you have had in unfamiliar lands, and with a new mindset and attitude to work hard for the Will, you should bring change to your entire neighborhood. Do not be a follower. Invest yourself as God invested Himself in creating from nothing the realm of His object partners of love. So bring your neighbors to unite with you. The spirit world will cooperate as you attain the highest position among the people of your hometown.(179-028,19880615)

35 Are you going to the place closest to God or the place far away from Him? You are saying you want to go to a place close to God. You've been studying for this purpose, to be close to God. How does studying allow you to do that? You study so you can absorb the elements that will enable you to become a seed, that is, a seed to transform a broad spectrum of your environment. In order to do this you must transform everything, not by force but naturally. Only then can people be attracted to you. This is why you should live for the sake of others. Live a life through which you can say, "I am totally empty. So come into me!" By doing that, don't you think you will connect to life, become a seed, and establish yourself as the one who will endure as Heavens representative? With this understanding, go to your hometown as a person who can become a seed. Moreover, through planting more seeds, you will be able to leave behind an environment that Korea, heaven and earth, and God would like to visit. When you go to the spirit world after having fulfilled this, you will surely be loved as sons and daughters of the heavenly kingdom. You need to set up such a course, beginning now.(197-221,199001 14)

36 Returning to your hometown is like sowing seeds. Since the seed of Adam and Eve turned bad, I am trying to sow a new seed and grow a new root through you. When planting new seeds, one needs to spread fertilizer. So you should go out and be ready when people hurl profanities at you. Prepare to be cursed for a good cause, to endure much suffering. Try it for about three years. Come to think of it,

you will not need three years. It is possible to do this in six months.(219-159,19910829)

Section 2. The Responsibility of the Tribal Messiah

1 I have restored the right of the eldest son, and on that foundation the returning Lord comes to claim the right of the parent. For this, the returning Messiah represents the position of Abel at the levels of individual, family, tribe, people, nation and world. He fulfills the responsibilities Christianity and America left undone. He also brings down communism and establishes an environment conducive to the unity of the world. On the foundation of fulfilling these conditions, the returning Lord sends forth tribal messiahs. Therefore, just as Heaven sent the returning Messiah, True Parents on behalf of God are sending you as tribal messiahs. They bequeath to you the foundation of the realm of mainstream religion that was prepared to receive the Messiah, which began with Israel four thousand years ago.(198-339,19900211)

Home Church and spiritual children

2 Each tribal messiah is to embrace two clans, Cain's and Abel's—that is, Cain's family and his or her own family. Jesus should have embraced Joseph's family and Zechariah's family. The disunity between these two families set the stage for Jesus' death. This is the back-ground of the Home Church and tribal church of today. Jesus was to stand on the united foundation of Joseph's family and Zechariah's family. The Messiah, based on these families' attendance of the tribal messiah, was to lead to national restoration. In the same way, your Home Church is a Cain-type church foundation of your tribal messiahship, and your family and relatives are an Abel-type church foundation. You are to unite these two. After accomplishing this, you will complete your mission as a tribal messiah. Now there should be no problem to bring unity in your tribe. Furthermore, the time has come when nothing in the larger world will create problems for us. Nevertheless, my appointment of tribal messiahs does not mean that the Home Church will disappear. Even if all people were saved, the Home Church remains important. Just as the mind and body need to unite and the entire world needs to unite, the Home Church needs to unite people both inside and outside the tribes.(210-188,19901219)

3 If you want to fulfill your responsibility as a tribal messiah, you need to restore your Cain-type tribe and your Abel-type tribe. When you offer devotional conditions and find 120 followers who are willing to work, giving their lives and assets, these followers will address your parents and say, "You toiled so hard to

raise your son or daughter! Your son or daughter in turn has toiled so much to save us!" When these 120 people gather as your clan for a banquet and exchange these words of appreciation, everything will turn around in one night.(046-137,19710813)

4 You need to return to your home-town and become tribal messiahs. But this does not mean the Home Church movement, which has been active these past years, should disappear. Your Home Church foundation is the Cain foundation, and your foundation with your extended family is the Abel foundation. If you shed tears, sweat and blood to establish your Home Church foundation, your extended family will turn around automatically. If you return to your extended family after having saved one hundred people through your Home Church, they will welcome you as a hero or heroine. The entire neighborhood will be able to turn around in one evening. Your record will speak for itself.(210-338,19901227)

5 Fallen Adam and Eve are restored through Abel. Blessed parents become perfect through their children, which is similar to fallen parents being restored through Abel. In this way, restoration takes place through indemnity. Therefore if you do not have spiritual children, you should not conceive and give birth to children. You can give them birth, but you can't truly love them. This is the implication of the Principle. The Fall transpired by people going in a direction opposite that of the Principle. Thus restoration transpires through blocking, adjusting and correcting that opposite direction in a way that is airtight. Thus you absolutely need spiritual children.(055-149,19720507)

6 Unification Church members become Abel when they understand the providence and receive God's love. When they establish this standard, they can form the position of Abel centering on their own good spirit world. People stand in the position of Abel depending on their age group: those in their twenties stand in the Abel position to those who are in their twenties; those who are in their thirties stand in the Abel position to those in their thirties; and those who are in their forties stand in the Abel position to those in their forties. If you witness to someone from a particular age group, the standard of Cain and Abel will be restored on the basis of that age group. Since young people also need to be restored, however, you need to do so through your children. Therefore to achieve complete restoration, you need to establish the tradition in which three of your spiritual children devotedly attend your physical children from their birth until their marriage. I have to follow this path if I wish to establish a worldwide foundation of victory, and you also have to follow this path. I am one level ahead of you. If my mission is on the world level, your mission goes up to the national level. Accordingly, when I realize a

victorious foundation at the world level, you each need to achieve a victorious foundation at the national level.(055-150,19720507)

7 On what basis did the love we know in this world begin? It began from the archangel, Satan. Therefore restoration entails recovering the children whom Satan took, raising them as your spiritual children and loving them. After doing that you can return to your original self. By following the example of True Parents, you can return to your original self. In the realm of fallen love, we have to recover the love that began with Satan. Since Satan stole love away, the mission of your three spiritual children entails restoring the stolen love in Satan's realm by standing in the position of an absolutely obedient and victorious archangel. You need to stand in the position of having saved your spiritual children and loving them in the same way God would. Since the Fall took place due to an issue that arose from love and led to its loss, the love we give them has to surpass that which Satan's world gives them. So how much should we love our spiritual children? We must love them more than parents in the secular world love their children. If we do not love our spiritual children to that extent, we will not be able to restore them.(055-160,19720507)

8 Unless we love others to a degree greater than physical parents in the secular world love their children, people will not be attracted to our path. It is only through love that we can restore people who were lost because of love. We need to do this to the extent of bringing three spiritual children to the Principle. Thereby we establish a victorious foundation of love that will permit us to love our physical children. This is a formula, and I have been living according to it. If we do not apply this formula, we cannot have a foundation for perfection. Therefore even if you have children, completely restore spiritual children before you live with them. God sent His beloved Son Jesus to the earth to restore humankind through indemnity, and He endured his plight as he walked the way of the cross. Similarly, we have to love our spiritual children the way God loves humanity. Therefore, if you do not make a foundation upon which your spiritual children sacrifice for your children, the path to love your children will not open up.(055-160,19720507)

9 We each need at least three spiritual children. We are to have two types of children: spiritual children, of which you need three, and our natural children. If you look at today's world, you will see sons and daughters who are in the position of God's direct children, and fallen human beings who are in the position of adopted children. Salvation doesn't exist for the sake of the individual. Salvation cannot exist outside the structure of the family There-fore, each of us is to have three spiritual

children and is to lead them to become one with our natural children. This is the formula.(052-129,1971 1226)

10 Who originally was meant to guide Adam and Eve? It was the archangel. It was not God but the angels who were meant to protect and nurture Adam and Eve until they reached maturity. Likewise it is spiritual children who are meant to support the spiritual parent's path to heaven. When, with the support of your spiritual children, you receive the Blessing of heaven, they will follow you into heaven on the merit of their support for you as their spiritual parent. This is how the three angels in the angelic world are restored, how the three children of Adam are restored and how the three sons of Noah are restored. This is how the condition of having gone through three stages as Heavens representative is achieved. What does becoming totally one mean? It means the oneness the three angels in the garden of Eden should have had, focusing on unfallen Adam. When the three angels become one, they are elevated into the realm of God's Blessing.(127-053,19830503)

11 Before the Fall, the three archangels looked forward to the day Adam and Eve would marry after receiving their complete support. Likewise your spiritual children will yearn ardently to see you receive the Blessing. The mistake of one archangel affected the others. Hence when your spiritual children support you substantially, they are setting indemnity conditions required by heaven and earth. For that reason, spiritual parents need to maintain a standard of heart toward their spiritual children that is higher than that of parents in the fallen world. You cannot stand on Heavens side or ascend to the realm to receive Heavens blessing if your standard of parental heart is lower than that of the fallen world. When you reach that level you can receive the Blessing, give birth to children and love them completely. Then Satan's world will not be able to accuse you or require you to pay indemnity.(127-054,19830503)

12 Because I overcame on the national level, you can be free from persecution. We stand at the level where the Republic of Korea is able to uphold the Unification Church. Therefore what remains is simply for you to choose your relatives and appoint them to represent you. We have entered the stage at which they can do so as your spiritual children. Now, what should such spiritual children do? They have to be ready to sacrifice their life for your sake and your children's. How will you inspire them to come to this point? Will you succeed in this task? You can inspire them to come to this point through the Principle. This will become our tradition.(133-125,19840710)

Forming a tribe through witnessing and through the Blessing

13 Your family will live for the sake of the nation only if you keep Heaven in your heart and live for the sake of Heavens family. You can acquire the nation only when you follow that family alone. Since Heaven's family stands in the central position and lives for the sake of the world, the way for you to reach the world is through this family. Thus you need to follow and attend this family as the center of the world. This is the path of the Principle. If you wish to follow the Principle and represent me, you first need to have three spiritual children, then twelve apostle-like sons and daughters, seventy disciples, and 120 people you bring to the Blessing. Only then will you be able to pass freely, night and day, through the twelve pearly gates of heaven. The guards at the gates will not ask, "Who are you?" but will say, "Welcome!" and guide you in. If you have only three spiritual children, you will be able to enter and exit only through one gate. You will not be able to go through the other gates.(058-074,19720606)

14 The most pressing matter is for you to accomplish your tribal messiah mission. In order to do this, you need to return to your extended family, find twelve disciples and bring them to the Blessing. Then you need to find seventy followers and then increase that to 120 followers. This means you need to assemble 120 people as soon as possible. I have paid all the indemnity for the central families, the 36 couples and 72 couples. I also paid all at once the indemnity for 120 couples. The totality of what you need to do is to bring 120 people together. If you do this, you will be able to fulfill the vertical and horizontal indemnity conditions. Therefore every Unification Church family is responsible to gather 120 people from among their family and relatives.(084-158,19760222)

15 You need to form a new Israel through your spiritual children. I found and blessed twelve couples and on that foundation blessed the 36 couples, the 72 couples and the 120 couples. I ask you to follow my example. I began this work for a reason. Jesus walked the tragic path of death to resolve this issue, and God suffered through six thousand providential years to resolve it. The path I am walking differs from yours only in scale and scope. My path is at the national and world levels, but in essence it is the same as yours. There is no difference in terms of what you and I should do in our lives. Because Christianity persecuted me, I could not follow the tribal messiah course as you can. Still I had to recover that foundation. To do so I loved all of you—people whom I met like passers-by on the street—more than I loved my parents, my wife and my own children. In order to raise spiritual children who are willing to sacrifice their lives for you, you must invest yourselves, as I did, three times more than it takes to raise your own children.(046-132,19710813)

16 You need to bring 120 people to the Principle. You have to bring them to the Principle and even see to their marriage. I mean that you should give them the Blessing. If you fulfill this you will become the representative of the world, the representative of the nation and the representative of the family on earth and in heaven, and your clan in Heaven's realm naturally will exist wherever you go. Can you lift up your head when you have not brought even three people to the Principle? If you are in such a position, you are as good as dead, because it is as if, for you, heaven and earth are separated. Without these three people, you have not established a four-position foundation and cannot build on that standard. Hence you need to witness. No one can do it for you; you need to do it. It is not for the sake of the Unification Church or me that you witness. You witness for your own sake.(066-142,19730422)

17 Gods work has been the work of re-creation. In your daily life, you need to stand in the position that represents Gods work of re-creation. So how shall we restore 120 families? This is an important issue. These will include twelve disciples, seventy apostles, and more. Following Jesus' resurrection, the Holy Spirit descended upon 120 disciples. They received the Gospel and conveyed it throughout the world. Likewise you need to bring down this spirit on the family level, restore the family and bind its members together as one. This is how you can accomplish your mission as a tribal messiah. Once you accomplish this, you need to bless them. You need to preside over the wedding ceremony on my behalf. Why is that? It is because you will become your family's ancestor. Henceforth there is nothing else you need to do. The nation is already united with me and the entire world is following me. When each of you completes your tribal messiah mission, the formation of the nation and the world will follow in short order.(210-172,19901219)

Section 3: The Role of the Tribal Messiah

1 You need to become a tribal messiah and return to your hometown. As a tribal messiah, you have to recover your hometown and your ancestors and serve God. What is first? It is the earth, the homeland. Second are the ancestors and third is the true realm of God's heart, where we can live together with God. The land where you were born and grew up is not part of Heaven's realm, nor are your father and mother the ancestors from Heaven. That is why we cannot dwell with God. The land of the unfallen, original Adam and Eve is both their land and God's land, and they are the ancestors of humanity and the ancestors of God. With God dwelling there, that would be the kingdom of heaven on earth. As of now, we have not realized this original homeland. It will not come unless you fulfill tribal messiahship. You have been following me, but when you return to your country you

need to do so as a tribe, just as did the Israelites. You are meant to enter heaven only with your family; this is true whether it is the kingdom of heaven on earth or in heaven. The kingdom of heaven is the place you enter with your family and relatives, as did the Israelites. Without them, we cannot recover our nation.(248-099,19930801)

The tribal messiah mission

2 Returning to one's homeland requires three conditions: life, love and lineage. Fulfilling them requires that you put your life on the line. I often had to risk my life as I overcame countless obstacles. If you put your life on the line for an endeavor, the sun's morning rays at the daybreak of the new nation will shine brightly upon your efforts. It is God's love that shines as sunrays falling upon the nation. That sunshine will be cast brilliantly upon the tradition that will continue from generation to generation for eternity. You can attend God eternally and receive His sunrays only if you inherit the eternally unchanging lineage from Him. The sun represents God, the origin of human life and the Parent. You need to inherit the tradition of the Parent, Heaven's tradition, and transform your life for the providence of restoration. Once you feel confident that you have reached that level as a subject, and that no worldly threat can endanger the new self you have inherited through that transformation, you will begin a new day.(225-318,19920126)

3 In order for you to begin a new personal existence, a new family and a new nation, you need to become a tribal messiah. You need to achieve this objective by investing yourself completely. I am freely bequeathing to you the path of faith I pioneered, as well as all the fruits of Gods labor for the past hundreds of millions of years since the creation. Please inherit this completely. This means that you will envy nothing of this world, but rather will honor the power of one great family that unites heaven and earth. There can be nothing more virtuous and nothing of greater value. If you go forth toward the world of peace and attain this value, a way to return to your hometown will open to you, as well as a way toward the unification of the new nation.(225-319,19920126)

4 One task of a tribal messiah is to help ones father and mother achieve the position of Adam and Eve prior to the Fall. Next is to restore kingship by recovering and establishing the hometown. When that happens, isn't everything finished? First, by restoring the hometown and the kingship, you as the tribal messiah will stand in a position equal to your parents. Then your hometown will be in the heavenly kingdom. You must have your parents in the heavenly kingdom in order to

have your hometown in that kingdom. The mission of the tribal messiah is to bring your parents to belong to the heavenly kingdom.(194-122,19891017)

5 Just as you shed sweat for Heaven, you need to shed blood for it. You should seek the bloody hills of tribulation in history with a joyful heart. You have not yet understood that you have to invest this much for your liberation. You might have thought that others would do everything and it had nothing to do with you, but this is not the case. You have to return to the origin. You are responsible to dismantle your current base in order to return to the homeland. You must clearly understand this and straighten out your root. Due to the Fall, the father and mother took a wrong turn, and the first son went the wrong way as well. Therefore, centered on True Parents and True Children, you need to turn around and adjust to the opposite direction, going toward the original right of parents and the original right of the eldest son. You will never make this connection the way you are; you can do it only after you turn yourself around 180 degrees.(178-099,19880601)

6 Up to this day I have taken responsibility for everything, but henceforth you have to take responsibility for your extended family. If you align yourself with this mission and attune your heart to God's at a ninety-degree angle, you can bring oneness on the levels of the individual, family and tribe. Nothing in your life—whether it is eating, sleeping, getting up or anything else—should revolve around your personal desires. Your life should be for your extended family, your clan. If you are part of the Kim clan, give your life trying to resolve the issues of the Kim clan. The Unification Church needs to prepare for this. This is the way to give life to the people and to give life to the nation as well. Please advance relentlessly in your tribal messiah mission.(187-180,19890205)

7 After you achieve victory as an individual and form a family, your family should overcome the levels of tribe, people, nation and world. Therefore your wish as an individual should be to mold your family into one that stands on the side of Heaven. After establishing such a family, however, your attitude may become, "I have gone through hell and beyond for the matter of the Blessing and have overcome all the obstacles. I have reached my goal now that I am married." You then may try to take a nap and enjoy your life. If you do, Satan will lay siege through the world, the nation, the people and the tribe to engulf you. The individual needs a family in order to settle. Thus we have been struggling to establish families. But by the same token, a family without a tribe cannot settle. Your tribe should serve as a hedge that protects you and your family from blasts of wind and other adversities. Without creating such a realm that can serve this purpose, you cannot live as a peaceful

family. The way to do that is to become the tribal leader for your relatives. That is the objective of the tribal messiah mission.(056-312,19720518)

8 The family is the textbook of tribal messiahship. Your grandfather and grandmother stand in the position of ancestors, your father and mother stand in a position representing the present and you represent the future. These three generations encapsulate the tribal messiah's textbook of love. Based on the heart that unites these as one, you have the capacity to live wherever you go in the world —north, south, east or west. The world consists of people who are like your grandfather, grandmother, father, mother or siblings. So if you are able to relate to them all with warm feelings, you will become a person possessing Heaven's love and have no problem entering the kingdom of heaven. If you create the environment in which you can engage with strangers as if they were your parents and siblings, you will link to the spirit world immediately. This is how you should live at your home. In order to create such an environment, you need to return to your hometown as a tribal messiah. This is your mission, so please overcome any hardships that prevent you from doing it, no matter how hard it may be.(215-310,19910221)

9 Jesus could not become a tribal messiah on earth. You, however, are living in the age of completion, and if you succeed in this mission you will have the qualification to become a daughter or son of the True Parents. On the Home Church altar, we can restore every mistake our forebears made. We can combine everything in history, everything in the Old and New Testaments, as the formation and growth stages, and offer it like a burnt sacrifice. If you become victorious and complete this, you will receive a pass allowing you to come and go wherever you wish in this world and the spirit world.(122-127,19821101)

10 Blessed families are formed on the basis of absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. Thus they possess Heavens right of ownership and are able to embrace all Heavens nations and the world. I went to the heavenly realm and restored the lineage with the heart of absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. I fulfilled the change of absolute lineage, the change of the realm of absolute ownership and the change of the realm of absolute heart. I recovered them all. When tribal messiahs fulfill the change of absolute lineage, the change of the realm of absolute ownership and the change of the realm of absolute heart in numerous tribes, the nation will automatically be saved. That is the end of everything, and everything will be made clean and clear. All these results hinge on your confidence in carrying out tribal messiahship. You have to work with the confidence that success will come through your activities carried out with energy.

Please realize that you are the sons and daughters of the True Parents who can gather up the entire world of their victory and claim, on their behalf, ownership over all that for which they have paid the price. This is the national restoration that tribal messiahs need to fulfill, and once you gather the entire world you will offer it to True Parents.(269-097,19950408)

Our mission in our hometown

11 You become a family member of the heavenly kingdom just by hanging True Parents' picture and raising the flag of the Unification Church. I will make you a family member of the heavenly kingdom. A number of people suffered tragedies because they cursed the Unification flag. There was a mysterious incident in which someone pointed his finger at me and his hand became diseased. He had to repent and pray for several nights to recover. Why do such incidents occur? The individual's fortune cannot affect the advance of heavenly fortune. The path of heavenly fortune is a destiny that cannot be changed. Just as the Israelites survived if they looked at the bronze serpent that Moses held up, you will live if you bow each time you see the Unification Church flag or a photograph of True Parents.(219-091,19910825)

12 When you put up the Unification Church flag, it is a signal to members passing by that they can enter your house and rest if they are tired or have lunch if they are hungry before they go on. Therefore you should always be prepared to receive guests. You should make such preparations on behalf of True Parents. You could keep one room for this purpose. You are saved by attending the Parents. However, since the Parents do not come in person, you should attend your guests as if they were the Parents. This practice represents the ideal of equalization of the highest heavenly standard. For this reason, attend your guests as if they were God or True Parents. Both you and they will surely be blessed.(169-221,19871031)

13 You should hold family revival services. Family revival services, while held focusing on your extended family, represent all tribes. You should think of each revival service as representing not only Korean tribes, but also the tribes of blessed families around the world. Then the people of the world will participate in such revival services. The Unification Church members in Korea today can hold revival services representing the world, focusing on the tribal foundation, with Korea as the base. You do not know what a great blessing this is.(185-141,19890103)

14 If you host revival services for your tribe once you have returned to your hometown, those services will go down in history Your revival services will be more

astonishing than the March First Mansei Movement, the independence movement through which Koreans tried to take back their nation. They will create a welcoming environment within which Heaven's law can work. You should be able to mobilize your tribe within this environment. It took me forty years to reach this level. It is how the path of indemnity works. On the global level, we have to separate from everything Satan can accuse. After making a full circle, we can protect ourselves on the national level and then establish the realm of tribal messiah. This is to connect the world that extends north, south, east and west.(186-233,19890205)

15 You should now return to your hometown and set up a lighthouse. Lighthouses shine brightly in the dark night. What would be the purpose of your lighthouse? It would be to shine for North-South unification and East-West unification. We need to keep the light on at the holy ground and ensure that it never goes out. Make it like the flame used at the Olympic Games and burn it so that it can become the light-house of unity between the north, south, east and west. If you burn a flame at the main holy ground, it will be like a lighthouse in the night. Every time you light it, it will bring to your mind that this is the flame of life that liberates the miserable souls coming from the north, south, east and west. For this you should unceasingly offer prayers and conditions of devotion, with the determination that you will be the wick and the fuel that sustains this flame. You have to guard our church until this light is no longer needed.(181-296,19881003)

16 You have to plant true heart in the original homeland. The inability to do this led to the Fall. Since the time now has come for you to return to the original homeland, you need to plant your true heart quickly. You need to devote yourself completely to doing this. This is the point of my saying you should become the lead family in your clan. For this, you need to return to your hometown, make sincere offerings, sow seeds of true love and move toward the dawning of the homeland of hope.(177-081,19880515)

17 The time has come for you to understand clearly who True Parents are. Unless you know True Parents clearly, you will remain ignorant of the tradition and will be unable to own it. The Heavenly Parent and True Parents have set indemnity conditions throughout history. I have walked this path in order to stand in the position of the ancestor of the world. Thus you as well have to walk this path in order to inherit the tradition and become the ancestor of your tribe. Because you have to set up a tradition for your tribe, I counsel you to know and own the tradition.(131-064,19840401)

18 When you return to your home-town, what should you do? Inspire the people to unite with you. The method to achieve this is simple. Sons should become teachers who can demonstrate through example the heavenly tradition. Thereby you will be teaching, "The kingdom of heaven will be realized when you do such and such a thing." Furthermore, mothers and fathers should show other mothers and fathers in the neighborhood that "by doing this, the village will become heavenly." The family of love, in which the husband loves the wife and the wife loves the husband, the parents love the children and the children love the parents, is what you hand down to them.(135-035,19850820)

19 You need to return to your hometown, shed tears and offer conditions of devotion. Truthfully, we have lived away from home up to the present. Just as the Israelites had to work in Egypt for four hundred years, we have been doing this work for forty-three years, far from home. Now is the time for us to return to our hometown and become the root of love. You have to love God, your parents, and your brothers and sisters. By doing so, you cut off the source of false accusation the world-level Satan raises against you. The Israelites did not establish the ideal kingdom of heaven in the promised land of Canaan; they proved incapable of building it. Learning from them, do not expect any support from Satan's world. Even if we have to keep traveling with our belongings bundled on our backs, we are the best people in God's eyes. Even if at night people curse us and dogs in the village bark at us, we are the best.(178-141,19880601)

20 You stand in the position of true children in front of True Parents, so I can bequeath the right of inheritance and of equal standing. Please believe completely in these special privileges that Heaven has bestowed upon you, and invest everything within the sphere of love. Just as God invested Himself totally, you ought to invest yourselves completely. This is the way you will resurrect your clan and, by extension, your nation. There is no path other than returning to your hometown.(177-162,19880517)

21 All of you who have returned to your hometown stand in the position of the Israelites who entered the promised land of Canaan. You should never envy those in your hometown who are richer or more powerful than you. You must not let secular or materialistic aspirations influence you. Instead, educate others properly. The best tradition is the one by which we love God, our descendants, and our people—the realm of Israel. Especially those of you who carry your children to the church, do not let yourselves be swayed by rich and powerful people. Bear in mind that you are returning to your hometown, and that this is the first time this has happened in a thousand or ten thousand years. Feel the excitement of returning to

your homeland; flood your hometown with tears that shake every cell of your body and bone marrow. Let your hometown be recognized as a holy land infused with Heaven's tears and the blood that you have shed. That is where the kingdom of heaven begins.(177-229,19880517)

22 When you love people, start with the most pitiful little children and move on to middle-aged people. There are many conscientious people among those who live in difficult circumstances. Unification Church families should love those who are in the worst circumstances. Even though people who are enduring hard times are stuck in the world of the devil, you will see that in the future, from among those people will emerge some who are able to inherit the fortune of God.(175-032,19880406)

Building the original homeland and the nation

23 Which path will you follow? To welcome the historic day of the liberation and independence of the homeland, you have to follow the path that leads to the lost original homeland. To receive this day is the hope of all people, of all eras and countries throughout history, the ultimate purpose of every culture, and the greatest wish of all humanity. Therefore this day of liberation absolutely has to come. If it does not, all the effort people have made will have been in vain. Wealth, even ethics and morals, will all have been in vain.(155-022,19641006)

24 Up to the present day, humanity has been without its original homeland and all people have been without the original nation. Hence God, who has carried out the providence of restoration among us to this day, will surely send the Lord of the Second Advent in the Last Days. When He does, it is to recover the original homeland. Then what will He do once He finds the original homeland? He will recover the group of original brothers and sisters and then do the work of engrafting them to the tribe and the people. He will expand this foundation to the nation and the world and thereby restore the original homeland.(155-322,19651101)

25 We are the group that advances the liberation of the homeland. When the Messiah returns to the earth, he will bring judgment. Through whom will that judgment take place? It will take place through those who are standing in the position of a sacrificial offering. Without fail, this is the process by which it will be done. Hence I call the Unification Church members to stand in that position in relation to the Korean peninsula, the thirty million people of this nation. Do not be swallowed up by any hardship. Have as your mindset, "No evil shall conquer the truth and heart that I possess. No hardship will stain my integrity." This is how you

ought to seek your original homeland. If we are the ones who are seeking the original homeland—and who will get there—we need to assemble as a people and create the original nation. We need to find our original hometown and recover the homeland.(155-023,19641006)

26 We do not yet have the original nation. The country where you are living is not it. The nation where you live was founded by fallen ancestors. It is not the nation God wants. Thus you are bound to say goodbye to it and forget about it. We have to purify the fallen nations at the levels of individual, family, tribe and people, beginning with hell on earth and in the spirit world all the way up to paradise. Unless this takes place, Gods original homeland, the original hometown, cannot emerge. In the Last Days, all people of faith need to unite, transcending denominational, religious and national boundaries. Furthermore, they have to unite as a new humanity and know God's final Will to liberate the homeland. Recovering the one unified nation, we will attend God as its Parent, as its Teacher and as its King.(398-146,20021209)

27 What is the cause of bitter sorrow for humanity on earth? It is not a lack of money or national sovereignty, or a shortage of people or land. It is that the world is not a place where we can find joy and happiness in our hearts and minds. This world is not one that brings joy to our hearts. This land and this society do not bring joy to our hearts. If we as human beings could find joy and happiness in our hearts within this land and this society, we would have no such feeling of bitter sorrow.(155-032,19641006)

28 Is there anyone who wants to attain wealth in order to end up in ruin? Is there anyone who practices patriotism in order to destroy his nation? Although we may not recognize the connection, when our actions are not in accord with the Principle by which the universe operates and are not accessing its source of energy, things go to ruin. But when they are in accord with the Principle, things develop. That is why, even though people have had only vague and abstract concepts of God since ancient times, they have in fact been upholding Him. What is it that humanity seeks in the present day? We know that the world in which we live is not our original homeland. It is not the world of freedom, where we sing of equality, peace and happiness. It is not the open and eternal world where mind and body can fly the flag of freedom. If God were strong in the realm of the conscience, the world would not be this way. But why is it this way? It is because of the Fall, which prevents human beings from reaching perfection. Human beings fell before reaching perfection. This is why the world is broken.(155-033,19641006)

29 What have we Unification Church members done? We have overcome persecution and oppression from society. However, we should not overcome persecution just as individuals, but with our family, our tribe, our people and all thirty million citizens of this nation of Korea. This is the Unification Church faith. This is why we are trying to move these thirty million people from the state of saying, "No," to saying, "Yes, let's do it!" We follow them into their hiding place and guide them, as their leaders. Everything we do should be the opposite of what they do. We say, "You might enjoy wining and dining, but we enjoy fasting. You may enjoy flying in airplanes, but we are happy even if we have to walk to our destination." This is how we have advanced. As we advance, we cannot afford to collapse, because we have to persevere until the day this nation is restored, until everything is resolved. What is true and what is strong will remain standing. That is heavenly law. Further, God allows whatever is on His side to last to the end. Hence we have to register ourselves with God's side. While we walk this path, if our families oppose us, we have to sail over our families. If society opposes us, we have to sail over our society. We absolutely have to arrive at our destination, the original homeland.(155-035,19641006)

30 We need True Parents. Thus we need a religion that will introduce us to them, a movement to seek the Will and the original True Parents, one that will guide the billions that make up humanity to the original homeland. Humanity did not descend from True Parents; it descended from false parents. Humanity therefore has to establish a relationship with True Parents, whom God supports. Confucian, Buddhist and Zen teachings include a concept similar to the parents of heaven and earth. We all have to build a relationship with True Parents and go through the gate to the path they have established. In this way all people will become true siblings to one another. To become true siblings, we have to inherit the lineage of True Parents and unite completely with them in heart, circumstances and hope. For those of us who hold this philosophy of sibling love, no matter how close we have been to our blood relatives up to now and no matter how happy, once we are connected with True Parents' flesh and blood, everything is changed at once. That encounter with True Parents, once made, cannot be compared with your connection to your natural parents. Even your natural parents must find the True Parents. If they do not, they will be lost.(155-035,19641006)

31 Your conscience knows the way to life. You like pleasant aromas, don't you? Why do you like them? It is because your sense of smell is designed to appreciate good fragrances. It is the same with your heart and mind. Your heart senses good just as your nose senses fragrance. This is why you can be spontaneously happy. No one needs to advertise what is inherently good. This is why you are happy when you are

on the way here, and why you miss me when you do not see me. This is why in the modern world people groan in their heart, "I wish I could go to the original homeland!" This desire swells within. Even though we do not know why or what it is exactly, our heart seeks the path leading to our original homeland. Why do our mind and heart want to go to that original homeland? It is because our father and mother, our brothers and sisters, our relatives and our nation are there. It is our promised land and our place of Sabbath rest. That is why our heart yearns for that original homeland.(155-036,19641006)

32 God is the One for whom everyone yearns. His dwelling place is where all people want to visit and live. What is it like in that place of happiness, the ideal original homeland? Simply speaking, it is a place to which we long to go. In that place, our beloved parents and siblings live. This is why we want to visit this original homeland and live there together in joy and happiness for all eternity, without ever leaving. We human beings lost this original homeland. Hence we must find that place and go there without fail.(155-036,19641006)

Section 4. The Return to the Hometown

1 We need to return to our hometown, that is, to our true hometown—but where is it? It is the place where love is. It is the place where the blood in our arteries flows together with history. This is so because we grew to adulthood absorbing the elements of that place. So that place throbs together with our cells, together with our blood and together with the beating of our heart. Our hometown is the place where our profound feelings of love are deeply embedded. As you head toward your hometown, whom are you seeking to meet? You are yearning for the embrace of your parents. That is why you are returning to your hometown.(176-246,19880511)

The true hometown and the role of ancestors

2 Religion has contributed greatly toward human beings' pursuit of the hometown. We say we should go to the kingdom of heaven or to the ideal world or to nirvana and that those places are not like this in which we presently live. They are the original homeland wherein we can live eternally. In this respect, religion has contributed to the quest for our original homeland. Then what is that place like? It is a place that meets all conditions. It is a perfect and flawless place, where the mind and body lack for nothing, not one thing. Such is the place humanity is pursuing right now. But consider this: even if you return to your home-town, if there is no one there to welcome you, it will feel so empty.(023-079,19690511)

3 On this planet Earth, the true hometown is not yet born. This is consistent with the perspective of religion. In a true hometown, there must be true parents. They are the owners of the home in the true hometown. The words "true parents" refer to a couple, a true man and true woman, whose bond is the pillar of true love. They have to be parents who bond to the pillar of love and who cannot but live their entire lifetime holding on to it, with no desire to do otherwise. We need only such true parents. Only when there are true parents who can generate true love can true sons and daughters come forth.(177-090,19880517)

4 Due to the Fall, Heaven's side came to stand in a lamentable position, that of the second son. Hence God called people to carry out tasks for their own sake through which to restore the right of the firstborn son. However, He could not do so arbitrarily. Only when a tribe can restore, in this world, the right of the first son on the levels of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation and world, will a family that is free from the realm of Satan's accusation form in the original garden of Eden, where there is no trace of the Fall. In light of this, we are not only displaced people; we are ignorant of how hard it is for us, as displaced people, to find our way back to our hometown.(188-234,19890226)

5 In the course of restoration through indemnity, what is it that the Messiah needs to accomplish when he comes? God's providence can be started only when history reaches the standard of indemnity on the world level. This is a place higher than the realm of the fallen Adam. God's providence cannot begin from a place below where Adam fell. To this day, because of the Fall of Adam, the path by which we can return to our hometown has been blocked. Therefore, in order for us to return to our hometown, Adam's representative needs to come and, at the very least, set the condition of indemnity from the level of the individual to the levels of family, tribe, people, nation and world; otherwise we cannot go back.(178-086,19880601)

6 To the present day, Satan has taken possession of your hometown and has kicked you out of it, acting as if he were the owner. But now you are going to return to your hometown and kick Satan out. That is only proper. When that takes place, the good spirits will come to your hometown and guard it. They will strike all the evil spirits. That is the view of the Principle as well as my view. What you do will have to be written down in history. I have walked my path looking forward to the time I could declare the return to the hometown in this world. When I think about my mother and father being in the spirit world, I feel anguish. However, I put that out of my mind and bless you, consoled by the liberation of innumerable relatives in your hometown in the place of my mother, father and siblings.(179-026,19880615)

7 Blessed families are like a staff for walking. They are like a bridge that crosses over the global world of death and a staff for walking on such a path. Blessed families are like that. You need to go out witnessing in your hometown. That is why I am telling you repeatedly to go back to your hometown. Your position is more blessed than mine. I cannot yet return to my hometown. Because my hometown is in North Korea, I cannot return to my hometown until the nation is unified. I cannot cross the bridge. I cannot return to my hometown. You, however, can return to your hometown. What I am saying is that you are in an environment in which you can hold on to your beloved parents, spouse, children and siblings, shed tears and weep endlessly. Filled with remorse over a people that is headed for eternal ruin, you can hold tight to your parents and siblings and shed tears of lamentation in a way that will touch their hearts.(030-335,19700406)

8 Now is the age in which the Unification Church is being welcomed. In the old days your mother and father shouted at you, "You good-for-nothing! You are running away after ruining your family, your village and your country!" They were speaking on behalf of Satan. You are now returning to your hometown in the name of God, brandishing the shield of victory. You are different from who you were in the old days. We have entered the age in which villages can welcome you, Korea can welcome you and the world can welcome you, so your local community should welcome you. Then what is the point around which you can come together as one? It is your own self, yearning for True Parents, loving True Parents, striving to liberate and accomplish the Will of True Parents, staking your future and devoting your tears, blood and sweat to Heaven. Through this you can harmonize with the original standard and make the flower of God's love bloom. Now, where can you make that flower bloom? That is the question.(178-108,19880601)

9 You need to know God's heart and my heart. You need to enter your hometown and plant this realm of heart once again. This is not indemnity. The past has been indemnified and is over. Now you need to plant what is true. You should know the fact that you are receiving the benefit of returning to your hometown first, before True Parents can return to theirs. I need to go to my hometown on a level one step higher than you. I need to return to my hometown after unifying South and North Korea. Because you are in the position of the children, your position is one step lower. Your responsibility remains to be fulfilled. It is to shoulder the work on behalf of True Parents, who have shed boundless tears, blood and sweat as they walked the course of indemnity for the historical ages on the levels of the individual, family, tribe, people and nation. It is also to soak your hometown with tears, blood and sweat for True Parents' sake, representing their heart, the heart with which they

can enter the land of North Korea and offer victory and gratitude before Heaven.(178-108,19880601)

10 Jesus said a prophet is not without honor except in his hometown. Nonetheless, where is it that Rev. Moon of the Unification Church has told you to go? I have told you to go to your hometown and become its ancestors. Such a thing has never happened in history. It did not happen for any people written of in the Bible. What I am saying is that, although it was said that a prophet will not be honored in his hometown, the time has come in which you can be so honored. These are my words and at the same time are words to be recorded without fail in the administration of Heaven. This is why I am telling you to go to your hometown.(182-212,19881023)

11 In the garden of Eden, God would have raised Adam and Eve tenderly and said to them when they reached maturity, "You are my eternal home. Your family will be as numerous as the grains of sand and will spread like stars in the sky across the hemisphere for thousands of years to come." They would have formed the basis on which He would have been able to dwell unhesitatingly with anyone, anywhere, among them through the lineage. But the Fall severed the basis of that hope. Hence it needs to be reconnected. Once that happens, to where will we return? Adam and Eve fell and thus sowed bad seed, and the false root emerged. So the false ancestors were born. Therefore, I push forward in order to place you in the position of true ancestors, telling you to return to your hometown. The false root came to exist due to the Fall. It does not embody the original heart. Satan's root, which blocks the original heart, should be removed, pulled out and left to rot. On top of the rotted weed we should plant the true seed, so that a new realm of heart can sprout in the land of the original hometown. So start anew the love of True Parents and the True God in your neighborhood and home, that is, in your clan—in the Kim clan if you are a Kim or the Moon clan if you are a Moon. In light of all this, it will not do unless you return to your hometown.(177-070,19880515)

12 You have to return to your hometown. Now you have to inherit the right of the first son from Satan's world. You have to inherit true love, return to your hometown and plant the tradition of True Parents. By doing so, this can become the blessed land of Korea, where God can be with us, where His full right of inheritance can be a blessing to all people, and where blessings can permeate horizontally.(176-280,19880511)

13 Once you have been planted, centered on the heart of the tribal messiah mission in accordance with the providential Will, no one can uproot you. This is

because I have planted you firmly. Since I have planted the tribal messiahs firmly, no one can uproot them. That is why I am saying the blessed people of the Unification Church should return to their hometown. Representing me, leave everything behind and go to your hometown. Henceforth you need to drink the water of your hometown, eat the rice produced in your hometown, and offer all the devotions you possibly can while living there. Since I have laid the foundation of victory on the world level, you should lay the foundation of victory on the tribal level. You should have nothing in your possession. It is the same as it was at the time of Moses. Even if you go to your clan with nothing but your bare hands, you still should be able to feed them. Please become their ancestors.(187-184,19890205)

The profound significance of returning to your hometown

14 The world has lost its homeland. How can the world's people, a global domain of the displaced, return to their homeland? God knows the answer to this question. His providence sends the Messiah to the earth, who is to lead the displaced people to their homeland. After they have returned home, religion and all its customs will be unnecessary. Tearfully embracing your mother and father is the best form of worship, the fulfillment of everything God desires. Even if heaven and earth experience upheaval ten million times, if the unity of three generations—grandparents, parents and children—is as strong as an iron fortress and if they serve God as their core, then wherever they are, they will be the one seed through which the kingdom of heaven can be realized. They themselves will be that. This can be said to be the origin of the seed of God's love and the seed of God's life. We need to find our way to it. Otherwise there will be no hope for the kingdom of heaven on earth, the heavenly kingdom of peace or the world of happiness and freedom.(225-301,19920126)

15 Because the Unification Church has come to know God, its strategy is to be struck first and then to reclaim what was lost. But now that the right of the eldest son has been restored, it is time to reverse that rule. You can enter any house you come upon and say, "Do you know the history of True Parents? Listen." You have stories that will make the couple you are visiting kneel down and sob with tears. I have told you: return to your hometown so you can fulfill your tribal messiah responsibility to register it as a base of the kingdom of heaven.(219-099,19910825)

16 Adam and Eve should not have fallen. They should have formed a relationship of love with God at a place that had nothing to do with Satan. But they were unable to do so. This failure, however, finally has been reversed, at least conditionally. With

that as the standard, the expansion of that condition will be monumental. Having set this condition, I am telling you to return to your hometown. Since True Parents now have sovereignty, you need to restore Canaan. You need to return from the realm of Egypt to your hometown, establish a happy family that will live well for eternity, organize a new tribe, and engraft it to the nation. For this purpose, you need to return to your hometown. In the history of religion, the instruction was for people to leave their hometown, that is, leave their homes and renounce the world. There has never been anything like this, the call to return to your hometown. (183-101,19881015)

17 The work of saving the fallen world, that is, creating religion and carrying out the providence of salvation, is for the purpose of returning to the origin. The history of the providence of salvation is the history of restoration. The history of restoration is the history of re-creation. God's creation of humankind essentially began when He invested love in the world. By carrying out the same work in silence, you can become the queen of love or the king of love in a household. I am saying that, for the sake of your extended family members, you should become their ancestors. In the world of religion, scriptures have urged that one should leave one's country and one's hometown, that one should quit one's home, but never have they instructed one to return to one's hometown. Nonetheless, I am telling you to return to your hometown, shoulder all difficulties that come to you, and build a new society. Heaven and earth will support you at that place. You will not go to ruin.(180-330,19881005)

18 Blessed are the words, "Return to your hometown." Even the blessed land of Canaan to which the Israelites returned was not their hometown. A world-level territory, for which they would need to fight, still remained for the future. But now you return to your hometown after our passage over the global level. If you are standing in a position that unites South and North Korea, no one ever will be able to expel you. Instead the nations will serve you and the people will revere you. If you do not seize this amazing position from which you can serve God, what will become of you? You will go to ruin. This is why you should engrave what I have taught you deep in your very bones and consider the results that will come from the actions you take. From now on, rather than acting horizontally, act vertically. Be those who orient at a ninety-degree angle, who adopt a vertical starting point. Then when you are to stand somewhere, you can be the image of God on the horizontal line. Otherwise you cannot dwell in the heavenly nation.(181-281,19881003)

19 When the people who were unable to return to their hometown are given permission to do so and are told that the day to do so has arrived, how great will be

their joy! If you were to say, "I have purchased a twenty-story building in Myeongdong and for that reason I don't want to go to my hometown or anywhere other than here," you would bequeath bitter sorrow to your descendants for tens of thousands of years to come. It would be as if a villain drove a stake into their heart. Has any member of the human race on this earth not borne a grudge against Adam and Eve for their wrongdoing? So would you trade your hometown simply to possess a building? Only the son of a rebel would do so; he would have bitter sorrow embedded in his bosom for tens of millennia. He would never be able to go where he longed to go, and would never win sympathy from the person he loved; he would never be allowed to set foot anywhere.(219-143,19910829)

20 When the Israelites went in to take over Canaan, they looked like a vast assemblage of beggars. Since they had wandered in the wilderness for forty years, famished every day, eating only manna and quail, they must have looked terrible. Observing their appearance, you would have thought they were on the verge of death. That is why when they saw the affluent households among the seven tribes of Canaan, they said, "I wish I could marry such people. I want to eat good food like they do." They basically sold themselves out. When the Canaanites opposed them, the Israelites gave up their values in order to treat themselves well. When you set out for your hometown, do not sell yourself out. Instead, dominate your environment and transform it into one in which you can bring the seven tribes of Canaan to voluntary submission, unite them as one and play the role of the owner, as their messiah.(186-228,19890205)

21 Before I instruct you to do something, I first have you make a vow. Once you have made the vow, you need to practice it. I have done more than I have instructed you to do. I am now fulfilling the responsibility of not only a tribal messiah but also a national messiah and world Messiah. Since I am the world Messiah, if you promise to be national messiahs, there is hope. So don't even dream of saying you are not going to be a tribal messiah.(185-218,19890108)

22 The secret to returning to the hometown is, first, true love that is totally united with God; second, the life that is absolutely united with that love; and third, the lineage that is absolutely united with that life. When you go back as the tribal messiah, you need to carry love with you. The blessed families of the Unification Church stand in the position of Eve. You need to unite your sons and daughters and go with them to your hometown to save your tribe. Adams family fell and his tribe multiplied wrongly, and you as the tribal messiah have the responsibility to save them. Unless you can bring your sons and daughters to stand at the front while you follow from behind, there can be no path for you as their parents. They cannot

inherit the seed of new life that is on the threshold of the heavenly kingdom. The foundation for the love of the family, the life of the family and the lineage of the family has been laid, but the love, life and lineage of God on the tribal level are yet to be attained. They need to be woven together. When that is done, because I am standing at the center, I can engraft them.(225-305,19920126)

23 In returning to your hometown, where are you to go? You are not re-turning to your country; you are returning to your hometown, specifically, to your home. You are going back to your original home. When you consider the history of humankind in returning to the hometown, where is the original home? The hometown is not based on the standard of the fallen Adam and Eve. When we say we are returning to our hometown, we are referring to the hometown of the unfallen, original, perfected Adam and Eve. That is where God is.(219-162,19910829)

CHAPTER 3

The Mission of a Church Leader

Section 1. The Mission and Responsibility of a Church Leader

1 When a priest performs a ceremony, if the people do not attend, he should consider it his responsibility. So if people do not come, you should strike yourself, shed tears on their behalf, and pray that God will forgive them. You should think that the people stayed away because you are a sinner, and repent of your sins representing the people and the nation. If you pray on a wooden floor, that floor should never remain dry; it should be soaked in tears twenty-four hours a day. Then God will guide you to the ones to whom you should witness. When they come to see you, you should serve and attend them as a servant, as if they were kings and queens. You must do so because you as a sinner need to remove your sins. The more you serve and attend them as kings and queens, the faster you will indemnify your sins. When you go down below them and serve those sinful people as if they were Heaven, you can set many indemnity conditions.(089-290,19761204)

2 The people who are in the position of Cain need to support the priests. The priests are the ones who make offerings to redeem the people. Since they do so to redeem the sins of those in Cain's position, those people need to make offerings to their Abel and support him. In return, Abel must offer his life for Cain. Cain's offering is based on material things, whereas Abel's offering is based on the people.

They become one at that point and the groundwork for restoration is laid. The high priests who represented the people of Israel were in the position of Abel. Hence, by paying the price of hard work to restore Cain, they could claim the people in Cain's position as their portion. They claimed people, not material.(044-146,19710506)

3 An altar cannot be set up unless the high priest fulfills his responsibility. It requires a priest. An altar cannot be prepared without a priest. What, then, is required for you to become a high priest? You need to belong to a blessed group of people whom God loves. Otherwise, you cannot attain that position. In Israel, the priests were from the tribe of Levi. Not just anyone could become a high priest. The Levites did not receive their own share of the land; the only thing that belonged to them was the temple. At the center of the temple was the altar, and it was on the altar that the sacrificial offerings were made. The only thing the chief priest could claim as his share was the sacrificial offering, and this only after he had made the offering on the altar and thus benefited the people with redemption.(155-276,19651031)

4 What should the Unification Church do? At the present time, we should stand in the same position as the Levites. That means we should possess nothing of our own. Then we can be in the position to become high priests. Each of you ought to become a high priest with a temple. After you obtain a temple, you need an altar. After you have prepared your altar, you need to make offerings. To save people during the Old Testament Age, God had the high priests kill sheep and heifers and offer them as sacrifices. He even asked Abraham to offer his most beloved son as a sacrifice. Now, however, what do you love the most and deem most precious? It is your own self. That is why I am asking you to offer yourself as a sacrifice.(155-276,19651031)

5 Consider the people in leadership positions. They cannot be happy just as they please. In fact, they are often quite miserable. Why are they miserable? It is because they feel that they are always in debt. They are always thinking, "I must be good to the members in my my church," and always feel indebted to them. When a leader sees that one of his members is miserable, he or she should talk to that person all through the night with concern about that person's life. If that person is in a life-or-death situation, it is the responsibility of the spiritual leader to block the way to death, even at the cost of sacrificing himself. The leader needs to stand in such a position. Thus, the leader should consider whether he or she is living for the sake of the members, and how much he or she loves them. A leader should not think of the members as strangers, but as family. They are like branches of a tree, and should be well cared for so they can grow.(070-147,19740209)

6 The person to whom you witness is called your spiritual son or daughter. That person is your own branch. How much have you endeavored night and day to nourish that branch? To do so, you need to become either the trunk or the root. If you are the root, the more branches there are, the more nutrients you will need to absorb from the soil to supply all that the trunk and branches require. You will need to constantly nourish them, without rest, to meet their needs and help them grow. If you are limited and unable to supply the nutrients that the branches at the top require, those branches will wither and die. Hence, you need to have something within you that connects to the bounty of life that surrounds you. If you are grateful for your life, life will always spring up and flow through you. Al-though your circumstances may be painful, you need to preserve a sanctuary deep in your heart where life can dwell, a nest where you can find peaceful rest. Then God will be with you.(070-147,19740209)

7 It is important to take responsibility. Yet you live without realizing that you have to shoulder responsibility not only for this era, but also for history. You need to realize, "My ancestors, my current household, and my future descendants all depend on me." There-fore, as a spiritual leader you must not think you are free to do as you please. It is your obligation to live in keeping with the one way, even when you are surrounded by enemies. What is the one way? It is none other than following the way of the heart and teaching the way of filial piety. Even when eating or sleeping, you should be immersed in such a heart. Then you can develop.(070-150,19740209)

8 You do not know how often I have shed tears because I missed you family members. God has also shed many tears as He sought His true sons and daughters. When a person comes to your church, you should never think, "How large a donation is this person going to make?" To think only about money is the viewpoint of a Pharisee. A church leader who thinks that way will never prosper. You leaders must love people rather than their money. When you love people, money will naturally follow. Nevertheless, most people's thinking is the other way around. Also, some leaders say that you should witness only to people who are young and handsome, but this is wrong! The church is an extension of the family. In families there are grandmothers, grandfathers and middle-aged women and men, as well as young people. If the Unification Church consisted of only young people, this situation would need to be corrected.(070-150,19740209)

9 When something good is available, a spiritual leader should strive to use it for the benefit of all his people. If his people already live in good circumstances, the leader should be able to give them something of greater benefit. The leader should always

be in a position to give something. From this perspective, God deserves our sympathy! If you ask world-famous spiritual leaders whether they feel truly happy, they will reply that they do not. They are in a position to give at all times, and they have to deal with people from various social classes. It would be simple if they had to deal only with people who are like themselves, but in fact they need to deal with many kinds of people because they are to live for the sake of all. Problems arise when they cannot give everything to all people at all times.(072-308,19740714)

10 God, who has been taking responsibility for the providence of restoration, is the most pitiful of all beings. When people receive something, they are often not content; they want something more. If so, from whom? They want something from a particular central figure. If all those who follow God desired to be recipients, God would be in trouble. Whether they desired love or some other precious gift, if everyone tried to make it their own possession, He would be in big trouble- That is why He has emphasized conditions that involve relationships. In your life of faith, you are faithful not for yourself but for the sake of others; in interacting with and loving others, you do so not for yourself, but for them. Accordingly, you should follow the way of faith, live for the sake of others, and love based on this public standard. You should set such a standard in your life. Therefore you need to become a more public person.(072-309,19740714)

11 The mission of a leader is not only to propagate or sow the Word but also to reap it. The act of propagating the Word is the same as sowing it, but the leader must also reap it. The leader needs to water the sprouts, nurture them and pull out weeds, so they can flower and bear fruit. The leaders mission is accomplished only when the fruit has had time to ripen, and is ready for harvest. Hence, a new leader should not uproot a plant that someone else has sown. Instead, the leader should nurture it well. Though it was planted by someone else, when the leader nurtures it well and harvests it, it will be stored in his heavenly storehouse. Nevertheless, instead of thinking like this, a new leader may uproot it and replant it as if it were his own, without understanding the former leader's character or overall method of guidance. As a result, the plant may die. He should not do this.(029-194,19700228)

12 In all respects, the most active members are the mainstream in the church. Those who are in charge of the church are like the Levites of Israel. The Levites did not have a share in the land. So who gives a salary to the ministers? The congregation does. To maintain their livelihood, church leaders need to demonstrate to the church members that they bring a higher value. In other words, a church leader needs to become a sacrificial offering, able to inspire the church members so that they joyfully donate and even offer to bring food. This is the way

of a church leader. By practicing the heavenly way, I came to learn this law.(083-095,19760205)

13 God cannot help but watch you, the people who need to take responsibility to reform the environment that can be His foundation. Unification Church members who serve in public positions in all departments must have a heart of restoration; otherwise they will not be able to transform this world into the heavenly kingdom. In this world full of tears, we must build this movement while shedding tears. Then we must expand it from a national movement to a worldwide movement. True Unification Church members and leaders are those who shed tears. Since the Fall led to tears, we need to be restored through tears. Therefore, do not cry for yourself; instead you must shed tears for humanity centered on God. The more such tears you shed, the closer you are to the realm of Heaven's heart.(094-324,19771016)

14 In following the path of faith, you should not insist on going your own way. On the path of faith you have to climb up step by step; you are following behind many leaders in the spirit world who took the spiritual path during their lifetimes on earth. You cannot form a relationship with Jesus until you have surpassed his three disciples, Peter, James and John. Trying to do so would be like approaching a person of higher rank and introducing yourself; that would be impolite. In this respect, in leading a life of faith you need to know the quickest way to glory. That way is finding and following the special paths of those who took responsibility to cultivate their spirituality.(032-164,19700712)

15 The church leader must build a bridge between the Will of God and our day-to-day lives. One who pursues a personal agenda cannot become a church leader. A leader is responsible to serve as a bridge between God's Will and the people. Therefore, that leader should live for the sake of the believers who come to see him or her. A church leader exists for the church members and, focusing on the Will of God, is responsible for their psychological well-being and spiritual life. A leader guides church members based on his or her area of responsibility. Thus, if the leader is in a high position from God's point of view, members who unite with that leader can also rise to that high position. When your leader offers devotions for you and prays for you and for the forgiveness of your sins, through that prayer you can attain the same standing as the leader. This is why people wish to be prayed for by someone who has received special grace. In this manner, your leader builds the bridge for you to find your way. However, the closer we get to the Last Days, the closer we approach the time when the internal issues of the spirit world will

manifest on earth. At that time there will be many religious leaders who can personally carry out Heaven's work.(032-165,19700712)

16 People today are so indifferent to others. In their everyday relationships, they seldom respect one another or the bonds between them. Regardless of gender or age, people tend to have the attitude that dealing with others is a nuisance. If you view others as a nuisance, you cannot walk the path of righteousness. For God to carry out His providence of restoration, He needs not just the Republic of Korea. He needs to connect all people throughout the world; for this reason God is deeply interested in us. That has been one of the most important goals in God's providence thus far. If we are truly a group of people gathered to accomplish this goal, we should be willing to stand with God and take the same interest in people. We should relate to people not just superficially, but with a deep heart. Then we will be in a position to form true relationships and genuine bonds.(025-291,19691005)

Section 2. The Public Life of a Church Leader

1 When I am even a little late for morning pledge service, I cannot hold up my head for the rest of the day. Such is the kind of life I live. Throughout that day and week, I cannot get a grip on myself. The following week I wake up early and offer devotions tenfold or even a hundredfold to indemnify my lapse of the previous week. Only after I have set such a condition can I feel at ease. This is how I live my life. What a difficult life! I may look impressive when talking to you, but to be able to do that I must live a life that is full of restrictions, with no way out for weeks and even months on end. Is it a private life or a public life? It is a public life. You have no idea what a difficult position I am in as a religious leader.(031-254,19700604)

2 My history will not be written while I am alive; it will be written only after I pass on. If I did anything that cannot be recognized publicly, based on the Principle, then I will be in serious trouble. The question is whether the content of the Principle supports my way of life. If my life is thought to have gone in the wrong direction, I will end up losing everything I have achieved. That is why a person in charge is in a difficult situation. A leader should not be the first to go to bed, no matter how tired he or she may be. He or she should not lie down until everyone else has gone to bed, and should be the last to finish praying. A leader should lead a life of faith and offer devotions, even if it means living in poverty with hardly anything to eat or wear. Such is the position of a leader. When a leader lives that way, he or she cannot go wrong, no matter what others think.(033-169,19700811)

The path of public righteousness

3 Even when you do something as ordinary as eating rice, you should consider whether your act of eating is public or private. When you eat a meal, eat for the thirty million people of Korea and for the people of the world. If you try to make the world exist for the sake of Korea, Korea will be reduced to ruin. If you try to make the world exist for the sake of the United States, the United States will be brought to ruin. The United States can prosper only when it exists for the sake of the world.(036-074,197011 15)

4 Which should be higher, our direct relationships of love in the fallen world, or our indirect relationship of love with God? We should place our indirect relationship with God higher than our direct love relationships in this world. If that is not the case, we need to elevate our level of love. When we form that bond with God, we create a place where everyone longs to be. It is a bond and a relationship that people respect, whether they want to or not. Then, what can we learn from it and what should we do? We should learn how to love humanity. In today's world, many view our Unification Church members as having no bond with Heaven and no relationship with God. We may appear so to them, but in fact we have that bond and we have a profound relationship with God. Since we have attained such a position, we need to manifest the love that God desires to give humanity.(025-286,19691005)

5 You who call each other church members should love each other more than you love other people, more than you love the things of this world. By truly loving one another you create the environment of love that can expand to the world. In this regard, the important thing is how much you appreciate the life of each member. Ask yourself how much you value each of your fellow church members. Even in the fallen world, when a person is going through difficulties other people help by giving whatever they can. If we cannot surpass that level of bonds and relationships, in the future we will be absorbed back into the fallen world. In that case, we cannot become the foothold for God to establish the bond that He so greatly hopes to make with all people.(025-286,19691005)

6 You leaders need to be clear in your standpoint. Otherwise you will have a negative impact on your members. Whether you are in charge of a business or a church, you should be able to always love all the people with a public mind, that is, a caring heart, as though God had sent them to you. Care for your members as you would care for yourself, according to the law of public-mindedness. If you have the position of a leader, you should love all the people under your charge more than

you assert yourself. Your standard in this matter should be higher than any existing relationship in Satan's world today. Otherwise we cannot realize the kingdom of heaven that we desire.(025-287,19691005)

7 If you do not attend church three weeks in a row, you might even encounter an accident. If you do not attend church for one week, a second week and a third week, you will not feel at ease. You will not be able to say what is really on your mind, so instead you will lie. If this happens repeatedly, you will grow estranged from the church and eventually you will cut yourself off completely. As can be seen, although we witnessed to numerous people, many of them were lost because we lacked a good follow-up system to take care of them. Therefore, rather than focusing on giving Divine Principle lectures and making new relationships, you should take responsibility for those who connected with us in the past and raise them to bear fruit.(029-194,19700228)

8 As a public leader, your attitude is an important issue. Heaven is in the highest position. That is why Jesus said, "Whoever loves father and mother more than me is not worthy of me; and whoever loves son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me." (Matt. 10:37) Jesus said this to indicate he held the highest position. Heaven strives to love us and establish a bond with us from this highest position. Thus, when you go out and introduce God to other people, how should you approach them? First, do not treat them with disdain. Someone may look plain and simple, but, although you cannot pinpoint it, you may get the feeling, "He is like my elder brother," or, "She is like my elder sister." Or perhaps when the person turns around, you may feel, "I have seen this person before." Surely such a person is meant to have a connection with you.(050-265,1971 1108)

9 When you witness to someone, how much importance do you place on that person's life? You need to reflect on this issue. A doctor is responsible to examine and strive to cure any patient who comes to see him. It does not matter if the doctor himself is ill. If that doctor is the only person who can cure the patient's ailment, and if the only way to cure the ailment is by performing surgery, then it is the doctor's duty to forget about his own pain, take up a scalpel and work for hours using all his medical expertise to save that person's life. Such a doctor can be called a true doctor of doctors. If that doctor died immediately after completing the operation, he would be regarded as having ended his life as a true doctor. And if that last patient were cured, that person would never forget what the doctor had done. The patient would even speak of it as the last words to his or her descendants.(069-165,19731031)

10 Leaders of this age should not consider themselves great. They should know that they have attained their positions thanks to the merit and sacrifices of their many ancestors. They should not think of themselves as great and claim they have the right to take what belongs to others because they deserve it. Rather, leaders should have the attitude that they must live a public life. A political party should not put itself ahead of the nation; rather, the party should put the nation first. Likewise, the Unification Church should not put itself first, for it exists to save the nation. The Unification Church should not exist to own the world; rather, it should be a church that exists to save the world. When that happens, Heaven will always be with the Unification Church. Church leaders need to understand this tradition as they carry out their work. I am telling the leaders not to think they have risen to their present positions because they are great.(130-304,19840213)

11 The world in which we live needs to be governed by law. Based on the law, matters are distinguished as right or wrong. Then what about the universe with God at its center? What will be the law by which we distinguish right from wrong? It will be the law of public righteousness, of living for the greater good. This will determine what is good or evil. Even in the family there are laws. Whether something is right or wrong is determined based on the family law of the greater good. The parents are in charge of upholding their family law. Hence, they cannot violate that law, and they are responsible for dealing with any such violation. If the parents do something wrong, the entire family will be affected. This also holds true for any society, company or organization. Each has its laws, and it depends on the leader whether the entity is for the public or private purpose, for good or for evil.(147-259,19861001)

12 The leader of an organization bears public responsibility. As the person in charge, he or she has to take full responsibility. He or she should uphold and follow its rules and regulations. The leader guides the organization as its subject, which determines whether it will go the way of goodness or the way of evil. The same is true for the ruler of a nation. A nation's ruler is its subject figure who shoulders full responsibility to ensure that his nation upholds the law, which should be based upon the law of public righteousness. That ruler needs to be fully prepared for this role in all its aspects, both internal and external. Thus, leaders should be able to govern by the law of public righteousness, to uphold that law and influence all citizens of the nation to fulfill their responsibilities under it. Otherwise, from the perspective of the law of public righteousness, the ruler cannot represent the entire nation.(147-260,19861001)

13 The world is surely heading toward unity with the central figure and the public will, centered on the law of the greater good. People in both the physical world and the spirit world are following this same path. Even God cannot just do as He pleases. Having set up the law of the greater good, God can firmly secure His position only by maintaining the centrality of that law and fulfilling His public duties and responsibilities in accordance with that law. He cannot assert His authority by ignoring His own law. The same is true for us, regarding the laws of the family, society and nation.(147-260,19861001)

14 You may think you deserve to take the money that people have earned and donated, believing it is your due. In fact you are stealing the money, and you will be punished. The money that people offer is more fearsome than poison. If they earned it by shedding tears, going hungry and becoming thin, and you do not treat it with a deeper heart than that, you will be en-snared by that money. If you have not attained the standard of goodness to properly handle the money that was offered with devotion before Heaven, your children will pay the price. It will harm them and consume them. That is why you should regard public funds as precious. This is true everywhere in the world. If the sons and daughters of well-known revivalists or religious leaders go in the wrong direction, it is because those parents incurred such a debt. I know this. That is why when people bring an offering, I do not receive it with my own hands. I tell them to take the money and use it for some purpose without informing me about it. I can live without receiving that money. Or when I do receive such money, I do so in the name of God. I receive it saying, "I will use this as public money." I do not lay hands on even a cent for my private use.(212-266,19910106)

15 To hold a public position is a daunting task. Those who hold a public position cannot live with selfish motives. When I give a sermon, if other pastors speak for an hour, I ought to speak at least ten minutes more. When mountain climbing, I have to be able to claim that I have taken at least one step more than others; otherwise someone will accuse me for not making a proper condition. That is why I have been living such a pitiful life. I can never live a comfortable life, just taking it easy. Since I live with such caution, Heaven also treats me with caution and heavenly fortune treats me carefully as well.(212-267,19910106)

16 A church leader should never be dry-eyed. The most pitiful and sorrowful person in the world is a church leader. When I think about Gods heart and the providence of restoration, I often feel that God is to be pitied. When I think about all I need to do on the path of restoration, I feel so sad that I choke, my throat closes up and my heart bursts. Many times I feel as if I am about to faint. Without such a heart, I

could not have lived for God and carried out His work. When passing by a village somewhere, if I happen to see something bad, I think, "I will let it go right now, but you wait and see. Later I will clean up this place with my own hands." That is the kind of person I am.(046-298,19710817)

17 You need to pray a lot. Without praying, you can neither win God's sympathy nor receive His help. That is because if you are focused on yourself, you do not have a basis to receive sympathy. This is something to feel sad about. However, if you become someone with whom God can sympathize, you will never be lonely. Even if you lie down in your room in the dead of winter on a cold floor that feels like a block of ice, you will not feel miserable. Was that not the reason Jesus prayed a lot? If you do not have time to pray, you should pray while you are walking down the street, or you can witness instead. That is, you can witness to others, substituting that for your daily prayer.(046-298,19710817)

18 Leaders need to give, not receive. When giving, they should not give the same thing over and over. They need to give something new. It is difficult to give sermons, isn't it? In giving lectures on the Divine Principle, you can just repeat what it says, but giving sermons is difficult because you should not give the same message repeatedly. When parents feed their beloved children, they pick and choose a variety of nutritious foods. Likewise, you should not give the same message again and again. If you have nothing to give, pray to receive inspiration from God. Then feed what you have received from God to your church members. Discuss with Him what to feed them.(046-299,19710817)

19 You certainly represent God. Some-times you may pray without being entirely aware of the content, yet you are deeply moved by your own prayer. When you are in such a state, everyone present will be captivated by God, and will recognize through personal experience that God is the driving force and the source of life. Through that experience, they will come to feel that they absolutely need God. To give people such powerful and moving experiences, your prayers are absolutely necessary.(046-299,19710817)

20 People in charge should never be arrogant. A leader should be like a parent, a mother or father. The leader is a representative of God. The leader needs to invest greater effort than anyone else, day and night, and take responsibility to resolve all kinds of situations, whether spiritual or physical, internal or external, with a sincere heart. He or she should be the one to whom others come for advice, the subject partner of heart that people love more than they love their own parents. Without

the ability to lead in this way, one cannot fulfill the mission of a leader.(068-273,19730805)

The way to live for the greater good

21 You should be loyal to your society, loyal to your church, and loyal to your family. What is the purpose of the church? It is where you shape and cultivate your character. You need the church because of the Fall. Your family and society are not sufficient to perfect your character. You cannot perfect your character just the way you are. You may have gone to college; you may even have earned a doctoral degree, but it does not mean that your character is ideal. That is why you need the church. Through me, you need to establish a bond with the new Parents and become their new children. Then you can begin your family anew, bring it under Gods dominion and advance toward a new world. In doing so, the church serves as your foothold. Otherwise you cannot be successful. Your new family is formed through the church, and a new society is also created through the church.(025-126,19690930)

22 What is the basis for asserting that a person is upright? An upright person brings together the heart of Heaven and the heart of the people at one central point. You ought to be such a person. At church you should offer all your devotion to win a central place in the hearts of its members. For this, you need to invest all your heart and soul. You should offer devotion beyond what you offer for your family, school or personal success in life. That is why Jesus said, "You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind." (Matt. 22:37) You should love God with all your devotion and all your soul and all your heart.(025-127,19690930)

23 The church exists for the purpose of saving the nation. Christianity, however, does not know this. Christianity believes that the church exists for the purpose of going to the kingdom of heaven. Even that purpose is for the individual. This has resulted in nations, like the United States, that embrace individualism. The Unification Church is striving to reform the world that consists of such nations. We witness to others not for the prosperity of the Unification Church, but to make the nation prosper. Religious people should not simply dwell within a nation, but work to save it. Judaism declined because it lost its leading role in saving the nation of Israel. The policy of the Unification Church is to work for the sake of the nation.

(034-330,19700920)

24 The church is to seek and establish God's nation. Its purpose is not to seek and establish the church. God's original ideal of creation is to make this world a unified world centered on that nation, and therefore the aim of the church should be to seek that nation. How do we do this? Cain and Abel must become one. Unless Cain and Abel become one, we cannot establish the nation.(149-050,19861102)

25 You blessed families should know that your mission is truly great. You need to be parents who can influence your sons and daughters. This is your first mission. To do so, you have to be thorough in conducting your church life and public life, and you should be exemplary in your personal life. These are absolutely necessary in training your children to go the way of the providence in the future.(031-277,19700604)

26 Which type of life is more internal, the habitual life you lived in society before joining the church, or the life you have lived since joining the church? When asked such a question, you may answer that it is your church life. Yet how seriously have you valued your internal life? Some think they are going the way of the Will, and lightly say, "What I am doing now is for the Will" Can God dwell there? As I have walked the path of the Will, my main focus has been to seek the place that God can dwell. Where is the central place where He can reside? How can we unite centered on that place? How can we create harmony there? How can we establish a foundation of unity at the place that God can officially recognize, and how can we adapt ourselves to it internally? These are the questions I have focused on as I have pioneered my way until now.(022-038,196901 19)

27 Nonbelievers may simply base their social lives on their families, but people of faith need to base their social lives not only on their families but also on the church. Nonbelievers desire recognition and fame in their social lives. People of faith, in contrast, should place greater importance on their church lives. Social life and church life can be likened to the positions of Cain and Abel. Social life, being external, is Cain-like; whereas church life, being internal, is Abel-like. Therefore, your social life should become a reflection of your internal life. It should be the object partner. Your internal church life should become the center of your external social life. If you cannot stand in a position to be publicly recognized by God in your church, you cannot represent God in your social life. Therefore, the question is whether you can be publicly recognized by God in your church.(022-036,196901 19)

28 Some people do well in their church but not so well in society. Conversely, there are others who do well in society but not so well in church. Those who do well in

society but not in church do not possess the essential qualities necessary to bear spiritual fruit. Who is better, a person who does well in church or a person who does well in society? It is those who do well in church. Those who have the qualities that can bear fruit can go forward with hope for tomorrow, but the relationships of those who lack those qualities cannot be fruitful.(036-020,19701108)

29 The offering of devotions is a lifeline for people who take the path of serving God. Like a water pipe that carries water from the source, the offering of devotions should be constant. The leader who is responsible for a church should be united with at least three men and three women among the members. Unless those seven people including the church leader are always united in heart, the church cannot grow. It is not enough for the leader to unite with three people who suit his taste. The leader needs to strive to unite at all times with one person who is the most close to his heart, one person who is the most distant from his heart, and one person who is in the middle. That unity should reach the point where those three people offer devotions for their pastor.(056-009,19720510)

30 When a church leader goes somewhere on a speaking tour, he or she should not go alone. During the tour, there should always be people praying for success behind the scenes. In particular, during my speaking tour, what would happen if you knew where I would be speaking and you prayed, offering devotions for me? In that case God would certainly be there working with me.(056-009,19720510)

31 A leader needs a base for his or her activities. Unless that base is stronger than the places where activities are carried out, he or she cannot prosper. When you look at a tree, its branches sprout and extend from the trunk. The trunk is bigger than the branches. Similarly, without a base of operations, a ministry cannot grow. Church leaders need to understand this. It is the reason they need to bring three men and three women into total unity to support the church. When they all act as one, they can become the greatest nucleus for the development of the church. They need to maintain that structure for the sake of church activities. When each of the six people in that structure forms a trinity with three other people, they will naturally become a group of twenty-four people. When the three men each form a trinity, they will naturally become twelve people, and combining the trinities of the three men and those of the three women adds up to twenty-four people. With the church leader as their subject, they become inseparable. The amount of devotion the church leader offers for those people determines how much they in turn offer devotion for the leader.(056-010,19720510)

32 To become a true leader, you need to formulate both internal and external strategies for your mission field. Employing those strategies, you should digest the difficulties of your mission field with the heart of a true parent. To devise your strategies you need to collect various types of materials and study them, and to succeed in your mission field you should make greater effort, sleeping less than others. What determines whether a community will be drawn to you or not is the amount of encouragement you give the people and the positive conditions you make for them. No one likes to be indebted to others. The same is true of me. You need to consider what you have to do to carry out your parental responsibilities, both internally and externally. And you need to consider how to maintain a relationship with God.(046-296,19710817)

33 A leader needs to offer devotions. Only if you truly yearn for God can you pray all day long. You have to yearn for Him more than for people. Your heart of love and reverence for Him should never waver. You should long for Him with an indescribable feeling, thirsting for Him like a hungry baby wanting its mother's milk. At such times, although others are unaware of it, you will subtly receive spiritual food.(046-297,19710817)

34 People will never miss you unless you miss them with all your heart. Therefore, as a pastor, you should always wake up early and wait for people to come to see you. You should open your door by four o'clock in the morning and hear the first crowing of the rooster. If the rooster crows before you get up, you should be upset and say, "Hey, you rooster, how dare you get up before me and crow!" Unless you live this way, the members will not wake up early in the morning and yearn for you as their teacher and leader. Nor will they pray for you. If they have no reason to do so, you will never have any results.(030-149,19700321)

35 A tower built with sincere effort will not collapse; it is a matter of sincerity. How much have I yearned for you? No matter how much I explain it to you, you cannot understand. That being the case, how much have you yearned for me? How much have you yearned for the sons and daughters of God? How much have you yearned for the family and the people, the nation and the world of His hope? You do not know what it means to yearn for all of this. Money is not the issue. Even if you seem like a beggar, if you yearn for people, that in itself is glorious. Forgetting about worldly success and working to pave the way to Heaven is glorious. That is a marvelous thing.(030-150,19700321)

36 It is right for people to give food to the hungry. Even if it is food you obtained from begging, you should still share it with others, for that is an honorable thing to

do as a human being. If you have plenty of food at home yet grumble at a hungry person who asks for a meal, your household will not last long. You should just provide such people with free meals. While doing that, you should also express concern for them with a public heart. That is how you can receive blessings. If you provide many people with free meals and at the same time demonstrate concern for them with a public heart, no one will dislike you.(056-037,19720510)

37 If you are the first to welcome new members to the church, you will be blessed. But you have to serve them and help them settle down completely until they can sustain a life of faith on their own. When you do that, you will participate in their victory. If you have that kind of relationship with more than ten people, when you find yourself in the jaws of death, they will come to your rescue. You will reap such benefits. This is how you will be blessed. That is why you should be hospitable to new visitors who come to the church.(037-329,19710101)

Working proactively

38 Think about your past and present and ask yourself: Does your past stand as the subject partner, or does your present? If your past and your present cannot form a subject-object relationship, you should look toward the future as the subject partner of hope. What happens when you slack off and cannot devote yourself with hope in the future? In that case, you will inevitably view the past as the subject partner and the present as the object partner. Therefore, in your life of faith you should not just let the grace you received in the past slip by. As you walk the path of faith, you will encounter lax times without realizing it. When that occurs, you can deal with the present reality by taking your past life of faith as your subject partner. Read again the diaries you wrote in the past, or reflect on what you experienced during your prayers when your life was filled with grace. You need to revive the heart you had at that time, and repeat what you did back then. Then you can make a resolution with a motivation even greater than you had in the past.(042-096,19710228)

39 As you walk the way of the Will you should have a subject partner, someone who represents the entire church, someone on the side of truth. But what if you do not have a relationship with such a person? You need to compare your present life with your life in the past, and if you find the past to be better than today, you should bring your past life back into your present. The question remains, how can you rekindle the determination you had back then? How can you re-experience the heart you felt back then? How can you re-create the circumstances of that time, when you fought your way through? If you cannot resolve these issues in your own

prayers, you should find a way to resolve them by taking some kind of action.(042-097,19710228)

40 While walking the way of the Will, you can easily become estranged from the church. It means sometimes you are not within the church, but are living centered on yourself. If you are not within the church, that is, if you do not center your life on the church in all aspects but stand in the position of a third party estranged from the church, then you will drift away. The church will no longer stimulate you, and your ties to it will weaken. Then inevitably, although you did not intend it, you fall into a situation where your church life becomes lax. What then should you do? You need to work for the sake of the church in all aspects and unite with its leader. You should not isolate yourself from church activities, but instead be active and keep pace with the leader. By fighting your way through while keeping pace with the leader and fighting evil, you can experience the circumstances faced by those at the forefront, the decisions that they make, and the conditions that motivate them. When you do that, you will not only follow in the footsteps of the leaders representing the church, but will even arrive at a position ahead of them.(042-097,19710228)

41 What must the Unification Church teach? It should teach about the relationship you should have with me. Once you have an internal relationship with me, you can set up a clear model for applying it to your external relationships. You have to absolutely value your relationship with me. Otherwise you cannot establish the realm of the absolute object partner, the most precious position in the church. Then what should the Unification Church actually do? What you and I feel in our hearts should be the core, and then we should apply that core to our relationships. Then, what should I do? My part is to share what I feel about God with you. Thereupon, al-though you do not know what I know, you will know what you feel about me and that feeling will be your own. That is how you cultivate the field of your heart and mind, and open the door of your heart and mind. However, even when you have finished cultivating the field of your heart and mind, that is not the end; you should then apply this to your own relationships.(076-155,19750202)

Section 3. A Church Leader's Devotional Life

1 Have you ever prayed for a church member after he or she has visited you? Have you ever thought of that person throughout the night and prepared under the light of a kerosene lamp the words you would like to share the following day? Have you waited for sun-rise, longing for that persons return? If you wait like that, that person will surely come. When that happens you will realize, "Wow! This is the true

meaning of devotion. If I offer sincere devotion, I can move God!" If you desperately want someone to come and you pray for that person for three hours with total unity of mind and body, he or she will start to feel restless. A desire to come to the church will stir in that person's heart. That kind of thing is possible.(075-179,19750102)

2 When you offer devotions for your members, rather than praying for many people at a time it is better to pray for each person individually. The difference in results between praying for many people and praying for one person at a time is very clear, like the difference between east and west or north and south. As a subject partner, pick one object partner and draw a line to that person. Then you should be able to determine all four directions. Focus absolutely on the relationship with that person until all four directions are secured. Only then can a sphere be formed.(042-166,19710304)

A leader whom Heaven remembers

3 If people are to serve God while living on earth, they need to travel the way of the saints who laid the foundation for religions. We should realize that, as a matter of course, we too have to go the way that the many religious leaders of the past have gone. We have to want to travel this road and be determined to do it. If you unite with all the past religious leaders, you will naturally find your place in the world of the Principle, the world of religion. Having made that foundation, when you pray you will rise to a position that transcends the sphere of religion, and you will shorten the distance between yourself and God. That is why, even though you walk a religious path on earth, you still need to offer devotion. Some people need to offer much devotion, while others, thanks to their good ancestors, can simply go straight along the path that their ancestors hoped for. What did their ancestors hope for? They sought the same world and purpose that religions have been seeking.(032-160,19700712)

4 The goal of religion is to find one true man, one true family, one true nation, and one true world. This is the purpose of religion, and it is also the purpose of God. It is the purpose of the providence God has been conducting in this world. If we stand on the foundation of the devotion of past religious leaders, we can connect with God's purpose. The people of any particular religion do not follow only that religion's founder, but also the many believers of that religion and the leaders of all nations that identify with that religion. If that religion has a worldwide foundation, many global leaders will want to follow it too. Thus the distance between religious people and the spirit world can be reduced.(032-161,19700712)

5 In the Last Days it is not enough to learn from only one person who received grace; you should compare the teachings with those of many others who also received grace. You need to be wise about finding the best methods to elevate your spirituality on your own by meeting spiritual leaders with higher truth. However, many people of faith today do not know this. They need a comprehensive outlook; they need to effectively compare and analyze to find the fastest way for themselves. So when you travel a new path, do not just go along with it.(032-167,19700712)

6 Do not always seek to receive grace. Do not always try to drink water from a well dug by someone else. Follow the stream until you find a new spring of pure water. By the same token, when you conclude that the leader who has been inspiring you has reached his or her limit, you should offer greater devotion than that person did at the peak of inspiration. Then you will surpass that person. People of faith today do not know this.(032-167,19700712)

7 What kind of place is heaven? The answer is simple. Briefly, it is the world where people who lived for others go. People who lived for themselves cannot enter heaven. Only those who lived for God and the world can go to that place. Whether you are a church leader or a member, no matter how faithful you have been and no matter how much devotion you have offered, if it was all for yourself, you will be unable to enter the kingdom of heaven. On the other hand, if you lived according to the original way of the Will and followed the principle of living for the sake of others, you will surely go to the kingdom of heaven. That is, from the time you reached the age of maturity, if you lived for the sake of others and for God, and if you went the way of death for God and humanity, you will indeed go to the kingdom of heaven.(077-109,19750401)

8 Whether you are a local church leader or district leader, you have to know how to read people. You should be able to glimpse their spirituality and tell what level they are at. The tasks that a spiritual leader needs to perform are very difficult. That is why you must pray. When you pray about what is on the other side of the mountain, images of what is there should appear in your mind. But to reach that level, you need to offer devotion. A church leader has to know the spiritual state of his or her members even before they do. A person who seriously offers devotion is able to know what has happened to them.(237-050,199211 10)

9 Long ago, when I was leading a church with a gathering of about four hundred people, I called out the church members' names one by one. I knew their spiritual level right away. I saw those with a high spirit standing upright above the horizon;

those with a lower spirit stood slanted and those whose spiritual level was lower stood upside down. In order to have this kind of spiritual experience you need to be in tune with God. You need to resonate with Him. When you play the geo-mun-go, a Korean lute, if one of its strings is even the slightest bit loose, the instrument will be out of tune and its sound will be discordant. We must create resonating harmony.(237-050,199211 10)

10 Never mistreat a person who offers devotion to Heaven. When a family member from the countryside brings me even one apple, I do not eat it casually. Treating an object offered with devotion in the wrong way cannot be forgiven. Ignoring a single-minded heart of devotion is an inexcusable sin against heavenly law. Do not treat things that contain someone's devotion carelessly. If something contains 99 degrees of devotion, you have to offer 100 degrees of devotion before you are qualified to touch it. Suppose the leader of a certain group accepts things offered with much devotion but does not connect them to Heaven. Then the more the members of that group offer devotional conditions, the more quickly the leader and the group will decline. That is why some spiritual groups prosper for a span of time but then quickly go to ruin. It is because they disregarded Heaven's way.(017-242,19670129)

11 The greater the number of people praying and offering devotion for you, the more blessed you will be. However, to have many people offering devotion for you, you should first give all the blessings you have to others. Unless you do that, not many people will pray for you to receive God's blessings. The person who has ten people offering devotion for his or her sake is someone God will remember. The church consists of a group of people who have created an environment of such devotion. It is a place where people say, "Let us expand the environment by encouraging one another to go to a new level."(031-157,19700524)

12 Church leaders should not offer devotion for themselves. They should be offering devotion for many thousands of other people. They should lead people to reach a level of devotion that is not only for their families but also for their nation and even for the world. A church leaders eyes should be fixed not on his own family and church members. He should have the heart to go out to the country and world while appealing to Heaven, "Please combine my devotion and my church members' devotion to make a path on which we can serve the world" If a church leader establishes unity with his members and has a reciprocal relationship with them in this manner, God will surely come and dwell among them. God comes when the church members and their leader become one. However, this happens when they

unite not for the revival of their church but for the revival of the nation.(031-157,19700524)

Devotion and Heaven's work

13 This is the era when we should restore the people. If the Unification Church members's devotion does not surpass the era of the family, then the leader must take responsibility to offer more devotion. If this does not happen, the church will not be able to break through to the level of the people. However, if even one person is able to go to this level by investing all his life and love, just as God has invested His boundless life force, then the Unification Church will develop through him. However, if there is no one like that, we will remain stagnant or retreat. For the church to develop, there must be a driving force behind the scenes. This means someone must invest life and soul, becoming a sacrifice to lift the Unification Church even beyond the people and the nation to the world. You should know who that person is. In sacrificing himself, that person should invest not only his life and soul but also all his love. Unless such a person exists, the Unification Church will not develop to the world level. This is the viewpoint of the Principle.(032-029,19700614)

14 When you follow the Will, you have to invest your life completely. You have to invest your life force and the power of your love for a higher realm, beyond the nation and the world. Your life force and the power of your love become the elements that enable you to pioneer the path to grow the church. There will be people who struggle so much when having to face the destiny of the Unification Church and to embrace all the sorrowful circumstances on this earth. If so, even if you offer all manner of devotion for them and give them all manner of thanks and appreciation, it still will not be enough. Nevertheless, anyone who criticizes those members and ignores them will eventually perish. When you see that the Unification Church is growing you should feel endlessly grateful. At the same time, you should feel how lacking you are and pray, "I am at this level today, but please give me strength to become better." You should not be the kind of person who just lets the sea-sons come and go. If during the autumn and winter you are unable to discover the life force and the power of love that are deep inside you, you will be unable to meet the coming spring and fully blossom. It will then be the end of the road for you.(032-029,19700614)

15 Suppose that the founders of religions and the leaders who followed them were unable to fully prepare the path for people on earth to go to the good spirit world. Nevertheless, if someone continued pursuing that path for people on earth, while

offering sincere devotion, God would protect that person. This does not mean God would protect him or her all the time. Rather, it means that when that individual faced the situation where his or her predecessors failed, or encountered a similar situation, if he or she offered devotion, God would lead that person to break through the predecessors' failed circumstances. This is how God works to advance humankind to the point where we can directly receive His grace.(032-173,19700712)

16 There have been people who were responsible to lay the foundation for the way of the Principle, but who could not fulfill their responsibility. Subsequently, based on the numerous spirits who went to the spirit world, God established a foundation to pass down the same responsibility and bestowed His grace so that the successors on that path could overcome the previous failure. At that time, God did not think of His own situation. Rather, He worked based on their offering of devotion. God worked so they could climb up step by step.(032-174,19700712)

17 A church leader is in the position of a parent. Parents cannot go to sleep before they have put their children to bed. Unless they get sick, they cannot go to bed early. The parents' heart is such that they shed tears worrying about the future of their sons and daughters who are still immature. When their children experience difficulties in life, the parents will not go to bed without first praying for their children. Likewise, church leaders should feel so concerned about the members that they are unable to sleep. In the quiet moments of early morning or late at night, they should tearfully offer devotion for the church members. That is how leaders can lay a foundation. After raising the members in this way, as their children, what should church leaders do? They should inspire their members to become patriots who live for their country more than for their church. Leaders can do so only if they, in the parent position, set the example.(034-031,19700829)

18 Upright parents, before telling their children to do something, first educate them properly with love. If you live that way, God will not be able to leave you even if He wants to. If you become that kind of person, you will have a mysterious and strong power that will automatically attract others' attention. People will have to be interested in you. In the winter, when you make a fire in the stove, people will flock to it. No one has to tell them which stove is hot and which stove is cold; they will know. In the same way you have to become a person that other people flock to. You need to establish your own foundation based on this tradition. Then, with sacrificial determination, you must expand it to a family foundation and then connect it to the tribe and the nation. This is the path that Heaven takes.(034-031,19700829)

19 What should you do if your leader does something wrong, or makes a mistake? You need to wholeheartedly work with that person to correct the situation. If the leader is beset with problems and has to leave that position, you will become the successor. If you are that kind of person, you will advance wherever you go. No matter how bad your leader may be, if you continuously attempt to unite in heart, that leader will surely be replaced one day. If you are ordered to do something impossible but accomplish it anyway, the leader who gave that direction without personally having fulfilled it will not be in that position much longer. The person who orders others to do what he or she has not done can be likened to a bud that has stopped growing, but the person who faithfully carries out those orders is like a growing bud.(069-281,19740101)

20 People who are always indebted to others are the rejects of society. No one likes them. They are treated as outsiders. You should not say that a particular leader is bad. Rather you should think, "Under this leader I have a good opportunity to fairly demonstrate my ability and let my results shine." Do so, and everyone around you will recognize you. If your leaders are capable and guide you in detail, how can you claim your own results? Deficiencies in a leader give you a good chance to shine. That is why I am telling you not to complain when other people do, and not to draw back when others do. When the leader dies, you should even have the heart to lead the funeral service for that person, and put flowers on his or her grave. This is how you emerge as the owner.(069-282,19740101)

21 When you go to a high mountain and pray, you should be able to hear the voices of people around you calling out, "Save me!" You should also sense your ancestors in the spirit world imploring you to save them quickly. They are calling out to you because they want you to fulfill your responsibility for them, as their high priest. That is a role of the high priest, and you have to fulfill your responsibility. A high priest cannot say, "I have a headache," no matter how bad his headache is. He cannot say, "I am exhausted," no matter how tired he is. He cannot rest until God permits him to rest. If he is unable to fulfill his responsibility he has to pay indemnity, and thus falls ill. To avoid that, he may even need to put himself in the situation to be persecuted. A high priest needs to eat the kind of food that beggars eat, and climb up from there. Also, he should start by wearing the humblest clothes. In this way he should restore everything in every field. If he wants the nation and the people to become one with him, he has to start at the bottom before he can go up. He has to experience the misery of the people. Seen in this light, I am often thankful for the persecution I get. The noise that the outside world is making about us enables my family and our church to pay all the indemnity that needs to be paid.(089-292,19760204)

22 As a leader, you have to suffer. Suffering means that you are making indemnity conditions. If you pray without sleeping and offer other devotional conditions, what will happen? And if you work hard without resting and do your best to pay external indemnity, what will happen? Attend other people as your kings. That is also paying indemnity. Suppose you attend a very difficult person as if he or she were your lord. Even if that person does not accept your heart of sincere devotion, God will accept it. If that person does not want to follow the Unification Church and leaves, you will inherit all the blessings that his good ancestors had stored up for him. It is a daunting strategy. You will receive all his blessings. You will harvest them and gather them in.(089-293,19761204)

23 The Unification Church teaches that the individual sacrifices for the family. If that is so, that family too will naturally pay indemnity. Then it will surely be blessed and prosper, and the person who sacrificed himself more than anyone else will become the center. The one who benefited everyone around him will surely become the leader. Do not offer devotion for your own success, or to receive blessings. Rather, offer devotion to be given the grace to become the person who can take responsibility for the whole. You should know dearly that the heavenly principle and history require that we take this path. It is based on this principle that the Unification Church teaches that the individual sacrifices for the family. We do not say this arbitrarily, If you sacrifice yourself in this way, you will become the center of your family. Your family will be blessed and will pass on these blessings to your sons and daughters. Later, when your family expands into a tribe, your family will become the central family of your tribe and the center of all its blessings.(130-295,19840213)

Offering devotions for the members

24 The person who offers the most devotion becomes the center. God's blessing will manifest through that person. The higher a broadcast antenna is, the farther it can transmit radio waves throughout the world. Even if it is only a few inches higher than others, it can transmit beyond all other radio waves and reach the whole world. We can apply exactly the same logic to the offering of devotion. That is why you have to offer a lot of devotion, investing yourself and forgetting about it. Because this is God's Principle of Creation, the person who invests more than others, and forgets having done so, becomes the eternal leader.(287-299,19971006)

25 You have to pray. You can offer two types of devotion: for the people and for God. As a spiritual leader, you are in the position of a mediator who links God's life

force with the people. Hence, the results depend on how much devotion you offer. If you are completely focused on the cause, placing God at the center of all you do, then the complete result that God desires can be manifested through you. The church members will unite with you according to the degree of your oneness with God. The members will unite with you to the degree you have become one with me. For this reason, you cannot help but think of me as your lifeline. God may be somewhat difficult for you to grasp, but you can think of me even when you are asleep or walking on the street. Try to keep me in mind at all times, day and night. Then the door of the spirit world will open to you. Forget about your own situation. Offering devotion is the fastest way to do this. If you offer devotion, your members will have spiritual experiences involving you. The result will reflect the cause.(070-165,19740209)

26 A minister should pray for each member of his congregation at least once every three days. I spent nearly three years in Hungnam prison, yet even in that situation there was not a moment, from when I ate breakfast in the morning until I went to sleep at night, that I was not praying for members. Even if members left the church I continued to pray for them. Then those people came to me spiritually and, weeping sorrowfully, told me the reasons they left the church. I could not help feeling sorry for them, especially those who confessed that they left me because they were too weak in the flesh. Even though they left me that way I continued to pray for them.(042-162,19710304)

27 When I pray for a church district, I do not pray for the leader. Instead I pray for the members who are dedicated to that leader, who serve as a support base for the leader and are working hard. I do this so that the Will can advance further. I do not praise a district leader when he or she fulfills a responsibility; rather, I praise the family members who enabled that leader to be praised. Leaders, you should pray for the members who are cooperating with you. Do not become indebted to your members in heart. When your members are suffering on the frontline, as their leader, you need to think of them even when you are eating. You should think of them even as you put your spoon in your mouth, and swallow your food with tears in your eyes. The words, "Heavenly Father, please look after them," should automatically emerge as a prayer in your heart. If you lack this kind of heart, you cannot advance.(013-301,19640412)

28 You leaders need to be single-minded, but for what? Is it to eat? No. It is for your mission and your responsibility to resurrect lost lives, one by one, as God's sons and daughters. It is to bring them out of the evil world and into the kingdom of heaven. Try living with that sense of mission more seriously each year; then nothing will be

impossible. If you are an absolute subject partner, absolute object partners will appear. Therefore, as the subject partner, you need to pray for your object partners. If a person you are praying for gets up early, you have to get up even earlier and offer devotions. Then that person will immediately notice that someone is praying for him or her.(042-164,19710304)

29 A leader's position is one of offering devotion. In the morning, you have to pray for at least twenty people. During the day, you have to think about and pray for more than seventy people. You have to eat and live with the members. People are most focused when they eat and when they go to sleep. This is because when you eat out of hunger and go to sleep out of fatigue, all your nerves are focused. On the other hand, when you wake up your nerves are in a state of relaxation, and you are less focused. Thus you should pray for the Will with as much presence as when you eat and when you go to sleep. One prayer with such mindfulness is better than several prayers at other times of the day.(042-164,19710304)

30 You leaders should always keep your members close to your heart, as though you were eating and sleeping with them. Then you will come to intuitively understand each person. When your perception becomes keener, you will be able to read clearly both those who are near you and those who are far away. Once you look at them you will instantly know their inner situations. As a spiritual leader, if you are so dull that you do not have this kind of ability, how will you be able to guide people? The question is, how much devotion have you offered for each individual? You need to understand what Jesus meant when he said, "For what will it profit them if they gain the whole world but forfeit their life?" (Matt. 16:26) He meant that each human life is more precious than the whole universe, and he dropped the anchor of his heart in each person. When you arrive at the state of Jesus' heart, you will forget about the world and fight for each individual life on a one-to-one basis. You will search the deep valleys for that life, with its unparalleled value. Then you will finally recover that new life and gain a new member.(042-164,19710304)

31 You need to know the greatness and power of prayer. You may think that you are just one person praying here on earth, but incredibly, your prayer can mobilize the spirit world in the other dimension, the limitless world, and establish new bonds. Prayer acts like a magnet. When you become a leader in the future, your prayer can be so powerful that if you pray twenty-four hours a day for the members with the unshakable belief that your prayer will work, you will see it happen. Prayer really has that kind of power. That is why Jesus is quoted in the Bible as saying, "For where two or three are gathered in my name, I am there among them" (Matt.

18:20) Hence, if three people join together in prayer, they have great power.(076-298,19750310)

Section 4. Giving Sermons that Move Hearts

1 As a leader, you must not avoid difficult situations; rather, you should overcome any situation. If you cannot proactively master your environment, how can you accomplish Heaven's Will? God's strategy is to have you go through trials, even to send you to prison, in order to raise you to stand so firmly that no one can bring you down. If you have experienced this in the past, thinking about your previous misery will enable you to endure present suffering and go forward. In Hungnam labor camp, every year I was given an award as an exemplary worker. God had me go through that course in order to train me. With that in mind, I am now training you. When suffering children ask for something from their parents, who cannot provide it, how miserable those parents must be. Thinking of God in that position, I have endured a course of pain and suffering; therefore I can handle any situation. Suffering without any purpose has no value, but doing so for God's Will is more precious than any amount of gold. This is my asset. That is why I never prepare my sermons. I have only to speak the truth from my own life experience, and people cannot help but be moved.(016-344,19661014)

One's heart when preparing a sermon

2 As a leader, when you go out to witness, you should feel as though your flesh and bones are melting away. Then go to the pulpit and give a sermon with a prayerful heart, thinking, "Father! I am so unworthy and inadequate. Nevertheless, You have to rely on me to do this, and I am so sorry." Do not be centered on yourself. Consider that you are a member of God's special task force, dispatched with God's official endorsement to represent True Parents and heaven and earth. Before giving a sermon, I spend more time praying for the members than for the sermon. I pray, "Father! I must lead these people and raise them up. What should I do? Should I go this way or that way?" After offering that devotion, I give a sermon as my heart leads me. If the heart is absent, there can be no life. The way through the valley of the heart is painful and miserable. Thus when looking for a teacher, do not seek a teacher of knowledge; rather, seek a teacher of the heart. The more you dig into the valley of the heart, the more you will find tears and the less you will find yourself. The closer you get to your final destination, the larger God's Will and purpose will become and the smaller you will become. As long as you are becoming smaller and the Will is becoming larger, all problems can be resolved.(009-080,19600412)

3 You can call yourself a high priest only when you go through a process to become a sacrificial offering with the heart of a parent and the body of a servant. To become a high priest, you need to have a child who is willing to become a sacrifice. If you do not have a child from your own direct lineage that will do that, you should at least have a spiritual child. The worship service is the time to make offerings. It is when you report to God about your past and make atonement. Therefore, the worship service is not a time when you can expect to be free.(011-163,19610624)

4 How can you travel around, going here and there for twelve months of the year, and casually go up to the pulpit saying, "Brothers and sisters, let us sing hymns," then speak about how Father is such and such, and then pray? If you act like that, the heavenly nation will never be realized and people will never be resurrected. Look at a mother in labor when she is giving birth to her baby. Doesn't she go through so much pain, feeling as if she is about to burst, with her face contorted in so many ways? If a mother goes through so much when giving birth to her physical baby, you have to be more serious than that to give birth to your spiritual children. When you leave the pulpit, you should be sweating and in tears.(075-177,19750102)

5 Spiritual leaders cannot do their work without having spiritual experiences. They should not prepare their sermons by reading books. Do you see God when you read books? Is God in the midst of those books? No, He is not. Because God dwells in a mysterious spiritual realm, you have to connect with Him through the Holy Spirit. Faith is most precious if it includes spiritual experiences. Therefore, people who join the Unification Church usually have such spiritual experiences. In fact, they must have these experiences. These kinds of phenomena are very for the Will, Heaven will be with you.(076-151,19750202)

6 I have such a direct and close relationship with God, I have no need to worry about preparing my sermons. You too need to train yourself to be like this. Sometimes I have to meet and speak with famous people, even up to ten times in a day. I must talk about a different topic each time, depending on the occasion. But do I prepare my speech every time? At such times, I am fully aware that I am an offering. I have no concept of "I" or "me" or "mine," I am in the position of a total offering. It is a very solemn position. It is a heavenly principle that people standing in front of an offering should bow their heads. God is present at the altar and exercises His dominion there. You should think, "Before this altar today, I offer all my heartfelt passion, all my strength and all my effort." Then you open your mouth and speak with greater sincerity than ever before in your life. When you do, God will help you. An offering is made from a serious position.(060-348,19720818)

7 Do not think lightly about the sermon you are going to give on Sunday. Do not just say, "Where in the Bible shall I read from? What hymns shall we sing? Bring out the hymns! Bring out the Holy Songs!" Base your sermons on your knowledge of people; use real life experiences and relate them to comparable passages in the Bible. Give an interesting sermon that compares personal experiences with the content of the Bible. Then listeners will be captivated. Since your sermon relates to them, they will like it. Do not attempt to prepare your sermon by reading books. Even books come from people. People themselves are the originators of books.(046-285,19710817)

8 One memory continues to linger in my heart. When I was being taken to the labor camp in Hungnam, I had to trudge along a stream through a valley, chained to thieves. That memory is still so vivid. I cannot forget the time we walked along that winding path in the valley. It left a strong impression on me. Those steps were heading toward a different world. I really wondered, "In the future, what paths will I have to walk each day? After serving my time in prison, what will I need to do? What should I do during my prison life?" It was going to be difficult, but I was ready to go there. Actually, that time was a good opportunity to come to a new realization about myself. That is why this memory stays with me.(030-152,19700321)

9 Once I worked on digging a tunnel at Hamhung. As I worked, I became so hungry that I could hardly lift up my pickax, and so completely exhausted that I was on the verge of losing consciousness. After going on like that, you cannot imagine how happy I was when I heard, "Time for lunch!" What a feeling in that moment when I threw the pickax on the ground and turned around to eat! I have countless stories like that in my life. I have been through indescribable suffering. However, you need to understand that all those miserable situations did not destroy me; instead, they will shine throughout history. That is why I am saying you should keep going on, collecting stories that God can cherish as treasures. When you open up and tell the people of the world the true stories of your sufferings and tribulations, in just ten minutes you can move them to weep in tears. It will be far more effective than a one-hour sermon on another topic. Where can you find a sermon topic better than this? That is why I am telling you not to worry and, until you are thirty, go through as many hardships as possible.(030-152,19700321)

10 When you give a sermon, do not just decide on the title and then get up to speak. The basic standard is that you should select the title in prayer. You cannot move people with a sermon based on a prepared title. If you want to make people cry, you should shed tears in prayer before the sermon. When you pray, you should be thinking about all the kinds of people who might come that day. You should also

be thinking about the situation in Korea and how to improve it. Then you will be able to foresee, "Today, these types of people will be coming." Bearing all this in mind and having prayed tearfully, when you come to the pulpit you will be able to move your audience to tears. If you have written a letter with tears, it can make the recipient cry. In the same way, you should become a motivating force in the position of the subject partner in heart. Without doing that yourself, expecting others to shed tears is unreasonable. Therefore, when you go to the pulpit you should know that it is a court of judgment. If you are unable to improve despite your efforts, you need to repent. If you are unable to inspire others in an hour-long sermon, you should repent for three hours. If you deliver a poor sermon and cannot inspire the people, you have to repent three times more than that.(160-195,19690512)

11 As a leader, you should listen carefully to your members when they share their situations. You need to take notes about their testimony and know how to use it as material that can be helpful for everyone. If a member has moved your heart, make the lesson of their testimony the topic of the Sunday sermon. Pray about that topic and convey your inspirations to the members. Always live in attendance to Heaven. Your sermon should never be focused on yourself. If you refer to books to prepare your sermon, Heaven will not work through you. Your sermon will fall flat. The seed of life comes from Heaven. It does not come from people or their knowledge. That is why you must shed tears before you give a sermon. Only by shedding tears and taking the position of a parent can you bring the children to repentance. In order to make others shed tears, you should first open the gate of tears. Your tears open the gate of their tears. Only if you open that gate can they finally shed tears. Only if you shed tears of repentance can the gate of repentance open for others.(237-038,199211 10)

12 Always think that you are indebted. A person who thinks this way is public-minded. This is because you have not taken full responsibility and others have had to, on your behalf. As you look around at the congregation, think, 'As I was not able to do the job right, my members are doing it for me.' Up to now I have been bearing the suffering that the entire Unification Church membership had to endure. But from now on members will have to face all kinds of incidents, one by one, at all levels—the individual, family, tribe, nation, and even the world. I have been through a difficult course, but now all members throughout the world must face their own challenges. From this perspective, we share a common destiny. It is a serious matter that the spirit world is directly listening to the words of those who are guiding the members for a public purpose. This should not be taken lightly. It is the same for me. When something good happens to you, before talking about it or

laughing with joy, first think of Heaven. Likewise, when you face sorrow, first think of Heaven. When you face something sorrowful, if you can say, "I am suffering on behalf of Heaven," you can bravely go beyond that sorrow.(237-039,199211 10)

13 When you endure sorrow, you will surely be rewarded. During the course of paying indemnity on earth, if you shed tears of sorrow while truly being in the position of goodness, you will eventually shed tears of joy. On a scale of one to ten, if you experience sorrow at the level of ten, the happiness that will eventually come to you will surpass that scale, to the level of one thousand. Because we have such experiences in our life, we can continue our life of faith. If after you endured sorrow to the level often you received joy only at the level of one, it would dissipate within a few days. But in following the path of Heaven, if you truly persevere through sorrow, true happiness beyond your imagination is bound to come. If you do not have a chance to feel it or receive it, such joy will come to your wife, your children, or your ancestors. So do not do anything thoughtlessly. Live your life with the attitude of attending God at all times. Always consult with Him. When you feel frustrated, sit down and pray. Sleeping should not be the issue; working should not be the issue. Praying must become your way of life.(237-039,199211 10)

A sermon reflecting your devotion

14 If possible, I try not to write out my speeches. I normally speak without a script. If you speak from a script, Heaven may not be able to work fully. Hence, even if you write a script, you should not memorize what you write. You should not recite it line by line. Only by speaking from your heart can you enter the realm of resonance with God. Then your mind and body can unite in the atmosphere of God's grace, in an environment where Heaven can relate to you. In such a state, you cannot have your own opinions. Sometimes I stand in the position of an object partner and sometimes in the position of a subject partner. If I stand as a subject when I should be in the object position, I ruin the atmosphere. That is why I need to pray. When I appear at the podium with a heart of tears, I immediately know how to reach those at all levels, and what to talk about that day.(231-202,19920602)

15 After you have given a sermon, you should struggle with an unbearable feeling of shame. That is how you can develop. If you stand at the pulpit and give the same habitual sermons you have given for ten to twenty years, you will run dry. Do not just speak your own words. For ten to twenty years you may have based your sermons on your notebook, but you cannot generate life from that. That is why I tell you, do not speak your own words but always cultivate new words, the Word of Heaven. Even if it includes content that others already know, you should always

speak the Word of Heaven. That is why you should forget about the script. Exercising this kind of spirituality is crucial. So when I get an inspiration at midnight, or even at 3 o'clock or 4 o'clock in the morning, how can I sleep? My sleepiness dissipates instantly. Resonance, or stimulation from the spirit world, transcends sleep. It goes far beyond the world of sleep.(231-203,19920602)

16 When Unification Church leaders give sermons, you need to be motivated to invest all your heart and body. You have to move and inspire heaven and earth, audiences who are beyond the past, present and future. If you lose that motivation, you will end up just following current trends. You will become more and more secularized. Therefore, you should speak representing Heaven. Further, do not conduct research in books for your Sunday sermon. Rather, select the title through deep prayer. When you pray to find the title, you should be moved as if you have regained new life. In such a state, you should feel a sense of urgency, as if you are about to make a decisive proclamation that will determine the future of the nation, whether it rises or falls into ruin. In other words, you must speak as if you are making your final proclamation at the execution ground. Speak as if it will determine success or failure. It is the same with prayer. Have the seriousness of a criminal who is going to the gallows. When singing a hymn, although everyone knows the lyrics and the melody as well as you do, to move the hearts of people you should thoroughly understand what the hymn means. Then sing to convey its deep content. Resonate like an echo! Sing with an expansive and resounding voice that touches people's hearts and changes their attitudes. You have to sing hymns like that in order to move the public.(286-053,19970723)

17 When giving a sermon or a lecture, you need to present something new. You have to stimulate your audience. Through prayer, you need to supplement what is lacking, even placing your life on the line to close the gap. Even when you are just walking along, have a mind to seek for something new. For instance, do not just go to the church, but have a heart to learn something new, to make a new atmosphere. Do not always take the direct route to church; try going a roundabout way. Although you may need to head south, try a route to the north. Why? It is to find a new path. If you are not too excited about doing that, try rearranging the furniture in your home. After many months have passed, do not just leave things as they are; try to move things around. Then new ideas will come to you. We definitely need to do things like that. Vary your prayers as well. Depending on where you pray, whether in front of the pulpit or way in the back of the church, the feeling is totally different. The feeling is also different when you pray in the midst of the congregation. Therefore, seek to make changes in the environment.(030-127,19700321)

18 When giving a sermon, if you repeat the same one, the members will take notice and feel upset. Likewise, when you give lectures on the Divine Principle, people will be annoyed if you always lecture in the same old way. It is because people feel the changes of the four seasons—spring, summer, autumn and winter—depending on the season you are in. People are not always in a good mood just because it is morning. Even if they do not have any worries, there are days when they are unusually depressed. In spite of the bright sunlight and crisp weather, there are times when you yourself may feel depressed. At those times, how can you uplift your spirit? If you do not find anything stimulating to change it, you might descend to a state of even greater despair. Therefore, you have to either stimulate yourself from an opposite direction or find something stimulating and overcome your depression. You need to find ways to be in control of your life every day. Otherwise, in the future, you will not be able to guide the numerous souls that are lost.(030-129,19700321)

19 We human beings were created through the Word, flesh and spirit. Hence, we should first align with the Word, next cultivate our character, and then do spiritual work. That is the correct order. If we put spiritual work first, we would have to pay great indemnity because the first stages were skipped. You should be moved by your own sermon. You need to be moved by your own prayer. You should give the sermon in a state where you receive God's mercy and grace. You can enter a state of grace by appealing to God about the pitiful situations of the people, who have to connect through someone like you to receive life and grace. To arrive at such a state of grace you must repent and, through suffering, seek the path of Heaven. In walking that path, you should not have any enemies.(011-278,19620101)

20 In giving a sermon, do not give your devotion to everyone at the same time. Do not think that you have the public in front of you and are delivering the sermon to them. Rather, think that you are giving the sermon to one person. If that one person receives grace and sheds tears, that grace will spread to the whole. Your church could not develop until now because you have been giving sermons that floated in the air, with no roots. Since there is no base to absorb your sermons, there is no way for witnessing to be successful. To gain a foothold, a church leader should cultivate his personal foundation. When I give you a certain direction, the members will move only if the church leader sets the example by moving, even at the risk of his or her life.(042-159,19710304)

21 Everything in the world can be material for your sermons. If you suffered many ordeals, you can explain in your sermon what you did in those days. Therefore, a church leader should have experienced many difficulties. He or she should have

gone through a lot of life training. He or she needs to have experienced times as a poor laborer, a beggar, or a high official holding a position in the circles of authority. Then when you share your actual experiences in those circumstances, especially the trials you experienced while serving in a public position, people can feel them as very real.(160-196,19690512)

22 When giving a sermon or a lecture, rather than preparing for it by reading the Divine Principle many times, once you have reached a certain level of understanding of the Principle, you should be immersed in the Word. That is, you should experience how profound that teaching is and what an incredible course of sacrifice I had to go through to discover it. If you can really feel it, you are bound to shed tears. Once you enter the realm of God's deep heart of restoration, you will discover the root of unspeakable situations. Without realizing it, you will be pulled into a fog through which you may have to tumble and struggle alone. That is when you have to firmly secure your position as a subject partner representing God. From that point on, you can become a subject partner and God's work can begin. It does not happen without a foundation of cooperation from the spirit world. If you are unable to enter that state, you must pray. You have to offer devotion for that to happen.(198-010,19900120)

23 When lecturing, unless you know the Principle thoroughly, you cannot have the foundation of heart to influence your audience. To have that heart, pray ahead of time, "Father, today I will lecture on this title." Then, as you lecture with a prayerful heart, you need to feel the kind of heart that God would feel. Discuss with God as you lecture, saying, "Whom do You want to resurrect today through your Word, as the object partner You need? If there is a person here whom You have long awaited to meet, I will do my utmost not to lose that person." If you think, "I'll just lecture as I have always done", you can convey the content but you cannot resurrect people. You can never revive them.(068-098,19730723)

24 When you stand at the pulpit in front of the public, your heart must feel as though you are going to an execution. It should be similar to the heart of a man who stands before the judge in a court of law, solemnly waiting for him to render his verdict. Therefore, when you stand at the pulpit, you are like a sacrificial offering, responsible for many people's lives. If you speak well you can save their lives, but if you utter a wrong word you could kill them. To utter a wrong word is the same as a doctor who gives a wrong injection; it can take a life. Thus, standing at the pulpit is the most daunting position. Heaven is present in that position.(058-302,19720625)

25 When you lecture, do not think that you are just speaking the words of the Principle. You are telling my history and God's history. It means that ultimately you are speaking in order to inherit that history and become one with it. If you lecture the Principle ten times, you will become ten times deeper. More than saving others, you are meant to become closer to God's history and my history. That is, if you lecture ten times, each of those ten times brings your heart that much closer to God and to me, and each of those ten times makes your heart that much deeper. The same goes for prayer: the more you pray, the more your heart will grow deep and wide. You will become higher by the same degree. The higher you become, the more you will develop your heart, and the more you will be given opportunities to grow in oneness of heart with God and with me. Conveying the Word and teaching church members gives you such an opportunity.(157-254,19670410)

26 I used to pray until I had calluses on my knees. I would pray for more than twelve hours a day. I would bring up issues and then pray to resolve them, as if in a showdown with God. I had these experiences so often that it became like a habit. As soon as I faced an issue, I would already know what the outcome would be. I could feel it. You should not give sermons by reading books. The spirit world, the original world, is not meant to be mobilized based on books. The basic principle is that the spirit world is governed by love. And restoration refers to the perfection of character based on love. We are moved, and our character is engrafted to Heaven's side, when love occupies the central position. It does not happen by knowledge. Therefore, do not read books to find something to speak about. If you give a sermon that way, you cannot resurrect people.(198-010,19900120)

27 You need to struggle to decide on the title of your sermon. It is a serious fight. If you decide on the title by going over a book one week before giving the sermon, Heaven cannot work through you. That has nothing to do with you. That is why it will never work. Therefore, you should regard the process of selecting the title for your sermon as a life-or-death matter. When you stand at the pulpit, search among the audience for a person whom Heaven needs to separate from a life-or-death problem. You should know in advance who will come for this purpose. If you get it right, the spirit world will be open to you. I never select the title of my sermon days in advance. I usually decide on the sermon title less than ten minutes before coming out to begin the service. I should feel resurrected by the content of my sermon first. Only when I have that experience can I stand in a position of confidence. Thus when I stand before the congregation, I will have secured my posture. Then I can begin to communicate with the congregation. I cannot do so with everyone at once. At first I connect to one or two people. If one person can be

moved by that connection, everything can be turned around; then it expands to everyone in the congregation.(198-010,19900120)

Sermons that stir the heart

28 If you want to move an audience of hundreds of thousands of people, do not write a script. As a spiritual leader, you need inspiration. That is why your tears must never cease. You should be able to speak from a deep heart, such that tears burst forth without you even realizing it. Never lose that heart. If you lose it, you cannot resurrect people. This is a serious matter. How serious have you been to save one life? Compare yourself to a doctor. When a surgeon goes to the operating table, a person's life is on the edge of his scalpel. You as a leader are responsible for many lives. You should recognize that you who are dealing with many people's lives are in a position far more serious than the doctor who is handling just one person's life. I am not saying this just casually. If you are not that sincere, you are nothing but a swindler.(231-203,19920602)

29 Do not expect to move the congregation through your sermon. Rather, it is you who should be moved first. You need to be inspired by the content you are delivering. You should think that you are giving a sermon to yourself. If you, as a person of high spirituality, are moved and inspired by your own sermon, then the congregation will go wild, receiving amazing grace and inspiration. Therefore, giving the sermon serves to cultivate you, not others. It is for your own growth, not for others. Therefore, you should quote my words as much as possible. Even more than praying, you need to read the books of my sermons. Read a sermon that inspires you once, twice, three times, and then speak focused on its key points. That would be better than studying for several weeks. The books of my sermons contain an enormous amount of material. My prayers, especially, have very pro-found content that you cannot access on your own.(198-012,19900120)

30 Before going to the podium, first think about the posture you will take when you stand before the audience. Then think of a way to impress the audience within the first five to ten minutes. If the audience does not incline toward you within the first five to ten minutes, it will be difficult to move them. That being the case, it is important to know what to start with. Begin with a topic that catches everyone's interest. Or begin with something totally irrelevant, unusual or unfamiliar. Employ a strategy to draw them to you, so that they will want to listen to what you are saying. You need a strategy to draw them in.(065-296,19730304)

31 Study people to figure out whether they are open-minded and cooperative or narrow and inflexible. By finding out the sorts of topics intriguing to a person, you should be able to discover his or her personality type. Study by making comparisons: "Ah, that person is the same type as this friend of mine. Among the one hundred people I know, he is like so-and-so." Select three or four people of different types and test how they respond to your sermons. Choose them from different categories, for example, a humble person, an arrogant person, a passionate person and an indecisive person. Then observe them. At a certain dramatic moment you may shed tears, or when you are preaching about forgiveness, for example, your expression should show your emotion. In this way, you should be able to move that person. You are fighting an invisible battle. For a person who has poetic sentiments, you can recite a poem. Recall a suitable poem, and during the sermon take a minute to recite the poem, losing yourself in poetic sentiment. For a person with literary sentiments, you can whisper to express intense emotion.(054-177,19720324)

32 Wherever you are, when you lecture the Principle, whether it is Part One or Part Two, your lecture should be seamless and smooth. The Principle should become like a formula for you. If you use this formula to comprehend the whole world of phenomena, the knowledge you acquire will be so vast. You should find the Principle so interesting that you want to stay up all night reading it. If you are intoxicated by the Principle to that extent, it will bring internal growth. You will see progress in your daily life as well. Unless you study the Principle with that level of focus, you will hardly make any progress.(029-190,19700228)

33 How can you become a great lecturer? Go listen to famous lecturers around the country. Record their lectures and evaluate them. Choose their best points and write them down in your notebook. Always have piles of the tapes you recorded. Collect the witty and useful materials from tens and hundreds of their sermons and use them whenever you give lectures. Then you can become a great lecturer. You should lecture more than eight hours every day. Lecture to even one new guest.(068-094,19730723)

34 If you can shed tears when holding the Principle book, you can move your audience. Become a person who clings to the Principle book, staying up all night reading it, begrudging the fact that time is passing, and having amazing experiences from page to page. After you have had such experiences, try giving lectures while intoxicated with the Principle and see how spirit world moves the audience. Without fail, people will have new and moving experiences. If you are dead, things will lose their life force and atrophy, but if you are alive, things will definitely

develop. When they develop, new things will come into existence. That is a natural law.(030-130,19700321)

35 When you lecture, what do you want to give to the listeners? And when you speak, what message do you want to convey through your words? When you use your hands, what impression do you want to make with your gestures? When you do anything, what impact do you want to make? You need to have answers to these questions. Even when you walk a difficult path, always think of the legacy you will leave behind. Though your path may be arduous and tiring, to leave a legacy you have to be full of spirit and fun. You cannot afford to wallow in exhaustion. The more difficulties you face, the more you need to pay attention to this matter.(096-331,19780213)

Section 5. Witnessing and Pastoral Care

1 Considering the current situation of the Unification Church, we cannot expect any innovative developments in the future as long as the leaders cling to the same methods they have been using thus far. We must not just hold on to old ways of thinking, old attitudes, old methods of witnessing or existing approaches to faith. This is because these methods have not met our expectations in bringing results. It would be different had we achieved good results. However, since we have not, we should abandon our conventional faith and life, as well as witnessing methods, and transform ourselves into new and different people. Unless we come up with a new attitude of faith, a new attitude in life and new activities, it will be difficult to bring new development.(030-120,19700321)

The standard of heart comes first

2 We all need to grow. However, before we pursue growth, more important is cultivating a pure heart. Therefore you need to take the time to pray and offer devotion. You should not offer devotion just the way you are. First you need to clean up your past. If your old concepts persist, you should consider where those concepts could drag you. You who are immersed in old concepts and stubbornly cling to them must evaluate yourself, and determine whether your past was pure. If you believe you were pure, consider whether you have been good and whether you are currently situated in a good position. Also, you need to evaluate whether your desires are pure. What is pure goodness? It is not living for your own sake. It is not strengthening yourself. Goodness is serving and attending God, as the owner of goodness. The owner of goodness is God, not fallen people.(036-106,19701122)

3 When you go out to rural areas to witness, you should first attain internal unity with the people of that village. Internal unity refers to unity of heart. Then you need to attain unity with their life and thoughts. This means that your mind and body need to unite centered on God, as a reality in daily life. In other words, the mind attains a state of total unity with God, and then the body surrenders to the mind. That is how you connect the three points of formation, growth and completion. Do not follow this path just as an individual, but also take people with you as you travel this path.(013-302,19640412)

4 Some church leaders believe they have reached the standard of Heavens perfection and demand that others serve, attend and honor them. This is very wrong. The position of a parent is to serve others rather than to be served; to live for the sake of others rather than to have others live for them. From the viewpoint of brothers and sisters, a church leader is in the position of Abel. From the viewpoint of a parent, a church leader is in a parent-child relationship with members. That is why it is very wrong for a leader to think that Cain should serve him or her in the position of Abel. For what does Abel exist? Abel exists to restore the position of a parent. Therefore you cannot become Abel without first having the heart of a parent. That is the principle. Yet many have forgotten that their position is to become a parent, thinking of themselves only as Abel in a relationship between siblings. You need to rid yourself of that wrong concept as quickly as possible.(035-258,197010)

5 We have plenty of content by which to grow. We are also fully equipped with the favorable conditions and environment that have been given to us in this age. Then why are we unable to grow? It is because we are not adding anything to the people of this age or to the environment they are living in. Simply put, we are not benefiting them in any way. Although we are unable to benefit others materially, if we can make people feel deeply that they can benefit from us spiritually or mentally, then they are bound to come to church even if told not to come.(056-016,19720510)

6 Why is our church not growing? It is because the church fails to take care of new members to the end. Instead of showing greater interest in them as time passes, the church pays attention to them only when they are being witnessed to. Once they join the church, they are neglected. The church needs to pay attention to new members for at least three years, no matter what. Why is this the case? People's spirituality develops gradually. Their state when they first listened to the Principle is different from their state one year later. After a year they are able to understand the multidimensional content of the Principle both internally and externally. The

more deeply they understand its content, the thirstier they become. They have a craving to learn more about the Principle, and they will want to meet people who can teach them about it. Therefore the church needs to invest more time in such people. It needs to make a detailed plan about how it will satisfy the internal cravings of their hearts.(029-191,19700228)

7 Why can't the church grow? It is because its leaders do not live for the sake of others. Therefore the spirit world does not cooperate with them. The leaders know how to tell the members what to do, but they do not know that they need to run errands for the members. Therein lies the problem. The church cannot grow because the leaders are not willing to live ninety-five percent of their lives for others.(134-254,19850720)

8 Witnessing is the activity of leading people to leave Satan's world behind and follow the path to Heaven with a smile. It is an activity to guide them to the heavenly kingdom. When you try to witness to others, I see you telling them forcibly, "Come, come," regardless of whether they want to or not. You should not do that. People are spiritual beings. So, as an experiment, try praying for a certain person. Try loving that person sincerely and shedding tears with an anguished heart to bring that person before the Will. Then study what happens. The issue is how you can truly advance to the position where you can love that person more than his or her parents do. It is a battle. The issue is whether you can win over that person by demonstrating a heart greater than that of his or her mother and father.(050-279,1971 1108)

9 Abel is in the plus position whereas Cain is in the minus position. In relation to Satan's world, you are in the position of plus, or Abel. Witnessing is to bring the plus of Satan's world to obey, so that it can become the minus of Heavens world. Thus, witnessing is the act of creation. That is, it is to re-create that person so that he or she unites with you. Therefore, you should be glad to witness to him or her. You should do it joyfully. When God created heaven and earth, did He do it out of joy or sorrow? He did it out of joy. Likewise, you should invest amazing love for that person rather than thinking about the difficulties and hardships of witnessing. Thinking that you exist for others, if you care for others you will become their subject partner. You can re-create others by investing yourself. When their re-creation is completed you become their subject partner, and they will all happily bow their heads before you.(108-084,19800622)

Our attitude to witnessing

10 How should you witness to people? Do not just wander around aimlessly every day. Visit one hundred homes and choose ten of them, and out of those ten homes choose one person. Then concentrate on conveying the Word to that one person. I tell you, focus on the goal of witnessing to one person a month. To attain this, you must offer devotion and work hard during that month. After witnessing to that one person, you should tell him or her, "Just as I have done for you, you should witness to your relatives with devotion." If you establish such a tradition and guide others to do the same, you will certainly do well. By following this uniform method of witnessing to one person per month, a horizontal expansion of witnessing will unfold from one person to another, and membership will markedly increase.(042-158,19710304)

11 You say that you go out witnessing, but what is witnessing? It is showing the way. You are showing the way for the world to return to God. How wonderful this work is. If you ask a person's original mind, "Where are you going?" it would reply, "Oh! After passing through this world, I shall return to the heavenly kingdom." You are pioneering the way for people to do just that; how marvelous this task is!(117-102,19820214)

12 Religion until now has been focused on individual salvation. However, that kind of religion is bound to decline. It will come to an end. Even if it has become a worldwide religion, it will have to be resurrected once again. It must do so at all costs. Religious believers, Christians in particular, maintain their faith in order to save their individual lives. But for what purpose? They assert that they will be saved and go to the kingdom of heaven, but they should not have such a purpose. Even if you go to the kingdom of heaven, what are you going to do there all by yourself? You should be living a life of faith that aims to bring all humankind with you into the kingdom. If you live that way, you cannot help but witness to others even if you are told not to witness. You cannot help but practice goodness, even if you are told not to.(035-205,19701014)

13 You go out to witness not only to save Cain but also to save yourselves. In other words, witnessing is the path of taking action to receive certificates from God and Satan. You should strive, even fight, to make the conditions that will entitle you to receive those certificates. You should witness with this understanding. But did any of you understand this when you went out witnessing? All of you have been going out without knowing why. Hence the greatest enemy is not Satan, but yourself. You stand in the position of the enemy; therefore the enemy Satan chases you. For this reason, always keep in mind that you yourself are the enemy. That is because the enemy manifests through your own body. To put it another way, because we are

connected to Satan through our bloodline, our bodies stand in the position of the enemy.(040-252,19710206)

14 If by offering your life you can overcome evil, God's love will come to you and you will recover your life. This is the formula. It is like placing weights on a scale: if one side goes down, the other side goes up. If you eliminate much evil, good will go up; if evil increases, good will go down. You will receive love to the same extent as the evil you eliminate. That is also why God told you to love Him more than anyone else. He told you this because the more you love Him, the more love you can receive from Him. You have loved God, and that is why you can receive more love from Him.(040-243,19710206)

15 When you are witnessing, you ought to devote yourself and pray, clinging to God and shedding tears, "Please guide me so that I may not fail You in connecting with this person whom You have prepared for me today. Please allow me to become a person whom everyone here can welcome and who can motivate each of them." Try going out witnessing with such a heart. If you neglect to do this and go out unwillingly, even if you meet the nicest person in the village, that person will reject you and drive you away. You need to go through such experiences in your daily life. You need to realize on your own through experimentation, "Ah, God is with me in this situation, but He is not with me in that situation." You can then develop yourself and cultivate your character to reach the world of God's heart. It is no good if you just sit around harboring greed in your heart and thinking only about what you can gain.(050-314,1971 1108)

16 Witness to people through your boundless giving. When you have done so, those who do not respond will be summoned by Heaven. They will have no excuse. Once goodness is sown, it will always be reaped. Hence when a good person calls you, if you do not respond to that person, you will face consequences. Although goodness has extended its hand, if no results ensue, that neighborhood and even the neighboring villages will be entangled in the snares of Satan. When you go out witnessing in a certain place, the ancestors who have good connections there will try to gather their descendants and guide them to meet you. Because they know the basic principle they try to guide their descendants, even by appearing in their dreams.(050-315,1971 1108)

17 Have you ever wept and prayed all through the night for the sake of the person you are witnessing to? I am asking whether you have shed tears for that person more than you would at the death of your father or mother, or even your lover. If you have not, then you should. You should weep bitterly throughout the night. If

only you could save one life, is there anything you would not spare? Money, clothes or a house would not even be an issue. Be crazy about loving people.(034-270,19700913)

18 To witness, you need to study people's psychology. You should be able to tell whether a person would like something just by looking at his or her facial expressions and manner of walking. Learn the formulas to analyze people's emotions. You should be able to tell just from listening to your wife's footsteps whether or not she has had a good day. When your wife comes into the room, suppose you asked her, "Why are you upset?" She would be at a loss for words because it would seem you already knew everything before seeing her. You should live your life in such a way. When you pray for someone out of interest, that person is bound to take an interest in you.(042-174,19710103)

19 When you go out witnessing, your heart should be totally different from yesterday. In other words, you should think as you start the day, "In the past I went forth with such and such a heart, but today I resolve to undertake the work with a new heart." By thus changing your resolve and your motivation you will surely bring good results. However, if instead you set out more depressed than before, with a heart worse than yesterday, you will inevitably retreat. The more you continue working in such a way, the more destruction you will bring upon yourself. Moreover, if you spread that negativity to everyone else, no matter how great your purpose and how strong your inner resolve, you will find yourself completely stuck, at a standstill, and unable to advance, no matter how hard you try.(042-066,19710221)

20 All people, regardless of who they are, need to walk the path of restoration centered on the Word. On that path, before you can reach the position to indemnify the national level, you first need to complete the indemnity on the tribal level. Then you can appoint someone to stand on your behalf and defend you from opposition by the tribe. He or she can also defend you from opposition by other families. Once you have set up your tribal representatives, they can stop all such attacks. That is why we are witnessing. Even when we have climbed up high, we still need to establish successors and expand the ground on which our successors can follow our path. They too will defend us from opposition. That is why it is necessary to witness.(040-249,19710206)

21 We do not witness with weapons; rather, we witness with love. Our victory is based on saving Cain through the love of Abel. It is to restore with true love those who were conquered by false love. This is the only way we can return to the original world, a world devoid of conflict. If we were to witness by any other means or

method, Satan would still have some tricks left up his sleeve; he could employ other means and methods. Jesus, even on the way to his death, until the final moment of his life, established the way of love. Since he was not able to completely establish the course of saving Cain in his lifetime, through his death he demonstrated the way to open the gate to Cain's salvation.(040-249,19710206)

22 We do not witness to benefit the Unification Church. We witness not to save our church, but to save the nation. Furthermore, we witness to save the world. Our purpose is different from that of Christians. They witness for the growth of their own denomination, but we do not witness for our own sake. Even if the Unification Church were to become perfect in and of itself, it needs ultimately to find the way to save the nation. If we walk the path to perfect the nation, even if we have to abandon the church, we move to a higher level of perfection. Since that path is more worthy, we need to seek the nation even at the sacrifice of the church.(063-188,19721014)

Section 6. The Providence of Cain and Abel

1 In the church, you should know how to discern who is Abel and who is Cain. Between any two people, one is surely Abel and the other Cain, Among three people, two of them could be either Abel or Cain, but of the two, one is the chief Abel or chief Cain. You should be able to clearly distinguish them. Cain and Abel should not be disunited or divided. One is the right hand and the other is the left hand. Therefore regardless of your position, you should find and attend your Abel figure with the belief that his God is also my God, and God loves me and loves him as well. In this way, you should do your best to avoid making the mistake that Cain made.(003-207,19571101)

2 The principle of Cain and Abel is great. God's true love is such that He desires to save the youth of the nation even at the sacrifice of His own children. Because God's heart has this nature, unity can be achieved only in the world of such heart. You can be united only through love, by living for the sake of others. If your love is not for the sake of others, Satan can walk right through it and bring destruction. Since this is God's hope, the hope of all things and the hope of humanity, how can a person who strives to realize this ideal come to ruin? Heavenly fortune will protect such individuals, and God Himself will protect them as well. So even if they go to a place where death awaits, they will not die, because all things will follow them. They may appear to perish and disappear, but I have discovered that they find a new way to progress and leap forward. It is because they are going the way of true

love, and nothing can obstruct or block that path. Even Satan submits to it.(173-060,19880201)

Cain and Abel from the viewpoint of the providence

3 When Cain and Abel made their offerings to God, God received Abel's offering but did not receive Cain's. It seems that God took a different stance toward Cain than toward Abel, but you should know that this was not the case. If Cain had had even a slight feeling in his heart that he should go through Abel, who represented Heavens position, God would have accepted his sacrifice. This means that God intended to treat them on an equal footing at a later time. God wants you to go over the universal hill of lamentation and stand before Him as the one sacrificial offering that He can delight in and rejoice over. You should build an Abel-type altar for the restoration of all creation in the universe. There, as an Abel-type sacrificial offering, you should offer not a lamb that you slaughtered, but your actual life.(003-205,19571101)

4 The mission Abel has to fulfill is more important than anything else in the course of restoration. The figure of Abel was set up within the Will as a consequence of the Fall. Had there been no Fall, there would have been no need to set up the position of Abel. Abel cannot be Abel by himself. There is no Abel without Cain. Furthermore, to be chosen as Abel, a person needs to go through a period of preparation. In other words, he or she needs to go through a period of time to determine that he or she stands on Heavens side. The Unification Principle terms this the period to establish the foundation of faith. It is the period when the sacrifice is offered. Abel offers the sacrifice so that God and human beings, who have been separated, can again form a bond of heart. Then Abel can also form an external bond of heart.(056-074,19720514)

5 What should Abel do? He should become one with God and love the archangel. Thereby he should win recognition from the archangel Satan and make him testify, "You are a child of God, and therefore you are certainly His heir." At this time, the person in the position of the archangel is Cain, and the person in the position of Adam is Abel. As a result of the Fall, false parents came into existence. The work of restoration is carried out by dividing the archangel and Adam into Cain and Abel. In short, the work of restoration is carried out by setting up Abel in place of Adam and Cain in place of the archangel. To become Abel, you first need to become one in heart with God. When you have become one in heart with God and He is well pleased with you, then He cannot help but love you.(034-085,19700829)

6 In order for you to become Abel, you need to find and recover Cain. Until you have recovered Cain, you cannot become Abel. Accordingly, in a position representing God, you need to go through the positions of servant of servant, servant, and adopted child, and then rise to the position of child. Only by doing so can you establish the condition for Cain to submit to you as Abel. Then you can finally complete the responsibility of a son who can stand before God, and if at that point Cain takes a cooperative stance, you can then advance to the position of a parent. Thus there are two reasons for which you need to witness: First, to set up someone in the position of Cain, and second, to secure the position of Abel. Thus, you who are witnessing from the position of Abel stand in the position of God. Moreover, with God at the center and on behalf of Jesus, you are restoring what your ancestors failed to accomplish in the age of restoring the position of the servant.(034-054,19700829)

7 No matter how much you are loved by God at this moment, if there is no Cain standing beside you, you cannot become Abel. Where can Cain and Abel be found? It is not in a comfortable and good place. Why do we need Cain and Abel? We need them for restoration through indemnity. How do we carry out restoration through indemnity? We have to become sacrificial offerings. Our body and mind should become one, we should become one with God, and then become one with the sacrificial offering. Finally we need to bring Satan to that place and bring the restoration to a close. Thus we need to settle it once and for all.(034-091,19700829)

8 How does God determine Abel? It must be in a way that Satan cannot accuse. What can Satan not accuse? It is oneness with God. This occurs not in joy, but in sorrow and difficulty. In other words, Abel must be willing to die in the most miserable situation. That is how you, as Abel, become one with God.(034-051,19700829)

9 From the perspective of the Principle, who is Abel? He is the center. God should be able to enter his core and dwell there. Have you become Abel? To become Abel, first you have to obey. You must obey God and become one with Him. In order to become one with God, you should do everything He tells you to do. Surely you cannot become Abel unless you do all that God tells you to do. Even if you already did ninety-nine tasks, if you refuse to do one task, you cannot become Abel.(034-046,19700829)

10 The fight between God and Satan takes place over people, who form the center of the universe. God continues working to transform us even as we sway to Gods

side one day and Satan's side the next. The Unification Church is battling between good and evil, and between Cain and Abel. The providence of restoration is none other than the fight between Cain and Abel. Everything is connected to this battle. Why then do I keep bringing up the issue of Cain and Abel as the representatives of history? It is because this is a fundamental issue. It is centered on the family. The problem of Adam and Eve and the problem between these brothers caused the breakdown of the family. That is why I am trying to restore the family centered on the issue of Adam and Eve and that of the two brothers. I am trying to return them to the original point. The key to history lies in turning them around. That is the key. That is how crucial the issues of Adam and Eve, and Cain and Abel, are. (247-192,19930509)

Who is Abel?

11 You need to know how to distinguish between Cain and Abel. Between any two people, one is Cain and the other is Abel. This is the case even among Unification Church members. Then, which person is Cain and which one is Abel? Abel is the one who is injured, whereas Cain is the one who injures. For instance, if you were to approach someone who is just standing there and say, for no reason, "Hey, you, rascal!" then those few words would make you Cain. Let me give you another example. Consider parents who have two sons. Suppose the parents consult with only the first son, and he represents his parents in all matters. If he hits the younger son, although the latter did nothing wrong, the parents will naturally stand on the side of the younger son. This is the standard to judge good and evil, but in today's society people do not understand this. The one who harms others is certainly Cain. (056-086,19720514)

12 Among Unification members, if you belittle someone who is working hard and offering devotion for the church, saying, "Why is that person's behavior so strange?" you immediately become Cain. This is how Cain and Abel set themselves apart from each other. Those who are criticized and harmed although they did not commit any wrongs are always Abel, while those who criticize and strike others are always Cain. This can happen even by uttering just one word. In speaking, the one who says something that benefits others is Abel, while the one who says something that harms others is Cain. If you praise others, you bring benefit rather than loss. However, if you say something to profit yourself, it is tantamount to harming others. Thus, the position that benefits others is the public position, whereas the position that benefits oneself is the private position. In this way we distinguish Abel and Cain, and good and evil, based on who is public-minded and who is private-minded. (056-086,19720514)

13 The person who is more public-minded is Abel. Among Unification Church members, there are those who believe they are Abel because they joined the church earlier. However, although they joined earlier, if they are not public-minded, they are Cain. Cain himself was born first, but because he didn't take a public position, he had to follow Abel. The Abel figure is the one who stands in a more public position. To walk the public path, you need to maintain relationships with brothers and sisters. What I am saying is that, in walking the public path, the horizontal relationship is important. Even in going to the kingdom of heaven, the problem usually does not lie in becoming one with God but in relationships with brothers and sisters. The secret to going to the kingdom of heaven is to follow the public path.(031-165,19700524)

14 Leaders think that they are automatically Abel, but that is not the case. Abel is the one who saves Cain, and he can go to the mother only after uniting with Cain. Therefore, even if you have not become one with the leader, once you unite among yourselves for the sake of the leader, the leader will come to you. That is why Jesus said he would be present wherever two or three gathered in his name. From now on, our focus on leaders needs to be replaced by a focus on members. Likewise, the head of a family needs to emphasize the members of the family rather than himself as its head. Otherwise, heaven cannot come about within that family.(115-055,1981 1028)

15 You could not have been born as Abel if there were no Cain. You need to understand this above all. Abel is in the position of Adam. That position means, first, that Abel needs to have the love of God. The Fall was the failure to form a bond with God's love. Second, it means that the archangel figure is Cain, and needs to unite with Abel. Before Adam came to exist, the archangel was already there. Likewise, before Abel was Cain. After God lost Adam due to the Fall, He established Abel in the place of Adam. Originally, Adam should have become one with God, and the archangel should have become one with Adam. Had this happened, there would have been no Fall. Hence, restoration is the work of patching up the failure of Adam to become one with God and the failure of Adam and the archangel to become one. Thus restoration requires that Abel become one with God. You can become Abel only if you have first received God's love.(037-061,19701222)

Abel's responsibility

16 How many people have lived based on God's viewpoint of life? Sometimes I see you vent your personal anger on your church members and say anything you want to say. You need to know that in a relationship between brothers, the person who

was born first is in the position of Cain. Without saving Cain, you cannot become Abel. That means you cannot become the restored Cain. Abel is in the position of the restored Cain, once he saves Cain; that is, eventually he has to stand in the position of the firstborn son. To be able to attain that position he needs to restore Cain, the elder brother in Satan's world. Abel cannot restore Cain by striking him and forcing him; Abel needs to move Cain's heart to submit voluntarily. Abel needs to show him a new view of the world, a new view of the nation, of life, of the future, of character, and a new lineage and heart. In short, Abel needs to show him something entirely different.(028-250,19700122)

17 Abel should take a stand that he is willing to die for Cain, to devote his entire life for Cain. Otherwise, Cain will never submit himself to Abel. Only when Abel stands in the position where he is willing to die for Cain is Cain able to return to him. That is why Jesus taught, "Those who want to save their life will lose it, and those who lose their life for my sake will find it." (Matt. 16:25) These words apply to both Abel and Cain. For Abel to save Cain, he should risk his own life. Otherwise he cannot save Cain. Cain too needs to be ready to die in order to follow Abel, Otherwise he cannot truly follow Abel.(034-099,19700829)

18 The first son belongs to God, as does the second son. What a tragedy that God cannot claim us as His and we cannot call God our Father! It is something we must change. How can we do that? We have to go to the world of the archangel and prevail. The archangel's world represents the realm of the adopted child. As long as you remain in that realm, although you are in the position of Abel, you are still a son or daughter of fallen Adam and not of God. You may stand in the position of a restored archangel, but not in that of a son or daughter of God. That is why your root must be pulled out and replanted. For this purpose, you are destined to return to your hometown and stand in place of your ancestors. That has never been done so far. Then you need to reclaim the right of the eldest son. Thus far, there has been no subject partner who could do that. Amazingly, however, we now have true sons and daughters who have placed True Parents at the center of their lives. Thus, you need to be in harmony with them horizontally.(178-100,19880601)

19 Who follows the path of indemnity? It is not Cain, but Abel. If there are tears to be shed, Abel should shed them first. If someone has to go hungry, it is Abel who does so first. If someone is to be cursed at or struck, it is Abel. In this way Abel follows the path of indemnity. When a new person joins the church, someone in the Abel position needs to take responsibility for and guide that person. He should stay up all night listening to his or her stories. In the position of his or her father, he should discuss that person's concerns, shed tears and pray for him or her. When the

new member sets out for home, that Abel should go along, because otherwise he would feel uneasy. When morning comes, the Abel should go and wait in front of the new member's house. The one in the Abel position has to be willing to do all these things. Abel must be a person who likes people, who likes Cain more than anyone else. Then Cain can easily follow Abel's footsteps, although they both take the path of indemnity. Thus you should walk the path of indemnity.(088-263,19760920)

20 In the relationship between Cain and Abel, our final goal is the restoration of lineage. The root of the archangel's lineage that we received from birth must be exchanged for the root of the original Adam's lineage. False love corrupted that root. Since that root is connected to Satan's love, life and lineage, it must be severed. We need to receive an infusion of God's love, life and lineage. That is why it is written in the Bible, "You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind." (Matt. 22:37) What does it mean to love with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind? It means that you have to totally invest your love, your life and your blood. To offer devotion means to love God. Therefore, to love God with all your heart, all your soul and all your mind is the first great commandment taught by Jesus. It defends us against the bloodline of Satan's world. This issue is of fundamental importance.(197-281,19900120)

21 Until now you have not known the tactics of God and Satan, but now you do. Abel is struck first, but later can claim back what was lost. Satan seems to win by striking first, but in the end he has to return what he took, and more. Although the evil side might conquer the other party by striking first, it will not prosper. Instead, it will lose what it has taken, including even what is good under its dominion. By analogy, the way God works can be compared to a chef who makes a sweet rice cake but has to hand it over to a robber. Then when the chef takes it back, he or she finds there are powdered beans as extra topping on the rice cake. For a time evil can flourish in the position from which it strikes goodness, but that does not mean that Heaven's side will be vanquished.(056-085,19720514)

22 You Unification Church members stand in the position of Abel because you know the Principle. That is why you should be the first to confront Satan, fight against him and separate yourselves from Satan's world. It means that you must come into the realm of God's love. However, that is not all. You should be willing to sacrifice yourself to appease the grieving heart of God and the sorrowful hearts of your brothers and sisters who are tied to Satan's world. Sacrifice yourself willingly for them, and at the price of your life try to deliver them from Satan's world. The providence of restoration advances when Abel makes sacrifices. Remember this

formula; it is a key component in the advancement of God's providence.(052-052,1971 1214)

BOOK 10 THE PHILOSOPHY OF PEACE

Chapter 1. What Is Peace?

Section 1. The Concept of Peace 1029

Section 2. Peace Is the Hope of God and Humankind 1037

Chapter 2. How Will Peace Be Realized?

Section 1. Steps Toward a World of Peace 1042

Section 2. Peace between Mind and Body 1045

Section 3. Peace in the Family 1054

Section 4. Peace in the World 1060

Chapter 3. The Means to Realize World Peace

Section 1. World Peace through Religion 1073

Section 2. World Peace through Ideal Families 1076

Section 3. Culture and World Peace 1078

Section 4. Korean Unification and World Peace 1083

Chapter 4. Strategies for World Peace

Section 1. The World of Peace that True Parents Envision 1095

Section 2. The End of Communism 1100

Section 3. The United Nations and World Peace 1108

Section 4. Worldwide Sharing of Technology 1113

Section 5. Organizations for World Peace 1121

Section 6. The International Peace Highway, the Korea-Japan Tunnel and the Bering Strait Project 1128

BOOK 10 THE PHILOSOPHY OF PEACE

CHAPTER 1 What Is Peace?

Section 1. The Concept of Peace

1 What is the most critical issue in the World now? World wars begin and end. Wars between nations end when the fighting stops, but the war between the mind and body is unceasing. The standard of peace can be found where we Succeed in conquering the body by following the desires of the mind. The foundation for peace develops where the mother and father, husband and wife, parents and children and the whole extended family become eternally one. For World peace to be realized, this foundation must go beyond individuals, clans, peoples and races to the ends of the earth. To achieve this, we need a revolution to re-create human beings. (203-351, 1990.06.28)

The true meaning of peace

2 The realization of peace means that the subject and object partners are United. The first syllable, pyeong (^p), of the Korean word for peace, pyeonghwa (2pft), means horizontal in English, and the second syllable, hwa (ft), means harmony. This signifies that the central being and its counterpart are not in conflict, but move toward each other and come into harmony. (082-132, 1976.01.04)

3 Humanity has desired peace since the beginning of history, but wars have continued without ceasing. Unfortunately, strong nations and powerful people have misused the word peace. Even while they spoke of peace, in practice they tormented people in ways that were the opposite of peace. The communists in particular would use peace as one of their favorite catchwords even as they habitually provoked others. In this way, the word peace has been used many times to camouflage injustice. As conditions in the world change, people become entangled in interests that conflict with those of others, making it impossible to establish true peace. In this world, there is no absolute standard by which worldly interests can be fairly evaluated. True peace can be established only on the basis of true love, and true love relationships can be experienced only when people understand the God- centered absolute values that bind human beings together. True peace is not dependent on knowledge, wealth, social position, political power or any other external condition. (130-011, 1983.12.18)

4 Throughout the long course of history to this day, the world has employed every possible method to realize peace and harmony. Yet this has not been an issue that the political, economic or military power of any single nation has been able to resolve completely. There needs to be a fundamental truth, in other words, a philosophy of peace, which can be recognized not only by those in the family, who are closest to the issue, but also by those in the clan, people, nation and world, and even in the realm that transcends this world. (381-142, 2002.06.12)

5 Peace refers to an even state where there are no wrinkles. It means everything has been harmonized, so it is smooth. When everything is completely harmonized, the result is a spherical shape. If you take clay and keep rolling it, it becomes rounded and in the end a perfect sphere is made. It has no wrinkles, every bit of it is completely smooth, and it takes on an absolutely spherical form. (109-277, 1980.11.02)

6 God is an absolute being and also is unique. Do you think this unique being set the standard of perfection for Himself alone? If He had, it would be a big problem! Someone who is in a void, alone, cannot use the words joy and happiness. Happiness arises from a mutual relationship. A mother is happy when she and her children are one. The very nature of the word peace, which means harmonizing into an even state, includes the idea of a counterpart, or other. The words peace and happiness refer not to someone who is alone, but to someone who is in a relationship. (136-104, 1985.12.22)

7 Peace has to do with relationships. An even state can be realized only when two people harmonize with each other. An individual alone cannot realize it. Two people can be happy when they are on an equal footing that pleases them both. When we speak of freedom, we realize there is no freedom without love. Love itself is boundless freedom. If you rule with love, you can be proud of being absolute about it. (112-316, 1981.04.25)

8 Peace refers to harmonizing in an even state. You cannot bring about peace alone. When people are harmonized with all the people in their lives— whether the relationships are up and down, right and left or otherwise, and when nothing is crooked—joy ensues and everything is amicable. This is the only road to peace. (86-098, 1976.03.14)

Peace and love

9 If He is alone, God feels lonely, just as we do. So it is theoretically correct to say that even God likes absolute, true love. He wants a love greater than Himself, an

absolute love greater than an absolute being. If what God needs is a greater and more absolute love, then even God must be absolutely obedient to it. What is the root of the universe's existence? Since the root and the origin of the universe is not an absolute being, but rather is absolute love, which itself can bind an absolute being, we can conclude that heaven and earth can indeed form a world of peace. When we realize that everything in the universe came into existence because of love, then we will automatically deduce that it was love that brought forth peace and ideals. (215-229, 1991.02.18)

10 Given that God is the source of life, on what foundation would He desire to live and continue to exist? He would want to exist on the foundation of peace. The foundation of peace is not something established by life. What can establish it? It is something by which subject and object partners acknowledge their common value, transcending high and low and the orderly stages of their development. It is true love alone. God maintains life on the foundation of true love. His omniscience and omnipotence are based on true love. Only in this way can He stand as the ideal subject partner who has transcended history. If He seeks to assume the position of the subject partner with only the power of life, then creation will not want to unite with Him. Even microscopic organisms, animals and plants wish for a master of love to care for and tend to them. (173-085, 1988.02.07)

11 We can say that people resemble God in their creativity based on their remarkable scientific achievements. However, in the area of love, they do not resemble God at all, so sadness, suffering and misfortune continue. Since love is found together with harmony, there can be no love in the absence of harmony, and neither can there be peace or happiness without harmony. In the realm of disharmony, all sorts of miserable things develop. So both God and human beings desire that people establish an ideal lifestyle and world that takes after God. The ideal person desired by God and by our original mind is both creative and good. He or she is a person who practices love that revolves around God. Also, the ideal world desired by both God and humanity is a united world of great harmony, where creative activities to improve the environment are abundant and where the love between individuals and nations is full to overflowing. When the time comes for a new type of person such as this to finally live in a new, unified world, all sadness, ordeals and fighting that the human race has been enduring for so many ages will finally disappear. (65-260, 1972.11.26)

12 Centering on what should we be managing this world? This is a subject of discussion among today's historians and intellectuals, but I tell you, the first necessity is to have a person with the capability to guide the world. What kind of

guidance would such a person offer? There are plenty of people who have the ability to guide based on their power over the economy. There is no shortage of people capable of leading based on politics. But it is neither a lack of money nor a poor political system that keeps us from succeeding. The problem is that there is no system of love enabling people to connect to God and to God's ideal. When we struggle through to find the truth that sustains a proper system of original love, and grow it to a global scale, then peace—the starting point where our original mind can rest—will arise. (125-227, 1983.03.27)

13 The word “equality” cannot be used in reference to a single entity. Equality arises when two entities make a single, horizontal line encompassing the concept of right and left. The word “peace” is always used in reference to mutual relationships. We speak of peace between East and West. But a peace centered only on the East would be a one-sided peace, and that cannot be total peace. The words pyeongjoon (level, pyeonghyeong (balance, Hr) and pyeonghwa (peace, ^pf), each of which includes the character pyeong (T% are related concepts. These are concepts that can only exist when a connection is made between two or more beings. A state of peace is realized when a man and woman are united. When they become one, it does not mean they're the same height, for example. Looking at men and women in terms of their height, men are generally taller. Also, when we look at them in terms of strength, men are generally stronger. Thus we cannot find equilibrium based on only external aspects. Then what is the center when a relational realm of equilibrium is formed? It is not any kind of force or knowledge. No matter how advanced two people may be in the world of knowledge, one will always know more. If there is one single thing that exists that can form a place of equality, it has to be love. (166-038, 1987.05.28)

14 Where will we find the standard for evenness (pyeong, qt)? The standard for evenness revolves around love. Love is the absolute, the ideal and the ultimate. It is demanded by each one of our cells, whether we are men or women. Love is the standard that unites us in that ultimate ideal, the standard that represents the whole, which means that concepts such as the average (pyeong- gyuti) or equality (pyeongdeung) are not related to an entity's strength or form. These words represent realities that are based on love. (166-039, 1987.05.28)

15 Where are we going? We are going toward the ideal world. Also we are going toward a peaceful and unified world. When we say “ideal,” “unified” or “peaceful,” what we really mean is a world of oneness. What is the center of the world of oneness? Love must be the center. Is the communist world a world of peace? Is the democratic world? Regardless of how united a sovereign state may be, it cannot

bring forth a world of true oneness without love. There has to be love. (124-025, 1983.01.16)

Peace and happiness

16 If there were an essential quality that would not change for a thousand or ten thousand years, only when peace is realized based on that essential quality would that peace be eternal, and only when happiness unfolded based on that essential quality would that happiness be eternal. Eternal peace and happiness begin from true love. The freedom that has genuine love at its core is eternal freedom; the peace that stems from true love is eternal peace; the happiness that springs from true love is eternal happiness. And if the whole unites centering on true love, we can conclude that this unity will be eternal. In such a case, there will be a connection leading from eternal peace to an eternal society and an eternal world. (130-148, 1984.01.08)

17 What would it be like if you were to become a person who receives the love of God? Would your mind and body be joyful or not? You could not possibly be unhappy. Just as God is an eternal being, we can also live for eternity. God is the eternal subject of life, the One who endows fully, and you are the object partner of the love of that One who endows. So as long as He is not sad you cannot be sad, and as long as He is joyful you too can be eternally joyful. Human perfection is simple. It is to be happy. It is to be peaceful and happy. We do not need anything more than that. We are talking about a place where everything is filled to the brim. Of course, there is freedom there too. And everything we desire can be realized there. (128-131, 1983.06.11)

18 What kind of a person is miserable? A miserable person is one who tries to give but cannot, who tries to receive but cannot. There can be no happiness or peace for one who is alone. Peace is something that arises only within a mutual relationship. Love, happiness and peace are absolutely impossible to realize by someone who is alone. Since these states are realized within a relationship, unless the partner you are relating with is perfect, you cannot experience perfect happiness, perfect peace or perfect love. (082-291, 1976.02.01)

19 People have made all sorts of effort, but the miserable reality is that although we have desired essentials such as true love, true ideals, true happiness and true peace, and truly yearned for these, we forfeited even the opportunity to attain them. When we consider the absolute being who is both eternal and unchanging and who transcends changeable human realities, that being cannot but be the God

we know. God must be the center of the true hope we desire, the center of true happiness, true peace and true love and the center of true ideals. God must be the King of love and the King of ideals, happiness and peace. For God and human beings to enter a place where they can have the same wishes and hopes, sharing suffering and joy, human beings have to know God, for He is where true love originates and where true ideals, true happiness and true peace all begin. (77-181, 1975.04.06)

20 People today are pursuing a world of peace, happiness and freedom, without even being aware of it. Their lack of awareness proves that they have not been standing on the foundation of the essential freedom at the root of peace and happiness. Since God is an absolute, all-powerful being, everything in nature He created, including human beings, should be as free as God is free. And if God dwells in a peaceful place, then we too should stand in that place with Him. (135-266, 1985.12.15)

21 Because people to this day have been put in such a lowly position, we have not understood that God's love, ideals, happiness and peace cannot be attained or perfected without each and every one of us. Though we are not enough, we are beings of a high order of value, capable of completing the love of God, of completing God's ideals, and of completing God's happiness and peace. (77-182, 1975.04.06)

22 If we follow the rule to live for the sake of others, then in our families we will realize peace, freedom, happiness and love, and in our societies we will also realize peace, freedom, happiness and love. The same applies to nations and the world. We naturally conclude that if we focus on this rule, these qualities will certainly dwell with us, no matter where we are. (070-308, 1974.03.09)

23 If a man and woman who seek to live for the sake of each other become husband and wife, they would be a truly ideal couple that could attain a genuine standard of peace. They would be recognized as a truly happy couple that could become the subject being of eternal and universal true love. Then what kind of parents would be truly ideal parents? If there are parents who exist not for themselves but for the sake of their children, ready to dedicate themselves to their children until they die, such parents are true parents. Such parents are parents of genuine peace, happiness and ideals. If a child were to claim to have been born for the sake of his or her parents, to live for their sake and to be willing to die for their sake, that child would be called a filial child. He or she would be a child who could

receive genuine love, a child of genuine happiness, peace and ideals. (72-016, 1974.05.07)

24 Where is the origin of peace and happiness? It is where we realize we were not born for ourselves but for the sake of our object partners, for others. There all the difficult issues in this universe will be resolved. When Adam and Eve became self-aware, they insisted on their own way, and that's why they fell. They should have lived for God and followed God's directions, but they did the opposite. Here I can give you one single formula: It is only where people exist for the sake of others that we can find an eternal world of genuine ideals and happiness. (074-164, 1974.12.07)

25 No matter how talented or handsome a man, he was not born for his own sake. He was born for the sake of a woman. Even the most intelligent, beautiful woman was not born for her own sake. She was born for the sake of a man. We must ponder the fact that the natural origin of existence is the act of creation for the sake of others. Here we find the formula by which God created His ideal world. It is only when we exist for the sake of others that God's true love can begin, His ideal partner can appear, and peace and happiness can be realized. (77-187, 1975.04.06)

26 Humankind is confronting today's chaotic world and pursuing a peace that ^transcends nationality. However, to this day, a world of peace for all people has failed to materialize. Since this is so, if there is one ideal with potential, an ideal that can give people hope, it is the ideal that advocates the logic of a peaceful world with God at its center. This is the only ideal that can give this chaotic world a chance to find a new direction and a new history. If we think about it logically, the only possible outcome has to be the kingdom of heaven on earth. The kingdom of heaven is a world of peace with God at the center. From that center, all conflicts based on history, religion, race and any other obstacle can be overcome. God must remain the single, unchanging center. (210-200, 1990.12.23)

27 How will we find the peace and freedom that can bring forth a world of happiness through the paths of religion, ethics and philosophy, all of which seek the truth? The heart of all people today is the same. And the heart of people thousands of years in the past was the same, as will be the heart of those who will appear hundreds of millions of years from now. There is no changeability in the world of heart. Can we not find, somewhere on this earth, a heart motivated from the one unchangeable base, so we can develop a world that can realize a garden of happiness, a social standard that can engender such happiness, and a religious mindset that can match that feeling of happiness? If we conclude that such a thing

cannot be found, then where will God go? If we came to that conclusion, we would also have to conclude that God can't be with us. (7-016, 1959.07.05)

28 If there is a heavenly rule that gives Heaven the means to embrace us, to set up the heavenly providence, to uphold morality and ethics and cause people to aim for goodness, then there is no question that Heaven will explain to us everything that is related and connected to it. Moreover, a day will come when men and women of all ages will affirm this in their heart. The day will come when everyone will harmonize with each other, delighting in freedom, peace and happiness. If this does not come about, then no relationship exists between us and God or any great thinker. (7-016, 1959.07.05)

Peace and freedom

29 Today it is commonly held by people at all levels of society that this world is not a world of peace. Still the people of the world yearn for peace. Moreover, everyone without exception wants to live in a free society, free nation and free world. A man or woman seeking to walk the true path of life wants to enjoy genuine happiness while rejoicing in genuine freedom in an environment of genuine peace. But there can be no genuine happiness unless peace and freedom reside in our mind. Although people cry out for freedom, they also admit that their surroundings are not free enough for them to live as their heart desires. Therefore no human being can deny the fact that he or she has not yet reached the fulfillment that his or her mind eagerly pursues. (7-014, 1959.07.05)

30 Everything seeks partners that have good origins. Moreover, everything seeks places where there is freedom, and pursues that which brings peace. Nonetheless, freedom, peace and happiness are not to be sought separately; they must be sought together. So is freedom to be found within peace, or is peace to be found within freedom? Peace is a condition for freedom; freedom comes on the foundation of peace. Peace is where two people harmonize with each other, which is only possible when they make concessions to one another. (182-112, 1988.10.16)

31 There is no freedom under the love of Satan's world. Neither is there peace, happiness, hope or eternal life. We must restore all these through indemnity. Freedom arises when we restore the creation's rights, human rights and love's rights. Therefore your mind and body must become one. I am saying you should restore human rights. Only when our mind and body are united can we be truly free. If a grandfather and his granddaughter-in-law, for example, were one in heart, then it wouldn't matter even if he had to enter her room unannounced. What I

mean is, the artificiality would crumble, because when there is unity of heart, there is freedom, and only in freedom is there peace and true happiness. (229-357, 1992.04.13)

32 Without a foundation of unity, freedom cannot exist. If your mind and body clash, can you have freedom, maintain it, and be joyful? Can freedom appear? It cannot. Also, where is peace? True peace is where we are completely free, where everything is smooth and nothing is lacking. Yet when your mind and body clash, is there a place where peace can dwell? No. The same is true for happiness. Can anyone find happiness when his or her mind and body are fighting? There's no way. When we consider these fundamental issues, we realize that it is only where our mind and body are completely united that we can be free, that a base for peace appears, and that happiness arises. It is only when a husband and wife become one in heart and body that they can dream about a peaceful world based on peace in their family. (232-190, 1992.07.06)

Section 2. Peace Is the Hope of God and Humankind

1 In order for humankind to be good, every individual must be good. Unless that happens, humankind cannot become good. In the end each person has to become a good person and stand in the position of a driving force for peace, in the unchanging position of a good fruit for eternity. Otherwise, even though we want the world to become peaceful, it will not. (038-300, 1971.01.08)

Peace and God

2 Because the human ancestors fell, they could not become God's genuine sons and daughters. Instead they got together as they wished and had children, forming a tribe, people and nation. This should have occurred based on principled love that revolved around God. A peaceful, ideal world of genuine happiness can exist only with God's love. (021-140, 1968.11.17)

3 The Messiah's work is carried out with God at the center. Therefore to this day, God and Satan have been opposing one another. God is plus and Lucifer, who should have been a minus, became a plus called Satan that repels God. Conflict leads to war, destruction and ruin. But unity brings peace. Unity cannot come about unless we create a minus realm to God and relate to Satan so as to bring him to submission. Heaven's side must become Abel and unify this world. Abel comes to unify. Unification brings the beginning of the peaceful world, the garden of Eden. (057-167, 1972.05.31)

4 People seek genuine, unchanging truth. At the same time, humanity pursues love, the ideal, happiness, peace and freedom. No matter how chaotic or hopeless the world may be, our heart and mind yearn for this. This fire of hope continues to burn. The issue here is: what will God do? God has no choice but to pursue a world of true love, true ideals, true happiness, peace and freedom. So what human beings are pursuing and what God is pursuing must be the same thing. Then when we speak about love, ideals, happiness or peace, are we referring to the qualities of one individual or are we speaking about what can be realized only within a mutual relationship? These are not conditions that can be realized by an individual alone. Can you have love by yourself? Can you enter an ideal state by yourself? You cannot have such things as happiness or peace when you are alone. These can be realized only within mutual relationships. (77-286, 1975.04.14)

5 What needs to be settled first, rising above all scholarly pursuits, customs, and established social structures, is the question of God. God must be the beginning point. If God created human beings through a process, from a starting point, we can't realize a world of peace unless we rediscover the way God intended to actualize His ideal of creation, which is humanity's destination. The world of peace is a world of oneness. If God and human beings take different directions, then the one world of peace cannot appear. Thus the necessary conclusion is that there must be only one direction for both God and humankind. Therefore, unless we jettison the direction of this human-centered world and set our course toward a world that upholds God as the Supreme Being, we cannot find the way to a unified, peaceful world. (223-136, 1991.11.10)

6 An individual of perfected character can represent God's ideal of creation. God did not create the natural world to simply observe and interact with it. He created for the sake of joy. It is through joy that we can find happiness, and through happiness that we can create a peaceful environment for each other. To feel joy, we don't need money, and having people there, by itself, also is not enough. What is needed is a force between God and human beings that allows God to relate to us as a Father to His children. These are the elements of joy—bonds that neither God nor His children can break no matter how they feel or what they do. There must be an absolute force, a subjective force that cannot be removed or blocked by any other force, a path we can pursue as our one and only absolute ideal. Until that has been settled, we cannot have our ideal subject partner, and God cannot have His ideal counterpart. Then what is the central, primary factor that can create joy between God and human beings so that both can be happy? What is the core essence that can become the origin of peace? It can only be a reciprocal relationship with the absolute love of God. (63-156, 1972.10.14)

7 What is the central issue in resolving all the problems of the world? Giving a clear explanation about the existence of God is more important than anything else. When all human beings come to realize that God truly exists, they will clearly know the direction of His Will. When they understand God's purpose, a unified, peaceful and ideal world will surely come about. (56-131, 1972.05.14)

8 The idea that a peaceful world can come about by human effort alone is a fantasy. Why is that? When you look at your mind and body, how intense the battle between them is! Therefore, even for myself, when I was cultivating my mind, my motto was: "Before desiring to master the universe, I must attain perfect mastery over myself." Our body is intense and powerful, and we can expect it always to block our way. Even if you could rule the universe, it is not easy to rule yourself. Since this is how it is, in this chaotic heaven and earth, peace and unity are nothing more than fantasies. Nonetheless, as long as God exists, they are possible. (121-282, 1982.10.29)

9 The original garden of Eden was a garden of life. It was not a garden of life that was supposed to be limited only to that time; it was to have continued throughout eternity. Had it been realized on the earth, human beings, as beings of life, would have experienced eternal joy and gratitude for God's gift of life. Also, the original garden of Eden was a world in which human beings could emit the light of life as the lords of all living things, where each individual could emit light as a substantial realization of God's eternal hope and as a being of eternal value. The original garden was a garden of love and also a world of peace and unity, in which all God's children were to have become one by relating with each other harmoniously centering on His love. (2-245, 1957.06.09)

The king and the kingdom of peace

10 You will become one united, extended family centered on the restored nation that belongs to Adam and Eve on the world level. Such a great united family is not just a united nations of the world. New ancestors, first and second generation, will need to be organized from the spiritual and physical worlds, like a large extended family. From them must come a people, nation and world. What remains after that is to form a people, nation and world that will fulfill what is written on the concluding page of history. Now can you understand how urgent this task is? I have announced the age of God's homeland and His kingdom of peace. The time is coming when all beings in existence need to stand in that place. But if God's homeland and kingdom of peace do not stand in a realm of liberation and complete freedom, God will not be able to take ownership. (446-288, 2004.04.28)

11 The original garden we wish for is a garden of happiness and a world in which we offer praise and gratitude to God. That world is a world of hope based on love and life and a world where the values of peace and unification have been realized. It is also a world in which all human values combine and appear as beauty, a world where all God's children, through song, laughter and dance, praise the life and eternal love we have received. Moreover, it is a world in which all things of the creation join together, harmonizing with the movement of human beings. God wanted to realize this world of His original ideal through human beings. (2-245, 1957.06.09)

12 The children, Cain and Abel, were not born through God's love. Our ancestors, Adam and Eve, were supposed to receive God's Blessing; instead they were driven out of the garden. Even as God did so He said, "Beloved Adam, beloved Eve! I created you in order to build a garden of love, which is the world I intended when I created this great universe. Thus you would have been the king and queen of peace and happiness." No other entities on this earth could have held this position. It was only our first ancestors who were to have become the king and queen. Adam could have stood as the king of the heavens and earth for all eternity, with his descendants covering the earth. After the heavens and earth were formed, after the connection had been made between God and His beloved children, our ancestor Adam was the one person who could have received the title of king. (9-317, 1960.06.19)

13 Two thousand years after the Fall, Heaven selected and established a chosen people and promised, "I will send you someone who will become your lord and leader, your prince of freedom, peace and happiness." And thus Heaven sent this one person who had been promised as the champion of happiness, peace and freedom, the one man who could resolve Heaven's anguish and bring forth Heaven's blessings. The one person promised through the ages finally appeared, yet the chosen people of Israel did not welcome and attend him and live according to his will. Because they did not unite according to God's Will and fight to resolve Heaven's anguish, the grievous course of history has been repeatedly prolonged until this day. Jesus Christ was the person who came as the prince of peace, happiness and freedom, to resolve God's anguish, which arose from the bitter, four-thousand-year course of human history. (006-243, 1959.05.24)

14 If you embody the idea of a cosmic kingdom of heaven and expand a movement of God's love, life and truth, then a world of peace will be established on this earth. Therefore your parents are not just your own parents, your family is not just your own brothers and sisters, and your children are not just your own sons and

daughters. If you become people with the character that views all people as your parents, brothers and sisters and children, then you will shed tears for any person being harassed in the world of death. Also, when you see people your own age or younger than you, your tears will flow with a sense of responsibility to save them, and you will try to do so. When you become such people, you will be at the center of building the kingdom of heaven on this earth. (2-145, 1957.03.17)

15 Peace will be realized only when there is a king of peace. Should a human being or God be the king of peace? It goes without saying that God should be the king of peace. If you understand what kind of God the God of peace is, you can become His child. By doing so, you will become His heir, who can inherit His royal authority. (281-116, 1997.01.02)

16 Uniting the world is not something that can be accomplished through great strength or great knowledge. It can be accomplished only through love. World peace is realized only when we commit to completing all our responsibility, even when it means we must sacrifice ourselves, sacrifice "me." Unity brought about through power dissolves as soon as the power goes away, but unity brought about through self-sacrifice remains even if the power is gone. Because God is the king of wisdom, He set up a principle for unification that can long endure. God established the principle of love that says, "Sacrifice! Exist for the sake of others!" When we live that way, love naturally blossoms and we automatically receive the right to inherit joy. Hence we are told to sacrifice ourselves and live for the sake of others, because doing so allows us to connect to the universe and stand at the point closest to Heaven's eternal love. (97-162, 1978.03.12)

17 Science understands the existing world in terms of laws, creates formulas, and adds them to the store of our shared human knowledge. However, science is not everything. When we touch our own skin, we feel our body temperature and there is the feeling of touch, of course, yet there is something beyond the physical. When we try to move counter to the direction of the universe, the principles of the universe that guide our life tell us instead to go in the direction that conforms to the purpose of the universe. Thus as God created heaven and earth, everything, large and small, is within the magnificent realm of the Creator's great thought. Everything God made was born of love. The momentum of the great universe, created in such a way, must tend toward a world of peace through which God feels the greatest joy and pleasure, and where God's purpose is realized such that He can say, "Now I am fulfilled." (9-165, 1960.05.08)

CHAPTER 2 How Will Peace Be Realized?

Section 1. Steps Toward a World of Peace

1 When peace is realized within the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos, and liberation is attained, a free heaven and earth will unfold. In a world of such freedom, happiness abounds. Until today, no one could discover such peace. What does that tell us about the origin of this peace? God and Satan are fighting. God, the ideal being, and Satan, the evil being, are fighting each other. How can God and Satan, who are fighting, prepare the basis for peace? Who can stop them from fighting? In addition, our mind and body are fighting. That is the problem. The problem is not just that God and Satan are fighting; it is that the battle continues within each and every one of us. (388-030, 2002.07.27)

Peace advances from the individual to the cosmos

2 The path that we are walking becomes the path of history. The direction in which we advance conforms to the flow of history as we deal with history's issues. We are pursuing this goal placing our entire life course at stake. It is not only individuals that mobilize to go down the path that begins from me and goes all the way to the destination. Families, tribes, peoples, nations and the world, as well as God and all things, mobilize. Because humanity fell, the path in this direction passes through almost no level terrain. As they move toward the goal, people encounter struggles. Individual, family, national, global and cosmic struggles block the path. (13-316, 1964.04.14)

3 You may say that you have to go and find a peaceful world somewhere, but such a peaceful world does not exist. There is no such world out there. Go to America, go to Russia, go anywhere else in the world; you will not find it. That peaceful world has to begin with you. You need to start with a peaceful mind. The value of that mind is greater than that of the entire world! Human beings desire to own everything in the heavens and the earth; they want to stand in the position of having attained every central value. The only way to accomplish this is to pass through an integrated formula course. That course is based on fundamental standards, and you need to calculate every portion of that formula course correctly to reach the goal. It is fine to strive continuously to abandon your personal desires, but you cannot reach the goal if you do not adhere to the formula. Everything in the universe moves according to rules and formulas. The development and accomplishments of today's science and technology are based on the application of rules and formulas. (230-318, 1992.05.10)

4 We must not get entangled as we move from the individual to the family, tribe, people, nation and world. The family has to inherit the victories of the individual, and the tribe needs to inherit the victories of the family. This pattern of the tribe inheriting the victories of the family expands, with the people inheriting the victories of the tribe, the nation inheriting the victories of the people, and the world inheriting the victories of the nation. With this pattern you can overcome anything. The final providential victory that God desires cannot appear on earth unless every level from the individual to the world inherits that unchanging pattern from the start. A foundation with consistent links has to appear on earth. Without that, there cannot be peace on earth. (57-068, 1972.05.28)

5 Everyone in our world today is hoping for peace, dreaming of one united, ideal world. But without each and every one of us, that ideal world will not appear. There is only one way to achieve that world. It is for each of us to establish a foundation to pursue the ideal and then to work within our environment to realize it. Friction exists in every society due to rival factions. People struggle even within their families. We see that even our own mind and body are in conflict. So, the way to peace and unity cannot be discovered anywhere but within. There is no path other than that difficult search within. (061-247, 1972.09.01)

6 The standard that all the world's people can affirm as correct, the standard that can gain public approval, needs to be a standard that no one can change. World peace can blossom through the adoption of that standard. Based on that, a good individual, a good family, a good tribe, a good people, a good nation and a good world can begin. No matter how good a nation may be, it will break apart if it cannot adjust to this global standard and direction. Therefore, the issues we need to deal with are ideologies and ways of thought. These issues include our views of the universe, the world, human life and ways of living, and the character of the new world. (033-048, 1970.08.02)

7 When we think that we rely on the world, rely on the nation, on society, on our family, on our parents and our spouses and our children, we discover that there is nothing within ourselves upon which we can rely. Our body and mind are separated, so we cannot expect to rely on ourselves. What is the problem here? The problem is not the world in which we are living. The world is far distant. Your nation is not the issue, your society is not the issue, nor is your family the issue. Your husband or wife is not the issue. In the end, the issue is how you will prepare a foundation of unity within yourself. From this viewpoint, to discover a world of peace and unity, the first thing we have to do is attain inner oneness. To attempt to

join a united world without first being a person of unity is a contradiction. (128-077, 1983.06.05)

8 The issue is not World War II or today's Russia and America. The issue is how to end the war inside myself, which could continue for eternity, and bring peace. You need to understand how extremely important this is. If it does not happen, then even if the world becomes a peaceful place, it will seem like hell. When I started on this path my first motto was, "Before you seek to master the universe, first attain mastery over yourself." People who cannot conquer themselves can never conquer the world. (131-034, 1984.03.11)

9 We were born with the fate to dwell in the fallen realm. So the only way for us to recover our family is to sacrifice ourselves. Individual investment is the only way to make a foundation for peace in the family. If your attitude is that you will sacrifice for the sake of your family, your family can become the foundation for you to advance to the people and the world. It will become your foundation for settlement. It is vital that your family become the foundation from which you reach the people. You lead your relatives so that you can reach the people. (168-114, 1987.09.13)

10 Jesus said, "The kingdom of God is within you." The kingdom of God is in your mind. However, God cannot dwell in your mind unless it is united with your body, because the kingdom of God is one world. Therefore, what the Unification Church emphasizes is not the unification of the world. Before the world can be united, a nation needs to be united. Before a nation can be unified, a united people, tribe, and family are needed. Before a family can be united, an individual must be united. This means you need to attain unity within yourself, with your mind at the center. Your mind is your fundamental starting point. (160-264, 1969.05.17)

11 The way to achieve unity is simple. All you need to do is to unite your mind and body. When someone who has attained mind-body unity becomes one with his or her family, there is peace in that family. When a family that is united in this way becomes one with its society, that family will be so happy that its members will not envy anyone in society. When a society united in this way becomes one with its nation, it will develop a realm of unity that is so strong that no one in the nation will deny it; everyone will respect it. Furthermore, when such a nation becomes one with all the world's people, the kingdom of God will be realized on earth. (199-238, 1990.02.20)

The eight stages of peace

12 The religion that can take charge of the overall providence going into the fixture will need to resolve the resentment of the spirits in the spirit world, fulfill their wishes and pay indemnity for them. We cannot consider only the people living on earth and the issues facing the world today. In order to realize an age of peace, it is also necessary that we resolve the problems of the spirit world. After doing so, we will usher God to His seat. Only then can an eternal world on earth and in heaven be formed. There are eight stages: individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world, cosmos and God. (155-192, 1965.10.27)

13 Consider the path of the one central person who places Heaven at his center. For what purpose will that individual walk that path? His footsteps will not be for his own sake. That individual will have to go through the family and walk that path to the world. That individual will have to unite the world and also heaven and earth. To bring about the world of love, the world of peace that humankind desires, he will have to reach a moment of victory when he is bound to God by eternal love. (61-249, 1972.09.01)

14 Humanity as we know it has resulted from a history of strife-filled relationships. It is very difficult to overturn that completely and bring about a new result. Each of us is involved in prolonging this world of strife. As people who seek peace, we are compelled to be concerned about this. We assess what is evil or good using our own individual standards, and the battle between good and evil develops within each of us. Then there are struggles within families, tribes and peoples. When the struggles get bigger, nations fight each other. With such confrontation's, peace in the world becomes ever more remote. Look at the starting point, the individual. We can see that the realm of peace in an individual is connected to the world. To get from the individual to the world, we have to go beyond the realms of strife within families, tribes and peoples. We have to go beyond the boundary lines, the walls of the eight stages that we talk about in the Unification Church. (255-286, 1994.03.11)

15 God absolutely cannot realize the ideal of love on His own. God has to become the master of eight stages, including the time in the womb, childhood, adolescence, married life, parenthood, grandparenthood and kingship. We are the ones who lost them all, due to the Fall. God was going to set up the model of those eight stages of love, but because of the Fall, they were lost. Now we have to set them up for God. So, we have to become models of God's love before we have children. (317-104, 2000.02.19)

Section 2. Peace between Mind and Body

1 The place where you live is full of gangsters. Your mind and body are fighting each other. So if you are a husband and wife, there will be four gangsters within your couple. Where there are ten family members, there are twenty gangsters. With 3.6 billion people on earth, there are 7.2 billion gangsters. No one can even dream of peace under such circumstances. God is wise and He understands the logic of this situation very well. So where did He place the origin of peace? He works on it within individuals through religion. This reveals the greatness of God. He did not place the origin of peace on the world level or on the level of a nation or tribe. He placed it within individuals. The peace between the individual's mind and body is that eternal origin. Then who could separate a man and woman who are born of God and who attain that peace? Who could tear apart their completely united family? Who could pull apart a perfected man as plus and a perfected woman as minus who totally attach themselves to each other with the force of God's love? The foundation of such a family in which all are rooted in the love of God, the source of all power, has yet to appear on earth. (160-264, 1969.05.17)

2 Religion addresses life-and-death issues for individuals. These are issues such as: "Will I die or will I live?" and "How will I find the criteria for mind- body harmony and freedom in the mind-body relationship?" This is because liberation of the society, nation and world comes only when individuals have found their place of liberation, their right to freedom and self-governance. This is the only way that avoids contradictions of logic. But how can you possibly find freedom within, while your mind and body are constantly fighting? (187-119, 1989.02.05)

3 Humanity desires a peaceful world. Yet even after hundreds of millions of years there is no peace. For fallen people, peace is not possible. Who is the owner of peace? In order for a family to be peaceful the mother and father, who are the owners of peace, have to teach their family members the origin and contents of peace and how to put these into practice. We will not find eternal peace until this happens. Did our human ancestors find peace? Adam and Eve became enemies. You who have received the blood of those enemies endure constant battles between your body and mind. Why did your body and mind start fighting? The fight began because the original source of peace was lost and destroyed. How could people who have not found the criteria for peace between their body and mind find peace in the world? People who fight are expelled from their family, their nation and the world. Today, with the entire human race battling between mind and body, how can anyone go to the kingdom of God? No matter how much you focus on the mind, you will not get there. The purpose of religion is to bring unity between the body and the mind. (347-225, 2001.07.05)

The struggle between mind and body

4 The world in which division and conflict never end is the opposite of the garden of God's ideal love. It is not a world of truth that realizes the ideology of peace premised upon love. It is a world that Satan inhabits, in which he destroys the moral laws of family relationships. It is a world in which jealousy and envy sow unending struggle and division. Are you seeking the heavenly castle, in other words, the garden of the original ideal, while you harbor jealousy and envy in your heart? Do you have conflict and division in your mind? If such things remain within, you will never find the garden of the original ideal. (002-247, 1957.06.09)

5 The Fall originated with self-centeredness. The Fall ruined human history, bringing affliction, failure and war. We need to arrive at an understanding of fundamental issues in order to clear these things away. We need to discover the root of living for the sake of others and all things, grounded in God's love. To do so is to discover the source of peace. Without discovering the source of peace, we will not be able to build a world of peace. (146-103, 1986.06.07)

6 Our bodies, which were to have received God's lineage and God's love eternally, received the blood of the devil Satan, the enemy of both God and original human beings. We are in a bitter situation that will drag us into hell. To this day, people have not known this. What I'm saying is that Satan took a family—a family that could have lived a happy, ideal life in a peaceful kingdom with God as the center—and he violated it, creating a world of misery and hell. (53-142, 1972.02.13)

7 The battle between the mind and body is more hideous than a nuclear war. In a nuclear war there can be a ceasefire, but there are no ceasefires in the battle between the mind and body. That war never ends. From each person's first day of existence on earth until the last, a ceaseless war is fought in the background of the mind. People in this state formed families and then tribes and the fighting increased. Then people were added upon people, increasing the conflict, after which nations fought against nations. Human history until now has continued as a history of war. There has not been a single day when all wars were stopped. Their origin is the mind and body. This point of origin, the body and mind, initiates the conflict. Individuals, families, tribes, peoples and nations follow this pattern. (19-287, 1968.03.10)

8 No matter how impressive someone may look, if we analyze that person, say, a Mrs. Kim, we will find a struggle between her inner self and outer self. I am telling you that the outer person and inner person are constantly confronting each other.

This is undeniable. Within each of you, the good mind and evil body are always fighting each other. This battle is the problem. What is its source? Where is its origin? It originated at the very beginning of human history. It appears as if this battle may continue on for tens of thousands of years. (23-102, 1969.05.14)

9 You are fighting right now. You are firing guns throughout your life. Irrespective of how you arrange things in this world, your body and mind are fighting each other. How can you bring peace between them? Will your body win this battle, or will your mind? You need to become people who can say, "Without a doubt, my mind will be victorious." Those whose minds are victorious are on the side of good, while those whose bodies are victorious are on the side of evil. (36-061, 1970.11.15)

10 To this day, people have endured constant struggles between their own minds and bodies. That is, we have never seen a day of peace and unity, a day that would allow us to run toward a clear goal in accord with moral laws. Since the entire course of history has unfolded while our bodies and minds have been in conflict, there has been no way to avoid a division into two worlds, one oriented spiritually, the other materially. (20-166, 1968.06.09)

11 If we were originally designed with our body and mind in conflict, things such as ideals, peace and systems of thought would be nothing but empty words, spoken in vain. If we were created not to struggle internally, then there would be a purpose for ideals, peace and systems of thought. It is illogical that people born with an inherent inner conflict could come up with the concepts of true ideals and peace. In all respects we are resultant beings, not causal beings. We were brought into being by a cause and, as resultant beings, our existence must be consistent with that cause. Cause and effect cannot be different; a resultant being is formed from the substance of a causal being. So we can conclude that we, as result, are not inherently different from the cause, and there must be a process by which we can unite. That is scientific. (86-035, 1976.03.04)

12 The original mind, which is God's base, is the guard post for the kingdom of heaven. The body, which is Satan's base, is the guard post for hell. They are on opposite sides of a border. You can hear gunshots across the border. This is the sound of your original mind fighting with your body. Until you win this war, you cannot become God's children, and you cannot go to the heavenly nation. Without this victory as the starting point, the kingdom of heaven and the ideal world cannot be realized. (54-101, 1972.03.20)

13 Our mind-body relationship is the place of confrontation between the goodness of God and the evil of Satan. A vicious battle is taking place there. I too have struggled with this, and have set up the motto, "Gain mastery over myself before seeking to master the universe." How do we deal with this habitual conflict? Korean people crave to eat red pepper paste and soybean paste. Can you overcome this? During the day you need to work and at night you need to sleep. Is it possible not to sleep? That is the problem. You have to conquer yourself with respect to sleep, hunger, and women, if you are a man, or men, if you are a woman. (137-156, 1986.01.01)

14 Our body is Satan's kingdom. Thus, God teaches us to be victorious over ourselves, to conquer ourselves. Unless we discover the way to become one Within ourselves, it is impossible for there to be a peaceful, united world. People today think that the key to uniting the world is found in external systems such as democracy or communism, but this is not correct. It is wrong due to the fact that our minds and bodies are fighting each other. Even if we could create external unity, authentic unity would still be far away if our bodies and minds were to remain at war. (72-120, 1974.05.26)

15 We say that both our original mind and body are alive, but we are Satan's prisoners who cannot live as expressions of goodness alone. So, in truth, we are dead. Therefore, we have to break the iron bars that surround us and escape. As long as we serve two masters in our mind or environment, there cannot be such a thing as peace, so our suffering will continue. As we seek the path of life, what determination and resolutions should we make? The iron bars that surround us are nothing other than our own body. We have to mobilize our conscience to break these iron bars. The time when that can happen is called the Last Days. (12-085, 1962.11.01)

16 Peace and equality are goals shared by the entire human race. What is the starting point toward achieving them in the world? It is a way and a truth that allow for communication, harmonization and agreement. Then, what is that new truth? It needs to be an absolute truth that can link heaven and earth and that can remain beyond the end of human history. It has to be an ideology with a view of human life that contains a driving force that allows you to connect with any being in the world, whether that being is above or below you, in front of or behind you, to your left or right. History did not begin in communication and harmony but rather in mutual aversion. Such a beginning can only lead to failure and sorrow. Unless there is an absolute being who calls out to humanity with an ideology of communication and

harmony, human history will consist of nothing but hopelessness. (17-120, 1966.12.11)

Unifying the mind and body

17 To this day, countless saints have come and gone. Not one of them knew where the enemy was or where to seek the standard for world peace. The battleground of the devil or Satan is within the self. That is why I am telling you to unite your body with your mind. I am teaching you an ideology that demonstrates logically the need for unity between your body and your mind. This standard is based on a logic that no saint in history has managed to elucidate. Are you settled within your mind? Can you trust yourself? This is a serious matter. How can you ask God to recognize you when you cannot even trust yourself? How can you ask me to recognize you? Your mind needs to recognize your body and your body needs to recognize your mind. You must stand in this absolute position. Then you will be in a place where God has no choice but to recognize you. (202-090, 1990.05.06)

18 The standard for world peace is not something that is to be found at the endpoint of a historical era. It is at the place where we unite our body and mind, which have been fighting each other. If we can occupy such a position, the ideal world will surely come. Such a world is unchanging, so how can you, who are always changing, possess it? It doesn't make sense to think that you can. It is absolutely impossible. Therefore, before pursuing an ideal world, you should first seek your inner realm of unity and happiness. (139-095, 1986.01.28)

19 You need to unite within yourself, with your mind as the center. First you need to lay an internal foundation and then seek an external foundation. While doing this, you need to go beyond yourself by making God your focus, and then seek out the family, society, nation and world, and even heaven and earth. Then what is the crucial problem facing us in searching for one world and one ideology? It is not the ideology of a nation or world that exists for a while and then disappears. It is not gaining more power or a high position. It is crucial to find the ideology and the person who can unite two worlds into one. We reside within an internal world that centers on the mind and an external world that centers on the body. Just as we have divided this world into two, the spirit world also has a realm of good sovereignty governed by Heaven and a realm of evil sovereignty governed by Satan. I am telling you that the concluding point of God's providence, of all six thousand years, is within the body of each person. (4-163, 1958.04.06)

20 Even though people say they have united the world, this world remains a scene of internal battles. External unity does not stand on the foundation of internal unity. Thus, even if external unity is proclaimed, it is inevitable that the world will continue to yield divisive results. No matter how desperately we want peace and freedom, and to live in heaven, we cannot obtain these things if we are attached to the present. The fundamental issue at hand is unity within ourselves. Unless we unite our mind and body, unless our mind can say that it has attained all the conditions necessary for it to enjoy the greatest level of happiness, and unless we can become the people whose center will never yield to any earthly things, world peace will remain elusive. (20-169, 1968.06.09)

21 Peace, happiness, freedom and hope exist only on the foundation of unification. How can you be free when your body is not united with your mind? Even when you go to work, your body and mind are waging a world war. So, how can you be free? The word "freedom" comes to mean unhappiness. Is there happiness at the point where your body is fighting with your mind? Consequently, you worry deeply about the problems of life and overlook the real problem. How can there be happiness or peace if the body is not united with the mind? (242-060, 1992.12.27)

22 To this day, God has conducted His providence through religion. He has nudged people through religion toward a lifestyle that centers on the mind. He has always emphasized a lifestyle that centers on the mind, not one that centers on this world. God has been drawing us toward the life connections we will have in the final world that comes beyond this life. Even in the Christian view, God does not teach us to live focusing on the present world. We are not taught to eat well and live well in this world. Religion always directs us toward the peace that belongs to the world of the mind. It teaches, "Where is the kingdom of heaven? It is not in this world but in your mind. The kingdom of heaven is in the world of your mind and is realized at the end of our days." (49-024, 1971.10.03)

23 Without true love, we cannot unite the world of the mind and the world of the body. The world in which the mind and body separate and fight is none other than this fallen world. The mind absolutely has to be the center and the body absolutely cannot complain. The body always needs to take the minus position, and the mind needs to take the plus position. When the plus takes the forefront, it is eternal. In response to the mind's authority, the body has to create that place. If it does not, then even if this world is peaceful and ideal, you will not be able to connect to it. (217-317, 1991.06.12)

24 Where there is no unity, there can be no peace. Where there is no unity, there is no hope. Can you be happy when your mind and body are not united? Can you be happy when your mind and body are fighting? Can you be free? The two have to work well together. Peace requires a balance between the two. Have you found that balance? Do you get along well with your spouse? If you fight with your spouse in the morning, do you just go your own way feeling happy the rest of the day? No. Freedom exists on the foundation of unity. If there is no unity, there is no happiness; if there is no unity, there is no peace; if there is no unity, there is no hope. (231-269, 1992.06.07)

25 The new ideology for the future needs to examine precisely God's Will and ideal for human beings. It also has to clearly reveal God's relationship with us. The human mind and body are designed to constitute one perfected, united person rooted in God's true love. Consider a man and woman, each with a mind and body that have united based on God's true love. If they meet as a husband and wife under God's true love and form a family, that family will realize oneness by putting God's true love at its center. It will then become a source of true freedom, peace and happiness. (234-238, 1992.08.22)

26 The most valuable achievement in human life is to figure out where to set the standard for peace in terms of our mind and body. The mind and body are fighting each other. What is the standard for peace? It is not the world, not a nation and not a religion. A religious leader is a person who establishes a standard for peace, by forming absolute unity between his or her own mind and body. That is the purpose of education and training. Therefore, believing in religion or becoming a great religious leader is not the point. What we have to do is unite our body and mind. We have to establish and settle the origin of peace at the individual level. If the origin of peace is unsettled within us, things such as an ideal religion or the kingdom of heaven will be nothing more than dreams with no connection to us. (217-180, 1991.05.27)

27 How do you achieve unity between your body and mind? Before you complain about the world, before you shout about true peace in the world, before you shout about true fulfillment in the world, answer these questions: Are your body and mind united as the starting point of peace? Have you set God as the central starting point of peace? You cannot set that beginning point with your mind alone. Your body needs to conform to your mind, with God at the center. If you were like this, you could never conceive of two separate paths to follow God. But people today walk on two paths, and it is due to the Fall. They are divided. When we look at this

result, we cannot deny that something went wrong at the origin. (140-017, 1986.02.01)

28 Godism says, "I will break down the global ideological barriers and sacrifice myself for the sake of the world." God sacrifices His closest sons and daughters for the sake of the world. In the end, only Godism will remain. That is because God has sacrificed the people closest to Him to own the origin from which to love the world. Therefore, even if we face the end of history, our hearts have to go beyond the world's barriers. We have to commit to live as a people or nation that puts the world first. If we cannot do that, our group cannot remain in this world. We cannot become one by making our body the center. The body needs to make the mind its center, and the mind needs to make Heaven its center. Then they can be one. Peace, happiness and the ideal can settle in the person whose mind and body are aligned with Heaven. (26-236, 1969.11.02)

29 If people could achieve mind-body unity with the mind at the center, such that the two never separate, they could attain perfection and remain unstained. Had there been no Fall in Eden, the body and mind would not have been divided. Yet, mind and body have fought with each other to this day. In each and every person of the fallen world, the mind and body fight. Our inability to unite our mind and body is a source of anguish. If the body and mind cannot become one, it is impossible for peace to come. Happiness has nowhere to dwell. There is some truth to the saying that ours is a life of misfortune, that this world is a vale of tears. Despite the original, providential vision that they become one, our mind and body became divided. From that point, everything in all directions divided. In other words, subject and object partners became divided. (81-281, 1975.12.29)

30 How will the peaceful world come? If we cannot find the place where the body has united with the mind, there will be no origin of a peaceful world. Modern-day people say that a unified world will come and the kingdom of heaven on earth will then be realized. The base for the kingdom of heaven on earth, in all respects, is unity between our body and mind. Our body and mind need to become one. Then we need to become one as husband and wife, and next the children need to become one. Because human beings fell, the entire world has broken down. (261-118, 1994.06.09)

31 As the gap between the mind and body widens, the amount of distress increases. Suffering and tragedy take hold. Thus, we need to narrow the gap between our minds and bodies until they unite into one. If we cannot do that, this world will never know peace or happiness. Even if the global battle ends, and we try

to live in peace, we will not see hope, fulfillment or peace unless each of us ends our own battle, the battle within oneself. The problem is within me, within myself. I have to resolve my own fundamental issues. Once I do so, when I come upon ideal surroundings in the external world, I will feel a peace and fulfillment that permeates my mind. In order to realize a free and happy kingdom of heaven, we need to connect with the world on that basis. No matter how well organized the environment may be, if we remain in a situation where our own problems have not been solved, we cannot blend into that happy environment. (20-167, 1968.06.09)

32 The way to a peaceful world is to integrate two directions into one. Up until now, the fight between body and mind has divided the world. The religious world and political world are like the mind and body on a global scale. We need to unite these two worlds so that they can move in one direction for a global realm of peace to emerge. Had there been no Fall, a standard for world peace with Adam at the center would have been possible. The world would have moved in a direction opposite to that in which it is going. Instead of going to hell, it would have gone to the kingdom of heaven. Heaven would have unfolded from the individual to the family, tribe, people, nation and world, with God and Parents at the center. If that had happened, then everything would have belonged to the kingdom of heaven. (227-175, 1992.02.11)

33 What is one important standard and primary factor in realizing the kingdom of heaven? It is unity. Unless we go through the fundamental principle of unity, the kingdom of heaven cannot be realized. The kingdom of heaven is realized only when we are united. The fundamental human desire for peace and happiness is also realized at the point where we become one. If my mind and body are disunited, peace and happiness will elude me, no matter how much I want them. It means that unity is more important than anything else. (82-271, 1976.02.01)

Section 3. Peace in the Family

1 If a man and woman become one on the basis of love, theirs will become a family of peace. The same applies to the relationship between parents and children. It applies on the national level and everywhere else. There should have been happiness for all people and for our ancestors, but it has not been realized. There can be no standard for perfection other than the place where a man and woman become one. (58-216, 1972.06.11)

The family is the starting point of peace

2 The purpose of religion is to realize one world in which all people can become good and live together in peace. Conditions for peace do not originate in the hands of the worlds politicians. It is certain that peace will not come to the world through any policy or ideology. It is even more certain that unity and peace will not come through military power. The place where you can discover the starting point of peace and happiness is in your family. (23-102, 1969.05.14)

3 Everyone would rather have laughing parents than weeping parents at home. They would rather live with siblings who know how to laugh. Then where can we find such parents and siblings who laugh? We do not find it in families that revolve around worldly spouses and parents, but in families that revolve around the Parents of all humankind and the entire world. Where will we find the standard for families that can represent the world and all nations? If there is an absolute deity, He, just as much as anyone else, is most likely searching for a family standard of absolute peace. (35-131, 1970.10.11)

4 What happens when a man and woman unite? When a man and woman who are vertically one with God marry and become one in mind and body, they are aligned with the creative principles of the great way of Heaven, and so they capture God's love. I'm saying that you can possess God's love and form an axis. What is the purpose of marriage? It is for man and woman to center on God's love, possess God's love and unite. Such a union is the origin of peace and of the universe itself. The essence of true love lies in the father living for the sake of the mother, the mother living for the sake of the father, the elder brother living for the sake of the younger brother, the younger brother living for the sake of the elder brother and so on, including everyone. Because God's eternal love dwells where people live for others, such a family will endure forever. (221-212, 1991.10.24)

5 When a husband and wife persist in taking conflicting positions, there can be no peace in their family. With a single, united center in the subject position as the standard, unity of the center and its counterpart is essential. In the relationship between subject and object partners, who has to serve as the center? The subject partner serves as the center. The object partner should then treat the subject partner as his or her center and should connect to the subject partner. That is how he or she can fulfill the purpose of the object partner. However, if the subject partner goes back and forth, to and from the objective position, the single purpose is lost. In the end, to realize the purpose of the family, the husband and wife need to become one. (028-157, 1970.01.11)

6 How will a world of peace come about? What is the first requirement? We need to find the origin that unites us as one. If we cannot, then a united world will forever remain unrealized. If you ask whether you have to become one before your household becomes one, it means you have not attained unity within yourself. When the body and mind of an individual fight each other, neither the individual nor the couple can be happy. They cannot be peaceful nor can they find hope. As we get closer to the Last Days, the sphere of the mind divides from that of the body. One result is that each couple becomes four battling entities. Since there are two minds and two bodies, they become four entities fighting one another. If you try to become one centered on the woman's mind, her mind is fighting with her body, so you have to escape. If you try to become one centered on her body, her body is fighting with her mind, so you have to disengage again. There is no base to hold on to. A beginning point for peace cannot be found on earth. (230-315, 1992.05.10)

7 In a family, if the father is sad, his son cannot be happy. If the father and elder brother are sad, the younger brother cannot be happy. A person whose father is sad, whose husband is sad or whose son is sad has to harmonize with them and strive to have the same heart as they do. Even if a child is a company president, if he or she goes to work after seeing the father sad, it is natural for the child to worry about his or her father, even while working. The father's happy greeting when the child returns home should be a source of great joy to the child. If you become such family members, your family will be happy, and you will enjoy peace and the ideal. (63-304, 1972.10.15)

8 What a happy thing it is to sleep and awaken together with your beloved spouse for your entire life, to work together and then work together again. If you have lived with such love in your heart, if you end up living alone, it will not be difficult for you. The universe cannot disturb such love. In such a situation, the universe is ready to take collective action, and both the earthly world and heavenly world will protect you. People who go through life with love at their center are never unhappy, whether in this world or the next. The greatest reward given to husbands and wives who live in unity through this kind of love is their children. Their children are more precious than anything else. They want to love their children more than each other. A family in which the mother and father unite to give and receive love is a foundation of peace, rooted in love. The family in which the children and parents become completely one based on love is a family of peace. (129-056, 1983.10.01)

9 God's Will is to realize the family kingdom of heaven. Your sons and daughters are the most frightening beings in the world. They learn from your behavior. Therefore,

they are the most frightening beings. If you tolerate and forgive everything, living peacefully, then your children will learn to do the same. It is not easy to be the mother or father of sinless children. (100-302, 1978.10.22)

10 The kingdom of heaven is realized in your family. Nowhere else will you find fulfillment and peace. If your family goes in the wrong direction, you will be unhappy even if you gain the world and everything in it. Families with such love will certainly follow me to the kingdom of heaven. (130-169, 1984.01.08)

11 The family is a training ground for setting up the palace of peace in this world. The husband and wife have to live for each other, with true love as the center of moral law. The couple walking the path of eternal love and their sons and daughters all have to fulfill their responsibility. I am saying that the family is the foundation for peace. (143-169, 1986.03.17)

12 A family tradition centered on True Parents must emerge. Because the laws of love with the Parents at the center have not yet been set up, a standard of peace has yet to be established on earth. In the absence of a standard of peace centered on love, there are no sons and daughters of peace, no families of peace, no tribes of peace, no peoples, nations or world of peace. We need to enter the embrace of love, following the person who comes as our Parent. (157-166, 1967.04.02)

13 What is the task that Unification Church members desire to accomplish? It is to restore our families. That is where all our desires lie. The family is the source of the peace of all nations, of the happiness of heaven and earth, and of the new dispensation. In the family we find the beginning of the new heaven and new earth, the passing away of the first heaven and first earth, the root of all values of human life, and the starting point of hope. They are all there. Then who stands at the center of the restored family? The true ancestors, the father and mother, are at the center. (21-047, 1968.09.01)

14 The nation God desires is the nation Parents desire, and the nation Parents desire is the nation you desire. The root of that nation starts from individuals and families. You need to climb over the wall and pull your family with you and place it at the center. The family is the foundation for an ideal world. The family with love at its core is the foundation for hope and peace. We place original true love at the core. Become husbands and wives who have eternal, unchanging true love between you. Become a couple that does not change. You are here to create endless strength. You have to take with you the foundation of a family, so you need to dig deep. The family is called to follow this path. (205-233, 1990.09.02)

15 Bringing world peace depends on the foundation laid by parents and children in their families. The Unification Church emphasizes individual perfection and family perfection because I knew that this was the overall solution for peace. Take Korea, for example. If North and South Korea reunite but there is no peace within the families, the national peace will crumble. It is said that the leading nations bring peace in the world through international conferences. However, if those Parents who are at the center of the global family do not establish a family foundation capable of bequeathing peace, peace in the world will crumble. (267-198, 1995.01.08)

16 Without the Family Federation for World Peace, a peaceful world is outside the realm of possibility. That is how important families are. A peaceful world starts from the family. If there are ten members in a family, these ten need to stand together as one. They become one by harmonizing with one another three- dimensionally: vertically and horizontally, to the front and rear, and to the left and right. With that in place, we will witness the advent of the ideal world of peace. (232-325, 1992.07.10)

17 To have a healthy household, your grandmother and grandfather, mother and father, you and your spouse, and your children all need to live in harmony. You need to attain harmony and unity with one another. So the question is, how can you unite? If each of you serves yourself, you separate from one another. When eight family members live together and want to unite, what do they need to do? The grandfather and grandmother need to serve the whole. If they try to serve themselves, eight factions will arise. The way to become one is to serve one another. The grandmother needs to serve the grandfather, and the grandfather needs to serve the grandmother. The father needs to serve the mother, and the mother needs to serve the father. The husband needs to serve his wife, and the wife needs to serve her husband. Also, among the children, the elder needs to serve the younger, and the younger, in return, needs to serve the elder. This is the simple secret to making unity. If you create bonds by serving one another, peace will come to your household. (241-301, 1993.01.01)

18 Where is world peace? It is not in the world; it is within me. Even if the world out there is united to the degree that everyone is celebrating joyously, if my own body and mind are not one, what will that unified world have to do with me? Authentic peace does not begin with the outside world. I create it, starting with myself. After that, a family of peace develops from the place where Adam and Eve are completely one in true love, with the standard of each having achieved mind

and body unity. That family of peace is global. Being a unified family makes it a peaceful family, and that means it is global. (241-024, 1992.12.19)

19 According to God's Will, if there had been no Fall at the beginning and one family had been established, that family would have been humanity's single origin. Through that one family, all humanity would have found peace within God's love. That family would have been one where God would be present, a family with God at the center. That family would have aligned itself with God and become the center of a tribe. After that, a people would have become one with that tribe as their center. A nation would have become one based on that people, and the world would have become one based on that nation. Because that world would have arisen in the natural environment by means of the ideals of true love following that progression, it would have realized a single ideology. And because it was created by the expansion of one tribe from one lineage, that world could not possibly have divided. It would have been a united world, nothing more or less than the ideal world. (101-088, 1978.10.22)

20 A man and woman are born into the world, and when they are drawn to unite with each other as husband and wife they each feel, "I am happy; I am at peace." God is naturally drawn to find that place of unity and to relate to them. This is the primary motivation driving the relationship between God and people. When God relates with us in this way, it is good not only for God and us, it is also good for the animal, plant and mineral worlds, which welcome that unity with gratitude. (218-207, 1991.07.29)

21 Within a family, there is an arena of love that enfolds a man and a woman. Putting that family at the center, we embrace patriotic thought, saintly thought and the thought worthy of a divine child. When we follow this harmonizing direction to our destination, the value of our united purpose will emerge as the world standard. When we follow the historical direction of God's love and embrace the world, unity and peace will be possible. Without it, the ideal kingdom of heaven cannot appear. (207-302, 1990.11.11)

The family ideology of the global village

22 Who is leading history? The people who create history are those who are pursued and driven. History develops by going through stages. As we go forward, let us bear in mind that we are promoting an ideology of world peace. Therefore, we must not move forward by putting our own people at the center. Instead, we need to put all the people of the world at the center. As we advance, we need to

explain that we are working for global equality. A group of people such as this will never fail. This thought was Christianity's contribution toward the development of history. Christianity has advocated ideas such as the equality of all people, the brotherhood of all the world's peoples, and humanity as one great family. For this it has been attacked throughout the ages. (18-074, 1967.05.21)

23 The United Nations of the political world needs to unite with a UN of Religions and a Women's UN: these three need to unite as Cain, Abel and Eve. If they become one with the True Father and True Mother, then all of humanity will enter the realm of one family. Moving in this direction, all the nations and their leaders can enter a peaceful world. A single nation will emerge, with God at its center. The world is composed of family systems. Therefore, the family is where this process begins. With that in place, no one will fight as we naturally move to the tribal foundation. In the same way, we will advance to a nation, the world, the cosmos and God. (254-315, 1994.02.16)

24 Many religions have the concept of a Messiah or Lord of the Second Advent. This tells us that there is a single common purpose for the establishment of religion. That single purpose is world peace and unity. Why should this be so? It is because there is one owner. The idea of God, the absolute being, is one, not two. Then what is the one thought behind the ideology of oneness? It is to make the world into one. It is to realize a world of peace, a united world. God's Will is for brotherly and sisterly love to harmonize the world as a single family with love at its center, to realize a realm of oneness. (249-171, 1993.10.10)

25 All of humankind is one family. I am saying that we are a family. We are one family, connected through true love. Humankind is one tree. Your family is made up of many families living together. In your family, there are babies, boys, young men, middle-aged men and elderly men. Your family is a training ground where you educate others by example. You educate your children to connect them to the family of the world and the great universe. People who have been trained in your family fall into four categories: your grandfather and grandmother, mother and father, elder brother and sister, and you. Thus, training in your family is the way you graft onto the world family. You invest in your family in order to connect it to the world family. I am saying that you need this investment to accomplish the larger purpose. (289-209, 1998.01.02)

Section 4. Peace in the World

1 The central philosophy we uphold in the Unification Church is to live for the sake of others. If you do so, you will become the center. Without the process of living for each other, there will be no peace in the family. And if you cannot build peace in your family, there can be no peace among your people, no peace in your nation and no peace in the world. This is to tell you to live centered on a realm of love for the entire world. That will absolutely be the foundation for peace among humankind. (118-148, 1982.05.23)

2 The goal of the Unification Church ideology does not end with the salvation of the individual, but with the establishment of a united nation and world. A saved nation and peaceful kingdom will cultivate peaceful people. Likewise, a peaceful world will serve as the environment for the numerous peoples and nations to realize peaceful national realms. Conflicting interests that generate strife are not present here. The liberated, unified homeland, and through it a universal life culture, is expanding globally. This thought provides a new means by which to break the deadlock in the current circumstances of the world, which is beset by difficulties. This is Unification Thought. (36-178, 1970.11.29)

3 In the original design, each person controls, manages, organizes and masters his or her body by putting the mind at the center. Thus people move forward with common goals to realize a single purpose. The mind and body relate according to a standard. That standard of mutual relationship must not be put aside; to fulfill it, the mind is to be at the center and bring the body into oneness. This global age demands that a new movement supporting this appear at the forefront. (20-170, 1968.06.09)

4 What will happen to the world? It cannot become one simply by the establishment of a political system, nor can it become one because its people share economic circumstances. The world will become one when policy directions become one. What is the starting point of division among nations? They begin with differences in policy directions. These differences lead to conflict and breakdown. Ultimately, they are the result of differences in thinking. That is why we need a common base on which to integrate different ways of thinking. Will integration come by people sharing the reality of their lives with one another? Or will it come by putting God at the center? If we consider these two ways, it is clear that people alone cannot realize the ideal. There is no way to establish a single policy direction, a single policy idea, based solely on human desires. Therefore, we need to dig a path that recreates the stage of life in which the human conscience and body have a single thought system, one that is tied to absolute thought and absolute spirit.

Without doing so, we will not be able to establish a unified world, and we will not realize a world of peace. (060-262, 1972.08.18)

5 The Unification Church teaches people to live sacrificially. I tell Unification Church believers to sacrifice more for the nation than they do for the church. If Unification Church members serve the people and the nation with that unprecedented sacrificial mind, it will generate a patriotic spirit that history has never seen. If we establish this new tradition of loving the nation's people, our organization, which has set up that tradition, will never fail. All it takes is to plant that tradition, because all people like that way of love very much. They liked it in the past, they like it in the present, and they will like it in the future. The passage of time does not change something like that. This degree of love will be the new standard for everything. This is the origin; it is the only love that humanity needs. (57-025, 1972.05.21)

Interdependence, mutual prosperity and universally shared values

6 When men and women open the door to a new world, feeling heavenly emotions and venturing forth, it will be the time for the beginning of the kingdom of heaven that we have longed for. It is only then that the Last Days of heaven and earth will come, and that humanity's purpose, desire and hope will take root. In that day, the era of people making self-centered, arrogant claims will pass away. It will be a time when no one will say, "I am the best." From that time on, we will live in a world of cooperation; that is, a world of interdependence, mutual prosperity and universally shared values. Therefore, the Unification Church advocates interdependence, mutual prosperity and universally shared values. We cannot realize such a world on our own. (24-299, 1969.08.31)

7 In an ideal society or nation, everyone will transcend nationality and skin color to engage in mutual cooperation, create harmony, and live in happiness. The community will be like an extended family. People will be conscious of being the sons and daughters of one God, a single brotherhood and sisterhood under the True Parents. That will be the place where blessed families, who have restored their lineage, right of ownership and realm of heart, will realize a world of freedom, peace and unity. It will be a world of True Parents' language and culture. People will be interdependent and prosperous, sharing universal values and God's culture, which is based on heart. As true owners, people will find ways to stop polluting the earth's environment and to love and protect all things. In that world, people will generate their livelihood in joyful service and act based on a heart that lives and loves for the sake of others. All of society's members will follow this standard of

living. These ideals are impossible to achieve without the implementation of True Parents' thought, the thought that teaches that true love is living for the sake of others. (269-156, 1995.04.17)

8 Love of parents, love of husband and wife, and love of siblings have disappeared from contemporary Western philosophy. In this respect, Eastern thought is on a higher plane than western thought. Based on that thinking, which denies that the self can exist outside of a relationship with others, the Unification Church advocates interdependence, mutual prosperity and universally shared values. The concept that no one can be victorious alone is an absolute. Why do I tell you to serve the church? It is to elevate your greatness. Do you aspire to be the greatest in your family? Serving the church will make you even greater; serving the nation will make you even greater than that; serving the world will make you even greater and serving heaven and earth will make you even greater. How much greater? It is greatness beyond one's imagination! Here, greatness does not refer to size; it refers to well-rounded nature and maturity. If you take this on, you need to be ready to live together with all people on the world stage, with the Unification Church as your center. That is the only way you can become the son or daughter of the God who created heaven and earth. (24-300, 1969.08.31)

Head-wing thought

9 What is head-wing thought? It is to guide us to Godism. Why do we seek Godism? We do so to start anew with the ideology of peace. Godism means that we meet God and become one with Him in love. We then start anew through the peace-centered way of thinking. That is how the basis for the establishment of the kingdom of heaven on earth, as it was meant to be, will emerge. Those who live their entire lives in that kingdom will certainly enter the eternal world without any formalities. (206-133, 1990.10.03)

10 The path of restoration is not easy. This is the era marking the end of left- wing and right-wing divisions. As Jesus breathed his last, situated between thieves on his left and right, he left lasting parental grief behind on earth. Therefore it is through parental thought and head-wing thought that we make God our center and free ourselves from the realm of accusation from both the left and the right. We then debate over the realm of unity, turn around and return to create an environment in which we can march forward without limit. If we fail to do that, God's kingdom will not emerge. This is that time. This is why I have come forward with Godism and head-wing ideology and am building peace between the ideologies of the two brothers. (169-214, 1987.10.31)

11 What is the “head-wing” ideology that we talk about in the Unification Church? The left and right wings fight if there is no head, don’t they? A combined ideology can appear if we join the head-wing, left-wing and right-wing ideologies. What would be the subject partner of such a combined ideology? Think about it all you want, but the head contains the root of the nervous system. The subject partner cannot appear except in the head. Then what, or who, is this root of all roots? This is something you do not know. The root of all roots is God. head-wing thought comes from God. That is why the original mind, which takes the highest position within us, finds satisfaction in it. (172-031, 1988.01.03)

12 The Unification Church has a headwing movement dedicated to the unification of thought. Left and right refer to wings. But the head is not a wing. Just as the word “left” refers to one side, you should think of “head-wing” as meaning the direction the head is facing. Jesus carried out a new work of global separation on the cross. With Jesus at the center, three global realms separated. There were the realms on the right and left, namely, the thief on his right and the thief on his left, and the realm of Barabbas. In the Last Days, there are the right, the left, a representative of Jesus and a representative of Barabbas. The last of these is neither the communist world nor the democratic world, but the Arab world. (166-055, 1987.05.28)

13 We need a world-level way of thinking. We have nationalistic thoughts and ideas and, until now, communism has maintained racial limitations and national borders. We have overcome all that; we are supra-religious and supranational. We have gone beyond national- level thought to world-level thought and then to cosmic-level thought. What I am talking about goes beyond this world; it is about a nation and religion that transcend this world’s borders. The world needs such a way of thinking, so an ideology with God at the center had to appear. This is why Godism and head-wing thought have emerged. (334-055, 2000.09.28)

14 I am connecting all things through a supra-religious, supranational ideal that transcends the United Nations. The contemporary world lacks a transcendent ideal. There is nothing that can cross the barriers in the religious realm or national realm. To talk of transcendence is to talk about the peak realm where we return to God. I am the person standing there, as the Lord of the Second Advent and the True Parent. I use the head-wing ideology to take on both the left and the right. Head-wing thought deals with the world by placing God at the absolute center. Neither the religious realm nor the national realm offers any match for it. We need a way of thinking that goes beyond the barriers. Adam’s world, which possesses a unified culture, goes beyond the barriers. It is the realm of the culture of heart, and its

connection requires perfection in front of God. That forms the base. Think of it as a staging area from which emerges a realm of heart that realizes oneness with God. It is like an army base. (341-190, 2001.01.01)

15 What is Godism? It is an ideology based on the idea of unity, used for our interreligious work and work among non-governmental organizations. How does it build unity? It does not do so by thought alone; love is needed. This calls for sacrifice and service, which are at the heart of all mainstream religions and traditional societies. A new bud can emerge where there is sacrifice. (355-285, 2001.10.06)

16 From now on, we begin with a God-centered concept. We do not begin with human-centered thoughts and concepts. When we have people at the center, there is no way forward. The only path of hope is the one where God sets out toward the final destination for the realization of His ideal. I am declaring that concept. With head-wing thought at the center, the left and right wings need to make a 180-degree reversal, become one and return to God's world. Through God's love we can create one world and realize world peace. (215-205, 1991.02.17)

17 If we look at history, Christianity drew a line between materialistic ideologies and a God-centered ideology. The ideologies emphasizing material things collapsed, but the Christian cultural realm, with God at the center, is also declining. Many Christians have bought into the secular humanist worldview. As a result, there is currently no compelling ideology that places God at the center. Materialists and humanists cannot run the world. God is the ruler of the world, so we can rule it only if we look at it from God's viewpoint. No figure in authority, no matter how impressive his or her thought may be, can control the entire world. Neither the right wing nor the left wing can do so. This has set the stage for head-wing thought, which is the ideology of heart. What is the "heart" it builds from? It is the heart of a true child and the heart of a true spouse. You need to attend God as your Parent and maintain a family environment that builds blood ties with God. (198-217, 1990.02.03)

18 head-wing thought will inspire people to have the attitude of owners of unity and of righteous families. This will allow them to prepare a family foundation for the kingdom of heaven. The family is the building block for the kingdom of heaven. The family is a model from which we can expand to a larger scale. Where can we find the family model necessary to realize the kingdom of heaven? What I am asking is, where is the family prototype for the kingdom of heaven on earth? In that family unit, you have the kingdom of the heavenly world, which is able to become

the counterpart to that royal authority in the world. It is found only in my teachings. We are advocating headwing thought to serve as a unified foundation on which to address the dynamics that brought about conflict between Adam and Eve. This will prepare the groundwork for a family built on the original model. That is the basis for head-wing thought. (226-134, 1992.02.02)

19 Who can bind East and West together? I alone can do that. I have created the Inter-Religious Federation for World Peace, which can assimilate and integrate the Christian and Islamic civilizations, and also the Eastern civilizations based on Buddhism and Confucianism. Next, in the political sphere, I created the Federation for World Peace. I have made preparations for Western, Christian society to connect with the East, and am now waiting for this to come to fruition. Politically, I will harmonize the global political climate through a supranational worldview centered on head-wing thought and Godism. Thus, we will move toward a peaceful world. (224-293, 1991.12.15)

20 Due to the decline of ideologies and value systems, the world is out of control and we find ourselves in limbo. It is a difficult age, characterized by chaos. The only value system that can take the leading position is that of head-wing thought, or Godism, that we are discussing. The age we are entering will present the ultimate value system, the absolute values of Godism. Until today, prominent voices have been clamoring based on humanistic thinking, but now we are transitioning from a human-centered to a God-centered focus. God is an absolute being. An absolute being has absolute thinking. No one has understood this. We have numerous religions with their cultural backgrounds, but they did not know Godism. The “-ism” in Godism means “way of living.” Among all the ways of living, whether individualist, familial, societal, national, global or cosmic, whatever systems you like, there has been no ideal religious substance. But with the advent of the Unification Church on earth, headwing thought and Godism have been introduced. (203-026, 1990.06.14)

21 America has no ideology that can defeat the Communist Party of the Soviet Union. If America is armed with Godism, rooted in head-wing thought, Godism and free-market capitalism will become like inner and outer halves. Then, through my guidance, America can progress in a perpendicular line straight toward God. If America follows a straight line to the original standard of God’s ideal of creation, the world can achieve a dominion of brotherhood in which all people are connected as one family, and a realm of peace. To unite politics with religion, as body and mind, I created the Inter-Religious Federation for World Peace,

representing the religious world, and the Federation for World Peace, representing the political realm. I then united the two into one. (214-245, 1991.02.02)

22 Many ideologies have appeared until now, but none has maintained an unchanging direction. The United States and the Soviet Union, advocating democracy and communism, have focused on their own interests to this very day. The same has been true of religions. Religions have failed to achieve harmony among themselves in keeping with God's desire. Instead, they have pursued directions as divergent as east, west, south and north. To this day, not one organization, leader or nation has been able to find the direction God desires. From now on, everything from the individual to the family, society, nation, world and cosmos should set its compass on one eternal and unchanging direction. Head-wing thought, Godism, represents that direction. (203-028, 1990.06.14)

23 Starting here in the land of Korea, we need to produce many world leaders who will work to build paradise on earth, a world of unity and peace. They need not only to unify our homeland, but also to dissolve the cultural differences between East and West and the economic gap between North and South. Through Godism, through the head-wing ideology, they need to build a world of peace, a society of one human family based on love. (195-052, 1989.11.03)

24 The democratic world represents the right wing and the communist world represents the left wing. Both are now collapsing. This is definitely true of the United States. Neither left nor right has a center. What is the center? What is needed from now is the head-wing ideology, Godism. That is what I have introduced. No form of humanism can advance in front of God. Since God alone is the absolute and eternal center, only Godism, head-wing thought, can provide a center for humanity. True Parents' ideology is the true center for the spiritual and physical worlds. (205-263, 1990.09.09)

25 The world is still divided into various cultural spheres based on religious, historical and ethnic differences. Since the religious cultural spheres began from God, we can more readily substantiate God's ideology in those areas. They are needed to guide the cultures of the East, West, South and North. Likewise, the head-wing thought is needed to resolve the fighting between left-wing and right-wing thought. Godism can unite religions and head-wing thought can dominate humanistic philosophical trends, to alleviate the difficulties faced by this suffering world. (204-081, 1990.07.01)

A world-level ideology

26 How did Christianity become the greatest of the world's religions? By placing the greatest of all saints at its center. There are central saints among saints. What do they need to teach? They need to teach the way for people to place God at their center, that is, the correct way. Saints teach the way people should relate to God and go before God. This is what makes saints different. God guides them, so they are beyond nationality. Through His principle and heart of love, God pursues a nation of peace that transcends history and human love. The saints, following that principle, teach the world-level ideology. You cannot become a saint unless you put God at the center. (34-341, 1970.09.20)

27 It is now the time of the Last Days, when we are entering an age of world- level ideology. This is not a time to distance oneself from the world. Imagine the heart of Heaven as being like this. We will enter a time of the cosmic ideology and place the heart of Heaven at its center. Think about your own heart. In which direction should it go? The time of living for oneself has passed. The time of living for one's family, society, and people has also passed. The time of living for a particular nation has passed as well. The time for world-level ideology is coming. We are at a stage where we need to adopt a philosophy to live for the world. Now we need to find individuals to whom the heart of Heaven wants to relate, and families, peoples, nations, a world and a cosmos to whom the heart of Heaven wants to relate. Without understanding this, we will repeat the courses of the great men and women and saints of history, but nothing more than that. (7-239, 1959.09.20)

28 What is our ideology? It is not a global doctrine that puts human beings first. It is modeled after a single doctrine and world that puts God first, but it goes beyond the scope of religion. Any good world that people design needs to fit perfectly, without contradiction, within this model realm of a single doctrine and world. That is the only way for heaven and earth to become one. Heaven is like the mind and human beings are like the body. In that light, even if this world, which is like the body, settles into oneness and becomes a good world, but still places people at the center, it will not be enough. An inner world needs to appear that the God-centered good subject partner, in the position of the mind, can validate as a world of goodness. When that is accomplished as a single doctrine, without any contradictions or conflict, it will be the first time that heaven and earth set forth toward a world of peace. (153-029, 1963.10.18)

29 We can call the time in which we are living the Last Days. We have arrived at a time in which it will be difficult for any global religious body, doctrine or thought to sort things out. If we use inherited doctrines and claims, we can neither comprehend the world of our mind nor find rest for the world of our heart. At this

point, philosophy, religion and science have to surrender. We have to face the question, what should this world embrace? We have to embrace something infinite, greater than the world of the mind, greater than the cosmos. To embrace something greater than this world's ideals and to sing its praises is nobler than anything this earth can offer. Doing so is the only way to lead and manage the world. This is an international age. Two camps, having divided the world, are having a showdown. We cannot allow this to end as a battle. We have to find a way to settle it. We can do so by setting up a clear symbolic standard for the mind and the body. Without this, confusion will arise and this world will destroy itself. (8-016, 1959.10.25)

30 In the world people say, "We struggle for freedom. We give our lives for freedom. Liberty or death! I would rather die than lose my freedom!" However, they miss the point. Even if they start a revolution to win freedom and pull together some organization or nation, they will just see another struggle develop. Their concept of freedom does not include an eternal subject partner. They use force to win freedom, applying the strength of weapons. Those weapons represent the entirety of their actual power. Communism is such an entity. So are individualism, family-ism, ethno-centrism, or nationalism. To this day, no one has gone beyond his or her own nation. No one lives by the ideals of a world-level ideology. (276-240, 1996.02.24)

31 Ultimately, we need a type of patriotism organized around the family, with God's love at its center. But it cannot stop with a nation; it has to be international. That is why we call the people of the world to become members of a single family, to become brothers and sisters. What characterizes a world of peaceful nations united as one? It is marked by a family ideology that promotes brother-sister relationships. That is the ideal world. But a family-centered world will not stop at just brother-sister relationships. There will be incessant fighting between siblings. At this time, the more than one hundred nations in the United Nations all relate to America one-on-one, although America is so large. This means they belong to a realm of sister nations. That being the case, it is time for the parents to appear. The battle between siblings persists, so the parents need to come and separate right from wrong. We are arriving at such a time, and those parents will come. They will bring the doctrine for world unification. The world has left its Parents' embrace. However, when this world rediscovers its Parents' embrace and rests deeply within the realm of God's love, welcoming a new spring, it will finally become a united world. (160-278, 1969.05.17)

Acosmic-level ideology

32 The cosmic-level ideology allows us to unite our body and mind and establish a family that becomes the essence of God's love, connecting this thought to both the spirit world and the physical world. The Chinese character for jw (ffi) in cheonju (cosmos, means "home." That is why we use the term cosmic-level ideology. The cosmos comprises the incorporeal and corporeal worlds. How can you relate to this? You need a family. If you cannot achieve unity in your family, you will have no relationship with the cosmic-level ideology. The family is the ultimate standard that accomplishes this way of thinking centered on the cosmos. If you cannot sing praises of peace and happiness when that happens, you will be unhappy both on earth and in the spirit world. (26-190, 1969.10.25)

33 God is the being who created heaven, earth and all things. As such, He is the one who is entitled to rule all of heaven and earth. He should not rule only in one particular area. Therefore, if you want to become a son or daughter of God, someone who can call God "Father," you have to at least think about the world that God is striving for. That will make it possible for you to create a bond with God. Until today, the landscape of doctrines and ideologies has been constantly changing. But once an ideology comes that can stand unchallenged on earth, it will expand into a cosmic doctrine that can connect with God, the root being of the universe. It will remain as the conclusion of history. (4-206, 1958.04.28)

34 Now the time of globalism is passing and a new age is coming, the age of the cosmic-level ideology. As this age arrives, the world will shatter unless everyone can welcome this central ideology with outstretched arms and bended knees. This is the meaning of the great judgment. When the Israelites were in captivity, they dropped their inherited beliefs and bowed their heads to Moses, who was close to Heaven. Putting their trust in him, they easily overcame the Pharaoh's rule and cast off the suffering and adverse circumstances he inflicted. They had no problem crossing the Red Sea, which blocked their path when they made their departure. On the other hand, when they became alienated from Moses, a multitude of them—six hundred thousand people—died in the wilderness. Why did that happen? History is guided not by the thought or doctrine that people adopt to meet the needs of a given moment. Rather, it is guided by the conscience that calls people to a higher place. That higher place is God's heart. (8-018, 1959.10.25)

35 We are on the side of neither democracy nor communism. Then what is our doctrine? It is the cosmic-level ideology (cheonju-juui). The Chinese character for the first ju (®) in the word for the cosmos-centered way of thinking (cheonju-juui) does not mean owner, as does the Chinese character for the first ju (±) in democracy (minju-juui). It is the character for home. Can God live in this nation? He

cannot. This nation should become our heavenly home (cheonju, that is, God's home. As it has not done so, we are meeting with difficulties. I am saying that troubles arise because the owner is not at home. (033-051, 1970.08.02)

36 No ideology in history has depth comparable to that of the cosmic-level ideology. It is new, and it can surpass any of the world's ideologies. Its special point is the home. The second character in the word for this cosmos-centered way of thinking (cheonju-juui) is the character for home (g). Eventually, we need a home in which each of us can live, a home in which our nation, our world, and heaven and earth can live. I am saying we need to move toward a home for the individual, a home for the nation, a home for the world and a home for heaven and earth. The center of such a home is God. We need to expand, placing our focus on God. We begin with a home for an individual and move to a home for a people, nation and world. Satan has constructed his image of the world, and God has not yet reached that point. Satan is building his homes for individuals, tribes, nations and the world. To break down Satan's homes and build new homes in their place, centered on God's Will, let us use our strength as people with God in our hearts. (25-084, 1969.09.30)

37 You are like God in that you believe in the cosmic-level ideology. So instead of living for your own family, you need to live for the nation and to love all people of the world as your brothers and sisters. From there you need to develop a worldwide foothold, allowing people to graft onto the family of the heavenly nation. We have to be sons and daughters who can sacrifice everything for God and humanity. Our marriages are not for our own sake; they are for God and humankind. When we sleep, it is not for our own sake but for God and humankind. When we eat, it is not for our own sake but for God and humanity. Godism, the cosmic-level ideology, guides us to do all things in this manner, for the sake of God and humanity. (095-174, 1977.11.11)

38 Parents are the root of humankind. Therefore, when you set the beginning point from which to consider all matters related to life and death, put God's heart at the center of your feelings. This is necessary, an absolute prerequisite. A person whose life is lived thinking of the world, fulfilling this prerequisite, is part of the cosmic-level ideology. That person may live in the Republic of Korea, but he or she is part of the cosmic-level ideology. When the sovereignty of the cosmic-level ideology is established, and all people are part of that world, those people who were persecuted for the sake of that sovereignty will receive honor as they are welcomed by heaven and earth. They will live in the new kingdom of heaven on earth and then enter the eternal kingdom of heaven. Their lineage will consist of people of

Heaven and will remain on earth eternally. It is only then that we will have reached our final destination. We have to seek that standard. (27-032, 1969.11.15)

39 The Unification Church is not just trying to save the people on earth. It is also trying to liberate the spirits who spent their time on earth, were captured when they went to the spirit world and are still tied up in the chains of hell. This is the teaching of the Unification Church. Thus ours is a cosmic-level ideology. It does not work through legal conditions. It is possible only when a filial son emerges, a son who can bring God to tears and who can resolve all of God's historical anguish. But a filial son is not enough. A family needs to emerge that says, "God: Jesus forgave humanity, as Your individual son. Now we, as a husband and wife of Your family, Your son and daughter who have created a family, are in the position to make an offering of atonement. We plead with You to save even the people who have gone to the spirit world." Only such a family, which has come together like this, can liberate the entire human race, in the spirit world and the physical world. (57-110, 1972.05.29)

40 The final age that humanity will reach is the age centered on an understanding of the heart. That understanding will connect us not to humanistic feelings but to heavenly emotions. We need to think about that age. Some people may claim that they can find solutions to historical problems, but they will not be truly resolved until that age comes. Such a global end time is coming. Among the global religious teachings, only Christianity explains this well. What is the Christian teaching about heart? It teaches that Jesus is a bridegroom seeking a bride, that God was the Father and Jesus the son, and that all people are brothers. Thus it informs our horizontal relationships, our parent- child ties with God, and our sibling relationships with all people. These are not conceptual doctrines but doctrines of heart that go beyond the human conscience. Our age is that of the cosmic doctrine, which allows people to connect with heavenly heart and emotions. (006-317, 1959.06.14)

41 Today, in this age, we need a cosmic- level ideology that reaches beyond globalism. Godism has to arise. In addition, we need a firm standard that will allow people to connect their bodies and minds with the heart of Heaven, by basing their lives on Godism during their time on earth. Without such a standard, we will not be able to live happily. So, within our environment, our minds and bodies can rest and rejoice based on that idea and, through that idea, feel the historical heart of God, the contemporary heart of God and the future heart of God. By this, we stand as cosmic history's final gift to the world. The ultimate purpose of this gift is not to rule the earth. We start with it as a foundation from which to embrace the infinite

world and, later, God. This is the final purpose: to embrace God, to make God belong to each of us. (8-031, 1959.10.25)

42 The conflict on the Korean Peninsula represents not only the conflict between developed and developing nations but also that between Eastern and Western cultures. The unification of the Korean peninsula is integrally related to world peace and is connected to the resolution of other world problems as well. The world is approaching a time when a massive spiritual awakening is needed. A new understanding of God's existence is not the only thing that individuals, nations and the entire world need. We have to actually meet God and recover our natural relationship with Him, so that we can never separate from Him. To fulfill this purpose I am teaching Godism, centered on true love. Godism is neither left-wing nor right-wing thought; it is head-wing thought. (234-241, 1992.08.22)

CHAPTER 3 The Means to Realize World Peace

Section 1. World Peace through Religion

1 Religion exists for the sake of the world. The purpose of religion is to establish the framework of peace for humankind. That is why religions pursue world peace. Yet world peace is not only for human beings. God too must rejoice in it. This must be a world in which the peace that God desires is in accord with the peace that human beings desire. These two goals come into accord not centered on the people of the world alone and not centered on God alone. There is only one way that God and people both want to be governed; that is the way of love. God's bitter anguish up until now is that He could not be governed by true love. Since God is the true King, He wants to be governed by a person with true love, even if that person is of the lowest rank. There is nothing that true love cannot permeate. There is no gap in true love. The Fall gave rise to gaps between light and darkness, front and back, and left and right, but true love can traverse them all. (139-061, 1986.01.26)

2 Philanthropy as we witness it today originated from a central trend of religious thought in history. Religion in a broad sense refers to the mainstream of life that centers on God's side. That is why it advocates love, benevolence, civic virtue and goodness. Religion does not pursue its own ambitions. Rather, it radiates goodness by benefiting the public. Through this it transforms the spirits of the evil world and restores the evil world to the side of Heaven. It does not directly fight evil, but promotes harmony and peace centered on goodness and so creates an atmosphere of reconciliation. In order to deal with this evil world, the religious world needs to make a new beginning. That is, in order to influence its environment, it has to invest

something new. Harmony, unity and peace can come only when religions continually work for each other's sake, rather than telling their believers to work for them. This is the mainstream thought that has guided good religions throughout history. (213-007, 1991.01.13)

The objective of religion is to build the world of peace

3 Where will God find the stronghold of peace? It is not in America, nor Russia, nor any other nation. That place is the original mind of human beings. That means we should discard everything having to do with the fallen world and return to the standard of our original mind. It means to return to our inner self. That is why Jesus said that the kingdom of God is within us. It means that unless we liberate the goodness in our heart, it will be impossible for us to realize an ideal world, a world of happiness. In history, it is religion that has established this standard. God needed to guide people to the way of peace. During the course of history, His efforts to guide people to the way of peace must have left traces. The traces of God's activities are found in religion. (023-125, 1969.05.18)

4 True peace starts from me. From where in me does it start? It is not from within my heart by itself, but from my heart when it unites with God. Therefore I need to control my body. No matter how you look at people, it is clear that we are not causal beings but resultant beings. That being the case, we need to be completely one with our origin, God. But we have not been able to become one with God. Cause and result need to be one; they should not oppose each other. From that perspective you cannot take yourself, who are a resultant being, as the starting point for oneness. The cause is the starting point. The historical mission of religion has been to create that relationship. (72-120, 1974.05.26)

5 God's objective is world peace. Whether you ask Gautama Buddha, the founder of Buddhism, Jesu, the founder of Christianity, or the Prophet Muhammad, the founder of Islam, you will get the same answer. The purpose of religion is peace. It is to bring about one world, an ideal world. (199-215, 1990.02.17)

World peace through a supra- denominational movement

6 From the viewpoint of the Will, we are in a situation similar to that of Jesus in his relationship with Israel and Judaism. In other words, the environment that exists in front of us now is similar to what existed in Jesus' time. Because this is such a time, it is a given that we should develop a supra-denominational movement. Having this conviction, we need to carry out operations on two fronts. As much as we have been dedicated to restoring our people, we also must do our utmost to promote a

supra-denominational movement. We already have established the standard this requires. (017-313, 1967.04.10)

7 God's Will is to save the world. In order to save the world, we need to pass through the stage of being supranational and supra-denominational. Look at the founding spirit of America. That nation was established from all nations, based on Protestantism. That is, it was founded with a standard that transcended nationality. However, America did not establish a supra-denominational standard. Even though it was international, it was not supra-denominational. Hence, it falls upon us to create that supra-denominational standard. As we do, we are bound to develop a teaching that transcends nationality and even the world. (088-052, 1976.07.04)

8 In terms of electricity, my role is like that of a power distribution station. As long as the power plant does not break down, the electric lights will come on. I am here to power the light bulbs in everyone's home. If I illuminate their homes, they are bound to be pleased. What I am saying is that following this principle is the way we should make one world. We should not be vague in making one world. That is why I need to present concrete measures in leading a movement to unite religions. (137-069, 1985.12.18)

9 As the Last Days approach, the movement to unite religions will grow and develop. People on earth may not know about God's work that is being carried out behind the scenes through religion. Nonetheless, God is leading the advance toward one united world, and the religious realm must form structures to cooperate with such work. That is why a global movement called the International Religious Foundation has appeared. In opposition to this, Satan has formed a single system that stands opposed to religion. That system, which centers on the evil god, arose based on an ideology that opposes religion. It denies God and advocates materialism, which treats matter as absolute. It also advocates humanism. It has formed a world that has nothing to do with God. (149-083, 1986.11.17)

10 I have devoted my entire life to practicing God's love. I have walked that course in the position of a true son of God. You have to pass through the same course. If we can be completely successful on that course, there will be no problem that we cannot solve. That is why I founded the Inter-Religious Federation for World Peace. With the founding of this organization, it is now possible for religions to cooperate in realizing ideal families and societies with God at the center, a united world. (205-165, 1990.08.20)

11 Mind and body are divided, and the global expansion of that is the division between the political and religious realms. The political realm is in conflict with the religious realm. The body-like political realm always strikes the mindlike religious realm. This conflict has spread even to the United Nations. In order to overcome this, I founded the Inter-Religious Federation for World Peace. I also created the Federation for World Peace. If the political realm in Satan's world does not listen to us, then we have to create an Abel-type political realm to encompass it. The purpose of the Federation for World Peace and the Inter-Religious Federation for World Peace is to unite the political and religious realms. (264-214, 1994.11.03)

12 Just as the body and mind are divided, two worlds are fighting. We now need to unite the religious world, which represents the world of the mind, through the Inter-Religious Federation for World Peace. Also we have to deal with the fights between the various nations of the world, representing the world of the body, and for this I founded the Federation for World Peace. These organizations already are established. When they have a joint meeting and I direct them to mobilize to fulfill the responsibility of building a world of peace, it is the people of faith who should take the initiative. I call the people of the Unification Church and the representatives of every religious body to take the lead for the sake of world peace. They have to lead people in the same way that the mind has to lead the body. Otherwise, the world of peace will not come. (210-124, 1990.12.17)

13 Throughout history, the political world persecuted religion. Politics is in the position of the body. The arena of activity based on the body does not recognize God. While focusing on the original mind takes one into the realm of theism, focusing on the body leads to the realm of atheism. These two realms are fighting each other. But the religions must not fight one another; rather, they must come together. In God there is no concept of struggle; there is only the concept of peace. All religious groups that fight other religions are destined to disappear. Humankind will not sustain their existence. They will dissipate entirely. (233-017, 1992.07.20)

Section 2. World Peace through Ideal Families

1 When, from the True Parents of the families, mind and body become one, the couple becomes one, and the children become, peace is realized. Peace begins only when True Parents emerge and, centering on them, true families emerge. The world and its nations are secondary; the kingdom of heaven on earth begins with True Parents and true families. This is the basis of humanity. This is where the kingdom of love begins, where the kingdom of life and lineage begins, as well as the kingdom of heaven on earth, the kingdom of heaven in heaven, and the kingdom of

happiness, hope, unity and peace. That is why we have to unite our mind and body. Man and woman and Cain and Abel need to become one. Due to the Fall, the mind and body divided, Adam and Eve divided, and sons and daughters divided. Now all these that were divided have to unite. True Parents are the ideal model for the oneness of mind and body, for oneness as a couple and for oneness among children. You know everything because you learned from True Parents, who brought victory on the world level. All you have to do is build the kingdom of heaven in your family. (259-318, 1994.04.24)

2 The unification of the world is simple. In the Unification Church we practice cross-cultural marriage. If enemies become in-laws, the universe will quickly enter an era of peace. That is why I have conducted the cross-cultural marriage Blessing between Koreans and Japanese. Among the Blessing candidates were people from all kinds of backgrounds, but God's love goes beyond these differences. Even Jesus has to bring his enemies with him in order to enter the kingdom of heaven. We need to love those in the position of our enemy more than we love our sons and daughters, more even than we love our parents. Only when we reach such a state can we prepare the royal grounds of peace and lead the people to the royal palace where we all can live together. Koreans and Japanese have been relating to each other as enemies. They have not wanted to marry each other, but the Unification Church has overcome this. (504-115, 2005.08.12)

3 No path to world peace is shorter than international marriage. Human beings became enemies and created national barriers. Enmity arises among those who live in close proximity; those who live far away from one another do not become enemies. Accordingly, to hasten the realization of a peaceful world, I marry people from enemy countries. In this way we are Overcoming the boundaries between nations. This will bring us halfway to the world of peace. (249-332, 1993.10.11)

4 The responsibility of the religious world is to stand at the forefront in the quest for world peace. It is a mission that God requires of it absolutely. I cannot imagine that anyone here would disagree with this. What is the shortest path to peace, the one closest at hand? It is to marry young people across religious boundaries. The conflicts in the world will move halfway to resolution when young people from warring religions marry. If this process is repeated in the second generation, the conflicts can be resolved. That is why I am trying to bless young Unificationists in marriage with young people of other religions. If all religions of the world participate in the cross-cultural marriage Blessing, then those that have related as enemies will unite, and enemy nations will also unite. This is the direct way to

achieve world peace. Religions have to fulfill this mission; otherwise there was no reason for God to establish them. (249-085, 1993.10.08)

5 At the recent Assembly of the World's Religions, participants discussed a proposal that members of different religions marry. The representatives of thirteen religions gathered there concluded that marriage of believers from different religions is the only direct path to world peace. Religions have to take the lead in this. The mind has to take the lead for peace and, when it comes to world peace, religion represents the realm of the mind. There is no track faster than marriage to bring oneness among enemies divided by national boundaries. (249-257, 1993.10.10)

6 How shall we achieve world peace? The gist of it is simple. A world of peace begins with the sons and daughters of enemy nations who marry each other, and whose parents pray that as married couples they will live blessed lives. Unless this happens, world peace can never be realized. If people continue to allow themselves to be divided by national borders, they will remain enemies. (296-204, 1998.11.09)

7 Once people marry transcending nationality, national barriers will naturally disappear. When a British woman and a Frenchman marry, the national boundary between the two will disappear. Both will change without being aware of it. We need to understand this. Marrying a Frenchman does not make a British woman French; nor does marrying a British man make a French woman British. What, then, does it make her? She becomes simply a Unificationist. What are Unificationists? They are the group that can launch the ideal world, the ideal world of peace that gives rise to the world of freedom. (129-239, 1983.11.06)

8 Our first human ancestors came together in marriage in the wrong way, and this eventually led to barriers between nations. Therefore their descendants have to receive the Blessing and abolish those barriers. There are Cain nations and Abel nations; they stand as enemies to each other. Because of wrong marriage, these brothers were divided. That is why we need to receive the cross-cultural marriage Blessing. Without it, a united world will not come about. Those who fixed on boundaries as a reason to divide can return to oneness by exchanging positions. In other words, the elder brother becomes the younger brother and vice versa. Without the cross-cultural marriage Blessing, peace cannot emerge. This is the meaning of God's exhortation to love our enemies. (333-156, 2000.09.26)

9 In the Unification Church there are no barriers between nationalities. Difference of cultural background is no barrier. We are eliminating all such barriers. This time, many who participated in the Blessing joined in interracial marriages between black

and white. I blessed hundreds of Japanese-African couples. When we are able to bless millions, tens of millions and even entire nations, humanity will affirm that it is of one lineage. On this foundation the world will leap toward global peace. What happens when twelve nationalities are represented within our one family and they are united? What happens when they become one? Even without making it their agenda, they will form a world of peace. How marvelous! Then I shall become the King of Peace. This is why I am called the Messiah and the True Parent. (235-199, 1992.09.20.)

Section 3. Culture and World Peace

1 If human beings had not fallen, they would have ushered in the ideal spring garden. In that ideal spring garden, they would have grown up to be people with whom God would have lived while rejoicing. Having reached maturity, they would have created a God-centered new culture and new world on this earth. And at the center of the world and culture that they created, they would have lived in peace and happiness. Just as all things revolve following the four seasons—spring, summer, autumn and winter—in the world they created, which would have continued forevermore, each human life would have passed through stages corresponding to the four seasons. Instead of this, human beings fell. As a result, they were unable to see the beginning of joy. It was to have come when they welcomed the one day of glory into the world. That would have been the time of formation, when human beings could have rejoiced. (49-319, 1971.10.24)

2 God desires to see His purpose fulfilled through human beings. That purpose is only one, the one world of creation. The conclusion is plain from both sides. Human beings need to pursue that world and God also needs to realize that world. Throughout history, both God and human beings have been pursuing that one world, the world of one culture and one sovereignty, the one world of peace and unity. We have to pursue that world, for it is a condition necessary to the life of all humanity as well as to each individual. (72-115, 1974.05.26)

3 The World Culture and Sports Festival is a history-shaping event. It exalts the true values that make for human happiness, and promotes the culture of heart for all humanity. Its founding purpose is to present a new, peaceful world culture in which God, humankind and all things can be in harmony. People of all walks of life the world over, including scholars, religious leaders, journalists, public servants and youth leaders, will gather in one place for the festival. There, as citizens of the global village and members of one global family, they will pool their wisdom and

experience, and celebrate life in harmony with all humankind. (234-226, 1992.08.20)

4 It is part of the original human nature to both pursue and express beauty. Human beings embody God's ideal of creation. Their internal world manifests the three faculties of emotion, intellect and will, and the physical body acts in response to the commands of the mind. As a result, human beings continually pursue beauty, truth and love, which they express by means of art, science and religion. In the end, the universe and all things in it are but external forms expressing the internal nature of God, the Creator, in a variety of substantial embodiments. (316-069, 2000.02.09)

5 The ultimate goal of artists, and those who work with the arts, is to reach the world of God's heart. God, the Creator, wants to feel boundless joy through all the different things He personally created with His own hands, one by one, as works of art. God's heart is such that He wants to give again after He has given. After doing things for others He wants to do more for them, and even after investing unconditionally He wants to forget what He has done. That heart is the basis of the world of true love. God's ideal of creation for the created world arose from that heart. The starting point of art is the desire to represent that heart. Accordingly, in the world of art there are no national boundaries. The purpose of art is not to serve as a tool of an ideology or an agenda. Its fundamental principles are harmony and unity. Divisiveness and conflict are fruits of fallen nature. Therefore the world of art demonstrates universal characteristics in all directions, bringing the East to understand the West and the West to accept the East. (316-070, 2000.02.09)

6 To usher in the age of peace, we cannot exclude the roles of the arts and sports. With this in mind, it is amazing that we have achieved world-class standards in those fields. First it was in the soccer world. Next it was in the world of art and culture, where our ballet company is almost as well-known as the Bolshoi Ballet. In the future, when we enter a world of freedom and peace that is free from war, sports and the arts will be absolutely necessary. (412-036, 2003.07.14)

7 I have a plan to inspire the general public through the arts. Dance is a vehicle by which women are moved, and sports are a vehicle by which to inspire men. I have a dream to elevate these two vehicles to the highest global standard. Sports and the arts have the power to move the public in an instant. In them lies enthusiasm and vitality. Once we link this enthusiasm and vitality with the spirit of the Unification Church, God will surpass Satan's world. How much has God toiled to surpass Satan's world, while harboring bitter sorrow in His heart? He suffered because we human

beings were unable to climb over that wall. However, once the age comes when we can climb over that wall, we will be unstoppable. (237-323, 1992.11.18)

8 We need to renew the worlds of sports and the arts. Ballet is the greatest of all dance forms from the West, but its value has not been appreciated enough. I intend to elevate it to a new level. The same goes for sports. The arts and sports need a philosophy behind them. Ballet is like gymnastics with respect to the splendid technique it requires. Yet in addition to technique, it should have a noble spirit. Then its attractive power will draw in even those people who had no interest in it. In the contemporary world of the arts, however, that noble spirit is moribund. The world of sports also requires a spirit of complete dedication. (237-324, 1992.11.18)

9 Societies originally promoted sports in order to maintain physical health and public safety. Today sports are spreading worldwide, bringing pleasure to billions of people and enriching their lives. Therefore, from various angles we need to find ways to contribute to peace for all people through sports. (381-128, 2002.06.12)

10 I plan to bring sports and the arts together. I am trying to integrate dance and music with exercise. I want to create something that is not simply an exercise, like gymnastics, but dance-gymnastics combined with music. I am planning to transform even something like karate into an art. I am actually doing such exercises every day; they are exercises that integrate sports and art. In them God's spirit is reflected. (295-165, 1998.08.19)

11 People may wonder why Rev. Moon, a religious leader, takes an interest in sports, soccer in particular. Sports will be absolutely necessary in the future, for the purpose of enhancing the vigor of young people in cultural festivals or a cultural Olympics. The flourishing or perishing of a nation depends on the vigor of its young people. No matter how knowledgeable, brilliant or handsome a person may be, it is all for naught if he or she lacks vigor. A nation that has young people of high spirit and increasing vigor will flourish. Therefore, this philosophy is crucial. (237-317, 1992.11.18)

12 The World Culture and Sports Festival is not just for sports. It also includes culture. It will be a great meeting, where men and women of all callings and religions can demonstrate their talent. Consider how wonderful it would be to participate in this event. Every soul must create unity between yin and yang, centering on loving others. How awesome it is to hold an event that promotes this harmony! (276-118, 1996.02.11)

13 Since religion is the center of culture, the Assembly of the World's Religions and the Inter-Religious Federation for World Peace will stand at the center of the World Culture and Sports Festival. The ideals, wisdom and values of religion should be embedded in this world's education, academics, arts, sports, media, politics and economy, and become their standard. The World Culture and Sports Festival is a history-shaping event. It advances the culture of the human spirit and exalts the true values that make for human happiness. It promotes a new worldwide culture of peace, in which God, human beings and all things are in harmony. (234-269, 1992.08.26)

14 Sports fans participate in a world of emotions that transcends national boundaries. If the Ilhwa Cheonma Football Club were chosen as the team to represent Asia, it would become the focus of Asia. If it went to South America and swept all the teams on that continent, the team would rivet the attention of all soccer players and fans across the world. Everyone would welcome this soccer team and relate to it independent of religious considerations. Everyone knows that when it comes to soccer, South America has the best teams. Therefore, if the Ilhwa soccer team can attain a standard higher than South America's teams, the world will naturally pay attention. People will follow this Ilhwa team, and in the short time of ninety minutes, billions of people will applaud and cheer for it. This sort of thing can only happen in sports. (276-138, 1996.02.18)

15 Why did I make a soccer team, and why am I taking an interest in sports? Sports are instrumental in promoting harmony and peace. When a famous soccer team plays, the entire world watches. Boxing requires only one player, but soccer requires eleven players. A soccer team needs to play in harmony. The players first need to unite and harmonize with one another. When a soccer team attains peace and harmony, free from conflict, the crowd can find even more enjoyment setting aside their mundane existence and watching them play. Right there, unity is created between the players and the crowd. The soccer team itself symbolizes harmony and unity, namely, total oneness. That is what we need in our families, societies, nations, and in heaven and earth. Peace is needed everywhere. In order to bring about peace, we need unity. Without unity, we never will attain peace. (276-112, 1996.02.11)

16 As early as the 1960s, I founded the Little Angels to exalt Korea's beautiful performing arts across the world. On that foundation, I established the Sun- hwa Arts School with the founding philosophy, "Love God, Love Your Nation and Love Humankind." I also founded the Universal Ballet in Korea and the Kirov Ballet

Academy in Washington, D.C., and revived the New York City Symphony in New York. (316-070, 2000.02.09)

17 Look at how the entertainment world spearheads the destruction of true love. Consider the singers and athletes in that world. Even in the luminous world of the Olympics, athletes are involved in fallen activities that contradict the spirit of the Olympics, such as taking drugs. With the intention of putting an end to this in the field of performing arts, I founded the Little Angels and the Universal Ballet to represent something totally opposite. I created a school for the arts that includes the dramatic arts and even sports and martial arts. They center on original love, which is needed in order to turn around the entertainment world. (299-055, 1999.02.03)

18 In the 1960s it became my dream to introduce the Korean culture to other countries. At that time I founded the Little Angels, a Korean children's dance troupe. Since then the Little Angels have performed in more than sixty countries. Their performances have been broadcast on television more than three hundred times. I formed this dance troupe of children because, in my opinion, children can express the world of the heart better than anyone else. On seeing those children dance, even the coldest person removes his or her mask of formality and experiences purity and love. It puts that person in touch with the essential pursuits of all human beings. (193-323, 1989.10.10)

World peace through the media

19 The media wield overwhelming influence and power in society, to such an extent that after the executive, judiciary and legislature they are called the Fourth Estate. I believe that the media should use their immense power for good, and should contribute to world peace. Respected journalists, before you are professionals, you are essentially children of God. You are champions of peace who are called to the special mission of building an ethical world, the world of true peace that God desires. The World Media Association is an open forum in which journalists such as you can discuss issues freely, with the ultimate goal of realizing an ethical world. At this point in time, as the people of the world head toward the ultimate world of true peace in God's providence, God is calling the media to carry out an important mission for the realization of world peace. They should join forces with others who are yearning for peace and contribute their immense power of influence. They must play a leading role in making humanity one great family in the age of the global village, to realize the ideal of true world peace and ethics. Please advance bravely and boldly for the sake of this cause. (234-235, 1992.08.22)

20 20 The mass media have an educational function. They must take responsibility for society from a moral standpoint and thereby develop the nation. To do this, journalists should have personal integrity. I am fighting against the media of the United States, which dance to the tune of corrupt ideologies and beliefs. How have the media treated me? They have thought of me as their punching bag. And yet I did not utter even a word against them. One can manifest real capability even without speaking words. No one has yet adequately defined the role of the mass media. No one has stated standards for media professionals, who will weave the record of history. That is why I am continually holding media conferences. I created the World Media Association to awaken journalists and all media professionals to their responsibility, and I have been working along these lines to this day. I am calling journalists and all media professionals to be responsible. As representatives of the media, you should go forward with conviction. You should stake your life as you shoulder this responsibility. (179-181, 1988.08.12)

Section 4. Korean Unification and World Peace

1 On the eastern edge of Asia lies the small Korean peninsula. Its people have been oppressed and belittled. However, God is working through this oppressed people to establish a new global realm of providence in order to begin a new age. What led to this nation standing at the frontline in the conflict between democracy and communism, even as humankind is embroiled in the calamities and distresses of the Last Days? The answer lies in the pivotal role that Korea plays for both the communist and democratic camps. (22-145, 1969.02.02)

The providential significance of the Korean peninsula

2 Korea is destined to bring together and harmonize all religions of humankind that have existed throughout history, in accordance with God's Will. It is the nation that bears the responsibility to build a united world and united kingdom of heaven. When North and South Korea unify on the basis of their shared cultural background, they will influence the world's religions and peoples to manifest a harmonious religious sphere. Then they also will establish the harmonious spheres of people and nation, fulfilling the Will that God had when He chose Israel. The Korean peninsula is divided into North and South Korea. This is like the division between mind and body at the Fall. The North espouses materialism, while the South is inclined toward idealism based on the mind. The two Koreas reflect this division internationally. We see this situation throughout the world as the fruit of the mind-body conflict that erupted with the fall of Adam and Eve. (168-312, 1987.10.01)

3 Korea is divided into North and South. Claims about being one people notwithstanding, its one sovereignty has not been restored. As long as the nation is divided, its people should unite and struggle to restore their one sovereignty. But their task does not end with the recovery of sovereignty. Once it is achieved, the nation has to advance a global vision. Unless the Korean people go through the path of struggle to recover the world, willing even to sacrifice their hard- fought sovereignty, the unified world of peace will not come. (48-309, 1971.09.26)

4 Korea is divided at the thirty-eighth parallel into an Abel nation and a Cain nation. Unless North Korea, which is in the Cain position, voluntarily surrenders to South Korea, in the Abel position, the world of peace will not come. Today's world as a whole is divided into democratic and communist camps, and the Korean peninsula is the frontline between these two blocs. Therefore the unification of Korea will serve as a model for world unification. (34-276, 1970.09.13)

5 If Korea is to be a nation that the world welcomes, the Koreans must become a people who willingly take the lead by shouldering the cross of the world. Koreans have to be willing to sacrifice their nation and its sovereignty for the sake of the world. The kingdom of peace will be built on the victorious foundation of the cross. On that day, the nation that carried the world's cross will be granted a position of glory. (125-245, 1983.03.27)

6 As Unification Church members, we should be willing to sacrifice for Korea as if we were one of its clans. If we sacrifice for Korea, we will change this nation. It will not remain divided as it is at present. It will become a unified nation, a nation with an ideal so high that even the people of North Korea will wholeheartedly welcome it. We must build such a nation, guiding North Koreans to practice virtue and show reverence for God. If we succeed in this task, the peninsula naturally will come together as one nation. Once unified as a nation, it will not seek to exploit the world. Rather, it will be a true nation, one that sacrifices for the world. (39-272, 1971.01.05)

7 It is indisputable that restoration comes through indemnity. It is based on the law of cause and effect. Then which nation bears the responsibility to pay the miserable indemnity for the world in the Last Days? It is none other than Korea. As a result of the Korean War, Korea was divided along the thirty- eighth parallel. Even though it took no sides in the global conflict between the left and the right, it became a sacrifice t and had to shed blood. Surely, its situa- I tion was miserable. Nevertheless, today Korea ought to stand once again as the ' nation representing the tragic destiny of the world. From this perspective, we ought to reflect deeply

upon the reason Korea is driven into the circumstances of this destiny. (63-267, 1972.10.15)

8 Communism and democracy are confronting each other on the Korean peninsula. Both sides argue their case at Panmunjom, yet their actions are but a manifestation of a larger battle between Heaven's world and Satan's world. Externally both camps are fighting over Korea, but internally God and Satan are engaged in the ultimate battle over the past, present and future. Therefore, as Koreans, we have to set the internal indemnity conditions whereby history can advance, carrying with it these two camps. (017-309, 1967.04.10)

9 Korea is divided into North and South along the thirty-eighth parallel. Based on the Divine Principle, we understand that a sacrificial offering must be divided. When a high priest presents an offering before the altar the people, regardless of their position, bow their heads. Even the sovereign of a nation bows his head before the offering. Therefore, the Unification Church henceforth must establish a foundation before which all people of Korea will bow their heads. Until it accomplishes this, the Unification Church will not have completed its mission. (015-249, 1965.10.17)

10 Soon after its liberation, Korea was divided into North and South. This happened because Christianity failed to unite with me. The division of Korea occurred because Christianity opposed me and the nation did not unite with me. Since the representatives of the nation and the representatives of religion separated from me, I needed you to unite with me as I endeavored to establish the foundation to indemnify their failures. Now we have established that foundation. We have reached the level where South Koreans throughout the nation can align with me. (165-298, 1987.05.27)

11 Korea is the homeland of the world. In order to protect and liberate this homeland of humankind, God mobilized many countries in the Korean War. The veterans of the Korean War sacrificed themselves for the liberation and independence of their homeland. When viewed from the perspective of God's providence, the Korean War was a global call to the nations to mobilize their forces and shed blood to liberate their homeland. The report that Jesus' face appeared in the sky during the Korean War supports this view. Yet more than an apparition of Jesus, the Korean War was sacred in the sense that it was fought to recover God's temple. As a providential nation, Korea was meant to become the ideal homeland of the True Parents when they appeared. Therefore, God mobilized the nations

representing the democratic and Christian world and had them fight to liberate this nation. (119-218, 1982.09.13)

The Pacific Rim civilization and the Korean peninsula

12 Human civilization first emerged along the Nile River in Egypt. It then shifted to Greece, a peninsular civilization on the Mediterranean Sea, and culminated in the civilization of Rome. Why did the development of civilization gravitate toward the West? It was unavoidable, and the reason goes back to the Fall. Originally, a unified world civilization would have taken root in Asia. However due to the Fall, civilization emerged without a root and moved in the opposite direction. This is in accord with the view of the Principle. Accordingly, the Mediterranean cultural sphere emerged from the Nile River, expanded as the Roman Empire, and developed into modern Western civilization on the islands of Great Britain. Those islands are the cradle of modern civilization based on the Christian cultural sphere. However, civilization cannot settle there. It needs to complete a full circle and return to Asia, where it should form the sphere of a unified civilization. This is God's plan for the fulfillment of the Will. It is natural, therefore, for civilization to move toward that destination. The last step in this development is when America, the global miracle of modern civilization, links with Asia on the rim of the Pacific Ocean. This will commence the era of the Pacific Rim civilization. (079-072, 1975.06.01)

13 In what environment should Western and Eastern civilizations meet? Where will the two connect? It will not be in an island nation, but on a peninsula. As a peninsular nation in Asia, Korea is situated in a most unusual position. In terms of its location, it neighbors Russia, China and Japan, and it has strong ties with the United States. Scholars assert that history is moving toward the era of the Pacific Rim civilization. Those around the world in the fields of politics, economics and history agree that this era is imminent. (196-162, 1990.01.01)

14 Civilizations emerge on peninsulas. Peninsulas provide the venue for an oceanic civilization and a continental ' Civilization to fuse together and develop into a new civilization. This is how civilizations flourished on the Greek, Italian and Iberian peninsulas. Currently, Indochina and Korea are the world's two peninsulas that are raising global issues. In the flow of global fortune, Western and Eastern civilizations are merging and are bound to meet. (Where will they clash? Based on the worldwide flow of fortune, they will dash in the sphere of Pacific Rim civilization, particularly at a central point ' Where an island, a peninsula and a continent meet. The Korean peninsula is the central point defined by these

geographical components. It is an undeniable fact of geography. (174-205, 1988.03.01)

15 The trials and tribulations of the Korean people do not just have to do with them as a people; they are also providential. Therefore, God is eager for this people to overcome them. It can be said that all the strands of world history meet on the Korean peninsula. East and West, North and South, spirit and matter, idealism and materialism—the entire inheritance of world history converges there in a confrontation fraught with confusion and chaos. The maelstrom on this peninsula is like the contractions of a woman in labor; she is carrying a new age in her womb. My view is that the difficulties the Korean people and nation currently face cannot be resolved apart from God's Will and providence. Furthermore, Korea cannot resolve them on its own but only by relating with the world. Hence, the Korean people should awaken to God's Will. They will overcome their hardships if they follow the one whom God has sent, the one with the mission to lead the spiritual spheres of the world. (135-239, 1985.12.11)

16 Global civilization most certainly will come to Asia. The era of the Pacific Rim civilization is approaching. Today eminent scholars, not only in the field of social science but across the scientific disciplines, assert that a Pacific Rim civilization must appear, that it is the trend of history. Yet I have been teaching about the coming era of the Pacific Rim civilization for more than forty years now. These scholars still do not know which nation will take the lead in creating that civilization. To my mind, it is Korea that will have to take the lead. (207-281, 1990.11.11)

17 Now the Pacific Rim civilization is rising. In a situation in which the United States, Japan, Korea, China and Russia are drawn inexorably onto the battlefield, the countries that are unprepared for this civilization and culture will fall behind. I am the very man who has made preparations. I am standing on the front line. That is why I brought together Japan, the United States, China and Russia. It gives us hope to think that the American people will walk hand in hand with me and we will do great things together, as a condition for the United States and for the world to build a realm of common destiny with the Pacific Rim civilization (202-264, 1990.05.24)

18 We are living in the time of the Pacific Rim cultural sphere. History moved from a river culture through the Mediterranean cultural sphere to arrive at the Atlantic cultural sphere. We now are entering the Pacific Rim cultural sphere, and the time is coming when we can leap into the unlimited cultural sphere of outer space. How these will link together is a question for the world's strategists to explore, but they will not be able to find an answer. When I have gathered prominent strategists in

numerous international conferences, they have concluded that my teaching is the only hope for this age. (174-049, 1988.02.23)

19 Throughout history peninsular nations have been the birthplace of new civilizations. This is true of Greece and Italy. On the global level, throughout the world, peninsular nations have shaped history by assimilating their surrounding cultures. Korea is now situated in an important position in Northeast Asia. It emerged under the U.S. sphere of influence. The United States, based on the Christian cultural sphere, has become the leader of the world. Now is a time that recapitulates Jesus' era. In this time Korea must indemnify the early Christian church in Roman times. Thus the Republic of Korea became dependent on the United States, which stands in the position of the Roman Empire on the world level, based on Christianity, which has reached the stage at which it can support a unified world. (125-270, 1983.03.27)

Korean reunification through true love

20 What is our vision as we look toward the twenty-first century? It is a vision of world peace and unity, a vision of one unified world. The world's people are seeking a new, unified and peaceful world. The Korean people are seeking the unification of North and South Korea. What about each of you? Suppose the world were peaceful and flourishing, but our nation remained divided and under threat of danger. In that case, our nation would have nothing to do with the world's peace. Likewise, suppose North and South Korea were peaceful, but our minds and bodies remained in conflict. In that case, the unified Korea would not be our ideal nation. That is why we have to attain peace on the national level before we talk about world peace; likewise we have to attain peace on the individual level before we talk about it with regard to our nation. (143-043, 1986.03.15)

21 The Unification Church needs to fight for the people even before the nation does. We have to fight for our people. However, look at the Korean people, divided between the South and the North. When a people is divided, each side upholds only a one-sided sovereignty. The most important issue is how to generate one unified spirit that transcends the political division of North and South Korea. From now on, the Unification Church should strive to accomplish this task. (49-095, 1971.10.09)

22 Once we recover the nation that God is seeking, the restoration of the world will take place rapidly. After restoring one nation we can restore three more nations; this adds up to four nations, which will form a four-position foundation. It will be a

wall of global defense facing all four directions, which Satan cannot penetrate. Only then can a world of peace be built, a world with the fertile soil for heaven to finally flourish. Such is the original homeland that the Unification Church is striving to recover. We Unificationists are gathered to invest our passion and youth for this cause. Although the evil forces that are attempting to block us are strong, we will shatter them, dismantle them, and uproot them completely. Let us resolve to do so, and eradicate them once and for all. (056-290, 1972.05.18)

23 Sometimes a leader has to push his people to challenge their limitations so that they can achieve their best results and display the highest of values in daily life. We in the Unification Church need to create a standard of achievement that the nation and the world will publicly recognize. Unless we attain this standard, we will not have accomplished anything, let alone God's Will. Accordingly, we must be ready to deal with any situation that befalls Korea, including whatever affects its national fortune and international relationships. Let us resolve anew with absolute faith not to die before we save the nation and world. If we can create a movement of solidarity with such a conviction based on our own Ju-che (subject-partner) thought in the Unification Church, we can move North Korea and South Korea. Then, even if Korea declines, a path to save the world will remain. This is why I have been emphasizing that we need to bring substantial results and supporting materials that can convince the Communist Party that the Unification teaching, which emphasizes love for the nation and love for its people, is superior to their way. They have to acknowledge this. (59-153, 1972.07.16)

24 The path of history is stained with blood. Your life as a pioneer on that path may have been sorrowful and miserable. However, if you walk that path not for your own sake but as Heaven's emissary, seeking to liberate people and build peace in the world, you will be remembered for eons. Your achievements will shine brightly as the foundation upon which North-South unification will naturally take place. Then a new sound of freedom will ring out across Asia. From that point will spring a new energy that will bring liberation to the world. (59-153, 1972.07.16)

25 I suffered bitterly when I went to North Korea. Enemies pummeled me, tortured me mercilessly and incarcerated me in Hungnam prison. I endured death-dealing hard labor at that chemical fertilizer factory. But I thought, "I shall not perish. The time will come when the young people of the world will inherit my burning heart, and at my word they will advance toward North Korea with explosive love that casts out fear." I nurtured this determination in my heart during those times of tribulation. (22-157, 1969.02.02)

26 When I crossed the thirty-eighth parallel to go to North Korea, I offered a prayer to God: "Heavenly Father, the next time I cross this thirty-eighth parallel, South Korea will have to come with me." I offered that prayer with tears, and I have not forgotten the vow I made that day. After crossing the border, even though I longed in my heart for my hometown, I stopped at Pyongyang, but was unable to go home. Unless I fulfilled the mission I had vowed to accomplish, I could not return home, even if on the verge of death. That was my destiny. That is why, although my path began in prison, and although my walk on this miserable path led my own people to brand me a public enemy, I have been able to establish this foundation today. (30-030, 1970.03.14)

27 Where is our finish line? It is at the thirty-eighth parallel. We have to cross this finish line. It is the ultimate finish line that the Unification Church must fight to cross. To cross it, we have to outshine everyone. We have to surpass the Communist Party and exceed the achievements of all religions. This was my heart when I prayed to God while crossing the thirty-eighth parallel. I came back to South Korea without having seen my parents, or my brothers and sisters. When I was released from prison I was consumed with the desire to shout, "Mother!" and run into her arms. I wanted to see my older brother, who had sacrificed himself for me, as well as my other brothers and sisters, who also had sacrificed themselves for me in various ways. I am a human being, not a dumb animal, and these feelings surged in my heart. Nonetheless, I had to deny this surge of emotions. I could have visited them all, since they were only two days' walk away. Yet instead I spent my time looking for the people I had met through my ministry. Then, turning my back on North Korea, I headed for the South. (62-136, 1972.09.17)

28 When I crossed the thirty-eighth parallel, I resolved to unite North and South Korea with my own hands. Together with your family, you need to make a similar resolution on behalf of your tribe. Ideally your father and mother should be a blessed couple. Now is the time to resolve that with three generations of your family, including your children, you will unite North and South Korea and all of Asia. Resolve that no matter how arduous and difficult the path to unity may be, you will accomplish it with your own hands. You need to understand this well. (242-216, 1993.01.01)

29 Our task is to unify the homeland. It is our destiny and the great task for which we must devote our entire life. I have dedicated myself to this great task, according to God's Will. For the remainder of my life as well, I shall devote myself entirely and exclusively to accomplishing God's Will. I appeal to you, £ the seventy million people of North and . South Korea who wish for unification, to stop the discord and

fighting, and from this time forth to devote yourselves to recovering your identity as one people through harmony and love. Now is the time to melt your guns and swords and turn them into hoes and plowshares, and hasten preparations to welcome the bright new era of the unified homeland. (224-255, 1991.12.07)

30 The world is currently divided into the communist and the democratic blocs. The democratic world, on the side of the mind, advocates idealism, while the communist world, on the side of the body, advocates materialism. In this way the world is divided into two camps, whose conflict is causing great unrest. Where does this commotion begin? It begins within each person. Each of us is the seed of this problem. This is why we should never think that a politician can unite the world. Where is the solution that leads to unification? It lies not with external institutions, but within you. The way to unity lies in establishing peace between your mind and body and having the mind take the lead. As an individual, you have to follow the mind's lead. It is the same for the family, the society, the nation and the world. When that happens, unity comes naturally. (39-267, 1971.01.15)

31 The unification of North and South Korea cannot be discussed simply as a national issue. If you look at it from the broadest perspective, it is linked to the entire globe; viewed from the most fundamental perspective, it is linked to the problem of the individual. Before we can unite the world the nation must be united, and before we can unite the nation the family must be united. No matter how much a couple desires happiness, unless they are united, neither they nor their family can be happy. No matter how much a family wishes to be happy, unless each person is happy, that family's happiness will be nothing but a dream. We have an old saying, "When all is well in the family, everything else goes well." The most important thing is for couples to become one and establish families of peace. That is the starting point of all solutions. (143-260, 1986.03.20)

32 How do we achieve unity? It is by living for the sake of others. Wherever love dwells, that place is good and desirable. Hence, if we stand in a place of goodness and give continuously, we will make the North and South one. But to discredit communist propaganda, the South must be able to give to the people of the North and improve their current living standards. If our living standards are below theirs, the people in the North will refuse our gifts. We have to improve our situation and then give. The way for Korea to sustain its life is very simple. If South Korea excels in all fields, in its economy, living standards and education, and then continually gives to North Korea, the North Koreans will unite with the South without hesitation. (36-076, 1970.11.15)

33 God placed me in the position to walk a path that is bound to Heaven. God has led me to walk this path my entire life. He did not intend for me to destroy the Communist Party, but rather to save its members. After concluding the Washington Monument rally, I called for a rally in Moscow. I did not make my proclamation holding a sword or a gun. I said, "You may drag me down and trample on me, but I will stand up again." And that is what I did. In the same way, the reunification of North and South Korea cannot be accomplished with swords and guns. It can be achieved only through a heart that beats for the sake of God. Peace has an original path. We cannot achieve peace if we deviate from that essential path. If we do so, heavenly fortune will not accompany us. (144-165, 1986.04.12)

34 On behalf of God, I went to visit Kim Il Sung in North Korea. There I stirred up the mud at the bottom of the pond by announcing, "You must obey God!" I concluded with a crystal-clear message: "All of you must follow Godism, which is head-wing thought! There is no other way!" I fulfilled all my responsibility, placing my life in the hands of Heaven. Even now, God has the ability to exercise His power of creation. He works in mysterious ways. (225-058, 1992.01.02)

35 As I walked this path, both ideological blocs, the democratic and the communist, opposed me. I faced opposition at every level: individual, family, tribe, people, nation and world. Nevertheless I overcame all those obstacles, and now I have even won over Kim Il Sung. I knew that it was impossible to bring down Kim Il Sung's fortress by human effort alone, and that only Heaven's love could penetrate his stronghold. With this victory, I could clearly recognize that the path I have been taking is the true one. It reaffirms my conclusion that only true love brings total victory; no other way is possible. That is why the miracle of re-creation took place during my visit to North Korea. (224-266, 1991.12.15)

36 The ultimate reason that Korea is divided into North and South is because one man and one woman failed to become one in love centered on the love of God. Consequently, couples are divided, parents and children are divided, and brothers and sisters are divided. It is the absence of true love that leads to bloodshed between peoples and even within a people. Hence it is with true love that we are now trying to unite what is divided. Once our foundation emerges, the world's political climate, beyond North and South Korea, will push the two nations to integrate. That is, North and South Korea will unify not through national processes, but by those prompted by global fortune. (162-227, 1987.04.12)

37 When each of you with your family brings total oneness in your tribe, the unification of North and South Korea will not be a problem. Party or factional

politics will not work. Our strength will j | be based on an organizational system. • » Who loves not only this nation, but also ,, j, cares about Asia and loves heaven and j£> earth? There is no one other than us. Where should we lead this nation of Korea? We should lead it to the garden of love, not to the garden of power and scheming. When we lead the North and the South to the garden of true love, the issues between them will be resolved. This cannot be achieved without approaching them as siblings born of the same parents. This is the only way to realize a world of peace. (168-224, 1987.09.20)

38 South Koreans cannot achieve the independence of their homeland on their own. The four great powers that are involved with the unification of North and South Korea need to cooperate to resolve this issue, based on the power of love. This is possible only through the power of true love, which is eternal and unchanging. For hundreds of thousands of years our ancestors yearned for true love. Billions of people today seek true love, and so will future generations. Humanity's common denominator is true love, which surpasses the national level and reaches the world. True love will make us one for eternity. The world governed by God's love is called the kingdom of heaven on earth. That is the world we are striving to build together. (141-118, 1986.02.19)

39 There is not a single spot on the Korean peninsula where my spirit is not embedded. I have invested everything for it through the Unification Church members. The results of this investment are coming to fruition. The time has come for our investments to be brought forward and be recognized in this era of history. Our Juche thought is not the same as that of Kim Il Sung. It is neither communism nor democracy. It is a truth that teaches us to become a subject partner of love centered on God. (164-104, 1987.04.26)

40 Ours is a new Juche thought. It provides clear direction to individuals, societies, nations and the world, preventing them from going to ruin. It safeguards those whose views are in accord with the providence but are not centered on God. There is only one correct formula: the principle of living for the sake of others. Remember this truth. It is the principle that was present at the beginning, when God created the world, and will remain to the end. (77-339, 1975.04.30)

CHAPTER 4 Strategies for World Peace

Section 1. The World of Peace that True Parents Envision

1 What would have happened if the original human ancestors, Adam and Eve, had not fallen? Adam, the head of his family, would have also been the head of his

tribe. He also would have been the head of his people. Furthermore, as the representative of his nation, Adam would have been the king. Thus, the world would have united under Adam's perspective, Adam's teaching. However, because this was not realized, all kinds of insignificant philosophies and ideologies emerged and brought confusion to the world. We will have to win over all of them. Originally, everything of humanity should have been based on Adam's nation. That is, the language, culture, tradition, lifestyle and system should all have been those of Adam. This is Godism—everyone becomes one with God, centered on His heart. That is why we call it Godism. (20-123, 1968.05.01)

God and the world of peace

2 Had Adam and Eve not fallen, God would have blessed them in marriage and they would have had children. They would have created a family that brought joy to God, and it would have expanded to create a tribe and a people. It would have further expanded to become a world based on Godism, which is also "Adamism." Everything in that world would have been Adam-centered. Adam's ideology would have prevailed, as would his viewpoints on the universe, on the cosmos, and on life. The five races of humankind would have lived in harmony. Skin color depends on the environment, and there would have been no problem between people of different races. Then, how is it that we have come to have so many different languages? Heaven divided them after the Fall of the first ancestors. (156-203, 1966.05.25)

3 What would the original world be like? No evil would dwell in that world; it would be an eternal and unified world where people would be completely free from evil. Surrounded by overflowing, original love, they would sing of happiness forever. Has anyone ever lived in such a place? Not even one person has set foot there. Though many people have pursued such a world throughout history, it has not yet appeared on earth. Many have described that world in words, but not one of them succeeded in making it a reality. (18-102, 1967.05.28)

4 The place where we want to live is the heavenly nation. We all want to live in that nation. It has no borders. It has only one language. Racial discrimination does not exist there. People are all brothers and sisters because they all came from God. To God, all people are sons and daughters, all are brothers and sisters, and all are meant to be citizens of God's kingdom on earth. We are the citizens of the kingdom of God on earth. (66-281, 1973.05.16)

5 Humanity desires a world of interdependence, mutual prosperity and universally shared values, which is a reflection of God's ideal kingdom. It is not a world where one can live alone; no individual can create such a world. Whenever we talk about "I" there must also be "my partner," whether it is my spouse or my family. This should not remain as a concept, but should be applied in real life. The kingdom of God is the world where this concept is manifested in reality, on the stage of life. (024-300, 1969.08.31)

6 If human beings had not fallen in the first place, we would now be living in the homeland where God would be happy, would take delight in everything, and would be able to love wholeheartedly. That is what should have happened from the beginning. This earth was meant to be our homeland. Our homeland was meant to be the kingdom of God on earth. It would have started with God at the center and all relationships would have been formed through God's love. We would not be ignorant of God, but would experience His existence and His love. If all humanity lived in God's love, we would all be one large family, relating to one another as brothers and sisters. Then, having lived as God's family in God's kingdom on earth, we would go to God's kingdom in heaven, in the spirit world. God's kingdom in heaven is our original homeland. However, owing to the Fall, God's kingdom on earth has never come about; therefore, God's kingdom in heaven is also vacant. No one has ever entered that kingdom. (161-012, 1987.01.01)

A world of peace is one global family

7 The kingdom of heaven is a world where all are united as one in harmony in the love of God, the subject partner, and all are happy with one another. It is where the family serves as the model and expands to the world level. This is the ideal that God has envisioned for the kingdom of heaven. To realize the kingdom of heaven, God's vision of one large harmonious family centered on His love must be achieved worldwide. Only then can the world that God has envisioned come to pass. Yet people in today's world do not even dream of it. They do not know of this world. God has been striving to bring this world into reality, but Satan, the servant who violated Heaven's law, has prevented this. Therefore, God cannot intervene unless a man emerges who is superior to this servant, a true man who shows complete loyalty to God in a position higher than Satan's. This is where God stands in relation to today's fallen, evil world. (065-034, 1972.11.13)

8 God is the Parent, and human beings, His children, have the status of citizens of His nation. This applies to individuals, families, tribes, peoples, nations and the world. When we look at people in this way, each individual is under God's

sovereignty and each is a member of the family of His direct sons and daughters. Hence, God's sovereignty in His nation is connected with His sovereignty in the family. Therefore, although there are numerous individuals, tribes and peoples, God's sovereignty over each of them absolutely stands on the relationship of subject and object partners. The ideal world of creation is a world where this subject-object partner relationship can be formed anywhere. God's sovereignty pervades that world, which is on the horizontal plane and is called the heavenly nation. This is God's ideal of creation. However, the Fall of the first ancestors caused it to fundamentally break down. (77-210, 1975.04.12)

9 What is the system of the ideal world? It is an extension of the family system. If you have perfected your heart in accord with the principles of the family textbook, wherever you go you will treat the people of any family as your brothers and sisters or your sons and daughters. However, this does not mean you can treat them like your spouse. When you meet someone as old as your grandparents, you will treat that person as your own grandparent. When you meet people the same age as your sons and daughters, you will treat them as your children. When you encounter children the same age as your own children, you will naturally share your food with them. We must create such a world. Unless we live for the sake of others we cannot bring about a world of peace. If we do not develop the philosophy of living for the sake of others from a concept into a living reality, this world cannot become a world of peace. (225-226, 1992.01.20)

10 What purpose do all people share? What is the common gate that all people ultimately must pass through? It is neither the nation nor the world; it is neither the communist world nor the democratic world. Before there can be a true communist world, there must be an original family. Before there can be a true democratic world, there must be an original family that can build the true democratic world. Yet, where are the order, the education and the standard of purpose for this? They have not yet appeared on the earth. Therefore there cannot be a kingdom of peace, an ideal nation of peace, or a country of peace. The day must come when such an ideal family, an original family, appears on the earth. It absolutely must appear in history and share the destiny of all humankind. We need to seek that family, find that family, meet that family and live for that family. Only then will God's providence for the earth be fulfilled, and the earth will become the promised land and the haven of rest. (23-032, 1969.05.11)

A society transcending borders, peoples and religions

11 In the world that God desired to create, there would be no national borders. There would be no problems between black and white people. There would be no conflict between good and evil. However, when we look at the world today, can we say that this world has no national borders? Every single nation has borders. There are problems among races, especially between blacks and whites. Not only that; even within the family there is discord and disunity between husband and wife and between parents and children. Furthermore, good people are fighting with evil people. The Lord who comes under these circumstances needs to unite the world, making it a place where there are no national borders and no racial barriers. He needs to unite all broken families and establish a kingdom of peace in this world that is beset by conflict between good and evil. He has to teach individuals to sacrifice for the family and nations to sacrifice for the sake of a unified world. This is the only way to achieve a unified world. Otherwise, all hope of reaching such a world will be lost. (053-071, 1972.02.09)

12 Religion must transcend the nation and even the world. It serves on behalf of the absolute God to influence the world to go His way. Religions, in the position of subject partner, teach the truth in order to influence and transform all the systems, customs, nations, tribes and even the blood ties that make up the fallen world. In religion there should be no East or West. There should be no trace of Satan, no trace of division or prejudice on the level of the nation, people or tribe. All religions should aspire to the one nation, one people and one land. Only in this way can the eternal, everlasting and sole sovereignty of God be established. In such a nation, people are centered on God as the children of His direct lineage. The people follow His commands and the nation is governed under His royal authority. The system in that world is neither democracy nor communism. (72-291, 1974.09.01)

13 We need to transcend all the cultural spheres that were created by the world's numerous peoples and its five races, and transform the world into one cultural sphere. In other words, we need to establish an ideal world where the family system, the social system, the national system and all its various institutions are based on Godism. Godism is the teaching of the perfect Adam, who has nothing to do with the Fall. It is neither communism nor democracy, but Adamism. Adamism is the way to Godism. (21-157, 1968.11.17)

14 Now I need to bring unity to the United Nations. What will happen when I do this? When there is no more fighting at the United Nations, it will become the model for a peaceful nation and a unified nation. When all the spheres of ethnicity, religion, race and culture can unite based on brotherly love and attend the Father and Mother of Adam's family, then this Father and Mother will become the great

King and Queen of the cosmos. From Adam's family should come the king of each tribe, the king of each people, the king of each nation and the king of the world. This is how God's providence works to pass down His royal sovereignty and ensure its continuation. (267-090, 1995.01.02)

15 What is the center of religion? It is God. God is called by many different names, yet there cannot be many gods. Regardless of what He is called, since the origin is only one, there can be only one God. Due to the many different languages of the world, there are t many different names for God. Yet | God, the Original Being, is one. The purpose that God pursues is manifested through religions. Hence, no matter how many religious bodies . exist, as they follow their respective paths in pursuit of this purpose, they will reach the same destination. To arrive at that destination there must be a teaching that can connect them to peace and the kingdom of heaven. (210-199, 1990.12.23)

16 Human beings have tried to realize l a nation of peace. Yet no matter how hard they try, a peaceful nation and peaceful world are impossible through human efforts alone. If it were possible, it would have been done long ago, based on the devotion of the many saints and sages of ages past. People in today's advanced scientific civilization interpret their existence through empiricism. They are struggling to discover something beyond that. Do you think humankind today can bring about an ideal world? The problem comes down to the conflict and disunity between the body and the mind. It would not be a problem if our outer bodily aspect was united with our inner mind aspect. But instead our body is the enemy, blocking the unity between mind and body. The mind wants to go straight ahead while the body's desires pull us in the opposite direction. (19-282, 1968.03.10)

17 When God created heaven and earth, He wanted the individual, family, nation, world, and cosmos to be based on goodness. He wanted to create the world He had envisioned, a world of peace based on love. But as a result of the Fall, all of it was lost. Hence the world that God created could not be a place of true individuals and nations; it could not be the world and cosmos He intended. Instead it gave rise to individuals, families, nations, a world and a cosmos of misery. God has been toiling to this day to restore all of this. Our ancestors have followed the Will of restoration; yet they did not know how to restore the individual, family, nation, world and cosmos in accordance with God's Will. That is why I had to follow such a suffering course while striving to resolve the essential question of how to restore the individual, family, nation, world and cosmos, and how to unite this cosmos with God's heart. After I discovered the Principle, I realized that it was necessary for humanity and vital for the realization of God's idea. (13-242, 1964.03.29)

Section 2. The End of Communism

1 Today the world is divided into the two camps of communism and democracy, representing Cain and Abel on the global level. The fight between Cain and Abel has brought about endless struggles, causing enormous pain and suffering. In order to clear this up, communism and democracy should not stand as divided camps fighting each other. If they remain in that position, we cannot establish a kingdom of peace on earth, or see the reign of the Parents of peace. The sovereignty of God, who is in the position of the Parent over a unified world, can emerge only when the communist and democratic worlds, in the position of Cain and Abel, become one. (056-353, 1972.05.18)

Why is communism a problem?

2 The democratic world and the communist world stand at opposite poles. While the democratic world seeks Heaven, the communist world goes the opposite way. While the communist nations follow materialism, the democracies follow ideals. The democratic world gives precedence to the individual, but in the communist world it is the Party that rules. The democratic world values freedom, love and peace, while the communist world rules by force using threats, guns and swords. Today these two worlds have split and are heading in opposite directions. (107-210, 1980.05.01)

3 The democratic world seeks the world of the mind. At minimum it has compassion and hope for the future. Further, it seeks peace. However, the ideology of communism teaches struggle, based on dialectical materialism. It asserts that the course of struggle provides the elements for development. In that ideology, there can be no peace. Indeed, it leads to the opposite. (47-116, 1971.08.22)

4 The world today fights for the body and material things. Yet, despite advances in the fields of economics, science and philosophy, these cannot bring peace to humankind. It is through the movement of Heaven that the world of the mind must emerge, equipped with a new teaching that re-evaluates the physical body and material things. Unless such a teaching appears in this historical era of the Last Days, this world will come to ruin. Now we have arrived at the final era, when God must secure the one center. How can we, who are living in this era, resolve and clear up all the issues of our time? This depends on where we stand with regard to the two streams of thought that divide our world—the materialistic or the spiritual view of history. We will perish if we proceed based on materialism and the physical body. That is why we have to clear things up together with God. We have to place

the mind in the forefront. Who is the subject partner of our mind? It is God. (011-023, 1960.12.11)

5 Democracy and communism, each in its own way, are trying to attain a world of peace. However, we are now entering the age when communism will be completely banished from the earth. From the providential and historical point of view, this is inevitable. What will happen to democracy when communism is gone? The democracies think that when communism falls the age of democracy will come, and democratic leadership will come to rule the world. It believes that democracy is the hope for the world. But in fact, when communism falls, democracy will also quickly plummet. (218-288, 1991.08.22)

6 Democracy and communism have thus far co-existed in a state of continual discord, struggling against each other. They could not co-exist in peace. Yet there must be a fundamental solution to the struggle between the materialistic and the spiritual perspective. How can we resolve this issue? We must first clarify where we stand, and based on that stance we must deal with all issues that arise. (37-121, 1970.12.23)

7 I have to stand on the foundation of having united Cain, the communist world, and Abel, the democratic world. I have to make the two become one. The democratic world and the communist world are the extension of the mind and the body. One is the world that centers on the mind, the other is the world that centers on the body. We cannot open the door to world peace unless we unite these two worlds. This is a law. This is how we can be connected as physical beings from the individual to the family, society, nation and world. (120-218, 1982.10.16)

8 The logic of communism states that an ideal world can be achieved only through a process of struggle. The directions of the Party are regarded as absolute, and all other ideas are rejected. That would be true if communism stood on the side of goodness, which brings freedom, happiness and peace. But if you look at the core of communism, it is ruthless beyond imagination. Communists will use any means or methods to reach their goal. If their parents, their country or their comrades stand in their way, they cut them down. During its history of seventy years, communism has emerged as a global challenge. (135-270, 1985.12.15)

9 What is the communist world aiming for? It is a world of peace through struggle. Such a world is different from the peaceful world that democracies pursue. Communists purge everyone who disobeys their ideology, labeling them as reactionary elements. If they cut off and remove all these elements, they call it a

world of peace. Today the Soviets claim they want peace, but that peace is based on Marxism-Leninism. It refers to a state where all the reactionaries that disobey those in power have been purged. (168-164, 1987.09.20)

10 What is communism? It does not recognize God as the subject partner, it does not recognize object partners, and it has no direction or purpose. If you agree with even one of its points, everything falls apart. Communists see the relationship of subject and object partners as one of struggle. They assert that everything becomes one through struggle. Where on earth can you see such a thing? They claim that men and women become one through struggle, and that the mind and body become one through struggle. And when it comes to subject and object partners, they say that material existence is first, not the mind. They say that the mind is an offshoot of the body. In this, they turn everything upside down. By saying that their direction is struggle, they take the direction toward conflict, not peace. They also say that unification requires bloodshed. This violates the basic principles of the progression of history and the existence of the universe. (108-068, 1980.06.22)

11 The law of dialectics says that everything becomes one through struggle. If the capitalist world were to be replaced by a communist system, what would happen to the goal of struggle? Would a world of peace automatically come about? If the communist world remains as it is, we can never think that an ideal world will emerge. If the communist world reached a state of saturation, and it became clear that it could not possibly realize the ideal, the divisions within it would become more serious. Suppose that kind of world came about. Communists do not believe in or teach about the spirit world, but even so, do you think the spirit world would just let them be? If God truly exists, what would He do? If the world were to become communist, religion would disappear. Do you think that God, who has been relating to human beings through religion to this day, would stand idly by and do nothing about it? The goal of communists is not only to defeat capitalism, it is also to defeat God. That is why for them, religion is an object of struggle. (097-241, 1978.03.19)

12 Communism holds a concept of peace that is different from ours. Communists use strategic language. When we in the democratic world refer to peace, although we may have different positions about how to attain that goal, we try to find common ground on which we can cooperate and unite. That is peace. This is how we can become one. However, communists do not see it that way. They have to completely purge all the reactionary elements; no one who opposes them can stand before the authority of the dictatorship of the proletariat. To them, to reach this point is to achieve peace. (170-152, 1987.11.15)

13 Communists have already infiltrated the U.S. government, the army and the churches. They are proclaiming an atheistic Christian movement in broad daylight. These Christians have structured their system based on materialistic communist thought. We cannot expect anything good to come from it. We cannot expect a solution from the government, the army or the churches; neither from the scholars or the university students. In conclusion, it is inevitable that we must start a movement based on a religious teaching that can confront communism. We have to raise this issue globally in order to offer hope for the future. That is the best thing we can do. The Communist Party does not want to pursue the ideal world based on a natural course. They want to pursue it through violence. They do not care what means or method they use to attain their goal. You need to understand that we must fight against their worldwide foundation. This is my role, and it is also the role of the Unification Church. We must turn their ideology on its head. We must turn around their everyday emotions and guide their actions toward a new direction. (107-222, 1980.05.19)

14 The Communist Party, like all evil, always attacks when it is stronger than others. There can be no peace with it. In light of this, I built a gun factory in Korea. This was to set a fire in the hearts of the youth in the Unification Church and have them pledge from the bottom of their hearts to fight the communists in the future, if necessary. Force must sometimes be met with force. Of course I do not mean that we would attack them. Satan's core nature is such that he always strives to invade when the other side is weak. Talking about peace and the like is just one of their strategies. What should the Korean people do when they are beset by rapidly changing circumstances? The time has come when they must arm themselves with an ideology that gives them life-or-death resolve to protect themselves. (50-227, 1971.11.07)

15 How did communism originate from materialism? It began with the internal struggle rooted in the body, which has only material existence, and expanded that to the world level. It applies materialism to the world. Meanwhile, idealism—which represents the mind in the mind-body struggle—has emerged on the world level in the form of democracy. Today these two camps confront each other. Just as the body strikes the mind and dominates it, in the Last Days, materialism pervades the mind-centered philosophies to a dangerous degree. Although we ought to bring about a world of peace in the twenty-first century, first we should consider how to bring about peace and unity deep within our minds. The conflict between mind and body is the cause of all problems. Because it is the origin of the problems, unless we resolve that, nothing will succeed. (143-045, 1986.03.15)

16 Throughout the world, the communists are fighting in three ways. They are fighting through ideology, intelligence and propaganda. The United States is a huge and powerful country, but it does not have clear policies or measures to fight with and overcome the communists. Some U.S. politicians are reluctant to fight the communists; they are making concessions to them and retreating again and again. As a result, communists are manipulating the nations in South America that neighbor the United States, to the point that they threaten the peace and freedom of their neighbor to the north. What will you do if the communists take control of your country? Do you think they will guarantee the freedom and peace you enjoy today? Surely it is possible for such a thing to happen, even in the United States. In fact, the signs are already appearing in all parts of the world. South American countries have begun to recognize that only Rev. Moon and his teachings offer hope for their future. Henceforth Unification Church members in the United States must make the American people understand this situation. (130-286, 1984.02.07)

The fall of communism

17 I knew through Heaven's law that communism could not last longer than seventy-three years. I waited and waited for this. Kim Il Sung had plotted with the government of the Soviet Union to kill me in December 1987. The FBI in America informed me of this plot, which was revealed when twenty-five Japanese Red Army agents were arrested and interrogated in New York. However, now that Soviet leaders have studied the teaching propounded by the Unification Church, they recognize it as an amazing truth that can give hope to the Soviet Union. (201-153, 1990.03.30)

18 I gave a direction that the end of the Soviet Union should be declared before August 15, 1985 at the Professors World Peace Academy (PWPA) conference in Geneva, Switzerland. The declaration was made in front of 350 scholars and Soviet experts that were gathered there from all over the world. If I had not made that condition, the Soviet Union would not have declined. (135-321, 1985.12.15)

19 In order to bring about the end of the Soviet Union, I chose the theme "The Fall of the Soviet Empire" for the PWPA conference. This was when the Soviet Union was at its peak. It was 1985, and the Soviet Union had a plan to infiltrate the United States. But it could not do so because of me. When Dr. Kaplan visited me in Danbury Prison, he suggested that we should not bluntly declare "the fall of communism" but rather use the word "perhaps." But I said to him, "What if the Soviet Union collapses within five years? Will you take responsibility for the consequences of not declaring it clearly? Just wait and see!" Finally, he followed my

direction and made this declaration. Afterwards, indeed, it collapsed within five years! (262-154, 1994.07.23)

20 No progress ever comes through struggle or fighting. When there is fighting, both sides suffer. Communism, which teaches that things develop through struggle, did not last more than seventy-three years. I had already predicted this as early as the 1950s. I said, "If communism lasts longer than seventy-three years, you can burn my fingers!" But it indeed collapsed after exactly seventy-three years. Anyone who instigates a struggle surely brings destruction upon himself. He causes his situation to worsen. The concept that struggle brings progress is illogical. Struggle cannot take us beyond our current level. (262-072, 1994.07.23)

21 I fought for forty years based on Unification Thought and the theory of Victory over Communism. I knew that the Communist Party was destined to collapse. When the people discard communism, what will they replace it with? They will cling to whatever the Communist Party most vigorously opposed. That is the only thing they can do. Whatever the communists opposed will become the start of the period of transition. That is why, without any hesitation, I have relentlessly fought against communism, even as the communist world and even the free world so desperately opposed me. When I went to Moscow recently, I clearly declared that communism would collapse and I introduced God. I said that in order for the Soviet Union to find God in the future, they would have to rely on my teachings. My words are fundamentally different from the views expressed in the Orthodox Church and other established churches. They are words that bring God into the center of our lives. From that point of view, I made a historical declaration. (201-242, 1990.04.28)

Vision of an age beyond ideology

22 If an ideology or teaching appeared on the earth that could earn the gratitude of countless generations, from the first ancestors to the myriads of future descendants, it would be able to guide the world. If it touched the hearts of many saints and sages of the past, such that they were grateful for it, those in the spirit world would also cooperate. Surely all people would appreciate such a teaching and be touched by it. That teaching would not belong only to the present era. It would be able to connect past, present and future. What content would be so inspiring? The Unification Church asserts that such a teaching could only be based on a deep heart. (159-050, 1968.01.28)

23 If we take a comprehensive view of history, we see that the Hebraism that led to the Roman papacy failed, the humanism that led to democracy failed, and the

Hellenism that led to communism failed as well. So I considered, what if there were an international, worldwide ideal based on a view that integrated Hebraism, humanism and Hellenism? The age we are entering requires a philosophy that can integrate all these ideas, and at the same time lead to the merging of all religions. We need such a philosophy, but it should be based on a religious perspective. This is because we need something that goes beyond ourselves. A human viewpoint alone is not enough. The historical and political trends of the world are going in this direction, and the Unification Church is striving to integrate all of them. Thus I am introducing headwing thought. (162-100, 1987.03.30)

24 In the future a new world will appear, which is neither communist nor democratic. We need a world that is based on heart, with God at the center. We need a world that transcends the death of the body, a world of hope that our hearts long for, to appear on this earth. The age when it appears, the very kingdom of peace that we have been eager to see, will be the age that Unification Church members call the kingdom of heaven on earth. (20-182, 1968.06.09)

25 The democratic world and the communist world have been fighting until now. Each views the other as the enemy, and each tries to defeat the other. Peace can never emerge in such a contentious world. So we absolutely need a new movement that centers on the unity of mind and body. We need a new movement that teaches us how to completely subjugate the body to the mind and make a victorious foundation on this earth. It should be able to win over the democratic world and even to win over the communist world. (20-171, 1968.06.09)

26 Why did the left wing and the right wing appear? What is the origin of these two positions today? Politicians did not give them these names just because they wanted to. They represent a historical course of indemnity that must reappear; otherwise the liberation of Jesus will not be possible. Only when those who represent the thief on the left and the thief on the right, together with those who represent Barabbas, all kneel in front of Jesus and together sing his praises, saying, "You alone are the glorious victor, the final victor," will the gates open to the peaceful kingdom, the kingdom of heaven. (50-225, 1971.11.07)

27 Looking at the way history has developed, we cannot help but lead a movement to unify religions and overcome communism. We have to leave behind evidence that we participated in a movement to unite the religions and to unify the communist world and the free world. When you can stand as a Unificationist and say, "Here I am!" while holding the Divine Principle book in your right hand and the Victory over Communism book in your left hand, you will become God's son or

daughter. This is where the new ideal of the kingdom of heaven on earth begins. I am marching forward for that kingdom. If God asks me, "What have you achieved?" I will respond, "I have completed everything. This is the world of peace that we all wanted." (123-304, 1983.01.06)

28 When considering the conflict between East and West, do not think that democracy has won. Democracy, as a mere political system, is nothing special. Because it has no solid ideological foundation, it is encountering a vacuum of ideas. Therefore we must educate the world about Godism, which is headwing thought. We need an organization that can systemize these two teachings, and an institution to lead the world. The Unification Church alone is not enough. If the church takes the lead, the teachings will become known as the doctrine of the Unification Church. And if we center on the Victory over Communism organization, we will become a one-sided ideological group to oppose communism. That is why, to create a larger framework, I inaugurated the Federation for World Peace. The League of Nations was founded after the First World War, and the United Nations was founded after the Second World War. In order to create a new world, we need a new worldwide organization. The Federation for World Peace should be able to relate to people from the political world and the intelligentsia. It has to offer a new teaching that can guide humankind to solve their problems. (203-118, 1990.06.23)

29 How is Unificationism different from democracy and communism? The United States, as the representative of democracy, promotes a one-dimensional humanistic idea, based only on horizontal relationships. Communism also has come thus far promoting onedimensional world peace, which is only horizontal. The United States is considered to be part of the Christian cultural sphere, but it is not aligned with God as the absolute subject partner. Americans put God in the back room, and some even claim that God is dead, while they place people at the forefront. However, the Unification Church is multidimensional, both vertical and horizontal. Our purpose is not only to bring about a world of peace; that is only the starting point for the ideal of peace in the universe and even the cosmos. This is a very promising endeavor, but at the same time it is daunting. Through this we can mobilize God. From the perspective of the Unification Church, world peace is just the starting point. But today's democracy and communism are one-dimensional ideologies that view world peace as their only goal. (129-233, 1983.11.06)

30 Communism and democracy talk about world peace and freedom in the realm of external form, but they do not know about world peace in the realm of internal nature. Although the realm of external form is forever changing shape, the world of internal nature does not change. There can always be change and development in

external form, but there can be no change in basic essence. Internal nature does not change. The Unification Church regards the desire for world peace and unification as the beginning point on the journey to the world of internal nature. Therefore, we see that what the free world regards as the final destination is in fact the starting point for entering the world of internal nature. (129-237, 1983.11.06)

31 Looking at the communist and democratic worlds today, the age of conflict between the two has passed and we have entered the age of their integration. However, although the age has arrived when we can advocate peace, the way to realize that peace is unclear. This world is in the midst of chaos and confusion, yet there is no vision as to how to overcome it. Communists attempted to bring about an ideal world, but all their dreams have collapsed. It is the same with the democratic world. At the present time the United States is leading the democratic world, but it is far from able to reach the destination of world peace. On the contrary, in the current situation, Americans are losing hope. The country's future is bleak because it has reached the stage where its youth are corrupt; they are doing things that could bring the human race to an end. (229-262, 1992.04.13)

Section 3. The United Nations and World Peace

1 After the First World War, expectations were high that a world of peace would emerge, a world free from war, based on the League of Nations. But less than three decades later, war broke out again. Nevertheless, people's innate inclination to pursue peace remained unchanged. We desire to advance toward a world of peace, even if it we have to die for it. That is why, after the Second World War, the League of Nations was dissolved and the United Nations was founded. In the belief that all people are brothers and sisters, we entered an era when the victorious nations gave the defeated nations their independence, and protected and nurtured them in the name of brotherhood. Now the military conflicts that arose during the Cold War have come to an end. The Third World War has been an ideological war. The Soviet Union and the United States are both reluctant to fight. Now, whether they like it or not, we must proclaim for the sake of peace, "God exists!" and explain what the world should be like. Unless we do so, there is no way for the world to be brought under God's dominion. Because I understood this, I presented a worldview and a universal teaching based on the absolute values of God, and I systemized a principle by which we can liberate even God Himself. (204-085, 1990.07.01)

The renewal of the United Nations and world peace

2 Now we need to create the model for a nation of peace. We are working to bring world peace through unity at the United Nations. We need to help the United Nations stand in the position to lead all the nations of the world. I included the word “peace” in the names of numerous organizations that I founded, including the Inter-Religious Federation for World Peace, the Federation for World Peace and the Professors World Peace Academy. This is because I have set my sights on the United Nations. I have been preparing for this for decades. Originally the United Nations was meant to set the standard that nations should follow. It was meant to lead the way to peace for humankind. (267-264, 1995.01.20)

3 For a world that is comprised of individual nations to become a world of peace is not something that can be done overnight. It requires a long period of time. In order to transform something, we need a model. If there were a model nation such that people would say, “Wow, when we follow that, our nation will develop!” and if the environment were such that the United Nations could promote it and every nation could support it, all nations would be bound to follow it. That is why the work I am doing now is welcomed by the developing nations. There are only a small number of advanced nations—the G7 or the G8. Apart from them, many other nations are developing. If the United Nations were to uphold one model as a nation of peace, then all UN member states would naturally turn in that single direction. (267-264, 1995.01.20)

4 The present United Nations cannot achieve world peace. Every nation is fighting for its own benefit. This is not correct; it is not conscientious. That is why a religious assembly, centered on the conscience, should be part of the United Nations. The Women’s Federation for World Peace is working behind the scenes. Providentially, women should play a central role in bringing about world peace; otherwise people will continue to fight. Women need to form an organization that can stand at the center, embrace Cain and Abel, and create an atmosphere of peace throughout the world. (258-156, 1994.03.17)

5 Who should lead world peace? God should lead it. God should lead both the religious realm and the political realm. I am advocating a United Nations of the religious realm. Furthermore, I am advocating a Women’s UN. These two organizations must be created. This is how present-day humanity will be brought into alignment with God’s plan. (248-245, 1993.10.03)

6 Politics alone cannot change the world. We are dealing with the political arena, but it is extremely corrupt. Families in their current state are dysfunctional, and

they cannot correct this. That is why we need religions to unite and rally the world on the right path, the shortest way to a world of peace. (288-205, 1997.11.28)

7 The United Nations can be compared to the body. The body needs to be connected to the world of the mind, the religious realm, represented by the Inter-Religious Federation for World Peace. Only when the religious realm is connected to the United Nations can the body and the mind become one. After that, the mother, represented by the Women's Federation for World Peace, and the children, represented by the Youth Federation for World Peace, needs to be connected. When these four major organizations are all connected, the United Nations will become an organization that can bring peace and unity and guide the world toward oneness. (267-247, 1995.01.08)

8 Today the United Nations views itself as a global organization created to realize a new political order through the unity of its member states. Yet the organization's efforts to achieve this have failed, as complicated issues have beset it from within and prevented it from achieving internal unity. It is no different from the communist world, which advocates unity centered on the laborers and farmers, yet has become divided internally. (87-032, 1976.04.25)

9 The United Nations does not operate as a single body. Instead, it compromises with the prevailing political climate and has become crippled. In a family there should be a father and a mother, sons and daughters. But the members of the United Nations have no head; they have no clear structure. I am the only one who has a clear understanding of how to lead the world to peace. When the king of the families appears and everything that was lost is engrafted to him, one central nation will appear under the sovereignty of that king. (293-164, 1998.05.26)

The Abel UN

10 The present United Nations is in the Cain position, so we now need an organization in the Abel position. You leaders of Korea must take responsibility for this nation. From now, I will prepare the way for the Republic of Korea to reach out to the world, by creating an Abel UN. Since I know where Korea should be heading, I am doing work that others cannot even dream about. (23-054, 1969.05.11)

11 We need to make an organization for peace that is similar to the United Nations. Yet the present UN organization, the General Assembly in particular, has only a head; it has neither hands nor feet. I founded the Professors World Peace Academy, and if I set it in motion, it could function like the General Assembly. What I mean is that we should create a new Abel-type assembly, saying, "In your General

Assembly, the people who meet together are just politicians, aren't they? But in ours there are experts from every field who meet solely for the purpose of peace." Since the present UN General Assembly has only a head, without hands or feet, it is like having a body that is paralyzed. (62-299, 1972.09.26)

12 Now the age of peace has come. In order for the United States to lead the world toward peace, it must stand as a model nation. I am proposing a means by which North and South Korea can be united, and the Middle East can be united, through the United Nations. Since the existing United Nations is in the position of Cain, we need an organization in the position of Abel. These organizations, in the position of Cain and Abel, should unite with the Will of God. This is the foundation for world peace. The United States must serve as a model of peace, then it can guide all other nations to follow its example. Otherwise it cannot lead the way to peace. (246-035, 1993.03.23)

13 On the matter of China, there is a reason we fasted and prayed for three days at the United Nations during its discussions over the admission of Taiwan. China's role was crucial. From the viewpoint of Satan's side, North Korea under Kim Il Sung is the Adam nation, China is the Eve nation, and the Soviet Union is the archangel nation. They need to unite, but in the reverse order. With the support of the Soviet Union and China, even Taiwan should be brought into this unity. I have already linked all nations together through organizations such as the Federation of Island Nations, the Federation of Peninsular Nations and the Federation of Continental Nations, and through them I plan to establish a new UN in the Abel position. The present United Nations has lost its sense of direction; in its current state it does not serve its fundamental purpose. We are approaching the time for action. Based on the new Abel UN, we will enter the age of the unified kingdom. By setting conditions of prayer and fasting, I have been making all the necessary preparations. (291-242, 1998.03.15)

The UN of Religions

14 People of faith all over the world need to band together and create a global body that cannot be defeated by any people or sovereign power. This is how they can awaken the sleeping United Nations. At present, the United Nations cannot stand up to communist opposition. That is why we must quickly create a UN of Religions. After that, the mission of religious people will be to win over the left-wing and the right-wing worlds, and connect them to God. (12-221, 1963.05.15)

15 In front of God, all families are fallen. Only when they go beyond the fallen world can they emerge as ideal families of God. But even after ideal families have appeared, we need a new age and a new structure for an ideal world. The center of that world will be the ideal United Nations, based on ideal families. That can provide a model for the world. The model world begins from the family. We need to establish a UN that goes beyond the Abel position, and unites Cain and Abel as one. Then everyone will be part of the family that goes beyond the nation and the world. (513-229, 2006.01.01)

16 Suppose a United Nations for the religions of the world had been established alongside the existing global United Nations, based on the idea that both nations, which are external, and religions, which are internal, should become one. Then we would now be living in an age when no one would oppose the teachings of the Unification Church. Suppose the UN of Religions and the global United Nations had come together and asked, "How can we become sibling organizations, as filial children who truly serve the Will of God and who also love our nations?" What if they had pursued and researched this matter? Then they would not have opposed the Unification Church. Instead they would have advocated that everyone follow its teachings. (122-245, 1982.11.16)

17 The United Nations was created from a political perspective. The UN of Religions, however, has not yet been created; therefore it should be. The United Nations can become one by cooperating with the UN of Religions. Without such a religious base, the United Nations has become a hotbed of communism. Things turned out as they did because the United Nations was not able to fulfill its mission. That is why I met with Dwight Eisenhower, former president of the United States. I told him, "You need to make an organization that can subjugate the communists, who are trying to dominate the world." I told him to be prepared to stop the communists. (131-190, 1984.05.01)

18 My plan is now to create a UN of Religions. People of faith around the world need to be part of this. We then need to encourage women to create the Women's UN. Why is this necessary? Politics represent the body, which is Satan's base. Satan's mentality is such that politics is fraught with deceit. People in politics seek benefit for their own nations even at the expense of others. Only the world of the mind and the spirit can subjugate this political world of Satan. Among the people living on this earth, some are believers and others are nonbelievers. Thus we can divide people into two groups, one group that denies God and the other that affirms God. Those who deny God espouse humanism, secularism and self-centered individualism. They have nothing to do with God and everything to do with Satan.

Since they have created the United Nations of the earthly world, the people who affirm God need to create a UN of the heart, of the world of religion. (251-090, 1993.10.17)

19 We are now planning to establish an Interreligious UN. Since we have a United Nations, we need to form a similar organization of religions. Our aim is to create a new culture that embraces cooperation between interreligious, international, and other non-governmental organizations. The new UN of Religions should be integrated with the United Nations, and also with organizations that connect people in the fields of politics and economics. After that it must integrate men's and women's groups. It should include men, women and youth. We also need an international body for education. We need all of these in order to create one nation. I also plan to set up an international defense organization something like NATO. (379-098, 2002.05.27)

20 We need to establish a world council of religions. When we bring people of faith together to form one nation, we can completely eradicate the conflicts in Satan's world. My plan is to have this council of religions incorporated into the United Nations. These are not mere words; I am actually working on it right now. What comes after that is to create the Women's UN. That is why I am promoting the Women's Federation for World Peace. I intend to make a UN body centered on the Women's Federation. Women leaders and the wives of world leaders are bound to join the Women's Federation and participate in the Women's UN. (248-213, 1993.10.01)

21 You need to understand that religion and politics have been enemies. Their enmity has manifested even at the United Nations. The United Nations is a global entity based on a political system, representing the body. However, now people all over the world recognize that it is incomplete. Now that I have come, religion should be included at the United Nations. The United Nations needs to connect to the world of the mind, the realm of heart. The body and mind were divided, and since there is a UN of the body there should also be a UN of the mind. Next, there should be a Women's UN. Rather than a UN dominated by men of the archangel's lineage, there should be a UN for women. Since Eve was lost, Eve must be recovered. (280-146, 1996.11.24)

Section 4. Worldwide Sharing of Technology

1 In the midst of division, the time has come to enter a new era, transcending peoples and uniting societies and nations as siblings, according to the viewpoint of

Heaven. In the United Nations all nations are brothers, but they are still fighting each other. Cain and Abel continue to fight. When there is peace among brothers, everything will be finished. Thus Americans should share their wealth with the people of the world, who are all their siblings. The United States did not generate its own wealth; it was bestowed by our Heavenly Parent. Therefore the United States should share its wealth. If it shares only inferior products, troubles will arise. At this time, the world must embrace a culture of heart centered on Heaven. (151-082, 1962.10.07)

2 For humankind to live in peace, all races need to come together and work to save the world. Otherwise we cannot arrive at a world of peace. In the future, this work will have to be done by the Unification Church. When the time comes to pass on to the spirit world, it is not as if white people go to one place, Asian people to another and black people to a third. They will all become one. (086-184, 1976.03.28)

An interreligious, interracial and international movement

3 In order to arrive at the place of glory, the realm of God's love, we have to love our enemies. Since God knows no barriers of nationality, we need to go beyond these walls. Only by doing so can we achieve a world of oneness and peace. That is the only way we can connect the spirit world and the physical world and bring them into oneness. (111-093, 1981.01.25)

4 The peace and unity of the world cannot be achieved through any ideology, teaching or religious doctrine that uses people as instruments and manipulates them. That is why, until now, all paths have been blocked. True Buddhists, Christians, philosophers and thinkers have long awaited the one teaching that elucidates the ideal that can unify the society, the nation, the world and the universe. (154-048, 1964.03.23)

5 Now the era of nationalism has passed. The era when certain ethnic groups assert their superiority over other ethnicities has passed. No single people, no matter how much they fight and struggle, is adequate to complete the formula course of unification that God is following. It is a course that can only be accomplished through the solidarity of different peoples; that is, an integrated people. We cannot follow a single people to one world of peace. A religion must be able to transcend nationality and embrace all of Asia, the world, and all of heaven and earth. (222-131, 1991.10.28)

6 The ideal world of peace that all religious bodies worldwide wish for is a unified world, the kingdom of heaven, where all come together in oneness. It cannot be

two worlds, because that world is the absolute Will of God. It will be one absolute world. The ideology of the kingdom of heaven aims to create that world. It will be realized at the place where, working internationally and in- terracially, we have triumphed over and overcome everything. (210-200, 1990.12.23)

7 Religions are seeking the heavenly kingdom. They wish for the ideal world, which some call nirvana or paradise. It is the place where God and humankind can be happiest and most peaceful. Then who is its sovereign? Its sovereign is God, and its citizens are an interracial people. In that place, it does not matter whether your hair is black or yellow or whether your face is black or white. Color does not matter. God is the great King of an interracial kingdom. (210-201, 1990.12.23)

8 What people of faith need to do is establish one world of peace. Whether Muslim, Christian, or of any other faith, they should work together to build a world of peace. This would bring humanity into oneness for all eternity. In this endeavor, at least, they need to be united. (210-120, 1990.12.17)

9 Looking at religions, we see that each one is antagonistic toward the others, believing that it is the best. This attitude creates an environment that will cause great difficulties in the future. If religions maintain that standpoint, how can they help build one world of peace? I believe that unless the walls between religions are broken down, tremendous damage will result. That is why I am carrying out interreligious work. Since religions have been guiding their followers, of different nationalities and cultural backgrounds, for thousands of years, breaking down the walls between them is tremendously difficult. The four major religions—Christianity, Islam, Buddhism and Confucianism—all have histories going back thousands of years. If they attack and fight one another in the future, world peace will be destroyed and humanity will perish. The question is how we can bring these religious bodies together so that, instead of fighting, they can dialogue with one another and head toward the one world of peace. God and the spirit world desire this even more than we people on earth. That is why, in accordance with that Will, I am carrying out a worldwide interfaith movement through the Unification Church. (210-117, 1990.12.17)

10 The religious realm and the political realm represent the mind and the body respectively. They need to become one. That is the task of the Interreligious and International Federation for World Peace (IIFWP). The prefix “inter” here is used differently from the way it has been used until now. It has only addressed the horizontal relationships between people, excluding God. However, in our term “interreligious,” God is included. It means to fulfill God’s wish of uniting the

religions. It is also the unity of nations. That is why I am striving to unite the nations as well as the religions. By uniting the religions and the nations, I am striving to bring them to voluntarily create a realm of oneness in heart. Then together they will become the fruit of the cosmos and of heaven and earth, encompassing everything. (331-037, 2000.08.23)

11 If humankind is to be one family, the sons and daughters of God, then it must be interdenominational, interreligious and international. That is the concept of the Interreligious and International Federation for World Peace, transcending all the barriers in this world. Religions, as they are today, cannot solve the world's problems. Neither can the nations of today. That is why, by adding the prefix, "inter-," we are talking about being interreligious and international. IIFWP must manifest a heart of oneness centered on God, which will bring harmony in society. Only then can we solve world problems. (327-080, 2000.07.27)

12 The IIFWP currently stands in a position to move the United Nations. Therefore it must fulfill its responsibility. It is the ultimate initiative in the physical realm through which the Unification Church relates to the world. Next we will create organizations to work with the press, with academics and with the financial sector—four in total. These will become the pillars that will help shape the world in its final stage, with the IIFWP at the forefront. (302-310, 1999.07.02)

Reconciliation of Christianity and Islam

13 As a result of Jesus' death, the left wing, the right wing, and the realms of Barabbas and Jesus manifested as four opposing entities. The world, divided in this way, must come into unity at the time of the Second Advent. Hence the left wing and the right wing need to unite. Also, Barabbas' realm and Jesus' realm need to unite; in other words, Islam and Christianity must unite as one, in peace and unity. We need to return to the path of peace and unity by recovering them all. What is on the right will go to the left, and what is on the left will go to the right. If Christianity opposes this ideal, it will lose to communism or Islam. The Bible verse, "The last will be first, and the first will be last," (Matt. 16:20) refers to what occurs in the Last Days. Therefore we have to bring them together. No matter how much the Communist Party, Christianity and Islam oppose us, we have to bring them together in peace and unity. If we do this, we will pave the way to the throne of God. (249-097, 1993.10.08)

14 As a result of Jesus' death, Satan took over the world. At the time of the Second Coming, that history will be repeated. That is, in the Last Days, the left wing and the

right wing will emerge and fight against each other. They are the communist world and the democratic world, the conflict between the left wing and the right wing emerged and spread across the world due to Jesus' death. The right wing is centered on the United States and the left wing is centered on the communist world. The situation is exactly the same as at the time of Jesus, except that from the two thieves, it has expanded to the worldwide level. At the time of the Second Coming the democratic world, the communist world, and even the Islamic world will have to be brought into oneness. That is the mission to be fulfilled at the time of the Second Coming. (219-259, 1991.09.08)

15 The Lord of the Second Advent needs to work with the democratic world, the communist world and the Islamic realm. At present the realm of Barabbas has taken possession of Jesus' body. That is, as a result of Jesus' death, Islam came to take over the land where the twelve tribes of Israel had resided. Barabbas' life was spared in the place of Jesus. Hence the Arab realm, the Islamic world that represents Barabbas who survived, could take over that land. In doing so, it developed uneasy relations with Christianity and Judaism. By taking possession of Jesus' body, it came to inherit everything. My perspective is that, by bringing unity between the Muslim realm, the Christian realm and the Jewish realm, and bringing them together in the Last Days, we can go to the one, peaceful world of the kingdom of heaven. (229-339, 1992.04.13)

16 My mission is to unite the two worlds that became divided just after the Second World War. At that time, everything was divided. Korea was divided between democracy and communism. Although the people of Israel returned to their homeland, that land also has become divided between the Jews and the Palestinians. Even the United States was divided into religious people centered on Christianity and humanists who don't believe in God. If I can unite Christianity, as the Second Israel, and Korea, as the Third Israel, then a unified worldwide realm can arise based on the United States. Then the issue of Israel and that of North and South Korea can be resolved. At present, North and South Korea, as the third Adam nation, and Israel, as the first Adam nation, are posing problems globally. Once they are united, a world of peace can come. It remains for me, and for the Unification Church, to fulfill this responsibility. (243-297, 1993.01.28)

17 If Islam and Christianity are left to battle on their own, humanity is bound to perish. We are living in a world where atomic bombs and even biological and chemical weapons could cause far more serious destruction than even the World Wars. One individual can bring ruin not just to a whole village, but even to the whole planet. We can no longer depend on external forces for protection. No

matter how much we fight we will never see the end of strife. That is why for decades now I have been conducting activities to unite the religious world. I am working to unite them through the God Conferences, which teach that the God of Israel and the God of Islam are not different. The God of Christianity and God as known in other religions are one and the same. In this way, I am continually carrying out interreligious activities worldwide. In addition, I continue to lead an interracial movement among all peoples. (366-263, 2002.01.16)

18 The Islamic realm opposes Israel, which has returned to its homeland claiming the right of the eldest son. Yet without unity between Israel and Islam there cannot be peace in this world. Such is the history behind the division into two nations. The world now faces a problem in Israel and the Middle East based on religion, and a problem between North and South Korea on the Korean Peninsula based on the struggle between two ideologies, democracy and communism. If a third world war were to break out due to a collision between these two camps, with their backgrounds in religion and ideology, humankind would be completely annihilated. We are in the midst of such danger. Who will bring peace to this world? I am the one that can deal with this issue. (229-126, 1992.04.11)

19 It is a historical fact that I have transformed the relationship between the left wing and the right wing. It is undeniable. Moreover, the biggest problem in the world is the struggle between Judaism, Christianity and Islam. Who can reconcile them? No one has succeeded in this task, but through me they are now coming together. You need to understand that this is the fundamental solution to the problem of world peace. We are now standing in such a time of historical transition. (225-014, 1992.01.01)

20 When Jesus was on the cross, the thief on his left and the thief on his right represented the left wing and the right wing. One represented the position that denies God, and the other, the position that recognizes God. Now the left wing has crumbled, the right wing is beginning to decline, and the realm of Barabbas remains. The returning Lord needs to engage with Islam as a religion on Heavens side, even as he needs to engage with the communist nations and bring them to Heaven's side. That is why I created the Inter-Religious Federation for World Peace (IRFWP). I have already taken steps toward peace in nations in the Islamic sphere such as Syria. (213-186, 1991.01.20)

21 If Christianity and Islam were ever to fight, that war would make the conflict between the democratic and communist worlds pale in comparison. Conflicts between religions are fearful things. At present, the devil is trying to cause a

religious war. By doing so, he is trying to drag the entire spiritual foundation based on the Christian cultural sphere to himself. Before that can take place, I am contacting them behind the scenes in order to prevent such a tragedy. (214-304, 1991.02.03)

22 Islam is the realm of Barabbas. It occupied the area where the twelve tribes of the Jewish nation used to live. Since this situation originated at the time of Jesus' death, when Jesus comes again he needs to win over the right wing and win over Islam and guide them toward the world of peace. He must do so, because only then can Jesus' teaching of unity and peace, which he demonstrated through his resurrection, be established on this earth. Eventually the Christian and Islamic realms should unite, but how can that be? It will be through head-wing thought. The only thing that can digest both the left wing and the right wing is true love. Then what should we do going forward? We ' need to give both worlds the family ed- tication that God has wanted to teach— to the children, siblings, husbands and | wives, and mothers and fathers, j Through this education, all people from l both worlds need to form families that can receive the blessings of the heavenly . nation of peace. (221-218, 1991.10.24)

23 Currently there is fighting between two nations of the Islamic world, Iraq and Kuwait. But what would happen if the Christian world were to explode with widespread outrage and the Islamic region united against it? A religious war would break out, and that i would be a serious problem. An Arab Muslim leader, the Grand Mufti of Syria, and I proposed the Middle East talks that are being held at this time. The two of us took the initiative. This fact has now become known throughout the world, particularly in the Islamic world. The conclusion is simple. Religious people need to step forward and build a world of peace. This is my conclusion regarding the conflict between the free world and the religious world. (210-130, 1990.12.17)

24 In the Arab world, religion stands above the nation. If the Arab nations were to rally together against a Christian nation that struck any one of them, war could break out between the entire Christian and Islamic worlds. Then, because the thief on the right side, on God's side, would be standing in the position of having struck first, the gates of world peace would break down. That is why I issued strict orders never to fight. I sponsored an emergency meeting with the Grand Mufti of Syria, who is a major Muslim leader in the Arab world, and the religious leaders from Syria and Yemen, among others. Islam and Christianity must not fight each other. The top leaders of Islam should maintain this rule as a foundation for peace. This is the only way those leaders can defend against those who cry out for war against Christianity. Therefore I am supporting them in this work. (206-275, 1990.10.14)

25 At this time, as war in the Persian Gulf looms, I am trying to call for restraint. A war there could be an enormous tragedy for humankind, and greatly impede progress toward world peace. Even if the Americans were to win by destroying everything until all the land lay in ruins, what good would it do them? It would not profit them in any way; it would only become a stain on history that would inflame tensions. This could rupture the peace between the Christian and Muslim cultural spheres. In the work to actualize world peace, I am standing at the forefront. This is why I cannot help but think about this matter. (212-326, 1991.01.11)

Proposal for technology sharing

26 Technology is something that belongs to humanity. It does not belong to any specific nation. As a man who stands for justice and fairness, I am taking responsibility to bring German, Japanese and American technology to the world. That is how we can build a base for peace for all humanity. This is what I believe, and that is why a decade ago I began to promote the sharing of technology for world peace. When I told the Chinese, "Open your bags. I will bring you German technology and the best Japanese electronic science and technology that I have acquired," they did not believe me at first. However, after investigating the matter over a period of three years, they came to know that what I said was true. (196-115, 1989.12.31)

27 I have become an authority in the world of science and technology. In Germany, during the five years from 1980 to 1985,¹ purchased four factories. I wanted to buy factories in order to bring the best of German technology to the developing world. Having declared at the International Conference on the Unity of the Sciences in 1981 that I would address the issue of sharing technology with China, I bought the factories promptly. I also announced there that I would construct the International Peace Highway, so without delay I commenced the initiative of excavating the Korea-Japan Tunnel. (190-245, 1989.06.19)

28 The time will come when there will no longer be a need for this policy, when there is no longer any distinction between developed and developing nations. Knowledge belongs to the entire universe; it can never belong to just one nation. That is why since the 1980s I have been promoting the sharing of technology, knowledge, material and financial resources. Currently I am promoting equality in education and technology. These days many developing nations are building technological research facilities in Germany. They are competing against one another to manufacture even individual small parts. What they need to do is to standardize their quality and sizes and then, having secured supplies of raw

materials, invest time into manufacturing them. Yet because they are competing, they are all suffering tremendous losses. We now need to reconsider the international economic system and its entrenched divisions. The economy will not work well unless the world is united. (340-084, 2000.12.24)

29 Many prominent people are concerned about the future of Germany, but I have discovered that no one cares about Germany more than I do. This is evident if you listen to the tapes of my speeches over the past ten years about the sharing of science and technology. Yet, the German people have been unaware that I truly care about them. Nonetheless when I talk about fair distribution of science and technology, my vision transcends Germany; it is to connect Germany to the world of peace. They have not understood what I have been saying. Yet, if they were to listen to all I have spoken until now, they would not find anything to oppose. Rather, the content of my speeches would lead them to respect my views. (192-294, 1989.07.09)

30 God is not pleased with a nation that monopolizes science and technology, which He has given as a means of peace for all people, and uses it to exploit the world for its own interests. Science and technology were given to humankind for the happiness of all people. They are not only for certain white people to benefit from and use for weapons, while disregarding peace. It is from this viewpoint that I am talking about the fair distribution of technology. (190-178, 1989.06.19)

31 Now China is bound to accept my embrace. At present, I need to help China. Right now China needs heavy industry, and it also urgently requires the development of small and medium-sized businesses. Therefore, it is well aware that joining hands with me is the best way for it to advance in the world. If China joins hands with me it will leap forward thirty years. The system of joint-venture companies it has created through diplomatic ties with Japan will take decades to bear fruit. Japan, the United States and other advanced capitalist nations will not simply hand over their science and technology. Under such circumstances, I proposed the fair distribution of science and technology at the Tenth International Conference on the Unity of the Sciences, held in 1981. I said that I would share all that I have with China. Why? The United States could not deal well with China, nor could the Soviets. Although they could not, I knew I could, through science and technology. (183-072, 1988.10.29)

32 I am trying to help developing nations based on the foundation of science and technology that I have established across the world. Accordingly, for the fair distribution of science and technology throughout the world, I declared in 1981,

“Cutting-edge science and technology does not belong to just one nation; it belongs to all people of the world, for world peace.” I said that science and technology should not be developed only in one nation like the United States, but rather, they should be developed and used in accordance with the goals of the entire world. (215-204, 1991.02.17)

Section 5. Organizations for World Peace

1 The Inter-Religious Federation for World Peace, the Women’s Federation for World Peace, the Federation for World Peace, the World Media Association, and the Professors World Peace Academy are all oriented toward the work for peace. The peace of which we speak is based on Godism. It is headwing thought. The family exists for world peace. The individual also exists for world peace. Nothing should be self- centered. Everything should exist for peace. People who do not have this view, who are individualistic or who are partial to only their own family or nation, will never prosper. Therefore when you eat, you should eat for world peace; when you drink water, you should drink for world peace; and even when you breathe, you should breathe for world peace. You should love for world peace and you should work for world peace. That is how you should think. If you fail to keep up, you will become like fallen leaves blown by the autumn wind. If you are only leaves, you will never be able to become branches; yet you need to become branches. To become branches, you need my teachings on peace. So when you speak, do it for world peace; when you smell, do it for world peace. Make that the aim of all your five senses. (252-301, 1994.01.01)

Establishing organizations that will work for world peace

2 To prepare a realm where the environment is centered on true love, God built up a worldwide foundation centered on True Parents, who are the embodiments of true love and true family. This is the background and starting point for the formation, organization and expansion of each of the following organizations: the International Conference on the Unity of the Sciences and the Professors World Peace Academy, which I founded in order to seek absolute values together with world experts; the World Media Association to pursue freedom of speech and ethical responsibility; the Inter-Religious Federation for World Peace to seek reconciliation and unity among all religions; the Federation for World Peace to find the way to world peace; the Women’s Federation for World Peace to realize an ideal society with the participation of women; the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification to substantiate the ideal of true families and expand that

ideal worldwide; and the Youth Federation for World Peace to lead a new culture of youth in the twenty-first century. (271-149, 1995.08.27)

3 What have I gained personally by creating organizations for world peace such as the Professors World Peace Academy? I have carried out such work until now, investing our financial resources around the world. I have hosted the International Conference on the Unity of the Sciences (ICUS). Even so, I have not been well received by scholars. Still, I continue to serve them quietly. The reason I have been sacrificing myself for the world of academia is to enable them to collaborate. In this way, I have created a means for the sharing of scientific knowledge. Scholars are people who think they are the best simply because they know a little more than others in their field of expertise. However, in the academic circles of the world there are now some scholars who recognize the greatness of my contributions. Therefore, they cannot ignore me. The same is also true of the media. What am I trying to do by establishing media? I am not trying to seize power or become the president. The reason I went to the United States and am engaging in this kind of work is to save the United States and save the world. That is also the reason I have been carrying out this work in the academic world. (203-121, 1990.06.23)

4 The Citizens' Federation for the Reunification of Korea does not prioritize only Korea. It exists for Asia. Not only that, it is also to pave a worldwide foundation in order to link and connect all peoples of the world. As a representative of the world, it is leading the movement to bring together the peoples of Korea and Asia. The National Federation of University Professors and Students to Advance the Unification of South and North Korea was also founded for the unification of North and South Korea. In Japan I inaugurated the Federation of Professors and Students for the Unification of East, West, South and North. Japan is not divided into North and South. However, its mission is to resolve the worldwide problem of the disparity in wealth between South and North as well as the ideological conflict between East and West. This movement has already begun in Japan. (166-120, 1987.05.30)

5 In order to unite heaven and earth, I am now declaring the liberation of the religious realm. By doing so, I am declaring the arrival of the Completed Testament Age on earth centering on the love of True Parents. It will be the age when all of humankind can find peaceful settlement on earth. The words "peaceful settlement" are frightening. The Completed Testament Age is the time to begin the fulfillment of the ideal of creation worldwide, not merely on the family level. Adam was not able to succeed on the family level, and Jesus was not able to succeed on the national level. Yet I completed this course on the world level. It was a path that would have

been lost had I not been successful and left behind a tradition that can be praised for all eternity. The realm of True Parents' victory is established on the foundation of that peaceful settlement. (266-256, 1995.01.01)

6 The time has come when humankind no longer has need of religion. The era of the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity has passed. That is why I proclaimed the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification. The unfallen, original family in Eden needs to be actualized. That is where Adam and Eve unite in absolute faith and attain oneness with God in an unbreakable parent-child relationship. Adam and Eve are liberated and totally freed when they can stand against any evil in the world that tries to seduce them or lead them to fall. This is the responsibility that fallen human beings are destined to fulfill. (266-256, 1995.01.01)

7 As a counterpart to the United Nations, which represents the body, I established the Federation for World Peace, which can guide the world to peace as the representative of the mind. The League of Nations after the First World War and the United Nations after the Second World War sought to bring about peace, but neither of them have been able to do so. Why? The political leaders of the advanced nations stood in a position to lead the other nations, and thus the body came to stand in a position to direct the mind. The Federation for World Peace that I have initiated at this time, however, will be led by religious leaders. Religions have a history going back thousands of years. The leaders of these world religions need to pool their power and lead the political world. As the mind needs to lead the body, I am trying to set up such a system of governance. That is why I initiated the Federation for World Peace, to establish a standard for peace for the external political world. (209-261, 1990.11.30)

8 The Women's Federation for World Peace should put down deep roots in the field of education and family ethics. If it cannot do this, the world will not grasp the Will of God. In that case, the world will have no peace and nations will have no prosperity. That is why, to lay this foundation, I am going to work on recovering the family, even my own. The Women's Federation for World Peace is to become the Family Party for World Peace. The Family Federation for World Peace will also become a part of the Family Party. However, in this word I am using the Chinese character dang (it), meaning "home." In the political world, where they fight and struggle, they use a different Chinese character dang (H), which means "group" or "party." Yet we cannot change the world and set the standard of peace by fighting. That is why all my life I have continually allowed myself to be struck first and then worked to reclaim what was taken. (232-200, 1992.07.06)

9 All religions need to unite. Until now in the democratic world, religions have generally remained apart from politics. However, the religious realm needs to play a leading role in politics going forward, just as the mind guides the body. Recognizing that the invisible mind is equipped with infinite power, the religious realm ought to create a movement where they collaborate to lead global affairs. That is why I founded the Inter-Religious Federation for World Peace, and founded the Federation for World Peace as its counterpart. Ever since the Fall, mind and body have been divided. Their struggle has manifested as conflict throughout history. Such conflict must end with the progress of the providence, so that the free world and communist world, the right wing and the left wing, can be brought into the Will of God. The right wing failed to fulfill its responsibility. It allowed atheist communism to completely dominate theism. As a result, the world is moving toward an era when humanistic ideologies that estrange people from God are re-emerging. How can we stop this? We need to create an alliance of religions. (205-270, 1990.10.01)

10 I have cultivated relationships with many prominent figures worldwide, and with them we are establishing the Federation for World Peace. This is in order to unite the divided body and mind as one. Without uniting religion and this external world, the world of peace can never come. I also have an organization that works with scholars. It is an influential organization in more than one hundred nations. Also, I have media organizations to bring the world of the media together. More than that, I am holding summit conferences, bringing together top leaders from all over the world. In the field of thought as well, I have climbed to the top. I have climbed to the highest plateau. I am even working at the cutting edge of science and technology. I am leading a machine company with the most advanced German technology and an electronics company with the most advanced Japanese technology. Next, I am trying to build a comparable foundation in the financial sector. Soon the United States will become the country with the largest debt in the world and the value of the dollar will plummet, giving way to a global economic crisis. I began seeking a solution to that already eight years ago. In all these arenas, I am playing a key role globally. (210-150, 1990.12.18)

11 In the United States I established a lawyers association. Why did I do this? Violations of human rights are still serious in the Soviet Union, China and North Korea. I came to think that in order to spearhead world salvation and lead all people to peace, I needed to set up a legal organization. That is why I created the lawyers association. (125-304, 1983.03.29)

12 The path we must go is to recover a nation, so we must operate from an international base. It would be well if the United Nations were behind us in the work to bring nations back to God. However, since the United Nations does not listen to me, I established the Federation of Island Nations. It is a forerunner of the Abel UN to come. So are the Federation of Peninsular Nations and the Federation of Continental Nations, which I created soon afterward. (282-185, 1997.03.12)

13 Now is the age to restore the king- ship. For this I established the Federation of Island Nations, the Federation of Peninsular Nations and the Federation of Continental Nations. We could let the North American continent go and instead tie Asia and South America together as Cain and Abel. Such a time is arriving. Having gone beyond the providential timetable of national-level settlement, we are moving toward the world. Once the world finds its center, it will turn 360 degrees. God, at the center, has the authority to freely choose for His purpose any nation anywhere on the 360 degrees of the compass. (283-038, 1997.04.08)

14 By creating the Federation of Island Nations, the Federation of Peninsular Nations and the Federation of Continental Nations, I laid the foundation upon which a new United Nations could be established. Within it we need to incorporate four major bodies, focused on religious leaders, women, youth leaders and students. Body and mind have been divided ever since Adam's family, but now the realm of the first-born son and that of the second-born son, representing body and mind respectively, must become one. Thus, although the United Nations has not yet served the coming Lord, if it institutes and celebrates True Parents' Day, True Children's Day and the Day of All True Things, all of heaven and earth will be united. (293-163, 1998.05.26)

Ambassadors for peace and anointed representatives (boonbongwang)

15 Ambassadors for peace are ambassadors for the heavenly kingdom. You need to know that they are the ambassadors who will clean up Satan's world. That is why I am placing them in the position of the first-born son representing True Parents. They are to become the flag-bearers in the era of the settlement of God's sovereignty. (348-073, 2001.07.06)

16 Ambassadors for peace need to represent the True Parents. Even though from the viewpoint of Satan's side they appear to be in the position of Cain, their role is not that of Cain. What I am saying is that they need to serve the people, their elder brothers and sisters, from the position of younger brothers and sisters. Thus they

should serve their nations; thus they should serve the Unification Church. (348-113, 2001.07.07)

17 Ambassadors are the special envoys of their nations. They represent their nations, with full authority to act for them wherever they go. Then what are ambassadors for peace? Now that the kingship of God has been established, they are the ones who have been given full authority to act for the heavenly nation. This means that they are the ambassadors for the peace of the heavenly nation. (356-121, 2001.10.12)

18 The male ambassadors for peace represent True Father, and female ambassadors for peace represent True Mother. As fathers and mothers of their nations, with the heart of God's love, they need to establish the heavenly political system wherein leaders sacrifice themselves. By investing themselves for the sons and daughters of their nations and forgetting what they have given, always with the heart of love on behalf of God, their nations will come to resemble the kingdom of heaven on earth and the kingdom of heaven in heaven. Thus they will bring the liberation of heaven and earth. Then the world can become a world where God can be God, and where the Parents and all peoples are liberated for all eternity. Thus the ideal world will naturally be realized. (356-179, 2001.10.14)

19 When your ancestors receive the Blessing, they stand in the position of the three archangels to your family, whose role is to build a bridge to the earth. Who serves in that mediating role on the earth? It is the ambassadors for peace. They are people who have been given the position of archangels, even though they may not have offered much devotion. Suppose Judaism and the nation of Israel had become one, with Jesus as their center. Then Jesus would have formed a family, and he would have dispatched ambassadors for peace throughout the Roman Empire. Jesus was not able to dispatch 120 ambassadors for peace, so I have to indemnify that. All that was not finished must be indemnified. (401-116, 2003.01.06)

20 Ambassadors for peace are archangels. They need to be better than either the Zionists or the Palestinian Muslims. Only because they are united with the Unification Church can they be like that. They have willingly gone to places of death and opened the gates of peace. What they are doing is like filling in a hole that has burst open in a large dam. There must be a group of people—an army wearing armor from head to toe that can be sent as one body to be sacrificed—that can block up the hole with their piled-up armor and mashed-up bones and flesh. That army division has to block up the hole, even if the entire division dies all at once. Only then can that dam be secured and the people below the dam survive,

maintaining their farmland in peace. Unless such a sacrificial group of people comes forth, world peace cannot be realized. (469-326, 2004.09.22)

21 My plan is to create total unity based on a new structure of ambassadors for peace together with ambassadors for peace among young leaders, middle and high school students, and children from elementary schools and kindergartens. Since all people in the village, from kindergarteners to college students to the pillars of society, will work in the name of ambassadors for peace, they can follow only one and the same path. Then, in places where we live, there can be no wars, unfilial behavior to parents, or disloyalty to the nation. (543-075, 2006.10.26)

22 National messiahs are like the tetrarchs who had supervisory roles in the nations within the Roman Empire. They are like Abel-type kings. The sovereign of that nation is Cain, but the national messiah, as the Abel-king, needs to win the entire Cain realm over to his side. At the same time, the national messiah needs to connect to the world messiah. The world messiah is the Lord of the Second Advent. National messiahs need to have absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience before the world messiah. If they have their own opinions or ideas, they cannot create relationships in a parallel alignment. If they insist on their own viewpoints, they are bound to collide with the world messiah. (331-184, 2000.09.02)

23 National messiahs can be compared to the tetrarchs of ancient Rome. The tetrarchs were higher than governor generals. As kings are born of the bloodline of the royal family, their lineage was the basis for them to become tetrarchs. In relating to the president of a nation, the president is the Cain president and the national messiah is the Abel president. When the two can unite, they lay the foundation for the Parents. That is the Principle. (335-218, 2000.10.04)

24 Our anointed representatives (boon- bongwang) are the governor generals of the heavenly kingdom. They are sent to counsel the kings of nations. They are the spiritual parent of the nation, and can take that nation to the kingdom of heaven. They are the new messiahs. They are the messiahs who represent their designated nations. They have gone to those nations to save them, not to exploit them for themselves. They must be good representatives. (502-179, 2005.07.28)

25 What does the Abel UN need to do? It needs to create a world of goodness by forming a peace kingdom corps and a peace kingdom police force from veterans and current soldiers within their own nations. These peace forces need to be

established with soldiers in active service and veterans. I have been preparing for this. (583-275, 2007.12.28)

Section 6. The international Peace Highway, the Korea-Japan Tunnel and the Bering Strait Project

1 Although you belong to your nation, you also need to belong to the world. It will not do if you go your way clinging to your own nation. Suppose your family lived in the garden of Eden. Would there be border guards there? If you wanted to go east or west, would anyone stop you from crossing the border? There would be no such things. You need to reach that standard. That is why we need to go to the world level. We need a global domain where, when we go forward in the name of the Unification Church, we encounter no barriers. Otherwise our families will have no earthly realm in which to perfect the ideal of the kingdom of heaven. (146-224, 1986.07.01)

2 Henceforth, even if I am not here, it is certain that the kingdom of heaven on earth will be actualized. I have completed paving the way. I have abolished the gates of hell in the spirit world and laid the foundation for the highway on which you can go to the kingdom of heaven. Suppose that we want to travel to Washington, DC. If we walk, it might take as many as ten million steps to get there. Some of us live close by and others are further away. Where we are depends on our different destinies. Nevertheless, we can all still travel to Washington. The question of whether it will take us ten years or a hundred years to get there depends on how much effort we make. (312-083, 1999.10.03)

Significance of building the International Peace Highway

3 Just as in the spirit world, a campaign to abolish national borders will be carried out on earth in the not-too-distant future. It can be done. That is why the spirits of diverse peoples are returning to earth, even to the Kremlin in the Soviet Union, to testify to the Unification Church. To those who oppose me, I say, wait and see whether the spirit world will leave you alone. The spirit world will not sit still. It will dispatch its forces even to the most remote regions of the world, and if there are people there who oppose me, it will deal with them spiritually in proportion to their opposition. (091-065, 1977.01.23)

4 All barriers need to come down. Everything of Satan's must be removed and the ground must be leveled. I am breaking down all the walls of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos, and leveling the ground. Therefore there will be no barriers. Even a wall as high as the Himalayas will not pose a problem. I

am breaking down all those walls and paving a highway. When the walls are broken down and we can cross those barriers, true love will manifest. (332-151, 2000.09.17)

5 Looking around the world, we see that many neighboring nations have erected borders to block free passage. Who erected those borders? Who set up those sovereignties? All this was done through the machinations of the enemy. Where then is the group of people with the conviction, representing God, to overthrow the enemy, Satan? Who are the people who can band together, resolved to eliminate him and his base? Christianity is not up to the task. Therefore, Unification Chinch members must do this; it requires both spiritual maturity and caution. We need to make a new determination if we are to realize our hopes for tomorrow. Today, to complete our preparations, we need to build an organization that can be an impregnable fortress; then we must move forward to achieve our goal. Based on that organization we will set the way of tradition and an unwavering lifestyle. Otherwise we will not be able move forward within Satan's realm and usher in the day of victory. (48-250, 1971.09.19)

6 From now on, what was turned upside down must be turned right-side up. Hence, you need to return to your families, become small messiahs, and create one unified world without left- wing and right-wing factions. On the first day of February 1985, at three o'clock in the morning, I in Danbury and True Mother in East Garden tore down the gates of hell in the spirit world and all the barriers blocking the way to earth. Thereby we opened the course for the stream of heart to flow forth. We, Mother and I, built a highway from the rock bottom dungeon of hell all the way to heaven. Because such a time has come, we can now talk about the Peace Highway on the earth. Now our ancestors in the higher realms of the spirit world can go down to the dungeon of hell and witness to people. Until now our ancestors were unable to do this. Furthermore, now leaders in the spirit world can guide us. We have entered an era when your grandfathers and grandmothers in the spirit world can come to their descendants on earth and coach you in everything. (149-340, 1986.12.28)

7 I made a public announcement regarding the International Peace Highway project at the International Conference on the Unity of the Sciences. At the time, the presiding council members opposed it. Once a tunnel is dug between Japan and Korea, one route of the Peace Highway will go to China and there it will branch out, one road going to Siberia and another to Moscow and on to London. The other route will pass through India and the Middle East. (192-133, 1989.07.03)

8 In order to defend ourselves against the Soviet Union, we need the support of the United States and Japan, and then China. To gain the support of China, I declared that we would build the International Peace Highway at the Tenth International Conference for the Unity of the Sciences in 1981. At the time the presiding council members of the Professors World Peace Academy opposed me. They said, “Why are you doing this, when all the presiding council members oppose this plan?” I replied beginning with the words, “You don’t know as much about Asia as I do. You hardly know anything about Asia or about history, do you?” Eight hundred and eighty scholars and scientists from one hundred and eleven nations attended the conference. I sent my proposal to construct the International Peace Highway to the prime ministers of their nations. I also sent the proposal to university presidents. (139-122, 1986.01.28)

9 Now is the era of globalism. In the future, there will come an era when we can travel even in outer space. These days, people dream about traveling around the world with their spouses once in their lifetime. To make this dream come true, I came up with the plan for the Peace Highway and introduced it throughout the world. Some time ago we held a groundbreaking ceremony for the International Peace Highway and began to excavate a tunnel in Japan. Korea is not even aware of it. In Japan the government and people are making a commotion about it, but Korea is napping, not even dreaming of it. (148-027, 1986.10.04)

10 We need to create a broad and smooth highway on which all people can travel comfortably and happily. We should build an International Peace Highway in such a way that people will be able to drive hundreds of miles per hour with pleasure. Even if future generations do not know who built it and do not express gratitude for it, it is our mission to build such a road. We need to make it a broad highway, as straight and smooth as possible. (20-136, 1968.05.01)

A conflict-free peace highway

11 In achieving world peace, the main problem is war. To eradicate war, the major airports could be managed by each continent—Asia, for instance. Now airplanes transport soldiers and weapons. In the future however, after building the International Peace Highway, I will ensure that the continental authorities say, “You cannot transport military equipment on this highway.” Then the world cannot engage in war. I also want to see that people do not misuse airports in any way. Airplanes could be contracted jointly for the use of all Asian nations. The nations could jointly declare, “These airplanes will be used by all Asian nations, and they will not be allowed to transport any materials that can cause damage to Asia.” Then

war will gradually die out. If ports and highways are managed in a similar manner, people will not be able to engage in war. (258-168, 1994.03.17)

12 There will be more and more interaction among the world's peoples. That is why I proposed in 1981 that we build an International Peace Highway. It will enable people to travel without passing through immigration checks at each national border. This will be done by setting up a zone of non-interference extending four kilometers to the left and right of the four-lane highway, eight kilometers in total. For instance, along the route of the highway in Japan, Japan will not have jurisdiction within the eight-kilometer strip of land through which the International Peace Highway passes, but outside that eight-kilometer zone, they will have jurisdiction. That zone will be designated as a special international territory, wherever it may be, so that all people in the world can travel through it. Within that zone, there will be no national borders. (182-234, 1988.10.23)

13 Though Satan built up innumerable barriers, I have broken them all down and cleaned everything up. I have paved a straight highway in the spirit world, and I am building such a highway in this world as well. Unification Church members need to run forward. If they come to a sea, they need to dig a tunnel under it and keep going. If they come to a mountain, they also need to dig a tunnel under it and keep going. Why? It is because true love travels the shortest distance. It travels on a straight road. It does not look up or down; it does not look backward; it does not look to the left or to the right. (239-279, 1992.12.06)

14 The achievement of peace has been the hope of my entire life. In 1981, the Tenth International Conference for the Unity of the Sciences was held in Seoul. It was a conference where renowned scholars and scientists from more than one hundred nations assembled. At the conference, I announced my plan to build the International Peace Highway. Once this colossal plan is realized, we will be able to travel from Tokyo to London by car. I believe the International Peace Highway will bind all humankind as one global family. Modern technology will make it possible for humankind to live as one family. (193-326, 1989.10.10)

15 In the past, the nation of Japan was my enemy. Nevertheless, I am trying to raise it as the vanguard among Asian nations by blessing it as the elder brother Cain through its cultural sphere and by guiding it to interact with other nations in harmony and peace. To make this connection, I began the construction of the International Peace Highway, which will pass through North Korea and travel across the continent to China. The Japanese people must make this happen. Such is the work I am pursuing now. I have come this far by setting the example, as evidenced

by my life in Danbury, and by following principles that history proves true. This will result in heavenly fortune and unity. (146-036, 1986.06.01)

16 In order to build the International Peace Highway, we will bring together Korean engineers residing in Japan, the United States and China, through the Unification Church. Then Japan and America are bound to collaborate in the development of the International Peace Highway. This will serve as a new economic foundation to protect freedom worldwide. Asians will be able to realize their dream of freely traveling throughout the world. Then there will be a great movement of Asian people. Starting from Asia, we are working toward a realistic, unified economic paradigm that will bring East and West together in a new civilization. It will actualize a new world of peace based on the love of God, which is the absolute value. (115-176, 1981.11.10)

17 Now I am promoting the construction of the International Peace Highway. In the future we will move every religion. We will move Confucianism, Buddhism and Zen in the Far East, Hinduism in India, Islam in the Middle East, and the Christian cultural realm of Europe. We will move religious leaders and young core members alike. We can mobilize anyone from any region. What contribution are people of faith making in the world today? They may contribute to their churches and temples, but few make contributions to all humanity. The plan to construct the International Peace Highway is truly a stroke of genius. Religious bodies can work together for this program. For instance, in the Far East the organizations of Confucian-ists, Buddhists and Zen Buddhists will have no problem mobilizing their believers to participate. The religious bodies of Korea and Japan need to participate as well, to be able to make a contribution for Asia. Next, the Hindu temples of India should be brought together. When they collaborate for such a cause, any number of people can be mobilized. (174-066, 1988.02.17)

18 The problem that will arise in Japan in the future is the acquisition of natural resources. Japan will have no problem as long as the United States and the free world are willing and able to provide such resources. However, if they hold back, the only option available to Japan will be to obtain its natural resources from China. This is one reason I proclaimed the International Peace Highway project to the world in 1981. When this highway is constructed, Japan will be connected to the continent, to Southeast Asia, to the West, and even to Siberia. I believe it will make a significant contribution towards supplying Japan with natural resources. That is one reason I initiated this project. (135-263, 1985.12.12)

Significance of the Korea-Japan Tunnel

19 The Korea-Japan Tunnel will impact Asia. Once that route links Korea and Japan with a railroad, many of the goods transported across the world from Asia, the United States and the Pacific region will pass through Korea. Once the Korean Peninsula is unified and the tunnel is constructed, the time will come when trains through Korea will transport a great quantity of goods. (456-191, 2004.06.28)

20 It has been quite a while since we began excavating the Korea-Japan Tunnel. When we open the way from Japan through the Korean Peninsula to China, the unification of South and North Korea will not be a problem. Then Japan also will have hope for the future. I consider that this tunnel is paving the way to supply Japan with the boundless resources of the continent. (337-148, 2000.10.25)

21 We will dig the Korea-Japan Tunnel. We will build the International Peace Highway and extend it to China and even to Russia. We will extend it from the Korean Peninsula, which will be the start of the highway. The new starting point of global political trends is the Far East, where I was born. As the base, my homeland is the place from which everything begins. Thus, once the Korea-Japan Tunnel is built, Korea will become the hub of transportation and the focal point for the exchange of the world's cultures. With this as the base, the world's cultures will inevitably follow a path towards equalization. Thus, Korea is in a crucial location. I have been saying these things for the past twenty years. (316-065, 2000.02.09)

22 The only ways Japan can export are through the Taiwan Strait and the Korea Strait. If these two routes were blocked, even for a short time, Japan would face serious trouble, especially if it were not supplied with natural resources. In order to avert that danger, I have said that the Korea-Japan Tunnel needs to be excavated quickly. Once Japan has a tunnel, it will be connected to the continent. To travel to the continent through the tunnel by car will take less than two hours. Hence it will also take only two hours to transport goods via the tunnel. With a railroad laid underneath and a highway built above it, anything becomes possible. (434-097, 2004.01.28)

23 In establishing the kingship of peace in the world, the Korean Peninsula needs to be capable of playing a leading role. For that to happen, first South and North Korea need to be unified based on the cooperation of Japan and Korea, and next a tunnel needs to be built to connect the Korean Peninsula to Japan and the Pacific. Then, under the leadership of the United States, Korea can join forces with Japan and Taiwan in the Pacific and they can bind with the nations that had been their enemies. (446-130, 2004.04.22)

24 The Korea-Japan Tunnel will become an important strategic point in the economic distribution channel. If Japan were to export goods to Europe, the Middle East and all across Russia through Vladivostok or Dalian, but not Korea, it would be difficult. But if we build a highway through Korea, branching out into three different routes, Japanese producers would be able to transport goods to places as far away as London. Products of Europe and Asia could move through this route to the five major continents. (452-057, 2004.06.01)

The Bering Strait Project as a symbol of world peace

25 Pioneering a highway across the Bering Strait is one of the ways we can promote a peaceful world, without war, in the future. This is something that all humanity desires. Since the Unification Church has already begun working on it, I view this as a project that should be carried out in my name, even if it takes all eternity. (504-010, 2005.08.08)

26 Wherever you go, when you deliver a speech, do not fail to speak about the Bering Strait project. This should be a major topic wherever you go. Even if you forget about eating breakfast and lunch, you should not forget about this. The Unification Church is now devoting itself to establishing the homeland of the global nation. We are dedicating ourselves enthusiastically to this work. Therefore, even if the world does not work on the Bering Strait project, we need to do it. When we can bring this about, it will lead to the global nation that transcends all borders. (504-313, 2005.08.20)

27 In the era of the kingship of goodness there will be no wars. To ensure this we are focusing on the Bering Strait. I am saying we need to construct a highway of peace along this route, a road that travels via a tunnel under the sea, passes over a bridge through the air, and traverses across the land. Such a road will never serve the purposes of war. I have laid the foundation for this. Therefore when I raise the banner and move, the world will move as well. (504-299, 2005.08.20)

28 The issue of the Bering Strait is the key to establishing the kingdom of peace. Now that you have come to the arena of the final battle, you need to persuade people with a lot of money to assist with this. You can tell them, "At this juncture in time, I know of something that will generate more value than diamond mines, gold mines, or mines of the twelve birthstones. You had better invest in it, even if you have to sell your property, your lands, or even the soil of your nation." (512-118, 2005.10.15)

29 When a tunnel is excavated across the Bering Strait, connecting the continents of the Pacific Rim through Russia and Alaska, the era will arrive when people will be able to travel anywhere on the globe by car. The Korea-Japan tunnel will be part of it. When that comes to pass, Korea will become the hub. I am the only person with this vision, who has influence in Europe, Africa, South America, the Asian continent, even the islands of the seas. I have laid a foundation in all the member states of the United Nations. (555-133, 2007.02.09)

30 The Palestinian Territories are inhabited by Israelis and Palestinians, and the conflict between Judaism and Islam is taking place there. On the Korean Peninsula the political struggle between North and South Korea is taking place. Further, in my time I am fighting to surmount the geographical and political barrier of the Bering Strait. All these fights need to be resolved. Only when the religious struggle, the political struggle, and the struggle over the ownership of the Bering Strait are brought to an end can the kingdom of peace be realized. (520-189, 2006.03.13)

31 In the Old Testament Age the providence was carried out on the family level, in Jesus' age the providence was carried out on the national level, and in the age of the Lord of the Second Coming the providence is being carried out on the world level. In the age of the Lord of the Second Coming, heaven and earth must be united as one. This work needs to be done in one generation. The borderlines of the Old Testament Age affect Palestine; the struggle between Cain and Abel affects the thirty-eighth parallel between North and South Korea; and the Bering Strait affects God's kingdom and homeland. When Russia and the United States participate in cross-cultural marriage, the world will be completely liberated. (514-218, 2006.01.10)

32 The Bering Strait is the most difficult border of all. It is a border between lands, and it is also the most difficult border in terms of ideology. When this border is abolished and the two nations are united, hell and the heavenly kingdom can become one. Therefore, all the people in the world, and even the people of the spirit world, need to fulfill the task of abolishing the border at the Bering Strait in the name of that same hometown and homeland. (550-258, 2007.01.04)

33 Nations that possess the tundra are in a position to dominate the world. By possessing its natural resources, they can contribute to the Era after the Coming of Heaven and become its owners. One reason I am placing the greatest importance on the Bering Strait is to prevent these resources from being lost. (513-314, 2006.01.02)

34 I have divided the Bering Strait region into twelve districts, and twelve tribes will be organized there. The question is how the people of the world can all join these tribes and invest their money and all their devotion into their respective districts, in order to quickly build a four-lane highway on which trucks can run. They need to do the basic construction work for this. (529-036, 2006.06.08)

35 What developed out of Greek philosophy was a Hellenistic ideology that opposed God. It also opposed Christianity and the new world of Abel culture. This was communism, whose center was the Soviet Union. Communism began to crumble in 1953, when Stalin died. Once we create an environment for the United Nations to unite with me based on the religious foundation of the United States, Satan's world will fall apart. Now what the United States needs to do is to bring Russia and China together to work on this Bering Strait project. Territorial borders need to be broken down and all nations need to unite. The borderlines in the spirit world have already been removed and its regions are uniting as one, and now the physical borderlines need to be taken down as well. We cannot bring about such unity through military force. It needs to be done through sacrifice and service as desired by God, through the truth that I teach. (551-166, 2007.01.06)

Book 11 CEREMONIES AND HOLY DAYS

Chapter 1. The Etiquette of Attendance

Section 1. A Life of Attendance 1139

Section 2. Living in Attendance to God 1143

Section 3: Attending True Parents in Daily Life 1152

Chapter 2. Church Services

Section 1. Church Service and Prayer 1157

Section 2. The Meaning of Tithing 1167

Section 3. The Practice of Hoondokhae 1170

Chapter 3. Ceremonies and Rituals

Section 1. The Blessing Ceremony 1175

Section 2. The Seonghwa Ceremony 1185

Chapter 4. The Daily Life of Blessed Families

Section 1. Proper Conduct for Blessed Families 1190

Section 2. The Standard of Love in the Family and Respect between Husband and Wife 1199

Section 3. Blessed Family Practices 1205

Chapter 5. The Holy Days and Anniversaries

Section 1. Holy Days 1213

Section 2. Anniversaries 1233

Book 11 CEREMONIES AND HOLY DAYS

CHAPTER 1 The Etiquette of Attendance

Section 1. A Life of Attendance

1 You should live a life of attendance and encourage each other to be strong in doing so. Up to now you received salvation through a life of faith, but from now on you will find salvation through attendance. If humankind had not fallen at the outset, you would attend God as your way of life. Attending God is something you do with your whole heart in your daily life. Wherever you go, you should always feel that your father is in front of you and your mother is behind you, and that Heaven is with you at every moment, to your right and left, above you and below you. When you, as Unification Church members, carry out your mission, your public responsibility in the church, you may run into difficulties that you cannot resolve on your own. When this happens, you should purify your mind, cleanse your body with a bath, and pray sincerely to Heaven. When you pray, ask God for His guidance, and He will show you the way to go. If He does not, it is only because your heart does not reach the standard of Gods heart; if it does, He will surely answer you. If you entrust everything to God and rely on Him when you face difficulties, keeping a prayerful heart, God will guide you in the right direction through your intuition. (150-294, 1961.04.15)

2 In this age you are justified by living in attendance to God. You attain salvation through attendance. Previously, you were saved through paying indemnity. However, you must now enter the age when you attend Heaven. There must be a nation where everyone lives in attendance to Heaven. Jesus was chased out because he did not have such a nation. It is the same for you. You must go forth holding on to the Word that I am conveying to you. Satan has no power to deny the Word. Since even Satan recognizes God, if you substantially build a family that is aligned with the Word and with the heavenly world, then centering on your family you can freely expand your foundation. How can a nation emerge without families? It is from our families that our tribes can emerge. Centering on our tribes we can

create our nation, and from that point God's world will emerge naturally. This is the expansion that will take place starting from blessed families. (354-222, 2001.09.27)

Now is the era when we live in attendance to God

3 The Unification Church does not talk about the kingdom of heaven based on faith alone. We say that the righteous are justified by attendance, that we are saved through attendance. But to attend God you need to know Him. It is not a problem to attend Him once you understand the teachings of the Unification Church. Once you truly understand them, you will know God and find it natural to attend Him. Having said that, I ask you: how regularly do you feel God's presence? How many times during your twenty-four hour day do you feel His presence? Can you expect to be saved through attendance if you attend God two hours a day? You should need God more than you need to breathe and seek Him more desperately than a choking person gasps for air or a dehydrated person craves a drink of water. God is more essential than food. (033-231, 1970.08.16)

4 You have to know God's situation and circumstances, understand His heart, and then think of Him as you would your father. He is your Father, my Father and our Father. Why should learning about God, listening to Him and attending Him be our way of life? It is so we can come to understand God's circumstances and heart as they were expressed in the pages of the Bible. It is to understand that God is our own Father, who has been wounded, trampled upon, rejected and torn to pieces. (8-253, 1960.01.17)

5 The standard for true relationships is the parent-child bond of heart between God and human beings. No one in authority can undermine this bond of heart, for it is eternal, unchanging and unique. It is a bond with absolute authority. When you come forth with this authority, all beings bow their heads before you. When you move with the authority of this bond of heart, the entire universe follows you. This is an ironclad rule of the universe. (007-105, 1959.07.26)

6 If you do not have the courage to embrace people of all different colors and live with them as family, you will not be able to attend God in the future ideal world, the kingdom of heaven. That is why in the Unification Church there is interracial marriage among members of different skin colors. I encourage Koreans, Japanese and Americans to intermarry. If I did not do that, would not be able to take the lead responsibility in helping all humankind enter the world of the heart. If I did not do so, people would ask why, among the people of different colors, I only loved people

of one color and did not make the condition to love people of another color, so I encourage Koreans to marry people of all colors. (177-068, 1988.05.15)

7 A life of attendance is not easy. It is not easy for you, and it is not easy for me either. If I have to deal with an issue concerning attendance, I cannot sleep. I know that unless I attend God, He will be restricted; that without me He cannot be liberated. It should be the same for you in attending me. You should make me feel that I am powerless without you, because only when you expand the scope of your activities can I broaden the stage of my activities. Therefore, you should understand that you determine the circumstances that surround me, and you should have a heart to create an expansive environment for me in all spheres of life. Again, a life of attendance is not easy. You must attend God with more heart than the heart of parents who love their children. Your parents took care of you for twenty years or more, but God has been raising His children for tens of millions of years. Tens of millions of years have passed since humankind emerged. For tens of millions of years God invested Himself and devoted Himself to meet the Son whom He has yearned for. Just because you have devoted yourself, do not think that you have offered all that you have. Even after devoting yourself you should think it is still not enough. (301-186, 1999.04.26)

8 God is near you. His concern for each of you exceeds that of anyone else. Everyone thinks that their own parents love them the most, but God's love is greater and deeper than that love; it is deeper and greater than any human love in this world. Hence, you should become people who can feel God's loving embrace and call Him Father. You should become true sons and daughters who can experience God's internal heart, in the position where you can say, "Now I know my Father's sorrow." If you can become such sons and daughters, you will become the owners of the kingdom of heaven in which you attend God. No one will be able to take that kingdom away from you. (002-235, 1957.06.02)

Our mindset during a life of attendance

9 God is not a fantasy. He is not just an idea or an abstract concept. He leads and guides our daily lives. He is always with us as the master of our daily circumstances. He does not exist just so that we can attend Him, but to live together with us, sharing love. All my life I have been fighting battles in circumstances where God could not be properly attended. No matter how hard the world opposes a person like me, and no matter how hard Satan strikes me or tries to undermine me, they cannot prevail as long as Heaven approves of me. Since I have this foundation, whoever attacks me ends up toppling over. (168-112, 1987.09.13)

10 In order to attend God, we need to begin by placing Him in the midst of our heart and mind and then become completely one with Him in our body. Without doing so, there is no way for us to liquidate the devil's world. That is why we view this time as the age of attendance, the age when we are justified by attendance. We are saved through attendance. God is not a distant God way up in the sky. We should attend God as our subject partner in our daily life. How do we attend Him? By using the law of indemnity, we must unravel all the sorrowful and painful circumstances that God has endured throughout the ages of history. (144-274, 1986.04.25)

11 Why do we seek justification through deeds, justification through faith, and justification through attendance? Without justification, good and evil cannot be distinguished. The evil world cannot be separated from the world of goodness. God is the standard of righteousness and goodness. The way God believes, the way God works, the way He attends— God must always be at the center. Satan cannot accuse righteous people who resemble God. (161-219, 1987.02.15)

12 God believes, works and lives in attendance; if we live with the same standard, then we will create an environment where Satan cannot intervene in our life. Although we may be within Satan's realm, if we establish the standard of righteousness that makes an environment where we can be with God, then Satan will withdraw. That does not mean that attendance in the Completed Testament Age is the only thing that will remain after the Old Testament Age based on deeds and the New Testament Age based on faith have passed. We need all three: the works of the Old Testament Age, the faith of the New Testament Age, and the attendance of the Completed Testament Age. Even in the Completed Testament Age we need to have faith and do good works. They are inseparable, by the same logic that tells us that growth occurs based on the formation stage, and completion happens based on the growth stage. This is particularly so at this time because justification by attendance means developing our lives in order to usher in the era of the kingdom of heaven. (161-219, 1987.02.15)

13 In the Old Testament Age, sacrificial offerings were made to lay the path for the Son to come. In the New Testament Age, the Son was sent and sacrificed to lay the path for the Parents to come. The blood of Christians was shed for the Second Advent of the Lord, paving the way for the True Parents to come. The age of the Unification Church is the age of the True Parents. It must pave the path for God to descend to the earth and dwell upon it. Because God has come to the earth, we can obtain salvation through attending God. This is how history is developing. We sacrifice things of a lower level in order to recover the Son. The Son has to live,

even if it means sacrificing the creation. All things of creation are in lamentation because they cannot experience the glory of God's love and the realm of His children's love. (177-158, 1988.05.17)

14 What kind of devotion should true sons and daughters offer? It should not stem from a life of mundane reality. Instead, you should offer devotion of hope, glory, loyalty and attendance. If this is the kind of legacy you leave behind when you pass over to the next world, the kingdom of heaven will belong to you and Heavenly Father will be your Father. Until now, you have offered devotion while going the course of indemnity. However, from now on you should offer devotion to join the realm of attendance, so that you can offer attendance to Heaven. Those who are able to do this will join the first resurrection. In order to join the realm of attendance, you must have the heart to comfort God. God is a grieving God, and you can comfort Him by making painful conditions of devotion through which you can participate in God's sorrowful circumstances. The providence of restoration introduces us to these circumstances, by revealing the indemnity conditions that people have made before God. (17-245, 1967.01.29)

15 From now on, you must lead a life of righteousness through attendance. By leading a life of attendance we can become a family of filial children, patriots, saints and divine sons and daughters. In the Era before the Coming of Heaven we fought with Satan. That time has now passed, giving way to the Era after the Coming of Heaven, the era of the kingship of peace. This is inevitable. It is necessary for each one of us to follow this path. It is not someone else's path, but yours. If you do not follow this path, you will have trouble in the next world. (492-237, 2005.04.16)

Section 2. Living in Attendance to God

1 As you receive more of God's love, you become larger, gradually leading more people and organizations. If you have laid a foundation to receive love from the people of a whole nation, you can make that nation one that can move the world. Because of this principle, you must lead a life of attendance. You need to lead a life of attendance in order to receive God's love. You must serve and attend God first. What must you do if you wish to receive God's love? God comes to us with perfect love, so we too must invest something that is perfect. The Korean maxim "Sincerity moves Heaven" expresses this heavenly law. To offer devotion means to do your utmost internally and externally. You must offer everything, combining your words, your attitude, your mind and thoughts, all your actions, everything in the internal and external realities of your life. In Korean this offering of devotion is called jeongseong. (78-031, 1975.05.01)

2 When you get out of bed in the morning, you should offer your first words to Heaven, and you should offer your first step out of the house to Heaven as well, by stepping first with your right foot. By cultivating habits like these, your life becomes a life of attendance. In your attitude every day, you have to adopt a principled standard. (17-296, 1967.02.15)

Attitude and law in a life of attendance

3 Where are you now? You should be aligned with me day and night, wherever you are and wherever you go. I live with God, totally investing my life for Him, totally aligned with Him, moving in the same direction as He moves, in step with Him. Now, the three—God, True Parents and you—must become one. We need to act in concert. It is a matter of life and death, so all three of us must come together and unite at one point. That point is the beginning of the realm of resurrection. It is the connecting point where the Father and I become one, and where you and I become one. It is where we three unite with one mind and one heart. Therefore, you must lead your life in accord with the Will. In order to do so, you have to understand what the Will is. Since you do not, I am asking you to pray. If you pray, I will surely appear to you and teach you. (031-321, 1970.06.07)

4 We cannot claim even a single square inch of land as our own property. God gave everything we have. Since God gave it, it must be returned to Him. No matter how small, everything came from God, and therefore we must return everything to God as things He values. The fruits of history will appear when we do. Since we received them as God's gifts, we should give them back the same way. You should become a person who can do this. Until the world belongs to such people, this earth cannot become the kingdom of God. Why do you think I meet people and listen to them twenty-four hours a day? It is for God. Therefore, you too must meet people and listen to them, on God's behalf. You must feel their difficulties for His sake. Even while we live on earth, we have to connect to life in the heavenly world. (35-284, 1970.10.25)

5 When you went pioneering alone in the remote countryside, you wished fervently that Unification Church members would visit you. You were anxious whether someone among the church members might have fallen sick. Your heart yearned to see the members closest to you, wishing to see a church pastor or me. You should yearn for God in this same way. If you do not yearn for God every day, you cannot attend Him. Whomever you yearn for, that yearning should always pierce you to the bone. When it gets late, if you say, "It's already midnight, let's go to bed," this will cause God to worry. There is no day or night in the kingdom of heaven. The lateness

of the hour is not an issue for those who live in the world of heart. (17-293, 1967.02.15)

6 "When you are hungry you say, "I'm hungry! I want something to eat!" But for whom do you want to eat? Do you want to eat for God, or for yourself? You must eat for God. By doing this, you make your body a perfect holy temple of God. You should think, ""God inside me is hungry and is telling me to eat." When you eat with this mindset, your meal becomes sacred. It is the same when you breathe, when you go to the restroom, or when you do anything else. When you listen, you are not listening alone. Likewise when you see or touch something, do not think that you are doing it alone. When you relate to people, even when you relate to Satan's world, you need to think that it is God who is relating to them through you. When you talk, you should think that God is speaking through you. When you are totally one with God, you can live. Even though your living, thinking and loving are centered on yourself, it will still be lawful. Even though you live, think and love centered on yourself, your living, thinking and loving will be centered on God. That is the principle. (92-166, 1977.04.03)"

7 As a person who is attending God, how much does your happiness bring joy to God? When you are hungry you are grateful to eat, and when you attend God, you should have even greater gratitude. You should always attend God—when you eat, when you wear something nice, even when you are sad or face difficulties. By living this way, you will leave behind good stories that God will keep in His heart. (17-291, 1967.02.15)

8 God wants to caress the things of creation through the hands of the person whose heart is one with His. God wants to embrace all His children through the Son and Daughter whose hearts are one with His. God eagerly waits for His sovereignty to be established by the bride who is one in heart with Him. God is eager to see the day when this world will be governed by sons and daughters who are one in heart with Him. Have you ever thought about all this? The more you think about it, the more awe-inspiring it becomes. When you think about how God's desire is not only connected to you but also to the world and even the cosmos, you cannot deny that you belong to God the Father. Therefore, you should think that your mind belongs to the Father, your heart belongs to the Father, your consciousness, your intuition and all your senses belong to the Father. You should establish the viewpoint that everything you feel and perceive belongs to the Father. You should do everything in your power to realize God's desire. Our path may lead to death, but no matter how fearful it is, we must overcome with a strong heart and conviction. We will have the power to laugh at death and go beyond it. (008-295, 1960.02.14)

9 There are laws for attending God. When you violate them, God is very displeased. Parents can be affected by one word from the child they love. With just one word a child can drive a nail into his or her parents' heart, or remove a nail from their heart. Likewise, because God loves humankind that much, if His children offend Him with even the slightest mistake, He can become hurt or angry. That is why I constantly strive to make God happy. (17-287, 1967.02.15)

10 When we look at six thousand years of history from a vertical perspective, we see that in the Old Testament Age, God gathered His people, and in the New Testament Age, God gathered His children. In this way, history has been flowing in reverse. In the world today there are people trying to build the kingdom of heaven centering on the concept of the people of God. There are also people who are trying to build the kingdom of heaven based upon the idea of heavenly children, the idea of heavenly siblings, and the idea of heavenly couples. You should know how to observe the laws of the kingdom of heaven in your daily life. To build the kingdom of heaven, you must observe the laws of the kingdom of heaven as required by Heaven. Based on the laws of the kingdom of heaven, you must also live the lifestyle of the kingdom of heaven. And based on the lifestyle of the kingdom of heaven, you become one through the love of the kingdom of heaven. The Word is the standard for the laws of the kingdom of heaven. Therefore you need to live based on the Word. This is the path you should walk. (001-337, 1956.12.30)

11 You may be able to experience God's grace through prayer or the work of the Holy Spirit because of the cooperation of spirits in the spirit world. Originally, human beings were created to mature spiritually as life spirits and then divine spirits. We are meant to have the Spirit within us. If we cultivate our spirituality centering on the power of the Spirit of God within us, we will gain the ability as divine spirits to perceive things spiritually, even when we are not helped or guided by spirits from the spirit world. Once you reach that spiritual level, whenever God feels sorrow, you too will experience indescribable sorrow welling up within. For instance, if you feel indescribable sadness when bidding good-bye to somebody, it means that person is entering a path of sacrificial offering or another path for which God feels great compassion. It will be one or the other. If you can actually feel that, and stand in the position where you have this kind of intuition and communication in your sphere of life, it means you are a person who experiences the Spirit. (040-297, 1971.02.07)

12 When the True Parents live together with human beings on earth bound together by relationships based on the heavenly principles of natural law, on that

day the work of God to establish morals and ethics based on the original human nature will spread throughout heaven and earth. Why are so many unhappy young men and women fleeing from their families? It is because love based on Heaven's law was lost. Hence, to save all families, the Parents of Heaven and Earth must emerge who can enable God to dwell within their own family. Jesus cannot become the Savior if he lives alone when he returns to earth. How can he save fallen humankind? He can do it only from the position of a parent. God is the Father of true love. Therefore, Jesus must come to the earth as the Father, and with the qualifications of a parent, He must personally save humankind. He comes with the heart of a parent, to save his children, whom he can hear groaning in the world of death and calling out to be saved. (21-156, 1968.11.17)

13 As object partners of the subject partner, we must not complain. To complain is rash and self-destructive. Therefore there is no place for complaint in our life of faith. In our life of faith there must be only gratitude. God is our eternal subject partner. Therefore, as long as we are destined to live our life along with Him, we should not deviate from His law and His way of life. (58-310, 1972.06.25)

14 Heavenly principles of natural law are established when we human beings observe the proper order. Among subject partner—object partner relationships, God stands in the position of the absolute subject partner. Anyone who ignores that subject partner cannot become His object partner. If you want to become an absolute object partner before the absolute subject partner, you must become absolutely one with Him. If you do so, everything you see, hear and feel, even the love you feel toward your family members after returning home from work, must be for God, because you stand as an object partner before Him as the subject partner. This is what it means to become one. If you do this, your family will never perish. (58-311, 1972.06.25)

15 What is it that will last until the end? It is the way of life that God and human beings share, a viewpoint that they share regarding how to live. That viewpoint on life itself should also be the same; there should be a view of life and a worldview shared by God and humankind. Our relationship with God should not be based on only a vague understanding. This forges an eternal bond, an inseparable relationship. It never should have happened, but God and human beings separated and now must reach a level of relationship higher than what it was before the Fall. This requires that we advance our quality of life to where we are one with God every day, all the way to the world level. (65-127, 1972.11.05)

16 Now the quantity of indemnity you have paid will be transformed into love and be connected to your very essence. The time has come when you must observe the laws of a life of attendance. As a woman, if you have received the Blessing, your husband is necessary for love. Saying your husband is necessary centers on the mind that loves your husband. Your love is the measure. How much do you need to love him? If you say that you need to do so absolutely, then you need to stand in the position of an absolute object partner centered on absolute love. This is the exact position in which God is situated. Everything about God is absolute. The beginning and the end, and even the process, are absolute. (518-296, 2006.02.26)

The path of filial piety: sincerity moves Heaven

17 What does it mean to serve someone with all your heart and all your will, and offer your utmost devotion to that person? It means you are willing to offer your life for that person. That is the full measure of devotion. Where is the limit of your heart and mind? When you devote yourself to someone with all your heart, it means you surrender your life for that person. To serve with all your will and devotion means to put your life on the line. The saying, "Sincerity moves Heaven," refers to what happens when your sincerity transcends all limits and you put your life on the line in offering devotion for the other. God cannot ignore those who offer devotion at the risk of their lives, putting their life on the line. (38-242, 1971.01.08)

18 What is the core thought that we find on the path of the providence of restoration? It is to follow the path of a sacrificial offering. What is a sacrificial offering? We were told to "Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind." (Matt. 22:37) The outcome of loving with all your heart and all your soul and all your mind is simple. It means that you put your life on the line out of your love for God. It does not mean that you are forced to do it. It means that you do it willingly, feeling an inexpressible joy. (48-114, 1971.09.05)

19 When I prayed kneeling down on the floor, my tears never dried. I even had calluses on my knees. In Korea there is a saying, "A tower built with devotion will not collapse." We must offer devotion to God. We must reach a state where we are crazy with yearning for God. If God dwelt on Earth, He would want to visit His children a thousand times a day. But because He does not dwell on Earth, He cannot do so. That is why He sent me to you on His behalf. This is the special reason that you cannot help but love me. You would not feel like loving me without a reason. During the three months of bitter cold in the winter, the tears of my prayers would completely soak through all the cotton insulation in my clothes. Think about

how desperate I was. I had showdown prayers with God, face-to-face, stabbing the floor with a dagger, and not just once or twice. (060-213, 1972.08.17)

20 Whatever you do, whether eating or drinking, sitting or standing, and regardless of whom you are with, what is most essential is that you demonstrate a childlike heart before your parents. You don't receive this through knowledge. Are you going to live in God's presence, bragging, "I am Dr. So-and-So"? That is something He doesn't need. The question is how you can stimulate God to love you. There is only one path: "Sincerity moves Heaven." There is no other way. (78-040, 1975.05.01)

21 You should not complain. There is no room for complaint. What I am saying is, you should not think of yourself. You should not hold on to concepts like "my possessions" or "my love." Thinking about God, you should have the heart that if you complain, it would cause great pain to our Heavenly Parent, and that because you have the chance to understand His circumstances and inherit His tradition, you will inherit it, follow Him, and comfort Him. If you shed tears with such a heart, God will be with you. But God will not be with you if you shed tears centered on yourself. You should shed tears for God and the Parents. Such is the altar of the Unification Church. Such is the life of attendance in the Unification Church. (114-281, 1981.10.20)

22 Even though I might collapse from hunger and exhaustion, my only thought has been how I can walk the path to fulfill what God needs me to fulfill, and how I can shoulder the cross that I might be required to carry along the way. You, however, are not even preparing yourselves to go on such a path. Although you know that you can be saved through attendance, you are just brazenly watching me. You should not be standing still with that kind of mindset. Whether we are asleep or awake, we should move forward for Heavenly Father and His nation. We must dissolve His bitter sorrow, even if it means that we die tens of thousands of times. Whoever has the courage to do that should be able to carry a cross on behalf of God in addition to his or her own cross. That is why at this time we must work for Heavenly Father and His nation, and become the filial sons and daughters whom the Father can summon. We are the people who were born for God's sake; therefore we must become filial sons, filial daughters, patriots and righteous men and women. This is our mission. (13-233, 1964.03.22)

23 You should not leave yourself even a moment to think about saving face, keeping your dignity or even feeling hunger. You should focus on activities for God's Will even more than on a child that is sick. But if you can't, you should at least have the kind of absolute obedience that won't let you sleep at night when you don't

understand what I am doing, and sets you running to me at 2 a.m. to ask about it until you do understand. This is the kind of life you must live. That's what I mean when I say that salvation comes through attendance. It's how I have always lived out my relationship to God. I cannot relax even for a second. After my body was struck, I was even more determined to stay on the path of indemnity to comfort God. (21-070, 1968.09.09)

24 If you are in difficulty and in pain, go and pray in a quiet room with the door closed. If you still cannot find an answer, pray even more deeply and more seriously. Invest more time in prayer. As I walked this path, it was normal for me to pray more than twelve hours a day. Imagine that you are diving thousands of feet deep into the ocean. What would you have to overcome? What would you have to endure? Prayerful people seldom make mistakes. They can find the answers within themselves. Once you experience the taste of prayer, you will find it more delicious than any meal and more fun than any hobby. When you reach that level of spirituality, you will immediately know what is good and what is bad in your environment. (128-172, 1983.06.12)

25 Unification Church members must pray. Pray to set aside your desires about the clothes you wear, the food you eat and where you live, and pray for humility. How much prayer do you think is needed in order to liberate humankind and God? We should pray as if we were facing the most serious situation in human history. Prayer solidifies your resolve to follow the path, no matter how difficult it may be. Constant prayer, twenty-four hours a day, will bring God to you. If someone is thinking about you, you will want to go and visit that person. It is the same for God. God seeks those who are thinking about Him more than about anyone or anything else, and who are striving to dedicate themselves to Him. (128-172, 1983.06.12)

26 In longing for God, you should shed so many tears that your eyes are blinded and your nose is clogged with mucous. Your uncontrollable weeping should make your chest ache. That is how much you must long for God. A son may desperately cry out, "Father!" as he is being dragged to his execution. Another may mournfully call out, "Father!" as he is leaving for a far-off country. When we call out "My Heavenly Father!" our standard must be higher than that. (50-289, 1971.11.08)

27 God is suffering hardships because of me, because of my family, because of my nation, and because of my world. So it makes sense that I too should suffer hardships because of myself, because of my family, my society, my nation and my world, and that I should do it for God. I am saying that, together with the Republic of Korea, we should suffer hardships on behalf of God. That is my philosophy, and it

is also God's philosophy. Some people look for chances to secretly impose burdens on others, even when everyone is already suffering hardships. These spineless people think that others should shoulder all the burdens instead of them, and if they could, they would sell even God for their own personal benefit. You have to be somewhat foolish to follow God's path. In a certain sense, patriots appear to be rather foolish people, even somewhat stupid. They have the character of a bear, with a kind of slow-witted generosity that, if someone took a piece of their arm, they would say, "Oh, that's not enough, go ahead and take some more!" (26-142, 1969.10.19)

28 To this day, I have been enduring hardship for the Will, day and night, and I am not about to stop. Those who have not attended me closely do not know me well. As soon as I open my eyes from sleep I kneel on the floor and pray. Why do I live this way? It is because, even in the middle of the night, my beloved children who are spread all across the world are depending on me. If I cannot be there to offer devotion with them when they pray to God, shouldn't I at least keep up with them and not fall behind them? Because I pray immediately upon waking up, God forgives me for not praying with them while I was asleep. (26-138, 1969.10.19)

29 What kind of person am I? I am a person who possesses only one talent: I just go straight ahead no matter what. Some people ask why I always do things that everybody vilifies and scorns, instead of quietly going a more convenient way. It is because I can reach the pinnacle only by overcoming the opposition of many people. On the other hand, most of you are thinking only about how to take detours around the difficulties. Why do we need to separate from the world? It is because even the love of our natural parents will take us off target. God has been following a straight path, and we must do the same. (097-257, 1978.03.19)

30 I am a lonely and solitary man. I could come this far only because I understand that God is as lonely and solitary as I am, and that He understands me. I know that the mission I must pursue until I die is to fulfill even a portion of God's Will and desire—to expand His foundation in even one area. That is why I am gathering together people who can live for God. Because I was born as God's son and because I feel responsible to establish His Will, I have not accused those who mocked me, nor have I sought revenge against those who beat me. Instead, I have persevered with love and fought my way forward, sometimes staggering, sometimes trudging ahead with my back bent over, and sometimes crawling on my belly. Through all of this I have maintained only one thought: how to establish God's tradition and bequeath it to the world. (82-047, 1975.12.30)

31 Here is what True Parents have to do. They need to win every battle, enter the deepest place in God's heart, liberate Him from bitter pain and sorrow, and establish His realm of victory on earth. You need to feel grateful to God that the True Parents have emerged on earth. You need to be aware of the misery of God, our vertical True Parent, which has been dissipated finally, because He has sent the Lord of the Second Advent to earth to liberate all humankind. Now we have entered an incredible era. Because of True Parents, we can pledge to become God's filial sons and daughters and we can then strive to realize that pledge. (235-021, 1992.08.24)

32 How serious are you about following the way of the Will? I have been walking it all my life without even my wife and children knowing what it involves. Only God and I know that. It has been lonely. No one knows the path I had to follow. With God's help, I, a solitary man, have brought amazing results. With this achievement I have raised issues fundamental to society. I have triggered a wave of innovative thought in this world of declining democracies. This has made me a controversial figure. What I have accomplished is not because I am great, but because God has been with me. (82-047, 1975.12.30)

Section 3: Attending True Parents in Daily Life

1 From now on, you must live with True Parents. God is in the position of the grandparents. True Parents are in the position of the mother and the father, and you are in the position of the first son. The lesson is that three generations should live together. You should live with the feeling resounding in your heart that God is with you and True Parents are with you. (131-097, 1984.04.16)

A life of attending True Parents

2 Are you True Parents' true sons and daughters? What are true sons and daughters? Being true children means a connection based on the true lineage. Of course a relationship with true children is formed through true love, but we should be connected through true lineage. If you are connected through lineage, you must take after your mother and father. Do you resemble me? Your eyes are blue, mine are black, and our hair color is different. I have a round, Oriental face. So for you to take after True Parents, what really matters is how much you resemble our essence. You should be able to say, "I resemble you in defeating Satan and in loving God absolutely" That is how you should resemble me. (170-237, 1987.11.21)

3 How much should you love me? You should not love me from a position that has traces of Satan's world and is tainted with love from that world. Go beyond that by

loving me more than you love your parents, spouse and children who were born in Satan's world. That is why in the Bible, Jesus said, "Whoever loves father or mother more than me is not worthy of me; and whoever loves son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me." (Matt. 10:37) This conclusion applies to all of us. He also said, "Take up your cross and follow me." (Luke 9:23) Each of us carries our own cross. To carry the cross means to resist and overcome the power that pulls us in the opposite direction. When we reach this point we shed bitter tears. (178-098, 1988.06.01)

4 The Blessing is the culmination of everything. So, at that moment, with whom should you establish your relationship? You couples cannot move forward to perfection on your own. You can do so only through True Parents' love. Everyone, whether good-looking or not, takes after their parents. In the Unification Church I am teaching the way of the True Parents. This is your blessing of all blessings. The hope of humankind is to meet the True Parents. Even at the cost of your life, you must meet the True Parents. Even if you lose all of history, all of the present age and all your descendants, when you meet the True Parents you will regain history, the present age and the future. Meeting the True Parents is a blessing. (35-236, 1970.10.19)

5 Everything comes down to meeting the True Parents. The coming of the True Parents of humankind is the desire of history, the desire of all nations, the desire of all ideologies, and the desire of the entire providence. Their appearance is unprecedented and will never happen again. It is the turning point of history and comes only once. From the perspective of eternity, a person's lifespan is just one breath. (51-355, 1971.12.05)

6 Carry my picture at all times. It will protect you and empower you to withstand any hardship. Moses performed miracles and signs to lead the Israelites out of Egypt, away from the Pharaoh, and guide them to Canaan. When the Egyptians' firstborn suffered afflictions and were killed, the Israelites marked their doorposts with the blood of a lamb for protection. Likewise, when you carry my picture with you, the spirit world will watch over you and protect you. (130-290, 1984.02.07)

7 When the Israelites were about to leave Egypt, they were able to avoid calamity by marking their doorposts with the blood of a lamb. In the same way, carrying my picture can protect you. The spirit world can recognize it even if it is in your pocket. It serves as a mediator by which your ancestors can connect to you. They understand that it is a good channel by which they can do this. If you carry this picture with you, you will not have accidents or trouble. Without it, you are more

likely to run into problems. Such incidents will occur all the time, and by that, you will recognize the value of my picture. (132-191, 1984.06.01)

Human morality and filial piety

8 Ethical and moral teachings have always held that parents have to love their children, that children have to be filial to their parents, and that there must be a distinction between husband and wife. These virtues, transmitted down to the present day, are the cornerstone of the Three Principles and the Five Moral Disciplines of human relationships as viewed in Confucianism. These days, however, such traditional customs and norms are changing. When we see the changes that are penetrating daily life and the social environment, we know that we are in the Last Days. The Messiah, a global leader, must appear to deal with these problems. (11-019, 1960.12.11)

9 According to Korean etiquette, you have to receive something from someone older than you with both hands. This signifies that Heaven's love is received only when both parties, symbolized by the two hands, have a perfectly balanced relationship. There is an expression, "A person's mind is Heaven's mind." The purpose of all the rules in human societies is to form relationships based on the way of the conscience. These rules serve to bring balance in relationships. They place man and woman on the same plane, with love as their axis. Therefore, we should always balance our relationships, with the heart of saints who love the world and the heart of divine sons and daughters who love God. This calls us to be humble before others. (171-237, 1988.01.01)

10 According to the eastern way of thinking, the older person should walk in front of the younger. This is because the older person was born earlier. This is how we create an orderly environment. The person born later should stand behind. Right or left, front or back, above or below; each should take their appropriate position. These views on keeping the proper order in relationships are eternal, and do not change. (168-252, 1987.09.27)

11 In a Korean family, when the parents rise in the morning, their daughter-in-law, who is already awake, goes to them and pays her respects. Then she folds up their bedding, cleans their room and prepares their meal. This is a norm in Korea. In order to indemnify fallen history, we must establish the law of filial piety as the highest among all laws. In the nation, filial piety should be the highest of all laws. (31-275, 1970.06.04)

12 In certain cultures of the world, people observe a three-year mourning period after a parent has passed away. The children offer meals to the spirit of their departed parent every morning and evening. Whenever they leave or return home, they pause before the altar set up for their departed parent and greet them. This is a law. You have to do even more than that. From the viewpoint of the Will, your behavior does not meet the standard of Heaven's expectations for propriety. Far from it! A husband and wife should report their daily schedule to God together, before they go out to work. Upon returning home from work, they should again report to God together. Only then should they eat dinner. You need to understand this God-centered standard of life. It regulates all these things very strictly. There are distinct rules of family life for women and for men. You should systematize these incredibly important heavenly norms and live by them. They outline the path you must walk. (31-275, 1970.06.04)

13 The more difficult your life is, the more valuable your achievements. Younger people naturally look up to the oldest family members as if they were God; so you must demonstrate something different when you get older. The difference should be a deep heart that penetrates the bone marrow. So too, blessed couples should inspire adoration, such that people can't help but think, "How happy the wife of that kind of husband must be! How happy the husband of such a wife must be!" (021-088, 1968.11.03)

14 You have heard about human moral norms, but not about heavenly moral norms. What is the origin of human moral norms? If you dig into their origin, you will find that they are based on the conscience. Most laws have their basis in Roman law, which may be considered the foundation for the current world civilization. However, moral norms arise from the conscience, not from laws. The foundation of the conscience is goodness itself, so the standard of goodness is the standard of the conscience. When we do something wrong, we are deviating from goodness and our conscience tries to correct us. Of course, we cannot form a universal social system that is in accord with the pure conscience without laws and regulations. But, in the end, human norms are fundamentally rooted in heavenly principles. (033-044, 1970.08.02)

15 In order to establish human norms for relationships, we need the original principled way. In order to establish the original principled way, we need the heavenly norms of relationships. Centering on what do they emerge? They emerge centering on absolute love. Centering on what does the original principled way emerge? It emerges centering on the authority of life. Today, loyalty is the representative norm of human relationships. Centering on what does it emerge? It

must emerge centering on eternal fidelity. Today, do you have a heart to relate with others according to the norms of heavenly relationships? If you have such a desire, you should have friends whom you can trust from the bottom of your heart, just as you would trust God. One step further, you should have at least one sibling, parent, or spouse whom you can trust as you would trust God. With this in place, you need to transcend the family and expand your relationships to the society, nation, and world. This has always been God's hope. (4-146, 1958.03.30)

16 We are told that there is no greater love than loving your neighbor as yourself. That is the greatest love. If you are pierced by bitter sorrow because you were unable to love your parents, then love your neighbors instead with greater love. If you do, a situation will arise when you will be able to demonstrate filial piety to your neighbors as if they were your parents. Even if you are unable to serve your parents with filial piety, Heaven will recognize your investment of filial piety toward your neighbors as having greater value than filial piety to your parents. (085-130, 1976.03.02)

CHAPTER 2 Church Services

Section 1. Church Service and Prayer

1 When you come early for church service, the extra time is an offering to God. Its value is beyond compare and cannot be purchased even with ten thousand pieces of gold. Therefore if you come late to the service, it is as if you are stealing that time from God. You should be on time for the service. It will enable you to indemnify what you have failed to do. That way you can still stand before God. Then you can come closer to Heaven with a better heart than you had the day before. (036-125, 1970.11.22)

2 Please do not say, "I am going to church because of so and so." People who say, "I am going to church for my beloved sons and daughters" or "for my beloved husband or wife" will not be able to sustain their faith. They should rather go to church for God's sake. Why then do you go to church? It should be because of God. You should go to church to make God your own and to find God's love and make it your own. (8-162, 1959.12.06)

The Sabbath and Ahn Shi Il

3 When you go to church to worship God, you need to wear holy robes. I am not talking about outward clothes, but about the holy robes of the heart. If your heart overflows from within when you hear the sermon and sing the hymns, Heaven will

work through you. When the fallen ancestors were expelled from the Garden of Eden, they shed tears of sorrow. In contrast, when you encounter God, you should be able to shed tears of joy with a smile on your face. Nevertheless, people cannot shed tears of joy upon meeting God unless they have first shed tears of sorrow. I am telling you, do not lose God. Do not lose sight of God, whom you've seen with your own eyes. Do not lose God, whom you've heard with your own ears. Do not lose God, whom you've touched. Most especially, do not lose the God who came into your heart. As long as you do not lose Him, no one can interfere with your connection to God. No person, no matter how great and powerful, can separate you from God once He has entered your heart. Therefore you must attend God, who penetrates the heart so intensely. (9-296, 1960.06.12)

4 God has led history for the purpose of saving you. So you should thirst for God's grace and learn to inherit it. You did not join the Unification Church based on your own merits; you joined based on the sincere devotion that God, your ancestors and the church offered on your behalf. The Unification Church has been working very hard in order to find each one of you. This huge debt must therefore be repaid. (018-095, 1967.05.24)

5 What is the purpose of keeping the Sabbath holy? It is ultimately to bring salvation to humankind and to establish the nation that God desires. Christians keep the Sabbath holy to sanctify themselves and to strengthen the church's purpose of saving human beings. The reason we observe the Sabbath is to advance the path to salvation. But more importantly, it is to save all humankind and seek God's providential nation and world. This is God's ultimate desire. (69-240, 1973.12.30)

6 Human beings must like what God likes. God designated the seventh day as the Sabbath day and declared it a day of rest, which we also observe. Yet although six thousand years of history have passed, God Himself has not been able to rest. He has not been able to take pride in His own Sabbath. Even Jesus, despite emphasizing the importance of the Word of the Gospel, which includes the Sabbath, could not enjoy even one day of glorious victory. All he could do was cling onto history and battle through the providence for the past two thousand years. Therefore he has not had a day when he could express his pride before God, a day when he could take his rest with all humankind. Since God and Jesus have never been in the position to take rest, we cannot rest either. Therefore, before the Sabbath comes, we are bound to confront wars, to experience pain, and to face death. Only after we overcome these hardships with resolute determination will we be able to taste the day of Sabbath. (5-025, 1958.11.09)

7 When you come to the church, you must bring all your family members with you —your parents, wife and children. You should also bring along your older brother, older sister and everyone else. How many bloody tears have you shed to witness to your parents, your cousins, your in-laws and other more distant relatives? Have you ever desperately struggled and prayed all night long with all of your devotion, offering yourself as a sacrifice, in order to guide even one person to God? This is the question. You must become the center of your environment in order to move forward. (41-090, 1971.02.13)

8 Now the Sabbath day (Ahn Shik II) has passed, and the Day of Complete Settlement and Attendance (Ahn Shi II) has come. However, even on the Sabbath day God did not want to rest. He came to re-create human beings, and there was still so much more indemnity that needed to be paid. Since we are saved through attendance rather than through the Sabbath day, Ahn Shik II, we call it Ahn Shi II. Because we are saved through attendance, if we simply use Ahn Shi II, Unification Church members everywhere will understand its meaning. Thus by keeping the eighth day, we embark upon an amazing era. By observing the eighth day as Ahn Shi II, we are blessed to pass through the gate that opens to the ideal heaven and earth and enter the world of attendance. That will bring safe settlement to the Blessing, and a new beginning. (445-288, 2004.04.19)

Devotions and prayers during church service

9 When you gather on Sunday and offer bows, you are not restricted to the place where I am. The many Unification Church members working on this earth in different nations face the headquarters where I am, offering all their devotion and praying with tears. They do it even when the people of the world chase them and drive them into a corner. We should praise those who offer such sincere prayers by saying, "Amen!" Members at the headquarters have responsibility not only to serve and honor God but also to represent the hearts of those members around the world. Hence before Sunday service you should prepare yourself for three days with the heart of anticipation. You should desperately pray for the happiness and well-being of all people and resolve to connect them to the authority of resurrection and life that can revive them. With such a mind you should enter the church door and attend the service with heartfelt emotion, choked with tears for God. (020-284, 1968.07.07)

10 When you are offering devotion, you must not come late to the service. If you do, you should be so ashamed that you cannot hold your head high and should feel that you are the sinner of all sinners. You must pledge to be on time for the service

and offer even greater devotion than others. How can you call out, "Oh, God!" when you do not even come on time? You should not offer your devotion in order to be seen by others. Let it be an offering of devotion that you come to church on foot rather than by car. Instead of just praying after you arrive, you should pray even more earnestly before you come. This is how you can offer devotion that no one else sees. The more you distance yourself from your surroundings and from the desires that secular people pursue, the more your devotion will accumulate. (42-235, 1971.03.14)

11 You must absolutely honor the words you speak when you come before God. How can someone who does not keep his or her promise be given grace? Such people will give up along the way. God does not randomly visit just anyone but relates only to those who earnestly yearn for Him. At the very least you should be on time for the service. (11-134, 1961.03.26)

12 Some among you are parents and some of you are children. Regardless, when coming before God, being punctual is more important than anything else. Again, I underscore that you must be on time. If you are unable to observe the appointed time for worship, you are bound to miss out. God wants a sanctified environment and an utmost pure heart. If you fail to be punctual and then sit in the back, then even though you sing praises, God does not want such praise from you. (11-132, 1961.03.26)

13 When you enter a sanctified, holy place, you should first pray for God's sake. It is the time when you are to meet the Lord, so first you should pray for God. Next you should pray for Jesus. Only by praying for God will you come to understand the heart of God, the heart that He experienced throughout history. Only by praying for Jesus will you come to understand the heart of Jesus, the heart that he experienced throughout history. Then you should pray for the multitude of Christians who fought for the Will. Following each and every footprint of the innumerable saints and sages since the Fall of Adam and Eve, you should pray to God, "Please allow me to become an offering to liberate them from their bitter sorrow." Then you should pray to the saints and sages, "Please cooperate with me. I know you have bitter sorrow on account of the work you left unfinished on this earth, but I am living to fulfill it." After that you can pray for your beloved children and then pray for yourself. That is the way of heavenly law. (007-328, 1959.10.18)

14 Whenever I pray, I pray with a heart that exclaims, "Father! You have always been guiding me!" I pray, feeling responsible that today I must save even one more life for God. I pray as one standing at a crossroads, where I can either bring a life to

the Father or be manipulated by Satan. When I preach, unlike other preachers in the world, I do not pick the topic of the sermon and prepare it in advance. I just try to say what the Father wants me to say, according to what He needs at the time. If I feel I have not met that standard, I pray and pray, investing my whole being and praying desperately with tears. I pray worrying about the path that each of you must go. (11-131, 1961.03.26)

15 You must offer devotion from the position of conviction, declaring, "I have absolute faith!" You must stand in the position of having absolute faith in God and the Will. Only when you stand in that position will God cooperate with you. When you pray, you must have no doubts that your prayer will be answered. You should be able to pray, "Father! I am the only one who remains. Without me, this nation will be ruined and this world will be ruined. O Father! I am the only one who remains at this crucial point, despite Your toiling for six thousand years. I am the only one who is close to fulfilling Your Will. My position is that crucial. Although I am not yet fully prepared, still You have given me the order. Therefore I will prepare myself with the conditions and foundations that will enable me to follow that order on behalf of my people. Is it not for Your providence of restoration?" (31-290, 1970.06.04)

16 When you pray, you should first pray for your nation, then for the world, for the angels and your ancestors in the spirit world, and then for the liberation of God. Without knowing what you should do and how the fortune of this world is changing, do not just pray, "O Lord, please send me to the kingdom of heaven." That is not what you should do. Today, in order for you to liberate Jesus from his pain and suffering, history must testify of you: "You deserve our sympathy" Your ancestors must testify of you: "Among our descendants, you alone stand tall. You saved all of history' and then go even further: "You accomplished the missions of a son and a parent, of a loyal subject and a filial child, by taking responsibility for your people at this time." (14-065, 1964.05.03)

17 You should pray, "If I cannot become the son or daughter You want me to be, I will walk the path of a servant to save Your sons and daughters. I will lay rocks and boards to build a bridge or place stepping-stones so Your children can cross over." If you pray like that, God will support you. The prayer, "Take care of my sons and daughters," is not a prayer God can support. You must first bless the saints of the world and then pray for yourself, in that order. Otherwise no matter how many times you pray, your prayers will have no effect. You must know how to pray. Those whose faith is for their own benefit will abandon God after they receive blessings,

because their goal is to receive blessings. Once they do and things are going well, they will fall away. (127-027, 1983.05.01)

18 As you receive grace and experience the spirit world, you will naturally know what to include in your prayers. Then if you study the contents of your prayers and compile statistics of their results, you will notice that the method and content of your prayers are improving, becoming more public. Fallen human beings would fall flat on their backs if they tried to pray for world-level issues at the beginning stage of their prayer life. They first pray for the salvation of those who are closest to them—their beloved parents, sons and daughters and spouse. However, as time passes and their prayers develop, the content of their prayers changes. What do people who know about God's Will pray for? They do not pray for their families; they pray for the world. Also, they know where they are, what kind of situation they are in and where God wants them to be, and they are determined to pioneer through paying indemnity at the position where God wants them to be. Such people are wise. (016-303, 1966.07.31)

19 When you pray, pray for the specific people or the particular matter that is on your mind. Do not just pray in general; you need to keep those people or that matter in mind. Then you establish a relationship of subject and object partners, and the law of giving and receiving begins to unfold. A subject partner and an object partner give and receive, and by praying diligently and offering full devotion, you create a place where that reciprocal action can take place. Also, you should pray with a sincere heart that reaches beyond the thousands of years of human history. It is sacred and marvelous to call out to God, offering devotion with a heart beyond the thousands of years of history and in total oneness with Him inside and out. When you do, you will become substantially one with God. Then the single word "Father" that you call out will carry the greatest beauty within it. (025-128, 1969.09.30)

20 People whose prayers are the same today as they were yesterday are not really leading a life of faith. Even though you see the same thing every day, you should notice something different about it. Then you can enter the mysterious world of faith. Once you enter the incredible world of faith, you can discover a new world. Although you do the same thing, praying every day, because you have come to like it and find it enriching, you will grow in your faith as you continue doing it. (066-109, 1973.04.15)

Pledge service and the Family Pledge

21 When we share rice cakes in the presence of True Parents, this act of sharing means that we become one with God in spirit. That is, we become one body with Him. Eating rice cakes together means to influence the parents to become one, the family to become one, relatives to become one, the world to become one and those whose mind and body are divided to become one. Unification Church members should offer pledge service every week. The day to offer pledge service is a holy day, and on a holy day we partake of holy food. The reason we share this precious holy food is to alleviate the bitter sorrow of God, who did not have a chance to experience that in Adam's family, due to the Fall. Pledge service is conducted in this format, with the heart of offering congratulations and best wishes to God and True Parents, in order to relieve God's pain. (280-289, 1997.02.13)

22 Unification Church members are expanding the pledge service from the level of Adam's family to the levels of tribe, people, nation and world. By expanding it so, it becomes a ritual to support the world to become one by attending God. Therefore all week long you should eagerly await the time for eating the holy food as if it were all you wished for. Offering and sharing the holy food is a time to attend God; it is a time when you can relate directly to God. Therefore blessed families throughout the world should honor this time and keep it as a tradition. (280-290, 1997.02.13)

23 I established pledge service, and it is truly amazing that all of you are able to have pledge service with me every day. By showing that True Parents honor this ceremony, I want blessed families to respect this ceremony and pass it on as a tradition to their sons and daughters. You must teach your children that pledge service is a crucial time for the family. Through this ceremony we can create bonds of heart, connecting the children with their parents face to face in the family and also .connecting them vertically with the True Parents. Altogether these relationships form the four-position foundation and link three generations as one. This is the time when the four-position foundation and the three generations can become one. You must teach this to your children. (280-290, 1997.02.13)

24 All of you should do pledge service with your family every Sunday. It is the ceremony in which blessed families make their declaration. Satan cannot invade such families. That is why we recite My Pledge. We are to be proud of the one sovereignty, proud of the one people, proud of the one land, proud of the one language and culture centered on God, proud of becoming the child of the One True Parent, proud of the family who is to inherit one tradition and proud of being a laborer who is working to establish the one world of the heart. By this proclamation you announce that you have no relation to Satan's world. It is a proclamation

ceremony that lets you resolve the mistakes you committed, or responsibilities you did not fulfill, during the week. (210-282, 1990.12.25)

25 How beautiful it is to see a mother and father holding their child's hands and sitting together in prayer! We must set the tradition in our families of offering bows in the morning to greet God and True Parents. Offering three bows signifies that we go to meet True Parents, who then bring us to meet God. (119-306, 1982.09.13)

26 Even if you are alone, when you offer a bow to God and True Parents, do not think that you are doing it by yourself. When a man comes to offer a bow, he should think he does it with his wife standing beside him. Likewise, when a woman comes to offer a bow, she should think she is doing it together with her husband. If the man and the woman think this way, it shows they are united as one. It signifies that blessed members should become totally one. (242-128, 1993.01.01)

27 All families should display True Parents' picture. The family should bow before it together, forming a four-position foundation. Three generations ought to bow. The four-position foundation involves three generations. Three generations should offer a bow—grandfather and grandmother, mother and father and children. After establishing a four-position foundation, when you bow in the name of True Parents you are outside the domain of the Fall. In this situation, because God has direct dominion over you, you have established a realm of liberation. Hence all the good spirits in the spirit world can come to earth and protect you, just as the archangel was meant to protect Adam's family. We have entered such an age. (211-350, 1991.01.01)

28 When you bow during pledge service on Sunday, to whom are you bowing? You are bowing to me, your Teacher, and to your family. You bow to serve and attend the Heavenly Parent and True Parents as the King and Queen. You bow to inherit the kingship from them. You are busy and occupied with many things, yet what could be more important than that? Children should bow to their parents, and parents should bow to each other. You parents must teach filial piety to your children. In this movement, the lives we lead should be models to others. (297-119, 1998.11.19)

29 When you offer a bow, you who are on earth are not the only ones offering it. Because we focus on the spiritual realm, the heavenly kingdom and God, it is certain that blessed families and the angelic world become completely one and bow together. Furthermore, if you are sincere and earnest in heart for your beloved ones, then your mothers and fathers, even your friends who have gone to the spirit

world, can be brought down to join you. You can bring down more than 72 generations and as many as 120 generations. You have not yet been able to establish a national-level foundation, but once you do, all this will be possible. (298-059, 1999.01.01)

30 The Family Pledge never existed in history. Now that the Family Pledge has appeared, families under Satan's dominion living on the earthly plane will have no place to go in the future. The appearance of the Family Pledge signifies that I met the standard of having indemnified four thousand years of history through the forty years that have passed since the victorious foundation made during the Second World War was lost. On this forty-year foundation, the kingdom of heaven can now begin on earth. The recurring phrase in the Family Pledge is, "Our family...by centering on true love." You recite this phrase repeatedly throughout the Family Pledge. "True love" here refers to God's love. It means that we are connected to true life and true lineage by the true love of God and True Parents. (266-143, 1994.12.22)

31 Previously we recited My Pledge, but from now on we will recite the Family Pledge. In history there never was any such thing as the Family Pledge. This is an amazing fact. Now that the forty-year course of restoration through indemnity has been brought to an end, the time has come when the world can move centered on me, Rev. Moon. This is why the Family Pledge has emerged. The worldwide unified Christian cultural sphere established after the Second World War was destroyed, but now centered on me it has been restored, although conditionally, based on my victorious worldwide foundation. (263-110, 1994.08.21)

32 The term "Family Pledge" has appeared for the first time in history. The Family Pledge was established because the family was lost by a man and a woman. Therefore God and humankind must establish the model family that can be welcomed based on the original standard of the family that has nothing to do with the Fall. Unless we do, we cannot build the heavenly kingdom on earth and in heaven, which is composed of families that God can rejoice with and dwell with on earth and in heaven. Hence it was inevitable that this pledge would be established. (274-115, 1995.10.29)

33 The objective of the Family Pledge is to create the backbone of the family. What are we trying to do through the Family Pledge? We are trying to attend the Heavenly Parent, who is like the backbone of the family. If we find His true love and love Him, God will come and visit our family. We should bring our mind and body into oneness and become couples whose minds and bodies are united. Then God

will come and visit us. If our mind and body are fighting, God will never come to us, not ever. True love cannot exist under such circumstances. (386-177, 2002.07.17)

The mindset of a church leader

34 A witnessing leader or pastor is like the high priest of his or her region. A church leader prays for the people, even losing sleep. As the high priest makes offerings in order to save the people, the church leader must toil and offer full devotion. To find the necessary answers, the church leader must become one with God. He or she does so by becoming a sacrificial offering. Church members are not the sacrificial offerings; the pastor is. From now on your leadership should be comprehensive, not just intellectual. Members are the flesh and pastors are the bones. The flesh should cover the bones well so they will not be exposed. (9-080, 1960.04.12)

35 After working hard for a public purpose, I fall asleep without realizing how tired I am. Then in the morning I wake up totally refreshed. From this experience I realize, "Ah, this is the principled way to live a life for Heaven!" If I were to think, "I slept only three and a half hours last night when I should have slept at least six hours," my entire body would feel as if it weighed a thousand or even ten thousand pounds and would feel pains all over. That is why I tell you not to have such thoughts. (044-161, 1971.05.06)

36 When I stand before a person who is totally devoted, I am at a loss for words. As the leader of the Unification Church, when I am considering which of two people is better, I do not consider which of them is better-looking, but rather which has a better inner orientation. I examine whether their mind is public or personal. If you walk the path of public life embracing this principle, you will never perish. Therefore be mindful of how you manage things, how you treat people, and how you attend Heaven. (31-261, 1970.06.04)

37 When you take your first step in the morning, you should consider whether or not it is for a public purpose. And when you go to bed after finishing your daily work, you should reflect on whether the day was spent for a public purpose or a personal one. Furthermore, at the end of the year you should look back at your past year, or at your entire life up to that point, and reflect on whether you led a public life or lived just for yourself. It is based on this criterion that life and death are weighed on the scale of judgment. Keep this principle in mind, so that at each step on your journey you will exercise good judgment and keep to the public path. (039-076, 1971.01.09)

38 Once you take up a responsibility, the next thing is to fight and struggle. You must persevere in that struggle even to the death, saying, "I am willing to give up my life." In your lifetime, you should lay the foundation to bring at least three people who oppose you to natural submission, and in this battle you may not use any means or methods that are not acceptable to God. Also, in the service of God's Will you should not lead the life of a taker. Rather, you stand in the position to give. (14-013, 1964.04.19)

39 When you become a leader, you have to stand truly in the position of a doctor who tries to cure a patient's illness. If an ill person's spiritual situation begins to deteriorate, you have to make an effort to cure the person's heart, shedding tears day or night, oblivious to time. That is a spiritual leader. How many nights have you stayed up trying to save lives? How busy have you been trying to save lives? When you go to the spirit world, such deeds will become the objects of commendation. The barometer of character will reflect them. (69-165, 1973.10.31)

40 Even if a member falls away, you must never be discouraged. A very interesting phenomenon occurs when a member falls away; someone else who resembles that person joins the church. He or she has a similar personality, similar speech and even a similar way of walking. From every angle, the new person who joins bears an amazing resemblance to the person who fell away, and yet is much better. When you see such a phenomenon, you can understand that sincere investment of devotion is never lost. This is absolutely true. When you become acquainted with someone, you must not think the relationship ends at simple acquaintance. Especially if you met that person based on Heaven's guidance, you should never forget him or her. If the person stops coming to the church, you must not cut off or malign him or her. Even if the person falls away, never abandon that person. (42-163, 1971.03.04)

41 Before you speak or teach, first you must feel God's heart. Do not just talk. Instead, put God's heart first before your words. You should always be humble. When you give a sermon on Sunday you should do so with the intense feeling and focus of woman in labor. You need to direct all your attention to it. Standing behind the podium, you need to feel like a pregnant woman on her way to the delivery room. If you reach that level of heart, you need no other preparation. The issue is not the content of your sermon or how well you speak. The issue is whether your heart has reached that level. (96-168, 1978.01.03)

42 During the sermon, a boundary line is drawn that determines whether someone is bound for heaven or hell. Suppose a person comes to our church thinking, "I've

always wondered about the Unification Church. Let's see how it is!" But if the sermon is disappointing, he or she may think, "What kind of sermon was that?" The sermon has, in effect, cut that person's lifeline. Therefore you should regard giving the sermon as a momentous matter, even more so than a judge rendering a verdict in court. You have to understand that as a preacher you are in a fateful position that can make many dozens or hundreds of people stand or fall. If you are a leader with a certain responsibility, you should not neglect it and thereby cause your subordinates to disrespect you. You have to invest your efforts so this never becomes the case. That is why it is difficult to be the person in charge. It is an extremely daunting position in which everything about your identity is exposed and revealed. (96-169, 1978.01.03)

Section 2. The Meaning of Tithing

1 After you joined the Unification Church, you learned the term "restoration through indemnity" To accomplish restoration through indemnity there must be a sacrificial offering, and in making that offering you must have a heart of devotion. It would be wonderful if you could simply do things the way you think they should be done, but God cannot receive your offering based on how you think it should be made. That will never happen. The offering for the indemnity condition represents your very life; it is sacrificed in your place. Therefore you need to become one with that offering, and love that offering. When you make an offering and that offering is sacrificed, you should shed tears in your heart, feeling the same pain it does. This can be likened to Abraham offering his son as a sacrifice. You too ought to present your offering with a heart so connected to it that the link cannot be severed. You need to make a sacrificial offering from this position. That is why you should offer what is most precious to you. When you make a material offering, if you offer something used or left over, you will be punished. In that case, it would be better if you had not made the offering at all. (63-338, 1972.10.22)

2 If we look into the background of tithing, it is quite fearful. In biblical verses about tithing, we are told to offer God one-tenth of what we earn. Those of you who question tithing, please know that offering only one-tenth of one's income is as if one offered everything. Suppose you want to put on a feast to celebrate your parent's sixtieth birthday or the king's birthday. You would prepare a whole cow or pig, the best you could find, and offer all of it at the feast. Yet would they eat it all? Certainly not! Of course, they would accept and receive everything, but they could not eat it all. In fact, they would eat very little. Still, offering it sets the condition that they received everything and ate it all. (31-239, 1970.06.04)

3 A tithe means that by offering one- tenth of your material possessions to God, you make a condition equal to having offered all you have. Although you do not offer everything to God, the one-tenth that you offer with sincere devotion nevertheless holds that value. By offering one-tenth as holy, God considers the remaining nine- tenths holy. The person who tithes will never perish. As the days go by, his storeroom will be filled with abundant material blessings. (31-240, 1970.06.04)

4 If you want to make a relationship with God by offering devotion before Him, the offering you make must be totally pure and brand-new. You cannot make a devotional offering with leftovers. Thus when you tithe, your tithe should be pure, something in which you invested your utmost heart and mind. That is a sacrificial offering. A sacrificial offering should be pure. If you are to offer your son, you must offer your best son. This is because your offering represents yourself. (048-085, 1971.09.05)

5 If you tithe with sincere devotion, you will never starve to death. Your descendants will never suffer for want of material things. This is principled. However, you must invest devotion in your tithe. This is the essence of faith. Offering your tithe casually is not acceptable. Your offering represents your own life, so you have to offer what is most precious to you. The most precious thing to a human being is his or her life. Hence a sacrificial offering should be made as if you were offering your own life. That is why, by offering material things for the sake of restoration through indemnity, your sins can be washed away. (63-338, 1972.10.22)

6 The number ten belongs to God. Human beings own the numbers up to nine. The number nine has been considered a bad number because all the numbers up through nine are under Satan's dominion. Thus today, if we return the number nine to God and connect it to God on earth where Satan is the lord, then God can have dominion over us. In this way, God can restore all the numbers up through ten. Thus if you believe in God and bring the number nine to Him, all possessions within the realm up through the number nine can be separated from Satan's realm. That is how the term "tithe" came to exist. (150-300, 1961.04.15)

7 God does not need money. Money is needed only as an object for making conditions so that fallen human beings can form a relationship with Him. Is it for God's sake that you are making donations? God does not need money. Any time, twenty-four hours a day and seven days a week, God can make as much gold and as many diamonds as He wants, so why would He need money? God needs it only as a condition by which to save all of you. So instead of thinking that you are making a

donation for God, think that you are donating for your nation or for the world. You are offering donations to fulfill the purpose of saving others. You are not offering them for God's sake. (126-123, 1983.04.12)

8 It is by no means easy to nurture another human life. You cannot do it without devoting yourself. You cannot do it with things you have already used. Nor can you do it with leftovers from the food you have eaten. You must firmly reject that concept. This is even more the case if an offering is for God. You should offer the first portion of anything to God. You ought to offer to God what is pure. He will not be with you if you offer something impure. He will not be with you if what you offer is not brand-new. You must not use leftovers to make sacrificial offerings, because leftovers are defiled. Anyone to whom God gives special grace would immediately recognize this. That is also why I discourage you from going to defiled places. (030-133, 1970.03.21)

9 If after offering devotions you receive a special blessing, you should always offer a donation of gratitude to God. Heaven does not want petty cash. It must be money for which you invested your heart and mind with devotion. You should not just casually donate the money you find in your pocket. Before you donate, you should keep it with you at least three days as a way of sanctifying the money. You should invest your life and assets. I offered all my possessions to God. With the things I offered created a bridge for all the material things in the world to cross over to God's side. Anyone who does the same will prosper for eternity. That person's descendants will be blessed. (166-319, 1987.06.14)

10 When you handle donations and offerings that were given with heart, if you do not recognize their value they will judge you. Even a king can perish if he errs in his conduct by mistreating someone who is dedicated to God. By mistreating that person, he will be considered a traitor to Heaven. For this reason, I do not treat lightly anyone who makes devotional offerings. (018-143, 1967.06.04)

11 Whenever a special event is celebrated, on that day you need to bring a gift and offer it at a place that displays the Unification Church flag and True Parents' picture. You should dedicate the commemorative gift on behalf of your people, nation and family. This is not something for me to take for myself but rather to give back later to your country and descendants. Whenever you celebrate a joyful occasion or throw a banquet for a special event, you must prepare something with sincere devotion and dedicate it to God as an expression of your heart to repay Him. That is a life of attending Heaven. (355-179, 2001.10.04)

Section 3. The Practice of Hoondokhae

1 From now on, you should do hoondokhae. You need to buy books for it and establish a regular schedule. Your family members should gather for hoondokhae. Even when I am alone on a mountain, when it is time to do hoondokhae, I do it by myself. When it is hoondokhae time, if you are sleeping you should wake up and do it. In the future, God will not treat people who are ignorant of the Principle as His true people. (614-291, 2009.08.14)

2 My words will connect you with me. The more deeply you understand them, the higher the level you will reach in offering your devotions and the more the heart of God's love can dwell within you. That is why I am asking you to do hoondokhae every day. The person who says the taste of hoondokhae is better than food, that hoondokhae is better than making love, will grow infinitely. These words are a collection of the serious and intense moments of my life that were proclaimed before heaven and earth. (308-212, 1999.01.05)

3 No one knows the value of God's words as much as I do. Up to this time, all these words were veiled, but you should know that I had to overcome life and death situations in order to deliver these words. They are imbued with God's heart, spoken during the most serious of times. Once I start speaking about the hidden stories behind them, the spirits who were moved in the early days to be involved in those events will be connected to us. Then you will feel overwhelmed by emotion and receive enormous grace. By reading these words we again recollect those stories, and this can awaken those spirits who worked before and inspire them to continue working with us. Then the cooperation of the spirit world working behind the scenes in our time can result in works many tens and hundreds of times more powerful than before. (327-248, 2000.07.30)

The origin and meaning of hoondokhae

4 The mother and father of a family should do pledge service and set an example for their children so they too will be eager to attend. When children see their parents eagerly awaiting this time with joy, they should be able to say, "We want to learn what our mother and father are learning!" We parents should leave such an example for them. Children should also see their parents hold hoondokhae gatherings. The words shared there are not available anywhere else. Since I am the one who inaugurated hoondokhae, they exist only within the Unification Church. You should establish the tradition that you enjoy attending hoondokhae so much that you forget to eat, and that you would pass up meeting a guest or anyone else if

it interfered with hoondokhae. This is how to put your family on the right path. You have to establish such a tradition for your sons and daughters. (345-306, 2001.06.24)

5 The words are to flow. If you stop their flow you will have a cross to bear. They will become a burden for you and cause you to collapse. Hence you should enable them to flow to your mother, your father, your cousins, your neighborhood and so on. The more they flow, the more they will expand, and by your results they will become a huge river. Then wherever you are, with these words you will be influential enough to make a great impact on your area. (435-215, 2004.02.05)

6 The Chinese character hoon (訓) of hoondokhae consists of two characters combined: “words” (言) and “stream” (川), which mean “the words that flow.” Therefore these words do not die. If water remains still for just one week, it will begin to stagnate. Therefore water needs to flow. If a father hears these words, he should teach them to his sons and daughters. If a grandfather hears these words, he should teach them to his grandchildren. If a mayor hears these words, he should then teach them to all the citizens of his town. They should flow like water, from higher ground to lower. Hoondokhae is the eternal business of sharing God’s words. The Chinese character dok (讀) consists of two characters combined: “words” (言) and “sell” (賣). It means to sell the words. Even if you give these words to a thousand people, you will not suffer any loss. This is an eternal business. The money you gather will eventually run out, but these words will never run out. (435-216, 2004.02.05)

7 The Chinese character hoon (訓) consists of two characters joined together: “words” (言) and “stream” (川). The stream is water. Water flows. Water lives only when it flows. As the character hoon symbolizes the Word as water, the words need to constantly flow in order to remain alive. When water is still it stagnates. As water flows from higher to lower ground, the words need to be passed along over and over. To be clear, water has to flow; water that does not flow becomes murky. Pure spirits dwell in clear water. Hoondokhae is like water. If you trap water, it will turn foul. The character dok (讀) combines the characters for “words” (言) and “sell” (賣). Accordingly you should give or “sell” the words as if you were a salesperson. This meaning lies within the word hoondok. (371-188, 2002.02.27)

8 When you share my words with others, you become their ancestor. Convey my words to people who are enslaved to the fallen world, and to the spirits who have fallen into hell. Then this will happen. If you do not know my words well, buy a

collection of my speeches and share it with them. The more you share the words, the greater wealth you will accumulate. By conveying the words to people, you become their eternal ancestor. Your heavenly fortune, position and rank in heaven will be determined according to how often you shared the words and how much effort you made to re-create people into citizens of the heavenly kingdom. That is why I am teaching you this incredible truth. The words of hoondokhae are the words I have spoken, but they are not my own words; they are the words of heaven and earth. (435-217, 2004.02.05)

9 It may seem as if I speak at random, but in fact my words fully explain the Principle. Before long I will have to go to the spirit world. That is why I am now reviewing the content of the words I spoke with all my heart and devotion over the course of the past fifty years, to evaluate how they will impact the world after I pass. I am the champion of hoondokhae. From whom did its words originate? They originated from God. Since I know this truth, I cannot take hoondokhae lightly. (321-285, 2000.05.09)

How to do hoondokhae

10 Prepare in advance the hoondokhae content relevant to each of the 365 days in a year. A unified hoondokhae program must be implemented throughout the whole world. You should be able to say, "The hoondokhae reading for today is..." Whether eating or occupied with work, whenever you have the opportunity, you should discuss and converse on the content for that day. (314-038, 1999.12.30)

11 From this time forward, hoondokhae should be the ultimate form of education. You must read the content again and again. Mark the words by numbering them as you read, so the next time around you can read important parts that previously took you one hour in just thirty minutes. This can be done easily. This is how you should educate people to cultivate their spirituality through hoondokhae. The books I leave behind are your teacher. I am telling you to study them, not just read them. (291-146, 1998.03.06)

12 Do hoondokhae during your lunch break or whenever you have spare time. You should read first, and then have the group read out loud in unison, keeping the same pace. Train yourself by reading at home. Then you can keep the same pace at church when you lead the group to read together in unison. Husband and wife as a rule do it together at home. If the husband attends hoondokhae service at church, he should tell his wife which part he read that day. Then she should read that same part so they can keep on the same page. (314-038, 1999.12.30)

13 How can you get the maximum benefit from doing hoondokhae? After passing out the hoondokhae books, begin by having one person read aloud. Then have the reader call on someone else to read, and so on. Train them to do it this way. If ten people gather to do hoondokhae, make sure that one-third of them asks questions on the parts they are interested in. If there is not enough time, allow just a few people to ask questions and then discuss each one. This system of learning is more effective than a lecture. If you read a hoondokhae book this way three times, you will clearly understand its content. (296-330, 1998.11.18)

14 When doing hoondokhae, it is better that the participants take turns reading a portion of the book rather than just one person reading it to the group. Decide up to what point each person in the group will read, and then designate the next person to continue. While reading the book, each reader should be moved by his or her own voice. If readers cannot feel moved by themselves, they need more practice. Therefore anyone who may be designated to read should practice reading the book at least ten times before reading in public. I do the same thing. When I have a speaking tour, although I know the content of the text I wrote, I still make the effort to saturate the words with a prayerful heart. (296-331, 1998.11.18)

15 From now on, whenever you do hoondokhae, do it in a group and share the reading aloud among multiple readers. One person should read one section and then designate another person to read the next section by calling out his or her name. Establish the tradition of calling each person to read next by name. You can address important points or questions the group wants to raise. You can set the standard, saying, "In today's hoondokhae the content to be studied is this, and we must absolutely maintain such-and- such as our principle." (297-110, 1998.11.19)

16 I have lived according to the Will, trying to build the kingdom of heaven on earth and in heaven by fulfilling the dutiful way of loyalty and filial piety and the dutiful way of saints and divine sons and daughters. This has brought me into a precious relationship with God. In order that you do not fall short of that standard, each of you must establish and uphold it within your family. Only by doing so will you return to the Garden of Eden, where God will allow you to be in the realm of His direct dominion. Only this standard will spread out in thousands, even tens of thousands of branches and remain forever. In order to bequeath the tradition of the True Parents, I started this tradition of hoondokhae. Until I did so, you did not know anything about the True Parents' situation. (289-307, 1998.02.02)

CHAPTER 3 Ceremonies and Rituals

Section 1. The Blessing Ceremony

1 The Blessing is not just for people. Nor is it just for heaven and earth. God bestowed the Blessing by investing everything from the foundation of His internal heart. If that Blessing had been realized exactly as He had planned, the glory of victory would have filled heaven and earth. Amid such a world, God would have rejoiced in the families of people who embodied Him and fully inherited His heart. Upon establishment of that family-level foundation, humanity would have accepted the holy enterprise of Heaven as its own holy enterprise, and people would have built the eternal and infinite blessed land of happiness. This was God's ideal and desire. (12-279, 1963.07.26)

Significance and value of the Blessing

2 You need to know how amazing blessed families are. The Blessing is to perfect the individual, to perfect goodness, and to multiply children. It is to perfect people as individuals, perfect their relationships as husband and wife, and multiply goodness through their children. It is the core, fundamental requisite for all people. (081-316, 1975.12.29)

3 If Adam and Eve had not fallen, they would have reached the focal point, the ideal intersection of vertical and horizontal love. Through their union, they would have attained total oneness and harmony. Besides instituting the love of the true ancestors of humanity, they would have been the starting point of true life and true lineage. Their wedding ceremony was to have been not just for themselves as human beings; it was also to have been the wedding ceremony for God. God would have entered their hearts, and the external God and internal God would have united as one. That was to have been the original wedding ceremony, having nothing to do with the Fall. What I am saying here is revolutionary in the world of religion. (223-267, 1991.11.12)

4 What is the Blessing? If you consider man as the East and woman as the West, then the Blessing is the union of East and West at a central point on a horizontal plane. What is the power that unites them? It is love. Man and woman were created to unite as one through love. That is why, after they reach maturity, a man and a woman find their way to the place where they can attain union. That place is their central point. That central point is where God can vertically descend and dwell. When a man and a woman place God's love at their center, where His vertical line joins their horizontal line to form a 90-degree angle, they become one at the center of a 360-degree circle. If our first ancestors had become one based on God's

love, they would have become God's bodies. Who are Adam and Eve? They are the substantial bodies of God. That is why, in the biblical book of First Corinthians it is written, "Do you not know that you are God's temple..." (1 Cor. 3:16) Our bodies are God's temples. If even fallen human beings can be His temples, then the original substantiation of God's duality, the unfallen Adam and Eve, would naturally have become the original temple, the dwelling place of God in the human world. (143-236, 1986.03.19)

5 God has the dual characteristics of plus and minus. When God's dual characteristics are divided, the plus characteristic is manifested as a man, Adam, and the minus characteristic is manifested as a woman, Eve. When Adam and Eve unite together to embody God's oneness, their union is substantiated in their children. In this manner, the first, second and third generations are formed with God at their center. Within these three generations, problems arose in the second generation, that is, the generation of Adam and Eve. They failed to become one under God's love. If Adam and Eve had united in God's love, they would have established the bond by which God could have come to dwell with them. Then their children as well would have been connected to the standard of love, and formed their own relationship with God. This is called the Blessing. (32-239, 1970.07.19)

6 The marriage Blessing was instituted as God's Blessing for the liquidation of debts. Through the Blessing instituted in this age, all debts are liquidated for the first time in history. In other words, although formerly we were destined to die, all our debts are remitted through the Blessing as a condition. You should, therefore, feel that the Blessing of the Unification Church is more precious than all the good things that have been done since the beginning of history, piled up in one big heap. You should feel that the connection of love, life and lineage you have acquired through your bond with the True Parents is so precious that it cannot be exchanged for anything else. That is why you should invest everything you own—your mind, your body, even if you have to sell your property—for the Blessing. (216-222, 1991.04.01)

7 The Blessing of the Unification Church is performed so that God's incorporeal life, love and ideal can be manifested in form. To put it another way, the Blessing is to connect us to God's life, love and ideal. That being the case, where does God rejoice? He rejoices at the place of the Blessing. When God rejoices, His life, love and ideal all have a livelier bounce. (091-235, 1977.02.20)

The Engagement Ceremony and the Holy Wine Ceremony

8 At the Engagement Ceremony for the Blessing, I raised my hands and pronounced a benediction. With that benediction, I could incorporate the women of the world into Adam's family, in the place of Eve who had been separated from that family. I could thereby form a conditional bond of blood with them. That is the change of lineage. Henceforth, each woman of the world who has gone to the spirit world should attend me as her elder brother, husband and father, centered on True Mother. (314-141, 2000.01.02)

9 If the God-centered True Parents had emerged in the Garden of Eden, they would have bequeathed the Blessing on behalf of God to their descendants for generations to come. If only they had believed in God, those True Parents would have inherited the Blessing from Him, and you, in turn, would have inherited it from them. Accordingly, I am bestowing this Blessing on you. By inheriting it, your sons and daughters will be born in the new eternal realm of victory, not the fallen realm. They can become sons and daughters who go up instead of going down. (101-299, 1978.11.07)

10 What are the conditions to receive the Blessing? To reach perfection, you cannot pass through the formation, growth and completion stages all at once. That is the Principle. You receive the Blessing at the completion level of the growth stage. Afterwards, you still need to follow the seven-year courses: a seven-year course before marriage, a seven-year course after marriage, and another seven-year course centered on your family. You need to go through these three seven-year periods for a total of twenty-one years. Upon the foundation you make by going through this twenty-one-year course, I should be able to achieve the foundation for a nation. I must reach that level. Now we have to conduct some ceremonies. First comes the Engagement Ceremony, next comes the Ceremony for the Restoration of Eve and then the Ceremony for the Restoration of Adam. These ceremonies are to restore the heart and change the lineage. (101-299, 1978.11.07)

11 The Holy Wine Ceremony is the ritual of infusing God's body into your body with new love. Since you have only one body, you need to transform it with God's love. This is the meaning of the Holy Wine Ceremony. The Bible records that at the Last Supper, Jesus blessed bread and wine and gave them to his disciples. He referred to the bread as "my body" and the wine as "my blood of the covenant, which is poured out for many for the forgiveness of sins." (Matt. 26:26-28) Likewise, it is only by inheriting the new lineage originating from God's substantial self that you can be cleansed of the original sin. You cannot participate in the Blessing without going through this ceremony. The Holy Wine Ceremony is the ceremony to change your lineage. (35-245, 1970.10.19)

12 You inherited a lineage defiled by the Fall; therefore, you need to change your lineage. Without doing that you cannot rid yourself of original sin, and without ridding yourself of original sin you cannot rise to the level where you can receive the Blessing and become true children. That is how the Principle operates. The Holy Wine Ceremony is the ceremony to change your lineage, and it thereby removes the original sin that occurred at the Fall. In other words, it is a ceremony to transform your flesh and blood. (35-210, 1970.10.30)

13 The fact that you participated in the Holy Wine Ceremony means that you received the blood of the Blessing. It means that you are joined in a relationship with True Parents through their love, life and lineage. Consequently, you have become True Parents' kin. It is a ceremony of Blessing when my blood is infused into a person who otherwise would be destined to die. In other words, my blood is transfused into that person so that that person carries my blood. It is only when you drink the holy wine that I can bless you. In distributing the blood of the True Parents, the order of the Holy Wine Ceremony is that the woman drinks the holy wine first. Likewise, when receiving the Blessing, the woman precedes the man. The woman drinks half the cup of holy wine first. (457-181, 2004.07.03)

14 The Holy Wine Ceremony is a ceremony of restoration through indemnity. For this ceremony, you men begin in the position of the archangel. That is why you are supposed to offer your lineage and everything else. Only then can it be a condition for restoration. I then conduct the ceremony through Mother. You are in the same situation. By going through the Holy Wine Ceremony, you assume a restored position that is the same as that of the Parents. The woman receives the holy wine first. She bows to True Father, receives the holy wine, and drinks half the contents of the cup. Then the man bows to the woman. While the woman is drinking her half, the man keeps his head bowed. At that time, the woman is in the position of mother. Her position is the same as that of True Mother. So when the woman drinks her half of the wine and hands the remaining half to her husband-to-be, and he drinks it, they are bonded. Thus the man can rise to an equal footing with the woman. (113-309, 1981.05.10)

15 Since Eve fell because of the archangel, in the course of restoration Eve needs to stand before Heaven through Adam and then restore the archangel. This is the purpose of going through the Holy Wine Ceremony. When the ceremony is conducted, I offer the holy wine first to the woman. That part of the ceremony is to restore the lost Eve. Through the Holy Wine Ceremony, she becomes one with me in spirit, heart and body. It is an absolute, internal covenant. (46-234, 1971.08.15)

16 Holy wine is not easily made. I am saying that wine cannot become holy wine just as it is. Holy wine is made in the presence of God, Satan and numerous angels in the spirit world. It contains twenty-one elements that you are unaware of. The wine contains every element necessary for the process of restoring humankind and the world of creation. When I made the holy wine, spirits came from the spirit world and begged to be allowed to drink a cup. They knew that by drinking the holy wine they could be restored, so they came to me as a group and asked if they too could be given the same benefit. They knew that I could do such a thing. However, I am not here for the spirit world; I am here for the physical world. That is why I told those spirits, "You need to wait," and I first gave the wine to you who worked hard for the Will. (46-234, 1971.08.15)

17 The holy wine needs to contain ingredients that symbolize the love of the Parents. It should also contain something that symbolizes the blood of the Parents. Hence when you drink it, you become one with the love and blood of the Parents. These are what constitute the holy wine. The holy wine is made with ingredients that symbolize everything - the land, the sea and the sky. It contains three kinds of wine. It also contains other elements symbolizing all things of creation. Drinking the wine signifies being born anew spiritually and physically. Without this ceremony you cannot remove the original sin or change your lineage. And without changing your lineage, you cannot reach the standard of perfection and become one with God's love. The Holy Wine Ceremony indemnifies all this. (35-211, 1970.10.18)

18 At the time you received the Blessing, you participated in a ceremony to change your lineage. Twenty-one consecrated elements were required to make the holy wine. They included airborne fruit, fruit borne on trees, fruit on the ground and fruit underground, plus the most precious elements from the mineral kingdom, plant kingdom and animal kingdom. All these elements had to be free of any conditions for Satan's accusation. After the holy wine was thus made, it had to be stored for seven months, without any problems occurring during that time period. It was not simple to make this wine. (215-111, 1991.02.06)

The Blessing Ceremony, the Indemnity Stick Ceremony, and the Three-Day Ceremony

19 In Eden, God was unable to conduct the wedding ceremony of Adam and Eve. They married of their own accord and thus connected to Satan's lineage instead of God's lineage. The Blessing Ceremony uproots this and reconnects Adam and Eve to God's lineage. That is why through the Blessing Ceremony we receive the citizenship that enables us to live in our original homeland, the liberated kingdom

of heaven in heaven where there is no Fall, and to attend God as our Father. (522-254, 2006.03.30)

20 After the Engagement Ceremony comes the Holy Wine Ceremony and then the Holy Wedding Ceremony. The Engagement Ceremony and Holy Wine Ceremony are not performed according to any precedents. They are required ceremonies that symbolically reenact all the details of the Fall and indemnify them. At what stage did Adam and Eve fall? They fell at the engagement stage. In other words, they fell in the process of growing up, on the way to the goal of perfection. The purpose of their engagement was marriage. However, when they were still engaged, Adam and Eve wrongfully married; that was the Fall. Therefore, to indemnify that, we need to deny that marriage, rectify it and go beyond it centered on God. In denying it, we cannot do it in just any way. We cannot do it unless we follow a course that is the reverse of the Fall. (35-215, 1970.10.19)

21 The Holy Water Ceremony is also a ritual of the Blessing. It is the same as baptism. Although Jesus was baptized, he had no Holy Wedding Ceremony. He passed away without being able to marry. He had neither a wife nor children. He had no family of his own. However, I have labored for this day, risking my life in the process. (522-156, 2006.03.28)

22 Blessed members of the Unification Church participate in the Holy Wedding Ceremony, but it is a wedding only within the church. It is not a ceremony recognized by the nation, world or cosmos. That is why we should have not only a church-level Blessing but also a national-level Blessing. Furthermore, we will go through a world-level Blessing and then participate in the Ceremony of Eternal Blessing in the kingdom of heaven. Only then can we finally return to the original world. If you participate in the Blessing of the Unification Church simply for your own convenience, and secretly without my knowledge, it is not effective. You need to go through the national-level Blessing, for which you should disclose all of your personal history. Next you have to go through the world-level Blessing. Then, after going to the spirit world, you need to go through a great admission ceremony and the registration ceremony. Next we have to complete the organization of the twelve tribes. Finally, after True Parents have settled in the other world, with God as the center, all of the world's people will take their places and sit down in order. (185-036, 1989.01.01)

23 When True Parents and their sons and daughters are united as one, that family will have established the four- position foundation. Completion of the four-position foundation means that God will be able to realize the ideal of creation that He has

desired for six thousand years. Once that foundation is established, there will be a realm where God recognizes those who have fulfilled it and promises to make them citizens of the kingdom of heaven and members of the family of that kingdom. What the Unification Church focuses on the most is the Blessing. The Blessing is for the family. What is the kingdom of heaven like? It is the family in heaven. We need to realize such a family; that is the kingdom of heaven. Thus, those who are unable to create that kingdom in their own family cannot enter the kingdom of heaven in heaven. (158-274, 1967.12.29)

24 What is the Indemnity Stick Ceremony for? Adam and Eve fell by misusing their lower parts. During the Indemnity Stick Ceremony, both wife and husband strike each other's buttocks as hard as they can, saying they will never fall again. We do this so that they will never again misuse that part of the body. Likewise, when the Israelites made a pledge, they placed a hand under their thigh. They also conducted circumcision. When a son was born, his male part was bled on the eighth day after birth. This ritual was instituted because the male reproductive organ had been misused. Because the seed had been damaged, the ritual of circumcision was established to change the seed. All these are conditions to determine ownership. (273-316, 1995.10.29)

25 Tamar risked her life to continue God's heavenly way. Also, Jacob wrestled with the angel at the risk of his life. Although the angel struck his hip and dislocated it, he did not let go of the angel all through the night. The hip had to be struck. The Fall was brought about by wrong use of the hips. That is why the Unification Church conducts the Indemnity Stick Ceremony after the Blessing. In that ceremony, the hips are struck because they were misused. Our ancestors representing the three ages engaged in improper love and became entangled in it, and we need to clear that up. (214-226, 1991.02.02)

26 Why do we have of the Indemnity Stick Ceremony? When we read the Bible, we learn about circumcision, which is a condition of indemnity. Adam's family broke apart because of wrongly directed love. What is baptism? It refers to the time of Noah. The reproductive organs had been defiled, and Noah's time was when they were indemnified. At the time of Noah, these organs were subjected to judgment by water. In short, they were washed. However, the washing was incomplete. They had to be "baptized," but that was only a condition. Once those defiled bodies were washed and the defiled spot indemnified, the time of Jacob was to have been the time of settlement. For this purpose, Jacob had to live a life that would restore love. He had to begin the change of lineage, change of ownership, and change of the

realm of heart. The chosen people got their start when their lineage was transformed. (284-209, 1997.04.17)

27 Blessed members of the Unification Church go through the ceremony to change their lineage, followed by the Indemnity Stick Ceremony and the Three-Day Ceremony. Satan cannot intrude in those ceremonies. Now that the True Parents opened the gates of the kingdom of heaven by the law of God and proclaimed the liberation of humanity, Satan, who exercised his power at the completion level of the growth stage, can no longer interfere. That is why blessed families need to go through the ceremony to convert their lineage. (235-215, 1992.09.20)

28 If you do not go through the Three- Day Ceremony, you will have nothing to do with True Parents' lineage. You will be nothing but a spectator who has come within the fenced area. Only after you complete the Three-Day Ceremony can you dress in holy robes and be included in True Parents' lineage. Otherwise, although you may have eaten a piece of the wedding cake, watched the celebration from beginning to end and enjoyed yourself with your friends, you will end up being apart. You will not become one with True Parents' lineage. Once you are apart from it, you will remain apart for all eternity. Lineage is such a fearful thing. (591-296, 2008.06.01)

29 Until now, we have thought ill of erotic love stories because love organs became palaces of wickedness. They became like weapons causing threefold destruction: they became a palace in which love, life and lineage were destroyed. Because they became the palaces that plunge everything in heaven and earth into a world of total darkness, they are called by the worst of all bad words and the most vulgar of all vulgar words. Nevertheless, in Korean, the term ssang in ssangsori (a vulgar word) is not a bad word. In fact, it is the very word ssang that is in ssangssang, or pair. "Pair" is what the word implies. The word ssangsori refers to two people making love, and that should not be something bad. Originally it was a holy word. Millions of generations of your ancestors lived by clinging to the love organs; likewise, Adam and Eve also lived by clinging to them. Woman lived by clinging to the reproductive organ of man, and man lived by clinging to that of woman. Despite this, they did not know the preciousness of those love organs. The woman's love organ is the subject partner of all subject partners, for it controls the life of the man. (238-034, 1992.11.19)

30 When we study the structure of our bodies, we can see that the male and female reproductive organs are set in the most protected area of the body. That is because these organs are the most precious. The wind may blow or something may attack us, but they cannot invade that part of the body. What is more, the woman's

organ is less prone to invasion than the man's. The words I use when speaking about these organs are not vulgar; rather, they are sacred words. If you contend that the words for what was considered most precious from the time of our ancestors are vulgar words, then you are implying that our ancestors up to now have all been bad. You are saying that even the first ancestors, Adam and Eve, were bad. Because our first ancestors formed a ssang (a pair), such words are termed ssangsori (a vulgar word). If they had originally placed true love at the center of their relationship, our ancestors would have set down their roots there and grown into a sacred tree. Then the words about love organs would have been considered good words and good sounds, and they would not have been given coarse treatment. Instead, we would have attended them with care. Therefore, before we make love, we need to offer a bow before our ancestors and say, "Thank you for giving us this day, which is a very special day." That is why, when we perform the three-day ceremony, we begin by offering a bow. We offer that bow as a simple ritual representing all bows. After completing the Three-Day Ceremony, we are free to love. We can make love as often as we desire and in any way we please. (238-035, 1992.11.19)

31 Since the Blessing is now available for everyone, we should give the Blessing to as many people as possible. We need to bless everyone, without missing even one person. Before I depart this earth, you have to make sure that there is no one left unblessed in the spirit world. The Blessing did not exist in the past, but now it has become a reality. Before I pass on, both earth and heaven should be filled with people who are blessed. Otherwise, all the fallen bloodlines that were sown by fallen Adam will not be eradicated. (301-212, 1999.05.01)

The Eighth Day Dedication Ceremony

32 On the eighth day after the birth of our child, we offer the Dedication Ceremony. We say that the number eight is a central number. Since it is a central number, it needs to be fulfilled by the man and woman, and also the grandfather and grandmother. In short, there should be the four directions in three stages: grandfather and grandmother, man and woman, and the son or daughter to be dedicated. These three stages cannot be without a center. Yet not just anyone can stand in the central position and be part of the three stages. (546-160, 2006.11.27)

33 Jesus passed away at the end of the three-year period of his public ministry, but the Unification Church is continuing his mission of laying the foundation for the kingdom of heaven on earth. At the time of the Dedication Ceremony of my first son, I gave members three kinds of gifts as a condition of three sacrificial offerings,

and fed them with seaweed soup, rice and milk. That period of three years was the period to set up the four-position foundation, which Jesus was unable to establish. If Jesus had brought Judaism under him and made Rome submit to him, he would not have died on the cross. I have achieved victory on the first stage. Then, to establish God's citizens and sovereignty, I gave awards to three women and one man in recognition of their contributions. (13-084, 1963.10.20)

34 This morning we held a ceremony to celebrate God's Day. Before that we performed a Dedication Ceremony. At this time I have mobilized the blessed wives, whom you love the most and who serve as the foundation of heart in your families. Nevertheless, the fact that you did not oppose the mobilization or demonstrate against it is a great honor to me. That is how, with my family at the center, all of you were able to set a victorious foundation to connect all families in unity when you go to the frontline to meet people. Thereby, my family was finally able to establish the victorious condition to be offered to God. That is how we were able to conduct the ceremony to celebrate God's Day on the second floor, and also hold my family's Dedication Ceremony. Therefore, we could bestow blessings even on the infants. However, even when this Dedication Ceremony was done, I had to establish the proper order. Before Heaven's family came to exist, first there was the angelic world. Therefore, when my family was dedicated to God, at the same time I needed to soothe Jesus' bitter sorrow and fulfill the wishes of people on earth. (37-306, 1971.01.01)

35 Because I have already fought on the individual and family levels, I have reached the standard by which I can work on the national level. But you have yet to reach that standard. You need to be qualified to stand on the national-level foundation. This means you need to have the qualification of a parent standing on the national-level foundation, the qualification of a child standing on the national-level foundation, and the qualification to have dominion over all things while standing on the national-level foundation. On that foundation, you should have dominion over all things. After that, the returning Lord needs to fight to the end according to that standard to establish the world-level standards for parents, for children and for dominion over all things representing the world. At present we are in the process of fighting to reach that goal. That is what you are participating in. Hence, along with the national-level Dedication Ceremony for the family, what other ceremonies should you hold? You should have Dedication Ceremonies for all things and for children. They should be carried out in reverse order. You should have dedication ceremonies for all things, for children, for yourself and for your family. Without carrying these out, you cannot completely indemnify history vertically and horizontally and dedicate it as a victorious sacrificial offering. (47-354, 1971.08.30)

Section 2. The Seonghwa Ceremony

1 Because Unification Church members know that there is a spirit world, they are not afraid of dying. In the Unification Church, a funeral is called the Seunghwa Ceremony. It means to ascend nobly to heaven. The Seunghwa Ceremony is about ascension. To inaugurate it, I had to rejoice more over the death of my son than I did at the birth of my sons and daughters. I had to experience the joy that God would have felt had His princes and princesses been born to Him. If this did not come to pass, my son could not have crossed over the hill of death. At the place where he died, we, his mother and father, had to offer a prayer to celebrate the victory of love, that is, of his having achieved liberation. That is why, when Heung-jin passed on, I did not shed even a single teardrop. Because he had a long way to go in the next world, I held the Unification Ceremony for him. (381-235, 2002.06.14)

The Seunghwa Ceremony and the Seonghwa Ceremony

2 There is a three-year course that had to be established during the forty-year period of the restoration of Canaan on the world level. Through this three-year course we needed to reach the conclusion. The second year was the most dangerous. It was the most difficult time. That is why, at that time, Heung-jin passed on, and I went to prison. As the leader who had been shouldering responsibility for heaven and earth, I was very serious. Satan was the one who caused what happened to Heung-jin. Therefore, I first conducted the Unification Ceremony, then the Seunghwa Ceremony, and then, because I had to send him off as my victorious son, I did not shed any tears until Heung-jin passed on. This is a dreamlike story. However, in this world, things are actually happening just as I prayed and just as I said. Unbelievable events are taking place. (134-129, 1985.02.25)

3 When Heung-jin went to the spirit world, I held the Unification Ceremony and declared the Day of Victory of Love. The love of the Parents treads on Satan's world and overcomes death. That is why, as I viewed Heung-jin dining the three days before his passing, I could not shed any tears. Even in the presence of our dead sons and daughters, we should be able to share God's love and dedicate our love to Him. For this reason I declared the Day of Victory of Love. Because love triumphed over everything, the ceremony is called the Seunghwa Ceremony. (357-033, 2001.10.25)

4 In the Unification Church, we call a funeral the Seunghwa Ceremony. Our birth, the Holy Wedding Ceremony and even the end of our life are to be offered to God. The complete fruit of these is the Seunghwa Ceremony. However, you have no idea what an embarrassment it is for a person to be given a Seunghwa Ceremony and honored with many flowers if they lived a careless life and did as they pleased. Therefore, knowing the Principle, we should lay our foundation by living in accordance with it. (363-200, 2001.12.23)

5 Though Heung-jin passed on alone, I blessed him on earth on the fiftieth day after his passing—just as on the Pentecost fifty days after the passing of Jesus, the 120 believers gathered in the Upper Room were filled with the Holy Spirit, as recorded in the biblical book of Acts (2:1-4). With that, I made up for all the incomplete work that Heung-jin would have done during his lifetime. I could not shed tears as I sent him off. I also made Mother pledge not to express sadness in front of Heung-jin when he departed for the spirit world. If I had not prepared the way for him at the time, he would have gone to the spirit world in tragedy, like other people. He would then have had no relationship with Jesus or the world of the Blessing amid a spirit world rife with divisions. That is why I named his departure the Seunghwa Ceremony. That ceremony I conducted was the original Seunghwa Ceremony. (501-138, 2005.07.17)

6 At Heung-jin's Seunghwa Ceremony, no one was allowed to shed tears. This was especially so for True Parents. Later, in the United States, only after they received the report from Korea that the Seunghwa Ceremony had been performed joyously, they shed tears of blessing as they bid him farewell. In this way, the history that had been divided in tears was brought together in harmony with tears. Therefore, no one should shed tears during a Unification Church Seunghwa Ceremony. If tears are shed, the deceased cannot go the way he or she is supposed to go. (501-139, 2005.07.17)

7 There is no hope without a heart of love. You cannot form bonds with others if you do not have a loving and caring heart. You should even embrace death itself; otherwise you cannot form a relationship with God, who governs the world beyond death. Without transcending death you cannot enter God's world of love. You need to rise above the fallen realm; otherwise you cannot find love no matter how eagerly God awaits your arrival. Where there is hope, there is love. To have hope for the spirit world, you need to love, which will enable you to overcome even death. That is why in the Unification Church, a funeral is called the Seunghwa It signifies breaking through Satan's wall straightaway and ascending to heaven. Ceremony. (306-301, 1998.10.01)

8 Throughout your life, you should have nothing to be ashamed of before your wife or husband. You should be able to say, “I have kept true to the tradition of safeguarding God’s pure lineage, in order to bequeath it to my descendants. I have lived my life according to the tradition of building the kingdom of heaven, where God desires purity, and now I am departing. I am coming to You, my Father, and I entrust myself to You.” With that, the commemoration of your death will be called a Seunghwa Ceremony. (399-055, 2002.12.18)

9 People do not know what it means to die. They think it is a sorrowful occasion, but it is not. Death is a transition from a lower-dimensional world to a higher-dimensional world by crossing the bridge of love. That is why the Unification Church calls death Seunghwa. To die is to ascend to a higher dimension. It is possible only through love. (137-317, 1986.01.05)

10 A funeral in the Unification Church is called a Seunghwa Ceremony. Since it is a ceremony of seunghwa (ascension), you should not hold on to the deceased and cry. When the spirit of the dead person sees you cry over him or her, that spirit will lament. He or she will say, “The people’s ignorance is a rope that ties me down and prevents me from going on my way.” Since we know these things, we in the Unification Church call it a Seunghwa Ceremony. “Seunghwa” means soaring gloriously to heaven. With the power of love, you should lift the deceased up. Instead of pulling the dead person down, you should lift him or her up. (199-130, 1990.02.16)

11 The Seunghwa Ceremony began with Heung-jin. The meaning of “victory of love” in the Day of Victory of Love is being victorious over death through love. Other people’s mothers would be overwhelmed with sorrow, writhing and wailing with deep emotion, but Mother was required not to shed tears. We needed to hold his ceremony within three days of his passing. We had to proclaim victory over death. It is on this basis that we can hold the Seunghwa Ceremony in the Unification Church. It is a ceremony of going beyond death and onward to joy. Those who go through the Seunghwa Ceremony can easily cross over all the valleys in the spirit world. (212-096, 1991.01.02)

12 The word “death” is sacred. It is not a word that should evoke sadness and anguish. That is why I announced that I changed Seunghwa to Seonghwa. The character seong (聖) means to be sacred or holy. We should no longer use seung (

), meaning “to ascend.” Seonghwa is a term I have coined. The previous word, Seunghwa, did not clearly reflect the sacredness of death, so I rectified it and

announced that it is now Seonghwa. The moment of entry into the spirit world is the time when you enter the world of ecstasy and victory. It is the moment, after your life on earth has bloomed and borne fruit, when you embrace the fruit of your life. It is a moment that comes only once. That is why you should rejoice in that moment. In that moment, others should congratulate you as much as they desire and then send you off. In that moment, they should shed tears of joy, not tears of sadness. Every person has eternal life. Compared to the span of eternity, the period of three days after death is shorter than a second. So the question is, "Why should you feel sad about it?" If you lament during that time, your prospects for eternal life will vanish. How dreadful is that? It is so true. It is a time when people should shed tears of joy, not tears of sadness. This Seonghwa refers to laying out the body of the deceased for three days and offering devotions for his or her passage into the spirit world. I have changed the term Seunghwa Ceremony to Seonghwa Ceremony. (, 2011.11.22)

The Wonjeon Ceremony

13 Members of the Unification Church overcome fear of the spirit world. I have no fear of death. The Fall brought about death, so religion should create the realm of resurrection. Based on the Day of Victory of Love, we could begin holding the Seunghwa (ascension) Ceremony. Also on that condition, we could call the burial site the Wonjeon, which means "original palace." It is not about dying but about direct passage to the kingdom of heaven. This palace is a link from the earthly nation to the heavenly nation. That is the meaning of Wonjeon. There is no religion in the world with anything like it other than the Unification Church. (357-033, 2001.10.25)

14 The place of burial for deceased members of the Unification Church will be known as a Wonjeon. To enter the Wonjeon means to find our way to the original palace within our mother's womb. Where is your Wonjeon? It is the inside of your mother's womb before you were born. From the moment your father's sperm met your mother's ovum, although one was small and the other large, they breathed together, clung to each other and lived in joy. They dwelt together, holding on to each other and giving each other a boost. You need to pass through the ideal of that Wonjeon. In the word Wonjeon, the character jeon (殿) means house. It is the same character as the jeon in goongjeon, meaning palace. You are to find your way to the origin within God's ideal, which existed before your mother's ovum met your father's sperm and you were born on earth. (582-144, 2007.12.06)

15 Do you know what a mortuary table is? When a person dies, before the body is placed in a coffin, it is washed clean and prepared. Before the body can be moved into a coffin, it is placed on the table and washed clean. Unless someone can unite in heart with the deceased at that place, the body cannot be placed in the coffin. Who is supposed to carry out this task? It should be done by the person who loved the deceased the most. The garments for the deceased should be prepared with care in advance, and the deceased should be dressed in them before being sent off. The cerements are the garments that the body is dressed in when it is placed in the coffin. A representative, loyal friend, or filial son or daughter should receive the fabric for the cerements and sew them. If the deceased is to go to the kingdom of heaven, to a good place in the spirit world, he or she should have upheld the tradition of a loyal patriot and loyal subject. A Korean funeral has this type of meaning. The place where the Unification Church buries its dead is not called a graveyard but a Wonjeon. To liberate heaven and earth, we should desire to be buried in such a place. The Wonjeon refers to the original palace. It is not a place where just anyone can be buried. Only those who have been martyred or whose life was on a comparable level can be buried there. (478-097, 2004.11.28)

CHAPTER 4 The Daily Life of Blessed Families

Section 1. Proper Conduct for Blessed Families

1 We need to live a life of attendance to the True Parents such that we are always prepared to offer them something. Although every day we wait for them with a heart of attendance, we know they cannot come to visit. Therefore we should yearn to receive Heaven's sons and daughters in our home in their stead. From morning till night we should make preparations to receive these beloved children. Heaven will bless those who follow this lifestyle. Korean noblemen in the past used to prepare a comfortable guest room in the annex off the main house and invite travelers to stay there overnight. This custom was unique to Korea. This implementation of heavenly conduct in the history of Satan's world also symbolically demonstrated in advance our proper attitude of attendance. (26-299, 1969.11.10)

Proper conduct in the family

2 We've been living and speaking carelessly in our family life, but from now on we should establish rules in the family. Parents should not beat their children in anger. They should not berate them with curse words as are commonly spoken in the world. We all must now become as one body. Our words, our attitude and our way

of life should be as members of one body, with God as the center. (28-252, 1970.01.22)

3 The family of the firstborn son in a clan can thrive when the members of his family willingly accept the traditional family laws and propriety passed down from their ancestors and practice them. If any of them have the attitude, "Those rules have nothing to do with me," he or she can't be the offspring of that family. Especially the firstborn son cannot be the heir of the family, even though he was born as its eldest son. We, on the other hand, have to become descendants who surpass all our ancestors and succeed in accomplishing countless responsibilities. Unification Church members must become such descendants. (21-252, 1968.11.24)

4 In the past, when the family of a loyal subject of the king acquired something valuable, the head of the family would offer it first to the king of the nation. That was a loyal subject's way of life in Korea. From that perspective, Korean propriety reflects the central norms of the heavenly kingdom, which cannot be found in any other nation. Confucianists follow the teachings of Confucius, and quite a few proprieties prescribed in Confucian teachings are close to heavenly law. You should educate your children to conduct an offering ceremony for you in the future, when you pass away. Norms and rituals for holding a funeral based on the Principle have not yet been established. However, once the rules of propriety are established, you should not live a casual life, doing things as you please. From now on you should believe that God is always with you in every situation. With that faith you should be able to cultivate the life force that will enable you to grow, sinking deep roots so you can overcome any obstacle in any situation, no matter what kind of storm arises. (31-292, 1970.06.04)

5 When something good happens in their life, people of filial piety think of their parents first. In the fallen world, people typically think of their spouse first. However, you should not buy something of value for your spouse unless you have first offered something precious to your parents. A husband should first buy clothes for his parents before doing so for his wife. Furthermore, until the husband has a chance to offer clothes to his parents, his wife should not say, "I like this dress; buy it for me if you love me." Moreover, a husband should first purchase clothes for his parents and for his wife before he buys any for himself. It is the same with food. Whether husband or wife, they must offer food to their parents first, then to their spouse, and should sit down for meals together with their parents. (26-298, 1969.11.10)

6 Your family should not get accustomed to worldly habits. Nor should you think, "Although things are bad now, they will get better in the future." You must make things perfect now. The issue is the present. When the past and the present are perfect, the future also will be perfect. The fact that there has never been even one perfect day such as existed in the Garden of Eden is evidence of the Fall. The ideal place is where the past, the present and the future are in accord. Hence you should be able to offer the present moment. God desires to see whether you can establish eternal stepping-stones on earth now. Now is the culminating point of history. (21-077, 1968.10.20)

7 The time is coming when new laws will be enacted, and the most serious among them will be those regarding violations of love. If you committed such infractions in the past, now is the time to sincerely repent. Every time you listen to the Principle, you must feel mortified. You should feel angry with yourself and bitterly ashamed of your transgressions. You should exclaim, "I already feel so bitterly distraught that I'm a descendant of the Fall; on top of that, I repeated it too!" You should feel deeply repentant, saying, "God, if You will only forgive me, I will never be able to express enough gratitude." The moment you commit the sin of violating love, it will be hopeless for your ancestors. (67-059, 1973.05.20)

8 One mind, one body, one thought and oneness in harmony! After that we have true love, true life and true lineage to build a true family. Until we reach harmony and oneness in mind and body, we shouldn't have a partner. The four-position foundation is fulfilled only when a man and a woman, who were created from the separation of God's dual characteristics, unite and give birth to children. This is an ironclad principle. It is not a theory I cleverly fabricated on my own. We must understand that the four-position foundation is Heavens law. It is the structure of the spirit world as well. If you don't meet what it requires, problems will arise. The law of love must remain absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal even after hundreds of millions of years. When we recognize that the universe exists within the realm of the ideal partnership of love, we can understand that our love also must be absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal. Only then can we stand without shame before the entire universe. Then we can be confident and have conviction that the universe will attend us and our families as its owners. (397-322, 2002.12.01)

9 You have family members, so you should become people who can share love as brothers and sisters and support one another. You should become the model members of your family. And as members of the Unification Church, you should become men and women who can be recognized by all members of the church.

From now on, we should cut off what needs to be cut off and separate from what we need to separate from. You should not just live as you please. The Unification Church must establish the kingdom of heaven. Hence, rather than merely recovering ourselves, we have to recover the family. Those who can't become exemplary in their family life will be accused by the world, even by the cosmos. (030-230, 1970.03.23)

10 The value of the Blessing can be recognized only when you fulfill your responsibility. Therefore you blessed members should not speak offensively, in the worldly way. There should be something different about you. The family is a small church. Hence your family should be, as the agency of God, a family that God would like to visit. At least three families must totally unite as one family. What I would like to say in particular is, first, that your family should be one that many people visit. Harmony among people is most important. Second, Heaven's families should build solidarity with one another. At the very least the families in your Blessing trinity should be completely united with one another. (15-271, 1965.10.24)

11 We are not focused on the individual but on the family. Yet it does not mean we are only trying to clean up all the problems in our own family. Rather, we should connect to all. Hence our previous efforts to cultivate our spirituality while living alone are now not enough. We must be determined and resolute to make much greater effort than before. A life of challenging evil is very difficult. We can get tired and easily give up in an instant. When we have a family, we should work much harder than when we were single. The family is where we can secure our center. The family is where we cannot avoid dealing with reality in all relationships. In our family, we should establish relationships between front and back, left and right, above and below. We shouldn't just maintain the kind of faith we practiced in the past; the one-sided life of faith we had before will not work. The Blessing is the point that determines whether we live or die. (27-085, 1969.11.26)

12 Developing a good personal faith hinges mostly on relating to a good leader. However, to develop a good family, each of you must become a leader to one another. We need to ask for whom and for what the members of the family exist. When you were single, you could pray and everything would come to pass. However, once you have a family, if someone in it opposes you, you have to bear the cross and persevere until your relationship with that person reaches the original standard. A single person is like one car in a train, but the family is like a locomotive. It is simple to restore an individual's mistake. But if something goes wrong in the family, it affects everyone, even bringing them to ruin. (27-085, 1969.11.26)

13 What should you do to receive love from your parents? You should love everything that your parents love. That way you are able to receive their love. In a family, if a son wants his parents to love him, he needs to understand that the way to receive love from them is to love all that they love. The son shouldn't aspire to receive their love otherwise. If a child wants to claim everything his parents cherish simply because he wants to, he cannot be loved by them. (133-026, 1984.07.01)

14 God and parents stand in the position to care for others before anyone else does. God thinks of you before you do. And your parents think of you before you do. This is why you love them. This is why they stand in the position of subject partner to you. When two people live together, each should think, "If my partner does not do what he or she is supposed to do, I will do it." This is the kind of being God is. The person who thinks this way becomes the center. The person who lives for the sake of others surely becomes the center. (103-139, 1979.02.18)

15 You need to be more altruistic. The most altruistic person becomes the leader. In a group of ten people, the one who becomes the central person is the one who lives for the group and loves the other nine the most. The others will seek that person out. Thus far, people have thought that living for others was bad for them. Yet living for the sake of others is actually the way to become a central person, to become a leader and to inherit everything. This is a natural law. This is why I am telling you that to live for the sake of others is not bad. It does not incur any loss. No business bears better fruit than such a lifestyle. (132-276, 1984.06.20)

16 We need to awaken to the fact that we live in a different era and that our speech, attitude and lifestyle need to change. This is what the spirit world desires from us. The spirit world is already charging forward in unison, but the earth is in a state of confusion, full of complexities, and cannot determine its clear objective. Therefore to anchor ourselves on solid ground we need to offer conditions of devotion. Otherwise we will be swept away. We are now living in a time when we can no longer live casually. Some of you follow me around everywhere I go. You want to do that rather than work in your mission. Further, you prepare my rallies as if they were your own rallies. You must not do so. You must not act that way at all. You need to raise your family to be a family that can actualize God's Will. For this, the father and mother must change first. In establishing a tradition, senior Unification Church members ought to set the standard first, before their sons and daughters. You should establish the tradition by becoming trustworthy parents, trustworthy siblings and trustworthy sons and daughters. Everything begins within the family. (462-298, 2004.07.29)

The proper conduct between a man and a woman

17 In the Western Hemisphere, sex education begins in elementary school. That is not good. Children need to learn about sex in a natural way. Did God give sex education to Adam and Eve? It is better for children not to know about sex at an early age. When they reach the age when they begin to learn about it, we need to teach them how fearful the outcome of sex can be, but at the same time how precious it can be. When I was going to school, there were no co-ed schools. Yet nowadays, young men and women dance by rubbing their bodies together. We therefore must establish educational institutions that can resist this trend, teaching people that losing one's sexual purity is the most fearful thing that can happen. It is worse than murder. Murder takes away a person's life, but when a person loses his or her purity it dooms thousands of generations of descendants. It can victimize scores, hundreds, even many thousands of people. Henceforth infractions against sexual purity must be treated with greater seriousness than the crime of murder. We must educate our youth to the extent that they could not even imagine falling. (66-225, 1973.05.12)

18 Young people these days go against their parents and destroy their families. Their behavior is evil because it wreaks havoc on the order of love. It destroys families, societies and nations. It brings destruction even to all humankind. You cannot deny it is evil. Adolescents sometimes want to imitate certain thrilling scenes from movies. Young people may ask, "What's wrong with that?" You must tell them, "It's wrong because such irresponsible actions lead to a licentious lifestyle, which will bring destruction to your surroundings, your family and society. You must refrain from such activities. When you have developed your intellect, have gained experience in society and can control yourself in any circumstances, then you are free to act as you please, but not now" (117-184, 1982.03.01)

19 Do you women like flower buds before they bloom, or do you prefer flowers in full bloom? I like flowers that have fully bloomed. When you bloom, you should blossom to your fullest. Don't rely on someone else, but blossom radiantly according to your own nature. This means you should grow in a natural way, go through adolescence naturally and blossom in due course, and only then find a spouse whom you want to love. Don't be crushed before you bloom. Don't be a flower whose petals have fallen off and whose pollen has been shaken out. It's the same for men. Men should also blossom to their fullest. (47-088, 1971.08.19)

20 As buds that have yet to blossom, you must not engage in foolish activities such as sending love letters and having love relationships. You should blossom to the

fullest naturally at the appropriate time. When God sees you, He should be able to exclaim, "Wow! You have blossomed purely and naturally. When I smell your fragrance, I can tell you're a pure virgin." God feels so much hope when this happens. Does God want someone pure or someone damaged? What about you then? Do you want someone pure or someone damaged? Even fallen human beings want to have someone pure. Would God not value your purity even more? For this reason I hope you can blossom fully in pure heart and love. I hope you will become people of value who can rise above the trends of today's fallen world and not become trapped in its valley of sorrow. (47-088, 1971.08.19)

21 Think how many millennia it has taken to restore the mistake committed by Adam and Eve. Countless people toiled arduously, even paying the price of being sacrificed, in order to reach this point today. Are you still going to commit the same mistake? It might have been possible for you to err when you were ignorant of these facts, but after learning the Principle you must not do such things anymore. We all know very clearly the monumental losses that result from losing one's purity. Hence there should be no question about overcoming sexual temptation. Because we clearly understand the astronomical damage caused by sexual licentiousness, we should never lose our purity no matter who tempts us to engage in such an act. Further, once we understand the incredible damage caused by Adam and Eve's one mistake of illicit love, we will recognize the fatal harm that will come to us if we do the same; therefore we will abstain. However, because people in general do not know this, they don't know how to overcome their sexual desire. (66-223, 1973.05.12)

22 For a woman the most dangerous person is a man, and for a man the most dangerous person is a woman. That's why it's best to avoid situations in which a man and a woman are close to each other. All you men, if a woman approaches you, avoid her and walk away. These days I see single men and women sitting together under a tree and making conversation. You should not do such a thing. If you wish to converse with someone of the opposite sex, gather as a group of at least three people. In a group of three you will be all right. The archangel and Eve fell because the two were alone together. Had Adam been present, would they have fallen? Adam and Eve fell because only the two of them spent time together. Had they invited God into their presence, would they have fallen? For this reason if you want to meet, make sure at least three people are present. This is not coercion; rather, it is a practical precaution to avoid a potential problem that could happen at any time. The principled thing to do is to take a position in which Adam and Eve could never Fall. We want to prevent anything from going wrong as well as to clean

up what went wrong. This is why I am asking you to meet in group settings, with at least three people together. (66-225, 1973.05.12)

23 Even when witnessing to people, women must never be alone. If a sister goes out for witnessing activity, have an old grandfather or grandmother accompany her, even if he or she needs a walking stick. If they are not available, the sister can take a primary school student with her. I'm not telling you to avoid engaging in witnessing activity. I'm telling you to take precautions against potential dangers. Every precaution must be taken against even the slightest chance of falling. If three people are together, you'll be fine. We love one another by preventing each other from falling. That is love. Even leaders must take this precaution. (66-226, 1973.05.12)

24 The likelihood of falling increases when a man and woman are alone together. Would you light a match next to a gas pump or light a cigarette near a gasoline drum? Just one mistake is all it takes to shatter everything. You can never cast off that mistake for eternity. Especially once you know the Principle and still fall, there is no way for you to cast it off. The Principle states it, and the Principle works by systematic logic. Hence once you are caught, there is no way for you to escape from it. Neither can you have any basis to deny it. (67-058, 1973.05.20)

A life maintaining purity, pure lineage and pure love

25 Parents need to educate their children about how to practice true love. Everything I'm saying relates to the family. Husband and wife should maintain purity of mind and body and attain oneness of heart. Then they must educate their children about true love by their example. Will children obey a father who is a drunkard and physically abuses their mother? Will children obey a mother who habitually deceives and lies to their father? Parents need to educate their children about true love through their own actions. It's not just education but education by example. I'm saying the way to educate your children about true love is by practicing it first. Educate by example. Write this as your family motto, frame it and mount it on the wall. Write it with a heart of profound devotion. (333-234, 2000.09.26)

26 Purity, pure lineage and pure love are followed by a pure heart. Without a pure heart, there can't be a pure lineage. Heaven's lineage has been passed down to us on the foundation of tens of thousands of years of pure hearts. The way to pass on the lineage to our descendants for thousands and even tens of thousands of years

should be through fidelity to one's one and only spouse. Therefore there must be no divorce. With divorce comes threefold greater indemnity. (476-263, 2004.11.21)

27 God is the first generation, True Parents are the second generation and you are the third generation. However, you need to understand that the original tradition of the Blessing should have been: God as the first generation, you as the second generation and your children as the third generation. You would have been pure men and women, like unblemished white jade. When you united as couples, upholding the ideal of the four-position foundation, you would have bequeathed pure love, pure life and pure lineage to countless generations of descendants. (380-318, 2002.06.10)

28 You are young people approaching your twenties who have carefully protected and preserved your pure heart. Where will you take your clean, spotless and holy pure heart? You should place your pure heart on the altar that will give Heaven the greatest delight, bringing tremendous joy to God. There a young man who has preserved his pure heart and a young woman who also has preserved her pure heart should meet and rejoice together. It is the place where they meet as bridegroom and bride, bound together by God on the sacred foundation of a pure heart. (064-085, 1972.10.24)

29 Your body is precious. Don't defile it; fulfill your filial duty instead. You need to escape from Satan's realm of death and carry out your responsibility to serve Heaven with a body whose purity God approves. This is the highest goal and the standard that human beings should have. According to the Principle of Creation, you must be that way. (15-202, 1965.10.09)

30 A divine son or daughter is a person who loves heaven and earth. A divine son or daughter loves his or her nation from God's viewpoint and upholds God's sovereignty in heaven and on earth. Furthermore, a divine son or daughter knows all the laws of the royal court in the heavenly kingdom and all the laws of his or her nation on earth and endeavors to love both worlds, while abiding by all their laws. (565-064, 2007.06.07)

31 God invested His whole heart when creating Adam and Eve. What Adam and Eve received was the seed of His true love, true life and true lineage. Therefore we must return to that original state. It is God who sowed the seed, and it is we who must return the fruits. No one wants weeds and other rubbish. When we ascend to the spirit world, everything about our past will be disclosed; therefore we must clean up everything before we pass away. Although our outward body will return to dust,

we will still carry what is inside us. This is the problem. It would have been better if there were nothing inside us that we needed to eliminate, but because we still carry scars in our hearts, scars formed by the pangs of conscience, we need to clean them up. (382-071, 2002.06.19)

32 One mind, one body, one thought, and then comes oneness at the core. This oneness derives from a pure mind and body, a pure lineage and pure love. However, before pure love, we need pure sex. The issue is sex. Even in sex there are three stages—formation, growth and completion. However, these stages came into existence only after the Fall. Originally, once Adam and Eve made love under God's Blessing, there would have been no issue. When they had sexual relations for the first time it would have been perfected. Instead we had to go through restoration in the Old Testament Age, the New Testament Age and the Completed Testament Age to realize purity, pure lineage and pure sexuality. A man must unite his mind and body and keep them both pure. He must not violate this purity before marriage, and it is the same for a woman. With purity of mind and body and a pure lineage, there can be purity in sexual relations. A man and a woman must maintain their purity. Then when the time comes for them to marry, they unite to form one core. In this way they become perfected as man and woman and can finally stand as God's object partners. (489-219, 2005.03.02)

33 Oneness in mind, oneness in body, oneness in thought, oneness in sexual relations—for these our mind and body need to be united. When do the mind and body fully unite as one? A fallen person's mind and body cannot become one. However, through marriage a man and a woman can finally attain oneness at the core. What comes after oneness in mind, body and thought, and oneness at the core? That is when purity of mind and body, pure lineage, purity of sexual relations and pure love all become one. All these should be in harmony. You and your spouse should realize harmonious oneness. Then whatever happens, you will remain one eternally. (489-219, 2005.03.02)

34 You have to abide by centering on your original mind, your mind that is one with God's mind. Should you not abide where the universe reaches perfection? To be of one mind with God's mind means your mind is unified, that a peaceful, unified mind is within you. Then on this foundation of one mind, you should become as one body with God. After that you should arrive at oneness in thought. Then you and your spouse can have sexual relations, pure in mind and body. A man and a woman who are striving to become as one mind, one body and one thought—one at the core with God—finally can become one through a sexual relationship. Then they become one at the core. Looking at a sphere, we find two poles: plus and

minus. It also has hemispheres, upper and lower, right and left, and front and back. The core of your couple must be the same. Man and woman differ in mind and heart. Nonetheless, when they unite as one and stand before God as His object partners, in the position of body with God in the position of mind, they can discover the origin of conjugal love by becoming one body in God's presence. Then they can form a family of oneness that can serve God. The realm of oneness in love that they experience through their bodies will expand throughout their lives, leading to complete unity and harmony. They will achieve eternal, unchanging unity and settle in peace. (489-220, 2005.03.02)

Section 2. The Standard of Love in the Family and Respect between Husband and Wife

1 What if parents have only one son and one daughter? Their son will need an older sister and older brother. Their daughter will need an older brother and older sister. They will also need younger brothers and younger sisters. Children need both older and younger siblings. If they don't have siblings of both genders, they will be unhappy. God protects the family in which the younger brother and sister and the older brother and sister are all present and completely united with one another. It's because such a family becomes the foundation for a clan, a tribe, a people and a nation. The older brother and older sister represent the east and west; the younger brother and younger sister represent the north and south. When these positions are perfected, they become three-dimensional. This is the love principle. The concepts of the Principle of Creation are rooted in the principle of love. Therefore when the principle of love is secured, we will have the origin of peace. (020-040, 1968.03.31)

The standard of love in the family

2 Our parents desire that we love our siblings more than we miss our parents. Thus if siblings fight in the name of filial piety, it cannot be regarded as filial piety. The heart of parents desires that children care about one another more than they love their parents. Even if you are temporarily unable to serve your parents, if you say, "Mom, please wait. I will come to you after taking care of my younger brother first," your mother will say to you, "My boy! You will grow up to be a good man." Those who want to love their brothers and sisters more than their parents will live eternally in heaven. Those who can't love their brothers and sisters as they would then- parents will be excluded. When you understand the basis of this principle, it is simple. Yet because we human beings have not known this, we have been unable to love one another. The question is whether we, as family members, can unite among

ourselves. Thus if you stand in a position where you cannot fulfill your filial duty to True Parents, you should instead offer the devotion you want to give True Parents to the members of your church family. Heaven will accept your offering as having greater value than your filial devotion to True Parents. Those who practice this will surely be blessed. (78-041, 1975.05.01)

3 Love your brothers and sisters in the church as you love God. Your path to heaven begins there. You love and follow me, yet I tell you, you should strive to love and help your brothers and sisters and work alongside them with the same heart. Those who can teach you the quickest and best way to go to heaven are neither God nor I, but your brothers and sisters. If you strive to love them with a love greater than their love for their parents or spouse, you will be chosen as a supreme subject partner of love. (66-125, 1973.04.18)

4 You and your brothers and sisters are companions who share in the love of your parents. Therefore you must not fight with your brothers and sisters. You are like your parents' body, so when you raise your right hand, it is as if you were raising your father's hand, and when you raise your left hand, it is as if you were raising your mother's hand. Raising your right foot is like raising your father's foot, and raising your left foot is like raising your mother's foot. The family was made that way because of love. (106-080, 1979.12.09)

5 The more brothers and sisters you have, the better. No matter how many you have, if there is only one bowl of rice, you should share it with them. Siblings must not fight over a bowl of rice. However difficult life may be with many siblings, if they think with a loving heart, "Even if I starve, I'm going to give my portion to my sister," all will be well. Would you want to wear good clothes and give the shabby ones to your younger siblings? We need to think in a way opposite from Satan's world. Blessed children ought to think differently from the children of Satan's world. (112-195, 1981.04.12)

6 At the time of your birth, how difficult do you think it was for your mother to push you out of her womb? Why did God make birth so difficult? Would it not be better if giving birth were as easy as talking, as easy as eating good food, or smelling the scent of perfume, or smiling with delight and laughing? Why, rather than being easy, does giving birth require the mother to labor on the verge of life and death? It is in order for us to experience radiant love. (107-042, 1980.01.20)

7 Parents live for their children. Parents who assert that they live for their own sake cannot be considered parents. From now on, the principles of morality should be

established based on the Principle of the Unification Church. How should parents live? Parents should live for the children to whom they gave birth. Among the principles of morality, this is the first rule. No lengthy explanation is needed. It is simply because parents want to do so. The position of parents is a position in which they find happiness and joy in living for their children. (062-216, 1972.09.25)

8 You belong to both your parents and your children. Accordingly, parents belong to both their children and to God. However, you parents belong first to God, then to your children, and only after that can you belong to yourself. Only in this way can you reach perfection. This is why the norms of showing respect to parents still remain on this earth and in human life. The saying, "Respect your parents and love your children," is derived from these norms. The reason an orphan, a child without parents, is pitiable is because we human beings need to receive love from our parents. Also we need to love our children. This is how we learn to position ourselves with regard to the four directions, knowing who is above us and who is below us. (18-209, 1967.06.08)

9 The way a father should relate to his children is to become their best friend. Then even when his children are playing with their playmates, they will run to him as soon as he appears. Also a father should become his children's best teacher. His children must be able to say, "My Dad is better than the president; he is the best and is second only to God," and, "I will never exchange my father for any friend. I will never exchange my father for any teacher. And I will never abandon my father, even if it means losing my loving wife." (57-282, 1972.06.04)

10 When I come home late at night, I always caress the sleeping faces of my children. It is not easy to become a good parent. Yet this tender gesture naturally leads my children to think, "I want to love my sons and daughters as my father loves me." Also, through expressing such love to my children, I should be able to let my children feel, "My father is the best in the whole world!" (097-311, 1978.03.26)

11 Everyone wishes to have great children. So how should we raise our children to become great? Some may think that giving their children an excellent education, beginning from kindergarten all the way to university, will achieve this objective. However, we parents are the ones who should educate them, and we should do so continually throughout their lives. Parents should constantly devote themselves to their children. Then when the time comes for the parents to bequeath their entire household to their children whom they raised with devotion, their children should be able to unite with them in heart, follow their parents' footsteps and become

their parents' successors who represent their heart. Raising children in this way should become a common practice. (024-257, 1969.08.24)

12 My concern is not to leave a legacy that honors the name "Unification Church." Rather I am concerned about how I can leave behind successors who will carry on the tradition I have upheld. That is why I have been educating you to take tradition seriously. (35-116, 1970.10.04)

13 The important issue is how you blessed families can live in accord with me through three generations, including those of your children and grandchildren. If the three generations accumulate merit together, your family will become most admirable and praiseworthy. Have you ever thought about this? Therefore from now on you should offer conditions of devotion with your children and educate them to fully understand your heart and thought. (51-271, 1971.11.28)

Courtesy between husband and wife

14 A husband and wife should always be together as one. Whenever they go somewhere, they should sit together, not separately. They should be able to resonate with each other at any time, day or night. Other than married couples, no one else can have such a relationship. Should a man and a woman who are not married sleep together in the same room? This would not be right. In the ideal world to come, when married couples walk together happily side by side, all single people will have to greet them with respect. That time is coming. We must create a social atmosphere in which husbands and wives who have attained complete oneness are honored and praised. It should be so especially for couples who are blessed. Wherever they go in society, people should respect, honor and praise them. (67-061, 1973.05.20)

15 Man symbolizes heaven while woman symbolizes earth. This is why Jesus has been bestowing the grace of salvation upon human beings from the spirit world, while the Holy Spirit has been doing so on earth. By doing so, they have been laying the foundation for the family. In laying the family foundation, if a wife can align herself with her husband's heart, she will be blessed. If the husband can do likewise with his wife, he will be blessed. If the children unite with their parents, they will be blessed. We are now living in the age of family-level salvation. (12-261, 1963.05.22)

16 When you blessed couples embrace and love your babies, you should keep in mind the purpose for which your children were born. You need to understand they were born for God, out of your relationship with God. Even though you may be intimate with your precious husband or wife and share secrets together, your

relationship is not of your own design. You were brought to each other while walking on the public path of the heavenly Principle. God was involved in tying you together. Hence if you are miserable, God will be miserable as well. (67-293, 1973.07.22)

17 When a husband enters his wife's room, he steps into the chamber of the only queen in heaven and on earth. Likewise, when a wife relates to her husband, she steps into the palace where she attends the king. This is why both need to bow to each other when entering each other's room to have a conjugal relationship; each needs to bow three times and then receive the other. Have you ever bowed to your husband before entering his palace to make love? I am teaching you about what you need to practice in your family. You also need to teach your family members as I am teaching you. That is, when you mothers enter your husband's room, you must put on specially sanctified clothes and make yourself prettier than when you go out in public. (261-222, 1994.06.19)

18 Before entering each other's palace to make love, husband and wife should bow to each other. The husband is entering the palace of the grand queen, the empress, in order to attend her. Adam should be the king of heaven and the model of tradition for all of you. If you live with such a heart and mind in your daily life, you will reach the level to represent Adam's royal position in the heavenly world. You will become a royal family member, assuming a value equal to that of Adam. (253-313, 1994.01.30)

19 When a husband enters his wife's chamber, he must be solemn. That room is the nest of life, the place where God can visit and dwell and the fertile ground from which his illustrious descendants will emerge. Therefore every time the husband enters, he must be thoroughly prepared to be with his wife, so the flower of their first love for each other will bloom in holiness. The place where the husband and wife make love is the palace of joyous union. When they are in that place, they are not envious of anyone's royal throne or heaven's citadels of happiness. It is this way because this is where everything begins. Now that you husbands know this, henceforth you must always bow before entering your wife's chamber. Can any action be more praiseworthy than that of a husband who seeks to glorify that palace, the place that links three generations? (240-316, 1992.12.13)

20 Financial hardships in managing your household do not equate to misery. The dividing line between happiness and misery is determined by how close and how intimate our relationship is with Heaven. An individual can bear with his or her own downfall but will not accept that the family goes to ruin. A husband needs his wife

more than anyone else in the world, and a wife needs her husband more than anyone. Therefore a husband and wife must always encourage each other, support each other and become each other's companion in life. (27-087, 1969.11.26)

21 If you as a husband want to express love to your wife, then on her birthday you could invite all the women in the neighborhood to her birthday party. There, in front of all those guests, you should sing and dance for her with a heart overflowing with love. When this happens, the people from the neighborhood will pray for your couple and wish blessings upon your wife. It is extremely precious to any couple that they can have guests who pray from their heart for their blessings. Suppose one thousand good-hearted guests assemble and offer your couple their good wishes. Since God answers the prayer of even one good-hearted person, will the good wishes and prayers of one thousand good-hearted guests go unanswered? (127-097, 1983.05.05)

22 If a husband is overflowing with love, he may even swear when he's at home, but his swear words can stimulate love. At the same time, any one word from a husband who is devoid of love can cut into his wife's flesh and hurt her badly. Where there is love, a little playful wrestling is fine, but where there is no love, anything, everything, is detestable. (83-179, 1976.02.08)

23 If a wife darkens her husband's heart, the world will be darkened by the repercussions of her action. Therefore a wife needs to wake up early in the morning and take good care of her husband before he goes off to work. She should always keep herself beautiful for her husband, even if it requires using makeup and perfume. A wife should not be emotionally indebted to her husband. She should always concern herself with her husband's body and clothes. When her husband looks tired after returning home, she should bring him water to wash his face and toothbrush and toothpaste to brush his teeth; then she should wash his feet and comb his hair. A wife's laughter is like the family's flower. In order to build a harmonious family, she should be a first-class actress of both comedy and tragedy. She should be able to completely melt the heart of her husband anytime, whether he is happy or sad. (27-088, 1969.11.26)

24 On the path you are walking, you are bound to encounter imposing mountains with cliffs, deep rivers and large chasms. If you are unable to overcome these obstacles, the only thing you will eventually face for sure is death. When following the path of the Will, you should be able to leave behind your beloved wife, your husband and even your children. You women should go the way of women who respond to the heavenly way. You should even be willing to die if your husband asks

you to die with him, if it is for the Will. Even though you die, you will live together in the spirit world. There will be a way to be liberated as long as you regard your husband's will as absolute. (026-265, 1969.11.09)

Section 3. Blessed Family Practices

1 Begin your day by waking up at dawn and praying to Heavenly Father that throughout the coming day you may become the personification of gratitude in front of Him. Resolve to become a manifestation of God's hope, someone whom He can raise and use for His providence, like a spring garden where flowers grow and bloom abundantly. As you work during the day, you need to become like a plant growing in the summer. Thereby you become a manifestation of hope and a being of value, someone whom God can be with. Evening is like autumn, the time when you harvest all your day's accomplishments and offer them to Heavenly Father. At that time you should be able to say you will stand in front of Him in the position of a sacrificial offering. And when night falls, corresponding to winter, you should resolve to establish an internal parent-child relationship with God with all the life force that is stored up within you, and be ready to receive energy from God. If you are able to live with gratitude for 365 days a year, making each day victorious, you will feel the joy and worthiness of a life connected with God. (29-340, 1970.03.14)

Witnessing and the necessities of life

2 Although you may work during the daytime, you should do religious activities in the evening. Witnessing is more effective in the evening; it is also effective in the early morning. By knowing how to utilize your time effectively, you should be able to inspire new guests to such an extent that they want to flee their homes and come to church, full of an irrepressible desire to hear your lectures. You should become such a person. Can there be any result if you don't kindle their motivation? I'm saying this because, if thus far you have not been able to do that, from now on you should work harder and do better. You should be creative and find new ideas and methods. Designate a place as your holy ground; go there early in the morning and pray there out loud every day. You must make your prayer so powerful and mystical that anyone who passes by will be inspired. If you continue with your prayers, righteous people in the neighborhood will discreetly come and listen to you. As they hear your prayers, although they may not understand them, they will enjoy their sound and feel them resonating in their hearts. (97-196, 1978.03.15)

3 Try conveying the Word past midnight and continue until you hear the first crow of the rooster. It is so mystical. Try conveying the Word when the only sound is the

barking of the neighborhood dogs in the quiet, tranquil night. You'll feel as if you are on a new path of life and are about to break through to find the bright sunlight, or you'll feel like a ship's captain on a new journey on the ocean, searching to find the lighthouse. You'll experience a sense of valor, pride and majesty as if you alone in the world are totally filled with secrets of all kinds. In order to experience such a richness of heart, you need to teach and guide people during the nighttime, even until dawn. (29-197, 1970.02.28)

4 When you clean and arrange your room, you should even hang up your clothes in a principled way. Men's clothes should go on the right side of the closet and women's clothes on the left. When you lay clothes in your dresser drawers, you should put men's clothes in the topmost drawers and women's in the bottom drawers. This is the principled way. You all need to train yourselves to do things this way. Putting men's clothes on the bottom and women's clothes on top is a violation of the Principle. (131-290, 1984.05.04)

5 When you take off your clothes, you should take off your trousers first. Next take off your jacket and put it on top of the trousers. You should know how to keep your surroundings in order through such a principled way of life. For example, men's shoes should be placed on the right or on top, and women's shoes should be placed on the left or at the bottom. You should know how to arrange everything in order in a principled way. (131-291, 1984.05.04)

6 Smiling and laughter can be truly intriguing. Even a slight grin is a kind of laughter. What happens when we laugh? Everything becomes round. When an old man laughs, "Haw! Haw! Haw!" his mouth doesn't continue going up but starts curving down into "Huh! Huh! Huh!" Why does it curve down? Why do his lips not continue going up? It's because his mouth needs to become circular. When you smile sweetly, your mouth curves up only a little. However, when you laugh, "Ha! Ha! Ha!" your mouth becomes very round. People who can laugh heartily and give a big smile are rarely evil. (173-242, 1988.02.21)

7 Men should comb their hair as carefully as women do. When they groom themselves, they should decide the best side for parting their hair to present the best appearance, just as women do when applying cosmetics. In the West as well as the East, men generally part their hair on the left. Women must give this some thought. (131-304, 1984.05.04)

8 You should walk elegantly. When you walk, your posture must be balanced. You should always pay attention to keeping good posture. You should walk confidently.

Some people walk with their shoulders hunched, but when you are walking you have to keep proper balance. You need to do so. (131-306, 1984.05.04)

9 In Asia, when a woman goes somewhere and sits down on the floor, it is not appropriate for her to lean her back against anything, even though men are allowed to do so. This is because women have wider hips and they naturally feel comfortable when they sit, while men have smaller hips and a larger upper body. If a woman sits with her back against the wall, it is uncomfortable for the baby she is carrying and can lead to a problem. (131-306, 1984.05.04)

10 Health is the most important thing. However, even if you're sick you need to know how to manage your facial expressions in such a way that people don't notice your illness. Some people make a gloomy face even when they have only a slight cold or other minor ailment. This isn't proper. When a husband looks worried, his wife should comfort him, showing her caring heart but with a cheerful spirit. We need to always manifest a positive, healthy facial expression. (131-307, 1984.05.04)

11 Human relationships are formed on the basis of emotional bonds. Family relationships, moral concepts, social systems, hierarchical order and so forth are all based on the emotional factors of human life. This is why people tend to bow their heads in front of someone with whom they have developed a close relationship over time or before someone whom they respect due to their high spirituality or deep heart. Again, the motivation to form human relationships starts from the emotional bonds in the family. Human relations begin from parents who love their children, and are completed when the children return that love. (64-124, 1972.10.29)

12 You love your parents and need them, I hope. You want to see them and be with them. The age difference between you and your parents and the relationship of above and below set up a hierarchical order. Hence you should be a filial child to your parents and show them respect with proper manners. All concepts of morality in our relationships and in our social life reflect the fact that the one above is in the position of subject partner and the one below in the position of object partner, in a vertical relationship. From that viewpoint, you should long to be with your parents. You should want to become a filial son or daughter who can demonstrate obedience and humility. This is the relationship of parent and child. (112-251, 1981.04.19)

13 The reason human beings are special is because they have moral standards to guide their relationships. Human norms are what govern relationships. We don't

use the term “human norms” when dealing with one person; it applies when there are two or more people. Social ethics derive from the ethics in a family formed through the marriage of a man and a woman. Ethics define the duties and rules of human relationships. (136-208, 1985.12.29)

14 We need to establish a new tradition that transcends peoples and nations. That tradition should be established based on the foundation of relationships according to God’s desire, not human desire. This means we shouldn’t cling to our personal habits, past customs or present-day styles. Our way should be totally different. (66-297, 1973.05.16)

Holy salt and holy candles

15 When you purchase things you should sanctify them with holy salt, and when you return home you should purify yourself with holy salt at the door. This is a basic principle we need to practice. Anything that has been sanctified with holy salt should not be given back to Satan’s world. However, if you cannot avoid doing that, give it back with your left hand. When sprinkling holy salt, sprinkle it in the shape of a cross- north, south, east and west. (009-078, 1960.04.11)

16 Our church family members should sanctify everything. In most cases we can use holy salt to sanctify things, but when we eat rice or noodles or drink water, how can we sanctify them with holy salt? What should we do in such instances? We should blow on them, as Jesus did after his resurrection—and as he was blowing he told the disciples to receive the Holy Spirit. It is also the same as when God created life by blowing into Adam’s nostrils. Therefore from now on you too need to blow three times on everything you are about to eat or drink. Your breath represents the substance of life. Korean customs are amazing. When Koreans drink water, they first blow on it; before they sit, they first blow on the spot. God must have moved the natural conscience of the Korean people so that blowing could be one of their customs. This is not merely a coincidence. This is why we must always sanctify our life by having the mind to sanctify everything. You should blow three times before you eat or drink, in order to sanctify the defiled six-thousand-year history that has proceeded through the three stages of formation, growth and completion. (150-303, 1961.04.15)

17 People cannot be happy unless all things are happy. Yet all things are living in sorrow over being trapped in the realm of the Fall. Therefore we need to bring joy to all the things of creation. The means to make them happy is holy salt; it is by sanctifying them with holy salt. How did the creation become so tainted? Creation

was tainted because of the false parents. Hence the tradition of holy salt began with the emergence of the True Parents; it began with the True Parents' Holy Wedding. Since all creation became tainted as a consequence of the false love of the fallen parents, the holy salt tradition is based on the love of the True Parents, which began with their Holy Wedding. The holy salt tradition began on the basis of the new relationship of love that the True Parents laid both vertically and horizontally. Holy salt is an absolutely necessary conditional object for removing the sorrow of the Fall and leading all things out of the sphere of lamentation and into the world of new hope. (58-224, 1972.06.01)

18 Satan has held the ideal world captive until now. I proclaimed the Day of Victory of Heaven to mark our resolve to take responsibility for and indemnify this wrong. Based on the sacrifice of Heung-jin, who ascended to the spirit world, the gates of hell were opened on earth, in the physical world. As a result, we are now able to go with Heaven's authority to reach out to hell in the spirit world and hell on earth, even to those in prison there. Just as Jesus during the three days after his death descended into hell and opened the gates of hell in the spirit world, during the three days after Heung-jin passed away I opened the gates of hell on earth. It means that through the occasion of Heung-jin's ascension, I recovered all that was lost due to Jesus' crucifixion. I created the aecheon (love of God) candles that I lit at East Garden before I came to Korea. I proclaimed the Day of Victory of Heaven on May 16, 1984, and lit the candles on the same day at East Garden. Only blessed family members can light the aecheon candles. Single members cannot use them. You must be blessed in order to use them. Heaven's realm of love can expand only when we unite with Heaven centering on True Parents' love. Since the aecheon candles symbolize that right of dominion through love, blessed families can have them and light them. (132-103, 1984.05.20)

19 You can use the aecheon candles during critical times in the nation and the world, when there are serious problems in your family or when there are grave problems in your clan. During these times you should light these candles, and grandfather and grandmother, parents and all family members should pray that the authority of dominion through love maybe realized. Then Satan can't invade that family. The aecheon candles separate us from Satan. You need to remember that God and True Parents are present, and think that the authority of the dominion of love materializes wherever these candles are lit. Lighting the candles brings sanctification. True Parents began the tradition of lighting the aecheon candles. If you do the same, your families will be sanctified as well. Once you have these candles, you should no longer feel shame. If you still feel shame, you do not deserve to own the candles. Look at a candle. You will see it sacrifices its wick and

waxy body to give off light. Therefore the candle is a symbol of the sacrifices that still need to be made to bring light to humanity and unite everyone centered on Heaven. Neither the wick nor the wax on its own can produce light; both are necessary for it to shine brightly. Also, the aecheon candles are paired, symbolizing that husband and wife, as subject partner and object partner, must together become a sacrifice in order to generate light. Wherever this takes place, Satan cannot be present. Therefore, with these candles and through the foundation of the Day of Victory of Heaven, there is a connection between True Parents and all blessed families around the world. The aecheon candles signify Heaven's dominion over blessed families. (132-104, 1984.05.20)

Reporting in prayer as blessed central families

20 The way we conclude our prayers will change beginning on January 1, 2001. From then on, we will end our prayers, "I report all these things in the name of so-and-so, a blessed central family." I have indemnified everything and restored the right of the eldest son, the right of parents and the right of the king. Therefore you must train your own family to become subject partners who can enter the era of liberation as unfallen Adam and Eve. Otherwise you will fall away. When Adam and Eve fell, they were punished right away. Likewise, we are entering the era when, if you commit the same mistake, your relationship with your husband or wife can be severed immediately. (340-094, 2000.12.24)

21 The time is coming when we will be able to joyfully report everything to the Father, as His partners. Therefore, while previously we concluded our prayers with "I pray all these things in the name of so-and-so, a blessed family who has inherited True Parents' foundation of victory," that time has now passed. We must now conclude with "I report all these things in the name of so-and-so, a blessed central family" We no longer will use the word "prayer." From now on, we should report to Heaven. The time to report to Heaven has come. However, to offer a report we must have good results. How long are you going to say, "I pray for this and I pray for that," like beggars? We must proudly report our accomplishments to Heaven. Hence from now on you will not be able to pray well unless you have accomplished something. (341-151, 2001.01.01)

22 We initially prayed in the name of True Parents instead of Jesus; then we began offering prayers "in the name of so-and-so, a blessed central family." But now we are offering a report in our prayer. In the era of the fourth Adam, unless our prayers are reports to Heaven we will not be able to receive the right of ownership. In order

to receive from Heaven the right to be owners, we must become families that represent Heaven's nation. (500-242, 2005.07.12)

23 Blessed central families have nothing to do with the fallen world. They stand in the position of Adam and Eve before the Fall, when both were connected to God's realm of heart. This is what blessed central families are. They are families that have accomplished God's ideal of creation and represent the family of unfallen Adam. In such a position we should not merely pray; instead we should offer reports to Heaven. Had Adam's family become perfected, they wouldn't have prayed for this or that; rather, they would have offered reports to Heaven. The family of perfected Adam would have built the ideal world, reporting to Heaven daily. If on a certain day they had not accomplished anything, there would have been nothing to report. In such circumstances, there would have been no need for the Messiah or religion. Why? It's because they would have known everything about their life and situation. Human knowledge would have extended from the individual to the family, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos, all the way to the realm of God's heart. (343-107, 2001.01.16)

24 From now on in the Unification Church we need to say "aju" instead of the "amen" that conventional Christians say. "Aju" means "my abode." The ah in "aju" can be written with the Chinese character (我) that means "me." The syllable "Ah!" is also the sound we make when in awe. "Ah!" is a sound that contains and expresses surprise and admiration. Thus it will release all the bitter sorrow of human history. You often hear, "Ah, this is good!" But do you ever hear, "Ah, this is bad"? When we say, "Ah!" we usually are referring to what is best. Now the second syllable, ju, can be written with either the Chinese character for "lord" (主) or the character that means "reside" (住). Therefore "aju" refers to the final position one assumes after becoming an owner. "Aju" also means "moving in;" thus it means, "Ah, I have now become an owner, and I need to move into my home!" "My home" means God's master bedroom. When we are born, we are not immediately in God's master bedroom. We first live in the womb of God's wife. However, when we grow up, we come to say, "Aju, this is my home!" There is no greater aspiration than this. It means that my home has become a place founded on the realm of eternal oneness. It has become inseparable from the inner heart of God. Hence "my home" has two meanings: It is my home, and it is the home of God's innermost heart. (539-012, 2006.09.17)

25 "Amen" means "May what I prayed for be accomplished." However, what exactly should be accomplished? It is "I" who should be accomplished. Therefore each of us should stand in the position in which we can say, "Aju! I have become the owner of

the ideal that everyone and everything are praying for.” We can’t say “aju!” when we have nothing to do with the content of our prayer. (548-294, 2006.12.15)

26 We say “aju” instead of “amen.” This is because “aju” means the number one owner. The Chinese character for ju (主) means “lord.” It means we can surpass the Lord. The Lord used “amen,” but he could not use “aju.” Doesn’t this mean we can be beyond the Lord? “Aju” in Korean means “very.” For instance, “This is very (aju) good!” Thus after people came out from an audience with the queen or the king, they would say, “It was very (aju) good!” We use “aju” as an adverb when referring to something as the best, the highest or the greatest. Furthermore, the Chinese character for ju is also the character for “king” or “lord.” Thus when we say it, it means we have reached the highest point that encompasses the three ages. (539-300, 2006.09.22)

CHAPTER 5 The Holy Days and Anniversaries

Section 1. Holy Days

1 Knowing that you are heavenly princes and princesses and citizens of the heavenly kingdom, you need to acquire the proper set of rules for dealing with any situation in your life and fulfill the duties appropriate to your position. Yet, even blessed members do not know about this. What, from now on, must Unificationists do? You must establish the family tradition appropriate for and aligned with God’s Day. You must establish the family rules aligned with Parents’ Day. You must establish the standard by which you order your life in alignment with Children’s Day. In order to celebrate these days, you need to offer more devotion and welcome them with greater joy than you would any other holidays celebrated on earth. Parents’ Day, Children’s Day, Day of All Things and God’s Day must become the basis of your family tradition. In your family, you have to establish the tradition of celebrating these holy days as the rule for Heaven’s family, a rule that is passed down to your descendants for thousands or even tens of thousands of generations. Based on this family norm, you must go straight from Parents’ Day to Children’s Day, from there to the Day of All Things, and finally to God’s Day. (22-026, 1969.01.01)

True God's Day

2 We must create a circuit of giving and receiving based on God’s heart, a high standard that cannot be invaded by Satan’s world. Its first foundational foothold is the tradition of the holy days celebrated in the Unification Church. In order to welcome and commemorate these days, you must be able to align your entire life with them. Moreover, you must cleave to these days with all your loyalty and

sincere devotion. Then, when you celebrate these days, you will become children who can uphold the purposes and norms that Heaven has established. Finally, after six thousand years, God's Day has been created. It is the day when God can rejoice. All the fortune of heaven and earth was gathered together for this day. It is a day unprecedented in history. Therefore, we have to welcome and celebrate this day with our sincere offering and sincere devotion. (22-027, 1969.01.01)

3 The days that human beings long to celebrate more than any other are not the days when they were born or when they married. Nor is it the independence day of their nation or the day when their nation recovered its independence previously lost to another nation. God's Day and Parents' Day are the days that humankind truly longs for and supremely hopes to celebrate. Those days had only been hoped for, but now they are established on earth. Once God's Day and Parents' Day were established, they naturally connected to Children's Day and the Day of All Things. (92-253, 1977.04.18)

4 No one previously living on earth ever witnessed God's Day or Parents' Day; neither had anything in the created world. The most important days among the 365 days of the year are God's Day and Parents' Day. Through them, any problem can be resolved. These days are the royal days among all days, and the years they were inaugurated are the royal years among all years, among all the years that ever were. (92-253, 1977.04.18)

5 Before restoring True Parents, that is, before finding the family of Adam and Eve that did not fall, no one could have unfallen descendants or a world of creation unaffected by the Fall. Unless human beings can take the position to freely govern the world of all things, that is, the created world, God cannot exercise His authority as God. That is why, based on the year of 1960, I established Parents' Day, and subsequently Children's Day and the Day of All Things. Only when there are True Parents can there be true children, and only when there are true children can there be dominion over all things. In order to take dominion over all things, we must first be fruitful, multiply, and fill the earth. Adam and Eve were not supposed to govern all things by themselves. Children are the horizontal foundation, and parents are the vertical foundation. Parents therefore stand in God's position on earth. Only after laying this vertical foundation can people have dominion over the world of creation, all things. Therefore, in the Unification Church, after inaugurating Parents Day, Children's Day was established, and afterwards the Day of All Things was established. These holy days—Parents' Day, Day of All Things and Children's Day—abide in the realm of God's dominion, not in the realm of the Fall. That is to say,

their position is extricated from the realm of Satan's accusation. Hence, they can establish for us a direct relationship with God. (28-014, 1970.01.01)

6 The year 1960 was the year when we reached the completion level of the growth stage, namely, the level at which Adam and Eve fell. From the completion level of the growth stage, it required seven years more to reach the realm of perfection. This was the first seven-year course. When we reach the standard of perfection, we can enter the realm of God's direct dominion. When I say the word "direct," I really mean direct. Thus, we can also have direct dominion over the heart realm of life. However, in 1960, the year our Blessing took place, the task of reaching that standard of perfection still remained. I was still in the midst of the realm of the Fall, the realm of Satan's dominion that resulted from the first Adam's Fall. Nonetheless, a family had finally appeared that could destroy the realm of Satan's dominion. Then, during that seven-year course, Satan made an all-out attack on this family. However, I fought with Satan, clashed with him, and by paying indemnity I drove him away and established the four major holy days: God's Day, Children's Day, Day of All Things and Parents' Day. (22-197, 1969.02.02)

7 By inaugurating God's Day, I was able to establish the standard by which God could dwell on earth. Therefore, the Unification Church will now rapidly accelerate its growth on earth. With this standard achieved, the Unification Church, based on the truth, will develop by means of liberating the spirit world as well as the physical world, and even liberating hell. Because we established God's Day, the annihilation of hell and the downfall of Satan have become inevitable. Therefore, with the establishment of God's Day, I have completed my mission. (22-194, 1969.02.02)

8 You do not know how hard it was for me to establish God's Day. The time leading up to the inauguration of God's Day was the most difficult time. Although I had established Parents' Day, until I had established Children's Day to underpin Parents' Day, Parents' Day could not accomplish the role of Parents' Day. By the same token, although I had established Children's Day, until I had established the Day of All Things, Children's Day could not take up its responsibility as Children's Day. Therefore, God's Day, Parents' Day, Children's Day, and the Day of All Things have to become completely one and be under the dominion of God. The fact that this has not yet been achieved is reason for us to lament. God's Day, which was proclaimed worldwide on the first day of the first month of 1968, will be fully established when it is connected to these major holy days. (28-015, 1970.01.01)

9 Because Adam fell at the completion level of the growth stage, he must inevitably lead his family back to the completion level of the growth stage. Nevertheless, that

is not the point of completion. Moreover, because Adam and Eve fell at the completion level of the growth stage, I had to start from the completion level of the growth stage and go up through a seven-year course. Then I was able to proclaim God's Day, on the first day of the first month in 1968. Only after I completed the seven-year course and entered the realm of God's direct dominion could I inaugurate God's Day. Through the inauguration of God's Day, I indemnified all the days whose loss had caused incredible sorrow to God throughout the ages of history—Parents' Day, Children's Day, and the Day of All Things. I could then embark upon a full-fledged beginning on the global level. (122-105, 1982.11.01)

10 Having established God's Day, we should be able to march forward toward a higher level in new arenas in front of heaven and earth. History so far has been a history of indemnity. Even though we have worked hard, shedding sweat and sacrificing ourselves, all of it was only to pay indemnity; God could not truly take delight in it. Nonetheless, from now on, all the results that we bring through our hard work, shedding tears, blood and sweat, will no longer just flow away to Satan's world as indemnity conditions. From now on, our efforts will be connected to ourselves and we will harvest them as our own results. We have entered such an era. That is to say, the era has dawned when God can recognize all our efforts and hard work as His victory. Because God's Day established the boundary of the era wherein God can experience joy, we have entered a glorious era, an era when, based on our conditions, God can intervene. That is why I established God's Day. (19-178, 1968.01.01)

11 Now with the inauguration of God's Day, I have completed my first seven-year course centered on God. You can now begin your seven-year course, and I can go on to complete my twenty-one year course. Now I am beginning my second seven-year course. When my twenty-one year course is completed, the world will enter the era when God can directly lead us centered on Heaven's family. Please consider this seriously. The reason we are to establish tribes connected to Heaven's family is to save the Korean people. This is God's mission. He has therefore vested in us the mission of restoring our own tribe for the sake of this people. At the church level, the persecution is already gone. The tiresome and arduous era of indemnity has passed, and the era has arrived when we can reap what we sow. For this, we must give thanks to God. Now the era has arrived when if you make ten times the effort you can harvest ten times the result. This can be a matter of endless pride before God, and a matter of endless and bitter regret for Satan. Thus, today, January 1, 1968, at three o'clock in the morning, I hereby proclaim God's Day. On this day we must offer everything we have with utmost devotion to express our sincere gratitude to God and return glory to Him. Our descendants from generation to

generation forever more will praise this day. We will always praise this day, for it was the day when God's presence was made known to us. (19-178, 1968.01.01)

12 People celebrate their birthdays, wedding days and anniversaries. Nations celebrate their national holidays. Now the era has come when certain days are being celebrated globally. However, among the countless days that have been celebrated up to the present, there has not been even one day when we could attend God by sincerely celebrating God's own day. From the Principle, we are well aware of how great has been God's sorrow and how piercing and bitter His grief over this situation. God's Day could not be established as long as the barriers erected by the fallen world were standing in front of God. Therefore, in order to establish this day, I had to restore the standard through making indemnity conditions. Because fallen parents had emerged on earth, I had to indemnify them. After indemnifying the fallen parents, I established Parents' Day as the day of that victory. (19-176, 1968.01.01)

13 God's Day, which we welcome today, is the day of hope. It is the culmination of all that we desire. Furthermore, this event, which you are participating in, is incomparably greater than any event that the twelve disciples could celebrate in Jesus' time. God's Day has such incredible significance and value; it is the culmination of all days. That being so, what should be your attitude and your heart when celebrating this day? What kind of heart should each of you have? We should be able to bring Abel, who was murdered at the time of Adam and Eve, to celebrate this day. We should be the children upon whom our grandfather Noah would give his benediction, saying, "I praise your amazing spirit!" Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, the three patriarchs of faith, should also be able to praise you, "The hard toil and suffering we endured was ultimately to welcome this day, and we truly praise your amazing achievement!" Moreover, the people of Israel should praise you: "Thank you for preparing the realm of Israel for us, the realm that we were unable to realize even after we went through so many trials and tribulations with Moses while crossing the wilderness to recover the nation." From this or that perspective, you need to think, as you receive this day and celebrate it, about how much loyalty was demonstrated, how much suffering was endured, and how great a price was paid in sacrifices for this day. (28-028, 1970.01.01)

14 How much did you prepare yourself to receive this day of feasting that is called God's Day? Did you prepare more than you would prepare for the wedding of your only son? Ladies, on your wedding day, you must have made every effort to beautify yourself as best you could, washing yourself again and again and scrubbing all the dead skin off your body, before you entered your bridegroom's chamber. Did

you make more preparations than that for God's Day? You men, did you prepare yourself to attend God's Day with a heart more joyful than the heart with which you welcomed your bride? You may have overcome numerous obstacles, crying out, "I will die if you do not become my wife!" You may have surmounted difficult and even hopeless circumstances before finally achieving your desire to become her bridegroom. How much more extensively should you have prepared for this one-and-only holy God's Day ceremony, for which humankind has longed for six thousand years? You who are attending here must admit to yourselves that your sincerity and heart are lacking. This is not an event that you should merely attend. Rather, you must come having cultivated your heart in secret, unknown to anyone else in the Unification Church, striving to offer the highest level of sincere devotion. You should have the heart to sit at the place that is closest to God, not back in the middle of the crowd. (28-040, 1970.01.01)

15 More than anyone else, you must become aware of the profound significance and great value of God's Day. Each of you needs to take this day as a barometer as you pioneer and lay the groundwork for a life that can be glorified on this day. Further, you must remember this day as you fulfill your responsibility as Unification Church members. You must fulfill your responsibility for the Korean people and continue to advance unceasingly until they attend this day as their eternal God's Day. Now that God's Day is inaugurated, the time has come for numerous spirits from the spirit world to descend to earth, and with their assistance we can fight in earnest for God's desired Will. Until the present time, caught by the conditions for Satan to accuse, God has been paying compensation to Satan and defending Himself against him. However, now the conditions are established for God to claim Satan's world. Now the time has come when He can go on the offensive. The arena has opened for numerous saints and sages in the spirit world to descend to earth and freely carry out their work. (19-179, 1968.01.01)

True Parents' Birthday

16 Because of the Fall, the True Father had to emerge first, before the True Parents together. Today, believers in many religions surely wish that their own founder were the True Father, but God takes a different viewpoint. The person in the position of the True Father is to be born in the religion of religions. The True Father is the person who is qualified to procreate true children, that is, he is qualified to turn fallen children into true children. (83-043, 1976.02.05)

17 A historic time of transition is coming to the entire world. It is historically significant that today we celebrate True Parents' Birthday. Not only we Unification

Church members but also spirits from the spirit world—Unification Church members who went to the spirit world, Christians in the spirit world and all good spirits—have entered the realm where they can be celebrating this day together with us. We human beings on earth must serve as guideposts to lead heavenly fortune in one direction. Today, people who follow moral rules and who believe in religion must take responsibility to fulfill this. Yet, few among them are even dreaming this in their dreams. Most of them think they will go to the heavenly kingdom based on blind faith. In light of this, the fact that we are celebrating True Parents' Birthday today has cosmic significance. In the future, only those who genuinely celebrate True Parents' Birthday will be able to celebrate their own birthdays. (83-113, 1976.02.05)

18 It is an amazing fact that people of all five races have gathered here to celebrate my birthday. Who made this possible? It was not I. God's Will and God's love made it possible. Other people do not know, but you people know God's Will and you know God's love that dwells in the hearts of Unification Church members. Although the world opposes us and although this nation opposes us, we who know these things must march forward to accomplish God's Will, grateful to the end even if we must sacrifice everything we have. We know that doing this has the greatest value; therefore nothing can deter us. We may encounter great trials and tribulations, but we must overcome them no matter how difficult they are. Even if we are bombarded with things of no value from this world, we will nevertheless defend God's Will at the cost of our lives. We must be proud that we are investing our lives in order to seek God's love. Today all of you are congratulating Mother and me on our joint birthday. Although I am grateful to you for that, before doing so you have to resolve to unite all five races of humankind in front of God's Will and His love. Then you can celebrate this day on which Mother and I are united as one, and also offer praises to God. (096-268, 1978.02.12)

19 In this chaotic age that is the Last Days of human history, it was inevitable that God was preparing to establish a new history. Therefore, ever since history entered the period of global conflicts at the time of the First World War, it was foreseeable that global issues would arise that would determine humankind's direction—whether all the people of the world will rise or fall. From the perspective of the Will, if the western world chooses a direction leading to its downfall, and if western thought takes the path of decline, God will necessarily seek to maintain balance by elevating a teaching from the opposite hemisphere, the East. History goes in cycles, just as Earth revolves around the sun changing its position morning, noon, evening and night. Therefore, if western society is headed for its downfall, God will surely seek the path to a new morning in the Asian world. We can observe that today's

western world is enamored with Asian civilization. When did God begin such preparations in the East? God began them around the time of the First World War. Generally, within three years of a major event, everything comes to the surface. In fact, I was born in 1920. (103-041, 1979.02.02)

20 I heard that when I was in my mother's womb, some people were keeping themselves alive by eating the bark from pine trees. They scraped the trunk to get at the edible tissue inside the tree. I thought that God loved me, but why around the time of my birth did He drive the history of my country to such terrible depths? Also, at the time of my birth, my immediate family and clan suffered through many disastrous situations. I can understand the meaning of all these incidents because I know the law of indemnity. If I did not know this law, I might have thought that all those awful stories were made up. All of my family members and relatives had to pay indemnity—my cousins and their cousins; even more distant relatives paid the price. My family and clan were completely devastated just because of my birth. Until I reached the age of fifteen, they were never free from tribulation. (141-030, 1986.02.16)

21 You cannot imagine how much blood was shed whenever Korea was invaded by the powerful nations that surrounded it. Due to its geographical location, these invasions happened frequently. Throughout its bitterly sorrowful history, how many young men were drafted into armies, and how many young women were taken as slaves! Korea did not seek after such a course of pain and suffering, in which countless individuals and families were sacrificed, young men and women were sacrificed, its land was devastated and its sovereignty was trampled upon. You do not know how much humiliation my nation had to endure. Observing the things that happened within my family, I can see that all those tragedies did not occur just by chance. They were necessary, even though they were unimaginable, even in dreams. Based on the law of indemnity, in order to receive the Abel of all humankind, all the providential debts incurred throughout history had to be paid off by that one family in the four directions—front, back, right and left. From this perspective, you cannot deny that my family was called to be in a fateful position. Inevitably I had to be born from such a background. (171-262, 1988.01.02)

True Parents' Day

22 If the first ancestors, Adam and Eve, had not fallen, humankind would have already welcomed Parents' Day long ago. However because they fell, in order for humankind to welcome Parents' Day, first the True Parents had to come on earth and only then could Parents' Day be inaugurated. Then, only after True Parents had

given birth to children based on the standard of that day, could Children's Day be inaugurated. Once those days were inaugurated, we could also welcome the day that established our dominion over all things. God promised such days to the unfallen ancestors of humankind. However, as a result of the Fall of the human ancestors, the days to celebrate parents, children and all things, which are all part of God's ideal of creation, could not be inaugurated. God is the being who most wants to see the purpose of creation in heaven and on earth. Yet even He could not welcome these days on which He could rejoice and be proud. Of course we know that due to the Fall, Adam and Eve fell into a state of having lost God. However, we should know what God lost due to the Fall of Adam and Eve. He lost Parents' Day, Children's Day and the Day of All Things. God lost all these days, which He had hoped for. (16-177, 1966.03.22)

23 Because all people today are born of the fallen lineage, they are fated to moan in eternal misery. People may hope that they can attend God and enjoy happiness and glory while they are on earth. But what is the highest hope among hopes? It is to welcome Parents' Day. Without welcoming Parents' Day, we cannot enter the kingdom of heaven; nor can we go to God. Christians hope to see the day of the Marriage Supper of the Lamb, but in fact that day is none other than Parents' Day. Parents' Day is the day of hope for all humankind. (16-184, 1966.03.22)

24 The world needs God's sons and daughters who, on God's behalf, liberate all humankind and bring happiness to all people. Here we find the purpose for which Jesus came to earth. Parents' Day is the very day that heaven and earth have been hoping for. The hope of present-day Christians all over the world is to see the day of the Marriage Supper of the Lamb. That day has come; it is Parents' Day. Even though physically we are already fully grown, we must receive the Parents and be born again. Regardless of how deep our faith was, before Parents' Day we could not stand in a position closer to God than adopted children. When Jesus comes again, he will come with the Father's mission; he comes as the True Father to make us true children. (16-185, 1966.03.22)

25 People of all races and nationalities throughout the world celebrate their many holidays. But up to now they were not able to celebrate Parents' Day. Only in 1960 was Parents' Day established, in Korea. That day should be more joyful than the day of Korea's liberation. It should be more joyful than any other day when the world rejoices. This special day, Parents' Day, was established by the Unification Church, even as we were being pushed around and driven into a corner. Had this day not come, there would be no way to dissolve the bitter sorrow of heaven and earth. Had this day not been inaugurated, God could not have established a foothold of

victory on this earth that is still Satan's world. It is the day when God determined His day of victory. Also, it is the day when believers can be liberated. It is the day when all the hopes held by all the ideologies in the cosmos are brought to a singular fulfillment, and the day when heaven and earth are re-created. (16-185, 1966.03.22)

26 We should feel joy when we celebrate Parents' Day, and from the joy that we feel we should be able to reach the standard to be reborn. Hence, in addition to being the day to proclaim the Parents, Parents' Day is also the day to proclaim in front of heaven and earth that their children will soon be born. God created Adam and Eve as His children and blessed them to have dominion over all things. You are following the course of restoration on the basis of such a bond of heart. Hence, after you are able to relate with the True Parents, you must take the position of their children and, after that, receive the blessing to govern all things. Thus, Parents' Day is truly a significant day. Establishing Parents' Day led to Children's Day, and establishing Children's Day led to the Day of All Things. These three holy days emerged based on Parents' Day as the standard. (16-199, 1966.03.22)

27 The concept of Parents' Day was originally God's central concept in His ideal for the creation. After creating all things, God created human beings to have dominion over all things. The reason God blessed them to govern all things was none other than to make it possible to inaugurate the True Parents. Originally Adam and Eve should have become the True Parents by uniting with each other centered on God. Then Parents' Day would have been naturally established, and the universe would have offered hymns in name of the Parents. Thus, Parents' Day should have been a day of joy, with the universe offering hymns together in the name of the Parents. (13-280, 1964.04.12)

28 Parents' Day was never meant to be a day just for the Unification Church. Nor can we be satisfied with a Parents' Day that is just for Korea; nor can it manifest its full meaning if it is only for the earthly world. As the day the entire cosmos is finally able to come into harmony, Parents' Day must be a day when the whole universe rejoices with God. We should not conceive of Parents' Day only on the personal level. We must make the individual-level Parents' Day into the tribe-level Parents' Day, the tribe-level Parents' Day into the people-level Parents' Day, the people-level Parents' Day into the national-level Parents' Day, the national-level Parents' Day into the world-level Parents' Day, and the world-level Parents' Day into the cosmic-level Parents' Day. (16-195, 1966.03.22)

29 All people should be in the position to receive the True Parents. To do so, they must prepare everything based on True Parents' love. Thereby they can possess both the Parents' love and children's love. It requires that we, as brothers and sisters loved by True Parents, become one on the earth. This is how we can prepare everything and move forward. With True Parents as the center, we must resolve the bitter sorrow of history. Therefore, people of all five races must praise the joy of receiving True Parents, and with hearts bursting with love they must erase the endless suffering of this world. Only then can God finally take His Sabbath. (16-188, 1966.03.22)

True Children's Day

30 After God created all things in heaven and on earth, He was to have welcomed Children's Day centering on Adam and Eve. If He could have welcomed Children's Day at that time, then He would have gone on to establish Parents' Day, the Day of All Things and God's Day. In light of this, what is Children's Day all about? It is the day when we can be victorious as children and reach the position of universal glory. However, because the human ancestors fell, ever since the time of Adam not even one person has entered the glorious state that God would have permitted them to enter had they succeeded in aligning themselves with God's Will. Until that day, the purpose of history has been to restore humankind, or to save humankind, by pulling them back and placing them in the original position where they were at the beginning. This has been God's providential history of restoration. We should not celebrate Children's Day simply because it is a day different from other days. Children's Day is when we children celebrate that we, who due to the Fall could not enter the state where we could partake in God's glory, can finally for the first time in history abide in the state where we can participate in His glory. (21-181, 1968.11.20)

31 In order to have Children's Day, we must enable the children who have gone astray to cling on to God from the point where they went astray until they have corrected their wrongdoing. The establishment of Children's Day signifies the appearance of sons and daughters who are able to rectify the fact that they lost God due to the wrongful actions of God's children. Once those children emerge, they must find God by means of establishing Children's Day. Then God can rise to His place of glory and rejoice. When God rejoices, His sons and daughters rejoice, and all things rejoice as well. (21-186, 1968.11.20)

32 Why do we need Children's Day? We need Children's Day because we lost that day. Who lost that day? Adam and Eve lost it. Therefore, it is Adam and Eve who

must recover it. Since Adam and Eve made a mistake and created a hole, they must patch it up. So while the first Adam was the one who ruined things, the second Adam became the one who corrected things. The first Adam became the father who brought things to ruin, and the second Adam, Jesus, became the Father who brought salvation. (21-190, 1968.11.20)

33 That we inaugurated Children's Day in the Unification Church means that we dug up the sinful seeds sowed by Adam and Eve and made the foundation to liberate all humankind from evil. Prior to this, because Children's Day had not been established, all things of creation could not be liberated. They languished in the realm of lamentation, and God Himself also languished in that realm. As long as Children's Day was not inaugurated, we could not seek and find the Day of All Things, and all things of creation could not reach a position to be glorified. This left all things in bitter resentment. Moreover, God could not rejoice on seeing the arrival of His day of glory. All these outcomes resulted from not having established Children's Day. (21-186, 1968.11.20)

34 For fallen human beings, Children's Day is the greatest among the holy days. It is greater than Parents' Day because it is the day for Parents to recover their authority. Satan had trampled on human history for six thousand years, but on Children's Day we chase him out and hold up the flag of victory. Fallen people must receive that day if they are to enter the heavenly kingdom and attend the Heavenly Parent. We Unification Church members cannot attend the Heavenly Parent only by ourselves. To attend Him we must build a bridge for others to do the same. Furthermore, we must build a bridge for those who have gone to the spirit world, both men and women. This day is not only for Unification Church members; it is a day for all people of the world to mark and celebrate forever and ever. Children's Day is indeed the most blessed day for fallen humankind. (21-202, 1968.11.20)

Day of All True Things

35 The Day of All Things is the day that dissolves the bitter sorrow of all things of creation. However, human beings are qualified to dissolve the bitter sorrow of all things only if they stand in the position of Adam and Eve before the Fall. From the beginning, dominion over all things of creation should have had True Parents' love at the center. This is a principle of heavenly law. Without True Parents' love, there could be no Children's Day. As children were supposed to be born only through the love of True Parents, the Day of All Things could emerge only from the love of True Parents. What qualifications must we have in order to welcome the Day of All Things? We must stand in a position higher than Adam and Eve were before they

fell. That position can be created only through the love of the True Parents. However, we were born in the position bound to Adam and Eve's fall, and hence, contrary to our desire, we came to live in the realm of Satan's dominion. (18-205, 1967.06.08)

36 The Day of All Things was inaugurated to resolve the bitter sorrow of the world of all created things. It took place after the inauguration of Children's Day in Korea, for the historic resolution of humankind's bitter sorrow. That, in turn, resulted from the historic resolution of bitter sorrow with the inauguration in Korea of Parents' Day. These three holy days secured a firm foundation for God's power, which Satan cannot expel from the earth. They firmly established the foundation for launching God's final providence on earth. The Day of All Things is like a wall that blocks Satan. It must grow higher and higher. The more people we have on Heaven's side, the larger the wall to block Satan will grow. When the power of God's side grows as more people rise to His standard, His side will be victorious and the kingdom of heaven will be established. I am looking at the matter from this perspective. That is why I established the Day of All Things in 1963. (18-206, 1967.06.08)

37 Originally, all things were created for human beings and were meant to be under their dominion. However, due to the Fall of the first human ancestors, Adam and Eve, all things have not been governed by original human beings but instead came under Satan's dominion. As a result, God could not establish relationships with all things. All things were put under the realm of Satan's dominion as a result of the Fall of the human ancestors. Therefore, it is up to us to eliminate Satan's authority, which invaded even the realm of all things on earth; otherwise they cannot return to their original position. Because we human beings drove all things into the realm of lamentation, the responsibility to liberate all things is on our shoulders. (23-328, 1969.06.15)

38 What had to be done to establish the Day of All Things? Because it was the Fall of the human ancestors that caused all things to fall into Satan's realm, the True Ancestors of humankind would have to emerge in order to restore them. Then, based on restoring God's relationship with His children that He had originally given to Adam as a blessing, all things could be restored to the realm of the dominion of God's children. Based on the vertical bond between Parents and children, we were able to connect with one another horizontally. In this way we established the standard for having dominion over the entire created world. That is why, in the Unification Church, Children's Day was established based on Parents' Day, and then on the foundation of Children's Day, the Day of All Things was established.

Therefore, the Day of All Things must not be a day that people commemorate by themselves, but one that they celebrate together. (23-329, 1969.06.15)

39 We have welcomed Parents' Day and then Children's Day. However, we cannot achieve complete restoration with only parents and children. When God blessed the first human beings, he told them to be fruitful, multiply, and subdue all created things. Thus, as there are parents and children, there must also be all things of creation that can come under their dominion. Therefore, as we celebrate this Day of All Things, let us first resolve to connect all things to Heaven centering on the Unification family. Then, after realizing our own true family, we can bring all things into total unity. This is how we can connect ourselves with Heaven. (23-333, 1969.06.15)

40 As we welcome the Day of All Things, consider the fact that even though we established God's Day, we have so far been unable to link with all things and bring them into the position where God can have dominion over them. Therefore, today, all things of the created world must not remain the possessions of this or that individual. Until they belong to God they have to pass through the stages of restoration, by our offering them in the name of True Parents. (23-332, 1969.06.15)

Foundation Day for the Unified Nation of Heaven and Earth

41 Today is National Foundation Day in the Republic of Korea. It is year 4321 of the Dangun Era, 1988 by the solar calendar. Today, I inaugurate the Foundation Day of the Unified Nation. When, as you attended your siblings, this Korean holiday became the Day of the Unified Nation, all your wishes were fulfilled. Indeed, have attained all your hopes. What are the hopes of fallen people? I gave you God: You did not know even whether He existed, but now you know the true God. I brought you to the knowledge of God. I gave you God as a gift; I gave you True Parents as a gift; I gave you a true spouse as a gift; I gave you true sons and daughters; and I gave you the opportunity to build a true tribe. In fact, I have given you everything. I am giving you the opportunity to create even a true nation, and now all that remains is a true world. That is why I am launching today as the kick-off day for the true Nation of the Unified World. This is the starting point of the Foundation Day for all nations of the world. (181-240, 1988.10.03)

42 During the Seoul Olympics, the external standards of heavenly law, a four-position foundation, was met in virtually every way. This year is year 4321 of the Dangun Era. The fact that the year ends in the number 21 is remarkable. In Korea, today is National Foundation Day. Foundation Day means that it is the time for

heaven to be opened. Why do we call this “the day of the opening of heaven,” Gae Cheon Jeol. The first syllable is gae (開), meaning open. The second syllable is cheon (天), meaning heaven. Gae Cheon Jeol means the day of the opening of heaven. Hence, as this is the time to open heaven, once the individual gate to heaven is open, we must open the national level gate and then open the world-level gate. Having done so, the fortune of Korea will continue rolling toward the world, internally, externally, and in all directions—front and back, and left and right. That is why today is the Foundation Day for the Nation of the Unified World. Further, since this day is in accord with the perspective of the Unification Church’s teachings on history and its experiences, there should be no dispute if we call it the day when we open the gate to the era of hope. It is the Foundation Day for the Nation of the Unified World, which is the heavenly kingdom. The Nation of the Unified World is the heavenly kingdom on earth. This is the Day of the Opening of Heaven for the heavenly kingdom on earth. (181-294, 1988.10.03)

43 The Old Testament Age was the era when material things were sacrificed; the New Testament Age was the era of the children’s sacrifice. The Completed Testament Age is the era when the Parents sacrifice themselves. The Parents are the ones who are sacrificing everything. That is why I am carrying the cross of love on my shoulders. Because I know the entire philosophy of love, I hope I will lead all humankind to the world that we all dream of. However, Satan has been trying to block me in every way possible from going on the path to realize such a world. Satan desperately tried to stop me from building that bridge. Nevertheless, despite indescribable struggles, due to Heaven’s support and my loyalty for the sake of the Will, today, based on the standard of paying all indemnity on the global level, I could declare the Day of the Unified Nation. There is no news more joyful than that. When we look into the three ages, the Old Testament Age, New Testament Age and Completed Testament Age, God gave to Satan everything that He considered most precious. (181-331, 1988.10.03)

44 Only after securing for God the authority of unified ownership can a unified world that is aligned with the standard of God’s heart come into existence. Only when we restore the authority of God’s ownership can we move forward to a unified world—one world led by the True Parents, in heaven and on earth. Based on their foundation, the world’s authority of ownership must surely be returned to God’s authority of ownership. Even if your mother and father oppose it, because we have arrived at a propitious time when we can offer everything in front of Heaven, everyone in the Unification Church must accept this as a tradition. Circumstances are such that when your clan accepts it as a tradition, that clan will be completely

liberated. On that basis, you on earth will be in the position of Adam and Eve, all believers in the heavenly world will be in the position of the archangel, and you will become their ancestors. After living on earth and giving birth to children, you will become the grandfathers and grandmothers of thousands of generations and have thousands of generations of descendants. This is how God's work of opening the gate to the heavenly kingdom will take place. (181-333, 1988.10.03)

Chil Il Jeol (Declaration Day of God's Eternal Blessing)

45 Today is Chil Il Jeol (7.1 Day). Chil Il Jeol is the Day of the Declaration of God's Eternal Blessing. Human beings have not yet fulfilled the three great blessings that God bestowed on them after He created them. God's hope throughout history is that, through the providence of salvation, God's blessings will be fulfilled at some point in time. Unless this is concluded at some point, human happiness and God's ideal world can never be realized. Therefore unless God's promised blessings can be revived and established as eternal blessings, the eternal ideal world of humankind cannot be realized. Someone must take on this task. That someone is not just anyone. It is possible only when the right person comes, the one chosen by God to accomplish the ideal of the original perfected Adam who has nothing to do with the Fall. In other words, we can conclude that this task can be done with the coming of the True Parents. (232-007, 1992.07.01)

46 Why have God's eternal blessings not been realized? The three great blessings were not fulfilled due to the emergence of the false parents of humankind. In order to restore that through indemnity, the True Parents of humankind must come and stand in the position to settle accounts for everything in providential history. Then they must declare, "We are standing in the position where we can shout 'mansei' for God's eternal blessings." Otherwise, those children, tribes, nations and world under their command cannot stand confidently in front of God. For this reason, I am declaring that God's eternal blessings are once again available to humankind. This is Chil Il Jeol. (232-009, 1992.07.01)

47 In 1991, just before the beginning of 1992, I completed a forty-year period in my life. Through that course of trials and tribulations, I re-indemnified what I initially did as I walked through the seven-year course from 1945 to 1952. In this way I finally cleared everything, all the debts of human history. Therefore, the time is coming when I will be able to introduce Mother as the Mother of this world, and Mother's children as the children of the world. All this can be done through Chil Il Jeol. This is what Chil Il Jeol is about. We lost the realm of the chosen people, the First Israel, and we lost Christianity, which is also the realm of the chosen people,

the Second Israel. What was lost must be restored. By restructuring the family, we must restore families, tribes, peoples, and even nations so that they can belong to Heaven. For this we must reach up to the national level in Satan's world. (286-036, 1997.07.01)

48 Due to the Fall, humankind lost God's three great blessings. In this course of restoration, before God's substance appeared, I had to proclaim that these were begun again. That is what Chil Il Jeol is for. Hence, as we ended the year 1991 and entered 1992, I had to proclaim this. Foreseeing that this transitional point in history was upon us, I settled all the accounts in biblical history. I have definitively settled all accounts. The first words that God gave to human beings were the "three great blessings." Therefore, everything had to be cleared up in order to set the standard for God's Word to be given, and I had to stand in the position that was beyond the standard of everyone's past investments. Only on that foundation could I announce the Completed Testament Age along with the declaration about the True Parents. In other words, God's purpose in leading the providence with all kinds of programs thus far was only to see this time. (248-074, 1993.07.01)

49 Today, on this occasion of Chil Il Jeol, I again promise you God's eternal blessings. Therefore, there must be no Fall from now on. Although the Fall occurred at the time of Adam and Eve, henceforth the Fall must not happen. Now that the promise of eternal blessing has been proclaimed, the Fall must not occur in this era of history. Adam and Eve must attain their central position by growing from the level of little children to the level of adults. They must grow until they reach perfection. However, in the end, there is still Adam and Eve's own five-percent portion of responsibility, which they must accomplish within the realm of dominion based on accomplishments through the Principle. Only when they are connected with God through love in both spirit and body can they do as they wish, being in a direct relationship with God both internally and externally. Until that connection is made, they are still separated. They are not yet fully united. However, now that I have proclaimed the True Parents as well as the Completed Testament Age, based on the foundation of your unity with the Parents, the unification between the realm of dominion based on accomplishments through the Principle and the realm of God's direct dominion has been realized in the family. I am saying that the era has arrived in which God can directly intervene in both the realm of direct dominion and the realm of dominion based on accomplishments through the Principle. (248-077, 1993.07.01)

50 Today, July first, is Chil Il Jeol. As July is the number seven, it corresponds to the jubilee year. It means we have entered the historical age of liberation. Throughout

history women have been held in captivity in the most miserable ways. That is why I established the Women's Federation for World Peace, with the objective to unite all women of the world for their liberation. Who is leading it? Mother is leading it. Mother is its representative. We should be grateful that Mother could emerge, and this is thanks to the establishment of Chil Il Jeol. With that, I could dispatch tribal messiahs, and meet Kim Il Sung and win him over. Afterwards, when I returned to South Korea, the public finally recognized my name. (232-050, 1992.07.01)

51 God blessed Adam to fulfill the three great blessings in his family, "Be fruitful, multiply, and have dominion over all things of creation in heaven and on earth," but he was not able to fulfill them. However, for the first time since the beginning of history, I recovered God's blessings. Then, standing on top of the world, I victoriously proclaimed His eternal blessings for humankind. On the foundation of this proclamation, Mother could finally appear in public on the world stage. While it took forty to fifty years for me to reach this position, Mother reached it in only nine months. Based on the standard that Mother attained by uniting with me in absolute obedience, I could then present Mother and proclaim women's liberation. Now, in front of Mother's perfected historical standard, we men and women on earth can be in complete oneness with True Parents based on God's true love. Thereby we can establish this victorious foundation all over the world. It is truly amazing that we can proclaim the victory of God's eternal blessing, after years in the trenches undergoing circumstances of opposition from nations and the world. Chil Pal Jeol (Day of the Declaration of the Realm of the Cosmic Sabbath for the Parents of Heaven and Earth) (232-035, 1992.07.01)

52 At seven minutes and seven seconds past seven o'clock in the morning of the seventh day of the seventh month of 1997 by the lunar calendar, we fulfilled the goal of this year's motto, "Let us love True Parents and be proud of True Parents by accomplishing the 3.6 million couples Blessing." We did this by completing the Blessing of 3.6 million couples. Father, You sent True Parents to the earth, and they are standing before You. Through them, You are now able to express Your heart and educate all humankind about Your inner reality, of which they were ignorant throughout the ages of Your arduous and sorrowful history. As a result of losing Adam and Eve during the period of their adolescence, You came to face the breakdown of the family. When they were but sixteen years old, they succumbed to Satan's plot and ended up leaving a sad history behind them. This is because Adam, who should have been related with God by blood, instead formed a blood relationship with Satan. In order to erect the new history of the heavenly kingdom, You established the religious realm and began cleansing the lineage of the archangelic realm, namely, Satan's lineage. Your providence to bring individual

salvation, it was to recover the eldest son in the archangelic realm. On the foundation of going beyond the Old Testament and New Testament Ages, now in the Completed Testament Age we are attending the Messiah in the realm of the chosen people. In this age of the Second Advent, where salvation has reached the worldwide level, we have entered a tremendous age when we must, on the world-level path, clean up the young people's distorted views on ethics and end the family breakdown that was caused by the first Adam. (286-078, 1997.08.09)

53 The heavenly kingdom has been empty. Adam's family could not enter it, nor could all the generations of our ancestors. The True Parents, by being perfected as the world-level ancestors of humankind, must reorganize the first, second and all subsequent generations, and fill the hitherto empty heavenly kingdom. Once they have done so and reversed the way the world moves by 180 degrees, God can be as active as He pleases in the heavenly kingdom of freedom and liberation, because Satan will be gone. Chil Pal Jeol is the day to declare the realm of liberation, where God has no obstacles in His coming and going from the individual to the level of the physical world and the heavenly world. It is the day we proclaim the Realm of Cosmic Sabbath for the Parents of Heaven and Earth. (286-112, 1997.08.09)

54 August 9, 1997 is the "Day of the Declaration of the Realm of Cosmic Sabbath for the Parents of Heaven and Earth." Heaven (cheon), in the term Parents of Heaven and Earth (Cheon Ji Bum), symbolizes the Father. Heaven, the Father, is eternal. The Father is eternal. Accordingly, fathers must have great dignity. You should become such fathers. Mothers must be thoughtful and pay attention to detail. Then even as a mother and her sons and daughters build a home in a father's bosom, his heart will have room to take on more responsibilities. We can get through anything with true love. When you reach the heavenly kingdom, you have to enter through a gate. As long as you can show your true love token, you will have no problem passing through it. (286-124, 1997.08.09)

55 Once we recover our family, we can form our tribe upon it. Once we build our tribe, a people can emerge upon that base. Based on one people, we can establish a nation. Finally, once we establish a nation, we can arrive at the realm of freedom where we can create the world and the heavenly kingdom on earth and in heaven. Because I gave the Blessing, the standard of which transcends nation, race and religion, the world can no longer oppose us. Hence, Satan's world will be shut down and even he will have to swallow it. No one but the True Parents can deal with this matter. That is why I can say that the era has come when we need to resolve to perfect the individual, the family, the tribe, the people, the nation, the world, and the heavenly kingdom on earth and in heaven according to the original tradition of

God. We have come to a point when we can practice all this all the time. Satan cannot oppose us because we have reached this standard. Now, having gone this way, we have laid the foundation to establish this realm of victory and this environment of freedom. On this foundation, we can declare the Realm of Cosmic Sabbath for the Parents of Heaven and Earth. (286-168, 1997.08.09)

56 An ideal home is a place where God can visit and take His Sabbath rest. To make your home an ideal home, first you must get rid of the concept that your home is yours personally. Instead, you must make it the home of your couple. Then God can dwell in your personal place and also dwell in your spouse's—your wife or husband's— place. The greater the love your couple shares, the greater will be God's desire to visit your home. It does not matter if the husband and wife come from different traditions and have different characters, different viewpoints and different shapes. Regardless, that family should be able to attend God. Their unity as a couple tightly bonded as one, although they are 180 degrees different from each other, inspires God to want to visit their home as a place to take His Sabbath. You couples must make your family a place where God can take His Sabbath. The invisible God should be able to come in and, as the subject partner, He should become like the couples loving mind. The couple, like Adam and Eve, should become as His substantial body. Then they should reach the standard of oneness in mind and oneness in body that will join God to their Sabbath rest in the place of their love, where their minds and bodies are united as one. When a couple creates a place for Sabbath rest on the foundation of the love of man and woman, they make a place where God can take His Sabbath rest in their family. (286-164, 1997.08.09)

57 We must find a place to take our Sabbath rest. We must find a home where you as an individual can take your Sabbath rest and where you as a couple can take your Sabbath rest together. When you as a couple give birth to children and they live with you, then your home should become a place of Sabbath rest through the subject partner-object partner relationships between parents and children. This is what is the most important. In the family, you must fulfill the formation, growth and perfection stages. Hence, if one is missing, if either you are not there or I am not there, it means that God cannot find a place to rest. It means that without you, God cannot perfect His love even after myriads of years. Therefore, you must become one with Him and become filial sons and daughters who can attend Him for myriads of years. You must know the depth of God's bitter sorrow for not having been able to meet His filial sons and daughters, and by resting with your couple He should be able to wash away even the root of that bitter heart. You must resolve that you will make a foundation to live forever with God and attend God as your

Father; on that foundation you should be able to induce God to pledge that He will live with you. Where should you go next? You should go to the family-level place of Sabbath rest. Only then can your home become a place where you can fulfill the formation, growth, and completion stages—an individual, a couple, and children. Then, in the children's homes, God can dwell forever, in the couple's home, God can dwell forever, and in each individual's home, God can dwell forever. The entire family can dwell forever in the midst of God's love. That is why, at this point, we can witness that the family is the starting point of the heavenly kingdom on earth and in heaven. (286-165, 1997.08.09)

Section 2. Anniversaries

1 Jesus sought to form his family, but he died on the cross before he could establish it. Before he was crucified, Jesus referred to himself as the bridegroom, which implies the existence of a bride. On the cross he bequeathed the unfulfilled family ideal, to be recovered later. This is the reason, although they went on paths of suffering, Christians for the past two thousand years have been waiting for him to come back to life on the day of his Second Coming. Jesus certainly must come and find the bride who is prepared for him. Only then can the three purposes of love that he sought to establish in the family be brought to completion. The occasion for this is the Marriage Supper of the Lamb prophesied in the Book of Revelation. Because the first ancestors fell, True Parents who are in accord with God's Will did not emerge, and humankind has been attending false parents, the false ancestors. Still, God, being the Alpha and the Omega, has been trying to realize in the end what He had envisioned at the beginning. He will fulfill what went wrong in the Book of Genesis by what is prophesied in the Book of Revelation. (53-062, 1972.03.04)

True Parents' Holy Wedding

2 Our Holy Wedding that was held in 1960 was vital to indemnifying and resolving all the issues that had impeded the four thousand-year course of history from Adam to Jesus and the two thousand-year course of history from Jesus to the present day. Despite the global and cosmic significance of that ceremony, in reality it was held in the presence of a small number of people and amid persecution that was beyond imagination. The period from 1953 to 1960, when I was preparing for this ceremony, was a time of enormous persecution as well. During those days, we received persecution from at least 3.6 million people, from three denominations and three nations. Our Holy Wedding Ceremony was the victory attained by going

through all this and setting up indemnity conditions. That day was the day that decided the destiny of the Unification Church. (22-189, 1969.02.02)

3 By 1960, the Unification Church members had pooled their resources and laid a foundation, building more than 120 churches throughout the nation. Even with that in place, we continued building our foundation to assure that we would not collapse or perish, even if challenged by a national- level test. On that foundation, in 1960, I conducted our Holy Wedding. This was a new level, and it could be accomplished only because we were fulfilling the mission of serving the Korean people and establishing the Unification congregation, the tribal level. That was a historic beginning point. (074-100, 1974.11.14)

4 The impact of the Holy Wedding was not limited to a single individual; it affected the direction of world history. It proclaimed the beginning of the first family, a family that God could love more than He had ever loved anyone or any family, and for the sake of which He had invested all of His heart in the global providence throughout history. Thus, based on this family beginning, the heavenly norms and the fortunes of heaven and earth would inevitably have to move. (83-341, 1976.02.15)

5 The Unification Church established its family-level foundation in 1960. With this in place, it will not perish. Had we failed to establish that foundation, the church would have perished. What a historic event our Holy Wedding in 1960 was! It came on the foundation of Heaven's effort, through the course of the six thousand years of providential history, to find the one Adam. On that day, this Adam reached the standard on earth to receive the perfected Eve. This meant that the spirit world and physical world, which had been divided, could finally be joined on earth. Man represents heaven and woman represents earth. By their joining, the divided spirit world and physical world were joined. The wall that separated Adam and Eve and made them enemies to each other was broken down. The wall that had prevented Adam and Eve from meeting God collapsed. Satan had to slink away. (122-097, 1982.11.01)

6 The one who was to become the True Mother had to be from a family with three generations of only daughters. From her youth, Mother grew up as an only daughter, alone and without getting any help from others. The reason God made her an only daughter was to prevent Satan's lineage from remaining. Mother's mother was also an only daughter, and her mother too was an only daughter. Three generations were involved, and Mother had to go through trials spanning these three generations. When she was a child, her grandmother and mother were

seekers, intoxicated by their life of faith. Do you think they changed Mother's diapers on time or fed her well? Their only thought was to follow a path of absolute obedience and absolute submission to God with single-minded devotion. They were even oblivious to taking care of their health as they followed the way of Heaven's heart. They were indifferent to practical considerations associated with the human world. (195-147, 1989.11.07)

7 Were it not for God's Will, I could not have met Mother. We met each other because of the Will. The person who would be True Mother was not to be beyond her twenties. In truth, she was not to be even a day older than eighteen. Eve fell when she was sixteen. Hence, she had to be within three years of that age, not yet nineteen. (231-024, 1992.05.31)

8 Mother's love had to be as pure as that of a lamb. In all respects she had to meet necessary conditions of absolute obedience. For this, she had to completely sacrifice herself for her husband. In loving her husband she had to be absolute. She was not supposed to compare him with anyone, thinking or saying, "He is not as good as my father," or, "He is not as good as my older brother." Why is that? In the Garden of Eden, Eve had never seen any man other than Adam. She had no capacity to conceive thoughts about other men. (97-296, 1978.03.26)

9 All the conditions had to be met before choosing Mother. She had to fit in each direction, front and back, left and right, above and below. The first condition concerned the lineage of which she was born. It was important to discern whether she was born linked to a lineage vulnerable to accusation from Satan's world, or born of a lineage with hidden links by which she could overcome such accusations. (170-031, 1987.11.01)

10 Mother has poise. She may remain silent and still demonstrate inner qualities that make her highly regarded even among the most distinguished women. Through her, I am educating western people to think, "If this is feminine beauty in the East, I want to marry such a woman." I know many western men who decided to marry a woman from the East because they assumed that they all are like Mother. In that light, I believe Mother has made a great contribution by presenting the best image of womanhood to our church members throughout the world. On that basis alone, I would say that she has sufficient qualification to be Mother. (170-037, 1987.11.01)

11 The Holy Wedding was held fourteen years after the liberation of Korea— seven years plus another seven years. Adam and Eve were to be married at the

completion level of the growth stage, which is beyond the standards of the formation-stage Old Testament Age and the growth-stage New Testament Age. That is why I had to pass through a seven-year period for each of those stages, in order to advance to a position where I had attained the completion level of the growth stage. This means I had to go beyond the level of a nation. (212-080, 1991.01.02)

The Day of the Founding of the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity

12 Reflecting our historical relationship with Christianity, the official name of the Unification Church includes the word “Christianity” God does not wish to remain a God who exists only for the Unification Church or only for Christianity. The Unification Church did not emerge for its own sake; nor does Christianity exist for its own sake. The two should create a bond and build a relationship centering on their common purpose, and go forth centering on that greater global vision. (49-184, 1971.10.10)

13 The name “Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity” signifies the purpose of unifying the world through the Holy Spirit, but based on the parent-child relationship. It is the Holy Spirit that creates harmony between the spirit world and the earthly world centering on love. To the Holy Spirit, opening the eyes of a blind person or the ears of a deaf person is not a primary concern. That is not what God needs. The Bible states that we should worship in spirit and in truth. To what truth does this refer? It is the truth of love. What is the highest expression of this truth? It is the love between the Father and His children. God does not need money, power or knowledge. He needs there to be love. (113-103, 1981.05.01)

14 Unification (tong-il) means two become one. The Chinese character tong (#t) means to command. It means the character of the subject partner. It is not about confederation; it is about unification, because the concept of unification includes the position of the subject partner. The Unification Church is not an alliance of churches. It is the Unification Church. It takes the role of the subject partner. Where can we find the origin of that subject character? That origin begins in heart, the heart of the absolute God that will remain for eternity. (82-285, 1976.02.01)

15 I did not want to establish a denomination. Our name is the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity, but I did not intend to create an organization. I wanted to lead a supra-denominational movement, one that transcends all denominations, but it did not work out. That is why I had to create the Unification Church despite my original intention. (163-161, 1987.05.01)

16 The fact that trials and tribulations accompanied the establishment of the Unification Church is sad to a certain extent, when viewed from the perspective of the Will of Heaven. However, when we look back at the church's history and tradition, the fact that it was established under such difficult circumstances does make it more impressive. The Unification Church was not established in a position where all would welcome it; it was in a rather lonely position on the day of its inauguration. Only a few people gathered, and they proclaimed it in tears. Such was the sorrowful circumstance of its founding, but now that circumstance has become the center of our church's historical memory. People usually wish for good things, but what seems good is not always truly good. Good things can pass like a mundane daily routine. But when we are overcoming difficulties to find what is good, that history is the source of an enduring power. That power urges us on to promising new days, days resplendent with greetings of good things. (43-239, 1971.05.01)

17 What kind of religious organization is the Unification Church? The Unification Church emerged in the form of a new, Abel-type religion that existed for the sake of Christianity, which was opposing it. When Christianity's opposition prevented the fulfillment of God's Will, we had to establish the Unification Church to represent Christianity. So Christianity stands in the position of Cain and the Unification Church stands in the position of Abel. If we are to become this Abel-type religious body, what has to be the first thing we restore? It is Christianity. We should restore Christianity by the same principle that applies in Abel restoring Cain. (54-196, 1972.03.24)

18 The impetus for establishing the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity began from the Divine Will, the Will of God, not any human will. Societies and histories are not formed by human will alone. They always move toward a single purpose centered on the greater purpose in the Divine Will. Thus, I understood that if the Holy Spirit Association were created solely by human will, it would not be able to contribute to the flow of history and the new world that is coming. The new religion that I founded is grounded in the Divine Will. I believe that religion is the only entity that can combine human will with the Divine Will. Therefore, I believe that this religion has to unite the entire spectrum of human affairs—those things that humankind desires—with the Divine Will, without fail. (32-193, 1970.07.15)

19 God began the Unification Church; therefore it must not deviate from God's path. It had a single beginning; thus its path must take a single direction, and it must arrive at a single destination. Since it began from God, it cannot take a path of its own volition. Since God set the purpose for this organization, and we are

gathered according to His purpose, we are moving in a direction united with that purpose. That direction is not something we can control on our own. (67-269, 1973.07.22)

20 We can consider the Unification Church to have the longest history of any religion. The reason I say this is because it has unearthed the history of God's love, which no one has known. The world of love transcends time and space. Our history began there, and the church is on the way to that destination. As it continues on this path, it delineates and manifests the place of history's final consummation and connects the sphere of human activity to it. Hence, this church's history is a history of the past, the present and the future. (061-031, 1972.08.20)

21 Now we are changing our name from the Unification Church to the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification. As the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification, we will be at the center to lead the way. Previously the name Unification Church was out in front leading the way, but the time has come for the Family Federation to take the lead while the use of the name "Unification Church" gradually disappears. The phrase "Unification of World Christianity" associated with the Unification Church will disappear. Christianity was unable to fulfill its responsibility. As we enter the era for going beyond that level, the blessings reserved for Christianity will be transferred to all humankind. Our organization was named the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity. Yet as the standard of family messiahship takes root on earth centering on the True Parents, we will complete even the responsibility of the Holy Spirit. The successors of True Parents will live on this earth attending the substantial Holy Spirit. True Parents, who laid the foundation for the families representing spiritual and physical perfection, will be the one model. This model is what they will expand to the nation, the world and the cosmos. Then the era of the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity will pass. (283-010, 1997.04.08)

22 The organizations that met today represent the nucleus that can bring solidarity centering on the one family. The Women's Federation stands in the mother's position. The Youth Federation stands in the position of Cain. The Student Federation stands in the position of Abel. Standing with Mother in the position of Eve, these three organizations must unite as one. From now on, whenever we carry out our group's activities, we should not operate separately but work together as one. Our organizations worked separately until now because the age we were in focused on the vertical relationship. By working separately, Satan could not overcome us from above, as he might have otherwise. That is why I did not encourage you to form horizontal relationships among the organizations for which

you were working. I created many organizations, and my purpose for doing so was for each of them to set its own vertical indemnity conditions on the world level. However, now that the time has come to bring an end to vertical indemnity, we can develop horizontally. Therefore, all organizations will be connected through the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification. The family has to have a solid footing on earth; otherwise, all the restoration through indemnity will have been for naught. So I have outlined the formula. (283-233, 1997.04.13)

23 If you had inherited the lineage of true love centering on God, you would now be a true being imbued with true life, true lineage and true conscience. However, due to the Fall, you became a false self; that is why your mind and body are in conflict. Now, however, the time has come for all of you throughout the world to join the family of the original Adam. Indeed, all the people of the world must perfect themselves based on this family. What must we do to reach perfection? Fallen families have to take up the task of restoration through indemnity. Individuals and families throughout the world have to invest themselves to accomplish this, under the guidance of the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification. Perfection has to be achieved by Adam and Eve, a man and a woman. God cannot do it for them. True Parents cannot do it for them. For this purpose, the Family Federation was created. It is a global organization; it will assist you all over the world to leap beyond fallen Adam's lineage. When you are climbing to the top of a mountain, if on a slope you make a misstep and tumble down, you have to climb up again. It is the same when climbing up the course of restoration. Every time you make a misstep you have to climb back up again. You have to repeat it again and again until you are successful, even if it takes millions or tens of millions of years. (275-010, 1995.10.30)

The prison course and the Day of Victory of Love

24 When I was imprisoned and my hair was shaved off, I prayed to God, saying that I had not consented to having my head shaved, but that the hand of the enemy had dragged me here and forcibly shaved off my hair. You do not know how my eyes burned and glistened at that time. It was bitter to put aside any thoughts of happiness as I watched my hair fall to the floor. The adversities we have to undergo during the course of restoration are intertwined with bitter circumstances. I endured them all. At the time I had to face them, it was bitter sorrow. However, when looking back, I now realize that I was able to overcome each one because God remembered me. This was also the case when I collapsed after being beaten and tortured for several days. I was not beaten for my own sake but for the sake of my people. The tears I shed in pain were tears of indemnity shed on their behalf. As

I struggled to cling to God, my life had to be a course of indemnity to the point of receiving His sympathy. I walked this path alone. (18-165, 1967.06.04)

25 The moment I collapsed after being tortured was the moment I could hear God's voice. I met God when I was on the verge of death. Until the truth of the Unification Church was revealed to the world, numerous incidents happened out of sight, incidents you do not know about. You cannot fathom the deep valleys and dark caverns I had to pass through. Even God would ask me, "How did this befall you?" I came to think that suffering was not a bad thing; I did not grieve over having gone to prison. Instead I thought, "This is the way I can receive blessings. It is God's way to bequeath what He owns to me." (080-083, 1975.10.14)

26 If I were to show you my body, you would see scars, scars that remain from the path that I walked. Whenever I look at them, they seem to me like medals that humankind and God awarded me. They challenge me: "Have you forgotten the determination you made at that time, your pledge to place your life on the line and go forward until death?" It was miserable to get those scars, but as long as they don't disappear, I cannot disappear. Whenever I see them, whether in the morning, at noon or in the evening, I pledge to myself that I will be victorious. I encourage myself, saying, "You received these scars as medals, so now you must succeed!" (088-194, 1976.08.17)

27 When I labored at the Hungnam prison, I carried sacks of ammonia fertilizer with my bare hands in the bitter cold winter. The open wounds in my hands were deep, to the point that my bones were visible through the flesh. Though my hands were bleeding, I continued carrying sacks of ammonia fertilizer every day. Our cotton uniforms completely wore out in a week. After half a year of labor in that place, the cells of my body began to die, so that if you pinched the flesh, water would come out. However, I said to myself that this was not a problem at all. I posed the question to myself: "Do you think this is difficult? If you do, then surely you will forsake Heaven when things get even worse. Are you going to be a traitor to Heaven?" (73-160, 1974.08.29)

28 At the prison in Hungnam, after the inmates finished shoveling fertilizer into bags, they were provided time to eat their rations. They were so hungry that they did not wait for others to receive their food. As soon as they received their bowl they instinctively stuffed the food into their mouths. As they chewed their food, they fixed their eyes on the other inmates' bowls. They finished eating their own portion even before the distribution of food was completed. Yet forgetting that they had already eaten their own food, when they saw other people receive food and

noticed that their own bowl was empty, they would quarrel with the person next to them, saying, “You ate my food, right?” There were also many incidents of people choking to death while stuffing their food into their mouths. If a prisoner died before finishing his food, other inmates would take the food that was left in the dead man’s mouth; they would even fight over it. (52-170, 1971.12.28)

29 I knew the importance of mental strength. That is why mentally I made a special determination. I convinced myself that I could live with only half of my ration. Then beginning the next day, I shared half of my meal with other people. I did this for three weeks. I convinced myself that even though I was eating only half rations, I could complete my work quota, and I actually did. After three weeks, I resumed eating the full amount of my ration. From then on, I considered one half to be my expected ration and ate the other half as if it were an additional ration that God had given to me. (52-167, 1971.12.28)

30 I have gone through all sorts of experiences, including imprisonment. Yet looking back, I am grateful to God. God went through all that trouble in order to raise one person, me. All the courses that I went through until now never subtracted from me. Instead, I gained many things. Even now when I see a grain of rice, I spontaneously remember how precious one grain of rice can be to a hungry man. Even now I remember it vividly. I know how even one grain of rice can stimulate one’s entire nervous system. Through that experience, I could recognize its infinite value. Yet, in my hunger, when I craved for food I shed tears of yearning for God even more, trying to forget about my cravings for food. Further, when I saw other people in misery, I shed tears without letting anyone know it and prayed for them. God can be with us when we have such a heart. I actually miss those days. (36-130, 1970.11.22)

31 When I was in Hungnam Prison, if a visitor gave me some good clothes, for instance if the church family members gave me a good pair of pants, I would give them to the most miserable prisoner. At the prison we had to use our bare hands to fill straw bags with fertilizer and tie them with straw rope. As a result, the skin on our hands cracked and bled. With those wounded hands, I once unraveled tent fabric that I found and knit clothes. I made pants and gave them to inmates who, because they had no visitors, did not have enough clothes to wear. You can imagine how laborious it was for me to make clothes, but I did it because when I gave them to those inmates, they were overjoyed. I saw that it made them happier than if they had received clothes bought by their own mother or father. My own clothes were in such tatters that when the wind blew it would reveal my buttocks. While wearing

such rags, if I saw anyone in the prison who was in a similar situation, I would give him clothes that I had made. (50-313, 1971.11.08)

32 The Communist Party put me in prison and did all kinds of terrible things to me. Nevertheless, I loved God to the very end. I trusted God, and my trust in Him was absolute. Once I gave my word to Him, my promise would be absolute. If God gave me a command, I knew I had to fulfill it absolutely. It did not matter whether that command was difficult or easy. A filial son has to act like a filial son, even in prison. A patriot has to act like a patriot, even when he is incarcerated. (106-072, 1979.12.09)

33 During the Korean War, Hungnam was the first place in North Korea that the UN forces liberated. God's son was there, so God was urgent to save him. Two days beforehand, the Communist Party enticed the inmates by telling them that they would be given food, and then they took them away. The inmates did not know they were going to be killed. Since they were told they would be given food, they even begged to go. But I sensed what was going to happen, and I said to myself, "Even if all the others die, I will not. Whatever calamity or tragedy may befall us, I will survive. I will not die, even if they schedule me to be shot!" As I expected, the communists deceived the inmates, led them into the mountains, and then killed them. The following day it was my turn to be taken away. So you can imagine how busy God must have been to rescue me. It was under these circumstances that the UN forces arrived in Hungnam. That is how I was able to escape from prison. (22-129, 1969.02.02)

34 Because the UN forces reached Hungnam, I was freed from prison. That incident set a condition for the democratic world to receive benefit. In other words, because the UN forces arrived, opened the doors of the prison and rescued me, a bond was established there that allowed the democratic world to be saved and supported. Had I remained in prison for three more days, I would have ended up in the spirit world. The Communist Party divided the prisoners into three groups and planned to execute them one group at a time. I was in the third group. Those with a sentence longer than seven years were placed in the first group to be executed, and those who had a sentence longer than five years were placed in the second group. I had been sentenced to five years, so I was in the third group. Three days after the first group was executed and just before the third group was to be executed, the camp was liberated and I was freed. You should be aware that I have been leading the providence of restoration through such a perilous course. (54-195, 1972.03.24)

35 As soon as we established the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity, on May 1, 1954, opposition arose. The fight began. We were out on the battlefield. Christianity, the Korean government, they all fought against me, against one man. I was alone. Everyone was against me. Such difficulties arose because they doggedly opposed the central person of global history. Satan exploited their opposition to drive the fortune of the entire world in attacks against me. As a consequence, Satan's world is destined to perish. This will inevitably come to pass. An incident occurred on July 4, 1955. They labeled me with every bad name in the world, communist, you name it. They dumped every terrible thing on me. Everything bad was associated with me. Hence I found myself under all sorts of investigations. But they found I had done nothing wrong. I was found innocent of their allegations and was released. I triumphed over all of the opposition and, in doing so, made a new beginning. (104-175, 1979.05.01)

36 The entire incident stemmed from my effort to connect with the highest level of Christianity through its educational institutions, Yonsei University and Ewha Women's University. These institutions opposed me, but since I had made the conditions necessary to organize the heavenly side, even though I had to give up on the first generation Christians, I could still witness to the second generation. Why did I give up on the first generation? They had already been tainted so, when I tried to fulfill the Will in South Korea, they opposed me. They had set the condition for Satan to do as he desired with me, requiring me to return to North Korea and recover them. I tried to recover them by going to North Korea, but I could not. Consequently, I pushed the providence of salvation forward based on the second generation rather than the first generation. (110-119, 1980.11.10)

37 The President of Ewha Women's University dispatched a professor from the Department of Religion and Social Science to find out about the Unification Church. That person heard the Principle, and after a week she ended up joining the Unification Church. After that, many professors came to the church, and all the dormitory students who heard the Principle came to the church. At that time, Ewha Women's University was receiving the support of an American Christian organization. The Ewha leadership felt threatened, thinking that the Unification Church, an unknown religion at that time, might absorb the school. Hence, they took drastic measures against the students who joined the Unification Church. That was the expulsion incident. They forced the students to choose between two alternatives. They announced to them, "You can either remain in this school or join Reverend Moon's Unification Church. Which will you choose?" The expulsion incident triggered events that led to my imprisonment. (143-131, 1986.03.17)

38 A Unification Church boom surged among the dormitory students at Ewha Women's University and Yonsei University, and in a matter of weeks this turned the schools upside down. The school authorities felt threatened, feeling that if the situation were ignored, Christianity might crumble in a few years. That is why they did whatever it took to get me. They spread all sorts of wicked rumors to trigger investigations of me. The authorities investigated me, but they could not find that I had done anything wrong. Then they set me up with the charge that I had evaded military service. The fact is, by the time I left the prison camp in North Korea, I was past the age of having to go to the army. Yet they charged me with evasion of military service and conducted an investigation. They accused me and investigated me, but since the charge was frivolous they had no choice but to acquit and release me. (182-078, 1988.10.14)

39 You do not know how much the Liberal Party regime at that time opposed me. They said that I was leading the Ewha Women's University students and Yonsei University students astray. They said, "We have a problem. The American mission should be leading the schools. Yet once the students listen to Rev. Moon, all of them, from both Ewha Women's University and Yonsei University, decide to follow him." They were hysterical, imagining that I would take over all the Christian denominations in the Republic of Korea. They created such an uproar. Consequently, the university authorities expelled the students. (169-096, 1987.10.25)

40 I am a Korean, and that is why the new starting point of God's providence appeared in Korea. However, Korean Christianity represents more than just the Christians of Korea. Christianity in Korea represents the providence and the entire world. Hence, the Christian churches in Korea taking a position opposing me, and the nation of Korea opposing me as well, affected the entire world. The issue to them was how they could break down this one person, which was me. Jesus died on the cross amid a complicated whirlwind over the same issue. Parallel to that, there was an incident in which Satan's side dragged me to prison. That was the July 4th incident. (73-242, 1974.09.22)

41 If I had been caught up in an issue raised by the nation, it could have been a serious problem. However, it was Ewha Women's University and Yonsei University that instigated the July 4th incident. Also, although I was incarcerated, I was acquitted and released. Hence I was able to make a new beginning in the realms of both the spirit and the flesh. Nevertheless, the opposition from Christianity and the nation led me to a position of having lost my foundation. What, at that point, was the state of the Unification Church, and of me as a person? We were certainly not

in a position of having completely separated good and evil. We were in a position to once again recover what was lost. Since Christianity had laid a foundation in the spiritual realm, I had to create a new foundation that could stand in place of that spiritual foundation. We had to have a foundation like that of Christianity. The Unification Church had to recreate that foundation. (73-243, 1974.09.22)

42 Before leaving for Danbury prison, I said, "There is a wall on the other side of Danbury, made of God's love, but do you know how high that wall of love is? Do you know how large it is?" The Unification Church members gathered at that moment were shedding tears, but I was humming with hope as I departed for the prison. I said, "The sunlight that returns to shine tomorrow will be more brilliant than that of today" A 180-degree change in one's living environment is something worth studying. I consider all of it research material to embroider with love. (163-299, 1987.05.01)

43 My release from Danbury became a turning point. It marked the turning of the tide where the Unification Church civilization, which represents eastern civilization, is changing places with western Christian civilization. It marked the point where the second- born son became the first-born son and the first-born son became the second- born son. Without reaching this turning point on our forty-year journey over the mountain, Heaven's providence would have been shattered. I had to do this, even if it meant going to prison; that was my mission. (135-064, 1985.08.22)

44 Even in prison I strove to live 95 percent for the sake of others. I woke up early in the morning and began the day by cleaning up the dirty places. Then I started working according to my daily schedule. When I was in prison in Danbury, I had the habit of doing tasks instead of relaxing, even when I went to the cafeteria. Other people would sleep or pursue leisure activities when they were not on duty, but I would stand waiting to be given work. I made it a habit to do that. If anything came up, I was the first to go and help. It was inevitable that this would make me well-known in the cafeteria. (134-245, 1985.07.20)

45 Not once did I ever pray to Heaven asking for help. In Danbury, people had this image of me: first, a person who works hard in silence; second, a person who reads books; third a person who meditates; and fourth, a person who swims. The pool was nearby, so I would swim whenever I had some spare time. All the inmates knew my daily routine. News spread fast in that place. Everyone who looks at the footprints I left will view a legacy of sacrifice. (134-255, 1985.07.20)

46 Unless I survived, restored and perfected my course inside the walls of the prison in Danbury, it could not have been connected to Heaven's Will. There is no path to perfection for anyone who is only half-committed. If I were such a person, there would be only a great scar in my wake, no matter how much the world was unified and my teachings globally accepted. But I am not like that. Even when I choose to go the path of death, I go straight for it. Therein lies my uniqueness. I was imprisoned so many times in my life, but I never complained. My mind is always on something greater, so I am confident wherever I go. As one who has been shouldering the suffering of all humankind, I considered prison life as if it were life in Heaven. (229-227, 1992.04.12)

47 What did I do when I was in Danbury? Because the fallen parents, Adam and Eve, completely blocked the path to Heaven, I held a ceremony to pave a highway that directly connects hell to the good spirit world. By doing so, I laid a path that enables people in hell to ascend. With that path opened, their ancestors have been able to descend to hell and pay indemnity for them. Through education, they can be elevated step by step. (137-114, 1985.12.24)

48 In Danbury I broke down the barriers that had closed off the spirit world and physical world due to the false parents, and opened the doors whereby people can meet the True Parents. I paved a highway for this to happen. That is why people's ancestors in the spirit world will come down to the earthly world and, in the manner of parents who love their children, lift people up, one step at a time. The Unification Movement in the spirit world will begin from this kind of love. Only through the way of parental love is it possible to begin a movement for the liberation of hell. Only love has the ability to digest even the realm of death. (139-228, 1986.01.31)

49 During the 13-month period that I was in Danbury, I reevaluated the speeches I had given during the thirteen-year period I was in the United States. In the future, when scholars dig into my speeches, they will naturally ask questions. If they cannot find the answers, they will come and ask me. That is why I did it, so that I can give clear explanations in response to those questions. One leader has to take responsibility for history. Thus, I think God allowed me a good opportunity to indulge in reading and sorting out the answers to such questions. People came to know that Rev. Moon was a man of meditation; he read books and studied night and day without rest. They also heard that I was someone who would never complain, but who instead spoke words of hope, whereas most people would grumble. (136-266, 1985.12.29)

50 The meaning of the Day of Victory of Love is that God's love has vanquished the realm of death. Heung-jin completed the portion of responsibility centering on God and True Parents' ideal of creation. Thereby he entered the realm wherein the love that is based on that standard is established. This gives him victory over the realm of death. Consequently, from now on Satan will not be able to appear and attach himself to people who believe in the Unification Church. When he attempts to do so, the spirit world will immediately mobilize to protect them. Being within the realm of the Parents' love is different from being within the realm of Satan's love, or archangelic love in general. I have linked the realm of the Parents' love even to the spirit world. (196-290, 1990.01.02)

51 Satan had been using the power of death to invade the realm of the family and its love. Blocking this by means of love, I, in my era, established the Day of Victory of Love to prevent this. My son Heung-jin was on the verge of death. Knowing that his final hour was coming, it was my moment to act. I conducted the Unification Ceremony for Heung-jin before he passed away, to demonstrate that he and his father are one. Through his unity in heart with me, his father, Satan was rendered unable to carry out his wishes against him as long as I was alive. By offering my son Heung-jin on the altar in this way, I defended against Satan's attempts to invade the Unification family. There existed a victorious domain in the spirit world from the moment Jesus made himself a sacrifice and God completed Jesus' offering in the spirit world. I connected that victorious domain to the offering of True Parents' beloved son Heung-jin, which was completed on earth. It was tantamount to Jesus' offering being completed in the physical world. Thus, based on the parent-child relationship, which is the heavenly ideal, I connected the foundation of Jesus' domain in the spirit world to the substantial physical realm. I built a bridge connecting the heavenly world and the earthly world. (196-264, 1990.01.02)

52 Since the spirit world and the earthly world love my son Heung-jin, they also need to establish the standard to love us, the Parents. They have to raise the standard of their love. Although Heung-jin was physically deceased, I knew that he was not dead, but would establish the realm of the resurrection of love in the physical and spirit worlds: "Although you have left us through death, by your death, you resurrect love." With that conviction, I grasped both the spirit world and physical world, and proclaimed the realm of the resurrection of love. With this, we could bid goodbye to the realm of death. For this reason, you should not be sad at a Seunghwa Ceremony. (130-203, 1984.01.15)

53 While Heung-jin was transitioning from the earth to the spirit world, I held a special ceremony for the spirit world and physical world. That was the Day of

Victory of Love. In order to complete the indemnity condition and proclaim the Day of Victory of Love, I was not allowed to think that my son was dead. Instead, standing next to his dead body, I fought for God's love. I had to think of God's love first, rather than grieving as other mothers and fathers do when thinking of their deceased child. I had to fix my thoughts on the love that triumphs over the realm of death. And so I said to Mother, "In this hour, you and I have to become the parents of whom Heaven can be proud and the parents of whom all the ancestors in the spirit world and the tens of thousands of saints, sages and wise people in the angelic world can be proud. We must create such an atmosphere around Heung-jin's body that the people of the world will bow their heads to us, saying that we are without a doubt the ones who wield the authority of love that can subjugate the realm of death." I had to do this so that all humankind could testify about me, saying, "You are truly the central person of God's love." The Day of Victory of Love was the first day when death could be replaced with love, even as I said farewell to my son. It was the day we hoisted the banner of love, even as we advanced and mobilized for the sake of the world. In this way, we set a standard that has enabled a new direction of love to be established on the national and global levels. That is why we can use the words "Day of Victory of Love." I proclaimed the Day of Victory of Love at 4 o'clock in the morning on January 3, 1984. (130-203, 1984.01.15)

Enthronement Ceremony for the Kingship of God

54 Christianity established a global domain surpassing that of the Roman Empire. This took place when the Allied forces defeated the Axis powers in World War II. Because Jesus lost his body, Christianity has represented the spirit world. Nonetheless, when Christianity unified the world, it ushered in the era in which the spirit and flesh could have been united. Thus, the Allied nations and Axis nations could be restored to God's side. That foundation was laid in 1945. Centering on that, had Catholics and Protestants, representing the Christian cultural sphere, become one and welcomed the Second Advent of the Lord, the world would have been united within three-and-a-half to seven years, that is, by 1952. Then God's Enthronement Ceremony would have been held. Christianity, however, did not accept the Unification Church. Even now, they are strongly opposing us. Judaism opposed Christianity and hence it doomed itself to decline. Christianity, by opposing the Unification Church, is following the same path. It is the same for all religions. This has created hell for families, societies, nations and the world. Hence, the ideal realm of love that God desires cannot yet be found on planet Earth. (342-267, 2001.01.13)

55 The True Parents are the only ones who can give the Blessing and change the lineage. It was the appearance of the false parents that brought on the battle between God and Satan. In order to end that conflict, True Parents stand right at the center and say, "God, is this not the purpose for which You are fighting? I am going to change everything for you!" If God gives me permission to do this, the struggle will come to an end. I am bringing reconciliation between God and Lucifer, as well as between Judaism and the religions surrounding it. When Jesus returns, once he establishes his sovereignty by bringing harmony and unity to the nations based on the family, all these struggles will come to an end. After World War II, if the United States, the Second Israel, had met and received the person who comes as the Lord of heaven and earth, the Lord could have established a foundation to unify the earth and to unify heaven. That unity, the beginning of the kingdom of God in the form of the Third Israel, would have connected the liberation of the kingdom of heaven on earth with that of the kingdom of heaven in heaven, which is the third realm of liberation. It was not realized then, and it is like a dream that, after fifty-six years have passed, we can now, on this day, hold the Enthronement Ceremony for the Kingship of God. (342-275, 2001.01.13)

56 Who will conduct the Enthronement Ceremony for the Kingship of God? Who ruined that Enthronement Ceremony in the first place? It was Satan and Adam. Adam and Eve were unable to become True Parents. Satan entered and the standard for True Parents' lineage could not be established on earth. Due to the Fall, it was Satan's lineage that remained. We have to negate and reverse this failure. Neither God nor Satan can do it. It would be difficult for Satan to destroy what he has established as his own nation. No one likes another party trying to change something that one has made. God, too, cannot just turn this around. If He could, He would not have lost Adam's family in the Garden of Eden. God was surely unable to do anything about it. It requires a human being. That person is the perfected Adam. His family contains the original love. (342-276, 2001.01.13)

57 The Enthronement Ceremony for the Kingship of God has brought change to the nation. Previously, God had been filled with bitter pain because He was unable to stand at the forefront of the Will. He was deeply sorrowful because He had not been able to act according to His desire. For that reason, I am telling you to become the supporting troops who can enable God to do as He wishes. We offered the Enthronement Ceremony to God; now we expect God to show His power. From now on, the times will change. (342-296, 2001.01.13)

The Era after the Coming of Heaven

58 You cannot discuss the Era before the Coming of Heaven and the Era after the Coming of Heaven, or hell and heaven, without knowing the Day of the Victory of the Number Ten Combining Two Halves (Ssang Hab Shib Seung Il). Things that were in pairs were divided. Mind and body should have been united, but they were divided. Even with your eyes there is one that you favor and another you dislike. A man loves his wife when he marries her, but if he sees another woman whom he thinks is better, the way he looks at his wife changes. Everyone has become separated. Married couples do not get along. That is why, on May 5, 2004, I proclaimed the Day of the Victory of the Number Ten Combining Two Halves when I combined five and five, as a pair oriented vertically, to make ten. This represents the coming together of the divided heaven and earth. It signifies liberation and complete freedom. (449-193, 2004.05.13)

59 The numbers did not belong to God but to Satan. All existence is based on the pair system. When couples become one, they can plant the seed of love. This is the ideal of the Principle of Creation. This is the reason I proclaimed the Day of the Victory of the Number Ten Combining Two Halves. May 5 marked the victory of ten by bringing together two fives, the top five and the bottom five. Centered on that day, I proclaimed the Era after the Coming of Heaven and the Era before the Coming of Heaven. The Era before the Coming of Heaven had passed; therefore, God could grasp the Era before the Coming of Heaven with His left hand and the Era after the Coming of Heaven with His right hand and rotate them, making a circle. Thereby, He combined the five that He held in His right hand and the five that He held in His left hand into one. This was the victory of two fives becoming ten. For the first time, God could stand in the position of the owner of the three hundred sixty days. God could for the first time govern the days and the numbers, the formulas in the universe, the order of motion, the stages that unfold. The pair system underlies the numbers by which we measure. When object and subject partners join in a relationship, they are able to take effect. God, as the seed of love, the fruit of love and the original essence of love, plants love in all places where things exist in pairs. (450-183, 2004.05.21)

60 In the end, God will create His homeland and a world of peace. The Era before the Coming of Heaven is passing, and we are ushering in the Era after the Coming of Heaven. The Day of the Victory of the Number Ten Combining Two Halves is when we proclaim the fact that the Era before the Coming of Heaven has passed and the Era after the Coming of Heaven has come. Although the Era before the Coming of Heaven has passed, it cannot be abandoned. In order to make the people of that era into royal offspring, God and True Parents grasped them with their left hand and pulled them forward, even as they grasped the newly dawning Era after the

Coming of Heaven with their right hand. This 180- degree reversal was like my making the hands of a clock that had been rotating counterclockwise rotate clockwise. (457-242, 2004.07.04)

61 I have brought together all of creation. The Fall turned it all around— measurement of time, days, years, centuries and eternity. With the victory of the number ten, the victorious number that God indemnified, we can now directly connect all of these with the throne of God's kingship. As we have left the Era before the Coming of Heaven and begun the Era after the Coming of Heaven, all things can now enter the age of liberation, the age of perfection. Everything is entering into the realm of God's ownership. (447-314, 2004.05.05)

The Coronation and Enthronement Ceremonies for the King of Peace (December 2003 through August 2004)

62 I conducted the Coronation Ceremony for the King of Peace, but it should be called the Coronation and Enthronement Ceremony. It was not simply a coronation ceremony but a coronation and enthronement ceremony. Earlier, I conducted the coronation but not the enthronement. In Adam's family, Cain killed Abel and God's providence continued through Seth. From Noah it passed through Abraham, Isaac, Jacob and Moses, all the way to Jesus. In Jesus' time, the nation should have conducted His enthronement ceremony, but it did not happen. He could receive neither a coronation nor an enthronement ceremony. I am conducting, in my time, coronation and enthronement ceremonies. We held the coronation ceremony for Jesus in Israel. At that time, Jesus did not advance to his coronation ceremony alone. I had my second son, Heung-jin, whom I had placed in the same position as the returning Lord, bless Jesus to be the one to open the gate of love. I gave the Blessing to souls who had died in sorrow, and even to enemies. Then I had Heung-jin escort Jesus to Jerusalem, for we conducted his coronation in the nation of Israel. It was not an enthronement but a coronation. I took down the cross, conducted his coronation in Israel and then conducted his enthronement ceremony in America. These events rendered the biblical dual prophecies such as "the lord of glory" and "the lord of suffering" less significant. (469-171, 2004.09.19)

63 Cain and Abel have to become one. The Lord of the Second Advent reconciled divisions between the spirit world and physical world in Jerusalem. Based on this foundation, he restored through indemnity the realm of the First Israel and brought that realm to the national and the world levels. Jesus could not achieve this when he was on earth. But finally I completed it and established Jesus' kingship over the First Israel and his kingship over the Second Israel. Centering on Jesus, representing

heaven, and Heung-jin, representing the True Parents on earth, I reconnected the spirit world with the physical world. In that place of unity between the entire spirit world and the physical world, and of unity between the entire nation and the church, and on the foundation of Jesus' sovereignty in the Second Israel, we offered the coronation ceremony in the presence of the Parents. After that I conducted the coronation ceremony with members of the United States Senate representing heaven and of the House of Representatives representing earth. This accomplished what Jesus was unable to do: proclaim his coronation at the Roman Senate and establish a unified realm encompassing heaven and earth. The spirit world and physical world proclaimed my coronation, a history-making event. In the realm of their unity, they conducted the coronation and enthronement of the Lord of the Second Advent. (469-300, 2004.09.22)

64 Jesus is the leader of Christianity; he has a throng of 1.3 billion followers. He died branded a traitor to his people in his own nation, but he embraced the people of the world and is now seated in the highest position in the political culture as well as in the religious arena. Nevertheless, Judaism still regards Jesus as inferior to Moses. In addition to this, Judaism and Christianity opposed me in a wide variety of ways. Yet they were the ones who lost the battle. With the end of that battle, I conducted the Enthronement Ceremony for the King of Peace in the precincts of the United States Congress. Jesus was supposed to go to the Roman Senate and proclaim, "I am the King. The King of kings has come." Yet he died before he could accomplish this. However now, in broad daylight, I gathered members of the United States Senate and House of Representatives and also leaders of the three major religions. Of their own volition they attended me as the King of Peace. (451-076, 2004.05.26)

Groundbreaking Ceremony of the Original Palace Holy Ground (July 8, 2001)

65 This place, where we are holding the groundbreaking ceremony today, is the Original Palace Holy Ground (本殿聖地). What does "Original Palace" (本殿) mean? It is the palace that God desires, the royal palace in which God can dwell, His original home. That is what is meant by "Original Palace," which is this Holy Ground. All the obstacles have been overcome. The Chinese character for seong (聖), meaning "holy," consists of the three Chinese characters: yi (耳) meaning "ear," gu (口) meaning "mouth" and wang (王) meaning "king." You have to have the mouth and ears of a king to be a saint. You have to listen well and speak well. Only God knows this. Only the Messiah, the True Parents, knows these things. (348-163, 2001.07.08)

Entering Cheon Jeong Gung li (June 13, 2006)

66 Cheon Jeong Gung is a palace that creates that which is righteous and proper. The name combines the Chinese characters Cheon (天) meaning "Heaven," Jeong (正) meaning "righteous" and Gung (宮) meaning "house." What is the significance of Cheon Jeong Gung? It represents the finest palace in heaven. That is how I built it. The character jeong (正) is the combination of the character, ji (止), meaning "stay," and a stroke (一), meaning a "cover" or "lid." This means movement. Cheon Jeong Gung means, "Two people should unite and ceaselessly move! Then it becomes your home." This means that |this palace is to be your home. (539-096, 2006.09.19)

67 At the Cheon Jeong Gung there is a new nation, a national flower, a national flag, citizens, and ideals of education. Therefore, we can create oneness within any ideology or religion and, on that basis, liberate governments. I have set these as our goals and I am moving forward to achieve them. (545-153, 2006.11.21)

68 We can think of Cheon Jeong Gung existing at any time and any place, but it came to be on the soil of Korea naturally. That is what I believe. Has God not been a wanderer? Has God had any place on earth where He could place His feet? He could not at the Vatican in Rome. So I went around, searching and searching. I passed through many circumstances in order to become an owner on God's behalf. (531-196, 2006.07.06)

69 All humankind has been of the Cain-type lineage and thus is in the position of the older brother. The Messiah will come at the very end of the age and pay indemnity for everything. He will elevate the two worlds that fell. Although Christianity paid the indemnity, we need to raise them up. Then what should we do? If the peoples who share the Mongolian birthmark, races whose blood is intermingled, unite irrespective of their religion and come forth raising a flag, we can overcome the concepts of denomination and nation. I am placing God in His original position, and Adam and Eve, Cain and Abel, and the Archangel in their original positions. That is why this is called Cheon Jeong Gung. The Chinese character cheon (天) consists of the Chinese characters meaning "two" (二) and "person" (人). Thus, it is a palace that is properly made by two people. (529-280, 2006.06.14)

Coronation for the Authority of the Liberation of God, the King of Kings (January 15, 2009)

70 “King of kings” means the King of all kings. There is one, and only one, King of all kings. The King of kings is the One Being. Hananim in Korean, which is translated as “God” in English, literally means “the One and Only One” plus the honorific, Mm. This expression for God, Hananim, is found only in Korean. In the phrase “Hananim haebang kwon eui,” the Chinese character that I am using for kwon is not the kwon (圈) meaning “realm,” but the kwon (權) meaning “right,” or “authority.” Next comes the word daekwanshik, meaning “coronation ceremony.” What do the Chinese characters in daekwan, meaning “coronation,” signify? The Chinese character dae (戴) includes the character yi (異) meaning “different.” In other words, a different crown is worn, not a crown of destructive power that leads human beings to hell, but a crown of glory. Long live the authority of liberation! Even Satan is compelled to go along with God’s authority. The creation will no longer need God’s intervention; universal law will govern it. By this taking place, the liberated God’s authority will usher in His peaceful and prosperous reign. It is good, and so His peaceful and prosperous reign will bring with it an era of humankind offering Him unending praise. To have access to the God of goodness, we should fly to God’s secret and hidden world, the world of His happiness, and the spring garden of flowers in His heart. A path is opening to His world of love, and I am saying that we should travel to that place. (608-309, 2009.02.28)

71 Whatever your problem, if you try to solve it by working only with the spirit world or only with the physical world, you will not succeed. Likewise, just because you know God’s Will does not mean God is liberated. You have to unite with True Parents and lay a foundation upon which you can govern nations and the world’s religious realms. Without setting up the measures to solve everything as one combined issue, you cannot make the right judgment and establish the right global movement. That is why I have kept that on hold until now. What is the Coronation of the King of Kings? Before I conducted the Coronation of the One and Only God with the Authority of Liberation, anyone could come along. After it was done, not just anyone could follow. During this time, Cain and Abel nations joined the UN and were fighting each other. Communism and democracy were fighting each other. The Coronation of the One and Only God with the Authority of Liberation and the Sovereignty of the King of Kings could take place because I stood in the breach and brought the two sides to reconcile. Then I announced a new world of peace. This coronation was held in order to defend all three parties. (609-110, 2009.03.08)

72 As of today, the King of kings, the One and Only God, stands in the position of the True Parent. The True Parents are one flesh. Although there have been tens of thousands of kings until now, there is only one Lord of the Second Advent. He

came, rose to the position of the King of kings, and united with the One and Only God. How does this affect the substantial authority of the God who was invisible in the Garden of Eden, from the perspective of His inner and outer essence? He will manifest as the True Parents with substantial bodies, and those True Parents will become one with the One and Only God in the world. (609-278, 2009.04.09)

73 By securing the one kingship of the King of kings and having it take root, God can stand in the position of the Owner and reign over all creation for the first time. I offered to God everything that I had built up to the present. I have the responsibility to erase all the mistakes that prevented the True Parents from being the True Parents, and to enable God finally to move into the position of the King. Finally, there will be twelve tribes, representing the family level, then one hundred twenty national representatives, then twelve hundred global representatives and then twelve thousand who can liberate God. Based on this foundation, the time will come for all indemnities of the world to level out and for God to emerge and exercise His authority as the Owner. It will be nothing other than the ideal kingdom of God on earth and in heaven! Aju! (589-277, 2008.05.16)

74 We have launched a new, Parent UN based on the Abel UN. Now that I have become the King of all kings, what should I do further? By uniting with God and holding the Coronation Ceremony, I secured the core. Based on that, all of heaven and earth can be established in front of Heaven. Henceforth, I am responsible to open the gate to the setting up of an international organization centering on this core. None of you here can tell me what to do, even if you hold the position of a leader. On the foundation of my having achieved a unified realm of the spirit and flesh as the substantial being who represents the kingship of God, the King of kings, what should be done, based on the way and standard that I have advocated thus far? From a position transcending the entire world, we have to build one sovereignty, one homeland, and a land that is like one hometown. (609-265, 2009.04.09)

75 Had Adam and Eve not fallen, they would have become the owners who could have set forth on behalf of God and hoisted the flag of the Blessing. Several thousand years later, the first day when this can happen is at hand. This is not the matter of just one day. It is not even several thousands of years; it is tens of thousands of years. You need to know how much trouble so many had to endure in order to build the foundation for the position of the True Parents, the foundation upon which we could stand. No one has known this before. So, you cannot imagine how much trouble God had to endure in order to usher in the time when He could finally teach people about it. The year 2001 was the start of the third millennium. I

have been teaching you about things that will happen in the millennium that has newly arrived, the period up to the year 3000. It will be a brand-new, revolutionary era, not of the manner of the Era before the Coming of Heaven. Rather, it will be a brand-new, revolutionary Era after the Coming of Heaven. It will be an era when God can take responsibility and act. (615-137, 2009.08.21)

BOOK 12 CHEON IL GUK

Chapter 1. God's Homeland and Cheon Il Guk

Section 1. God's Kingdom and Gods Homeland 1259

Section 2. The Background and Proclamation of Cheon Il Guk 1264

Chapter 2. The Structure and Settlement of Cheon Il Guk

Section 1. The Nature of Cheon Il Guk 1271

Section 2. The Three Requisites of Cheon Il Guk 1274

Section 3. The Constitution and Teaching Materials of Cheon Il Guk 1280

Section 4. Registration and Settlement in Cheon Il Guk 1289

Section 5. The Universal Peace Federation and the Abel UN 1301

Chapter 3. The Path of Cheon Il Guk Citizens and the Family Pledge

Section 1. Purity and a Life of One Heart, One Body, One Mindset and One Harmony 1308

Section 2. High Noon Settlement and a Life of Resonance 1310

Section 3. Embodying God through Love and Living a Life of Attendance 1314

Section 4. The World of the Culture of Heart 1318

Section 5. Living as an Owner of Cheon Il Guk and the Family Pledge 1323

Chapter 4. The Vision of Cheon Il Guk and Our Responsibility

Section 1. The Background and Proclamation of Foundation Day 1351

Section 2. True Parents, who Have Fully Achieved the Will 1355

Section 3. Our Responsibility in the Era of Cheon Il Guk—True Mother's Words 1357

BOOK 12 CHEON IL GUK

Chapter 1. God's Homeland and Cheon Il Guk

Section 1. God's Kingdom and God's Homeland

1 God's kingdom is the place where true freedom, faith, and ideals bear fruit; the place occupied by true families who have achieved true love, true life, and true lineage. We are marking the beginning of God's millennial kingdom overflowing with eternal true love and true happiness. I have promoted true family values because the family formed by a union between a true man and a true woman, where God can dwell, is the center of the realm of Sabbath throughout heaven and earth. Through such families we will realize, here on earth, the garden of Eden described in the Bible.(315-218,20000202)

What kind of place is God's kingdom?

2 God's kingdom is the place where heaven and earth are united. "God's people" refers to all the people in the spirit world and on earth. A country in this world normally considers all the people living within its territory its citizens. In the same way, all the land within the borders of a country is considered that country's territory. God's kingdom, however, includes heaven and earth, the tangible and intangible worlds under Gods sovereignty, as its territory. In addition, the countless spirit selves who lived God-centered lives on earth, those living God-centered lives in today's world, and their future descendants will all be citizens of the heavenly kingdom. No one can deny this because it is a part of God's eternal, unchangeable, cosmic Will. Therefore, you should center your life on this Will and this ideology. The entire universe has collectively waited for this ultimate accomplishment; hence, once this transition occurs, the universe can finally be unified.(014-297,196501 10)

3 The hope of all people is to establish God's kingdom. It is the realization of this goal that we call the kingdom of heaven. Your country is not of this world but in heaven. Human beings should not live for the present world but should live for the heavenly kingdom. Furthermore, you are not owners of the countries within this world, but owners of the heavenly kingdom.(024-226,19690817)

4 We long for God's kingdom because it is the place we find love. It is the place where, rather than temporary love, there exists the eternal love that transcends time. It is also a place where we can receive praise and acknowledgement for the entirety of our value. It is the place where people are eternally happy. This is why all people yearn for the heavenly kingdom. 025-284,19691005 ()

5 The new millennium is the time for the completion of the six-thousand-year providence of salvation and the time to build the original heavenly kingdom based on the ideal of creation. This is the Completed Testament Age, through which the promises of the Old and New Testaments are fulfilled. This is the age of the new

heaven and new earth, where there are no more tears or death, or sad, painful cries to be heard This is the age of unconditional true love, in which the water of life, as clear as crystal, is freely given and shared. This is the age when the spirit world and earth become one and God's kingdom is established both in heaven and on earth. This is the time when the new age of full transcendence, full immanence, full authority and omnipotence will open through the realm of the eldest son, the parents, and the king. It is the time in which the direct dominion of the living God is realized.(315-218,20000202)

6 The earth is the hometown of all humankind and the spirit world is the eternal homeland, where all people are destined to arrive after achieving perfection. The time has come to realize the global family ideal on earth, centered on the Heavenly Parent, and thus to move from "One Nation under God" to "One Heaven and Earth under God." Accordingly, we have to bear in mind that the fundamental relationship between God and humanity is that of Parent and child and that, upon that foundation, we each have an active role to play in transforming the cosmos, that is, the spiritual and physical worlds, into our homeland and hometown.(315-219,20000202)

7 Jesus came to establish the homeland of God. The prophets and patriots of history worked to build this same homeland. In order to establish the kingdom of heaven, one perfect man must appear. This man must gain the recognition of heaven and earth, marry, have children, and then establish a tribe, a people and a nation. He must restore the relationship between Cain and Abel, engraft them to himself, and build the homeland of Gods dominion in this world. The prophets and patriots of history yearned for this throughout their lives. However, they were unable to establish the kingdom of heaven on earth that begins from an individual and expands to the family, tribe, people, nation, and world. Therefore, we have to abandon the path along which we have been heading and move forward in the right direction.(015-278,19651030)

8 Since the eternal kingdom of God follows one direction centered on a single purpose, its light cannot help but radiate powerfully in a hopeful and pleasing manner. Even if gray clouds roll in, that light will pierce them. Shadows appear when clouds block the light of this world. However, the light of the heavenly kingdom can pierce through the clouds. Just as intense heat burns away impurities, when the light and heat of the heavenly kingdom strikes them, the clouds will disappear.(086-304,19760411)

9 Where does God's kingdom start? It starts from a perfected person, from the center of that one perfected person. When that happens, God will be dwelling within the center of our hearts. You know from the Principle, God dwells where subject and object partners, or inside and outside, are completely united. At that place, the center is formed. Then, those subject and object partners come to a position where they collaborate with God. All beings engaged in subject and object relationships are to relate with God. It follows that God would feel happy when Adam and Eve feel happy and, in the same way, Adam and Eve would feel happy when God feels happy. In summary, we can say that entities in a relationship are to share common feelings and experiences.(092-216,19770417)

10 God's kingdom is a world that is composed of true love. Hence, whether one feels distant or close in heart depends on one's sensitivity to love. A tree receiving generous sunlight will grow rapidly and become large. Flowers will bloom abundantly on this tree and it will bear plenteous fruit. When it comes to feeling love, we stand in the same position as that tree. When we all feel the elements of love, and they flow in and out through us, we can feel the joy that resonates throughout our environment. How closely our joy corresponds with God's standard of joy determines our relationship with God.(050-029,1971 1024)

11 God's kingdom is a place of good-ness and righteousness. It is a world overflowing with such an atmosphere, a place that is always full of joy, happiness and love. Then what kind of person can enter God's kingdom? Only a person who has a heart that is suitable for this atmosphere can enter. This is a natural conclusion. This is the kingdom of heaven for which we are seeking.(087-258, 1976 06 13)

12 God's kingdom starts from a heavenly family. That family starts from one man and one woman who are aligned with God's Will. In the end, they become the center of not only a family, but also a country, and the entire universe. Therefore, it isn't the country that needs to be perfected first, nor is it the family. It is one man and one woman. This idea of one perfected man and one perfected woman connects to all of you here today. The idea of perfecting one man and one woman remains the same in the past, present, and future. It is unchanging.(115-039,1981 1028)

13 What kind of person goes to God's kingdom? A person in the original position before the Fall, a person living by the original principles, goes there. An original person is not someone who tries to receive love from others. Nor does this person try to receive God's love. He or she is someone who already lives intoxicated in

God's love. The heart of parents loving their children is beautiful. Everyone bows their head in front of the love of parents who suppress their hunger as they feed their children, giving food to them after thawing it with their body heat. The universe will certainly support the sons and daughters of these parents. The entire world will bow down to such love. People think that children succeed because they are smart, but that is not so. It is because they have, embedded in them, their parents' love and merit of living for the sake of others. Because no one can ignore these things, the descendants of such parents succeed.(148-327,19861026)

God's hope is the liberation of His homeland

14 Where is God's homeland? It is the place where True Parents and the True Family reside. Where is the True Parents' original hometown? It is the place where God and His sons and daughters reside. Where is the True Parents' homeland? It is where God and all His children, the subject and object partners whom True Parents love, are dwelling, the place where you can find the love of subject and object partners. If this were so, then where would you find the homeland of the children? It would be a place where they can love their parents with God as the subject partner, and where the children can receive love as the object partners. Such a place is the original homeland of the four-position foundation as taught by the Unification Church. That is the ideal homeland. Why is it the ideal homeland? It is because in it we find the love of the True God, the love of True Parents and the love of True Children. The world that develops from there on that basis will be an ideal world. Such a principle is to be found in the four-position foundation.(124-268,19830227)

15 The homeland is the nation of the mother and the father. It is the nation of our ancestors. It is the nation of the first human ancestors. It is a nation handed down from, and loved by, the first human ancestors. Since that love of the first human ancestors is unchanging, then that nation should be unchanging as well. When you consider the historical course of those who claimed their nation as their homeland, you can recognize that there has not been a single nation that could maintain itself as the parents' beloved homeland. That homeland has been lost, over and over again.(173-168,19880214)

16 The people who live for the sake of Heaven today are Heavens secret emissaries sent into Satan's world. Everyone is different, so an emissary may be big or small, stout or thin, tall or short, but his or her lifestyle cannot deviate from that of an envoy. This is because life and death are always hanging in the balance. They are posted in a situation where even the smallest mistake can determine the issue of

eternal life. Therefore, the secret emissary's spirit of working for the homeland, the homeland that can support and protect eternal life, has to be hundreds of times stronger than their environment; otherwise they cannot live as a secret emissary. A secret emissary has to ignore their present situation by thinking of how the people of the world will rejoice when all resentment has been erased. They have to look to the glory of the homeland and, while they create a new history, think that the world will know and applaud their efforts on the day that witnesses the birth of the homeland. Without such a mindset, they cannot carry out a secret emissary's mission. In other words, to overcome all resentment and execute their mission, they have to live in hope for the dawning of a homeland that is ten thousand times greater than their present reality.(029-040,19700216)

17 For the liberation of God's homeland, we have to take down the barrier between North and South Korea at the 38th parallel. Then this homeland has to rise as Asia's new fruit, a fruit that we can proudly display to the whole world. Our mission is to overcome the devastation wrought through the history of the Korean people and form a new culture. Therefore, even though we have been weakened, we have to clasp each other's hands, move forward, and make a pledge while raising our hands toward Heaven. Please know that this is the moment to form a new culture and prepare for tomorrow with an alert mind. We have to guide the environment with love for the country and the world.(036-201,19701129)

18 Where is the original hometown and homeland? Of course, we usually think of a homeland as a single nation, but humanity's homeland desired by God is, in fact, the entire earth. Many generations of our ancestors walked the path of sacrifice. What was the hope they proclaimed to Heaven as they walked that path? They shouted, "May the time of the long-awaited homeland come soon!" We should establish one nation of God, in order to repudiate Heaven's archenemy Satan, eradicate evil from the world and build the peaceful kingdom of heaven on earth based only on goodness. This is the desire of God, the desire of Jesus, and the desire of the ancestors who made great contributions during the course of the providence.(155-323,19651101)

19 The time has come for all countries in the world to dedicate all available resources and focus completely on the establishment of the peaceful, ideal kingdom that God desires. Humankind has reached a dead end. It is no longer possible to live without accepting my teachings on the peace ideology of true love, true life, and true lineage. Your good ancestors will be fully mobilized, and when the heavenly authority of the Era after the Coming of Heaven surges, even the most

powerful countries and peoples will yield to the fortune of heaven and earth.(509-179,20050923)

20 A world without the Fall is one where God directly rules all nations with the highest royal authority. That world is a place where God and True Parents can attain perfection together with the perfection of True Parents' kingdom; hence, it is the ground of our original hometown in our glorious restored homeland, where we find only peace and happiness. Remembering what they had lost, lamenting and looking at their history of painful sorrow through the ages of darkness, all created beings have been hoping for the time of True Parents' perfection, when everything that was lost is restored. Can you imagine God's pain while waiting patiently for this through such a miserable history?(595-053,20080801)

Section 2. The Background and Proclamation of Cheon Il Guk

1 Prior to this time, people in the spirit world could not know God as our Father or Parent because they were of a different lineage. God, who is in the spirit world, is the Cosmic Parent. The True Parents, who are on the earth, are the True Parents of Heaven and Earth. The Cosmic Parent and the True Parents of Heaven and Earth are one. Hence, royal authority is given to the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind in their substantial persons. No one can settle on earth without the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind. Because the Cosmic Parent, the Parents of Heaven and Earth, and the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind stand in the same position, each one of us now has to become a perfected person representing Adam, and stand in the position to inherit the unified, victorious supremacy of heaven and earth that has nothing to do with the Fall. Then, as the Family Pledge states, we can be called owners of Cheon Il Guk.

The providential background of the birth of Cheon Il Guk

2 As a prerequisite for the founding of Cheon Il Guk, we had to usher in an era where conflicts between mind and body, conflicts within the family, tribe, people, nation and world, conflicts between heaven and earth and God and Satan, and all other conflicts, are resolved. By doing so we moved beyond the standard of the Interreligious and International Federation for World Peace and established the Peace UN. By finally establishing the ideal nation and world here on earth with God, who is the King of peace, Owner of peace and Teacher of peace, at the center, and by receiving the Blessing of rebirth, the Blessing of resurrection and the Blessing of eternal life, we have realized the foundation to enter God's kingdom. Thus, we finally proclaim Cheon Il Guk.(429-015,20031223)

3 We opened the gates of Cheon Il Guk through the ceremony entitled the Holy Marriage Blessing Ceremony of the Parents of Heaven and Earth Opening the Gates of Cheon Il Guk. We opened the individual gate, family gate, tribal gate, people's gate, and national and world gates. Finally even the spirit world, as earth's counterpart, has been blessed, so Satan can no longer interfere. Individuals in the spirit world can now be blessed and form tribes. Since it was false parents who brought about division, it will be True Parents who restore everything to its original position. Thus we have absolute faith in the True Parents and follow them absolutely.(405-207,20030211)

4 We held the Enthronement Ceremony for the Kingship of God on January 13, 2001, conducted the Holy Marriage Blessing Ceremony of the Parents of Heaven and Earth Opening the Gates of Cheon Il Guk on February 6,2003, and established the Family Party for Universal Peace and Unity on March 10. When I created the Family Party, politicians expected me to speak about Korea or the state of the world; instead, I spoke about the registration of marriages and births, I did not say a single word about politics. If a marriage is not registered, parents cannot register the birth of their child. This is because no family registry would exist for them. For a family registry to exist, one needs a nation. Therefore, in the first year of Cheon Il Guk, I proclaimed the establishment of Gods kingship and announced the nation of Cheon Il Guk.(437-091,20040209)

5 The Ceremony to Return the Realm of the Lineage of the Fourth Adam made possible the Enthronement Ceremony for the Kingship of God. The Parents needed to register their marriage, but there was no nation in which to register. That is why I established Cheon Il Guk. How grateful we should be for Cheon Il Guk, a nation where two people become one! With two people joined together as one, religion and politics will become one as well. When these two become one, Cheon Il Guk will be fully realized.(407-255,20030517)

6 We restore Cheon Il Guk through the perfection of the first Adam, the second Adam and the third Adam, the course of the history of re-creation centered on Adam. Cheon Il Guk perfects the standard of a nation and ushers in the era of liberation and complete freedom by which we become one. It is our homeland and ground of our hometown.(430-256,20040103)

7 The conflict between Cain and Abel in Adam's family ultimately grew into the worldwide conflict between communism and democracy. In the great transitional period of the twentieth century, I attained was successful in establishing the providentially required indemnity conditions on all stages. On this basis, I

proclaimed the era of Cheon Il Guk as the era of Abel's dominion of true love. We then held the Enthronement Ceremony for the Kingship of God in 2001. In 2004, based on our qualifications as the True Parents of Humankind, I was enthroned as the international and interreligious King of Peace through coronation and enthronement ceremonies held in the United States, the Second Israel, in Korea, the Third Israel, and throughout the world. Based on this series of providential victories, in 2005 humanity entered the second stage, or growth stage, of the establishment of Cheon Il Guk and received the command to complete the Cheon Il Guk registration providence by marching forward toward the three great goals of changing our lineage, changing the ownership, and inheriting the realm of heart.(487-144,20050214)

The Holy Marriage Blessing Ceremony of the Parents of Heaven and Earth Opening the Gates of Cheon Il Guk

8 Because we conducted the Enthronement of the Cosmic True Parent and the True Parents of Heaven and Earth as the King and Queen of the Blessed Families in Peace and Unity, Cheon Il Guk could finally begin on earth. We have to bind heaven and earth together through conditions. These begin in God's family, advance to His tribe, people and nation, and ultimately to the spirit world where we have to educate and bless the saints. Spirit persons have been unaware of Gods existence. They could not believe in God because they could not see Him. True Parents have to educate them. By receiving education in the Principle, they can come to realize that God is the Parent of heaven and earth. Alone, they cannot find this Parent; they need the help of True Parents. Thanks to True Parents, God now can freely move in the spiritual and physical worlds.(407-265720030520)

9 The Holy Marriage Blessing opened the gates of Cheon Il Guk, and God's nation was finally established. This is the significance of the Holy Marriage Blessing Ceremony of the Parents of Heaven and Earth Opening the Gates of Cheon Il Guk. After we formed the nation of Cheon Il Guk, the Enthronement of the Cosmic True Parent and the True Parents of Heaven and Earth as the King and Queen of the Blessed Families in Peace and Unity fulfilled the next stage. This meant a king and owner could finally appear in the family. Adam should have attained this position at the age of twenty-one but, due to the Fall, the event was delayed by tens of thousands of years. This is an important truth. Now, at last, we can attend the King and Queen of the families because we accomplished the Enthronement of the King and Queen of the Blessed Families in Peace and Unity, centered on the true love of God as our Cosmic Parent and the true love of the True Parents of Heaven and Earth.(425-047,20031108)

10 Through God's course of restoration through indemnity, we have brought down all of our enemies' fortifications. By setting indemnity conditions, we have attained the internal standard that has liberated us from the confines of the walls between the mind and body, within the family, within the world, between tribes, peoples and nations, and between heaven and earth. Thus Cheon Il Guk could appear. It is the nation where two people unite to become one, and it begins with the unity of Adam and Eve. Even if only two or three people meet and pray together, God wants to be with them. Thus Cheon Il Guk is the nation where two people become one.(418-232,20030925)

11 Through the Holy Marriage Blessing Ceremony of the Parents of Heaven and Earth Opening the Gates of Cheon Il Guk, we could finally establish a nation and open the way to register our marriages and the births of our children. Because everything broke down on the earth, the Enthronement of the Cosmic True Parent and the True Parents of Heaven and Earth as the King and Queen of the Blessed Families in Peace and Unity had to take place, centered on True Parents. Then everything could become one and the nation could begin. On that foundation, you have to register your birth again. By registering your birth, you prepare the foundation for the perfected family for which your ancestors long. However, the question remains whether you can substantially realize the kind of family Adam and Eve would have had if they had not fallen but had received the Blessing. Are you confident to do that? You have to repent; every cell in your body must cry out.(406-291,20030312)

12 Now is the time for you to work with me to bring about the settlement of God's kingdom and God's homeland, and to register in Gods nation, Cheon Il Guk. Now that a nation exists, we can begin registration. We need birth, marriage and death certificates. The nation maintains and protects these records. Our birth, marriage and death will be registered in the nation. Because we have a nation, we can now be registered for eternity in the spirit world. Through the registration of births, marriages and Seonghwa ceremonies, all citizens move into the kingdom of heaven. As stated in the fifth pledge of the Family Pledge, the spirit world is in the subject position, and we have to live in tune with it each day. This is not a vague concept. By living in this manner, the spirit world and the physical world can connect, with no barriers between them.(363-213,2001 1225)

13 Since we conducted the Holy Marriage Blessing Ceremony of the Parents of Heaven and Earth Opening the Gates of Cheon Il Guk on True Parents' Birthday, we could finally register marriages. Then, the Enthronement of the Cosmic True Parent and the True Parents of Heaven and Earth as the King and Queen of the Blessed

Families in Peace and Unity rendered it possible for us to inherit God's kingdom and establish a king on the family level. The family king then becomes a tribal king, a people's king, a national king and a world saint. From the position of divine son, he goes on to inherit God's position.(417-180,20030907)

14 The Holy Marriage Blessing Ceremony of the Parents of Heaven and Earth Opening the Gates of Cheon Il Guk was conducted on True Parents' Birthday in 2003. The True Parents' Holy Wedding took place centered on Cheon Il Guk. God and True Parents finally became one through true love, true life and true lineage, and upon the foundation of the Holy Wedding, we have arrived at the world level. Now we have to adjust everything to that standard. We can proclaim Cheon Il Guk only on the foundation of the change of lineage of the nation's representing the First, Second and Third Israels through the marriage Blessing. The kingdom of heaven is a realm in which people are united in heart, but this world, because of the Fall, is not a realm where people are united in heart through true love, life and lineage. It is a realm where unity can be attained only through indemnity. Therefore, to realize the realm of unity upon which the kingdom of heaven can be established, I conducted the Unification Blessing Ceremony to Register the Blessed Families that Formed the Four-Position Foundation at the Great Transition of the Three Ages. Following the proclamation of this Blessing and the proclamation of Cheon Il Guk, all blessed families in the spiritual and physical worlds now can register.(428-248,20031221)

15 We carried out the Enthronement Ceremony for the Kingship of God during the first year of the third millennium, on January 13,2001. Originally, I should have conducted the Holy Marriage Blessing Ceremony Opening the Gates of Cheon Il Guk in 1980, when I turned sixty, but it had to be postponed until True Mother was sixty. We held it on her sixtieth birthday in the third year of Cheon Il Guk. On that date the new Cosmic Parent and Parents of Heaven and Earth could become one and the date of the Holy Wedding anniversary could be fixed. Through the Holy Marriage Blessing Ceremony Opening the Gates of Cheon Il Guk, True Parents were enthroned as the King and Queen of the Cheon Il Guk families.(428-249,20031221)

16 The Holy Wedding of the Parents of Heaven and Earth could not have taken place if Cheon Il Guk did not exist. The Holy Wedding and birth registration would not have been possible if the Enthronement Ceremony for the Kingship of God had not taken place. If we had not had a nation, we could not have conducted these events. We conducted the Holy Marriage Blessing Ceremony of the Parents of Heaven and Earth Opening the Gates of Cheon Il Guk on True Mothers sixtieth birthday, a full two years after the Enthronement Ceremony for the Kingship of

God. It was possible to conduct this Holy Wedding Ceremony only after God and True Parents had finally made a foundation for God's homeland. After that, we held the Enthronement of the Cosmic True Parent and the True Parents of Heaven and Earth as the King and Queen of the Blessed Families in Peace and Unity. For the first time in history, the position of the King of the families is occupied.(430-123,20040101)

A great providential transition point

17 In this era of the revolution of the conscience, we have to bring our body to complete submission under the authority of our mind. This is an absolute requirement. People who cannot unite their mind and body cannot enter God's kingdom. They will not be able to inherit God's three-generation lineage and achieve the original standard of the kingdom of heaven. After a revolution of the conscience, when three generations join as one in the cultural sphere of the revolution of God's heart, they can enter the kingdom of heaven. I bestowed upon you the Unification Blessing Ceremony to Register the Blessed Families that Formed the Four-Position Foundation at the Great Transition of the Three Ages. Based on that, three generations have to unite. If they do not, they cannot enter the Cheon Il Guk family nor the liberated Cheon Il Guk nation within God's realm of heart in the age of settlement of the culture of heart. From now on, your mind has to win the absolute surrender of your body. Never follow your body's whims.(430-255,20040103)

18 You must wonder where we stand today in the course of providential history. Though it is invisible to the human eye, we are in a time of great transition. Especially since 2000, divine providence has been advancing toward its completion at great speed. I have founded numerous organizations and groups to expedite the providence. Among those groups, the Interreligious and International Federation for World Peace and the Peace UN are to embrace Satan's realm and, in the Abel position, work together with the Mongolian People's Federation for World Peace, in the Cain position, to liberate Satan's realm and bring about a unified world. These groups have to take full responsibility to ensure that discord and conflict between the Cain and Abel realms no longer plague history.(487-145,20050214)

19 The term Cheon Il Guk did not appear by chance. Throughout history, people had to accomplish restoration through indemnity. Building on the victorious foundation of World War II, we had to work as a movement to bring together nations, religions and non-governmental organizations to the point where no condition for accusation remained. Only then could we establish Cheon Il Guk. The

world can no longer deny the work I am doing. I began my work in the provinces of Korea, advanced to Asia and from there to the entire world. It is not easy to do such work for forty years. It is like a dream to think that we have actually succeeded in setting up God's kingdom. To do so, we had to conduct the Enthronement Ceremony for the Kingship of God. There could be no enthronement without a nation, and now we have finally conducted the Blessing ceremony that opened the gates of Cheon Il Guk.(411-014,20030707)

20 In 2004, True Parents were crowned as the King and Queen of Peace in a United States Senate building and at the Korean National Assembly. Following these coronations I established the Universal Peace Federation in New York in 2005. On that victorious foundation, we conducted the Cheon Jeong Gung Entrance Ceremony and Coronation of True Parents, the King and Queen of Peace, in Heaven and on Earth, on June 13,2006, substantially establishing Cheon Il Guk. Looking back at my eighty or so years of life, I have been imprisoned six times as a result of persecution and false charges in the process of carrying out God's Will. Today marks the twenty-first anniversary of my victory over the hardships of prison life, my release from Dan-bury Prison, where I spent the last of my six incarcerations. To commemorate this day, and to celebrate Dr. Hak Ja Ran Moon's return after her successful completion of a 180-city global speaking tour representing me, I organized the historic Rally for Victorious Complete Freedom on the Return of Heaven and Earth, the Homeland and Hometown of Cosmic Peace, to God. Mrs. Moon, with the authority of True Parents, has spent the last six months ministering to the world, conducting the Holy Marriage Blessing and conveying the peace messages. With the completion of this revolutionary journey, we are able to open the Era after the Coming of Heaven and proclaim the Settlement of the Ideal Family and the Kingdom of the Peaceful Ideal World, which God has longed to see from the very beginning.(536-041,20060820)

CHAPTER 2

The Structure and Settlement of Cheon Il Guk

Section 1. The Nature of Cheon Il Guk

1 The Chinese character for heaven, cheon (天), is formed by combining the characters for two (二) and people (人). Thus, Cheon Il Guk (天二人) means the nation where two people, Adam and Eve, become one with each other horizontally and become one with God vertically. From that point sons and daughters appear.(383-129,20020627)

2 From now on, you are the citizens of the Cheonju Pyeonghwa Tongil Guk (the Nation of Cosmic Peace and Unity), or simply, Cheon Il Guk. The words Cheon Il refers to the singular reality encompassing both heaven and earth. Cheon Il Guk implies that two people unite and form a nation.(360-086,2001 11 12)

The nation where two people become one by means of true love

3 The Chinese character cheon (天) in Cheon Il Guk means two (二) people (人). It binds the duality of God on the incorporeal horizontal level with the duality of two persons on the substantial horizontal level. What makes them one is true love. Hence, Cheon Il Guk is the nation where two people absolutely become one.(362-019,2001 1202)

4 The combination of the Chinese characters for two (二) and person (人) forms the character for heaven (cheon 天). Cheon Il Guk is the nation where two people are united as one. Each one of you exists as two entities—mind and body. These two must be united as a mind-person and a body-person. If they are not united, we might call a nation that such people form Ji Il Guk (Ji 地, meaning earth). Cheon Il Guk is the supreme nation of the heavens; it is the heavenly kingdom.(375-060,20020413)

5 All God's creations are made in pairs and formed out of God's love. That is why everything exists in pairs, including stamen and pistil in flowers, male and female in animals, mind and body in human beings, and man and woman. Cheon Il Guk is a place where parents and children, husbands and wives, and brothers and sisters become one. God dwells in each family where two become one. Hence, two people in a parent-child relationship, which is a vertical relationship, in a husband-wife relationship, which is a right-left relationship, or in a relationship between older

and younger siblings, which is a front-back relationship, have to completely become one. Those who live for the sake of others bring such unity, whereas those who ask others to live for them will fall by the wayside.(373-316,20020404)

6 Cheon Il Guk is the nation where two people become one. For two people to become one, they must become one up and down, left and right, and front and back. Following this, Cain and Abel must become one, and the fallen world must become one with the world of goodness. Then the kingdoms of heaven on earth and in heaven must become one, and God and True Parents, who were separate, must become one. Everyone has to fulfill his or her responsibility to open the gate to the kingdom of heaven. Then the basic structure for Cheon Il Guk will start taking shape. When this happens, Satan's world will naturally retreat.(400-265,20030103)

7 All relationships, including those of parents and children, men and women, and brothers and sisters, require two entities. The nation where two become one is Cheon Il Guk. The era of Cheon Il Guk is a time of unity through peaceful governance. It takes place based on a family that settles through three generations, connected in love. Each one of us has to make such a level foundation. I must be proud of having God as my Parent, the Parent who is not present to people of the fallen world.(396-220,20021108)

8 Cheon Il Guk is the nation of True Parents, the Parents of Heaven and Earth. It is the world of freedom, the world of peace and the world of happiness, centering on true love. It is time to cheer "Mansei!" for the prosperity of Cheon Il Guk, for its freedom, peace and happiness that are centered on true love and based on the ideal of the Parents of Heaven and Earth. We, all humankind, must be liberated to enjoy freedom and peace centering on true love; then we can be happy. The kingdom of heaven is the nation where heaven and earth are united in true love.(365-013,20020104)

9 You should establish a model family, one that is settled, by becoming one with God and by bringing oneness up and down, left and right, and front and back within the realm of unity with God. When such families connect, they expand into tribes, peoples, nations and the world. Using this formula as a bridge, we can complete the ideal Cheon Il Guk in heaven and on earth.(364-077,20020101)

10 Cheon Il Guk is the original world having nothing to do with the Fall, the world that God envisioned according to His ideal of creation. It is the nation where two or three people can become one. It is the one unified world, the final destination toward which we are advancing. There, each individual will be accorded the same

value, regardless of whether they joined in the beginning or at the last minute, yet no one will complain. Everyone can go to the kingdom of heaven possessing equal value and be welcomed in the eternal era of peace and prosperity.(428-103,20031210)

11 As we usher in the Era after the Coming of Heaven, you have to practice, in your families and nations, the Word of truth that Heaven gives you. Now is the time to thoroughly prepare for eternal life. We have passed from the world of conflicts, confrontations and struggles in the Era before the Coming of Heaven to where we now stand on the victorious foundation set by True Parents, the Parents of Heaven and Earth. It is our task, therefore, to establish Cheon Il Guk, the substantial kingdom of heaven that arises when we live together in harmony and unity.(465-293,20040821)

12 Where two people become one, we have peace. A world of fighting has no peace. Therefore, God cannot dwell in it. Fighting leads to division and eventually to disintegration. No one can deny this, even on a theoretical level. It is the logic within nature, a scientific principle. You can take my word for it as a person who studied science. We have to establish Cheon Il Guk families, where three generations—grandparents, parents and children—attend and live with the eternal God. As this is the hope of God, it is the responsibility of tribal messiahs and the mission of ambassadors for peace.(536-052,20060820)

13 Cheon Il Guk covers five levels: the individual, family, tribe, people and nation. Now that Satan has yielded the sovereignty over his world on the national level to Heaven, I am saying that we have come to the era when we can completely exercise the authority of the heavenly kingdom from a position of liberation, even up to the national level.(362-124,2001 1209)

14 Korean history is filled with struggles between loyal subjects of the king and wicked subjects. In that history, the blood of loyal subjects was often spilled. If someone was convicted of treason, the king would require the execution even of his extended family. These people received horrific punishments. Korean women have endured unsurpassed suffering. To indemnify this and liberate the people who were or are ensnared in all these miseries, we have to unite everyone, from the dungeons of hell to the highest levels in the heavenly realm. Cheon Il Guk is two worlds made into one. Please understand that now is the time of its establishment, based on Gods kingship, which is gained through the liberation of individuals, families, tribes, peoples, nations and the world. With that, God's sons and daughters can reside in the kingdom of heaven. Cheon Il Guk is the completion of

the ideal of creation in Eden, a place that has nothing to do with the Fall.(396-163,20021107)

The nation of the Fourth Israel and Cheon Il Guk

15 The establishment of God's homeland has to do with recovering the realm of the fourth Adam. That is, the nation of the fourth Adam must be formed. Once the nation of the fourth Adam is formed, Cheon Il Guk and the nation of the Fourth Israel must unite. Since one is a religious realm and the other is a political realm, when these two become one, we can realize unification. Therefore, we need the nation of the Fourth Israel.(416-150,20030821)

16 Cheon Il Guk represents the kingdom of peace. It will become the framework of Gods homeland. Cheon Il Guk, as the nation of the Fourth Israel, is to be governed by the Peace UN. True Parents, through their kingship of the Third Israel, have finally come to represent the kingship of the First Israel and the Second Israel, thus recovering the substantial foundation that was lost at the time of Jesus. Hence, the entire spirit world and the realms of all religions, with Jesus as their center, will transition into one unified world that attends them as the Parents of the Third Israel.(430-250,20040103)

17 The purpose of establishing Cheon Il Guk is to liberate God, who has worked internally in religions for restoration through indemnity, whereas the purpose of establishing the Fourth Israel is to have a world-level external nation. The unity of Cheon Il Guk and the nation of the Fourth Israel will be God's nation, which is the ideal of Heaven, the kingdom of heaven on earth. Now we enter the time when I can issue the command to charge forward with all our energy toward this ultimate goal.(416-188,20030822)

18 The history of Cain-Abel conflict will come to an end when the Fourth Israel and the Peace UN become one and attend True Parents' family and the families embracing heaven and earth, which are the foundations for the world of the culture of heart. On this basis, the nations of the world will enter the age of liberation and complete freedom. The kingdom of heaven, which has been empty so far, will fill up all at once. God will enter the age of eternal prosperity and peace and establish the era of His homeland and peaceful kingship. When the Third Israel is unified, the realm of the Peace UN, under the leadership of the United States, will naturally solidify and become one with the nation of the Fourth Israel. America has to restructure the UN to serve Cheon Il Guk, which is God's homeland. When this happens, God will return to His original position, the position He had before the

Fall. As God comes to reign over the entire world, we will advance toward the era of the peace kingdom.(430-253,20040103)

Section 2. The Three Requisites of Cheon Il Guk

1 To create a nation, there has to be sovereignty, people and land. The same holds true for the heavenly kingdom, where Parents represent the sovereignty, sons and daughters represent the people, and its territory represents the land. None of these can be left out; it is an ironclad rule.(035-279,19701025)

2 For the formation of a nation, there must be sovereignty, people and land. When building the kingdom of heaven on earth from this perspective, who would be its lord? Who would be its sovereign? Without a doubt, God would be its sovereign. Who would be its people? All humankind. Then what would be its land? It would be the entire planet Earth.(096-015,19780101)

The foundations of Cheon Il Guk are sovereignty, people and land

3 Once people come to know that God definitely exists, they will naturally follow His Will. Gods Will is to make all humanity, His beloved people—to make the planet Earth, His beloved land, and by bringing these together, to make a sovereign nation. This will be the ideal world.(056-192,19720514)

4 To establish a nation, there needs to be land, people and sovereignty. What establishes the sovereignty? It is a relationship with God, the Origin. For instance, those who govern the nation are required to conduct the affairs of state by connecting to God, even after most people have fallen fast asleep. In this manner, the leaders will be one with their people. Thus united, they will know that everything set before them is not for their own use, but for the sake of the nation. With this in place, the nation will prosper.(030-088,19700317)

5 The reason we shed blood and tears for our country and our people is ultimately to build the eternal heavenly kingdom, a blessed nation that our descendants will applaud for all eternity. This will surely be a country where children of direct lineage rule with an authority that represents God. It has the authority of God's kingship, which is neither communism nor democracy. Once we form this country, it will endure forever with this national structure. As I come to think of this, I lament that I myself could not become a citizen of that nation. You too should lament that you were not able to live in such a country. We all should be lamenting that we were not able to have such a nation. We should repent for not having established this one unchanging sovereignty.(392-234,20020921)

6 God sent His beloved sons and daughters to this earth in His endeavor to establish one true nation. But to this day we have not prepared the foundation upon which to restore this nation of oneness. After each attempt to achieve it ended without success, God continued to send His people to earth to initiate, conduct, and conclude His work successfully. God has worked through history for this purpose.(030-010,19700314)

7 People whose nation has lost its sovereignty are in a pitiful plight. This was what Jesus meant when he preached: "Therefore, do not be anxious, saying, 'What shall we eat?' or 'What shall we drink?' or 'What shall we wear?' For the Gentiles seek all these things; and your Heavenly Father knows that you need them all. But seek first His kingdom and His righteousness, and all these things shall be yours as well." (Matt. 6:31-33) What did he say you should seek first: your children or His kingdom? He told you to seek the nation that God is seeking.(034-337,19700920)

8 Even Jesus is waiting in paradise. He was not able to establish the throne of Heaven on earth. Jesus cannot yet stand in front of God with the foundation of the sovereignty of a nation. He could not govern a fully established nation whose people could go straight from earth to the kingdom of God in heaven. Thus, they had to remain with Jesus in paradise, which is like a waiting room. The kingdom of heaven in heaven is a place you cannot enter alone. If Adam and Eve had not fallen, they would have gone there together with their family. The kingdom of heaven in heaven is a place you go in the company of your family, including children. Without them, you cannot possibly enter.(056-201,19720514)

9 God's sovereignty of love is absolute, unique, eternal, and unchanging. Such is the case with the sovereignty, the people and the land of God's kingdom. Therefore, we need to reorganize everything. This includes registering anew as absolute, unique, eternal, and unchanging citizens. All things should be reorganized as well, with everything reclaimed. God's kingdom consists of sovereignty, people and all things, united absolutely with God. We see that in each family, parents represent sovereignty children represent the citizens, and possessions represent the creation. Each family needs to offer itself to God as a small-scale foundation. The larger nation and world will come about on this basis and this basis alone.(304-258,19991108)

10 For us to form a nation, we need sovereignty and then people. In the future we will provide all citizens of the heavenly kingdom with a registration card. This foundation, on which its people, its citizens, will stand, centering on Heaven's full authority and sovereignty, is being prepared for Cheon Il Guk. At that point, you will

be honored based upon the number of people from your tribe you brought to heaven.(364-131,20020101)

11 We have to build one nation under the one sovereignty of God. The time has come for you, as the people who can actually exercise the authority of True Parents centering on God, to take financial responsibility by paying taxes for the restoration of our homeland on earth, the Nation of the Unified World. I am not supposed to help you personally, so I cannot provide all the resources for you. You need to follow God's Will. In order to do this, Korea has its responsibility, Japan has its responsibility and America has its responsibility. Providentially, the three of them are one country, although each represents one position as father nation, mother nation and eldest son nation.(303-157,19990817)

12 Why have the saints faced difficulties? It is because they pioneered faith without support from their family, society or nation. They were a people without a nation. If they had had a nation's support, they could have survived even if their tribe opposed them. Yet this rarely happened, and hence those whom God called usually were persecuted wherever they went and many walked the path of a sacrificial offering, shedding blood. Again, this is because they did not have their own nation. If they had had a sovereign and a nation to support them, there would have been no need for them to go the sacrificial way. They were a people without a nation. To this day, the truth did not have a people or nation, and even those who followed it did not know the nature of the nation that God was hoping to see.(056-159,19720514)

13 How many heaven-bound sons and daughters have you gathered? You should not do anything else other than that. You may live affluently with billions of dollars' worth of gold, but that will pass away. Invest your material resources, your knowledge and even your life from the fallen lineage for this work. Do not invest them a little at a time, but rather all at once, out of a heart to create citizens for God's kingdom. Accumulate such investments; their value appreciates exponentially.(230-031,19920415)

14 The Unification Church is marching toward the ideal of the kingdom of heaven within the family. The nation, world, heaven, and God are nestled in that family. You have been engrafted to the True Parents' lineage, so do not act like wild olive trees. Take the seed of the true olive tree and bear its fruit wherever you take root in the world. Transcending nations and peoples, the fruits are the same. Bear them and bring them forth as the holy people of the kingdom of heaven, manifesting God's ideal of creation. Unification Church blessed families are responsible to increase the

population of the kingdom of heaven, which is a free and liberated realm with no history of indemnity. Never forget that this is your mission.(202-257,19900524)

15 Unification Church members do not have their own nation. The democratic world we see today is the fruit of God's six thousand years of endeavor. Had you been born in Israel at the time of Jesus, you would have been executed. A man like me would have been done away with, leaving behind not even the smallest trace of his existence. We have to be clearly aware that there are un-righteous representatives of Satan on the national level as well as on the world level. In particular, communism, which is the embodiment of evil on the global level, is desperate. It is preparing a final act of aggression to wipe out religion.(055-209,19720509)

God's right of ownership and the Cheon Il Guk citizenship card

16 Until now, God has been unable to assert His right of ownership. Even True Parents could not assert their right of ownership over true children, a true nation and a true world. Satan has claimed everything: nations, peoples and the material world. Satan usurped the entirety of God's right of ownership. Because no true person, no true man and true woman, arose to take possession of them, God's right of ownership was not established.(186-118,19890129)

17 To this day, God has been unable to establish His right of ownership. The devil has been the owner, and God's children were unable to take ownership. The devil and his children have posed as the owners of God's creation and caused great harm. Therefore, everything has to be reclaimed. The entire creation has to be returned to the original Parents—to true parents, true children, true tribes and the true nation.(203-186,19900624)

18 Socialism, that is, communism, is seeking to make one totalitarian nation. Because Satan knows that the era of the restoration of ownership based on God's ideal will soon arrive, he is trying to prevent God from taking ownership of the world through communism. Satan did all that he could. Nonetheless, I have reclaimed everything for God's side. That is why Satan's side is defeated in both theory and practice. There is no power that can stand in opposition to God and me. (229-158,19920411)

19 The matter of ownership is a big problem. In communist socialism, the state is the sole owner. In democracy, the individual is the owner. So who should be the owner? The whole world belongs to God; thus, the world belongs to His children and they belong to His family. Therefore, God's children need to bring everything

together so that they can offer Him the ownership of the world. God should be the sole owner. Only when He becomes the sole owner, having the right of ownership, can He bequeath it to the True Parents and, through them, to the children. Then the world can be considered to be owned by God.(183-082,19881029)

20 You do not really own your possessions, your children or your spouse. You are standing in the position of the archangel. Hence, you need to pass through a period when you absolutely deny owning anything. Socialist communism, sensing that such an era is dawning, denies ownership to individuals. That is why they speak of everything as belonging to the state or some other collective. This development is not by happenstance. The ideal world of creation is unfolding based on God's providence of restoration and process of re-creation.(200-303,19900226)

21 Cheon Il Guk needs to have sovereignty, land and people. The Enthronement Ceremony for Gods Kingship accomplished the restoration of sovereignty. The rallies for the Settlement of Gods Homeland signified the restoration of the land. Next, you will register as a citizen of Cheon Il Guk and acquire a Cheon Il Guk citizenship card.(476-281,20041123)

22 Once the nation of Cheon Il Guk is established, everyone can go to heaven and become a citizen. That is why I am asking that everyone acquire a Cheon Il Guk citizenship card. Please take this seriously. You will be in trouble if you take it lightly. Try to have your relatives receive citizenship cards even if they are not interested in doing so.(361-125,2001 1122)

23 We have created a passport for the heavenly kingdom. Once Cheon Il Guk passports gain currency, people will no longer need visas. You should value this Cheon Il Guk passport more than a Korean or American passport. You should value it more than certification by the UN. The Cheon Il Guk passport is not an ordinary passport that anyone can easily acquire.(368-296,20020201)

24 Even the saints and sages in the spirit world must acquire Cheon Il Guk citizenship, so of course you too should acquire a Cheon Il Guk citizenship card. The reason for this is to build one world—one country, one people, one culture and one language under God. For this, we have to become children, couples and families who resemble the one Gods character.(390-141,20020808)

25 You cannot enter God's kingdom without a Cheon Il Guk citizenship card. The way to acquire one is by willingly offering your life, your property and even your nation to God, and then receiving them all back as your inheritance.(522-155,20060328)

26 We do not have a nation. Though there are many sons and daughters of blessed families, we have yet to establish the ideal nation that God desires. Even though you have children, there is no place to register their births in the ideal nation, nor is there a place to register marriages or deaths. If we do not have a nation, we cannot find settlement. That means that we have no place to settle down. In the secular world, if you do not have a passport from your nation, other nations will not recognize you. In other words, they will not acknowledge that you are the citizen of a particular nation.(277-251,19960418)

27 I have also decreed that the absolute good spirits in the spirit world, the blessed family members in the spirit world, may register as citizens of Cheon Il Guk by grace. When these people receive their Cheon Il Guk citizenship cards, will that not be worth rejoicing over in front of heaven and earth, in front of God, and in front of the saints?(398-038,20021206)

Section 3. The Constitution and Teaching Materials of Cheon Il Guk

1 Based on the conditions that I have made, the era of restoration through indemnity will pass away. Now is the time to establish balance in the structure of the kingdom of heaven, based on the laws and principles of Cheon Il Guk. It is not the same as it was in the past. Since the family is the origin of the kingdom of heaven, we have to restructure everything based on the family.(370-149,20020219)

Now we are in the era of the rule of heavenly law

2 I established the path, the heavenly way, by going through so many hardships, even gaining Satan's submission. If a tribe, a family or an individual trifles with this way of heaven, it is unforgiveable. Heaven's nation needs its constitution and laws. We need to resolve God's bitter sorrow, which has built up for tens of thousands of years. This requires a nation.(323-147,20000601)

3 Once Gods kingship is established, there will be no more room to tolerate injustice. When a wrongdoing takes place, the punishment will be immediate. Because the era of couples will come, centering on the constitution of the heavenly nation, the time of praying to God, to the Savior, and to the True Parents will pass. I assume you know well how to reach individual perfection and how to attain unity within the family. If you say you are still not clear about it, it means you have not truly accepted what I have taught thus far. Be that as it may, when we establish a nation, set its constitution and laws, and form government departments handling different areas, ignorance of your responsibility will not exonerate you. You must

clearly understand that you cannot attain perfection based on the conditions you made during the providence of restoration; you can attain perfection only by abiding by the law. Only by this can you reach perfection. In my eyes, there is no law of indemnity; nonetheless, you have to keep Heaven's laws for at least two generations in order to go over the peak to reach perfection. Belief alone cannot take you there. You have to abide by these laws. Every relationship has its laws—the parent-child relationship has its laws; the relationship between husband and wife has its laws, and the relationship among brothers and sisters has its laws. You should examine yourself every day as to whether you are living up to them.(356-091,2001 1009)

4 For Heaven's nation to exist, it must have Heaven's constitution. If it takes the form of a nation-state, the constitution written for it will include provisions about sovereignty, land and citizens. But in reality, can we find a territory today that God governs? What about God's sovereignty or God's citizens? These are not to be found. Who, then, has been entrusted with the mission to bring these into being? God has entrusted this work to the returning Lord, the True Parents. Since the first ancestors, who should have been the True Parents, lost the world-level foundation, I have to surpass that standard. I must establish the sovereignty of God's love and proclaim it. I have to proclaim a world united under God.(300-110,19990302)

5 The revolutionary task remains— the task of shortening the period pertaining to everything over which God has been agonizing. It requires serious action based on True Parents' governing authority. You cannot imagine how complex it is. That is why you need to know how to resolve the issues facing the nations on earth. We need to write a constitution that can govern Heaven's nation here on earth. We must set conditions to accomplish liberation on earth.(325-160,20000701)

6 What is humanity's hope? Fallen humanity's ultimate hope is to stand at the final global frontline. It is to usher in the day we can triumph on the frontline and, with the authority gained from that victory, return the world to God. Following this, our hope turns to welcoming the day when God will say, "Well done! Since you recovered it and realized it, it is yours!" It is to see the day when we again receive it from Him, with His blessings and His love. When this happens, each person will regard the entire world as "my country and my land," regard the people of the world as "my people," and regard the sovereignty of the world as "my sovereignty." When everyone comes forward having this sovereignty, we will have the opportunity to form one law and one constitution and establish a new system of social life. Life in the kingdom of heaven can finally start from that point; it is there that we should live.(066-285,19730516)

7 Adam and Eve have to become one with God. Then, with love, they have to substantiate the start of the hometown of love. This hometown of love should be the foundation where new couples, united in God's love, give birth to new children and form families. Next, these families should expand to tribes and then to a people. We need to form a people; then centering on that people we should complete the kingdom of heaven on earth that can be governed by the constitution of Heavens nation. True love is the foundation for the constitution of God's kingdom.(164-250,19870517)

8 If God were to make a constitution, He would make one that protects and upholds love. Such will be the constitution of the heavenly kingdom. Politics will serve the purpose of putting its laws into practice for governing the kingdom. It will be simple and logical.(104-169,19790501)

9 The constitution of the heavenly kingdom must be composed so as to completely sustain the life of the individual as well as to enable families, societies and nations to move forward and reach their fullest potential without being encroached upon. It is to establish laws that protect and sustain the views of life of God's sons and daughters on the individual level, the family level, the national level, the world level and the cosmic level. That will be the constitution of the heavenly kingdom that God desires to see.(065-195,197211 19)

10 Among the heavenly constitution's laws, the very first is to love God more than you love yourself. The second is to love your brothers and sisters, whom God loves, more than you love yourself. From the moment of your birth to wherever you go in the spirit world, if you are a person who stands in that position, no one can stop you. The Fall stained this foundation; therefore I have worked to repair it by striving to unite the world on the foundation of the mainstream Christian cultural sphere.(195-136,19891107)

11 The constitution of God's kingdom could not be presented because that kingdom did not exist. However, now that the era has arrived to usher in God's kingdom, we can establish its constitution and laws. If we live in accordance with its constitution and laws while on earth, the gates will open before us without any problem when we go to the spirit world. Conversely if we do not live in accordance with it, in the spirit world we will be blocked every step of the way.(336-170,20001011)

12 The era for governance by the laws of the constitution of Heaven's nation has come. When Adam and Eve fell, they immediately plummeted into hell. Now, however, I have promulgated the three fundamental laws of Heaven's nation, which are the core of the constitution. The time has come to live by Heavens laws, not by the providence of salvation based on less-than-perfect love. Only when we abide by the laws of the kingdom of heaven can we attain perfection.(395-092,20021016)

13 God's love means that the individual sacrifices to find and establish love for the family, the family sacrifices to find and establish love for the tribe, the tribe sacrifices to find and establish love for a people, a people sacrifices to find and establish love for the world, and the world sacrifices to find and establish love for the cosmos. This principle of the cosmos, of heaven and earth, is systematic. It is through this way of love, of sacrifice extending throughout the cosmos, that we will liberate God. God's advancement must be based on this law, which is principled and logical, and so God instituted this way by means of His constitution. 126-278,19830424 ()

14 Our goal is to institute the constitution of the heavenly kingdom. The constitution of the heavenly kingdom must also be apparent in the norms by which we live. It has to be instituted. There must come a day when we can proclaim it to all nations and to heaven and earth. Instituting this constitution will establish the laws and the system of individual life and society.(066-298,19730516)

15 I know how fearful Heavens constitution and Heavens laws can be. That is why I have gone on a straight path of indescribable ordeals in order to not run afoul of those laws. I did not walk that path because I am foolish or because I am not as smart as you. I chose to follow this path because I clearly understood what is at stake.(280-324,19970213)

16 Once we can establish Gods nation on earth, everything will be governed by its constitution. Through the True Parents, the Parents of Heaven and Earth, God will present and enact the constitution of heaven and earth. It will not consist of laws rooted in life on earth, but of laws rooted in the heavenly kingdom in the ideal eternal world. We will be able to train ourselves by these laws while we are on earth. In a word, we cannot live a self-centered life.(324-305,20000626)

17 God's nation does not yet exist on this planet Earth. However, as we continue marching on the way, once the variety of races love their enemies and thus the world becomes one, without fighting among tribes and peoples, we can complete the restoration of God's homeland. The day that follows the restoration of God's

homeland, when Heavens constitution is proclaimed, will become the greatest day. It will be celebrated for eternity, and no other force will occupy us, ever.(107-026,19800221)

18 When you bring 160 families to unite with you, the era of registration will come. It is similar to the way it is now: your birth is registered, your marriage is registered, and your death is registered. With the founding of God's nation, we have to formulate its constitution with a system of basic laws that govern it based on family registries. One qualification for registration in that nation is to know its mother tongue. Accordingly, you have to assimilate True Parents' culture into your language, lifestyle and home environment, and create a family of the form that represents the world of the culture of heart. Lacking this, you are not qualified to register in the kingdom of heaven.(276-218,19960224)

19 You need to abide by the laws of the heavenly kingdom and respect the protocols of the palace. From now you need to prepare in every way for the world in which South and North Korea are unified. You still need more training, because on that day, when the era of registration arrives, not everyone will have earned the right to enter. When that day comes, registering in God's kingdom will be more demanding than the course to become a professor by graduating from college and earning a doctorate. To succeed, you have to organize, in your generation, all members of your tribe throughout history. The spirit world and physical world will appraise the degree to which you have done so.(210-370,19901227)

20 No existing laws will endure unless they align with Heavens law. That is why I am trying to make laws based on Heaven's law. I am trying to uphold Heavens law, not human law. I am trying to establish Heavens rights, not the human rights that you think you need. You ask for human rights, but I am not referring to human rights as in, for example, French rights in France and Korean rights in Korea, I am trying to establish human rights in the context of the Fourth Israel. It is not where enemies fight, but where former enemies put their heads together and say, "Let's marry your daughter to my son, and my daughter to your son!" Their ideas make each other joyful. Only such people can protect the sovereignty of the heavenly kingdom.(418-031,20030914)

Heaven's textbook for children

21 What is God's bitter grief? His first bitter grief is about not having created His textbook for children. His second bitter grief is about not having created His textbook for siblings. His third bitter grief is about not having created His textbook

for couples. His fourth bitter grief is about not having created His textbook for parents. Not being able to create these textbooks, which can teach the four realms of heart in order to educate humanity, has been God's bitter grief. If God had been able to teach us everything necessary to walk the path of life, today's misery would not have come about. God sees all this misery and laments not being able to take charge Himself to educate humanity. God has come all the way here in order to usher in the day He when He can teach us. We can form the new nation of God and become its citizens only when we have achieved a passing grade in these educational principles. In other words, the new nation can be established only when we have become individuals and formed families, tribes and countries that can liberate God's bitter grief.(225-215,19920120)

22 God could not set up His textbook for children, and this led Him to feel bitter grief. Therefore, I am now making Heavens textbook for children. Then, in front of the Parent, what kind of thoughts should the children have? When Adam looks at Eve, he should not see only Eve. Eve was created because of God. If Eve had become a true parent, she could have given birth to true sons and daughters. If Adam and Eve had become true parents, their children would have become true children. True children are born of the vertical God and horizontal true parents.(225-215,19920120)

23 You must guard well three kinds of love: your love for God, your love for true parents, and your love for your future spouse. Can you casually treat these relationships based on your whims? If you strike any of these kinds of love and cause damage, you are damaging God and your parents; moreover, you are damaging your future love partner. You have to relate to your partners with great love. This is the teaching of the textbook and the formula of love that God's children need to keep. Resenting your brother or sister is the same as resenting God and your parents. It is also an act of denying and destroying the realm of your future partner. It is the same as detaching yourself from love. Hence, doing this is an offense against God and also against your parents and the entire creation. Anyone who does, stands as an enemy to God, True Parents and the entire creation. God could not educate Adam and Eve to live according to this way. Yet this is the standard of the principle within Heavens textbook for children, which can liberate God's bitter grief. Thus, brothers and sisters ought to be good to one another. They should live this way in front of God and the creation, with the Parents at the center. (225-216,19920120)

24 In terms of the left and right sides, let's say we call the right side plus and the left side minus. Then the right side represents man and the left side represents

woman. We also can say that heaven represents man and earth represents woman. In the context of front and back, the front represents man and the back represents woman. Therefore, do not disregard the reciprocal conditions that accomplish the ideal of the sphere. If you disregard this relationship, not only God and other people will dislike you; even the creation will dislike you. Therefore, we recognize the need for extensive education, because troubles arise when we disregard our relationship with our partner. God desires to teach us this content from His textbook. Eve has God the Parent with her and her love partner with her. Adam stands in a complimentary position. Based upon these relationships, Adam and Eve give birth to children on behalf of God, their Parent. The sons and daughters born from them are not only their personal children; they are children who represent the entire universe and who have the qualification to be its owners. From this perspective, the first thing you as parents need to do is to thoroughly educate your children to center on the three kinds of love.(225-216,19920120)

25 Second, you should have more interest in the welfare of others than in your own welfare. How can you carry this out in daily life? If you do not want to stain yourself and go to the wrong place, you should love your siblings and children more than yourself. That is, you should devote your main attention to others and treat others better than you treat yourself. In the family, siblings tend to fight to get the best things, right? It is better for younger siblings to wait for their older siblings to arrive. Younger siblings should give the best portion to their older siblings and then choose their own portion. The youngest among the siblings should wait and take the last. From the time you carry your baby on your back singing lullabies, teach him or her lessons from the textbook about this order. Both father and mother have to teach their children to relate to one another in this manner.(225-217,19920120)

26 Third, you should cherish your children as most precious. This is because the experience of ideal love starts from the children, not the parents. What you seek as love does not necessarily start with your spouse. A couple is one man and one woman born from different parents and brought together. Then where does the experience of ideal love begin? It begins with your children. God created Adam and Eve as the object partners of love. Thus, in front of God, they were supposed to manifest the love of the object partner for each other and then give back to Him the fruit born of that love—children. Thus, the experience of ideal love does not start from the parents, but from their children. To repeat, ideal love starts from your children. It is parental love that makes parents love their children. The motivation initiating that love is not for themselves, but for their children. That is why anyone who has love should love all people just as they love their children. We arrive at this conclusion. A person who loves all people like that loves in the same

manner as God. This means that he or she stands in a position representing the Heavenly Parent.(225-217,19920120)

Heaven's textbook for siblings

27 First, siblings should live for the sake of each other, because they represent the horizontal world. True love starts from living for the sake of others. When two meet, a circular movement commences when one side gives to the other side and the other side reciprocates. When circular movement occurs, an ideal realm is formed. Why should siblings cherish one another? The dynamics among siblings expand to the world, while the dynamics between parents and children are vertical. Sibling relationships expand love horizontally, so loving siblings is the same as loving the world. The idea that all people are equal arises out of the ideal of love for all one's siblings. This is to take a global perspective. Sibling love starts from one axis and expands.(225-218,19920120)

28 The second point concerns the interconnection between my parents, my siblings and I. When you call out, "older brother!" you presuppose that your parents' love and your other siblings' love are included in his love. Originally, older and younger siblings were meant to be undivided in love, and that love was meant to expand horizontally from older to younger. In other words, my older siblings stand in the position of pioneers for me. The path a man follows for the purpose of expanding his horizons is in order to unite with a woman in the future. The path a woman follows, which leads her to become one with a man through love, expands his horizons further. This applies to both. Their paths on the left and the right serve to expand each other's scope of activity. When your siblings expand the scope of activities of their love, it is to your benefit. Although what your older brother possesses may have nothing to do with you, if his scope expands, so will yours. That is why those who love their siblings will come to expand the scope of their activities. It is an old saying that a person's horizons widen if he or she has numerous siblings. In this way, sibling love can expand to the world. This does not happen with children's love, but it does with sibling love. With sibling love, you can pioneer to the world level. You should treat your older siblings, who pioneer a path for you, as people who combine love for the future with the love of your parents and their sibling love. Sibling love is the path to pioneer love of ever-greater scope for the future. 225-219,19920120 ()

29 Third, when you live for the sake of others with siblings' love, you can engage in love on the world level. A reason to love your siblings is to expand the scope of your activities to the world level and recover the world. In addition, by expanding your

horizontal foundation, you become a central person. Upon this expansive horizontal foundation, in time you are to become a husband or wife. Then you and your spouse can unite with the vertical standard, God, and eventually embody that Central Being. By oneness with the Central Being, the two of you enter a place where you can exist forever. In other words, by direct vertical oneness with God's world, you can advance to the realm of substantial oneness.(225-220,19920120)

Heaven's textbook for couples

30 First, in order to have conjugal love, you need to inherit the love of your parents and then go through the stages of filial love and sibling love. To become a true couple, the husband and wife have to first experience these three stages of love. A person who does not pass through the stages of filial love and sibling love cannot succeed in loving as a couple. Only after passing through these three stages of love, that is, only by inheriting your parents' love and then growing in filial love and sibling love can you achieve conjugal love as a true couple. Only after a man and woman have each fulfilled the duties of children and siblings can they join as a true couple. Then they reach the stage to love each other as husband and wife. After learning filial love and sibling love they should become one in heart and body as husband and wife. This is marriage. The purpose of marriage is for the woman to occupy the world of men, the man to occupy the world of women, and both to occupy the world of God. Why must we occupy God? It is so we can stand in the position of creators in the Creator's stead. If we are to multiply God's children, there is no alternative but to occupy God. This teaching is based on the Principle of Creation.(225-220,19920120)

31 Second, through conjugal love you can bring about the virtuous union of heaven and earth by uniting the east and west, above and below, and front and back. A couple manifests the union of east and west. It represents union of above and below, front and back, and heaven and earth. In other words, a couple establishes the virtuous union that harmonizes heaven and earth. From God's perspective, this is the foundation for realizing His wishes.(225-221,19920120)

32 Third, God, Adam and Eve have to attain a virtuous union. God is vertical, while Adam and Eve are relating horizontally. A settlement can be established only when the vertical God and horizontal Adam and Eve become one. That is, God can fully settle only when, centering on His original internal character, Adam and Eve as His horizontal embodiments can come into union to manifest His original external form. That is when His settlement takes place. Yet as a result of the Fall, that did not happen. The universe has no center today because they did not become one in

accord with Heaven's textbook and did not settle in the ideal realm of perfect love. Hence, the new settlement of true love is needed. It will begin only after God, who is vertical, attains a virtuous union with Adam and Eve, who are horizontal. (225-221,19920120)

33 Fourth, after a husband and wife settle in a virtuous union, they qualify to move to the position of parents, representing God. Through this settlement, they are no longer settlers, but can emerge in the universe with the qualification of owners. (225-221,19920120)

Heaven's textbook for parents

34 First, by combining the love of parents, children, siblings, and husband and wife, parents advance to the position of second creators, multiply children, and inherit the kingship on earth, representing God. The Fall disassociated the four kinds of love. Hence, once you as parents stand in the position of combining these four kinds of love, you can advance to God's position, that of second creators, who multiply children and inherit kingship on earth representing God. You can establish the kingdom of God on earth, inheriting everything on earth based on the kingship of the heavenly kingdom. (225-222,19920120)

35 Second, as ideal families expand on earth, each becomes the ancestor of a tribe. By inheriting kingship and representing God on earth, the ideal family expands. Your family alone does not suffice; it has to expand. Through expansion you can become the ancestor of your tribe, in other words, a tribal messiah. (225-222,19920120)

36 Third, once you fulfill your responsibility as the ancestor of a tribe, you will establish kingship. How to fulfill this responsibility, and thereby establish kingship, is based on my teaching on tribal messiahship. It explains how you can advance to a position of kingship or lordship based on your rights as the ancestor of your tribe. (225-222,19920120)

37 Fourth, you can establish kingship in the heavenly realm and kingship in the earthly realm through the virtuous union of heaven and earth. Through this union of heaven and earth, we can form the kingdom of heaven on earth and the kingdom of heaven in heaven. Once the kingship in the heavenly realm and the kingship in the earthly realm begin, God's ideal for the creation of Adam will be complete. (225-223,19920120)

The Cheon Il Guk Citizens' Covenant

38 Having been called as citizens of Cheon Il Guk, as we celebrate the Cheon Jeong Gung Entrance Ceremony and Coronation of the King and Queen of Peace in Heaven and on Earth, we applaud the substantial launching of the era of the kingdom of the peaceful ideal world. Honoring Heavens mandate to the True Parents of Heaven, Earth, and Humankind, we pledge to complete, on earth and in heaven, the ideal world that God envisioned at the creation, and solemnly swear: One, we pledge and swear that we will form a community that inherits Heavens tradition. For this, we will realize the culture of true heart and secure our identity as the people of Cheon Il Guk by guiding, leading and serving as models for our relatives and all people. Two, we pledge and swear that we will form one sovereignty, one people, one land and one culture centered on the victorious King and Queen of Peace, the True Parents of Heaven, Earth, and Humankind, and thereby establish the eternal kingdom of peace and prosperity. Three, we pledge and swear that we will bring an end to the Era before the Coming of Heaven, stained with division and conflict, and become the vanguards who protect the new order and the peace of the Era after the Coming of Heaven, which God has opened, and thereby usher in the era of one global family. Four, we pledge and swear that we will form one great cosmic family, God's ideal of creation, by attaining unity of body and mind, and thereby complete the eternal, ideal world of cosmic peace.(528-248,20060606)

Section 4. Registration and Settlement in Cheon Il Guk

1 To this day, no one has been able to register as a citizen of the heavenly kingdom. The heavenly realm did not have a nation, nor did it have a family. When a ten-member family went to the spirit world, the family members were scattered all over the place. However, from now on it will not be that way. Originally, if human beings had not fallen, the kingdom of heaven would have been the place where people live with their clan, including their mother and father. Had people's grandparents, parents, their own couple and their children become one through true love and inherited Gods true love, then even God would absolutely obey their clan. In the world of living for the sake of others, in submission to the tradition of such love, no power would be able to forestall the emergence of the foundation for peace.(210-355,19901227)

The opening of the Cheon Il Guk registration era

2 Soon the era of registration will arrive, and you will have the opportunity to register. But have you come to resemble God and True Parents, as Gods sons and daughters? It is easy to say, but not to fulfill. Whether sleeping or awake, it should

always be on your mind. This thought has to accompany you wherever you go, whatever you do, even when you are eating or sleeping. In order to fulfill it, you need to experience living in our homeland before you pass on to the next world. Does this not indicate that you should learn Korean? Originally, human beings were not to have had multiple languages; they were to have had only one language.(201-235,19900422)

3 Jesus when he came to the earth was unable to finalize the Will of God. He should have found his bride in his time, installed the True Parents, erected human beings as true children, and prepared, on his authority, a certain standard on this earth for establishing the kingdom of heaven. That standard was to have these children register into the kingdom of heaven and acquire the right to claim its inheritance. Yet he passed away to the spirit world without having done so. Would he have wanted people to register as servants? If he could not see them register as children of direct descent, he would have at least wanted them to register as adopted children so that they could receive the right of inheritance from God. At least with this status they could partake in God's inheritance.(155-309,19651101)

4 From now on, you will return to your hometown and compete with each other over who can best expand relationships in your community and with your tribe. You will compete with each other in this matter. It does not matter which tribe you belong to; you need to return to your hometown and organize your tribe based on the root and then let it branch to the east, west, north and south. Eventually those branches will have family records in a family archive. Then problems such as racial prejudice and imbalance between the developed nations and developing nations will disappear.(189-224,19890406)

5 Your birthplace is not really your hometown. The time has come when the kingdom can be your hometown. When you go to the other world, national boundaries will disappear. Currently in your hometown you face limitations, but once you fulfill all your responsibilities, you will be able to connect to your hometown without any barriers when you go to the spirit world. Your hometown will become the foundation for the kingdom of heaven on earth. The kingdom of heaven on earth is the land of original hometowns, where you can make connections everywhere. There, when you register in the registry of your nation, you will automatically be transferred to the registry of the heavenly kingdom. Just as, had the Fall not happened, the hometowns of all people would have been the hometown of God's kingdom, everyone, once engrafted, will enter the kingdom of heaven from a position of having been born in it.(216-134,19910309)

6 In the future, you will register. When South and North Korea are unified, Unification Church blessed families throughout the world who qualify will register and move beyond the tribal level. I am talking about the time when South and North Korea are unified based on True Parents' merit. I plan to propose a law to allow loyal followers of the Unification Church throughout the world to serve as representative people, surrogate-mothers. When I do that, no one will be against it. (197-214,199001 14)

7 The time is coming when the Unification Church will establish Korea as its homeland and we will register centering on Korea. There will come a time when all those who were hitherto mobilized for God's providence will be able to purchase land in the Republic of Korea. This will come about if the Republic of Korea follows me. There will come a time when you will want to sell everything you have in the West and exchange it for even just a small hut in the Republic of Korea.(185-252,19890108)

8 Once South and North Korea are unified and we blessed families establish our nation, we will enter the era of registration. Those who are able to enter the era of registration are those who have inherited True Parents' lineage. At that time, all people far and wide will receive the Blessing simultaneously, and then they will register. This will make them the ancestors of tens of thousands of generations of their lineage. Even though they will all receive the Blessing on the same day from the horizontal perspective, in fact there will be many gaps among these thousands of generations of ancestors. A frightening time is coming.(252-247,19940101)

9 You were not born because you wanted to be. If you do not know God, you will end up in hell no matter how wonderful your spouse may be and how comfortable your life may be. You have to register as God's people. The president of Harvard University may be famous, but he or she will be in hell unless he or she is registered and lives as a citizen of God's kingdom. But to enter the kingdom of heaven, there must be the condition that your family, society, nation, world and humanity welcome you.(278-263, 1 996 05 26)

10 For a woman, the happiest and most precious thing is to gain her husband. For a couple, the greatest joy is to have children. The children do not belong to their father or mother, but to the world, to the heavenly kingdom. Their genealogy is in God's kingdom. Your children are your children externally, but they also have their own nationality; this means that they are citizens of the kingdom. Likewise, their sons and daughters are also sons and daughters of the heavenly kingdom. Within a couple, the husband represents the heavenly kingdom and the wife represents the

heavenly kingdom. When you register you should have such a heart; only then can you adjust to the rhythm of the heavenly kingdom's standard.(233-212,19920801)

11 Once we have resolved all the failures of the past, from the age of Adam through the age of Jesus, and established our family, we can realize the realm of Gods blood kin. That is why registration has to take place. By registering, we become households in the same tribe, where each family member is born centering on True Parents. You cannot register unless you have the foundation of a family. Since True Parents established the world-level family foundation based on the families who received the Blessing, you need to form a realm of partnership with them by receiving the Blessing; then you can register and record the births in your family.(269-056,19950407)

12 You are not yet registered in Heaven's nation. Since you do not have a nation, your birth cannot be certified, your marriage cannot be registered, and your death certificate cannot be issued. This is why the path of religious believers has been one of lamentation. If someone pushed them, they had no recourse but to fall down. If someone wanted to kill them, they had no one to whom to appeal. My course has been a clear example of this.(283-224,19970412)

13 Since the heavenly kingdom has not yet been formed, registration into the heavenly kingdom had to be on hold, even for those who were born as Gods sons and daughters. Thus, you should have a heart that yearns to be a husband, receive a wife, form a family and have children who are citizens registered in that heavenly kingdom. But for this, you need to be urgent to gain victory in every fight against evil—every day, every hour, every second, asleep or awake. Never forget, this is how you should live all the time.(122-281,19821121)

14 Certifying your birth is registration. For example, if you are Japanese, you are registered as a citizen of Japan born in a certain place. Until now, God's kingdom did not exist. No families centered on True Parents have appeared, neither are there tribes or nations centered on True Parents. We needed to indemnify all this, and thereby recover the family, tribe, people, nation and world from Satan's nations and world. Based on the religious realm, we have to unite the entire non-religious world and return to Gods side everything that has belonged to Satan. If we do not achieve this, we cannot live comfortably in the spirit world after we have passed away. To develop relationships in the physical world is much more difficult when one is in the spirit world, than when one is in the physical world.(250-112,19931012)

15 If you were to die without having restored God's nation, you would be able to return to the earth only to support individuals and families, but would not be able to work with authority and dignity. This means that you would not be qualified to fight for the subjugation of Satan's world. Accordingly, you can register only after this nation emerges. You have registered with the Unification Church, but not with God's unified nation. Can you be citizens if there is no nation? No.(054-282,19720326)

16 Once we have recovered God's nation, all of you have to register. Do you know what registration is about? It is to draw up a genealogy. In the future, when people register into God's nation, they will need to draw up their genealogy centering on the Unification Church. When you draw up your genealogy, you are to return everything you own to God, giving everything from your life, whether a modest amount or a large one. As it represents the life you have led, offering it all means that you dedicate your life to God's kingdom.(101-289,19781107)

17 In the future, there will be a new task: registering in the kingdom of heaven by entering your name into the family registry. But before you do that, the nation has to emerge. If there is no nation, there is no place for registration. This helps us understand how important it is to establish God's nation. When God has a nation, it will be a nation in which God can work freely. Also, it will be a foundation upon which we can pass beyond the realm of persecution that is Satan's world. Therefore, no matter what you are engaged in, no matter what you are doing, you always need to be thinking about establishing God's nation.(054-230,19720324)

What we should do in the era of registration

18 You need to revise your family register, to make it anew. The family registers of Satan's world are going to ruin. They belong to the realm of hell. For that reason you need to register anew in the family registry of the heavenly kingdom. You need to clearly understand that today and from this day forth you need to get yourself together and work hard to spread this truth to those around you.(251-273,19931031)

19 The day in which we can live in a God-centered sovereign state will be most precious. It is our hope to see that day. We would not exchange it for anything. Not one person who has passed on to the spirit world has lived in a God-centered nation. I know this. As Unification Church members, do not just think about the hardships I have put you through. Instead, consider your value as people who possess the original image of God, living in dignity as people in the presence of the

Sovereign Lord in the realm of the providential nation, after we recover it. This is the standard by which I have lived my entire life. Though I called many people to a path of hardships, I did so as part of my fight for that day of glory. On that day, I will offer up everything in which I invested my whole heart throughout my life of attendance to God, the Sovereign who lives for the citizens of that nation.(164-217,19870516)

20 You need to organize your life. Repent for your rash, unrighteous behavior. If you do not repent, you will face the judgment of public righteousness. There is no one who can really stand before the governing law of love. At that time I will serve as your defense attorney. My family and clan members will serve as your attorneys, and all who guide you in the Unification Church will serve as your attorneys. We will defend you. Even God would want to stand as your attorney and defend you. If the scope of your defense exceeds that of the accusation against you, you will be welcomed to register as a citizen of the heavenly kingdom.(147-331,19861001)

21 You members of the Unification Church must not live casually, doing whatever you want to do. Can you deceive your mind? As much as you cannot deceive your mind, you cannot deceive the family register in heaven. Everything is recorded. Every action you take, even the raising of your hand, is recorded on video. It is possible to record everything in this world, so don't you think it is possible in the heavenly kingdom? In fact, if we want to find out how a particular blessed family is doing, it requires nothing more than the press of a button. We will be able to see not just their childhood, but also their ancestors. It will be instantaneous. It will not take any time at all. Time is a constraint on earth, but in the spirit world it will be said and done in the blink of an eye.(148-292,19861025)

22 Blessed families have to be serious about everything pertaining to their life from now on. Husband and wife should write a diary. Then you should obtain an official stamp of approval from your sons and daughters and be registered. You should clear up everything to go to the next step. When this is done, Satan will not follow you. A time this serious is coming. So all blessed families should write diaries from now on. Do not try to find some clever way around it.(208-041,199011 15)

23 Even if you are so old and weak that you stare out the door mouthing the words, "Alas, I am old " you still should go out witnessing. If you have not yet added your mother and father to your heavenly register before you go to the spirit world, you will encounter a serious problem. The blessed families of the Unification Church have entered an age when their work can shape history, through their mothers and fathers, their ancestors, brothers and sisters, relatives and kin.(186-167,19890201)

24 Until now, so that you maintain your dignity, I have been encouraging you to go out and bear witness. I am trying to make you tribal leaders so that in the future, when the new era of registration arrives, you will be part of that registration. If you have no accomplishments, how can you register? It is the same in the kingdom of heaven in heaven. Not just anyone can go there. Your results will decide whether you can enter.(194-096,19891017)

25 In the future all people throughout the world will have to register, centering on the twelve tribes. When you register, you will have to record in detail everything about your life, in particular what you have done since you joined the Unification Church. If you have taken even one small thing from the church, even, say, a piece of cloth, you will have to report that. If your report does not match the record in the computer in the spirit world, you will not be allowed to enter.(212-059,19910101)

26 What do you think will be your assets in the kingdom of heaven? Because there are as of yet no people in the kingdom of heaven, your assets will be the people you bring with you. To bring people, there is no way better than by resurrecting them through witnessing. Your assets in the spirit world will be the people you bring to the kingdom of heaven; there are no other assets to be had. You cannot just assume your children are your assets. You have to find a way to make all of the 120 million people of Japan into Gods people. If you only bring your natural sons and daughters, how can you get this enormous number registered as people of the kingdom of heaven? Keep in mind that it is your spiritual children who will be the cornerstone of your settlement in the spirit world. Without them, everything you did, even serving as a president of the Unification Church for several decades, will be in vain. Witnessing on this scale has been impossible until now because the Unification Church has been persecuted, but now it is possible because I am respected worldwide.(228-121,19920326)

27 When you unite with the True Parents, you inherit their tradition. When your family has the tradition and character of a subject partner, and thus establishes the foundation for governing all nations, you can register into the realm of the royal family in the heavenly kingdom. Then you will be able to enter the kingdom of heaven. Not everyone enters the kingdom of heaven. Three generations need to follow this path. Grandmother and grandfather, mother and father, husband and wife, and children together make up four stages, but the nucleus consists of three generations of couples.(228-295,19920705)

28 Now the path you are walking will no longer lead to persecution. I have prepared everything for you. I blocked that which could harm you and tore down everything that could be a barrier for you. That being so, how much should you honor me? Unless you bequeath to your descendants a family tradition that leads them to honor me hundreds of times more than you have during the time of persecution, it will be difficult for them to register at the registrar's office in the heavenly kingdom. If you do not lay a foundation upon which your sons and daughters can attend me several times better than you have, they will fall away or be crowded out. 184-244,19890101 ()

29 In the future, the era of registration for God's kingdom will come. People hope to be part of the 144,000, don't they? Do you know who the 144,000 are? To be entitled to advance toward the era of registration and then be registered in that era, your tribal realm should be like the homeland in the heavenly kingdom. The era of individual salvation will pass. If the president of a nation joins the Unification Church and pledges him or herself before God, the people of that president's nation will also become the citizens of the heavenly kingdom. Simply by the president participating in a ceremony officiated by the church, all the people of his nation will be freed from Satan's realm.(219-100,19910825)

30 When the era of registration comes, just being a citizen of Korea will not be enough. We have to win all peoples with love. In order to do this, you first need to deny your attachment to your family, tribe, society, nation, world, and even hell in the spirit world and the devil. All of these relationships are registered under the Fall. To reverse the process by which we plummeted down, we need to climb back up.(259-223,19940410)

31 Blessed people stand in a position more fortunate than that of Jesus, who was unmarried. Thus, the time has come for tribes not to oppose me but rather to welcome me. On this foundation, nothing should be easier for you than bringing together 160 families as their tribal messiah. It will be a piece of cake; no problem whatsoever. So you need to quickly get this work done. If you fail to accomplish this task, you will have to do it elsewhere. When so many people in the world line up to register, what will happen to you? Once the number of people waiting to register in Korea overflows its forty million capacity, if you want to fulfill your tribal messiah mission, you will have to pack up and move to a place where you can fulfill it, such as Africa or South America, where conditions may be difficult but many are open to the Blessing. The time is coming when you will end up moving. A tune of great migration is coming.(274-175,19951029)

32 Once we have a nation, we can register. Then births, marriages and deaths can be certified. Though numerous Unification Church members have received the Blessing, they cannot go through the procedures of certification at present. It is because God's nation is not yet here. So please understand that registration will have to be done anew and then a great migration will follow. People from the North will move to the South, and vice versa. In the future, I may have you participate in a process by which your nationality and tribal affiliation will change. I am predicting that a great migration will take place.(278-328,19960623)

33 Once Heaven's nation is built on earth, we will have to bring in the whole world. Then the unification of the world will be inevitable. Yet nothing and no one can force you to participate. It will be on a voluntary basis. This will lead up to the day of registration. When it is your tribe's turn to register, if you register first, you will become their first ancestor. Then they will bow their heads before you.(219-214,19910829)

34 Now is the time to inaugurate the realm of the tribe. However, it is not God who will take the lead for this; the era has arrived when you will guide and lead your tribe into the kingdom of heaven. Through the works of their ancestors, people will come to the Unification Church without knowing why. Nothing compels the leaves to emerge when spring comes; it happens naturally. Likewise, a world is arriving before our eyes, rising like the morning sun. Do not forget that your duty and mission is to go forth boldly and in high spirits as the great owners of heaven and earth and God's liberated children.(202-257,19900524)

35 Up to the present, we did not have a nation and so you received the Blessing on the level of the church. But from now on, you will have to register with God's nation. You can do so only when you fulfill your responsibility as tribal messiahs. After registering with God's nation or even with God's world, True Parents as the subject partner and blessed families as the object partners have to become one. Then you need to dedicate your family so that they also will be people who attend God. Only then can the cosmic ideal of blessed families be formed. This is the kingdom of heaven on earth and in heaven.(269-065,19950407)

The settlement and flourishing of Cheon Il Guk

36 Cheon Il Guk is God's kingdom. God's kingdom is unchanging and absolute. God is absolute, unique, un-changing and eternal. God has these four attributes. No one can ever change that. Once these elements are secured on earth, they will remain for eternity. Today, the fallen world is moving in various directions, but God's ideal

of creation is that human history will have one tradition. That is God's original ideal.
(373-145,20020331)

37 The Parents of Heaven and Earth flourishing in unity! In this proclamation, flourishing means that after you settle you establish your livelihood. After this comes the realm of Sabbath, in which everything can rest, enraptured in the ideals of the heavenly king-dom. It is a realm without conflict or unrequited desires. Everyone is attuned to the harmonious environment of the heavenly world and enjoys eternal life. This will be the realm of Sabbath. Please understand where you stand. You are in the era of liberation, the victorious realm, the subject partner nation, Cheon Il Guk.(383-283,20020629)

38 The heavenly kingdom does not yet exist. Nonetheless, I was able to conduct the inauguration of God's kingship and the Rally for the Settlement of God's Homeland. Then I proclaimed Cheon Il Guk, the Nation of Cosmic Peace and Unity. We are now entering the era of settlement, and not just the era of settlement but of flourishing. "Settlement" means that we have been on the way and are arriving at our destination, fulfilling the purpose of our venture; "flourishing" means that we already have safely arrived at our destination and now we can rest. In order to bring such prosperity to God's kingship, God's homeland and God's Cheon Il Guk, body and mind must not fight. They have to be one.(364-056,2001 1231)

39 Your body and mind are like two people. If these two people cannot become one, you cannot become a citizen of Cheon Il Guk. The kingdom of heaven has been something vague until now, because the individual's body and mind were in conflict and so no individual could serve as a foundation for the nation of Cheon Il Guk. Cheon Il Guk refers to the settlement of a family on the basis of unity—unity of an individual's body and mind, unity of husband and wife, unity of parents and children, and unity among brothers and sisters. If there is no unity, there will be no settlement.(360-086,2001 11 12)

40 Happiness, peace and freedom in Cheon Il Guk does not imply only settlement; it implies flourishing. By settlement I mean moving towards a destination and arriving and staying there. However, flourishing implies that upon completing settlement we establish our livelihood. Settlement requires unity between the individual's mind and body, unity within the couple, unity between parents and children, and unity among siblings. Neither father nor mother, neither son nor daughter, can exempt themselves. They need to establish a parent-child relationship such that their children receive the Blessing, begin married life, have

children, and settle. It requires three generations for a family to settle.(364-073,20020101)

41 As Cheon Il Guk unfolds, in time it will be an independent nation. We can also call it *ju-che Guk*, the subject partner nation. We are in the era of the liberation that is based upon the foundation of the self-governing nations victory. Therefore, I am proclaiming that this is the era of the kingdom of heaven and the time to build the subject partner nation. While Cheon Il Guk is the era for the liberation of the subject partner nation, the era following it will be the era of unity and spherical oneness. The era of unity and spherical oneness signifies a return to the origin. Again, we are the ones who should put all this together ourselves. We should bring about unity; God is not going to deliver it to us.(378-164,20020509)

42 We are now in the Last Days. We are in the era of Cheon Il Guk, the victorious realm in which we will form a self-governing nation called the subject partner nation. The victorious realm of the subject partner nation is the victorious realm of a self-governing nation with God at its center; it is also the victorious realm of a self-governing nation that centers around the returning Lord. God is the original center of the era of liberation and the center of the victorious realm of the subject partner nation. Now that this era of liberation has come, we are to return to spherical oneness, which is the original world of unity. This is the omega.(372-285,20020323)

43 I proclaimed Cheon Il Guk, the reign of peace and prosperity, on the foundation of Gods kingship. Cheon Il Guk will flourish on this foundation. Following this, we will welcome the era of liberation and the victorious realm of a self-governing nation. Then, since everything will have been liberated, the unified world of spherical oneness will emerge. The unified world will be a world adjusted to God's fundamental and original ideal of creation. Who will make that adjustment for unity? It is not God, but we who should do it. To adjust the world, we have to attain the standard of perfecting the family. This will usher in the era of unity and spherical oneness. Then we can confidently put on our nametags and gain admittance to the garden of Eden, the kingdom of heaven in the era of liberation.(381-236,20020614)

44 Cheon Il Guk will lead to the world of liberation, the victorious realm of a self-governing nation. This in turn will usher in the unified world of spherical oneness. It is at this point that we will attain unity. The realm of liberation arrives when everyone in the world is on an equal footing and can be liberated together. Then east and west, south and north, front and back and left and right will reach the

original spherical oneness. For that original spherical oneness, God set up His original laws of creation. They include the plan, the design, and the implementation in practice. Everything should fit together. But God will not perform that fitting together. That is something we have to do. Only after doing it can we go to the kingdom of heaven. That is the formula.(388-294,20020802)

45 We are in the era of liberation and the victorious realm of the self-governing nation of Cheon Il Guk. It is the era of liberation, when all created beings return to their original position prior to the Fall and praise the victorious realm where they have autonomy as individual embodiments of truth. Now that the era of liberation has come, we are returning to the world of spherical oneness. We are going back to the original world on earth where Satan does not exist. Instead of a multiplicity of nations, there is only one nation. In other words, there is only Adam's tribe, Adam's people, Adam's nation, Adam's world and Adam's cosmos, rooted in Adams household. It is a nation of the human race as one, based on the absolute lineage, unique lineage, and eternal and unchanging lineage, as well as the absolute life, unique life, and eternal and unchanging life, which come from God's absolute love, unique love, unchanging and eternal love. It is like one single tree.(378-255,20020516)

46 Cheon Il Guk is the nation where two people become one. When there are three generations, they will form the nation of spherical oneness, Won Il Guk (...). This will be one nation, il guk (...), that takes the round form of a circle, won (). Next comes the world of unity, Tong Il Guk, which takes the form of a single nation. We need to advance in the following order: Cheon Il Guk, Won Il Guk and Tong Il Guk, the nation of unity. To establish the nation of spherical oneness, we are required to perfect the four-position foundation and the three object-partner purpose, where above and below, front and back, and right and left are completely one.(398-342,20021217)

47 Welcoming Ssang Hab Shib Seung Il, the Day of the Victory of the Number Ten Combining Two Halves, signifies that God now owns the days, the months and the four seasons. He is the Owner and the King of love; He is the Owner and the King of true parents. On the basis of His kingship on this earth and the unity of heaven and earth, God is the owner of all. With God as your owner, you can be a king of love; with God as your owner, you can be a king of true parents; with God as your owner, you can be a king of true teachers. We are ushering in the era of the King of true kings. Hence, we need to completely forget about what ethnic group we came from and the back-ground tradition by which we lived. Please understand that we are standing at the apocalyptic turning point, based on a totally revolutionary

foundation. On this foundation we can achieve Gods perfection, True Parents' perfection, and the perfection of the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind, and these can settle on earth. We have to proceed toward the world of love's eternal sovereignty. Such is the new heaven and new earth in the new era, the Era after the Coming of Heaven.(456-258,20040630)

Section 5. The Universal Peace Federation and the Abel UN

1 The word "cosmos," cheonju (宇宙), refers to heaven and earth as one union. The character for cheon (天), meaning heaven, is a combination of two characters: dul (二) meaning two and in (人) meaning a person. Following this, the character ju (宙) means a house, which is a safe haven. A part of that character, yu (由), relates to freedom and peace. Put together, cosmos refers to a house where two people represent heaven and earth and live for eternity in freedom and peace. It is God's house. It is the house of God for the individual, the house of God for the tribe, the house of God for a people, the house of God for a nation, and the house of God for the cosmos.(356-172,2001 1014)

The establishment of the Universal Peace Federation and the Abel UN

2 Peace! The Chinese character for peace, pyeong (平) signifies the connection of two worlds, represented by its two horizontal lines. As a couple connects two worlds, they take horizontal positions relative to each other. The vertical line at the center represents true love, true life, and true lineage, which are eternal. Anything horizontal lasts for one generation, but that which is vertical lasts forever. Lineage is eternal. In addition, the Chinese character for harmony, hwa (和), starts with the character for rice, hwa (禾). Then the character for mouth (口), signifying the Word, is added to the character for rice. It means that we eat the Word physically and spiritually. It has to be through the Word that we realize the world of peace.(356-172,2001 1014)

3 Before we began our UN assemblies, I proclaimed, "The renewal movement for true love, peace and unity of the First Israel is for the ideal of establishing God's homeland." Based on this vision, I proclaimed the First Declaration in Jerusalem, the Second Declaration in Washington, DC, and the Third Declaration in Seoul. On this foundation, we could finally depart for the realm of the Fourth Israel, which had not yet emerged. The first, second and third Israels fell short, and that is why I made these proclamations for the establishment of the nation of the Fourth Israel.(420-031,20031010)

4 We have to build Cheon Il Guk and establish a world-level Abel UN that represents the kingship of peace. The Abel UN is the Universal Peace Federation (UPF), and the Cain UN is the United Nations. I named UPF using the word "universal" (lit: cosmic) instead of "international" because the Abel UN represents heaven and earth. Once it becomes the elder brother, it must be able to cover the roles of the Cain UN.(505-084,20050823)

5 The returning Lord will encompass what Adam by his Fall turned upside down and put it right side up. We have entered the era for doing this, and it can be done by the Universal Peace Federation in its relationship to the Cain UN. The Abel UN embodies the original ideal of the UN. It is advancing toward the peaceful kingdom of heaven that has nothing to do with Satan's world.(506-101,20050901)

6 Once the Abel UN is completed, everything will change based on its laws. In the morning, everything in nature faces the sunlight. We will go through a similar process as we settle at the place that has nothing to do with hell. It is the only way we can enter the kingdom of heaven. My expression, "high noon settlement" indicates that we will purify ourselves. It alludes to the division between night and day, in that no one knows exactly when that moment passes because it happens in the blink of an eye. The divide between spring and summer also takes but an instant to cross, and no one perceives that moment with exactness. It also turns noon in the blink of an eye. These changes occur in but an instant. The division of day and night resulted in two sides fighting each other. Just as morning turns to noon, the world is transitioning into a world that is only day. This is what I mean by high noon settlement.(506-154,20050902)

7 If you commit to doing more work than I do, the world will continue moving toward the realm of victory. If you do not, then you will be filled with regret after I pass away. Three generations of your descendants will have to set some indemnity conditions. Therefore, no matter how difficult it is, this Abel UN, which is the Universal Peace Federation, must be established. For this, we need to have one unified land. For the Universal Peace Federation, the land should not be two, but one. It is a land where evil people cannot kill or violate good people. The land of the Universal Peace Federation should be such a land. Anyone who opposes this or anyone who seeks their personal pleasure using money for personal desires rather than supporting this cause will come to ruin. The kingpins of individualism employ the concept of conflict to destroy the world of goodness. Because they endeavor to suppress the world of goodness, they will perish. Individuals should be willing to sacrifice to save their country, countries should be willing to sacrifice to save the world and the world should be willing to sacrifice to save God. This will lead to

advancement, because it builds the foundation by which all people can serve the world. When we do so, the world will inevitably realize the reign of peace and prosperity, with liberation and complete freedom.(506-301,20050905)

8 Once we form the Universal Peace Federation, which represents the new kingship of goodness, it will emerge as the Abel UN and become the sovereignty of peace. With that, goodness will flourish and evil will recede. It will become the standard upon which the planet Earth can enjoy the governance of good kingship in Gods sovereignty. This era will surpass the standard of Adam, who fell at the age of sixteen. We are entering an era that connects us to the standard that Adam would have reached at the completion stage, at age twenty-one, when he could have received the Blessing. This is my expectation for the Abel UN. I inaugurated the Abel UN and the peace kingdom— kingship and kingdom. Nothing that belongs to Satan, neither property nor people, can be brought to the city of the Peace King. No one will be able to transport weapons or arms on the national highways of God's country, Cheon Il Guk. Hence, it will naturally enjoy peace. As was prophesied in Isaiah 2:4, "They will beat their swords into plowshares and their spears into pruning hooks," and level the royal ground for the Peace King.(507-143,20050910)

9 This proclamation of the inauguration of the Universal Peace Federation is like the proclamation of the Declaration of Independence. It contains the core declaration: the teaching that the parent-child relationship must be settled in the family. Lineage, the right of inheritance, and the great work of creation based on that right—all are included in the relationship between God and His children. It affirms that everyone can have an equal position, representing God, and reach the standard by which they can perfect heavenly fortune. This heavenly fortune enables us to relate to God and to complete the ideal of the kingdom of heaven on earth and in heaven. Once we reach this level, we will never be able to fall away from our relationship with God.(508-207,20050920)

10 From this time on, the realms of Abel and Cain have to become one beyond the dimension of the physical world. To put this into effect, the Cain realm should unite with the Universal Peace Federation, which was launched in the position of the Abel UN. This is the formula. In order to establish the peace kingdom, the ideal world, we will have to break down all barriers and obstacles by working on the supra-religious and supranational level. By doing this, all humanity will fulfill their destined responsibility, whereby they will enter the original world according to Gods ideal of creation. Then they will recover the original right of ownership that was lost due to the Fall of Adam and Eve.(513-148,20051228)

11 The Universal Peace Federation should carry the name of our nation, Cheon Il Guk. That name, Cheon Il Guk, points to the coming era of Heavenly Parentism and the kingship of peace, the era when all humankind becomes one nation. We must become one in mind and body based on Gods one lineage. In a blessed family, husband and wife must never be disunited and siblings must never be disunited. That is why the marriage Blessing is something fearful. Free sex and homosexuality cannot exist there. Unless we enter the era when we can unite as blessed families, we cannot be among the families in the heavenly kingdom. When the Abel UN is inaugurated and the people unite with it, the new heaven and earth that the Savior, the returning Lord and True Parents, has proclaimed will be established. In order to make this happen, we need to realize the ideal of one nation, one UN, one people and one global family. We have to bring an end to all conflicts. A great revolution will emerge even in heaven. When that time comes, even religions and their denominations will disappear.(506-101,20050901)

12 For the establishment of Cheon Il Guk, I inaugurated the Interreligious and International Federation for World Peace (IIFWP) in the position of the vertical Abel. And I brought the people with the Mongolian birthmark together through the marriage Blessing to establish the horizontal Cain realm. Their population, spread throughout the world, constitutes more than 70 percent of the human race. Thus, the time has come for blessed families to fulfill their providential responsibility to bring the billions of people into one family. We have to break down completely the racial, religious and national barriers.(489-266,20050304)

The role and responsibility of the Abel UN

13 Unless we now form the actual Abel UN based on the Interreligious and International Peace Council (IIPC), we will not be able to bring about the Peace UN. The Peace UN includes Cain and Abel, and through it God can freely work on the supranational and supra-religious levels. I have to fulfill this task by all means, because I am responsible to usher in the era of prosperity and peace. This era of liberation and complete freedom will center on God's kingship, which has been established based on the foundation of restoration through indemnity.(465-123,20040819)

14 Working with the world and the United States, we have to reform the UN. This newly reformed UN will be a combined UN. We are not trying to close the Cain UN, but rather to assist and guide it as if it were our younger sibling UN and transform it to be a good younger brother UN. Then and only then will it be embraced in Gods bosom with the same value as the Abel UN, just as Cain and Abel would have had

the same value had there been no Fall. When the elder brother can love the younger brother, God cannot help but love the younger brother whom the older brother loves. Therefore, the history of bitter sorrow will be overturned naturally and the world of peace will come.(506-120,20050901)

15 The political system of the democratic world is a framework to process conflict, but when we reach the position of parents we can bring an end to conflicts. When parents are at the center, the siblings will become one. We can intervene in conflicts only as parents. No one will be against us if we are in the parents' position, whether we intervene or not. This is the only conceivable way out of the present impasse. Therefore we must first find the True Parents. Only from that point can we recover everything for peace, including true children and the true nation. There is no alternative; we have to assimilate all situations through Heavenly Parentism. Only through Heavenly Parentism is it possible.(506-130,20050901)

16 I have been working with the Abel UN to bring unity to the religious realm and then to create unity between it and the Cain UN. Cain striking Abel typifies the present state of the Cain UN and Abel UN. I have charged the Universal Peace Federation with solving this problem. For the True Parents to realize the unity of the religious realm—the Abel realm—together with the unity of nations—the Cain realm, the Abel UN needs to bring the Cain UN to voluntarily surrender. By doing so, the older brother will finally take the position of the younger brother, and vice versa.(508-039,20050916)

17 Today the task of the Unification Church is to turn things around by working with the UN. To do so, we have to expand Adam's family into the UN arena. In this era of restoration, the UN has to serve as the territory where external Cain and Abel struggles, such as the struggle between the communist world and the democratic world, are resolved. We also have to resolve internal Cain and Abel struggles, such as among delegates at the UN. We need to lift delegates up to Abel's standard, so that as Abel they can reconcile with Cain and become as one family. Our task now is to set the family conditions of indemnity on the level of the UN organization. It should fulfill this condition both internally and externally.(264-243,19941103)

18 Politics dominate today's UN. The UN mainly focuses on political issues. It does not consider the views of the religious realm, the world of women, young adults or students. The UN holds an impressive name, but without linking to these areas it has no hands or feet. It is time to establish the Abel UN. We also need a UN of religions, a women's UN, a your peoples UN and a students' UN. Let us form, in this world, the UN of Religions, which represents God, the Women's UN, which

represents Eve, the Youth UN, which represents Cain, and the Students UN, which represents Abel.(289-230,19980102)

19 Let the world of politics drift aimlessly. Our focus should be to gather religious leaders to form a UN of religions. For this, we need to build solidarity among religious people around the world. We also need to create solidarity among women throughout the world and solidarity among young people throughout the world. In fact, I have already set up the foundation for all of these. Korea should have strong bonds with these organizations: the UN of Religions, the Women's UN, the Youth UN and the Students UN. Then, after these organizations become the part of the UN, Korea will be able to take a leading role in working at the UN. By educating it from a supra-religious perspective, we should enable the UN to achieve the ideal of a peaceful global family.(289-230,19980102)

20 We have to create a landing-site at the UN for a religious council, on the foundation of the Interreligious Federation for World Peace. For that purpose, I am encouraging exemplary religious leaders around the world to rally and take the lead. At the UN of Religions, organizations sustained by religious groups should have missions, the same as nations have at the UN. For example, the Buddhist sphere should establish a Buddhist mission and the Muslim sphere should establish a Muslim mission. In this manner, all religious spheres should set up missions to the UN of Religions, complete with ambassadors, and leave conflict behind. Currently, the UN has no owner. However, by integrating the Interreligious Federation for World Peace, the Women's Federation for World Peace, the Youth Federation for World Peace, and the Family Federation for World Peace, the UN will equip itself with the internal and external characteristics of a world-level nation.(296-139,19981103)

21 The inheritance of Satan's lineage from the false parents on earth established false love, false life and a false lineage. Based on this, Satan imprisoned God, took over God's position, and used the people and the children who were meant for the heavenly kingdom at his will and pleasure. Now for the first time, True Parents have brought God and human beings back to their original position. This return to their original position brings us to the omega point. The Abel UN is designed for peace, while the Cain UN functions in a way that inevitably results in conflict. Currently there is friction between them, so we must unite them as the Peace UN. In fact, in some nations there have been confrontations between the Abel UN and the Cain UN. I am inaugurating the Peace UN by bringing the Abel UN and the Cain UN together. On that foundation, we should establish the peaceful kingdom of heaven, the UN peace kingdom. When that happens, all nations will disappear. Religions will

fade away. When all nations and religions disappear, we will enter the era of one great family, the era of the kingdom of heaven.(420-031,20031010)

22 Because Jesus' body was lost in Asia, after we restore it, we have to liberate Israel, Islam and all religious realms. We need to create a realm of freedom that transcends religion, and a realm of peace that no longer has conflict and war. As we do, we will establish the original ideal base of God, where True Parents can stand within the family, nation, world and cosmos. Thereby, the kingdom of God on earth and in heaven will become manifest. In order to begin this task, I completed the formation of a realm of unity between the heavenly world and the earthly world, and in the midst of it I proclaimed, "True Parents and the Completed Testament Age." (261-186,19940609)

CHAPTER 3

The Path of CheonIlGuk Citizens and the Family Pledge

Section 1. Purity and a Life of One Heart, One Body, One Mindset and One Harmony

1 The providence of salvation is the providence of re-creation; that is the process of creation to purify all things and all people, their lineage and their love, according to the Principle of God's creation. The establishment of pure things, pure people and pure love in a pure land is the ideal and purpose of creation. In order to achieve this, you need self-mastery. To recover the purity of your body, which until now has served as the foundation for Satan, you must drive Satan out by striking your body. By doing so, you will free yourself from Satan's world by uniting your pure mind and body, as spirit and substance. After that, you will pass through a three-year engagement period. Then you can form a blessed family in the realm of perfection. From the viewpoint of the Principle, this process elevates you to the position where you can complete the human portion of responsibility. You need to understand this course of restoration through indemnity; this is the only for you to rise.(268-115,19950331)

2 Maintaining the undefiled pure lineage is an absolute necessity. God banished fallen Adam and Eve. So if you defile your lineage, you have to deny yourself completely. To do so, you have to go to the back of the line of fallen humanity, turn around and come back to God. In the future, only those who have safeguarded their purity can become leaders. Such people should take responsibility to inherit and carry forward the mainline tradition and teaching. Those who fall after the Blessing should not expect to be forgiven again.(268-111,19950331)

3 In Korea, upon returning home, the tradition is to greet your parents first. The practice of filial piety is emphasized, particularly for women. Why do we have the folktale Shim Chung? It is because, at the outset of history, it was a woman who proved unfilial. To indemnify world history, one woman must become the world's most devoted daughter. This is the very first provision in the law of indemnity by which to build the restored kingdom of heaven. For this reason, women should take pride in becoming daughters who establish the tradition of filial piety, practice chastity and maintain purity.(286-105,19970809)

4 Each of you has to become a filialson or daughter and then a devout saint. On the foundation of a family from a pure lineage that embodies pure love, you should

begin by becoming a devoted child in front of God. This does not pertain to you alone; your whole family must embody filial piety. Yours should be the family of loyal, filial children, the family of saints, and the family of divine sons and daughters. From that position you become an exemplary representative, owner, and prince or princess who can inherit the sovereignty of the heavenly kingdom from the level of the individual to that of the cosmos. We always have to be going through this training. This is the meaning of being an owner of Cheon IlGuk.(406-316,20030312)

5 Before you can call God our Father, you blessed families of pure lineage and pure love should become devoted children on every level: the family, nation, world and cosmos. Everything inside and outside of you—your mind, your body and even your cells—should resemble God and unite and harmonize with Him in one heart, one body and one mindset. Yet He has had no partner who could do so. In a state of unity and harmony, you have to invest love. By investing love, you continually rise, starting from the level of all things. Thus you eventually reach God. When God is happy, heaven and earth will also rejoice. From that point begins the perfect and complete liberation of the original ideal of creation. That is the level you have to reach.(406-322,20030312)

6 Had Adam and Eve fulfilled their responsibility before God, He would have held a Blessing ceremony for them. This Blessing would have been the starting point of goodness. Unity with the truth, the substance and the heart would have been attained. Unity with the truth means that when God says, "Do this!" we answer "Yes," and follow through to fulfill what He commands. From the perspective of God's Will, Adam and Eve in essence were not two separate beings. Lured by Eve, Adam broke Heaven's law. Thus they became separated, but originally they were one. After attaining unity with God's truth and with God's substance, they would have attained unity with God's heart. When this happened, they would have become totally one with God. God has come this far hoping for that day.(015-263,19651017)

7 You and I are in the same position when it comes to oneness in heart between husband and wife, and parents and children. We cannot achieve oneness of heart and mind if one insists on standing above and putting the other below. If parents are always above and their children are always below, they are not of one heart. Only when they are in an equal position on the horizontal plane can they be of one heart. In other words, only when they relate internally and externally on a line on the horizontal plane can they be of one heart. This holds true for a couple as well. They can be of one heart in their horizontal relationship only where they can relate

internally and externally, front and back. This can never happen in a relationship where one is above and one below.(041-030,19710212)

8 What is the primary condition we uphold in the Unification Church? It is mind and body unity. When God created heaven and earth, He did so with absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. Thus, if you speak, the substance of what you believe will emerge. If it does not, you need greater investment to actualize your words. No matter how great your command, it will be fulfilled if your investment is greater even than the intensity of your wish.(400-203,20030101)

9 When we speak of one heart, one body, and one mindset, we are referring to mind and body unity centered on God. Attaining mind-body unity is to love Heaven. What I am saying is that you should love Heaven. Having one body corresponds to loving humanity, and having one mindset corresponds to loving your nation. The nation is an extension of the family. Thus I am telling you to love the family. The core desire of all men and women should be to achieve the teaching of one heart, one body and one mindset. When we speak of the cosmos we are referring to God's house, which contains all things of creation in heaven and on earth. This is the core teaching of the people of heaven and earth. One mind, one body and one mindset is the core teaching of God, and of a cosmic person.(381-106,20020611)

10 The term il hwa (一和) consists of the Chinese characters for il (一和), meaning one, and hwa (和), meaning harmony. It is not the other Chinese character for hwa (化), which means "to become." As it stands, the character hwa, meaning to harmonize, contains the meaning that people of different personalities should become one even though their characters differ and, similarly, peoples and nations with different characteristics should join together as one..(068-232,19730803)

Section 2. High Noon Settlement and a Life of Resonance

1 High noon settlement is possible when there is no shadow. When the mind and body become one, the shadow disappears. When a couple becomes one, the shadow disappears. When the sun is in the east, the shadow is cast toward the west. When the sun is in the west, the shadow is cast toward the east. Likewise, when the sun is to the south, a shadow will be cast toward the north and vice versa. A shadow can be cast in any of the four directions. However, at high noon, when you stand at the very center, there is no shadow. You should have such relationships with your parents, spouse, children and siblings. Only then can God be positioned as the owner of the eight stages of love. If you are unable to establish a high noon position, the amount of devotion you offer does not matter. Without establishing

this high noon position free of shadows, you are not able to be with or go to God, who has no sliver of a shadow, because you are not in a perpendicular position. You should establish such a position in which you cast no shadow for all eternity.(333-155,20000926)

2 High noon settlement! For this, there should not be any shadow in the four-position foundation. If we can achieve such a state, God will descend and everyone will rejoice. No matter how vast the area, everyone in it will be happy. Thus, you should each become a mother or father, husband or wife, and son or daughter who can find high noon settlement. If you cast a shadow in any of those positions, you will bring all the misfortunes of heaven and earth to take root in your family. These are terrifying words. This is the one formula and model to which we all have to conform. Everything exists in pairs, as part of a four-position foundation. For example, even when you see things with your eyes, you consciously grasp them only when they come into focus through your optic nerves. This is the structure of a four-position foundation. The same can be said of your mouth and your hearing. You can hear sounds only when sound waves resonate through the three semicircular canals in your ears. If there is a gap there that blocks the resonance, you will not hear what is being said. Thus we need to uphold the life philosophy of high noon settlement as we go forward.(333-106,20000925)

3 God's throne is currently situated in the middle of hell on earth, and it must rise like the sun. When it does, all creation will enter the era of high noon settlement, where there is no shadow. The phrase "high noon settlement" means there is no shadow for all eternity. When you go to the spirit world, you will see the sun high up at the center of the sky all the time. You will not see any shadows. If a shadow were to appear, all the good spirits would immediately come and blow it away. It would vanish. In the same way, good spirits will come to the earth and punish this world of shadows.(500-327,20050714)

4 When do your body and mind resonate? When you reach maturity centered on God's love, the mind naturally attunes itself to the wavelength of God's love. With the mind tuned to that wavelength, the body completely unites with God's love. This can be likened to the union of particles with plus and minus electrical charges. If that were to happen, our body, mind and ideals would be completely engrafted to God. But we lost the position where that can take place. Hence we need to discover the standard that enables the body and mind to engraft to God, centered on His love. If you skip that step, you cannot discover it in your family. You cannot bring the matter to the national level and discover it in the nation. Then where should you look for it? You should look for it within yourself as an individual. That is why

religion has sought the perfection of the individual. Yet people have been ignorant of the fact that you can be perfected only when you attain this realm of resonance. (141-113,19860219)

5 When a person is perfected as the Absolute Beings object partner, what kind of state will he or she have reached? The Absolute Being is the subject partner of love and perfect harmony. Therefore, the condition that an object partner must satisfy in His presence is the perfect harmony and oneness of his or her own internal subject and object parts. When a person achieves complete oneness of mind and body, by maturing his or her character centered on the Absolute Being, he or she can establish the foundation of absolute love. At that time he or she resonates in love with the Absolute Being. That is, when your mind and body harmonize completely, without the slightest conflict, a responsive realm of love comes to life and, like a tuning fork, automatically begins to resonate with the Absolute Being. This is the minimum standard required of you, within the relative world, to connect with the absolute state.(102-058,19781125)

6 Where did human beings begin? We originated from love. Then what is our purpose? Since our beginning point was love, our purpose is to attain and connect to the end point of love. Since we began in love, our purpose surely is attained through love. To achieve that purpose, we need to create a framework of love with people all around us—front, back, left, right, top and bottom. Once you are completely fused together at the core in love, you enter a realm of resonance. This is because you will have completely harmonized your mind and body, your whole body, your five spiritual senses and your five physical senses. When you attain this maturity of mind and body and enter this realm of resonance, you are like an original, unfallen human being, and you can embark on the path toward individual perfection.(137-210,19860103)

7 Once you enter a state of love, you will find that each and every being exists as the only, unique being. When the Buddha said, "In heaven and earth, I alone am the honored one," he was not speaking casually. In a state of unity between his mind and body, he was saying, "As it is now and was in the past, heaven and earth are in harmony. Gazing into myself and at everything in motion, having entered the realm of resonance of true love, I can see that God resides within me, all things of creation are within me, and all things are my friends and brothers and sisters. Since I am the subject partner, I am like their owner. Since I am the subject partner, in the whole cosmos, I alone am the honored one."(166-052,19870528)

8 If you enter the realm of resonance of true love, you will be able to see heaven and earth clearly. The Buddha said, "In heaven and earth, I alone am the honored one." He said so because when he entered the core of that realm of resonance, he found the entire world in his hands, God residing within him, and heavenly law connected to him. That is why he could say this. Once you enter the realm where true love resonates, you do not need faith. Since you live with God, you do not need a savior. You are free. Everything is finished.(201-166,19900330)

9 When a person reaches perfection, his or her spirit self and physical self are configured for the first time to resonate with the realm of heart. In the human world, what is it that resonates with the spirit self and the physical self? It is not knowledge. It is not an ideal, or joy. It is not the pleasure of satisfying worldly desires. Only love resonates with them.(172-085,19880109)

10 When you act with the power of love, you can be a partner of great power, connected to the essence that gave God the ability to create the universe. This is possible only with love. You cannot do this with knowledge; you cannot do it with money or authority. Have you ever tried to live that way? How hard have you struggled to correct the misalignment between your mind and body, to perfect your character in harmony with the realm that resonates with Heavens love? To stop you from doing this, the nation is latching onto you and bending you to its angle; the world is latching onto you. The issue is how you are going to sever all those ties, correct the angle and move forward to reach the original realm of heart. Without getting to that place you will never be free.(178-115,19880601)

11 Love strives to bring the mind and body into perfect resonance so they can move forward together in oneness. Love does not go toward only one side. When the conscience and the physical mind move forward with a single purpose, love rushes along in the same direction, toward the same destination. This means that love can be found in the realm of resonance that binds the mind and body together, the place that is clearly oriented toward the absolute direction. Therefore, in order to be happy, your physical mind and conscience must resonate with each other. If you do not attain that resonance, love does not emerge. Thus we need to pay attention to whether the conscience and the physical mind stand within the eternal realm of resonance.(183-050,19881029)

Section 3. Embodying God through Love and Living a Life of Attendance

1 I have agonized most of all over the issue of how God and human beings can become one body, and how to explain this logically. A theory cannot be put forth

unless it is clear. If the fundamental position of human love is not established, everything else will go wrong.(249-223,19931010)

2 In seeking answers to the most fundamental questions, I constantly wondered where on earth I could find the realm of oneness between God and humanity. This is an important question. Until it is resolved, the starting point and the end point will not coincide. While reflecting on this, a realization came to me like a bolt of lightning: true love travels by the most direct and shortest route. This realization answered my question. If true love connects heaven and earth, it takes the straightest and shortest route between them. In other words, there is only one vertical line; at any given point on a horizontal line, there is only one line that forms a 90-degree angle to it. This marks the straightest path and shortest distance.(250-153,19931014)

3 We marry in order to perfect love. We say that horizontally, a man and a woman are right and left, or east and west. Since their true ideal has them connecting along the straightest, shortest path, the straightest and shortest path of love intersects the level plane at only one point, the center on that plane, at 90 degrees. If it tilts to the side it does not work, because it ends up forming an oval and the two sides will not be the same. It is only at the 90-degree angle that both can stand in an equal position with the same standard. The love that leads to the embodiment of God in human beings is found only at the 90-degree angle.(224-168,1991 1124)

4 Love between God and human beings is the major question. For example, is the color of God's love, the same as the color of our love? And where does God's love meet ours? If this does not happen, if we do not unite with God in love, neither we nor God can settle. If God is rejoicing with one standard of love, and we are rejoicing with another, a serious problem will arise.(257-059,19940313)

5 The new age in the twenty-first century is an age of universal values. It is an age when material things do not dominate our mind and spirit. It is an age when we live in oneness with God. In the twenty-first century, people will realize that living for the sake of others is far more valuable than living for oneself. Self-centeredness will fade away and altruism, based on interdependence, mutual prosperity and universally shared values, will finally and triumphantly emerge.(219-122,19910828)

6 Humanity has to find God. We have to dispel our ignorance of the incorporeal True Parent. We are blind to the great works of the Creator, even as we live within the infinite, profound and mysterious order of the universe, in which God's omniscience and omnipotence are revealed. We should no longer perpetuate this appalling

situation. As fallen humanity we have to free ourselves from arrogance, thinking we own our own life. In the presence of Gods true love, we need to awaken our spirituality and maintain the standard of absolute sex.(400-099,20021227)

7 God is the True Parent. You have to discover the living God, who is committed to investing true love for all eternity. Then you will come to understand the heart of God in creating us as His object partners. His desire is to give us absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal true love, true life and true lineage. Thus you can relate to God, the absolute True Parent, True Teacher and True Owner; and with the True Parents as the axis of absolute values for the individual, the family, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos. They should become the root of your life, from your daily affairs to those of your family, nation and world. We have to start a revolution. If we determine to follow for tens of thousands of years, without change, the tradition of the Parents of Heaven and Earth— the path of true love, of living for the sake of others—there will be no problem that cannot be resolved, whether in the family or society, or between races or religions.(400-099,20021227)

8 The age will surely come when we live in the ideal world of creation, the world of oneness in heart between God and humankind. In that age, people will realize that it is eternally more valuable to live for others than for themselves. We have to build this world, where self-centeredness fades away and is replaced with altruism, based on the ideals of interdependence, mutual prosperity and civic virtue. To accomplish that purpose, we need to understand God and the spirit world correctly, so that our testimony about the heavenly way will guide humankind and the world. We will form thereby one great cosmic family connected to God's true love, true life and true lineage, and build Gods homeland and hometown on earth and in heaven. (400-100,20021227)

9 If the family that God envisioned, in which He is embodied in human beings through love, had come about at the time of creation, we all would have entered the kingdom of heaven. The problem is that God and human beings were unable to become one as subject partner and object partners through true love. Their love diverged, resulting in two directions and two purposes. As long as this condition remains, God and humanity will not find the absolute, ideal world. God had intended that true love between these partners begin from a single point, but the Fall brought His plan to a complete halt and, instead, false parents emerged through Satan's love. Since we are all their descendants, who inherited false love, false life and false lineage, we live in hell. Human beings have nothing to do with the kingdom of heaven. Nevertheless, we have been unaware that we need to find

God's true love, centered on one person who has overcome the physical body and acts with perfect freedom.(275-054,19951031)

10 We speak of the embodiment of God in human beings through love, but where is this embodiment achieved? Until now, no one has understood logically where God's love and human love merge. Without knowing this, calling God "Father" is meaningless. The word has nothing to do with God. Actually, Adam and Eves wedding ceremony should have been God's wedding ceremony. When you go to the spirit world you will know this for sure. You will see that these incomprehensible words are correct. Only when you capture God's love is your ambition so fully satisfied that you can say, "Now I am content." Action occurs only when there are a subject partner and an object partner. As human beings, attaining our highest ambition is only possible through a subject partner. That subject partner is God's love. Since God intended us to become His embodiment through love, we are destined to long for that until it is achieved. We will be content only when we arrive at that point.(252-119,199311 14)

11 In your life of faith, you cry out "God!" in the hope that He will hear you and trust in you. Once you have His trust, you will eventually seek to achieve a state of oneness with God, as one body through love. By doing so, your love and God's love will merge.(258-098,19940317)

12 Instead of observing a traditional day of Sabbath, the Unification Church is entering the age of salvation through justification by attendance. Put simply, it is the age of attendance. The attendance I am referring should not be taken lightly; it should enable God to enter your family and abide there. That is not only a realm of liberation, but a realm of complete freedom in which you live together with God. Until now, we observed the Sabbath every week. Nonetheless, within the range of ten, the eighth day is most important. This is because it marks a new beginning, a day of peaceful settlement through justification by attendance. Finally this day, called Ahn Shi Il in Korean, could come about, allowing us to achieve salvation through attending God.(445-265,20040419)

13 What does the age of justification through attendance mean? It means this is an age of living in attendance to God. Doesn't the first of the Ten Commandments in the Bible tell us to love God? In the Era after the Coming of Heaven, however, God manifests Himself to all people in the form of the True Parents. Therefore the stature of the Unification Church, whose members attend the True Parents, will reflect Heaven's power and authority, a power and influence without equal in the world.(565-304,20070613)

14 Surely fallen people have parents, but they are not true parents. God does not recognize those parents as true parents. Then what is it that we need to do today, in the Last Days? Within our life-time we should attend parents on the level of the universe, on the level of religion, and on the family level. This means we need to serve three sets of parents. As individuals in a family, we attend our parents. As children, in the religious sphere, we attend True Parents. As parents, on the universal level, we attend the True Parent, God. People living on earth today are not within the realm of True Parents' love approved by God. Unfortunately, our relationship with our physical parents does not extend all the way from our birth to the eternal world. Only when we combine the love of the parents who represent the family, the religious sphere and the universe with God's love, can we enter the realm of His love that encompasses six thousand years of history. Then we can stand in His presence and lift up our faces before Him. This is the course we are bound to take.(005-123,19590104)

15 Because Adam and Eve fell in the garden of Eden of their own volition, and lived in the fallen realm, they could never experience a life of serving God directly. Those who have not been able to serve God are not qualified to enter the kingdom of heaven. Nonetheless, although you inherited the false lineage, you are qualified to enter the kingdom of heaven on the condition that while you lived on earth in the flesh you attended God, the True Parent, whom Adam and Eve did not attend while on the earth. By doing so, you indemnify the course of restoration and acquire citizenship in the kingdom of heaven.(150-315,19610415)

16 When we come to attend God as the Parent of the universe, His love will reign on earth. On that day we will receive His love and we will be able to love our siblings. In that world, even if we were ordered to fight, we would not fight among ourselves. How terrible the Fall in the garden of Eden was! How terrible has been the course of bloodshed that began with the conflict there and has continued until now! You cannot go to the kingdom of heaven alone as an individual. At least two—you and your older brother—must unite and go on the foundation of attendance to your parents.(105-341,19791028)

17 I hereby proclaim peace and unity everywhere in CheonIlGuk This phrase means that peace and unity cover everything wherever you go, without exception. I am proclaiming the era of a world of peace and equality. The phrase, "Proclamation on the Arrival of the CheonIlGuk Era with Peace and Unity Everywhere," states that heaven and earth are one. Thus, when families who received the Blessing on earth for peace and unity in CheonIlGuk call upon their ancestors, they have to respond. That is why I am saying that we are in the era when the spirit world will be able to

descend to the earth at will, and the wishes of people on earth can reach their ancestors and God. On that basis, I am proclaiming the coming of the era of peace and unity everywhere.(396-151,20021105)

18 Our hope is to stand in the same place as God. This means we have the right to stand in an equal position with God. We also have the right to live together, and the right to participate. The right to participate means the right to act together. That is, you should participate together and act together. After that comes the right to love together. We—God and each of us—live together for the purpose of love. Jesus said, "I am the way and the truth and the life. No one comes to the Father except through me." (John 14:6) He said that he is the truth, meaning the Word, and the life, but he left out love. CheonIlGuk advances based on love. That is why you have the desire to remain in the same place as True Parents, You want to live with True Parents and to participate in everything they do. This means you want to live together happily and freely for eternity, in a position of freedom, based on love. In that sense, the era of peace and unity everywhere in CheonIlGuk has now come. Consequently, when you move, you are not moving alone. Your nation is surrounding you. The entire spirit world, heaven, is surrounding you. You are living as an owner amid the protection of the physical world and its people. You have to become an owner who can serve and attend in the tradition of God's love. Your clan should uphold this teaching as the framework for a nation.(396-152,20021105)

Section 4. The World of the Culture of Heart

1 The heart is the mind of emotion. Our deepest feelings belong to the realm of heart. God created human beings; therefore, the flow of God's heart is internally connected to that place. The electricity of God's love flows in the realm of the heart. Experiencing this is like feeling electricity flow through you. How powerful that is! Through this you gain a sense of what goodness is. The realm of heart contains the substance by which we connect to everything. Because there is nothing that does not belong to this realm of heart, the electricity of God's love can flow everywhere.(112-013,19810315)

2 When a mother who just gave birth to her own baby sees the town beggars baby, or the baby of a woman in dire poverty, who has no one to breastfeed it, and has the impulse to nurse it as her own, that is heart. Only when you love other children as if they were your own, and practice that love beyond the world level, will the world of heart emerge. If many children are born in your neighborhood, you should love them with the same heart you have for your own children, and even more. Only this will create the world of heart, the world of liberation into which God can

come. You have to love them as if they were part of your own body.(524-196,20060413)

3 Heart has substance and power that enables it to pass through everything, including the concepts we entertain in daily life. It is positioned at the very core of life. You can deny life, but you cannot deny heart. You may deny existence, but you cannot deny heart. Heart precedes existence. That is why we reach the conclusion that God is love. We cannot see heart. If someone demanded to know how long, round or high that heart is, we would be unable to answer. But when a person we love departs, we immediately are overcome with longing for that person. We are filled with that longing to the very synapses of our nerves. We have no need of the kind of heart that can be measured within the confines of our five senses. If we experience such a longing heart in our human relationships, what would we feel if we were bound to God, the subject partner of absolute heart, and were in touch with God's heart? God's heart does not appear on the surface of things, but there is no doubt that it exists. The brave warriors of the Unification Movement are striving to advance toward a new world that is centered on this teaching and the ideal of heart.(015-038,19650131)

4 The deep heart that we understand in the Unification Church is the heart of hope for which all humanity longs, the heart to which we all need to connect, and the heart that God has always sought. This heart can embrace all of heaven and earth, enveloping everything, and still take in more. To become Heavens brave warriors, the first step is to connect to this heart, and the next step is to connect to people. Nonetheless, as a result of the Fall, Adam and Eve could not understand God's heart. If each had perfected their character and come close to God, He would have blessed them in marriage and bequeathed to them His heart. God's intention was to build a family of His own lineage through Heavens couple, to whom He could connect His love and heart completely. Originally, Adam and Eve were to inherit this awesome heart of God and, on that basis, become the true human ancestors. Due to the Fall, that basis of heart was lost. Man and woman could not inherit God's heart. They lost God's heart, lost the character through which they could resemble God, and lost the Word and the purpose they were to fulfill had they perfected that character.(014-177,19641003)

5 The Fall led to this world of barriers between nations. It also changed our root and our cultural environment. The culture we have is one in which God cannot freely come and dwell. It is Satan's cultural sphere, not Adam's cultural sphere. As a result, human beings could not live in the ideal realm of love. Originally, we should have lived in the realm with one root and one lineage at its center, where we could

cultivate one heart, and we could govern the three-dimensional world of north, south, east and west. Instead we are living in a deplorable situation, outside that realm. For that reason, we today need to return to the original ideal realm.(169-038,19871004)

6 All cultures have been developing in line with the flow of history. Today's civilizations are making the world flourish. Nonetheless, when it comes to resolving mind-body problems, or problems of the heart, they are not helpful at all. Externally, human beings have created a complex environment and complex systems, but our hearts cannot connect with them. We are in a state where we cannot harmonize with them. Although it should, the standard of the world in which we live does not fill us with delight and make us shout with joy together with heaven and earth. Today's era is flowing in a direction completely different from that toward which our minds are heading and for which our hearts are longing. Human beings are seeking the heart that can guide their minds and their external lifestyle. We need to set a standard of heart in our lives to which we can adjust our body and our relationships. Otherwise we will never be free from this struggle, no matter what era we live in. The world that God seeks is not the culture or the civilization of today's world. God has always desired a world governed by a civilization that upholds a true standard of mind and heart. This is the world that we, as future ancestors, want to leave to our descendants.(019-230,196801 15)

7 Today's world may appear to be a place to which God would come, but it is not the world of the heart. It is an environment where people attend to external matters, but not one in which they connect with one another through heart. When God comes down, He will do so through the heart. If a people were capable of governing all of humanity and representing the world, it would be a people with a tradition based on God's heart. Further, it is not the human mind and heart that will create a culture that can govern the world; only God's heart can do so. This is the final issue to be resolved. You need to understand that you cannot lay down your burden and settle down until you realize a world where everyone connects through heart. Our ultimate objective is to achieve the world of heart.(011-093,19610212)

8 What kind of world is God striving for? It is not this present world, with its cultures and civilizations. Heaven wants to set a standard of heart and mind that can guide civilization in the proper direction. The world is destined to meet the standard that our ancestors dreamed of establishing for their descendants. This is the central Will that Heaven desires.(007-080,19590719)

9 Everyone yearns for a world of peace, but such a world will never come about through the type of culture we find in today's developed nations. It will only come about through the True Parents. Even if the True Parents were still sleeping on straw mats, carrying bundles of tattered clothes on their backs, dressing in faded, worn out garments, and climbing out of deep holes appearing utterly exhausted, fallen human beings would need to learn the heart of God from them. The Unification Church is a place that teaches the way of God's heart, and all of you need to engraft onto it.(017-129,19661211)

10 Heartfelt longing arises only toward that which we love. However, our longing should arise not from humanistic love but from God's love, the source of eternal settlement and eternal life. That is what inspires Christianity. More than other religions, Christianity strives to fulfill its mission as a religion of love. The purpose of religion is to foster people of good character. We can do so by applying the principles of the world of heart. Human beings have the authority to govern the things of creation and should relate to them with heart in our daily life. Though human beings have been as insensible as stones to God, He has conducted His providence for six thousand years with the same heart, always yearning to find His people. History has unfolded in cultures of all shapes and forms, but God, who is the alpha and omega, has never lost His heart of yearning for us. Hence those who diverge from the heart of God, as it has been revealed over the course of history, will lose everything.(006-349,19590628)

11 Many people in the process of restoration have tasted the kingdom of heaven, but they did so within the sphere of Satan's accusation. No one has truly experienced the eternal homeland of peace, the kingdom of heaven, in the realm from which Satan is completely removed. One who truly experienced the kingdom of heaven and God's love would surely be inspired to fight Satan. One who experienced that state and that love would never leave God. People on earth have to experience God's love. How do you draw the line that determines God's ownership? You start from a single blade of grass, from one plot of land, from one single person, from the very beginning, all the way to the kingdom of heaven, the world of God's heart.(005-024,19581109)

12 The original hometown we long for is different from the place that each of you normally regards as your hometown. The original hometown is the resting place of the heart, the place in which the mind delights. It is the home of the heart. If God looks for me, I will tell Him, "Please come to see me because of the condition of my heart, not because of my circumstances." My circumstances can greatly change, but the condition of my heart never changes.(007-023,19590705)

13 There are no restrictions whatsoever in the world of heart. Relative conditions restrict the world of the mind, but no one can restrict the world of the heart. What can restrain the love of parents for their children; a wall as high as a mountain may block the way, but it will not be able to stop a parent's love. The mind submits to constraints because it is in the position of object partner, but the heart is in the subject partner position. The mind is multidirectional, so it calculates and considers many things. The heart, however, is different; it desires only one thing.(007-246,19590920)

14 Who do you think is the ancestor of the heart that beats within God's Will? The Unification Church members know of the sorrow that lies deep within the heart of God. We know of the injustice and pain God has endured, and we know He has the capacity to bring down instantaneous judgment on the world of the enemy. From this standpoint, the Unification Church members can be considered the ancestors of heart.(014-316,196501 10)

15 The world of the heart is not isolated. The standard of love is the ideal of heart. The importance of this is that the heart serves as the common denominator in this great universe. Heart is the bridge that connects our daily life to the victorious realm of love. For the sake of all the people in the world, heart builds a bridge of love that begins from the earthly world, passes through hell, and goes all the way to heaven.(163-313,19870501)

16 In order to reach the world of the heart, you have to have the mind to follow the path God has taken, walking in my footsteps. Only on that path can you experience the world of the heart; there is no other. You cannot imagine how many tears I have shed to come this far. You should truly understand how painful and sorrowful it has been for me to follow this path.(224-339,1991 1229)

17 When you love someone, no matter how much you give that person, you still want to give more and more. True love wants to give and give and give continuously. Even after you give endlessly, you are still not satisfied that you have given enough. Such is the way of true love, the way of the world of the heart. Since God, the original Lord and the root, is like that, as His ideal object partners we have the ability to go to a position many times better than His. No one has ever realized that human beings have such value.(266-218,19950101)

18 The world trends that many religions today are advocating will pass away. In the Last Days, the era of a new cultural sphere will come through the bridegroom, the Lord at his Second Advent, who meets his bride. This world will transition into an

era where languages, life, actions, hopes and even hearts will be united. Knowing this destiny, the Unification Church has embarked on the task of setting the standard for this one world culture.(050-062,1971 1031)

19 In order to establish the world of the culture of heart, we need to foster good character through true love, educate with True Parents' teaching, and work to spread the movement that creates families of true love through God's Blessing. On the foundation of our life of faith, we attain the character of true love by living for the sake of others, investing in others consistently. Only by doing so can we realize ideal couples and ideal families. This path alone can free us from our habits of egoism, individualism and materialism, and give us hope of a bright future for humanity.(260-129,19940501)

20 Heart is the original source and fundamental element of the mainstream culture in the ideal world of the future. Everyone needs the culture of heart. This culture cannot come about if parents do not have children and children do not have parents. It cannot come unless we have our siblings, our people and our nation. Naturally it cannot come unless we have our world and our heaven and earth. This is the culture of heart. When we speak of a bright culture dawning in the East, we refer to the culture of heart. Hence we are to create a culture based on the heart. (151-056,19621007)

21 The future world will be the world of a new culture of heart that brings harmony between God, humanity and creation, and a culture of love based on true families. It will be a world of true love where everyone lives for the sake of others and all people live together in harmony and cooperation. It will be a world of interdependence, mutual prosperity and universal values. In the future, we have to live the dream of one global family in which we are all brothers and sisters. It will be based on the ideal of true family centered on True Parents and realized by true love that transcends race.(288-174,19971127)

Section 5. Living as an Owner of CheonIlGuk and the Family Pledge

1 The Family Pledge is the greatest blessing of all the blessings that Heaven has bestowed on humanity. We received it on the occasion of the inauguration of the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification on May 1, 1994. This was possible based on the declaration of the Completed Testament Age, the age that concludes and completes the Old Testament Age and the New Testament Age. Once that beacon pierced the darkness of the Era before the Coming of Heaven, the Family Pledge was given. It is a guidepost for us amid the great changes in heaven

and earth that have been occurring in this new era, as we open the new heaven and new earth, the Kingdom of Cosmic Peace and Unity.(565-302,20070613)

2 True Parents personally fought and gained victory during the forty-year course of indemnity that began with the founding of the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity in 1954. On this foundation, we no longer recite My Pledge, on the individual level, but recite the Family Pledge instead. The Family Pledge is the pledge that a true family, the basic unit that enters the kingdom of heaven, should proclaim and practice together. It is the pledge imbued with the bitter sorrow of Heaven and True Parents, and hence it cannot be recited without tears. It sets forth the standard for liberated people, and will prevail forever. It will be recited long after traditional religions, which arose as a consequence of the Fall, have been discarded. Families who recite this pledgewill be the basic unit that enters the kingdom of heaven.(565-302,20070613)

The background of the Family Pledge

3 From God's point of view, the era of the providence of restoration has come to an end. With the end of that era, we are moving toward the original ideal of creation. This means that the fallen world under Satan's authority has ended and we are moving into the age when God directly governs both the physical and the heavenly worlds. Because this time has come, I proclaimed the Family Pledge of the Unification Church. Not just anyone is ready to recite the Family Pledge. Each of the eight verses in the Family Pledge contains the phrase, "Our family, the owner of CheonIlGuk, pledges...by centering on true love." People who make this pledge stand on the foundation that transcends Satan's world. Due to the Fall, people have been connected to false life and false lineage through false love. In order to overcome this, we have to abide in true love, true life and true lineage. Otherwise we cannot overcome their false counterparts. Why do we make true love a premise of the Family Pledge? It is so we can proclaim that we are entering the original world, as if the Fall in the garden of Eden had never occurred.(263-194,19941004)

4 In a family that is restored to God, individuals must be united in mind and body, husband and wife must be united, and parents and children mustbe united. The family must learn the Family Pledge by heart. You should not recite the Family Pledge when your mind and body are in conflict or when husband and wife are fighting. Also, you should not recite it if you do not yet have children. You are to recite the Family Pledge after forming a realm of unity in true love. This is because to enter the kingdom of heaven you must be true children who have achieved unity of mind and body, unity between husband and wife, and unity between parents

and children. It is a place where families fulfill the maxim, "Where there is harmony in the family, everything goes well."(264-340,19941120)

5 The Family Pledge endows you with the full authority of an original family. You of the fallen lineage must return to the original position before the Fall before you can recite the Family Pledge. In addition, you must work to build Heaven's tribe, people, nation and world. This will establish the kingdom of heaven on earth. Individuals whose mind and body are not united should not recite the Family Pledge. Unless husband and wife are united, they should not recite it. Unless parents and children are united, they should not recite it either. If you do not understand this, the whole point of the Family Pledge loses its significance.(264-340,19941120)

6 The Family Pledge contains the meaning that we should wipe all things clean. The third pledge of the Family Pledge teaches us that we are to perfect the four great realms of heart, the three great kingships and the Realm of the Royal Family. So who can recite the Family Pledge? Those who have inherited false love and false life from the false parents are not supposed to recite it. Those who recite the Family Pledge have to be united with God and True Parents, who have no relationship with the Fall, and return to the original world. They also have to be united in mind and body. Husbands and wives have to be united, and parents and children as well, in true love. Only those who stand on this foundation have the right to recite the Family Pledge.(264-213,19941103)

7 The Family Pledge is composed of content drawn from the Principle that is essential to the establishment of true families. That is why you should recite it before you pray. First you need to check your own internal state and that of your family members. If you find something amiss, you must correct it. You must put the Family Pledge into practice.(260-308,19940519)

The future national pledge and world pledge

8 The Family Pledge is the absolute standard for establishing the Kingdom of Cosmic Peace and Unity that lies beyond the Completed Testament Age. It is like a constitution. Families that rise to the position to lead the world must be true, model families that all people can recognize and respect. These families are Heaven's greatest and supreme blessing. Yet in reality, creating such a family is a most fearsome task. The family is the cornerstone for building Cheon Il Guk. Hence, building a true family is the way to becoming a citizen of Cheon Il Guk.(565-303,20070613)

9 The Family Pledge is evidence of True Parents' complete victory. It bestows the teachings of the Completed Testament Age, the age of justification by attendance. The Family Pledge connects your lives to God, with true love as its bones and true families as its heart. It is a nuclear bomb of true love that can encompass even God. The energy and wisdom of the Family Pledge triggers an eternal spherical motion, with true love at its core, which connects vertical and horizontal, north and south, and front and back. The Family Pledge is the key that opens the gates to the kingdom of heaven. Even keys made of gold or silver cannot open the gates to the kingdom of heaven. Only a true family perfected in true love has the key to open them.(565-304,20070613)

10 The Family Pledge is the creed of the Unification Church. It is like the bones. Fulfilling even one pledge of the Family Pledge is more than enough to make you a citizen of the kingdom of heaven. For instance, the eighth pledge states that the kingdom of God on earth and the kingdom of God in heaven will be liberated when we are united with God in love through absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. Neither God alone nor the Savior alone can liberate the heavenly realm. That liberation can be completed only when God and the Savior join together and all members of the Unification Church join with them to give the Blessing to all people of every nation.(388-050,20020729)

11 The teaching of the Family Pledge takes a universal perspective, not an individualistic one. You should not try to avoid the various difficulties the real world presents. You must be valiant to break through that reality and gain victory. Your weapon for this is the family armed with the tradition of the Family Pledge. I am not talking about the family centered only on the first generation, you and your spouse. You need to establish Heaven's firm and unwavering tradition through a family of at least three generations. Hence, your mission is to establish your household as a family where the true lineage of the chosen people flows from generation to generation.(565-318, 2007 0613)

12 God is now the Parent of the substantial world, having assumed the physical bodies of the True Parents. The entire process of accomplishing this is finally finished. The victory that True Parents have achieved is the foundation that brings order to heaven and on earth, where everything had been in disarray. True Parents are then setting up God's kingdom and opening the way for us to register our marriages and report the births of our children. This is analogous to resurrecting three generations for the building of His kingdom. You have inherited the full authority to do that, and that is why the phrase "owner of Cheon Il Guk" appears in the Family Pledge.(407-042,20030511)

13 You participated in True Parents' Holy Wedding ceremony. You received the Blessing together with us, and you participated in the event where we, the True Parents, recorded your marriages and births. Now all of you, as our successors whose marriages and births are recorded, will enter the kingdom of heaven together with us. This is something amazing. You are not entering the kingdom of heaven as individual members of Adams family; instead, you are climbing up the hill to the place where heaven and earth become one, in order to uphold CheonIlGuk. You are going beyond this point together with True Parents. You stand with us, having the right of equal position. That is why you can say, "Our family, the owner of CheonIlGuk..." It is a privilege.(409-151,20030623)

14 CheonIlGuk's citizens represent heaven and earth. Therefore, wherever you are, you should always live for the sake of the entire planet. If there is a problem at the North Pole, all of you should be concerned about how to resolve it. You should view any problem as your responsibility, whether it is at the South Pole, in the East or in the West. When you say, "owner of CheonIlGuk," remember that there is a crucial difference between a leader and an owner. The person in the leader's position may change from time to time, but an owner's position is eternal. You cannot be the owner of your family as an individual; your ownership should be as husband and wife. Even that is not enough; you need to complete the four-position foundation and become owners through three generations. Your grandfather and grandmother, your father and mother, you and your spouse, and your children make four generations, but in terms of stages they are reckoned as three. This is how you can become the owners of Cheon IlGuk.(400-011,20021225)

15 On April 10, 1992, I declared the liberation of women. When CheonIlGuk reaches its twelfth year, it will be twenty years since that proclamation. That was the day that my wife made her public appearance on the earth. It corresponds to the time when Adam would have been twenty-one years old and ready to receive the Blessing. Until then, there was no foundation for True Mother to stand with me as my partner. Hence, the kingdom had not yet come into existence. From the time of proclaiming the liberation of women to the twelfth year of Cheon IlGuk, all blessed families are in the position that Adam and Eve would have been in had they passed the age of twenty and prepared themselves to receive the Blessing at the age of twenty-one and then created the heavenly kingdom. It is on that basis that the phrase "Our family, the owner of Cheon IlGuk" could appear in the Family Pledge.(443-123,20040322)

16 The wedding ceremony of True Parents that took place sixty years ago was at the level of Adam's family within Satan's realm. After that, True Parents went beyond

the tribe, people, nation and world to establish the victorious foundation for the emergence of God's homeland. That is why they could hold the Enthronement Ceremony for the Kingship of God on January 13, 2001. In February 2003, on the day True Mother turned sixty, a Holy Wedding took place in God's homeland by which God and True Parents became one in body. On that foundation, on July 13, 2003, the central authority of the universe was changed from Satan to God. That was the day when the history of restoration through indemnity shifted and God could take His place at the center. It is on this basis that you and your spouse are called the "owner of Cheon IlGuk" in the Family Pledge.(437-306,20040213)

The first pledge of the Family Pledge

17 The first pledge of the Family Pledge is, "Our family, the owner of CheonIlGuk, pledges to seek our original homeland and build the kingdom of God on earth and in heaven, the original ideal of creation, by centering on true love." You do not know how great it is that you are able to recite the Family Pledge; it is the gospel of all gospels in history. Here, "the ideal of creation" refers to the ideal of creation centered on God. God's ideal of creation was to bring about the kingdom of God on earth and the kingdom of God in heaven. The Fall prevented this; hence, we now have to restore it. This means we have to build the kingdom of God on earth and the kingdom of God in heaven, which is the ideal of creation centered on the original homeland.(565-305,20070613)

18 True love unfolds when a person achieves oneness in mind and body, when a couple attains oneness in their marriage, and when parents and their children are one. Unless you practice this level of love, you surely will be in trouble when you go to the spirit world. The Family Pledge is that serious. You have to live in accordance with the Family Pledge, always. In your family, if the father violates even one point of the Family Pledge, the mother has to take responsibility for that along with him, and the children also have to take responsibility. The family cannot help but share the responsibility. This is the lesson we take from the fact that, because Adam did not take responsibility for Eves fall, his whole family fell.(565-307,20070613)

19 The phrase, "Our family...by centering on true love" implies that because people are fallen, they ended up not having true love and unable to form true families. Originally, a person without true love cannot have a family in the presence of God. True love is that which stands in relationship to God. It is not centered on oneself, the habits of the secular world, or a people's customs and traditions. It can only be based on God. Due to the Fall, human relationships have been connected to Satan's love. This is true in the family, the tribe, the people, the nation, the world, all

throughout heaven and earth. If you are to encounter God's love, you must completely deny the habits and traditions that are based on self-centered love. (274-196,19951103)

20 True love begins in the place where you invest everything, even your life, and then are ready to invest more. It is where you give and give again and forget how much you've given. True love penetrates heaven and earth. It pierces through even the world of death and ascends. It can penetrate and travel anywhere. There is nowhere love cannot go. Love can enter even secret places.(256-179,19940313)

21 The original homeland is where we all want to go, what we all want to see, and where we all want to live. It is where both our minds and our bodies want to go. Thus we must find this original homeland, for which our minds and bodies yearn. It is where we can settle for eternity. It is the foundation for our happiness, a place in which we can take pride. Throughout the course of history so many people have longed for this original homeland. They sought it and revered it, yet they passed away without seeing it. Many people of deep faith and great wisdom have made tremendous efforts to find this original homeland, even to this day. That is why the original homeland will surely emerge.(023-074,19690511)

22 The original garden is the ideal garden. It is where the spirit world and the physical world connect to each other, and where the feeling of brotherhood and sisterhood reaches to every corner of the universe. It is not like today's world, where people make an issue over differences of belief or ideology and where they dispute over ethnicity and national sovereignty. It is not a world where people quarrel with one another over differences of economic circumstances or culture. Rather, it is a world where people would discuss all matters with the heart of God, which enables peoples and nations to transcend their differences.(007-038,19590705)

23 If our ancestors had not fallen, there is no doubt that the original hometown would have been in the garden of Eden—a village among the mountains and rivers where Adam and Eve lived. Today, when fallen people speak of their original hometown, they immediately think of their place of birth. They do not even think of the ideal hometown for which all humanity is seeking and longing. Even if they do, they think it is something beyond their reach, and that any effort to find it will be in vain. Today, however, the Unification Church must go out to seek and recover the lost original hometown. It is where our Heavenly Parent, our brothers and sisters, and all our relatives reside. When we get there they will welcome us, not in

sadness but in eternal joy and happiness. Their joy will not be short-lived but will endure forever. We must find that original hometown.(023-074,19690511)

24 We miss the hometown of our birth, where we can see our parents, siblings and relatives, who are closer to us than anyone else and who guide us and welcome us with an unchanging heart. They greet us joyfully whenever we go to see them; they sympathize with us and comfort us whenever we are in difficulty. If you were to find no one like that in the hometown of your birth, your feelings of deep yearning would dissipate. That place, which you fervently yearned for, hoping to find them, would instead give you cause for grief. When you come to the hometown of your birth, there should be people who will welcome you there.(023-080,19690511)

25 If God could come down to a family on earth and live with them, that family would represent all humankind. Then that place would be the starting point of God's life with human beings, the base for the original hometown of all humanity. However, because of the Fall, we failed to make it to that starting point, where God would have been at the center. The family could not become such a place. That is why there has been no original hometown. That starting point was created only after I came and established the foundation whereupon God and True Parents could settle on earth, through unity in true love. That place of settlement can become the original hometown and homeland for all humanity. Although it is restored, it has the same form as the original starting place where God wanted all people to share God's love. As the base of true love, it can become the original hometown and homeland for all humankind.(289-142,19980101)

26 Where is the homeland that God desires? Where is the original hometown of humankind? That historic, universal and global original hometown is the place where True Parents were born. You need to inherit these ancestors' worldview and traditions; otherwise you will be treated as stepchildren. At this time in history, the Korean people are called to become the chosen people. For this to happen, I have to turn things inside out. If Korea is truly to be the original homeland, the original fatherland, then all civilizations of the world will have to bear fruit in Korea. Further, if we are to make Korea into the original homeland, we must resolve to become offerings of loyalty, devotion, love and sacrifice. Otherwise Korea will lose the qualification to be the original homeland. It requires action to create something good. We must accomplish it, even at the cost of our blood, sweat and tears.(015-284,19651102)

27 The first pledge of the Family Pledge, in speaking about the original homeland, mentions the restoration of all things. We are to restore through indemnity

everything that was lost in the garden of Eden. Some religions encourage their followers to leave their homes and to live celibate lives. Yet the Unification Church, unlike those religions, instructs us to return to our hometowns or to our nations. This is an amazing thing, and it is happening throughout the world. For the world of religion, there is no greater news than this.(269-105,19950409)

28 After finding our original homeland, our next task is to build the kingdom of God on earth and in heaven. We, each one of us, must create it. Because it was lost, we must re-create it entirely. Because it was stolen, we must reclaim it and rebuild it, even if it takes thousands of years. That is why in the Unification Church we speak about returning to our hometowns.(288-324,19980101)

29 We must build God's kingdom on earth and in heaven, which is the original ideal of creation. Because the family was lost, we must form families. Then our families, with true love and based on the original homeland, should build God's kingdom on earth and in heaven. The original homeland is based on the family, not on the nation. That is why you and your families need to return to your hometowns and substantiate God's kingdom on earth and in heaven there, with your families. Once you have recovered your hometowns, your nation and the whole world will unite automatically. Do not worry. If you fulfill this, God's kingdom on earth and in heaven will come. It all begins from within the family.(260-157,19940501)

30 "Our family pledges...to build the kingdom of God on earth and in heaven, the original ideal of creation." I used the word "build" with the meaning that we have to make it. It will not come about by itself; we must create it. Since it was people who turned this world into hell on earth and in the spirit world, it is people, not God, who must re-create it and make it into the kingdom of God. The kingdom of God on earth and in heaven emerges within the individual and then must be substantiated in the family. Since we must create this kingdom in our families, our families need the Family Pledge. Our families have to build the kingdom. We are the ones who must do it.(260-304,19940519)

The second pledge of the Family Pledge

31 The second pledge is, "Our family, the owner of Cheon IlGuk, pledges to represent and become central to heaven and earth by attending the Heavenly Parent and True Parents; we pledge to perfect the dutiful family way of filial sons and daughters in our family, patriots in our nation, saints in the world, and divine sons and daughters in heaven and on earth, by centering on true love."(565-306,20070613)

32 We have to attend God and True Parents. However, because Adam and Eve fell, God and True Parents were driven out of the family. Even now, Gods Will cannot be fulfilled unless we attend God and True Parents. God is the vertical Parent and perfected Adam and Eve are the horizontal parents. Based on the foundation where they—the vertical Parent and the horizontal parents—have become one, we can achieve unity as couples comprised of two individuals, and through that unity God and His kingdom are connected to us. This means, first, that without attending God and True Parents we can accomplish nothing, and second, that our position as a family representing heaven and earth is higher than that of Adam and Eve prior to the Fall.(260-189,19940508)

33 Adams position is the very first, representing the past and the present of all humanity. He is the very first in the line of all the ancestors going back hundreds of millions of years. In the beginning there was only that one position, and Adam and Eve should have married at that summit. Then, after their family had settled as the central family on earth, it was to expand out into the world. From that position they should have fulfilled the duty of filial sons and daughters, patriots, saints, and divine sons and daughters in the heavenly kingdom. But Adam and Eve could not accomplish this.(264-188,19941009)

34 In absolute attendance to God, with true love, Adam and Eve were to have advanced straight from the family to the nation, to the world, and to heaven. No ideology thus far in history reflects this understanding; they all propose that progress occurred by a series of zigzags. But we should follow the ideal of expanding the family as one body, based on thousands of years of un-breakable love. The model of the family does not change. The model is that central family which represents all families.(283-076,19970408)

35 Adam and Eve are the center of everything in heaven and on earth. The family that they are to build is the central family representing all people of the world. Everything develops from this point, the central family. The world becomes one centering on the axis of this family. Because each individual represents this family axis, each person stands in a unique and special position in the world. That is why everyone wants to become a prince or princess. By becoming the best partner to God that we can possibly be as a man or as a woman, we can make God our own, and at the same time everything that God created can become ours. Love brings everything into oneness and determines the right of ownership.(273-283,19951029)

36 What is a representative family? In the garden of Eden, God created only two human beings, Adam and Eve. Along with God, there were just the two of them. They were to hold the supreme position as God's representatives in heaven and on earth. Through their marriage in that position, they were to settle on earth in order to multiply sons and daughters. Then their family that represented God would become the central family. A family consists of two people: not two men, not two women; it is a man and a woman as a couple. That one man and one woman stand in front of God in a position to represent Him. Then, just as Adams family is a seed, your families are also seeds. For instance, pine tree seeds have the same everlasting value wherever they go. They carry the same value, equal value. Wherever you plant the seed, a pine tree will grow. It is the same for your families.(273-049,19951021)

37 The family of True Parents is the seed. Because it is a perfect seed, all families that multiply from that seed have the same value, even though there may be billions of them. Their value is exactly the same. After the passage of thousands, tens of thousands, or even hundreds of millions of generations, the families in which God settles will all be recognized as having the same value. This means the seeds from which they multiplied each have the same value. That is why your families represent God and True Parents. Also, as Korean blessed families, you represent the Republic of Korea.(282-320,19970407)

38 Filial sons and daughters are people who readily sacrifice mind and body for their parents, wanting only to love their parents. Patriots are people who do not worry about their own interests; they sacrifice and invest everything they have for their country, even forgetting that they have done so. If one patriot invests tenfold in the nation, forgetting what he gave, and another invests eleven-fold and forgets what he gave, the first one will yield the subject partner position to the one who invested and forgot eleven times. Everything can be settled peacefully by following this principle. There is no way to achieve peace other than by living for the sake of others.(255-191,19940310)

39 God wants divine sons and daughters. The world wants saints. Nations want loyal subjects and patriots, and families want filial children. Whatever the level, they are all on the straight and genuine path of truth. No true parents would tell their child, "Since you have become a filial child, do not become a patriot; do not follow that path." Rather, they would teach their filial child by saying, "Even if you have to sacrifice our family, you should follow the path of a patriot and serve the nation; even if you have to sacrifice the nation, you should fulfill the duties of a saint; even if you have to sacrifice the world, you should go the way of a divine son

or daughter as Heaven desires; and even if you have to sacrifice heaven and earth, you should seek to fulfill God's Will." Until this day, no one even knew that such a concept existed. We have to invest and make sacrifices. Otherwise we can never realize the one united world, the one kingdom.(285-219,19970519)

40 The person who lives continuously for the sake of others becomes the central person. This is a certainty. The filial son or daughter in the family is the one who lives continuously for the sake of the parents. This bestows upon that son or daughter the central position in the family and the right of inheritance. Patriots are the same. Those who live in service to the nation, who invest and sacrifice again and again, are recognized as that nation's leaders. They will surely become its central figures. For this reason I am teaching you to be filial sons and daughters in the family, patriots in the nation, saints in the world, and to go the way of divine sons and daughters in heaven and on earth.(275-039,19951030)

41 Filial children do not become indebted to their parents. Rather, they make their parents indebted to them. Patriots do not become indebted to their nation; rather, they make the nation indebted to them. Saints do not become indebted to the world; they make the world indebted to them. Our families should represent Heaven and work to bring peace, happiness and freedom to the earth. Therefore we must always be aligned to the situation and desires of heaven and earth. If we are thus attuned to God, our families should be able to bring Heaven's fortune to our surroundings. This is how our families can represent Heavenly Parent and True Parents and establish a realm of unity with God's heart. By doing so, today can be the beginning of the world based on the culture of heart. People in Satan's world have upheld the duties of filial children, patriots, saints, and divine sons and daughters. But now we must uphold the duties of filial children, patriots, saints, and divine sons and daughters centered on the heavenly kingdom. This is what we have to establish.(266-103,19941218)

The third pledge of the Family Pledge

42 The third pledge of the Family Pledge reads, "Our family, the owner of CheonIlGuk, pledges to perfect the Four Great Realms of Heart, the Three Great Kingdoms and the Realm of the Royal Family, by centering on true love." The four great realms of heart and the three great kingdoms refer to the perfection of unfallen Adam and Eve. Had they not fallen, Adam and Eve would have perfected the four great realms of heart and the three great kingdoms to form the royal family. This pledge speaks about how blessed families should live; in speaking about

establishing the royal family it also addresses the blessed families' mission to restore fallen humanity.(565-308,20070613)

43 The third pledge of the Family Pledge refers to the original world with no Fall. It speaks about returning to the original world, growing from infancy to the point of becoming a couple, and then reaching the position of parents. It is the path that leads to the state where we are one body with God. Each of us needs to walk that path and pursue the perfection of the four great realms of heart.(283-080,19970408)

44 Human beings exist as children, siblings, couples and parents. All human beings, whoever they are, are supposed to pass through these stages. Each of us is born as someone's son or daughter, and each of us becomes someone's brother or sister. Then we transition from a sibling to being a father or mother. Adam and Eve were siblings who were meant to become husband and wife and then parents. Each of us walks the same path. Before a woman becomes a man's wife, she is in the position of his younger sister, just as Eve was the younger sister of Adam. Before a man becomes her husband, he is in the position of her older brother. Still, in front of God, they stand as a son and a daughter. As God's son, the man has a path to take as a man, and as God's daughter, the woman has a path to take as a woman. When a man fulfills his duty and a woman fulfills her duty, they come to resemble their parents. Then, just as their parents married, they too go on to marry.(263-058,19940816)

45 The third pledge of the Family Pledge is a textbook for the heavenly kingdom. Adam and Eve were supposed to perfect their positions as son and daughter and as brother and sister. After reaching perfection as the son and daughter of God and as brother and sister to each other the culminating point would have been their marriage. Through their married life they were to perfect themselves as a couple and as parents, and to give birth to divine sons and daughters. They would be their fruit. For this reason, parents' love never changes. Therefore, you couples who received the Blessing of marriage are in an awesome position. You are in the place where the hope you had when you were a brother or a sister blossoms. It is where your hope as husband and wife blossoms. Furthermore, it is where the hope of all humanity throughout the ages blossoms.(263-149,19940821)

46 From the perspective of the four great realms of heart, each partner in a couple is the absolute life companion who perfects the other as his or her object partner. In receiving her husband, a wife receives God's ideal son. In him she receives her heaven-sent older brother, husband and father. The wife stands in similar positions

in relation to her husband. When that couple has given birth to children, they feel joy as they watch them grow, and they experience once again what it was like when they were growing up. It is just like God, who felt happiness when He created His children and related with them as they grew.(259-045,19940327)

47 When are the four great realms of heart perfected? When do sons and daughters attain perfection? When do brothers and sisters attain perfection? When do husband and wife attain perfection? Perfection comes with marriage. When the marriage is consummated, three realms of love— children's love, siblings' love, and the love between husband and wife— bear fruit. The couple become parents who stand on the foundation of these three realms of love. This is why you need to have children; you must give birth to your descendants. Just as God created Adam and Eve, you become second creators when you make children. Hence, parents represent Heaven, while children, siblings, and husband and wife represent the earth. When the husband and wife become one with each other, they become one with the vertical standard. That is how the perfection of Adam and Eve would have become the perfection of God's ideal of creation. Everything that God hoped for, pertaining to the ideal of creation, would have been completed.(263-058,19940816)

48 Now that we have entered the era of the kingdom of heaven on earth, our family becomes part of the royal family. That being so, how exemplary should we be? Can a king live as he pleases? The king, the queen, the princes and princesses ought to abide by the laws of their kingdom. Moreover, they have to observe the protocols of the royal court.(232-326,19920710)

49 It is the direct children of God's love who can enter God's kingdom in heaven. As the royal offspring of God's kingdom on earth, they pass through its gates as princes and princesses in the presence of God. The kingdom of heaven in heaven is the place where the children of royal lineage go and where the royal family goes. On this earth, we all should become the children of God's direct lineage or subsequent lineage by exemplifying the standard of true brotherly love and unity. We need to build a model clan and nation; having done so, we can manifest the honor and dignity of the royal family. If we live this way during our earthly life, we will move on with that same stature to the next world after death. That will be the kingdom of heaven in heaven.(236-204,19921108)

50 All of you should now become part of the royal family centered on true love. If we look at Adam and Eve as the children of God's direct lineage, all humanity belongs to God's subsequent lineage. Under God as Heavenly Parent, we are

brothers and sisters of Adam and Eve and are meant to be citizens of God's kingdom. From this perspective, you are endowed with the love of princes and princesses of the heavenly kingdom. You must embody the dignity and honor of that position with pride, and confidently preserve this dignity throughout your entire lives. Then, having lived this way, you can enter the kingdom of heaven, our original homeland.(220-219,1991 1019)

51 We can finally realize the family ideal, the ideal of God's creation, by actually attaining the four great realms of heart, the three great kingships and the realm of the royal family. For this, we need to be part of the royal family, which unites around the King as its center. The kingdom of heaven in heaven is the place you go after having lived on earth within the realm of the royal family. After you have done that, you simply move on to the kingdom of heaven.(244-048,19930129)

52 The people of the heavenly kingdom, its tribes and its citizens, emerge from the royal family. Therefore, unless we experience the royal family's realm of heart, which is based on the true love of the heavenly kingdom, we cannot enter there. God has lived in bitter sorrow because this has not been accomplished, because He could not have His prince and princess and love them. Moreover, God could not have royal offspring from them. Adam and Eve were that prince and princess; because they fell, they were unable to love in such a way that would give rise to the royal lineage. Also, God has lived in sorrow because, once Adam and Eve, who were still in the growing period, in the realm of indirect dominion where dominion is based on principled results, fell, they could not become the object partners with whom God could directly discuss His concerns. God their Father wanted to consult with them regarding the great works of creation in heaven and earth, but He could not.(220-048,1991 1014)

53 Had the first human beings not fallen, they would have become God's direct children with the right of kingship in heaven and earth, the right of the parents of heaven and earth, and the right of the first son and daughter of heaven and earth. They would have become God's own royal palaces on earth and in heaven. Furthermore, they would have passed on this vertical, royal tradition horizontally to all brothers and sisters born of this lineage, and all those who became one with this royal tradition would have entered the kingdom of heaven. Family members and relatives who practice this royal tradition founded on love will surely enter and abide in the kingdom of heaven after their earthly life. Therefore, we come to the conclusion that this royal tradition, which is based on love, should become the way of life for all families.(218-222,19910729)

The fourth pledge of the Family Pledge

54 The fourth pledge of the Family Pledge reads, "Our family, the owner of CheonIlGuk, pledges to build the universal family encompassing heaven and earth, which is the Heavenly Parent's ideal of creation, and perfect the world of freedom, peace, unity and happiness, by centering on true love." God's ideal is that the world becomes one family, one household. If people who have perfected the four great realms of heart and the three great kingships recite the Family Pledge, they will form one family, not two. The great universal family encompassing heaven and earth is one family under God.(565-309,20070613)

55 God's ideal of creation is the perfection of the four-position foundation centered on Adam and Eve. From the perspective of God's purpose of creation, this would have been the fulfillment of the Will. The completion of the four-position foundation would have required the perfection of Adam and Eve. Had they then married and had children who also reached perfection, their family would have achieved the family level four-position foundation centered on God and become the perfect embodiment of the ideal of creation, realizing the realm of perfection. This would have fulfilled God's ideal of creation.(164-009,19870503)

56 Had Adam and Eve become the True Parents, their descendants would have formed one great family within the Adamic cultural sphere. It would have been a world of peace. Accordingly, the history of restoration is the path to recover that family, the true family centered on True Parents and true love. Everything God intended unfolds from there. The true family is the center; it is the hope of humanity and the hope of God. The true family will serve as the source of true love and true life, and be the starting point of humanity's peace and happiness.(294-067,19980611)

57 All the people of the world are brothers and sisters. We are of one lineage. We have to protect our lineage as God would protect it. Hence, even when we are sitting in God's royal palace, we have to be thinking of our mission to build one great family encompassing heaven and earth. We need to build that universal family and perfect the world of freedom, peace, unity and happiness. I am an advocate of the universal family. I am here to plant freedom, peace, unity and happiness. Those ideals are the core of my lifelong work.(280-037,19961013)

58 We seek to establish the family that meets the standard of heaven and earth, the family that God is striving for. Therefore we need models for the grandfather and grandmother, the father and mother, the couple and the children. Traditionally,

Korea followed the extended family system. In that historical tradition, seven families would live in the same house. We should establish a family system that builds on that. It is amazing how well it fits with the goal of tribal messiahship in the Unification Church.(276-180,19960219)

59 The people of the fallen world are in the position of the younger brother, and you are in the position of their older brother. You need to educate them properly in the heavenly tradition. This is the only way to restore people on Satan's side to the realm of God's royal family. In order to save them, we must restore the right of the first son that was lost. When we establish them as second-born princes, we can enter the heavenly kingdom with the right of the crown prince. They enter the kingdom with us, and thus the realm of the royal family is restored. Otherwise neither the right of the first son nor God's royal family is restored.(264-201,19941009)

60 When we pledge "to build the universal family encompassing heaven and earth, which is the Heavenly Parent's ideal of creation," we are pledging to create one great family conforming to God's Will. How can you proclaim your own kingship as long as the kingship of Adams family is not yet secured? We must secure that kingship, untainted by the Fall. We must bring everyone back from Satan's world as an extended family that dwells in the place of freedom, peace, unity and happiness. Our ideal is peace and unity.267-152,19950104()

61 There can be no peace without unity. Without this oneness, ideals such as peace, happiness and even freedom are just empty words. Can there be peace when husband and wife are fighting? Peace comes where there is oneness. The same is true of freedom. Where a man and a woman clash, do they have freedom? Where there is conflict, we experience neither peace nor freedom. Without the foundation of unity, we cannot find freedom.(229-229,19920412)

62 Where there is oneness, there is freedom. Even your eyes feel good when they are focused on one point. You feel uncomfortable when your nose is congested, but when the congestion clears, you feel free. The same applies to the freedom of your ears, your hands and other parts of your body. So without oneness, there is no freedom, there is no peace and there is no happiness. The perfection of all creation lies in balance, on a level plane. Perfection does not reside on a sharp point.(267-312,19950205)

The fifth pledge of the Family Pledge

63 The fifth pledge of the Family Pledge reads, "Our family, the owner of CheonIlGuk, pledges to strive every day to advance the unification of the spirit world and the physical world as subject and object partners, by centering on true love." You need first to think about the spirit world, which is in the subject partner position. Think about the demographics of the human race: are there more people currently living in the physical world or in the spirit world? The number of people living in the spirit world far exceeds the Earth's population. The spirit world stands in the position of subject partner. Likewise, the mind stands in the position of subject partner to the body, in the position of plus.(565-311,20070613)

64 The body represents the physical world and the mind represents the spirit world. The mind is like a plus and the body a minus. Accordingly, if you live your life ignoring the mind, the subject partner, and the spirit world, the world of the mind, you will end up in hell. Now is the time to change your life. Instead of allowing your body to lead your mind, practice abstinence and have your mind subjugate your body. Live your daily life with the constant awareness that the spirit world stands in the position of subject partner. You will not be able to establish the foundation of perfection in the spirit world unless, in your daily life on earth, you are able to shape yourself as a perfect object partner to the heavenly realms of the spirit world as your subject partner. You need to work on bringing the two together every day, every year, and throughout your life. When you ascend to the spirit world you will find it is your home and the final stage of life, where you can live freely.(565-311,20070613)

65 The spirit world stands in the position of subject partner. It includes countless tribes and peoples. The physical world should take the highest-level spirit world as its standard and move in unison with it. To achieve unity between the spirit world as the subject partner and the physical world as the object partner you must overcome any division between the two. In your daily life, you need to experience the profound love that comes from connecting with the heavenly realms. Then your daily life will be filled with profound experiences of God's sorrow and joy.(266-150,19941222)

66 The spirit world and the physical world can unite centering on people. This is why you ought to strive every day to advance their unity. You cannot backslide. Every day you need to strive for incremental progress. While in this world, do not restrict your life to one particular region; try to build relationships in various places and engage in activities so that you can make an impact upon the whole world. Just as there are four seasons—spring, summer, autumn and winter—and just as the earth provides us room to travel in four directions—north, south, east and west—

you should not live only in one country. Just as the world is uniting as one and national borders are dissolving, during your life you need to travel freely around the world.(266-151,19941222)

67 Until now, you have not conducted your daily life with the knowledge that the spirit world stands in the position of subject partner. The notion did not occur to you even once a month, yet it is something you should be aware of every day. In your daily life on earth, you need to reach the level of a perfect counterpart to the spirit world in the position of subject partner; otherwise you cannot establish your own foundation as a perfect existence in the spirit world. The relationship between the two should be direct, and you have to forge it every day, every year, for your entire life. Then, when you go to the other world, you will find a new dwelling place and a realm where you can act freely.(260-307,19940519)

68 What can link the spirit world and the physical world? It cannot be something temporary; it must be the same today as yesterday and still the same tomorrow, transcending time and space. It has to be something that no one will reject or deny, but that everyone will welcome in his or her daily life. It has to be something that we treasure night and day, and without which we would not be happy. That is love. Money cannot give us happiness. Knowledge cannot give us happiness. These are merely one-dimensional. The same is true of power. If we as individuals are to expand our influence to the national level, we need love to serve as a bridge.(233-128,19920801)

69 The spirit world and physical world will unite centered on God. However, this is possible only because True Parents planted the flag of unity here on earth. In the beginning, when God created, He acted with absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. Now He expects us to do the same, standing on the foundation of His immanence, transcendence, supreme authority and omnipotence. Further, in order to return to the original state of creation and find a partner of love there, we should invest and forget all that we have given, with absolute faith and a heart of absolute love and absolute obedience. As God did when He created the world, we too should recover the entire creation on His behalf by practicing absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience toward this world.(303-154,19990817)

70 "To strive every day to advance" means we never stop moving forward. We must keep moving forward and developing ourselves. As we advance, we ought to develop in all directions—east, west, north and south. I did not proclaim the Family Pledge for no reason. If you are not united in mind and body, or if your couple is fighting, you should not recite it. If no unity exists between you and your children,

you should not recite it. You need to realize how precious your blessed family is. The fact that we have the Family Pledge causes the spirit world to watch us and make our ancestors who have gone to the spirit world envious.(271-290,19950828)

71 Strive every day to advance! You need to strive to advance every day. This is an important point. The earth is the object partner to heaven, which is the subject partner. Therefore, even though the scope of our living environment on earth is smaller than that in the spirit world, it is here that we have to establish a foundation that conforms to the standard of the heavenly realm. Then we can bring that foundation with us when we go to the other world. I am not speaking just casually; this is a requirement. This is the path we all must go, and it is the path of Heaven. It is the path that integrates everything in heaven and on earth. Therefore, I included it in the Family Pledge.(274-115,19951029)

72 We have to advance every day. To stop is to die. Hence we must not stop. Each day we have to advance, even if only a single step. Each of us needs to pledge to do this. Henceforth we must advance, without deviating in the slightest, so that we may achieve in the physical world everything required for our life in the spirit world. (260-307,19940519)

The sixth pledge of the Family Pledge

73 The sixth pledge of the Family Pledge reads, "Our family, the owner of CheonIlGuk, pledges to become a family that moves heavenly fortune by embodying the Heavenly Parent and True Parents, and to perfect a family that conveys Heaven's blessing to our community, by centering on true love." Since you each pledged to become a family that embodies the Heavenly Parent and True Parents, your families represent the family of the Heavenly Parent and True Parents. Families that embody the Heavenly Parent and True Parents are families that move heavenly fortune.(565-312,20070613)

74 We are to become families that embody God and True Parents. We have to become true families that move the cosmos. We cannot keep God's blessings only to ourselves; we have to perfect families that extend blessings to the community. What I am saying is that we must move heaven and earth to share God's blessings. If there are people in your community who do not know about the Divine Principle, you need to share it with them and gradually expand the sphere of Heaven's blessings. Do not live by yourselves and for yourselves.(266-151,19941222)

75 Families that embody God and True Parents are those that mobilize heavenly fortune. For this reason, after receiving blessings you should not remain self-

satisfied and just enjoy your life. You should eventually become part of Gods royal family and make all humankind into God's people.(260-195,19940508)

76 You have to know how heavenly fortune comes to you. Heavenly fortune is something that is always circulating. The path along which it travels is eternal, revolving in a circular motion in accordance with the unchanging, eternal law. It goes around and around, moving attuned to destiny through the ups and downs of history. The question is how we, standing here, align with it.(149-153,19861121)

77 The fortune of natural law does not move randomly. It moves in a lawful and orderly fashion, following its orbit. Every being that is aligned with heavenly fortune exists to live for the sake of others.(233-082,19920730)

78 Heavenly fortune never perishes. We are sometimes sidetracked by circumstances, but heavenly fortune never changes its course. Because it follows Gods orbit, it is eternal. Just as the four seasons of spring, summer, autumn and winter succeed each other in their immutable cycle, heavenly fortune leads individuals, families, tribes, peoples, nations and the world as it moves along its unchanging orbit. Yet human beings are oblivious to this.(204-058,19900701)

79 Heavenly fortune supplies everything that a good person needs. So don't be greedy with desire; don't seek to hoard everything for yourself. You have to choose one of two ways, either to reach the top and then go down, or to go to the bottom and then come up. If you go to a humble place, heavenly fortune will naturally supply you with everything.(237-115,199211 13)

80 If you wish to ride heavenly fortune, first you had better know the path that it follows. Its path is not one that everyone likes; it is not the path of pleasure, eating and drinking. In fact, it is a path that everyone loathes to go. It is the path where you have to always be grateful, always fulfill your responsibility and always return glory to God. Those who walk this path can ride heavenly fortune.(019-145,19680101)

81 You did not receive blessings so that you alone would be successful in life. Actually, since you were called first, before others, you have to strive to transform the families of your brothers and sisters around the world so that they resemble your family. You blessed families need to propagate heavenly fortune by transforming other families to become like yours. Heavenly fortune has no place for selfish motivation. To ride it, you should bring peace and harmony within your family and then unite all other families by bringing peace and harmony to them. (260-308,19940519)

82 Your family must embody True Parents; then you can mobilize heavenly fortune. Wherever you go, everyone will follow you to realize the ideal of creation. Accordingly, you need to convey Heavens blessing to your community. When you do this, you will be able to launch the world of the culture of heart. The question is how you can leave behind in history a lineage that will not be defiled in later generations that span the millennia. This matter will determine whether you become a meritorious citizen of the heavenly kingdom, the kingdom blessed by God in the spirit world. This is the formula.(292-109,19980328)

83 Your ancestors in the spirit world will make you pay indemnity if you do not spread God's blessing to your communities now. They will resist you. They will keep blocking your way and interfering with you. They will say, "How is it that your actions do not conform to the content in the Family Pledge?" This is why I am telling you to share the blessing with everyone. If you do not, you will be in trouble in the spirit world. The Family Pledge is an important covenant in writing.(266-152,19941222)

The seventh pledge of the Family Pledge

84 The seventh pledge of the Family Pledge reads, "Our family, the owner of CheonIlGuk, pledges, through living for the sake of others, to perfect the world based on the culture of heart, which is rooted in the original lineage, by centering on true love." The most important thing in keeping to the path of the Unification faith is that no matter what happens, you must not stain the original lineage.(565-313,20070613)

85 The seventh pledge of the Family Pledge is important. We have to root our families in the original lineage that is based on true love. If we are to perfect the world based on the culture of heart, we must inherit the original lineage, which has nothing to do with the Fall. Our world is based on the culture of heart. It is one united extended family centered upon the one love of God. As such, the five races will live as one great family, in which no one is above or below anyone else. Such a time is coming.(261-093,19940522)

86 Once we inherit the original God-centered lineage, the original culture of God's heart begins to unfold. As long as the original lineage remains lost, the culture of God's heart cannot emerge. Culture continues through history. Furthermore, culture is based on the family, and from there it propagates to the society, nation and world. Therefore, to propagate the culture of heart requires that we leave behind a pure lineage. Without that, we will be cut off from the world of the

culture of heart. Keeping a pure lineage is the way we must center our life on the realm of the culture of heart.(260-308,19940519)

87 The original lineage is not fallen. To return our lineage to its original state, we need to sever ourselves from Satan's lineage and restore our lineage through indemnity. For this, we need to be engrafted. When our fallen root is pulled out and we are engrafted, the seeds of the original lineage will emerge after three generations. These seeds, from the fruit of the engrafted tree should be planted and grow into original true olive trees. This takes three generations to complete. Only after the third generation has passed will the seeds that are collected and then planted become true olive trees. It is like passing through three ages.(301-085,19990416)

88 The original lineage is the God-centered lineage. When we are rooted in that original lineage, we want to live for the sake of others, and then we can build the world based on the culture of heart. Our calling is to pass on a pure lineage that will last for thousands of generations. The Fall, which a man and woman committed in one careless moment, created a world that no one desired in both the spiritual and physical realms.(292-321,19980427)

89 You should be able to exercise dominion over love. You should not act carelessly. Our task is to build a world based on the culture of heart, where people live for the sake of others. The culture of heart is based on God's love. We are pursuing the world of original culture. In this world nothing is disconnected from true love.(304-274,19991109)

90 People who live for the sake of others will not perish. Moreover, people who live for the sake of others are continually coached from the spirit world. The spirit world constantly connects them to new things. Since they connect to new things, they inevitably gain fame and become known throughout the world.(292-028,19980327)

91 What is the way to unite and become the starting point of peace? It is by living for the sake of others. God established this principle, not only for Himself but also for true people. By living for the sake of others, true love can emerge; by living for the sake of others, the true ideal, true peace and true happiness can also emerge. They cannot be found apart from that. This principle is the root of the creation of heaven and earth, but people have been unaware of this.075-318,197501 16 ()

92 The world based on the culture of heart is the world of Gods original culture and of Adam's original culture, had he reached perfection without falling. There are not two such cultures; there is only one. It is the world of unity where there is but one

language, one set of customs, one set of habits and one tradition. Only in such a world can God live with individuals and live in their families.(261-095,19940522)

93 Our ideal is the world based on the culture of heart. That culture is only one culture, not two. The fallen world, however, overflows with a variety of cultures, each with its own complexity. Since it is not a world based on the culture of heart, individuals, families, tribes, nations, the world and the universe cannot deeply connect to one another. They are all at cross-purposes. Until now, the world has moved up and down in a zigzag. This is why, even after thousands of years it has not reached its final destination. But the world based on the culture of heart can reach its destination straight away. This is possible because of true love.()260-196,19940508

94 We should perfect the world based on the culture of heart, which is rooted in the original lineage. It requires that Adam and Eve create a lineage centered on God's pure, true love, with no relationship whatsoever to the Fall. Having that lineage, we should form a cultural sphere wherein Satan cannot survive and God can rejoice. We can build this world based on the culture of heart. The traditions of the peoples and nations of the world based on the culture of heart and centered on true love, fit together perfectly and move in one direction. There is only one culture, not two.(266-153,19941222)

95 The world based on the culture of heart that is rooted in the original lineage is a world where true love comes to the surface. We have already entered the age when heart manifests globally, and we can foresee the coming of the world of the culture of heart where everything is one. In that world, cultures will be united. It will be one world, free from war and strife, the veritable kingdom of heaven on earth and in heaven. Once we establish the world based on the culture of heart, everything will be fulfilled. Everything will be set up so that your families can enter straightaway into the realm of the royal family in the heavenly kingdom, just the way they are. By living in the culture of heart on earth they will have prepared themselves, both internally and externally, to live in that kingdom. I determined the content of the Family Pledge with the hope that by uniting with it, you will bring all this to pass.(264-202,19941009)

The eighth pledge of the Family Pledge

96 The eighth pledge of the Family Pledge reads, "Our family, the owner of Cheon IlGuk, pledges, having entered the Era of Cheon IlGuk, to achieve the ideal of God and human beings united in love through absolute faith, absolute love and absolute

obedience, and to perfect the realm of liberation and complete freedom in the kingdom of God on earth and in heaven, by centering on true love." Based on this pledge, we have to form couples who are united in mind and body and who can constitute the royal family. This is the completion of the Completed Testament Age and the beginning of the new family that will realize God's ideal of creation.(565-314,20070613)

97 The Completed Testament Age refers to a new age that has begun. It is a time when we can establish the one world of peace through the unity of families, tribes, peoples, nations and the world. This will be the fulfillment of everything. By uniting the world and going even beyond that, we enter the Completed Testament Age. After uniting the present world through new families based on the four great realms of heart and the three great kingships, we will establish a world that befits the Completed Testament Age and finally see one world of peace.(243-262,19930117)

98 God created the universe on the basis of absolute faith; that is why everything God speaks comes to pass and nothing He commands fails to materialize. Moreover, He created the universe in order to make His partners of love. He did it all with absolute love, having no doubts; that is, He did it with a single mind. Finally, He created with absolute obedience. At the moment of absolute obedience, even God is not conscious of Himself. Obedience is different from compliance. In obedience, there is no self-will, while compliance means following while protecting one's own will. God invested everything from the position of obedience, where He had no consciousness of self. Then, just as God created Adam and Eve with absolute obedience, they also needed to practice absolute love and absolute obedience on the basis of absolute faith.(274-201,19951103)

99 God began creating all things on the basis of absolute faith. He did so for His object partners of absolute love. God also created with absolute obedience. Absolute obedience means that there is no concept of self. It is the state where the self is an absolute zero. Re-turning to nothingness naturally initiates a circular movement. By giving everything so that nothing remains, God on high descends to the bottom. Through this motion God originated the movement of the universe. In the same way, all things exert themselves completely and descend in preparation to rise once again.(282-068,19970310)

100 Within the realm of absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience everything can be realized. God Himself had absolute faith when He created His partners of love. He created them after proclaiming, "This is what I will do," and

then He completely gave of Himself with absolute faith, love and obedience to achieve the result. Absolute faith stands on the foundation of absolute love, which is the foundation for absolute obedience. This is the mainstream thought in the eternal spirit world. It is also the mainstream thought on earth. Thus, it is the mainstream thought in both the kingdom of heaven on earth and the kingdom of heaven in heaven. Accordingly; you too should understand this concept. If you understand it and live by it, you can go anywhere.(292-272,19980427)

101 Blessed families have a value equal to that of the world and the cosmos. They are the same as sons and daughters of my direct lineage, and they can act on my behalf. I gave you the Blessing with the hope that you will follow in my footsteps and become even better than me. Once you have the heart of absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience, you can do the things that I have done. This was also Gods heart when He began His work of creation. God, the subject partner, thought, "As I speak, let My substantial object partners of love appear." God created with absolute faith that they would become His partners of absolute love. To be the owner of love, it is indispensable that one has partners of love. That is why even God Himself is absolutely obedient to love. Practicing absolute obedience gives rise to a circular movement.(301-074,19990416)

102 God, the subject being of true love, created us as His partners of true love. His ideal of love can be perfected only through us. When we are united in love with God, His purpose of creation, a world that fulfills the ideal of absolute love can be realized. We were created as the best and highest object partners of God's love. That is because, among all created beings, human beings are the only ones that were created as His substantial embodiments. In the presence of God, who is incorporeal, we were born as His visible bodies. When we are perfected we become His temples, substantial beings to whom God can freely come and in whom He can peacefully dwell at any time. And it is only through forming a vertical parent-child relationship with Him that Gods absolute ideal of true love for all is realized and fulfilled.(277-198,19960416)

103 God is the root of love, life and lineage, and the root of the kingdom of heaven on earth and in heaven. On the day of Adam and Eve's wedding, God enters their minds and inspires them with love that will bring them together as one. Originally God is the vertical True Parent and Adam and Eve were to be our horizontal True Parents. At the time of our birth, we would be given flesh and blood from both our vertical and horizontal parents. Hence our mind would be our vertical self and the body our horizontal self. Then upon our marriage, we would create a realm where

we are united with God in love. When we attain mind-body unity with God as loving couples, God's sons and daughters are born.(254-107,19940201)

104 True Parents are giving the Blessing to all people in the physical world, irrespective of religious, national or cultural backgrounds. They are linking them all on earth, thereby realizing the realms of liberation of the individual, family, tribe, people and nation. This is also possible in the spirit world. On earth we link people together into a nation that loves the heavenly kingdom and the cosmos, our heavenly home. The spirit world and physical world have to be made one, and every issue within those worlds has to be resolved, centering on the True Parents on earth. To achieve this, the Blessing must be given at all levels, to individuals, families, tribes, peoples, nations and the world, up to the cosmos. As the realm of the oneness of blessed families unfolds in the spirit world and physical world, it sets the foundation for the ideal kingdom with unfallen Adam at its center. On that foundation, all families since the beginning of history will be in a position of equal value. The kingdom of heaven on earth and in heaven will emerge, and God will come and dwell there.(303-258,19990909)

105 Now we are entering the era when groups of different nationalities and ethnicities can join forces. Nations, tribes and families on earth will join together and move into the realm of unity. As they transition, the world will rapidly change. Even Satan's followers will harass those who stand against this trend. Formerly Satan tried to take people to hell, but now he will try to bring them to the kingdom of heaven. As Satan and his followers cooperate in this way, and people's ancestors strive to bring their descendants to the kingdom of heaven, no one will try to block their way. Thus it is only a matter of time before the realm of liberation will be realized. Humankind will rapidly transition into the future era of globalization.(298-222,19990108)

106 In my lifetime, I inaugurated the era when everything can be liberated; thus, all things are in the position to be liberated. The value of this is truly indescribable. The realm of liberation was established based on the merit built up as a result of God's efforts to separate good from evil, repeated over and over again throughout history. In the course of those efforts, numerous ancestors accumulated merits. Since you blessed families represent the realm where all are liberated, you stand as sacrificial offerings. You are in the position to represent all the things of creation that are glorious and have been separated from all those that are impure. That is why you stand in the position of sacrificial offerings.(280-292,19970213)

107 The realm of liberation here refers to the universe. It refers to the universe that is billions of times the size of the solar system. Complete freedom occurs within the realm of liberation. Satan does not dwell there; we can live freely as we desire without obstacles. Even past sins will not obstruct us. We were imprisoned; but now we have shaken off everything from the past and have left the prison by the front gate. We are newly returned to the status of citizens. God has become our Father, and we are becoming one with the Owner, the One who protects our family and our nation. Thus we are entering the eternal realm of complete freedom, which has nothing to do with Satan. In time, we will enter the kingdom of heaven and dwell there.(445-255,20040418)

CHAPTER 4

The Vision of Cheon Il Guk and Our Responsibility

Section 1. The Background and Proclamation of Foundation Day

1 Seven years after 1945 brings us to 1952. I was responsible to hold the Enthronement Ceremony for the Kingship of God in 1952, to unite the country, and to take command of heaven and earth by the time I was forty. However, due to Christianity's opposition, I was unable to do so. I had found spiritual sons and daughters who could be in the position of the bride. Had they united with me, the country would have been united. Instead the religious leaders drove me out. They drove me out in the same way the religious leaders drove Jesus out. Since there is a principle of indemnity, I had to recover the realm of the united heaven and earth that they cast away when they drove me into the wilderness. Moreover, by standing in the position of Adam, I had to reverse the failure of the realm of Eve, no matter how much opposition there was. The Enthronement Ceremony for the Kingship of God, held on January 13, 2001, symbolized the recovery of Jesus' body at a substantial level, and connected it to the spiritual standard. This ceremony marked the beginning of the seventh millennium in relation to biblical history, as well as the beginning of the third millennium, January 13 contains the number thirteen. The number twelve is composed of the number four, for the four seasons of heaven and earth, and the number three, the central number. If the twelve apostles and Jesus, who was their center, had become one, forming a family of thirteen, then Jesus would not have died. If people were aware of these truths they wouldn't oppose the coming of the Father who in the Last Days brings the great Blessing, the perfected truth of heaven. (346-226,20010701)

2 What law governs the universe? Heaven and earth revolve around the number thirteen, and once we establish it as an axis, the individual, family, nation, world and cosmos can reach perfection automatically. The omnipresent God, as the Lord of freedom and origin of existence at the center of everything, will supervise and take dominion over the entire universe, both in daily life and through the course of eternal life. We now are fulfilling the long-awaited world of freedom and liberty for all. Through the number thirteen we have to fulfill the goal for which people are hoping and longing, the completion of the providence of salvation, as well as the goals of the national and cultural traditions that bring us pride. With this number thirteen at the center, we can attend the Heavenly Parent, who is the center of heavenly law, and make the heavenly kingdom a reality. (348-147,20010708)

The background of the proclamation of Foundation Day

3 The number thirteen! January 13,2001 is the day that I brought liberation and complete freedom to God. In 2013, we have to offer the nation before God. Because God took His position as King through the Enthronement Ceremony for the Kingship of God, God needs a nation. We must establish a people. If we want to offer God His kingdom, at least twelve years, twelve seasons of spring, summer, autumn and winter must pass. We have to prepare the royal territory and then attend God as the King representing heaven and earth.(502-029,20050725)

4 I held the Enthronement Ceremony for the Kingship of God on January 13, 2001, which marked the beginning of the third millennium. In 2013, after going over the peaks of twelve years beginning from that day, our families, people, nation and world have to bid a final farewell to the enemy land. No matter what pitiful circumstances beset us, we must not look back. We will carry aloft the torch of independence for the nation of our desire, and shake heaven and earth with a resounding shout of victory. Let us not forget: we are advancing toward the day we will plant the flag of heavens glory through the lightning of love. We have to shout of the new love that unites heaven and earth. After enduring tremendous hardships on this earth, where the history of sorrow has extended until now, True Parents achieved oneness with God and held the Enthronement Ceremony for the Kingship of God. Yet the True Parents of heaven, earth and humankind still have a responsibility remaining. Once we have gone beyond 2012 to the thirteenth day in 2013, we have to raise high a torch, a beacon of the founding of the nation and the nationwide victory, and offer everything to Heaven.(499-219,20050703)

5 I have to bind, on the world level, everything that Jesus left for us to accomplish. By the thirteenth day of the first month in 2013, within twelve years, I will resolve everything beginning here on earth and proceeding up to heaven. Adam and Eve turned everything upside down in one generation; therefore, in one generation the returning Lord has to recover Adams lost family foundation, Jesus' lost national foundation, and the returning Lord's forty years of hardship. Then the returning Lord has to unite Gods family with Cain and Abel in Adam's family, and go beyond the ideal of the family UN to the ideal of the cosmic kingdom of heaven, the era of liberation and complete freedom.(532-072,20060713)

6 On the thirteenth of January, 20011 offered the Enthronement Ceremony for the Kingship of God. However, this was not just about gaining royal authority. The Lord of Heaven and Earth must also be proclaimed. In 2013, because the recovery of the nation and the family will have returned everything to its original position, we will

go beyond that to one united world with God at the center. There will be no boundary between heaven and earth. Previously, the individual, the family and everything were in a state of conflict. This will be the era of unity, in which all can unite into one. We must end the fight between Cain and Abel, as well as the way rulers of nations have caused people of faith to shed blood. Then the younger brother has to ascend to the position of the elder brother. We must restore the murder of the younger brother by the elder brother, as well as the sacrifices Abel religious people have endured because of Cain. By recovering everything—the eight stages of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world, cosmos and God—for the first time, starting from Abel on the individual level to the entire Cain world, we will create a new heaven and earth.(506-100,20050901)

7 Unless the religions become one, we cannot realize the world of peace. Who can do that? Only Rev. Moon. By establishing a new model family, we can form a model nation and on that basis a model world. The model world in heaven and earth will frame the ideal world. It will be a world God can lead. We connect to the lineage of the un-fallen True Parents only when a mother stands in an equal position to a true father and embraces and unites Cain and Abel, Gods children who were driven from the garden of Eden. When Cain and Abel become one centered on their mother, and the rulers and religious leaders of Israel unite, the parents will stand in the same position as the ones who were to become True Parents yet were chased from the garden of Eden. Then the parents who are the standard for blessed families at the world level will emerge, according to the laws of the Principle. Satan then will not be able to stand at the front, but will have to retreat immediately. God, who had been relegated to the back, will return to His rightful position. In the garden of Eden, once Cain and Abel unite with God-centered Adam and Eve, all will be able to enter the realm of ownership. We have to offer this to God on the thirteenth day of the first month in 2013. In one generation, True Parents have to recover everything stolen by the false parent, Satan, through the false lineage.(525-012,20060419)

8 On February 14, 2010,1 proclaimed to the world the start of the heavenly calendar. The existing solar and lunar calendars now stand respectively in the positions of Cain and Abel and have the role of supporting the heavenly calendar, which will record and elucidate the new providence.(,20100421)

9 This is the era in which Heaven has proclaimed the heavenly calendar. It is a serious time. The time has come when the only way to live is by following the teachings of the True Parents of humankind, who have the seal of Heaven and will take responsibility for the eternal life of all humanity. Now is the time to reveal, be proud of and praise the name of True Parents.(,20100421)

10 From now, let God's Association Connecting the Spirit World and the Earthly World come to the fore. The association's name is composed of the Chinese characters for spirit, connect and world (靈聯世). After the spiritual and earthly worlds become one, they should form God's family, nation, world and cosmos. God's Association Connecting the Spirit World and the Earthly World is more an association than an alliance. The Chinese character for "associate" (協) is a combination of two characters, a cross (十) and power (力). Power, however, is written three times. It is astonishing that this character could predict so well what was to come. Why is it that in the Chinese character for associate, we find the character for the cross and the character for power written small two times underneath it written large? It is because this character signifies the world of the cross where God, Cain and Abel unite. This is the meaning of "association." As the spirit world and earthly world connect through this association, anyone alive who participates in this, from the individual to the family, tribe, nation, world and cosmos, is God's beloved and will ascend to a position of value greater than the level of goodness that existed before the Fall. So, the association is named God's Association Connecting the Spirit World and the Earthly World.(,20091008)

11 Now is the era of God's Association Connecting the Spirit World and the Earthly World. That is to say, it is the era of the Association of God and Human Beings United in Love and the era of the Association of the Cosmic Parents. In other words, humankind has now entered the era of Heaven's extraordinary grace. It is the era where people can regain God's nation and original homeland, realize the liberated kingdom of heaven, and enjoy eternal blessings and pleasure.(,20091008)

12 Once the era of the substantial Cheon Il Guk unfolds, God's Association Connecting the Spirit World and the Earthly World will stand as the central axis and rule humanity. This means that substantial unity occurs between the spirit world and the physical world. The laws of nature and the way of Heaven will conduct the providence. There will no longer be secular elections on earth and, through the Blessing ceremony, conducted internationally, one family of humankind will arise. We will enjoy tranquility and happiness while delighting in the reign of peace.(,20100708)

13 God's Association Connecting the Spirit World and the Earthly World can also be called the Association of the Parents of Heaven and Earth. It is not just an association in which the Parents of Heaven and Earth become the ancestors, or in which the Parents of Heaven and Earth become the origin of history. This association includes everything. The realm of Sabbath rest based on the Realm of the Cosmic Sabbath for the Parents of Heaven and Earth is the era in which

peaceful settlement is secured. This process is realized through the eight stages, or eras, of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world, cosmos and God. The eras of the individual, family, tribe, people and nation are five stages. When we go through the stages of world, cosmos and finally the stage of God, we fulfill eight stages. We each have to go through these eight stages. However, without restoration through indemnity we cannot go through these stages. To complete these stages, your possessions must become God's. Your blessings have to become those of the Parents, of Adam and Eve. When God becomes the Owner and the Parent, an association of the Parents of Heaven and Earth is realized, centered on True Parents.(,20091008)

Section 2. True Parents, who Have Fully Achieved the Will

1 As Saviors of the world, True Parents are the True Teachers and True King and Queen. They fulfill these three roles also in the religious realm, and the realm of the chosen people. Jesus came to connect heaven and earth and establish sovereignty over the nation of Israel, the realm of the chosen people. The three roles are one. After recreating the kingdom of heaven on earth and in heaven, establishing it in its originally intended position, the True Parents must affix their seal, showing that they have finished everything. This concludes with God giving the blessing, "For the eternal and infinite expansion, march forward into the age of eternal peace and sovereignty of love, the kingdom of heaven on earth and in heaven" (456-295,20040630)

2 How painful it must have been for God to sacrifice His sons and daughters, His whole family and His country, to save Satan's sons and daughters. He did so because it was essential as a foundation for the eternal establishment of peace. Otherwise peace would have been eternally impossible. God is the King of wisdom. Our current level of knowledge needs to be elevated to a higher dimension in order to grasp all of reality. Behind reality is something profoundly complex, high, deep and wide. To achieve complete enlightenment, we must cross a vast ocean of hidden secrets. The greatness of the Unification Church is that it has proclaimed the Age of the Realm of Life of the Unity and Completed Settlement of the Parents of Heaven and Earth. That means that all has been accomplished.(393-259,20021005)

3 Freedom, equality, peace and happiness! There will be a world of abundant love, an age of ever-expanding true love, centered on Gods ideal of creation. The reign of love that liberates all nations will lead to the kingdom of heaven on earth and the age of eternal peace. We will reach the age of Gods full transcendence, full immanence and omnipotence. That means everything will have been

accomplished. Jesus achieved spiritual salvation through death on the cross, and I can then declare I have achieved everything in the completely unified world of heaven and earth. Therefore, when I go to visit God and say, "Rev. Moon has come," as soon as He hears that, He will come down from His heavenly throne, where He has been lamenting as a prisoner, embrace me and weep. He will start weeping before I do, and He will shed more tears than I. When God cast His son out of Eden, the son shed tears of sorrow; but when he returns, God sheds tears of joy. Since the age of liberation, complete freedom and settlement of all God's nations has dawned, no one and nothing in heaven and earth can deny this.(413-194,20030723)

4 Eve's wrongdoing turned heaven and earth upside down. Having discovered this and having attained the name of True Parents, I offered this to God, saying, can say, "Your hope and my hope have come true. Now that the two sets of parents, the Parents of Heaven and Earth and the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind, have become one, all creation, all of the parents of heaven, earth and humankind, will live forever in the midst of Gods eternal love, Heaven on earth and Heaven in heaven" You will see no beggars, and certainly no criminals, in your neighborhood.(423-198,20031028)

5 When we look at the providence of restoration, everything has been resolved because the level we have reached is that of God's absolute victory. It means that the conditions necessary to establish victory in the providence of restoration are in place. It is finished. Therefore, it is the absolute victory in the providential history. It is an absolute victory from all perspectives: the providential history, the providence of salvation, the ages of the family, tribe, people, nation and world, and the providence to restore the kingdom of heaven on earth. When we use the word "absolute" it means it is done. It means that the age of the providence of indemnity has been completely fulfilled. Even when I die, in the age of God's sovereignty, God can appear directly and teach directly without going through the Messiah.(517-160,20060212)

6 A liberated nation represents the whole. What is a nation of complete freedom? Not everything is completed. We still have to turn the ownership over to God, and He has to say, "It is accomplished. What was once lost has been completely restored." He will also say, "Everything is completely accomplished centered on God's Will. Since all the blessings are accomplished, you will inherit everything I did in the name of the Blessing and the Will."(537-032,20060826)

7 All people can establish a nation where everything—whether in relation-ship as inside and outside, right and left, or Cain and Abel—centers on our eternal God. Through the restoration of the whole through indemnity and the flowering of liberation and complete freedom, anyone can pick the fruit that these flowers bear. The world of sovereignty and the authority of victory, in which the kingdom of heaven itself begins, can spread everywhere. In that world, a myriad of descendants will revere the newborn that has Heavens royal authority. The age of complete liberation, complete freedom, perfection and completion of all things, and the age of the eternal reign of peace will begin. Only when it reaches a level that God can recognize can there be liberation, complete freedom, restoration, and the realm of eternal life. That is my eternal hometown and my homeland. That is the world where perfect subject and object partners have become one. That is the ideal world under True Parents' sovereignty, centered on God.(613-190,20090630)

Section 3. Our Responsibility in the Era of Cheon Il Guk

-True Mother's words

1 Today, we come to an exceedingly important turning point in Gods governance of His providence. It is unprecedented, historic and revolutionary. The returning Lord, Messiah, Savior and True Father, who came as the root of the lineage of original goodness, has departed to the spirit world. Consequently, we now stand at a providential starting point. From here, we have to inherit True Parents' realm of victory and build the ideal kingdom of peace.(20120917, Cheongshim Peace World Center)

A new beginning in the providence

2 Having been together with True Father my whole life, his Seonghwa brings me unfathomable pain and sorrow. What's more, we cannot begin to fathom the sorrowful heart of God, who is the original substance of eternal love and the True Parent of humanity. From another perspective, however, this time is also one of hope to initiate a new dimension of God's providence. We have this hope on the basis of True Father's work in accordance with the heavenly laws that God established at the time of the creation of heaven and earth. He concluded, completed and perfected the providential tasks on earth that had been unfulfilled by anyone in history. He has now transitioned to the spirit world, where he will exercise dominion over both the spiritual and physical worlds. There is no language, spoken or written, by which we can possibly express how we feel today. We stand

at this juncture in the providence overwhelmed with emotion.(20120917, Cheongshim Peace World Center)

3 True Father proclaimed that Foundation Day is the most important day for us. From the time of the Enthronement Ceremony for Gods Kingship twelve years ago, Father set countless providential conditions to prepare for it. This is not a day that comes by casual happenstance. As He carried out the providence of restoration, God prepared the Israelites as the chosen people. They were yearning for the Savior. They believed everything would be solved when the Savior came to them, and that he would come in a glorious way. It seems they didn't understand indemnity. The providential history of restoration depends upon human responsibility. When ones responsibility is not fulfilled, indemnity follows without fail. Nothing about this has changed in this age.(201301 14, Cheon Jeong Gung)

4 According to heavenly law, True Father will now make the spirit world his base and, while freely traveling between the spirit world and the physical world, will carry out the providence to expand Cheon Il Guk. True Father and I shall preside over the providence in a state of oneness in heart, essence, harmony and thought. Through the victory of Foundation Day, we will be with you in building the original garden of Eden on earth. There is no stopping the providential work of Heaven.(20120917,Cheongshim Peace World Center)

5 The suffering that True Father and I experienced in the providential course of restoration through indemnity, a course with which not even Heaven could interfere, is beyond imagination. We even lost four children of the True Family as sacrificial offerings for the providence. Who dares to say that they can comprehend this painful course of restoration through indemnity? I have dedicated my entire being, sharing the joys and sorrows of life with True Father as his companion, overcoming innumerable trials and difficulties. On that victorious foundation, Heaven bestowed upon True Father and me the right of equality, the right to live together, and the right to hold the same position in the providence.(20120917, Cheongshim Peace World Center)

6 True Father accomplished many things before his passing. It remains for us to inherit and develop his work. I intend to take responsibility for this, standing in the forefront. This truly is difficult. It is not easy to maintain both the internal and external levels. From wherever you are, each of you will have to help me.(20121013,Yeosu Blue Sea Garden)

7 At this new transitional point in providential history, I want to make clear that I shall inherit True Fathers victorious foundation and stand at the forefront to lead the providence on earth. While doing so, there are several things I would like to convey to everyone.(20120917, Cheongshim Peace World Center)

The way we need to go from now

8 First, we must absolutely value the tradition True Parents established as much as we value our own life, and pass it down to our descendants, the future generations. True Parents established the tradition of love and heart, the tradition of the Word and the rules and regulations, and the tradition of the culture of heart. The hoondokhae tradition of reading the Word, which is the crystallization of True Parents' course in the providence of restoration through indemnity, should become the central practice in each family, as well as in the church and at any gathering centered on Heaven. At the same time, we need to go forward in creating a new order on earth. Please never forget True Parents' tradition, based upon which our organization will be developed and united as one body. It will have perfect order, based on the True Family, with True Parents as its center and Abel figure. (20120917, Cheongshim Peace World Center)

9 Second, we need to complete the ideal of the blessed family, with which Heaven has blessed us. The family is the cradle of true love, true life and true lineage, and the base upon which God's purpose of creation is realized. Based on the eight verses of the Family Pledge, you should uphold the tradition of the absolute good lineage with absolute faith. Our vision for peace evokes pure love, happy families and a peaceful world. Blessed couples should raise their children through love and the Word in a tradition of attending Heaven with absolute love and attaining complete oneness. Through hoondokhae in your families, you should foster the firm establishment of the Cheon Il Guk order, and fulfill the ideal of the Blessing. That is how the tradition of heart can take root both vertically and horizontally according to the standard of vertical, high noon alignment .(20120917, Cheongshim Peace World Center)

10 Third, you have all received the blessing of being tribal messiahs, which is your mission and responsibility until the time we complete Cheon Il Guk on earth. Tribal messiahship is the greatest of all blessings given by True Parents. It could not come to fallen people without the foundation of victory True Parents established in the providence of restoration through indemnity. That is why True Parents consistently emphasized the tribal messiah mission during their lifelong governance of the providence. The completion of Cheon Il Guk in heaven and on earth becomes

possible when tribal messiahs fulfill their responsibility to share the Word and the Blessing with their tribes, and live for the sake of others. This will establish a realm of goodness, a peaceful world and the ideal of humanity living as one global family . (20120917, Cheongshim Peace World Center)

11 Fourth, we will create a community based on the culture of heart, in harmony and unity, with True Parents and true families. Each of you, without exception, found the path of God's Will because Heaven chose you. It was based on the merits of your ancestors and because of the character you personally acquired. In order to follow True Parents and enter this realm of victory that we have now, you have faced immeasurable persecution. That makes us all a part of a single family, a community of heart centered on one Parent. Division and conflict continue to afflict the world, but the Unification family can become brothers and sisters who can easily transcend race, nation and any barrier. If you can display an exemplary life of giving and living for the sake of others, this dream will surely come true. Especially in this time of great transition in the providence, I ask that you unite with True Parents in your heart.(20120917, Cheongshim Peace World Center)

12 Although True Father is in the spirit world, he is always with us. He exists without corporeal form, but he never leaves our side even for a moment. What do you think he desires from us at this time? He desires that we march forward without pausing. God's providence has to continue throughout the world until, with True Parents as the center, love and peace overflow, a culture of heart settles, and a new order is established. Moreover, from the victory of Foundation Day, we should advance further to offer great glory to Heaven and to True Parents, and to instill great hope as we stand before the world and before all of history.(20120917, Cheongshim Peace World Center)

Indemnity for the sake of the future

13 In the history of God's providence, no advancement comes without indemnity. Indemnity does not only mean something bad. Through it, arises a promise for the future. The providence of restoration through indemnity is not achieved easily. Progress requires indemnity on a large scale at every stage of the providence. Since the onset of history, no one has been able to say, "I have accomplished everything. I have liberated God and completed, perfected and concluded everything so the history of the providence can begin anew" Has there ever been a person who could say this, who could claim this, and who lived like this, fulfilling Heaven's commands? You are now standing in a blessed position, at the center of the providence.(20121124,Cheongshim Peace World Center)

14 True Father worked day and night without rest throughout his entire life. I also have not slept more than three hours a day since I began attending him. As a result, we were tired all throughout the day. Now, True Father has gone to the spirit world. He transcends time and space and will be working tirelessly. I imagine he does not have time to rest. If you have been unable to fulfill your responsibility, you need to resolve to invest yourself to the utmost with a life-or-death commitment. The life you have been leading up until now will not suffice. We must create a new beginning. This is our last chance. (20121105,Manhattan Center, New York)

15 This day, the day of the worship service celebrating the fortieth day after True Father's Seonghwa, marks a new starting point for the providence. During the last forty days, Father has visited many places in the spirit world. He has met figures from providential history and has experienced directly the circumstances of God's creation of heaven and earth. I have been conversing with True Father in my heart over the past forty days. I have been preparing. Father's thoughts have become my thoughts and my thoughts have become his thoughts. Now with oneness of mind and will, centering on the Principle, let us move forward with determination. (20121025,Cheon Jeong Gung)

16 For us there is no stopping. We simply have to go forward. I hope and pray that you, true families throughout the world, will carry out your mission as new tribal messiahs with absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience, and become the victors who inherit Heaven's great blessings and heavenly fortune. Heaven has poured great blessings upon us. All of us, including the second generation, need to fulfill that responsibility.(20121209, Cheon Jeong Gung)

17 When I met True Father for the first time, I set two goals for myself: to conclude the providential history of restoration through indemnity, and to realize God's ideal world of creation. Nobody, not even True Father, told me what to do. But I realized that my failure to do this would make it more difficult for later generations. Therefore, my position today is the result of my constant effort to complete my mission.(201301 14,Cheon Jeong Gung)

Divine spirit, truth, and a church of love

18 The Unification Church originated from divine spirit and truth. The years have passed, our church has grown, and our members have matured, based upon a truly loving heart. In the beginning, when Father was ministering, whenever members came to the church, they never wanted to leave. They wanted to stay with True Parents, even if it meant staying up all night. If there were anything True Father

wanted done, members wanted to do it for him, spontaneously, without being asked. That was the life of faith our members led back then. Though ours was a small church, it was overflowing with love. Everyone was united and we overcame the most difficult of times. We need to give Divine Principle lectures in our churches without ceasing, in order to give people rebirth through the Word. Where individuals, families, tribes, peoples and nations practice true love, that is Cheon Il Guk. That is the kingdom of heaven on earth.(20121001,Cheon Jeong Gung)

19 Sunday sermons should not last more than thirty minutes. A long sermon bores the members and makes them want to return home quickly. At the same time, the sermons impact has to last for a week. When the sermon is finished, it is good for the church leader to listen to members' witnessing reports, welcome new members, and do something to lift the members' spirits. With such programs, the church will become truly vibrant. It will be filled with the energy of life. Both current and new members will hardly be able to wait another week before going back to church. The church has to be a place where members feel enriched both physically and spiritually. If a minister feeds his members with the nectar of the Word and creates a place where the members feel embraced with love, I am sure that church will experience incredible growth.(20121129,Cheon Jeong Gung)

20 All of True Father's words and actions are like uncut jewels. I want to create something of the greatest value out of those jewels, and keep it close to me where I can love it freely. You may feel the same way. As the first step, I will polish the words of Cheon Seong Gyeong, creating a jewel without which you cannot live. On the last day of your life, you will want to take this jewel with you to the spirit world. That is why I am working on this.(201301 10,Cheon Jeong Gung)

21 Christianity spread through the world with one book, the Bible. Father's words should perform the same role. If the words are not put in order, there will be confusion in the future. I feel an urgent need to organize the volumes that contain the Word. I plan to engage a committee of elder members to review and edit, in order to make all things clear for the sake of the future. We need to leave one root, one stem, and one fruit, that being the eternal Word of Father. Father's words are the standard, signpost, and compass that people can use as a guide, every day throughout their life. I am full of regret that Father's words have not been organized.(20120917,Cheon Jeong Gung)

22 When we publish True Father's teachings, many committees need to examine the content before a book comes out. This is to benefit you and your descendants. I do it so that you can hold this book in your arms at the end of your earthly life

when you go to the spirit world. Be proud in front of True Father. Report to him: "I received True Mother's training during my life on earth and came to love Father's teachings. And so I have come to you with this book in my arms."(20130107,Cheon Jeong Gung)

23 You have the True Parents with you. You have the Principle and the Word. Now we have to make True Father's life known throughout the world. Our future will be bright. I will work to vitalize our church. Our church should be alive and breathing. Through our actions and practices, blessed families need to set an example and bring neighbors and clans to follow us.(20121001,Cheon Jeong Gung)

24 From which year did True Father tell you to study Korean? The nearby nation of Japan must take on the mission of Eve. Must translators always follow you around to help you? You must now put into practice what Father said, and learn Korean. (20121013,Yeosu Blue Sea Garden)

A life of gratitude

25 Our ultimate goal is to create Cheon Il Guk in attendance to God. The first thing we have to do for this goal is to examine ourselves. According to Father, Cheon Il Guk is established when two people become one. Therefore, in our life of faith, the most important thing is to live in a place of one hundred percent unity between mind and body. What do we have to do to live in such a place? Begin with what I have said: "Before you criticize things that are wrong, you should say these words with a pure and sincere heart: 'I offer thanks to Heaven.'" If you can stand on a foundation of oneness on the individual and familial levels, at church, in your tribe, in your country and the world, then the unified world centered on God will be realized naturally. If you live with this mindset, Heaven will always be with you in everything you do, and blessings will pour down upon you.(201211 11,Cheongshim Peace World Center)

26 Each of you needs to empty your heart and repent, truly repent. Those in high positions need to come down to low positions with an earnest heart. Thank Heaven for awakening your heart to be able to repent for everything, and for the ability to look at yourself and make a new beginning. At the end of each day, think back on the things you did and pray to God. Ask Him to help you complete the things you were not able to do that day by investing everything you have the next day. If you live with a heart of gratitude, everything around you begins to look beautiful. You become happy. Then you cannot keep your happiness to yourself, so you will start

witnessing to others. You will not be able to help witnessing to others.
(20121027,MHHotel,LasVegas,USA)

Witnessing and the creation of the environment

27 It is a pity that although you have listened to Divine Principle lectures dozens or hundreds of times, you have not yet grasped those teachings nor can you translate them into action. Our environment was shaped not only at the time of God's creation of the universe. It has continued through the course of the providence of restoration. I have made a great effort to create an environment for the coming generations. What about your parents? Have they fulfilled their responsibility? Have they created the environment that you need? As second generation, you stand at the center of the Unification Church. You need to clearly understand your roots and create a good environment. Simply put, witnessing is the way you create the environment. You need to witness. That is the only way you can avoid accusation. No matter how much the world has honored you, or how strictly you have lived for the providence, without straying even once, if you have a condition for accusation, you will not be free when you go to the spirit world. Please realize this. That has to be your constant motivation. Think about the seven billion people in the world. Our environment is still very limited. (20121212,Cheon Jeong Gung)

28 True Father completed and accomplished the providence of restoration through indemnity. He opened Cheon Il Guk. It is up to us to create the environment for Cheon Il Guk. It is not possible to turn heaven and earth upside down overnight. What is important is how much we devote ourselves to embrace our brothers and sisters, our clans, our nations and our neighbors with love. They are the fruits of our witnessing. Think only about how you are going to offer one more life to Heaven, even to the extent of forgetting to eat and sleep. You are all blessed members and you probably all have children; so you know how marvelous it is and how much you anticipate the birth of each new life. You can feel Heaven's blessings in that moment. If you can give birth to one new life each day with your own effort, then you will receive a great blessing.(20121212,Cheon Jeong Gung)

29 The Blessing you received by meeting the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind should not remain only in your family. You are the ones who can display your pride in the Blessing in front of the seven billion people on the earth. Please remember that with every blessing comes responsibility. If you fail to fulfill your responsibility, indemnity will follow. Know that for a surety. Because of this, you should completely unite with True Mother. Completely unite and move forward toward a single goal. Don't look sideways. This is how blessing can come to you. In

the spirit world, you breathe love as your air. Witnessing is about the love you sow.(20121225,Cheon Jeong Gung)

30 In the history of the providence, the failures by a central figure or chosen person to fulfill his responsibility has been followed without exception by the need for indemnity. For sixty years following the founding of our church, True Father worked publicly and earnestly for the sake of God's providence. It is not an overstatement to say that he spent two-thirds of that time, forty years of his life, in America. Our eternal homeland is Korea, but he invested more in America. This is because he was thinking about all of humankind. The great blessing that America has received as the eldest son nation means it has the responsibility to gather all the brothers and sisters and bring them to the parents.(20121105,Manhattan Center, New York)

31 As a nation, the United States of America represents Christianity. After the crucifixion of Jesus, God developed Christianity for two millennia and gave a great mission to America. This nation does not belong to the people of America alone. Its responsibility was to work hard for world peace, but it failed. True Father came to awaken America to its mission, but how did the American people treat True Father? He was innocent, but they sent him to Danbury prison. When will this nation indemnify the sins it has committed against Heaven? From an external point of view, America is standing at the edge of a cliff. From this perspective, you have to understand the great importance of your mission.(20121027,M Hotel, Las Vegas, USA)

32 If you take responsibility and organize activities that are lively and inspiring, the spirit world will fully assist you. What is the wish of those in the spirit world? What is our wish? It is the establishment of the kingdom of heaven on earth and in heaven, Cheon Il Guk. How excited, delighted and grateful we would be to realize that in our lifetime! If we have gone through life feeling that way, how can we now just sit calmly and placidly? How can we not exert ourselves? Our goal will not disappear with the passing of Foundation Day. We have to bless all of the world's people and transform them into Cheon Il Guk citizens. In order to do that, what should you do? Those in the spirit world will not help people who do only what they are told to do, who just live from one day to the next. I am asking you to become people who report to Heaven every day and who move with Heaven all the time. Therefore, you must work hard, as if having twenty-four hours in the day is not enough.(20121013,Yeosu Blue Sea Garden)

33 Because educating our children is an urgent and important matter, you should begin each day in hoondokhae with your family. Up until now, you had no time to

spend with your children because you were carrying out church work. From now on you should begin your day together in hoondokhae with your children. Please begin your day this way. We need to educate and nurture our second generation. No matter your position, you need to think about the generations to come.
(20121001,Cheon Jeong Gung)

The role of women in the Era after the Coming of Heaven

34 When it comes to educating and raising children, the mother has to be stronger than the father. That is why I told my daughters-in-law, "You have to follow the tradition and become stronger than your husband." The mother's role was great during Israel's course of paying indemnity while living in a difficult environment. It is the same with the Unification Church. Women have the responsibility to march at the front, organize and handle everything, and help the men.(20121105,Manhattan Center, New York)

35 Regardless of position or office, our goal is the same: to make everyone in the world a Cheon Il Guk citizen. This is the blessing and the purpose for which we were born. Don't place too much importance on your position. The action you take is more important than the position you hold. The second generation in particular will not be able to move forward if they cannot overcome the difficulties that present themselves at this time. Foundation Day is not the day that heaven and earth are destroyed, but is the day on which Cheon Il Guk begins. Until it is complete, we each have our own responsibility. We should not rest until every last person in the world is a citizen of Cheon Il Guk. Until we have done that, we cannot say that we have accomplished everything. We are only at the beginning. How can we bear fruit if we have not even begun? We need to sow in order to reap. Thus we need to do our best and show God and the world what we can do. What we can achieve from now on will depend on the effort we make. Let's transform our environment as much as we can.(20121212,Cheon Jeong Gung)

36 How will you move after Foundation Day? It is the great age when heaven and earth open, an event that will occur only once in history. Who will be the true and good children, the loyal subjects and patriots in this day and age? Heaven has given you its words and opportunities. We need to march forward with the heart of absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. Do not center on yourself. Be humble, not full of pride. Let us each have the attitude that we are here to learn from everyone around us. Everyone is equal in the eyes of God. In front of the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind, all sons and daughters are equally in the

middle of the process of growth. Please keep that in mind.(20121225,Cheon Jeong Gung)

The seven billion children of our Heavenly Parent

37 How do we create a world with God as its center, one world under God? It is through the perfection of our ideal blessed families, centered on true love. We cannot stop. All we can do is to march forward continuously, with our purpose to realize the settlement of Cheon Il Guk on earth. Thus, the perfection of blessed families, the creation of ideal families, depends on whether you fulfill your responsibility.(20120917,Cheongshim Peace World Center)

38 In the Old Testament Age, God was called Jehovah. In the New Testament Age, God was called Heavenly Father. Foundation Day is the day God's dream comes true. So now He should be called by a different name. When we pray, we need to address Him as our Heavenly Parent. It sounds good in English and has a good meaning in Korean. God is the Heavenly Parent. Whenever we pray, the first word that comes out should be Heavenly Parent and then beloved True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind.We have to do this. Also, I am changing the name of the Unification Church to the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification. (20130107,Cheon Jeong Gung)

39 The hope we share with our Heavenly Parent is that there will not be a single person on the earth who does not know about our Heavenly Parent. It is our responsibility to make this happen. We have to merit the titles of filial child and patriot by making a life-and-death determination and marching forward with utmost effort.(20130210,Cheon Jeong Gung)

40 We are sinners in the eyes of Heaven. In light of the grace we have received from Heaven, we have not been able to fulfill our responsibility. Is there anyone who can stand up and proudly say he or she has completed everything? Now, for the first time in history, we are ushering in Foundation Day, a day of blessing that has never been seen before and will never be seen again. Do you intend to receive this blessing without having done anything for it, or will you receive it based on your qualification as a son or daughter? Once again, we need to think about True Father, who has departed this earth before us, and we need to repent. We need to forgive one another. We need to give greater honor to our Heavenly Parent, who has been suffering behind the scenes throughout the providence of restoration. We are unworthy to stand before True Parents, who have given everything unsparingly, and who desire that each of us become a proud citizen of Cheon Il Guk. We are woefully

unprepared. What do you have to do? You need to take the lowest position and receive the coming Foundation Day with a repentant heart, as you ask Heaven to take pity on you.(20130120,Cheongshim Peace World Center)

41 As blessed families in all parts of the world prepare to welcome Foundation Day, they should ensure in this period of time that they have nothing to be ashamed of before Heaven. I have opened all the doors through Foundation Day. I have opened the doors wide for anyone who resolves to be filial, loyal and faithful, and to put his or her beliefs into action. We must practice absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience until our last moment on earth, centered on True Parents. If we make such a resolution and carry it out, we will not need to pay indemnity in the future. We need to prepare for the era of Cheon Il Guk that is free from indemnity. That will come when we fulfill our responsibility.(20130120,Cheongshim Peace World Center)

42 I sincerely ask everyone here to remain loyal, devoted and enthusiastic. On this foundation, we will give birth to the citizens of Cheon Il Guk and nurture them as we expand throughout our nation. But it is not only for this nation. Until we give rebirth to the seven billion people of the world, we will move forward, devoting ourselves completely with life-or-death commitment. We have to offer this nation to Heaven. Before anything else happens, North and South Korea should re-unite. In this context, are you aware of the important role of women? We need to go beyond the work of a daughter, and take on the mother's mission. We should give birth to and raise children. True Father built a big house and gave it to us. We should organize it, arrange it carefully and furnish it well. That is our responsibility. (201301 10,Cheon Jeong Gung)

43 I hope and pray that your heartfelt devotion will bring glory to heaven and joy to the earth, and that you will all become recognized and beloved citizens of Cheon Il Guk in the eternal era of Cheon Il Guk. Let us once again resolve to do our best to accelerate our work, the work of guiding the seven billion people of the world to become citizens under our Heavenly Parent. Only if you have achieved this will you be free when you pass on into the next world, and will you live in a world that is free from accusation. If you are unable to fulfill your responsibility on earth, accusation will follow you to the eternal world. In that event, you will have trouble breathing in the spirit world, where breathing takes place through your heart of love. You need to fulfill your responsibility while you still have your physical body on the earth, so that you can stand free before True Parents in the eternal world and be authentically proud of yourself. (20130120,Cheongshim Peace World Center)

BOOK 13 PEACE MESSAGES

Chapter 1. The Ideal Family in Cheon Il Guk

Section 1. The Essence of the Universe and the True Lineage 1371

Section 2. Gods Model Ideal Family 1378

Section 3: Absolute Sex and the Cross-Cultural Marriage Blessing 1382

Chapter 2. True Owners of the Founding of Cheon Il Guk

Section 1. The Spirit World and the Heavenly Kingdom 1388

Section 2. The Life of the Citizens of Cheon Il Guk 1394

Section 3. The Three Great Subject Partners Principle from the Providential Viewpoint 1402

Chapter 3. True Parents and the Era of Cheon Il Guk

Section 1. True Parents' Life and Accomplishments 1407

Section 2. God's Providential View of History 1418

Section 3. The Providence of the Cheon Il Guk Era 1425

Chapter 4. The Settlement of the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind

Section 1. The Three Stages of Life 1437

Section 2. One Family under God 1441

Section 3. Proclamation of the Era of the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind 1445

BOOK 13 PEACE MESSAGES

CHAPTER 1 The Ideal Family in Cheon Il Guk

Section 1. The Essence of the Universe and the True Lineage

1 I invite you to enter into a transcendent state and prayerfully ask God, "What is the center of the universe?" The answer you hear will undoubtedly be, "the parent-child relationship." Nothing is more important or more treasured than the relationship between parent and child. This is because it defines the fundamental relationship between the Creator God and human beings.

The parent-child relationship is the core of the universe

2 Then, of what does the relationship between parent and child consist? It is a relationship of three things: love, life and lineage. We cannot have true life without

the love of True Parents. In other words, God created human beings as the partners of His absolute true love. This relationship forms an axis of love, linking God the Father with human beings as His sons and daughters. Could anything be of higher or greater value than being a son or daughter of God? If anything were higher, surely human beings would aspire to attain it. But there is nothing higher. Do you think that when the all-knowing and all-powerful God created Adam and Eve, He secretly reserved the highest position for Himself and made Adam and Eve to be only second best? We cannot imagine that God would do that to His children, to His partners who share absolute love with Him.

3 God, our eternal True Parent, invested Himself one hundred percent in the creation of human beings and endowed us with the right to have status equal to His, to participate as equals in His work, to live with Him, and to inherit from Him. God bestowed upon human beings all of His attributes. Though God is the Absolute Being, He cannot be happy alone. Adjectives such as “good” and “happy” cannot apply to any being that lives in isolation. They apply only where there is a dynamic mutual relationship. Imagine a professional singer who finds herself on an uninhabited island. She may sing at the top of her voice, but will it bring her happiness if there is no one to listen? In the same way, even God absolutely needs a partner with whom to share love in order to be happy. Then how shall we, who are created to return joy to Him, live as God’s partners? In other words, how shall we live in order to be the children whom God can call His sons and daughters, who can stand in a position equal to His, share His work, and inherit all that is His?

4 We should substantiate the ideal that God envisioned at the beginning of His act of creation. God acted upon the principle of living for the sake of others. In other words, He acted for the sake of those whom He created as His longed-for partners in true love. The practice of true love formed the core of His initial creative act. Therefore, to become God’s children, our first responsibility is to emulate Him. We need to embody true love by living as a devoted child, then a patriot, a saint, and finally a divine son or daughter of God. At that stage, we need to experience the innermost emotions of God’s heart, and resolve the grief that He has experienced for tens of thousands of years since the Fall of Adam and Eve.

5 God is almighty. It was not due to any shortcoming or lack of ability on His part that He has been imprisoned in great pain and has endured immense suffering behind the scenes of history. Rather, there are provisions in the Principle of Restoration, which He has not been free to disclose, that called Him to wait with forbearance until Adam and Eve’s positions, lost at their Fall, were recovered through the appearance of the perfected second Adam. Although God is all-powerful, He cannot ignore the eternal laws and principles that He Himself established. Do you know what has pained God’s heart the most, causing Him the greatest grief since the Fall of Adam and Eve? It was the loss of His lineage. With that, He lost His right of ownership. God lost this lineage which is more valuable

than life itself. Without His lineage, the seed of true life and true love was unable to germinate.

The importance of lineage

6 Lineage is more important than life and more important than love. Life and love come together to create lineage. We cannot establish lineage if either life or love is missing. Among love, life and lineage, which are the three qualities that define the parent-child relationship, lineage is the fruit. God's lineage contains the seed of true love and the body of true life. Hence, for us to become the ideal people God envisioned, people of ideal character, and to create ideal families, we first need to link to His lineage. Only when we are linked to God's lineage is it possible to create God's homeland, the ideal nation, and establish the kingdom of the peaceful, ideal world. That world will be created through ideal relationships, and by upholding the standard of absolute sex.

7 Please inscribe the importance of lineage in your hearts. I cannot emphasize this enough. Without lineage, neither life nor love can endure. Your tradition will endure only through your lineage. Lineage is the bridge allowing the parents' spirit to carry on through subsequent generations. In other words, lineage is the first and final condition necessary for parents to harvest the fruits of their love, their life and their joy. We need to know this with certainty. Yet this lineage, more precious than life, was lost. The fruits of true life and true love never matured. Everyone on earth became fruits of Satan, lacking any relationship with Heaven. God intended for the seeds He planted in the springtime of the Garden of Eden to grow into a bountiful crop that He could harvest in the autumn. The ideal of God's creation was to raise Adam and Eve, His son and daughter, to the point where they would blossom with true love, true life and true lineage. God's desire in creating human beings was to harvest the owners of eternal love, eternal life, and eternal lineage, and His kingdom of the peaceful, ideal world.

8 The most valuable and highest of all relationships is the relationship between parent and child. This is the only relationship that can perpetuate the lineage of God. You have to understand clearly that there is no way other than the passing of the blood lineage from parent to child. Tragically, it was false love, false life and false lineage that infested the earth. God's love, life and lineage fell into the hands of the adulterer Satan, the enemy of love. Heaven and earth were transformed into hell. The world became a wretched place, in which God's presence was completely obscured. Yet humanity to this day lives in ignorance of this.

9 People are deluded into believing that the lineage of the enemy is the lifeline upon which the world depends. This is the sad truth about humanity being descended from the Fall. That is why we refer to this world as hell on earth. God views humanity's tragic situation with a heart full of pain. After creating Adam and

Eve in the garden of Eden, God intended to bless them in marriage through the Holy Blessing and bequeath to them all of Heaven's rights of ownership. God wanted Adam and Eve to inherit the ownership of the entire universe.

10 The right to God's lineage, His ownership, and the right of the eldest son came under Satan's control because of the Fall. God can be compared with a father who labors and sweats throughout his life to accumulate assets for his children, only to have a thief steal everything in the night. No one is aware of the grief-stricken heart of God, who lost His children when Satan took away His lineage, and who lost His nation and the entire world when Satan took away His ownership. There is only one way to recover this lineage and ownership. This is the path to win the natural subjugation of Satan, that is, to have Satan surrender voluntarily. What is the secret to achieving this? It can only be accomplished by the power of true love, when we love our enemies more than we love our own children.

11 Has there ever been a time when God could welcome with joy the True Father and True Mother of humankind and live His life with them in happiness for one day, one month, one year, ten years, or His entire lifetime? The answer is no; God has not experienced such joy even for one hour. And has anyone been able to comfort God in His pain? No, because no one has known the reason for the unbridgeable gap that has separated God from humankind for tens of thousands of years. No one has known why God and humanity are in such a tragic situation.

The coming of the True Parents

12 Without exception, human beings are born through an evil lineage as the children of Satan. Ladies and gentlemen, please think deeply about the world around us. Isn't every moment and every step we take in our daily lives a fierce inner struggle between good and evil?

13 The conflict between Cain and Abel within Adam's family became the source of war and conflict throughout human history. We are in conflict on many levels, beginning with the war between mind and body within each individual and extending to wars between nations and even to the global conflict between materialism and theism. Extreme selfish individualism threatens our lives even today. We wish young people would be the hope of humanity, holding the promise for the future, but drugs and free sex enslave them. The advanced countries seem to believe that material goods are all that matter. They recognize only their own interests while ignoring the misery of tens of thousands who die of starvation every day.

14 Who can untie this ancient knot of Cain and Abel? It has been entangled for thousands of years and grows ever tighter. Do you think the United Nations can do it? The United Nations at its founding proclaimed a movement for world peace and

for sixty years has dedicated itself to this task; yet world peace remains far distant. Peace among nations can never come when those entrusted with the task have not resolved the Cain-Abel relationship between their own minds and bodies. Therefore, the time has come to launch the Abel- type sovereignty for the peaceful world, the ideal kingdom that will set its course according to God's Will.

15 God longed with all His heart that someone would appear and resolve these tragedies, but no such person or nation appeared on earth. God waited and waited, looking for anyone who would take on the role of the True Parent. If someone had come forward, I am certain that God would have appeared in his dreams, carried the sun and moon' to him, showering him with the lightning of joy and thunder of ecstasy from the heavens. In that light, the fact that I, the Reverend Sun Myung Moon, live in the same era as you, breathing the same air as you, is the greatest of all miracles. For the first time in human history, after restoring the lost position of Adam, the owner of true love, someone has received the seal of the True Parent of humankind.

Relationships destined under heavenly law

16 As we make our way in the world, many connections and relationships inevitably influence our lives. Most of these connections result from the choices we make and the circumstances in which we find ourselves. We can change or sever these relationships through our own effort, as we like. We acquire such relationships, forging them under human law, and can change or sever them by our own effort when we choose. On the other hand, heavenly relationships, which God bequeaths to us at the moment of our birth, lie outside the realm of choice. These fundamental and inescapable relationships are based on connections of blood. Even though you may dislike your parents or siblings, for example, you cannot change them by choice or vote them out of office. This is because they are connected to you through ties of blood. Once you are born into a family with the surname Kim, you live forever in the lineage of the Kim family.

17 Why can't humanity escape from the snare of sin? It is because people are born of the false lineage of Satan. Yet that inheritance is not an original blood connection that Heaven bestows in accordance with the providential will and purpose. It is not based upon the Principle. Rather, it is an acquired connection that resulted from a violation of the Principle. It was brought about by human error. Although we lost our parents through the Fall and became orphans, our fundamental relationship endowed by Heaven remains intact. God is our Parent and we are His children. As a result of the Fall we became ignorant, as if in a vegetative state, unable to recognize our own Parent even though He has always been within and beside us. Therefore, all people, regardless of any of their other qualities, belong to the fallen lineage, and all people without exception have to be born again and change their lineage.

This is the only way we can be restored into the lineage that God originally intended for us.

The restoration of true lineage

18 Our bondage to the lineage of Satan has caused so much suffering throughout history. Humanity has to boldly step forward to sever that tie and be engrafted onto the root of the lineage of the True Parents. Why should we foolishly continue to live and die as wild olive trees? A wild olive tree, even if it lives a thousand years, will only continue producing the seeds of more wild olive trees. Where can we find the path to escape this vicious cycle? It is through the Holy Blessing. The Blessing ceremony offers the grace of being engrafted onto the true olive tree, the True Parents, who bring God's true lineage to humankind. It is necessary because you cannot change your seed without changing your lineage. The Holy Blessing is received in three stages: rebirth, resurrection and eternal life.

19 A cross-cultural marriage is the best way to receive the Holy Blessing, raise an ideal family, and produce the pure seed that is without sin. This contributes to the enormous task of transcending the barriers of race, culture, nationality, ethnicity and religion and creating one human family. Skin color makes no difference to God; He does not recognize national borders. God does not stand behind the barriers of religion and culture. They are nothing more than tricks of the devil, who has used them to rule over humanity as a false parent for tens of thousands of years.

20 Imagine two enemy families who have cursed each other throughout their lives, people who would never dream of living together. What would happen if these families joined together through a cross-cultural holy marriage Blessing? The lineage of vengeance would disappear, and there would be only the lineage of true love. If a son from one family and a daughter from the other became husband and wife, loved each other and built a happy home, would the parents in these two families curse their own grandchildren? If that son were to love this beautiful daughter of a hated enemy, and she, as the daughter-in-law, were to give birth to Heaven's grandchildren, perfectly pure and good, his parents would smile with pleasure. In time the two lineages once soaked with enmity would be transformed. What method other than cross-cultural marriage will empower whites and blacks, Jews and Muslims, Orientals and Westerners, and people of all races to live as one human family? The family sets the pattern for living together in harmony. For this fundamental reason, you should receive the Holy Blessing from the True Parents and establish an ideal family, which is Heaven's tradition; even if it means risking your very life.

21 Humanity is traveling down a dead end street. The only way to survive is to practice my teaching, the peace philosophy of true love, true life and true lineage. Now that we have entered the Era after the Coming of Heaven, your good ancestors

are active and heavenly hosts are sweeping down upon the earth. Soon the countries and peoples that appear strong and mighty will have to change course and shift in this direction.

Heaven's special envoys

22 I believe you have learned many things through this message from God. You represent Heaven, and humanity, which has lost its way and drifts aimlessly, needs your help now more than ever. Please take this opportunity to make a new determination to become Heaven's envoys, prepared to uphold Heaven's commands.

23 What did I say we lost by the Fall of Adam and Eve, who were created as God's children? First, we lost the lineage given to us by God. Lineage is the most special among all the honors parents bequeath to their children. Through the Fall, Adam and Eve inherited the false lineage of Satan and descended to the status of his children. We must understand with certainty that we today, without exception, are descendants of the Fall and have inherited the lineage of Satan. When God created Adam and Eve, He invested His entire being, one hundred percent. He created them based on the standard of absolute love, absolute faith and absolute obedience. He gave them His lineage as the seed for their love and life. Likewise, from this moment on, God is re-creating you as new people. You stand in a position different from before. The path is open wide for you to change your lineage through the Holy Wine Ceremony that the True Parents have instituted.

24 Second, we lost siblings' love when, in the family of Adam, the older brother Cain killed his younger brother Abel. God's original family structure was full of blessings, including love and harmony among siblings. The Fall degraded the sibling relationship to a rivalry filled with envy and resentment. To solve this problem in the lineage, I am leading humanity worldwide to join in cross-cultural marriages. These marriages restore the original family structure, when those who are Abel, relatively closer to Heaven's side, take on an initiating role in the position of the elder brother.

25 Please know that the ideal, peaceful world, which God envisioned at the time of the Creation and desired when He created humankind, is now being built right before your eyes. If this is not a miracle, then what is? All over the world, the couples blessed in cross-cultural marriages are putting down roots of the true love of Heaven. The new heavenly lineage is bearing fruit. The day draws near when this beautiful earth will become the original Garden of Eden, where we will enjoy everlasting peace and happiness and where, for countless generations, our descendants will shout "Hallelujah for Cheon Il Guk!"

Section 2. God's Model Ideal Family

1 God created Adam and Eve as the first ancestors of humankind. He invested His whole being in raising them as His son and daughter, and they were connected to Him through love, life and lineage. The parent-child relationship is the highest and most important of all relationships; it is the only way through which His lineage can be bequeathed to last forever. However, this parent-child relationship, more precious than life itself, was severed through the Fall of Adam and Eve. As God's own flesh and blood, and as His eternal, only begotten Son and Daughter, Adam and Eve formed a blood relationship with His enemy Satan and became Satan's children instead. Thus God's heart has been crushed and wounded with grief throughout history. This still remains the most mortifying and harrowing anguish, which no one in history could know, much less resolve.

2 Adam and Eve frustrated God's ideal of creation to establish a true family through them in that first generation, a family through which He could pass on His lineage eternally. The only way to relieve God's sorrow is to restore and establish a true family unrelated to the lineage of Satan. Herein lay the reason we all need to establish true families, which are the essence of His ideal of creation.

God's purpose in creating Adam and Eve

3 Genesis 1:27 of the Old Testament tells us, "So God created man in His own image; male and female He created them." From observing God's creation as expressed in this passage, we can conclude that God is a being who comprises the essence of both man and woman. God could not enjoy a solitary life; therefore, He created the universe as His object partner. That is, He created all things in the universe in the position of object partners in image, and in the midst of this environment He created human beings as His object partners in substance. Adam and Eve were the beings that represented God's male and female aspects respectively. There was a reason God created human beings as one man and one woman.

4 First, God, though He is the subject being with dual characteristics in harmony, is incorporeal and needs to assume a physical form through which He can relate with the world of substance. It cannot be only the form of a man-or of a woman. Embodied within both Adam and Eve, He intended to communicate and work freely in relation to the entire universe, the world of substance. This is all because the incorporeal God, without a physical body, meets certain limits in dealing with the corporeal world of substance. Therefore, Adam and Eve should have attended God in their hearts, perfected themselves and become one with Him. Had they then married, had children and created a family, they would have become the external and horizontal True Parents in substance, while God would have been the internal and vertical True Parent in substance. If only this had come to pass, Adam and Eve would have resembled God, both in their inner nature and outer form. If Adam and Eve, as a perfect resemblance of God, had become the True Parents of humankind,

all people would have perceived the true reality of God expressed through them in daily life.

5 Second, God created Adam and Eve for the perfection of love. He intended that they reach perfection and become the embodiments of love by uniting in the flesh. On that basis He would have come, dwelt with them, and become the Parent of true love for all humanity. Adam and Eve, standing in the position of the parents of substance in the image of God, would have had their own children, establishing an ideal family and an ideal world. If this had come to pass, human beings would have linked the spirit world and the earthly world. We can conclude that God created us with the intent that we would bring these two worlds together.

6 By coming to dwell in Adam and Eve through true love, God could become the True Parent, humanity's Parent in substance. Moreover, when the time came for them to end their lives on earth and pass into the spirit world, even in that world He could take on the spirit bodies of Adam and Eve and manifest as the True Parent through their forms. However, due to the Fall, God has not seen that ideal fulfilled.

7 God does not need money, knowledge or power. Since He is the absolute, almighty being, He does not need such things. Modern science is accomplishing spectacular advances, but these are merely part of the process of discovering new facts and truths about God's creation. Human thought and science represent our effort to fathom how the vast expanse of this universe operates in accordance with laws expressing an underlying order. We find that God is the absolute scientist.

God's ideal of creation

8 What would have been the ideal that God hoped to achieve through the creation of human beings? It was to fulfill the four-position foundation. The four-position foundation signifies Adam and Eve in a state of complete union with God, such that it is impossible for them to separate from God's love. In other words, it refers to the foundation of a family with God as its center, in which the husband and wife have achieved complete oneness not only with each other but also with God, and when they have given birth to ideal children. When the family four-position foundation is completed, that family fulfills the ideal of creation desired by God.

9 Generally speaking, a family consists of husband and wife, and parents and children. With God's love at the center of that family, the husband represents heaven and the wife represents earth. Although they are two separate beings, when husband and wife have become one on the horizontal plane, their union symbolizes the unity of heaven and earth. Simply put, when husband and wife become one in God's love, the way to unity in the universe opens up.

10 God created the world to receive joy. Since even the Absolute Being, God, could not feel joy while alone, He needed a partner with whom He could share the giving and receiving of love. This is because joy cannot be experienced all alone, but only through a partner. To put it another way, God created this world in order to feel joy from seeing humankind and all things of the creation become one through His love, forming a harmonious and peaceful environment of love. Human beings thus are absolutely necessary for the perfection of God's ideal of love. From this, we can understand that an absolute partner creates absolute value. Thus human beings were meant to form true conjugal relationships centered upon God's love, and to establish families, tribes, peoples, nations and a world of true love. God created this world so that He could participate directly in this process and feel joy through it.

11 God as the Father and humankind as His children were to form a vertical axis; this was the purpose for the creation of human beings. If this axis had been connected, that is, if they had established a relationship that united humanity and God as one through true love, that relationship would have been an absolutely inseparable one, which no force in the universe could break apart. How could anyone who has tasted the original love of God ever be separated from it? With the coming of spring, honeybees wake from their long slumber with a taste for the fresh nectar of the blooming flowers. Try pulling the abdomen of one such honeybee while it is feasting on that nectar, lost to all else. You will see that it cannot tear away from the nectar, even if its abdomen is pulled off. How about you? Once you really get to know the taste of God's true love, you won't go far from it before you come back and cling to it once again. The power of the vertical true love that connects us to Him is greater than the power of life.

A family of three generations living in harmony

12 The reason we miss the family we have left behind is because that is where love abides. It is the home of the love of mother and father, the love of elder brothers and sisters and younger siblings, and the love of one's spouse, children and close neighbors. It is a place where love and affection define all relationships. This makes you want to cherish each and every member of your family. Any wanderer who has left his family behind yearns to return to them as a renewed person. He longs for the mountains, streams and trees of his hometown, to embrace his relatives and countrymen, and to sing joyful songs. However, this has not been the situation of humankind, descended from the Fall. Banished from their original heavenly hometown, human beings are destined to wander in isolation and defeat. They are unable ever to go back, no matter how much they miss their family, for they have lost the root of the heart of their original homeland. With the ushering in of the era of a new heaven and a new earth, we have pulled human beings out of the quicksand that was sucking them down and opened the way for them to return to their hometown, which they had never forgotten, and to meet with their true family. Could there ever be a day of greater blessing for humanity? The time of

heavenly power and fortune has come, making it possible for us to re-establish the original family that was lost through the Fall of Adam and Eve.

13 When seeking the lost original family, you need to set out from the position of the perfected Adam, the position of the perfected Jesus, and the position representing the perfected Second Coming of the Lord. God will dwell in that family. It will have three generations, grandparents, parents and children, living in harmony. Parents and children will serve and attend the grandparents, who represent the family's ancestors, its historical root.

14 The God-centered family is the model pattern for a life of living for the sake of others. The model ideal family is one in which parents and children love and respect each other, husband and wife are grounded in mutual trust and love, and brothers and sisters trust and rely on each other, and all live together as one. This is a true family wherein the stem of true love emerges from the root of true love and bears the fruit of true love. Such families contain the living roots of history and the roots of the kingdom of heaven and this is where the kingdom of heaven on earth takes root. They are the soil in which the everlasting kingship is firmly planted. The grandparents, parents, and children represent the roots of the past, present and future, respectively. The root of the past represents the spirit world; the root of the present is the world today; and the root of the future represents the grandsons and granddaughters as princes and princesses. Through such a family we erect the palace of peace, representing the harmony of the two worlds, the spirit world and the physical world. In this manner, the three generations of grandparents, parents and grandchildren should live together as one family, serving the eternal God. You should know that to seek and establish such a family of Cheon Il Guk, God's kingdom, is the responsibility of the tribal messiahs, the mission of the ambassadors for peace, and the desire of God.

15 To realize a society of universal values, interdependence and mutual prosperity and unite humanity as one great family, we need to break down the walls in our hearts and eliminate the barriers between nations. This begins from each family. Therefore we should bear in mind that to create true families is our providential calling, and that to do so, advances the establishment of the universal peace kingdom on earth.

16 You should create families that God will miss and yearn to return to. You should raise families to which He can come freely as a Parent visiting His children. This is what it means to live in service to God. In such families, God becomes the vertical subject of our conscience. Following that vertical subject, your mind stands as your own vertical subject and brings your mind and body into unity. That is where parental love, conjugal love, children's love and siblings' love—the Four Great Realms of Heart—are perfected. Only in such a family can the upper and lower, front and back, left and right connect as one, and spherical motion ensue. This

brings forth God's everlasting, model ideal families, model ideal nations, and peace kingdom.

17 If only the world were filled with such true families! The heavenly way and heavenly law would govern that world, with no need for lawyers, prosecutors or even judges. Ponder this for a moment. Who would be most fully aware of your good and bad deeds? It would be your grandparents, your parents, your spouse and your children. Is there anything that cannot be resolved within the family? When parents and children, husband and wife, and elder and younger siblings set an example of living for the sake of one another, how could anything be unforgivable? What reason would they have to commit crimes? A world governed by the heavenly way and the heavenly law is a natural world, a world in which truth and pure reason are unobstructed. This is the world of high noon settlement, where the realization of absolute values banishes all shadows. Therefore we should bear in mind our providential calling to create true families, advancing the establishment of the universal peace kingdom on earth.

Section 3: Absolute Sex and the Cross-Cultural Marriage Blessing

1 What do you think is God's ultimate purpose for creating human beings? Simply put, it is to experience joy through relating with ideal families perfected by true love. What does an ideal family look like? When God first created human beings, He made Adam representing all men and Eve representing all women, with the intention that they become owners of true love. Then how would they have become the model of true love? Since the parent-child relationship with God is the model of absolute peace, by attending God as their Parent they would have lived as one ideal family with God, experiencing eternal joy.

2 God created Adam and Eve as the first ancestors of humankind, to form the model family and establish the ideal of peace. He committed Himself completely to raising them as His son and daughter. They were to encapsulate the entire cosmos, mediate between the spiritual and physical worlds, be lords of creation and join with Him through true love, true life and true lineage.

3 If Adam and Eve had become God's prince and princess, they would have had a parent-child relationship with God and inherited everything from God. When such children become a perfected couple, centered on true love, and their family lives in attendance to God, that family will exemplify peace and the ideal. When a man and a woman, each as half of the whole, become one body as a perfected object partner to God, they represent the completion of God's ideal love. To put it another way, God intends for us to reach perfection and attain limitless value, centered on true love. This perfection of true love completes the creation of the ideal world of eternal love.

Absolute sex

4 To establish a model ideal family of peace, Adam and Eve had a necessary condition to set. God, the Absolute Being, created us as His children in order to instill in us absolute values based on an absolute standard. We have to follow the heavenly way based on that absolute standard. To follow our destined life course we have to attend God, the Absolute Being, as our Parent. In other words, in order to perfect ourselves in resemblance to God, and obtain the stature of people of character who can be called sons and daughters of the Absolute Being, we have to follow the path based on the absolute standard God has determined. This standard is what I mean by absolute sex.

5 The first stage is to maintain absolute sexual purity prior to getting married. After we are born, we go through a process of growth. We pass through infancy and childhood in a safe and secure environment embraced in our parents' love and protection. We then enter adolescence, a dynamic period in which we form more complex relationships with those around us and with all things of creation. Thus we start on the path to perfection, internally through the maturing of our character, and externally by reaching adulthood. Yet we absolutely must fulfill one requirement, which is to maintain our purity, adhering to the model of absolute sex. God gave us this responsibility as the means to fulfill the ideal of creation. This heavenly path is the way to perfect conjugal love.

6 What was the one and only commandment God gave to Adam and Eve, the first ancestors? It was the commandment and blessing to maintain an absolute standard of sexual purity until God's approval of their marriage. In the Bible, God told Adam and Eve that they would surely die if they ate of the fruit of the tree of knowledge of good and evil. This signifies that had they observed Heaven's commandment and refrained from eating they would have perfected their characters and, as co-creators, stood with God, the Creator, as His equals. Furthermore, God would have bequeathed to them dominion over the creation. They would have become the lords of the universe enjoying eternal and ideal happiness. God told them to preserve their purity so that He could bless them in marriage as His true children. They would thus have become true husband and wife, then true parents through giving birth to true children. Everything was to have been done within the realm of absolute sex, based on God's Principle of Creation. The profound truth within God's commandment has been hidden throughout history: we must inherit and live by absolute sex, the model intrinsic to God's ideal of creation. This is so that we might perfect our individuality as God's children and establish ourselves as lords of creation.

7 The second stage is the perfection of love between husband and wife. More precious than life is the heavenly law of absolute fidelity. Husband and wife are eternal partners, given to each other by Heaven. Through having children they

become co-creators of true love, true life and true lineage, and the origin of that which is absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal. It is a heavenly principle that one person alone can never give birth to a child, even in a thousand years. If two people had preserved their purity before marriage, and were bound together in marriage by God, how could they ever go astray and deviate from the way of Heaven? People are different from animals; if they understand God's purpose in creating them as His children, they will realize that deviating from heavenly law constitutes unimaginable betrayal and defiance of the Creator. It is a path of self-destruction on which they dig their own graves. Resulting from the Fall, this path leads us outside the realm of the ideal of creation.

8 The absoluteness of conjugal love is the greatest blessing that Heaven has bestowed on humanity. Without adherence to the principle of absolute sex, the path to the perfection of one's character and spiritual maturity is inaccessible. Furthermore, unless Heaven implants the principles of absolute sex within a true family of perfected individuals, it is impossible for God to appear with dignity as the God of substance and personality. In order for God, the Absolute Being, to have direct dominion over our lives and to live with us in joy, we who were created as His object partners and children must create perfect families based on the standards of absolute sex. Only in a family that is rooted in the principles of absolute sex is it possible to create ideal relationships in accordance with the original ideal. This affects the three generations represented by grandparents, parents, children and grandchildren. Please understand clearly that God's eternal life and our eternal lives depend on this foundation.

9 If Adam and Eve had achieved individual perfection of character by upholding the principles of absolute sex in accordance with God's Will, and come together as husband and wife through His Blessing, they would have attained oneness with Him. God would have dwelt within their union. Their children also would have been linked to this holy order of love, enjoying a direct relationship with God as their Parent. In other words, the marriage of the perfected Adam and Eve, based on their absolute purity, would have been God's own marriage. God is forever God, but at the same time Adam and Eve were to have become His incarnation. They would have become God's body. God would have settled inside their minds and hearts to become the True Parent of humankind in both the spiritual and physical worlds, based on their conjugal love.

Cross-cultural Blessed marriage

10 Why do we need to marry? It is in order to claim an owner's position. A man or woman alone can only be one half of the whole. That is how God created us. For that reason, He has interchanged the ownership of the reproductive organs, the love organs. The owner of the wife's sexual organ is her husband, and the owner of the husband's is his wife. Only when each is rooted in true love for the sake of the

other are they in the position of the owner of their spouse. In other words, people only become complete individuals, when they have secured an owner's position, and this happens through marriage.

11 For what reason are we restoring the position of the owner of the reproductive organ? It is in order to possess God's love. He is the subject of three great loves. As the owner of the universe, He is the Owner, Teacher and Parent of true love. This is the true meaning of the "three great subject partners principle." The life of a true, model family creates these teachings and truths, and its expansion will transform the society, nation, the world and even the universe into the peace kingdom of the model, ideal family.

12 Now you are in a different position. The path is now open wide for you to change your lineage through the Holy Wine Ceremony with the permission of the True Parents of humankind. The cross-cultural marriage Blessing is the best way to restore people to the position of children of God through the conversion of lineage. It is the revolutionary work of creating the heavenly lineage on a whole new level, transcending barriers of race, culture, nationality and religion. It is an act that severs all relationships of enmity. It is the sacred rite of the change of lineage, through which all can be re-created through the True Parents, the King and Queen of Peace, the substantial manifestations of God, who enable Him to exercise His providence in the present world.

13 Ladies and gentlemen, lineage is more important than life and more precious than love. Life and love come together to create lineage. Lineage cannot be established if either is missing. Therefore, among the three—love, life and lineage—lineage is the fruit. God's lineage contains the seed of true love and the body of true life.

14 Ladies and gentlemen, please place your hand over your heart and quietly ponder this question. Is there any other way to deliver this world from the war and conflict we see around us? Is there a way that would be more certain than by cross-cultural marriage among enemy clans or, going even a step further, among enemy nations, to create a global family in which there is no hatred? Therefore you will need to teach clearly that the cross-cultural marriage Blessing is the ultimate means to establish a peaceful, ideal world here on earth, so that your families and clans can all join the holy ranks of those blessed through the cross-cultural marriage.

A life of true love

15 To resemble God, the original being of true love, we have to become people of true love, owners of true love who practice true love. This is the way each of us can become true parents.

16 Ladies and gentlemen, you should now devote yourselves to pursuing only one thing: a life of true love. In your life, you have to love God more than Adam and Eve did, and more than Jesus did. By putting true love into practice, you bring your mind and body into perfect harmony and establish the realm of true love. In other words, you have to perfect a true family consisting of three generations: grandparents, parents and children living together in true love. Only those who live such a life of true love are in heaven.

17 What kind of love is true love? The essence of the absolute God's true love is not found in having others serve you. Rather, it is when you serve and live for the sake of others. It is love that you give, forget that you have given, and continue to give endlessly. It is love that you find pleasure in giving. It is the love of a mother nursing her baby at her breast. It is the love expressed when a child happily serves his or her parents out of filial piety. It is the love God expressed in creating humankind; an absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal love, given unconditionally.

18 True love is the source of peace and happiness, and it sustains a spiritual order based on the aim of serving the common good. True love is the source and the center of this universe. It has the power to make the one who wields it the master of the universe. True love is the root and symbol of God's Will and power. If you are bound together in true love, you will never grow tired of your partner. True love is the love that not only the entire universe, but even God desires to follow. The value of true love is in its power, which is strong enough to eradicate national, racial and religious boundaries created by the descendants of the Fall. That is why the absolute condition to enter the kingdom of heaven is a life that has been lived for the sake of others, that is, a life of true love.

19 God's true love is absolute, unique, immutable and eternal. Whoever practices true love will live with God, share His happiness, and enjoy the right to participate as an equal in His work and the right to inherit from Him. As such, a life lived for the sake of others, which brings forth a new peaceful family based on God's ideal model of peace, is the absolute prerequisite for entering the kingdom of heaven.

CHAPTER 2 True Owners of the Founding of Cheon Il Guk

Section 1. The Spirit World and the Heavenly Kingdom

1 God, the Creator of all things in the universe, is the True Parent of all humanity. He is not a parent in the parochial sense, existing only for a certain religion or race, or the population of a certain region. You may call Him by any name, be it Jehovah, Allah or any other. What is important is that He certainly exists, lives as the True Parent of all people, and sustains the great work of creation. In accordance with the heavenly Principle that He set up at the beginning of time, He governs everything in the universe and has carried out His providence throughout history.

The spirit world exists in actuality

2 Each person has a mind and body, and a spirit self that is more elevated than the mind. God resides in the world in which we live with our physical body and also in the spirit world, where our spirits are destined to go. We go there as a complete person if we are one with God in true love. Such a perfected person might be a small individual, but he or she would represent all of history and all potential future relationships. So this person can be said to possess infinite value.

3 Once you are aware that you have such universal value, you realize that your original mind should guide your life. This is because your conscience knows and perceives not only every action you have performed but also every thought you have entertained. Before your own teachers, parents or even God are aware of these things, your conscience knows. Hence, if you were to live in absolute obedience to the commands of your conscience, which is your eternal teacher, you would be absolutely guaranteed to have eternal life. Such is the way of God's creation.

4 Looking at the structure of a human being, we can see that God created us with dual characteristics. He created our physical body as a microcosm of the corporeal, tangible world and our spirit body as a microcosm of the incorporeal world. Accordingly, a human being is intended to live for one hundred years or so in the physical world and, once the physical body ceases functioning, to pass on naturally and automatically into the incorporeal spirit world. In this way, though the eyes in our physical body cannot perceive the spirit world, life there is the automatic and inevitable extension of life on earth. God created the spirit world as humanity's original, eternal homeland.

5 The spirit world exists in actuality. It is not a world that has been fantasized or imagined into existence. We do not have the right of choice concerning its existence. It is not a world we can go to if we please or refuse to go to if we would rather not. Just as God is eternal and unchanging, the spirit world He created is also eternal and unchanging. We live in the physical world in our physical body and form all sorts of relationships within this world. Similarly, in the spirit world we are destined to continue living in our spirit body, forming and maintaining relationships with all phenomena of the spirit world.

The relationship between the spirit body and physical body

6 In the relationship between the spirit and the body of a human being, the spirit is the more important of the two. The physical body lasts for about one hundred years before it ceases to function, but the spirit lasts eternally, transcending time and space. Isn't even a person who does well in the physical world bound to die? Because this is so, before you pass on to the next world you should achieve

harmony between your physical body and spirit body, by living your earthly life in such a way that you meet the standards of both the physical and spiritual worlds. In other words, you have been given the responsibility to perfect your spirit within your physical body on the basis of your finite life in the tangible, physical world. This does not mean that the perfection of your spirit self happens automatically. Only on the basis of complete unity between your mind and body during your earthly life, by expressing true love through action, can your spirit self fully mature.

7 In order for fruit to ripen and be ready for storage in autumn, it must first pass through a growing process in the spring and summer and be provided with the nutrients supplied by nature and the tender loving care of its owner. Fruit grown in an orchard by a lazy and ignorant farmer will be afflicted with disease and unprotected from foul weather. Eventually it will fall from the tree before it is ripe, or become worm- infested. Though it is still fruit, it will be different from other fruit since it will be unfit for sale in a market.

8 Fruit that has matured fully on the tree will automatically go into the owner's storehouse. Similarly, only when the spirit of a person has reached perfection during life in the physical world, which can be likened to the tree, can it automatically enter the kingdom of heaven in the incorporeal spirit world. In other words, a person will enter the kingdom of God in heaven automatically only when he or she has qualified for and enjoyed the kingdom of heaven on earth by living as a fully mature person in the physical body.

9 During your life on earth, your spirit self records your every action and movement without exception, keeping the law of heaven in mind as a standard. Accordingly, you will enter the spirit world in the form of your spirit self, which has recorded your life on earth with total accuracy. Your spirit will show plainly whether you have led a wholesome life ripening in goodness or a wormy, rotten life of sinfulness. What this means is that God will not judge you; you will be your own judge. If you are aware of this astonishing rule of Heaven, will you spend your life on earth in selfishness and immorality, succumbing to the temptations of Satan in pursuit of nothing but pleasure? You will not; rather you will abstain from injuring and scarring your spirit body, even at the risk of your earthly life. Please bear this truth in mind: your thoughts, words and deeds in each moment determine whether you are bound for heaven or hell.

10 The spirit does not lead a separate life or express true love through actions of its own. Your spirit self can grow, mature and be finally perfected only within your physical body, through an earthly lifetime of true love that brings your mind and body into a smooth relationship. Nonetheless, it is undeniable that your outer self and inner self are in a relationship of constant conflict and struggle. How much longer will you allow this fighting to continue? Ten years? One hundred years? In contrast to this, it is also undeniable that all other forms of existence in the

universe function in a proper order. This indicates that God did not create human beings in this state of antagonistic disorder. You need to know that as a human being you have the duty and responsibility to dispel all temptations directed at your outer self—your physical body—and achieve victory in life by following the way of your inner self—your conscience—essentially to perfect your life according to the standard of absolute sex. Heavenly fortune will be with those who lead their life in such a way. They will attain the perfection of their spirit self.

What is the nature of heaven?

11 Ladies and gentlemen, what is the nature of heaven and hell? Who can enter heaven? If it really exists, where is it? Would it be outside the galaxy, on the other side of the universe? Or is it but a product of our imagination? At one time or another, everyone ponders this question.

12 What do you think is the nature of heaven? Heaven is a world overflowing with God's true love, with true love as its axis. It is a world where true love is the external form as well as the internal content of the entire environment. It is a world where true love is present from the beginning to the end of our life. It is a world filled with people who were born through true love, who lived in the embrace of true love, and who, following the track of true love, finally passed on into that next world, the spirit world. Consequently, antagonism and envy are not to be found in that world, for it is a natural world where each person lives for the sake of others. It is not a world governed by money, honor or power. It is a world wherein the success of each person represents the success of the whole, the desire of each person represents the desire of the whole, and the joy of each person represents the joy of the whole.

13 Heaven is a world filled with the air of true love, where all breathe true love. It is a world where life pulsates with love everywhere, all the time. It is a world where everyone is connected to the true God through blood ties. It is a place where the whole world and all people are linked together in an inseparable relationship, like the cells in your body. It is a world that is governed only by true love, the love that is God's essence. God exists for true love.

The results of the Fall

14 Look at the world in which we are currently living. The people of the world are caught in the trap of extreme selfishness, clamoring for material gain. They have lost all sense of value, and the desire for self-gratification drags them into the depths of degradation. The world is filled with alcoholics. As if drug addiction and free sex were not enough, there are even those who commit incest, an act not even seen in the animal world, and still strut around with their heads held high. This world has become one wherein beasts with human faces roam freely, even after

violating women— grandmothers, mothers, wives and daughters. The swapping of spouses among couples is rampant. Such circumstances represent without a doubt the pinnacle of the destruction of morality and the last of fallen acts. This world has become hell on earth, in which we cannot even dream of the perfected world embodying the ideal that God envisioned at the creation.

15 We have come to know that humanity's problems are rooted in the Fall of Adam and Eve, our ancestors. Adam and Eve, who were at the perfection stage of the growth period, had a sexual relationship before their rightful time, due to Satan's temptation. The Fall was an illicit sexual union of a man and woman. This is why, for over thousands of years, people continue to commit these indecent acts, perfidious acts that drive a sharp spike into the heart of God. They have been unable to escape from the realm of the fallen lineage.

16 A man or woman alone can only be one half of the whole. That is how God created us. For that reason, He has interchanged the ownership of the reproductive organs, the love organs. The owner of the wife's reproductive organ is the husband, and the owner of the husband's is the wife. Only when each is rooted in true love for the sake of the other do they merit the position of the owner of their spouse. In other words, irrespective of who they are, human beings can only become complete individuals, rather than one half, when they have exchanged the positions of ownership through marriage.

17 The human reproductive organ is sacred. It is the palace of life where the seed of life is sown, the palace of love where the flower of love blooms, and the palace of lineage where the lineage bears fruit. The reproductive organ is absolute. Through it, absolute lineage, absolute love and absolute life are brought forth, along with absolute harmony, unity, liberation and tranquility.

18 Why are we trying to restore the ownership of the reproductive organ? It is in order to possess God's love. He is the subject of three great loves. As the Owner of the universe, He is the true Teacher, true Owner and true loving Parent. These form the basis for the three great subject partners principle. All these teachings and truths are realized through the life of a true, model ideal family. Then, through its expansion, the society, nation, world and even the universe are transformed into the peace kingdom of the model, ideal family.

19 Because of the Fall the first Adam lost the original true lineage, and consequently failed to form the original couple and the original family. Adam, who should have become the true teacher, true parent and true king, inherited the lineage of Satan. He degraded himself to the position of a false teacher, false parent and false king.

20 The purpose for Jesus' coming to earth was simply and only to reverse the effects of the Fall. If Jesus, who came as the second Adam, had not lost his life on the cross, he would have restored the original unfallen lineage of God. As the Savior of humankind, he would have made up for the failure of the first Adam, established the true family and founded the original homeland for all people on earth. This would have been the kingdom embodying the ideal of peace, the kingdom of heaven on earth. Tragically, the disciples, the religious leaders and the leaders of the nation of Israel failed to recognize the Christ. Their disbelief led Jesus to a wretched and tragic end on the cross. Has anyone really known the grieving heart of Jesus, whose passing from the earth was so untimely, and who left no descendants? Though two thousand years of Christian history have passed, has any Christian understood the reality of Jesus' sorrowful circumstances? Jesus departed this world suddenly, leaving little other than a promise to return. His physical body has long been buried and turned to dust, but the Will that God worked to fulfill through him continues. It is finally in the process of completion at this time, at the conclusion of history, through the True Parents, who have received the seal of Heaven and appeared on earth.

Heaven begins from the family

21 The sinful era of restoration through indemnity, the Era before the Coming of Heaven, has passed. The era of heavenly law is upon us, the Era after the Coming of Heaven. You are now living in an era of grace in which—after receiving the marriage Blessing from True Parents, completing the conversion of lineage, and leading a life that is vertically aligned with Heaven, such that no shadow is cast—you can enter the kingdom of heaven automatically. That is to say, if you establish a true family on earth and lead a heavenly life, your life will be connected to the kingdom of God in heaven when you die, and you will enjoy eternal life. Therefore, within the framework of the family, you should serve God as your Father, revering Him in the highest position. Every one of you should become God's child, perfecting the parent-child relationship and sharing your life with Him, connected by blood. In short, you should form a partnership of true love with God and live together with Him.

22 Who would be the greatest grandfather of the universe? The first human ancestors, Adam and Eve, called God "Father." Should their children call Him Grandfather? No, they too should call Him Father. Why is this so? From the viewpoint of God, the vertical center, all object partners of love are equal. His object partners, who are produced through the horizontal expansion and multiplication of His love, assume equal value regardless of who they are, transcending time and space. Simply put, in perfected love, everyone's value is equal.

23 The kingdom of heaven has to be achieved on earth first. What this means is that the kingdom of heaven in the corporeal world comes before its establishment in the incorporeal world. Therefore, heaven is not a world found in outer space on the other side of the galaxy, nor is it the product of imagination existing only in the human brain. It refers to a substantial kingdom, heaven on earth, which can be created only when you lead a life of true love. When you leave the physical world on that foundation, you automatically enter the kingdom of heaven in the spirit world. This means that only when you have led a heavenly life on earth can you lead such a life in heaven.

24 Only the fruit that has ripened fully on the tree is classified as produce of the best quality. You should not be like a worm-infested fruit on a tree, and therefore bound for hell. You should not forget for a moment that, through your life on earth, you yourself determine whether you go to heaven or to hell.

Section 2. The Life of the Citizens of Cheon Il Guk

1 If there were a dream common to all people regardless of gender, age, time or place, what would it be? Through all ages, human beings have yearned and waited for the realization of an ideal of world peace. However, we have never achieved the everlasting peace that brings joy to Heaven. This fact remains as our historical sorrow and anguish. What went wrong? What brought about humanity's descent into ignorance of the ideal that God had for His creation? You can try for ten thousand years, but you will never reach perfection if you remain in ignorance.

The hope of humanity

2 How did human beings, created as the children of the omnipotent and omnipresent God, descend into such a state of ignorance? The first ancestors, Adam and Eve, followed the false parent, Satan, along the path of the Fall. Indeed, this was the first tragedy and the most mortifying and lamentable shame of human history. God cannot forsake humankind. Within His grand ideal of creation, we were created to be His children, His absolute counterparts in true love. Thus He has endured the long years of history with a heart full of bitter pain, grief and anguish. God is the eternal True Parent of humanity, who has had to persevere through virtual imprisonment, in the shadows of history. No one has known this reality.

3 God's creation is indeed profound. Everything He prepared was to create an environment for the perfection and happiness of human beings, whom He created as His children and partners in love. Consider a flower; it is one of the masterpieces of God's creation. Hidden within a flower—even a nameless wildflower blooming in a field—we can easily discover the Creator's Will and purpose. To see a flower alive and growing to perfection is truly to witness a miracle.

4 Flowers display beautiful colors and the harmony of yin and yang. Even human beings, the lords of creation, cannot fully replicate their beauty. Flowers continuously give off fragrances and display dazzling colors that captivate the bees and butterflies. Flowers can absorb the powerful, brilliant rays of the sun that people cannot bear to gaze upon. They diffuse this light into natural rays of harmony and peace and utilize it to create and preserve life. Flowers also do not neglect their duty to provide nectar to the bees and butterflies that busily fly to and fro and help them reproduce.

5 The miracle of God's creation is infinite, transcending and defying any human description. Even a picture drawn by the greatest artist in the world cannot compare to a cluster of living wildflowers. Even in making a single insignificant flower, God created it to harmonize with and contribute to the prosperity of the whole of creation. Given that this is so, how great is the stature of human beings, whom God created as His children, His eternal partners of love and His heirs?

6 Each and every one of the millions of different kinds of flowers in full bloom stands in dignity as an individual embodiment of truth, according to the Principle of Creation. Each brings harmony to Mother Nature and abides by the laws of interdependence and mutual prosperity. Likewise, each and every human being has Heavens blessing and grace to seek harmony, peace, freedom and happiness, and to pursue eternal life. Heaven has bestowed on each person a unique life and characteristics. That is to say, every human being is born with rights and privileges as an individual embodiment of truth. Every person, regardless of age, sex, rank or status, has the right and privilege to follow a destined course of life that is uniquely his or her own and that reflects his or her individual nature.

The value of human beings as individual embodiments of truth

7 Ladies and gentlemen, can you find anyone who resembles you one hundred percent? Think about it. Is there anyone else with the same individual qualities as you? Would the lives of identical twins be the same, though they were born on the same day, even if they died at the same time? No person can take another's individuality. One man being the world's most handsome man does not at all diminish the unique embodiment of truth within the world's least handsome man. As the king of wisdom, God continually creates eternal, individual embodiments of truth through the process of origin-division- union action, in accordance with the Principle of Creation.

8 In this we discover the standard of absolute value that makes a human being human. As with the interdependent and harmonious relationship between flowers and butterflies, people are created to live for one another and share true love. This means that we establish our standard of absolute value only within a life of true

love, through which the relationship between subject and object partners blossoms in harmony.

9 Flowers and butterflies relate to each other as subject and object partners. They depend on one another and prosper through their give-and-receive action. In the same way, the Principle of Creation defines and predicts the course of relationships between humanity and nature, between people, and between God and people. Mother Nature is the combined body of all the individual embodiments of truth in creation, harmoniously bound together. Mother Nature stands as an absolute object partner to us, her subject partners. Her ordained role is to enable us to realize our absolute value.

10 People establish families of three generations and live within that basic framework. That is where they learn and familiarize themselves with the vertical and horizontal relationships of above and below, left and right, and front and back. This means that each individual seeks a life of harmony and love through give-and-receive action within subject and object partner relationships. These relationships enable each family member to attain his or her absolute value as an individual embodiment of truth.

11 What about the relationship between God and human beings? As the Creator, God's nature is absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal. However, according to the Principle of Creation, God stands in the subject position when He engages in reciprocal relationships with His creation. That is because, although we think of God as the Absolute Being, He cannot feel joy outside of give-and-receive relationships with His object partners.

12 Had the first human ancestors, Adam and Eve, not fallen but instead had perfected themselves as individual embodiments of truth according to the Principle of Creation, people today would manifest absolute value. We would serve God above as our Lord with absolute obedience, and we would relate with the creation, the natural world, as our object partner, rejoicing in God's eternal kingdom of peace. We would live as the citizens of the eternal kingdom of heaven, not only on earth but also in the spirit world.

The path of the people of Cheon Il Guk

13 Citizens of the kingdom of heaven, this is a precious and blessed day of victory and glory. Now, as the King of Peace in Heaven and Earth, I shall declare, on this thirteenth day of June in the sixth year of Cheon Il Guk, the fundamental duties and mission that every Cheon Il Guk citizen should understand and practice as they walk the way of Heaven.

14 First, as God is the vertical True Parent and you are true children of God, you will establish the realm of three generations in your family, perfect the Four Great Realms of Heart, and attend God on the vertical axis for eternity. Further, you will inscribe in your heart the responsibility to attend the King of Peace in Heaven and Earth, who is the horizontal True Parent, and to live with absolute obedience on the horizontal axis for eternity as a citizen of Cheon Il Guk. You will make the practice of true love, which is living for the sake of others, the standard for your life. You will establish a true family and raise true children who are sinless and pure, thus protecting God's lineage and bequeathing it intact from generation to generation.

15 Second, no matter what the situation, you will live with your mind and body united as one. In my case as well, from the day I first determined to follow Heaven's path, I resolved to keep this as my motto: "Before you seek to master the universe, you must first gain mastery over yourself." God has given you your conscience as your guide in accomplishing this objective. Your conscience knows everything about you. It has complete knowledge of every action and step you take; it even knows your thoughts. Your conscience knows everything about you before your teacher or pastor knows. It knows before your parents know. It knows them even better than God knows. So place your conscience in God's position over your life, and go the way of absolute obedience, of "high noon settlement" whereby your life casts no shadows. Then it is certain that your mind and body will resonate and perfect a harmonious unity.

16 Third, citizens of Cheon Il Guk, we have completed the unification of the spirit world. The issue now is the 6.5 billion people living on earth today. They struggle in agony in the midst of sin and suffering, yet they are your brothers and sisters. Your third mission is to educate them and bring them home as people of Cheon Il Guk. You should educate everyone to understand that all human beings without exception are descended from the Fall and that they have to change their blood lineage by receiving the holy marriage Blessing from the True Parents. You have to continue engrafting people onto the true olive tree, by having them participate in the grace of cross-cultural marriage, until the day all humankind, numbering in the billions of souls, is restored to God's lineage.

17 Fourth, you are created to spend ten months in the womb, perhaps one hundred years on earth breathing air, and then all eternity in the spirit world. You should understand that, just as proper preparation in the womb is required for a healthy life after birth, you have to devote your earthly life to proper preparation for a healthy life in spirit world. Never forget that no matter what you are doing, at all times and places, your ancestors in the spirit world are with you. Be ever mindful to live in harmony with the spirit world. Communicate in prayer with the heavenly world, with sincerity and dedication, so that you may perfect your spirit self while you are living on the earth.

18 Fifth, your talents and abilities are required for the management and governance of Cheon Il Guk. Therefore, you must cut away and cast off your mask of selfish individualism. It is but a remnant of the Era before the Coming of Heaven. In order to belong to Heaven, you must participate in the Ceremony of Returning Ownership, offering God everything you own and then receiving it back from Him. In addition, all citizens of Cheon Il Guk will provide funds for the well-being and peace of humanity, not by taxation but by voluntary contributions. They will practice the model of offering the first three-tenths of their income for public purposes. This cannot be an imposed tax; it has to be a gift that citizens offer willingly to Heaven with joyful hearts.

19 Sixth, beloved citizens of Cheon Il Guk, in the Era after the Coming of Heaven it is possible to recover the ideal world of creation that was lost as a result of the Fall. God created all things in the universe, our natural environment, which are absolutely necessary for human prosperity. People are meant to harmonize with nature; we as the subject partners of love and nature as the object partner, thriving under our management and perfected in beauty by our creativity. Let us not destroy nature and pollute the environment. As citizens of Cheon Il Guk, please have the wisdom to protect and love nature. Return to nature and enjoy a life of liberation and complete inner freedom. To love nature is to love God and humanity. When human life resonates with nature, human character can blossom in perfection. The flowers of a true culture of heart, a true artistic world, will bloom. It will be the Garden of Eden, the original ideal where God, people, and all creation live in complete harmony and express their original nature. If you practice such true love in your daily life, how can God do anything but bestow great blessings upon you? You will live for all eternity in blessing and happiness.

20 Seventh, God and True Parents have opened the Era after the Coming of Heaven, a time of dramatic change. As registered citizens of Cheon Il Guk, you have the mission to make this era blossom and bear fruit in blessing and glory. Therefore please become Heaven's emissaries, fulfilling dual missions as the peace kingdom police force and peace kingdom corps. Serve humanity under the banner of the Universal Peace Federation, which is working to establish the Abel-type United Nations. Worthy compatriots, if not you, then who will nurture and protect the blessed families and this blessed planet Earth that God has given us? Please become true princes and princesses who live in attendance to God as your vertical True Parent, the Peace King of the multitudes. Let us build the everlasting peace kingdom by attending the King of Peace in heaven and on earth, and fulfill the way of a true filial child, a patriot, a saint, and a member of the family of God's sons and daughters.

God has been searching for the True Parents

21 Citizens of God's kingdom of Cheon Il Guk who love peace as True Parents do! This is truly a precious and joyful day. Let us celebrate without reserve this historic and providential day and sing praises to God, our eternal True Parent, for His glory and nobility. On this solemn occasion, hundreds of billions of those living in the spirit world have descended and are here with us to congratulate and celebrate this blessed day.

22 This is the day for which God has yearned ever since He created the universe. For the tens of thousands of years, since the day Adam and Eve, whom He created as His children, stained the heavenly lineage and concealed themselves in the dark, God has waited while enduring inexpressible pain and sorrow. He has waited eagerly for the day He could ascend the throne as the King of kings, embrace His lost children and the creation, and live in joy for all eternity in the sacred reign of peace in the peace kingdom.

23 God is and has always been the King of kings, even before He initiated the creation. The heavenly way, however, dictates that after completing all aspects of the creation, God has to manifest substantially as the King of kings who reigns over the world of physical phenomena, the sphere of the object partners of God's love. That is why, motivated by true love, God sought and found the True Parents of the substantial, physical world, who were to become His representatives and heirs.

24 Although we are overwhelmed by the grace of having received Heaven's seal, my wife and I truly feel joy at being able to stand here today as God's direct representatives and hold this coronation of the King of kings, and our golden wedding anniversary. At the same time, I am deeply sorry before Heaven. I have reached my ninetieth year of life, yet I have been unable to fully restore to God the 6.5 billion people of the world.

The new era of heavenly law

25 Citizens of Cheon Il Guk who truly love God! Time is running out. Heaven will no longer wait for us. God is working with His authority as the King of kings through His representatives, the earthly True Parents, to establish a new heavenly law and restore the world. It is time to accelerate this true love revolution. Therefore, on this solemn occasion, I will proclaim to all of heaven and earth an outline of the new heavenly law, by which humankind and all the creation will regain their rightful position to govern.

26 First, this era, which is taking us gradually toward the year 3000, will be the era of revolutionary change after the coming of heaven. In this new era, God will no longer be captive to the principles of restoration through indemnity. The King of kings will rule the spiritual and physical worlds with His rightful authority. It will be the era of providential protection, during which the earth will return to its original

state, with the realm of the Pacific Rim serving as a central axis. People will no longer evade the influence of the era of the new way of Heaven and of the new heavenly law. Therefore, you need to lead a transparent life, with every action as clear as crystal.

27 Second, we have to accomplish a revolution in education, for all people to value absolute sex, that is, the constitution of Heaven, with God as their vertical, absolute axis. This is the only way to pass on the true, good lineage to all humankind. That is the path to achieving God's ideal of true families. From now on, sexual purity, purity of lineage and purity of love will be the essence of the philosophy of education for the true human race.

28 Third, we will place the Peace King's anointed representatives (boonbong-wang), ambassadors for peace, and the Parent UN at the forefront of the efforts to eliminate Satan's barriers and fortresses. Multiple layers of these barricades bind the earth, and their elimination will reinstate harmony and peace among political parties, religions, races, cultures and nations. The existing United Nations, in the position of the Cain-type UN, and the Abel-type UN should become one and ascend to a higher dimension, becoming the True Parent UN. This will be a True Peace World UN. This central union will resolve evils confronting Satan's world, including war, disease and hunger. This is surely the direction all people must go. They will have no doubts because God in heaven and True Parents will be with them. We will end individualistic and collective self-centeredness. Conscience and natural reason will govern the world, and satanic power will no longer influence elections.

29 Fourth, the cross-cultural, international marriage Blessing is the optimal method of establishing the peace kingdom by building true families that will give rebirth to the lineage of the fallen human race. In the end, reconciliation and peace all come about through lineage. When blacks and whites, Eastern peoples and Western peoples, Buddhists, Christians, Jews and Muslims intermarry and carry on the blessed marriage tradition that True Parents have established, this naturally will form the realm of one family that establishes God's homeland and hometown. An ideal heavenly kingdom based on the ideal of one family under God will appear. As we beat our swords into plowshares, a new world of peace will open up before us.

30 Fifth, God created us as His counterparts in love, and He prepared the natural world as a gift for us, His children. God would not leave His children in a barren desert devoid of any relief. That is why people have the duty to preserve and love the natural world as God does. I am saying that you should develop your human nature to the point that you experience resonance even with a cluster of wild flowers, as if you were sharing a heartfelt conversation with them. This is as it was originally meant to be. That is a shortcut to restoring humanity to God.

31 Ladies and gentlemen chosen by Heaven! You have truly received a heavenly blessing. You are participating in the ceremony to launch the providential undertakings governed by the King of kings. You are witnessing with your own eyes the whirlwind of this historic transition point. You received an invitation to attend the coronation, golden anniversary and celebration of the autobiography of the True Parent, the King of kings on the horizontal level, who will govern all of creation as the physical representative of God, the King of kings on the vertical axis. Will you ever again in your lifetime have the chance to attend such a historic and significant occasion? Your ancestors and your descendants, numbering in the billions throughout the cosmos, will dance, cheer, and live in joy and delight over this time, shaking the very axis of the earth. I pray that you will open your mind and engrave this extraordinary and historical moment on your soul. When else during your life will you be able to witness a day of blessing and glory such as today? I hope you can heed the words of Heaven that I have shared with you today and let them be a guide for your life as you advance.

32 Humankind is now entering a new providential era wherein a new heavenly way and new heavenly law will govern the earth directly. It is the new providential era of the realm of the fourth original Adam, where one can enter the newly established kingdom of heaven by inheriting God's new standard of heart based on His original nature. Through True Parents' providential coronation, golden wedding anniversary, publication celebration and the commemoration of the fifty-fifth anniversary of the founding of the Holy Spirit Association in this new era, I pray that you may form new and wise families as citizens in God's kingdom, Cheon Il Guk. I pray that you will distinguish clearly between Cain and Abel and integrate them into a new Abel realm of goodness, to restore the realm of the Old, New and Completed Testament ages and the three generations of my family. I am asking you to form and live as new true families based on original human nature. Then the new true grandparents, true parents, and true grandchildren can enter, hand in hand, into the new kingdom of heaven. Please engrave in your hearts this gathering's meaning, the establishment of the truly peaceful world of the True Parent UN. This we celebrate today.

Section 3. The Three Great Subject Partners Principle from the Providential Viewpoint

1 Ladies and gentlemen, please look at the world today. Among the current leaders of the world, can we find anyone who is genuinely concerned with the future of humankind and who is making the sacrifices, beyond religion and nationality, necessary to bring harmony and peace to humanity? Human beings have become like children who have lost their parents, misdirected youths who do not recognize their teacher, and sheep who have lost their shepherd. Human beings are spiritually blind, unable to see what lies even one inch ahead.

2 There are now some two hundred nations in the world, and aren't many of these nations engaged in fierce conflict, directly or indirectly? Aren't they all intent on promoting their own interests? Even the United Nations, founded with the noble ideal of protecting the welfare and peace of humankind, has met its limitations. Watching helplessly without a solution to the global crises of war, starvation and disease, isn't the United Nations an organization that exists more in name than in substance? Thinking of ourselves as lords of creation, we human beings have forged our own history. Although humanity has endured terrible massacres and suffered natural disasters, the human race has survived and continues to multiply to this day. We continue to seek a bright and happy world, albeit with only a vague concept of what that might be. Why is it that the human race is unable still to escape from the mire of sin and disease?

The three great subject partners principle

3 On the occasion of the opening ceremony of the Peace Palace and coronation of the King and Queen of Peace on June 13, 2006, I proclaimed the basic duties and mission, based on the heavenly way, that all citizens of the kingdom of God, Cheon Il Guk, should understand and fulfill. I did so in order to fulfill God's calling, to bring humankind to live as one global family in a sacred reign of peace under God, by overcoming the tragic reality human beings are facing. Today I would like to address you on the theme, "The Three Great Subject Partners Principle from the Viewpoint of God's Providence." This message is Heaven's blessing. It will serve as an important teaching to guide humanity's future. Please open your heart and listen to these words so that you may be secure in your eternal life.

4 God endowed human beings with the three great subject partners principle at the time of creation. The first great subject partner is a true parent, and you are to become one. God created us as His children. We were to become true children by perfecting our individual character after going through a period of spiritual growth, autonomously, based on the Principle God established. We were then to become a true couple, have our own children and attain the position of true parents. In this way we were to perfect ourselves by practicing and embodying the true love that God bestowed upon us when He created us. In reality, however, moral values in our world today are deteriorating rapidly. Society has rejected the moral laws governing the relationship between parents and children. We are discarding marital fidelity as an old-fashioned idea of previous generations. Familial love among siblings has become rare, buried in a swamp of selfish individualism. For these reasons, our most important task is to establish true families based on true love. This means we need to build families in which three generations live together in true love, with true parents at the center.

5 The second great subject partner is a true teacher, and you are to become one. Although the world is full of evil influences, one way or another, a person enters

relationships in life where he or she is in a position either to teach or to learn. Our parents are our first teachers. They should be our first and greatest teachers. As true teachers, the parents' primary responsibility is to raise true children. Children who are brought up by true parents through a true and good family education progress easily through their school education, which is the next stage. School provides an institutionalized education, but even within that framework teachers have the responsibility to guide and educate their students with the heart of true parents, to become true children. By this I mean that they need to conduct horizontal academic education on the foundation of vertical character education. A teacher's first qualification is thus to possess the heart of a true parent.

6 The third great subject partner is a true owner, and you are to become one. God, the Creator of the universe, is the True Owner and Lord of all creation. God's creation is the fruit of His complete investment, carried out based on absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. From His example we can gain the wisdom that enables us to become true owner and lords. The secret is to invest true love on the basis of that absolute standard. The prerequisite for this is to possess the heart of a true parent.

The organic interrelationship within the three great subject partners principle

7 The three great subject partners principle expresses an organic interrelationship that is mutual, absolute and indivisible. This is because a true parent, true teacher and true owner can stand in the position of either a subject partner or an object partner in relation to the other two. In other words, once you attain the position of a true parent, the qualities of a true teacher and true owner emerge. Once you reach the position of a true teacher, the qualities of true parent and true owner naturally develop. Similarly, when you attain the position of a true owner, you will immediately become a true parent and true teacher as well. From the outset, human beings were born to inherit and embody God's complete three great subject partners principle. Therefore, as we become people of character, perfecting this principle, we become like God Himself. We need a heart that is like God's to love other people and all creation just as He does, on the basis of His absolute standard. In other words, we are to attain a state of loving oneness with God, wherein we can love the creation. At that point, the true parent, true teacher and true owner converge.

8 The world operates through the harmony of various systems and relationships. In this complex and diverse world, the principle of becoming a true owner naturally applies to the relationships between people, but it also applies to the relationship between human beings and the creation. The question is, upon what basis can one be called a true owner? Someone who lives for others, caring for and sacrificing to serve others—in other words, a person who practices true love in daily life—can be called a true owner. Only someone who cares for the creation with true love,

protecting and nurturing it, can become a true owner of all creation. In light of this, it is not your position or worldly status that makes you a true owner. It is determined by your character and capacity to love. The president of a company who loves and cares for all his employees with a parental heart is the true owner of that company. A nation's president can be the true owner of that nation only if he or she loves its citizens as a parent and shares the sorrows and joys of life with them.

Our conscience is our true parent, true teacher and true owner

9 Ladies and gentlemen, God's creation is truly mysterious and profound. God created us as His children, to be the lords of creation. To this end, He gave each of us the highest and greatest gift: a conscience. We receive this special gift of a conscience as a compass to guide us through life in this earthly world. We can say that our lifespan may be one hundred years. Regardless of who we are, from the moment of our birth to the moment we die we cannot escape the influence of our conscience. The most elevated function of the conscience is its role as our true parent, true teacher and true owner. Our conscience acts as a true parent, true teacher and true owner on behalf of God, guiding our life and educating us from the moment of birth. Our conscience functions as a guide, keeping watch over our every action at every moment. Its awareness of our every word, thought and deed precedes that of our parents, our teachers and even God. God infused into the conscience the function of guiding and supervising life.

10 Before our parents or teachers know, and even before God knows, the conscience knows everything that we do, say and think. It is because God bequeathed to us the conscience with the original function to guide and watch over our lives. However, the conscience, which should be clear as crystal, has been clouded due to the Fall. Amid all manner of sin and spiritual sickness, it now is unable to fulfill its original function fully. Knowing this, please become people who can listen to the voice of your conscience. You should cry out for liberation, for freedom from this evil world that is under Satan's dominion.

11 There is no way for fallen people to restore the original function of the conscience by their own power. This is because they have not established a direct vertical relationship with God. The 6.5 billion people in the world today are all off-center, many living with the illusion that their own way of life is the best. However, until someone achieves a direct relationship with God in accordance with the absolute standard of a ninety-degree-angle, no one will be able to find the path to salvation.

12 Beloved leaders from around the world, there is but one person who holds the keys to free humanity from Satan's bondage and lead them to heaven. He is the first and probably the last in history to hold such a position. That person is the one

standing before you today. I never wished for or sought this position, but God anointed me and placed me in the position of the Savior, Messiah, returning Lord and True Parents of humankind. It is a position that is absolutely free of the influence of Satan's realm. It is indeed I, Rev. Moon, whom God has charged to practice and demonstrate personally a life based on the truth and submission to the conscience. The path of a True Parent, True Teacher and True Owner I am walking will allow the people of the world, who are going 6.5 billion separate ways, to reconnect to God at a ninety-degree angle.

13 Billions of absolute good spirits in the spirit world are testifying in unison to this fact. The founders of the great religions, principally Jesus, as well as great philosophers and thinkers, and even some communist leaders, are shedding tears of gratitude for this amazing truth. The grace of the Blessing from the True Parents can even save the people in the spirit world, and in fact, there is no other way.

14 Ladies and gentlemen, the time has come for humanity to fulfill the heavenly decree of creating one family under God through the international and cross-cultural Blessing. My teachings as the True Parents are here for you to receive now. How can the kingdom of heaven on earth and in heaven be created other than by becoming one family under God? What other way is there to create the ideal world that God envisioned at the time of the creation, the world in which all people are united beyond the barriers of race, culture, religion and nationality, and where war and conflict are no more? Without your being aware of it, the True Parents have proclaimed the opening of the Era after the Coming of Heaven, which will allow all humanity to be liberated. Even God will be liberated and His heart set completely free. The True Parents now are taking this revolutionary truth that we all have to become true parents, true teachers and true owners, to the ends of the earth.

15 Ladies and gentlemen, the fundamental spirit of the 2007 World Culture and Sports Festival is that of fulfilling the sacred task of bringing all people together as one family. Please remember that our mission, as people of religious, cultural and athletic prowess, is to come together as one and bring the era beginning a new universal civilization of peace into fruition. Religious people, in particular, have to become the leaders of this sacred revolution of true love. Rev. Moon has completed in advance all the preparations necessary for this.

16 All you have to do now is trust in and follow the True Parents. With your conscience as your compass, attain the status of a true parent, true teacher and true owner. Manifest true love in your daily life, thus shaping your eternal life in heaven. Heavenly fortune will speed you on your path, and your good ancestors who have received the marriage Blessing will actively assist you in your activities. Have courage, and strive to go forward! I pray that you may attain the true family ideal, based on the three great subject partners principle, so that you can shout

three cheers for the advent of the era of the kingdom of peace under the sacred reign of peace.

CHAPTER 3 True Parents and the Era of Cheon Il Guk

Section 1. True Parents' Life and Accomplishments

1 Ladies and gentlemen, looking back, my life has indeed been like a dream. At the youthful age of sixteen, with nothing but the buoyant spirit and aspirations of youth, I was called by Heaven and began to live for the will of God. This left no room in my heart for any worldly ambitions I may have cherished. It has never been an easy path, but I have followed it for more than eighty years, looking nowhere but straight ahead. This was the life I was destined to lead, with no choice but to shake off the embrace of my beloved parents, brothers and sisters, who clung to me, wanting me to stay with them. They endured great self-sacrifice and walked a thorny path of sorrow and suffering for my sake.

2 Mine has been a journey through a wilderness that no one among the 6.5 billion people living on earth can ever comprehend. Even as I persevered through the hardships of prison life six times, I never let go of the key to the providence. Such has been my life. This was all because I came to know only too well how anguished, aggrieved and full of bitter sorrow was the heart of God as He waited for thousands of years to find us. I realized that if God, who is the origin of billions of people and the Creator of everything in the universe, is not relieved from His sorrow, human life will remain completely without value.

True Parents' life

3 My life for the past eighty-eight years, dedicated to the completion of the mission of True Parents, has been one of sorrow, marked by inexpressible suffering and persecution. As the third Adam, the True Parent, I need to restore through indemnity and complete everything that the first and second Adams came to do. I am responsible to complete not only the mission of the Savior, the Messiah, and the Lord at his Second Coming, but also the missions of the major figures from whom religions have sprung.

4 Bearing similarities to God's creation of the universe, where not even the smallest error is permitted, my life has constituted the great work of re-creating humanity. It has been a lonely course that I cannot discuss fully with anyone. Life took me down thorny paths through the wilderness that I had to follow while utterly alone. Not even God could acknowledge me. Frequently hovering in a state between life and death, even vomiting blood, I had to rise again like a phoenix to remain true to my promise to God.

5 Though innocent, I had to endure imprisonment six times: for working in the underground independence movement in my early days while studying in Japan; for propagating the will of God in Pyongyang, which was under communist control immediately after Korea's independence from colonial rule; during the Syngman Rhee administration after Korea had been reborn as a free nation; and even in the United States, which proudly presents itself to the world as a model of democracy. No one on earth can understand my eventful life, which I lived for the sake of perfecting the model of absoluteness in conjugal love. It has been a life of misery. By biting my tongue, I have endured for the sake of our God, who deserves pity, and for the sake of the salvation of the world's fallen people, who are suffering in the realm of death. Even now, if someone were to look into my heart and speak but one word of sympathy, I would burst into tears; they would flow like a waterfall.

6 Once someone becomes an old man of eighty-eight, he normally looks back on his life and quietly prepares to enter the next world. Yet, my life begins from now. It is not because I am encumbered by attachments to this life. No, it is because God called me to be the True Parent and save people who are suffering in and unable to escape from the fallen realm, and I have yet to fulfill that mission.

7 We have now arrived in the Revolutionary Era after the Coming of Heaven, the time of harvest. This year, I will continue to guide you in carrying out this universal revolution for the restoration of humanity. Please do not hesitate! Let us hold hands and together uphold the heavenly decree in fulfilling our calling and responsibility! How can we avert our eyes from the situation in which tens of thousands of our brothers and sisters are dying helplessly while waiting for salvation?

The True Family's victory through three generations

8 After inaugurating the Universal Peace Federation in New York, on September 12, 2005, my wife, Dr. Hak Ja Han Moon, and I went on to convey our inaugural message through a global tour of 120 nations. On this foundation of True Parents' victory, my wife took the baton and completed a second world tour this spring, during which she held rallies to proclaim a message of peace in 180 nations. It was a tremendous victory in which two generations of the True Family—True Parents and True Children—worked together proclaiming this message of peace. This victory, in which the children of the Cain-type realm and Abel-type realm came together on a universal level and offered themselves as the foundation for True Parents, returned the providential realm of ownership to God.

9 On the basis of this victory, on June 13 of this year, heaven and earth were unified. God and the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind were firmly established in their rightful positions through the Cheon Jeong Gung Entrance Ceremony and Coronation of the King and Queen of Peace in Heaven and on Earth.

These events constituted a glorious victory, unprecedented in history. On this day, God, who had walked the course over countless years in the providence, alone, in bitter sorrow, in tears, behind the scenes of history, was liberated, set completely free, and firmly settled into His position as the King and Master of heaven and earth.

10 The victory of God and True Parents, who have entered the Cheon Jeong Peace Palace, is linked to an outpouring of tremendous grace through which the 6.5 billion people of the world can return to dwell within Heaven's household. On August 31, 2006, the True Parents, True Children and also the True Grandchildren assembled for a third world tour to convey God's Word and the Blessing. I personally launched this tour here in Korea. The three generations of the True Family bestowed the Blessing in forty nations. They have returned on this happy day, victorious after their long journey. This world tour was outstanding in particular because of the active participation of three generations of the True Parents' family.

11 Upon founding the Universal Peace Federation, in order to build one family under God through proclaiming God's Word and administering the marriage Blessing, I completed a world speaking tour with my wife, Dr. Hak Ja Han Moon, our children and our grandchildren. In this way we successfully modeled three generations fulfilling the marriage Blessing ideal within one family. One hundred twenty representatives of Christianity from America, 1,200 other religious leaders and 12,000 ambassadors for peace from across the world traveled simultaneously throughout 190 nations. They represented their own nations by spreading the peace message of the True Parents and sharing the marriage Blessing. These tours helped establish true family values as the universal values of humanity that will expand a new God-centered civilization.

12 These leaders made up a corps of the peace kingdom of heaven and earth, an army restoring a nation a day with the truth and Blessing. The Word and Blessing, proclaimed simultaneously each day in twelve major cities of each nation, brought the greatest joy to all humanity. The mobilization of the three generations of the True Family is an event that will be renowned for eternity. It is something that no saint ever imagined, a miracle that will be praised forevermore as a victorious liberation of Heaven.

13 Today, October 14, 2006 is yet another day of history-shaping victory that I will never forget. It is the anniversary of the day the United Nations forces liberated me and I became a free man after spending two years and eight months in a North Korean labor camp. The communists took over North Korea shortly after the liberation of my country. I had been conveying Heaven's message to the people living under the communists and, as a result, was unjustly imprisoned. October 14, 1950 was a perilous day, and Heaven was compelled to create a miracle. It was on

this day that I, the person with the seal of the True Parent of humankind, was to be publicly executed. There was no way that Heaven could ignore this. I declare this day, which bears such great providential significance, to be a historic day of victory. Through it, as the True Parent of humankind under the protection of God, I offer glory and respect to Heaven and blessings and love to the earth.

14 Please do not forget that our mission is to elevate the Universal Peace Federation, now one year old, to the position of the Abel-type UN. Heaven is instructing us to develop the Universal Peace Federation as a new international peace organization. At the same time, we are to reform the United Nations, which stands as a Cain-type institution, by promoting the establishment within it of a peace council. It would have the same rank as the current UN Security Council, but be free from Satan's realm. This council would be a legislative body consisting of religious leaders from around the globe, under the protection of God. I am saying that we have to establish a peace council that will work not for the interests of nations, as the UN presently does, but for humanity's true welfare and peace, based upon a perspective that goes beyond national interests. The concept of the Universal Peace Federation, which was launched according to God's ideal purpose of creation, could not have emerged from the wisdom of one human being. It is the unsurpassed, supreme blessing Heaven has given humanity as we usher in the new millennium. Thus, it is my hope that the Mongolian People's Federation will recognize and fulfill its duty as a partner of the Universal Peace Federation in achieving these noble goals bestowed by Heaven.

The work True Parents have done

15 I have surmounted and triumphed over a course of inexpressible suffering and tribulation. I have not lived for personal glory or comfort. Even as I walked a thorny path, on the razor's edge between life and death, I held on dearly to Heaven's command to bring salvation to humanity because I had received Heaven's seal and was made fully aware of the objectives of God's Will. Though beaten down many times, I rose up like the phoenix and continued my exhausting work. Now leaders of religion, academia, politics and other fields, both here in America and throughout the world, recognize me as the champion in eight areas of spiritual knowledge and discipline.

16 The first has to do with the knowledge of God. Until now, God has been understood only as an all-knowing and all-powerful being. People envision God sitting on a throne of honor and glory as the absolute Master, having nothing to do with the created world. There is another side to this, however. From the moment I embarked on my journey to fulfill God's providential call, I came to know that the relationship between God and human beings is that of parent and child. I learned that God has been the Parent of pain, sorrow and lamentation ever since He lost His first children, Adam and Eve. Throughout my life, I have been doing my very

best to dissolve God's pain and sorrow and bring liberation and total freedom to His heart. Finally, on January 13, 2001, through the Enthronement Ceremony for God's Kingship, I was able to restore His throne of glory and power and offer it to Him.

17 The second area has to do with the reality of Satan. Throughout history, human beings have not known the identity of the devil, Satan, who caused the Fall and led us into all kinds of evils. For fourteen years, I labored desperately through crushing spiritual battles to discover all the secrets of the spirit world. Finally, I discovered the identity of Satan, the origin of evil. Taking it one step further, I uncovered Satan's strategy and tactics by which he multiplied his power. Satan's strategy was to defile the human lineage through the Fall. After discovering this, I totally committed to restoring God's original lineage. The international cross-cultural marriage Blessing movement, now widely known throughout the world, is the heavenly path developed for this purpose.

18 The third area has to do with understanding the human condition. What is the origin of human beings, how should we live, and where are we meant to go? Why do fallen people's mind and body fight, struggling in continual conflict? What is the meaning of life and death? Does the world after death truly exist? If it does, what does that mean for how we live while on earth? The Principle of Creation that I have discovered provides detailed answers to these questions and others. In addition, I have the ability to look into the hearts of men and women and intuit their destiny. That is why, throughout the world, I have been matching many young people with their spouses-to-be.

19 The fourth area has to do with knowledge and understanding of the spirit world. The spirit world, the world beyond physical death, really exists. All people are bound to go there as an extension of their earthly life. Human life is a continuous stream all the way from one's conception and life in the womb to an eternal life after one's physical death. When their physical lives have ended, those who have received the marriage Blessing, which eradicates the original sin and opens the way to spiritual perfection, receive the Seonghwa Ceremony. This ceremony is not for mourning; rather it is to joyfully bid farewell and congratulate the departed on their path to the heavenly realms, where they will enjoy eternal life. We should understand clearly that the countless saints and sages who lived on earth throughout history are actually alive in the spirit world. Having been reborn as absolute good spirits after receiving the True Parents' marriage Blessing, they are assisting God's providence on the earth. Each moment in our earthly life is recorded in the spirit world, exactly as it takes place. On the day we cross over to the spirit world, we will be judged based on our life's record. That is why all human beings should practice true love, and sacrifice themselves for a greater cause throughout their lives.

20 The fifth area has to do with the knowledge of Jesus. I came to understand the terrible tragedy of the crucifixion. Jesus came as God's Son, the Savior and Messiah, but he was opposed and rejected, even by the people whom God had prepared to receive him. It was God's Will that Jesus, as the second Adam, fulfill the model of a God-centered ideal family and engraft all humanity. Christianity became the foundation of Western civilization through Rome, and then became the nucleus of the Atlantic and Pacific civilizations. It has always stood in the position of the bride to receive the Lord at his Second Coming. Therefore Christians in particular have to comprehend Jesus' heart of sorrow at being driven to the cross, at being unable to fully live out God's Will for him. My teachings clearly explain the truth of Jesus' mission, the salvation through the cross, and the reason for his return.

21 The sixth area is the knowledge of the core contents of the Bible and other scriptures. These are revelations that enable human beings, trapped in ignorance by the Fall of the first human ancestors, to return to God. Scriptures express important teachings in metaphor and symbol. Only the Messiah sent by Heaven can reveal the full meaning of these metaphors and symbols. Hence, Jesus was able to disclose the core content and deep meaning of the Hebrew Scriptures. In the same way, my teachings shed light upon God's message, His providence of salvation revealed everywhere in the Bible. The Bible is a book of revelation that teaches us God's ideal for the creation, of the Fall, and of the path of restoration. The Divine Principle that I discovered provides clear explanations for what the world's scriptures expressed in metaphor and symbol.

22 The seventh area is in the knowledge and understanding of the ultimate purpose of human history. History is not merely a record of coincidental events. Human events have been flowing in a clear direction and with a clear purpose. They comprise the history of the providence for the re-creation of human beings to their original state, through indemnity, a history of restoration for their salvation. Because of this insight into the origin and direction of history, I was able to predict accurately the sudden end of communism and dialectical materialism, which I proclaimed at the 1985 Professors World Peace Academy conference in Geneva, Switzerland, when the Soviet Union was at its peak. Today, I am declaring that it is time for all nations and religions to break down their barriers. Through this, the era of one family under God will arrive and last forever. God is leading history. With the help of heavenly fortune, under the auspices of the Abel UN, we will now make rapid progress toward a world that transcends religion and nationality. It will be God's kingdom on earth, which we call Cheon Il Guk.

23 The eighth area concerns true family values. God's ideal of creation is to build God-centered true families. The goal of His salvation providence is to restore the ideal of the true family, the ideal that Adam could not fulfill in his own family. This is the way to establish the foundation for the kingdom of heaven on earth and in heaven. The marriage Blessing, which is the core of a movement that I have been

leading, is not an ordinary wedding ceremony. It is a sacred ritual through which to eradicate the original sin and engraft human beings with the true lineage of God. True families are the wellspring and foundation of true love, true life and true lineage. The true nation, true world, and true kingdom can be built through true ideal families. Families centered on the True Parents can be the base for the perfection of relationships within the four realms of heart and three kingships, thereby becoming the foundation for the kingdom of heaven.

24 As I have mentioned, I have become well known throughout the world as a champion in each of these eight areas. Yet, for the victory to be won, all humankind must work together with the help of God.

The tradition of our True Parents is for the sake of humanity

25 Ladies and gentlemen, as we begin the twenty-first century, we find ourselves at a truly historic turning point. It is a point of decision, between settling everlasting world peace, or repeating the twentieth century's bleak and oppressive history of war and conflict. The twentieth century was a period of ceaseless struggle, including nations scrambling for colonies, the First and Second World Wars, the Cold War between East and West, and the Korean War, a providential battle to recover God's homeland for which the United Nations Security Council mobilized the forces of sixteen countries.

26 I dedicated my life entirely to bringing about the kingdom of God, the kingdom of the peaceful, ideal world. I have always prayed sincerely that the United Nations, founded in 1945 after the Second World War, would be an institution for peace, and that it would uphold God's will for the realization of eternal world peace. The United Nations has indeed made important contributions to peace. Nevertheless, at its sixtieth anniversary there was a broad consensus, both inside and outside the organization that the UN had yet to discover the way to fulfill its founding purposes. The number of member states approaches two hundred, but the offices of these states do little more than represent and even insist on their own interests. They seem inherently unable to resolve conflicts and achieve peace.

27 On September 12, 2005, I proclaimed throughout heaven and earth the establishment of the Universal Peace Federation (UPF), which will enable God's providence to flourish. It is now possible for the UPF to serve as an Abel-type counterpart to the UN in the Era after the Coming of Heaven. It will renew the Cain-type UN and open the way for millions of ambassadors for peace throughout the world. These individuals have taken up my teachings, the way of the Heavenly Parent, which consist of the principles of true love and the ideal of the true family. Assuredly they will fulfill the heavenly call to create one family under God. •

The central person of the restoration of the homeland

28 On this meaningful occasion, please engrave this message in your hearts. Your family's good ancestors in heaven are already blessed. Numbering in the billions, they have come to the earth today and they are listening to this message with you. This is because they can perfect themselves and advance to the position of true parents, true teachers and true lords and owners only through you, their descendants. Beyond that, they need to restore their original selves by uniting in mind and body with True Parents, the King of all kings. Living the life of absolute obedience to True Parents, they have to mobilize completely for the establishment of heaven on earth and heaven in heaven. Please remember that the physical and spirit worlds are alive and are with you every moment.

29 There is one more request I have for you today. Please immerse yourselves in the content of my peace messages. Reach the point where you know them virtually by heart. Make them the guidelines for your life. These messages of peace summarize my teachings, which can be found in the six hundred volumes of True Parents' speeches. If you manage to do this, heaven and earth, with God in the forefront, will unite and protect you. You then will establish the peaceful ideal world envisioned by God, and live in the joy of eternal liberation and complete freedom.

30 Your families now should fix their place in history by fulfilling the mission of the Abel UN's peace kingdom corps and peace kingdom police force, to advance God's providence in the revolutionary Era after the Coming of Heaven. History will remember you forever, for leading a noble life devoted to the well-being of humanity and world peace. I am now developing globally the peace kingdom corps and the peace kingdom police force, which I founded. Who, if not leaders such as you and your families, can stand in the forefront of these two organizations under the banner of UPF, the Abel UN?

31 What will you do in this desperate providential time of harvest, when we have to complete and perfect the liberation of God's homeland in Korea? Will you be among the foolish who are trapped in the walls of selfish individualism and elitism? In the Era after the Coming of Heaven, will you remain in the Era before the Coming of Heaven and only live for your own sake? Whether you like it or not, Heaven has called you. It will guide you under the shining banner of the Abel UN, an organization proclaimed before heaven and earth and launched on September 23, 2007. Quickly work both to complete the reformation of the existing UN and to fulfill the mission of the Abel UN. Please thereby apply God's ideal of creation to politics, economy, culture and education, based on the realms of God's heart.

32 Agreement has to be unanimous among all nations. The heavenly fortune of the conjoined jubilee years of 2007 and 2008, the seventh and eighth years of Cheon Il Guk of the Universal Peace Federation, will break down the walls and barriers. Please become the owners of the new era of the realms of God's heart by inheriting

the foundation of victory brought by the True Parents of heaven and earth. We surely will build God's fatherland with our own hands. Keep in mind that democracy is an ideology of brotherhood. It is part of the transition to the age of true parents and true families, the era of the civilization of God's heart. So, make a revolutionary leap over the summit of democracy without hesitation.

33 For the Republic of Korea to fulfill its role as the homeland, on the stage that the Abel UN erected with participants from 194 nations, I want you to be active in the forthcoming elections. Participate in the elections of the president, representatives, county heads, mayors and the like, and in the appointment of administrative secretaries. I want you to succeed at the task of bringing the political parties into oneness. Restore your homeland on earth, centering on leaders representing God. Before Heaven, I have proclaimed and launched the Korea-Japan undersea tunnel and Bering Strait tunnel project. You, as owners who have accomplished True Parents' will, and who support the goal of restoring your homeland, have to see these through to completion.

34 Cheon Il Guk and the Abel UN stand as Abel. The United States and the existing UN stand as Cain. These two sides should bind together as one to create equilibrium in heaven and earth. You should become one in heart and body with God, the great King of kings, who is the axis, with the True Parents, the King and Queen of Peace, and with their anointed representatives. Perfect the creation of the original Garden of Eden that knows nothing of the Fall. That will complete the building of our homeland.

The fulfillment of rebirth, resurrection and eternal life

35 Ladies and gentlemen! In truth, God carries out His providence in mysterious ways. Dining the helicopter incident, which no one could have foreseen, Heaven mobilized the spirit world and made sure Satan would not dare harm my wife and me, the True Parents. Even in the eyes of ordinary people this incident was extraordinary, a miracle of miracles. It is being recorded as an amazing wonder, incomparable in history. I publicly declared January 13, 2013 to be the day to fulfill the glorious restoration of the homeland. I am devoting my entire being, day and night, for that purpose. Can Heaven possibly abandon me? As God's representative in the flesh, I have accomplished His will on this earth. With whom can God work to perfect His providence and return humanity to His bosom, if not Rev. Moon? As my wife and I today are able to stand again here before you, thanks to God's tremendous grace, our hearts are bursting with emotion.

36 God called us and anointed us as the True Parents of humanity. Human beings are orphans, born into the fallen lineage without true parents. They have wandered aimlessly for thousands of years. We have received Heaven's great mandate to save all people and bring them back to God. With four years to go in this final leg of our

drive toward the year 2013,¹ proclaimed the combined jubilee years, the seventh and eighth years of God's kingdom of Cheon Il Guk, and issued the order to both the spiritual and physical worlds to advance in all directions. The helicopter incident happening during such a significant time period showed us again, clearly, that Heaven is alive and working for the sake of humanity. Now you must not forget, even for one second, the desperation attached to the time frame in which you are standing. You have to work with me hand in hand to carry on the explosive revolution of true love and true families, through which you will transform humanity into blessed families.

37 Ladies and gentlemen, through the Fall, Adam and Eve yielded their spiritual and physical bodies to Satan. Jesus lost his physical body through the tribulation of the cross, but he blazed the path of spiritual salvation for all humanity by achieving spiritual resurrection through the victory of the forty-day period after the cross. In this context, this helicopter accident has tremendous providential significance. Amid an all-out attack from Satan, True Parents obtained the complete, substantial victory, both spiritually and physically. This restored and safely settled the realm of a three-generation true family, which had been lost in the history of the providence, without shedding a drop of blood.

38 On that unforgettable day, July 19, the day of the helicopter accident, rebirth was completed. On the twentieth day after the accident, August 7 (Chil Pal Jeol; 7.8 Day), resurrection was completed. Now it is the fortieth day since the accident, and we consolidate this victory by proclaiming the Day of the Perfection of Eternal Life. I proclaim the new day of eternal life. On this day we sing praise to eternal liberation and complete freedom, to a new heaven and earth, the final and ideal realm of the providence centering on God.

39 January 13, 2013 is coming with the promise of a new era and a new nation. True Parents' true love will realize Cheon Il Guk through the Parent UN, which will recover the homeland of peace and unity. Let us march on toward the day of the nation of Cheon Il Guk, the substantial kingdom of peace, in which we enjoy the eternal jubilee year, preserving God's lineage and perfect Blessing, and attending the original God as the Father of all!

Section 2. God's Providential View of History

1 Everything that exists, regardless of its size, originated from a single root. This is not easy to perceive, because the Fall severed all relationships and plunged humanity into ignorance. Nonetheless, all things of creation, including the sun, desire to live in the realm of true love within the realm of the true lineage. They desire a world in which each entity creates a realm of resonance, and in which each lives for the sake of the other while attending the True Parents and True Family according to its own standard and form. This is a world of natural order where all

things, throughout the universe, live with humanity centered on God in equilibrium, where there is no circuit overload, as they say in electrical engineering. This is a world where everyone in the universe wants to establish the kingdom of goodness and live in it peacefully for eternity.

The Coronation of the King and Queen of Cosmic Peace

2 This is the venue of a tremendous event in the history of God's providence, an event unprecedented and never to be repeated. It is the day the King of Peace finally ascends in glory. Please recognize that, although they may not be visible to you, thousands and tens of thousands of good ancestors of blessed families are here. They are above your head now, joining with you in celebration of this awesome moment. All nature is rejoicing, and heaven and earth resound with choruses of hallelujah! If you truly understood the infinite value of this day, you would not be able to sit still. You would go throughout the world singing hymns of joy and dancing in ecstasy.

3 Do you know the significance of January 13, 2001? It was the day of the Enthronement Ceremony for God's Kingship. For countless years Heaven had been waiting with eager anticipation for that event, the greatest, most exalted celebration ever witnessed. On that day, Rev. Moon, who had received the anointing as the True Parent of all humankind, who traveled a path of indescribable suffering and pain until he gained the final victory, offered his entire foundation to Heaven. For tens of thousands of years, God endured an existence filled with lamentation and grief, even as He conducted His providence with a parental heart. When that presentation was offered to God, it marked His long awaited moment of liberation and inner freedom. On that providential day, we declared to all heaven and earth that we would attend God as the vertical True Parent and great King of Heaven and Earth, that we would unfurl and raise high the banner of Cheon Il Guk, and that the new sovereignty of Heaven had begun.

4 For the following three years, we, the True Parents, held firmly to the helm while the winds of heavenly fortune swirled around us like a typhoon. We dashed forward as though each day were a thousand years. Then on the foundation of True Parents' victory, we declared May 5, 2004 the Day of the Victory of the Number Ten Combining Two Halves. On that day, the True Parents brought to a close the Era before the Coming of Heaven, with its long years of grief, and opened the Era after the Coming of Heaven, the new age when we can build a new heaven and a new earth. This marked the beginning of a great, history-shaping revolution that will return the earth to God in substantial reality.

5 These victories that I attained through blood, sweat and tears, and the unity of the True Parents with all humanity, laid the foundation for a series of historic proclamations. The first took place in Jerusalem, in 2003. With the affirmation of

Christian, Jewish and Muslim clergy, I had Jesus proclaimed the King of kings before heaven and earth. Following this, in 2004 my wife and I were installed as the King and Queen of Peace in a United States Senate building and at the Korean National Assembly. Finally, on this foundation, in June 2006 we conducted the coronation ceremony of the King and Queen of Cosmic Peace.

6 Today you are receiving amazing grace. You are participating in the coronation ceremony of the substantial King and Queen of Peace in heaven and on earth and you are registering as citizens of Cheon Il Guk. Not only you, but also your ancestors by the tens of thousands are receiving grace along with you. They will thank you for eternity.

7 The Bible says, "Seek ye first the kingdom of God, and His righteousness." (Matt. 6:33) Today you are witnessing the miracle of miracles: the establishment of Cheon Il Guk, the substantial sovereignty in the Era after the Coming of Heaven. God truly works in mysterious ways. By the first day of the new millennium, God already had surveyed the land for Cheon Il Guk. Who could have imagined, though, that they would see the day when the King of Peace in heaven and earth would ascend to his throne? You thought it was just a dream, but you are witnessing it in your lifetime.

The providential era and the anointed representatives (boonbongwang)

8 Humanity now is entering a new era, the era of heaven that turns the world upside down. It is a time God will work through the anointed representatives (boonbongwang) that, in my capacity as King of Peace, I am sending to every part of the world. In other words, this is the time we will complete God's kingdom of Cheon Il Guk.

9 If John the Baptist had fulfilled his responsibility in relation to Jesus, Judaism and Israel would not have opposed Jesus, and Jesus would not have gone the way of the cross. With John the Baptist at his side, Jesus would have led the people of Israel to inherit the authority and power of Rome which God had prepared over thousands of years. With this foundation secured, Jesus would have sent his anointed representatives on the roads leading from Rome to all corners of the earth. They would have been the representatives and ambassadors of Jesus, the King of Peace, and would have fulfilled their mission as his anointed representatives inheriting Heaven's Will. They would have created Cheon Il Guk, reigning over the earth free from walls and barriers, the kingdom of peace, liberated and completely without evil.

10 We know well that for the past two thousand years, humanity was unable to free itself from Satan's deception and had to walk a path of restoration through indemnity. The mistake of one person, John the Baptist, who failed to unite with Jesus and then died a miserable death, was behind this. Nonetheless, by heavenly

law, God's providence is neither permanently impeded nor abandoned due to human error. Today, God has chosen this land of Korea to become the homeland in which His providence comes to fruition. It is because this is True Parents' homeland. They were born here and received the spirit of this land at their birth.

11 I am working hard to send my anointed representatives to all nations. The era in which they live is one in which mistakes such as that of John the Baptist will never be repeated. Unlike Jesus, whose time ended abruptly through his going the way of the cross, I surely will complete the restoration of God's homeland on this earth, as I have received Heaven's seal as the King of Peace. With God and the King of Peace as the central axis, I shall lead the anointed representatives sent throughout the world and so create the original ideal kingdom of everlasting peace.

The course of the development of history

12 God desires to save humankind from evil and sin, and to actualize the ideal He envisioned for all His creation. In the context of God's providential plan, the Korean War was not a simple war merely involving this country and that country. It was a just war that shaped history by bringing God's providence to fruition. This understanding is an important principle and tradition for the Abel UN. Due to constraints of time, I cannot explain in detail today the profound providential plan God has had for my life's work and for the Korean peninsula. I will therefore speak about some aspects of God's providence that I have recently announced, related to the Pacific Rim.

13 If you carefully examine the progress of history, you undoubtedly can discover God's plan and sense His presence as He tirelessly worked behind the scenes. Consider the history of civilization, which began centering on four of the world's great rivers. We are familiar with the Egyptian civilization that flourished along the Nile River, the Mesopotamian civilization between the Tigris and Euphrates Rivers, the Harappan civilization on the Indus River, and early Chinese civilization on the Yellow River.

14 The center of civilization shifted over time to the shores of the Mediterranean, where the Mediterranean peninsular civilizations flourished in Greece and Rome. History continued to progress and the European continental civilization emerged. This continental civilization in turn gave birth to an island civilization, Great Britain, which flourished in the Atlantic sphere. The British Empire, which dominated the seven seas and wielded its might as "the empire on which the sun never sets," passed its splendid culture on to North America. We know these facts from history. Civilization on the North American continent raised the banner of democracy, which was rooted in Christianity. It bequeathed to the world the principles of freedom of religion and respect for equal human rights as it led the struggle against fascism and communism, which had established atheistic, evil sovereignties. Through the

victories of the First and Second World Wars, and the third, the Cold War, it triumphed over totalitarianism and communism. However, that victory does not simply mean that America is great. The development of human civilization does not stop here. Victory came because God chose the United States of America as the Second Israel, in accordance with His providential plan, and raised and trained the American people through Christianity. God worked through America to bring His providence to its present stage of fruition.

15 Ladies and gentlemen, the present time marks an important milestone in the development of civilization. Civilization has completed a circuit of the entire globe and has now arrived on the shores of the Pacific Ocean. Its course has come to the point in God's providence where it will conclude in the Pacific Rim region. No force can stop God's providence now. Though there were both victories and defeats during the course of indemnity under the evil sovereignty in the Era before the Coming of Heaven, nothing now can prevent the rise of the Pacific Rim era. Herein lies the special reason that Heaven declared this a jubilee year.

Building a new civilization

16 Ladies and gentlemen! The arrival of the Pacific Rim era signifies many things. What do you think the world would have been like if Jesus had fulfilled the complete messianic mission during his lifetime on earth? Jesus came as the Savior and Messiah, to save all humankind. He did not come just to save the people of Israel, a small nation located on the edge of the Mediterranean Sea. At that time, Rome, based at the center of the Mediterranean, was the center of human civilization. Rome was ready to rule the seas. Heaven earnestly wished for Jesus to first teach and transform Rome and then rule over her empire. Heaven was eager for a civilization that could bring salvation to all humanity by employing Rome's strength. Yet Jesus was cruelly put to death on the cross, as we know all too well through the biblical record.

17 After thousands of years of preparation, God finally had been able to send Jesus to the earth as His only Son. There is no way to fathom God's heart as He anxiously watched Jesus' each and every action. Jesus' death was a tragedy that broke God's heart. It brought Him anguish even more extreme than the time when Adam and Eve, whom He created as our first ancestors, were lost from the Garden of Eden due to the Fall. During the two thousand years since the cross, God, in the background of history, has walked a path of suffering beyond human imagination. Through this course, He prepared the United States of America to serve as the nation of the Second Israel. As a Christian nation that includes Catholicism and Protestantism as well as the Orthodox world, the United States' mission is to bring harmony and unity among all Christians as soon as possible and, in the twenty-first century fulfill the responsibility that belonged to the Roman Empire, but which was not realized in Jesus' time.

18 On America's shoulders rests the responsibility, within God's providence, to bring harmony and oneness among the world's 6.5 billion people and to expedite the creation of a peaceful, ideal world. These are not simply the words of Rev. Moon. This is Heaven's decree. Then how can we unify Christianity? God has already revealed the solution through me, Rev. Moon, the True Parents of humankind. God gave me the supreme commandment to practice a life of true love, to understand completely the reality of the spirit world to which we go after we die, and to establish a model, ideal family, a true family.

The future of humanity in the Pacific Rim era

19 Peace-loving leaders! Among the 6.5 billion people on the earth today, almost five billion are our neighbors, relatives and brothers and sisters belonging to the Pacific Rim region. In other words, many of our fellow human beings share the same root as the sphere of the Mongolian peoples. After we receive the marriage Blessing and pull together centering on God's ideal for peace, there is nothing we cannot do. The future of humanity is in our hands.

20 God's providence has now spread from the North American continent and blossomed in the island civilization of Japan, which is in a position similar to that which Great Britain once held, but on the other side of the world. It is now about to fulfill its destiny as it reaches fruition on the Korean peninsula, the homeland of the True Parents who have emerged on the earth as the Savior of humanity and the returning Messiah. The Korean peninsula stands in a position like Rome in Jesus' time. Although it is a place of religious and political conflict, it is here that the problems of the entire world can be solved. From the geopolitical point of view, at this time when world peace is to be settled, the Korean peninsula is prominent as the point of most radical confrontation.

21 The principles of restoration through indemnity make it inevitable that civilization will bear fruit in the Pacific Rim region, centered on the Korean peninsula. Fortunately, during the Korean War, UN forces, led by the United States, mobilized to the peninsula. Yet they did not fulfill God's will and recover the homeland and hometown of God's desire. They left the job half done. As a result, global conflict and strife emerged, thereafter called the Cold War. During this period, the Korean people were deprived of their possessions and displaced, and this led them to search for God. In order to restore this through indemnity, I established the Universal Peace Federation. I then reorganized the peace kingdom corps and peace kingdom police force, comprised of the heavenly women who have received the marriage Blessing, who love peace, and who are willing to serve and sacrifice for the work of the Universal Peace Federation. I have taken the lead in educating these organizations. These peace organizations stand in the forefront for actualizing a God-centered world of peace. They will create the peaceful, ideal world that God desires.

22 You may not be aware of this, but I have been assisting behind the scenes of the Six Party Talks currently being held for the sake of resolving the nuclear issue on the Korean peninsula, reconciling democratic nations with communist nations. I am presenting a new solution and plan based on the principles of peace and harmony rooted in Heavenly Parentism. At such intense times, what exactly should be the role of America and the United Nations? Hawaii, in the Pacific, and Norfolk, Virginia, on the Atlantic, bridge East and West, link North and South, and represent the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans and all the great oceans of the world. With the support and protection of the American continent, the Korean peninsula should become the homeland that protects and defends the Pacific Rim region by bringing together all the island nations of the Pacific. I say this because the future of humankind lies in the preservation of the Pacific Rim region centering on Korea, Japan and the United States.

23 As I was well aware of Heaven's plans for this region, I invested thirty- three of the prime years of my life in the United States beginning in the early 1970s, for the sake of world peace. While on my way to meet Kim Il Sung of North Korea in 1991, I first visited Hawaii and prayed there, at that critical moment, with the purpose of bringing the Cold War era to an end. On that victorious foundation I returned to Korea, where I am working to complete the providence of establishing God's homeland and hometown. This year, in particular, a jubilee year in the providence, I again prayed in Hawaii as the first stop on a visit to America.

24 Ladies and gentlemen, I ask that you carefully analyze the current state of affairs in the world. Although the days of communism are gone, powerful nations such as China and Russia even now are constantly on the lookout for opportunities to pursue their own interests aggressively at the expense of small and powerless island nations. No small island nation by itself can deal with these powerful nations and their ambitions, which are economic, political and even military. They are so powerful that, if they wanted to, they could dominate a small nation in a single day, without shedding blood.

25 Only when we settle peace and security in the Pacific Rim can we guarantee peace for all humanity. As I have mentioned, the small island nations by themselves cannot contend with the great tsunami of powerful nations moving into the region. The time has come, therefore, for these small island nations in the Pacific Rim sphere to unite as one and build the homeland of the new civilization. The small island nations dispersed in the northern and southern regions of the Pacific, on either side of the equator, as well as Japan, Taiwan, the Philippines, Indonesia, the Solomon Islands, Australia, New Zealand and other countries, should become as one country, forming a union to sustain peace throughout the Pacific Rim civilization. This will secure peace and stability for all people. What I am saying to you is that you have the responsibility to protect and save the oceanic realm, a lifeline upon which humanity's future depends, from environmental destruction

and conflicts that are worsening by the day, and to shield its natural resources for the sake of peace in the future.

26 During the past eighty-some years, I have upheld the commands of God and dedicated myself wholeheartedly to establishing the kingdom of God on earth and in heaven, that is, a world of peace, the ideal God envisioned at the Creation. I have visited all corners of the world many times over in order to disseminate Heaven's message. Notably, as we entered the twenty-first century, I revealed this teaching about Heaven's providential direction and the future of humankind centered on the Pacific Rim, which is God's final blessing and warning to all people. There is no other way to realize a world of peace. Following the commands of God, the True Parent of humankind, I have embraced the world. Establishing the Abel UN, I am actively pursuing and practicing the providence of salvation. Unless people uphold Rev. Moon's teachings, there is no hope for the future of humanity. Please engrave this message, which is Heaven's ultimatum, in your heart, and hold on to it as the standard by which you will lead your life.

Section 3. The Providence of the Cheon Il Guk Era

1 As we begin the twenty-first century, we find ourselves at a truly historic turning point. It is a point of decision, between realizing everlasting world peace, or repeating the twentieth century's bleak and oppressive history of war and conflict. The twentieth century was a period of ceaseless struggle, including nations scrambling to gain colonies, the First and Second World Wars, and the Korean War, to which the United Nations mobilized the forces of sixteen nations. They were mobilized to the Korean peninsula under God's providence in order to regain God's homeland of peace. Even after that, however, humanity had to endure a period of conflict and hostility during the Cold War between East and West. Living through this era, I dedicated my life entirely to bringing about the kingdom of God, the kingdom of the peaceful, ideal world. I have always prayed sincerely that the United Nations, founded after the Second World War, would be an institution for peace, and that it would uphold God's Will for the realization of eternal world peace.

2 The United Nations has indeed made important contributions to peace since 1945. Nevertheless, around its sixtieth anniversary in 2005 there was a broad consensus, both inside and outside the organization, that the UN had yet to discover the way to fulfill its founding purposes. The number of member states approaches two hundred, but the offices of these states do little more than represent and even insist on their own interests. They seem inherently unable to resolve conflicts and achieve peace.

The emergence of the Universal Peace Federation

3 Throughout history, people have worked continuously for peace based upon human effort alone. Consider the confrontation between democracy and communism. Outwardly, the difference between the two is the extent to which they recognize and assure individual rights and freedoms. Yet from the viewpoint of God's providence, communism and democracy are like children who have lost their parents. The two divided into the positions of Cain and Abel respectively and became trapped in the chains of fraternal conflict. Throughout history, peace movements inevitably reached their limit and ended in failure because imperfect human beings carried them out. This is why the United Nations, although launched with the splendid dream of realizing world peace, today must admit its inherent limitations and confess that it can no longer give hope to humanity. This is simply because the UN was launched during the era prior to the time when God could govern the unfolding of His providence in history directly.

4 Now, however, it is entirely possible for the Universal Peace Federation to fulfill its mission to unite heaven and earth and form the kingdom of the peaceful, ideal world. This is because it represents God's victory and the fruit of the True Parents' blood, sweat and tears. Therefore, the Universal Peace Federation is the world's cherished hope. It will carry out the role of an Abel-type counterpart to the existing Cain-type United Nations, to renew the UN and provide the leadership for a new sovereignty of universal peace, Cheon Il Guk.

5 The Universal Peace Federation will now stand in the Abel position to the existing UN. It will not be an arena of competition like that between the member nations and departments of the UN. Instead, on a pan-global level encompassing heaven and earth, it will carry out a history-shaping revolution for the peace and welfare of humanity. Unlike the UN, which focuses on superficial issues and slogans, the Universal Peace Federation will fulfill the messianic mission that genuinely benefits humankind on a fundamental and substantive level. With this purpose in mind, on October 20 last year while in the Ukraine during my world speaking tour conveying the inaugural message of the Universal Peace Federation in 120 nations, I proclaimed before the world the inauguration of the global peace kingdom police force and the global peace kingdom corps. These two organizations will play roles corresponding to those of the red blood cells and white blood cells of our bodies. In all corners of the world they will nourish and protect the blessed families who have made a new beginning by engrafting to the lineage of Heaven. They will be sentinels, defending, protecting and cultivating this beautiful world, this Garden of Eden given to us by God, for which we need to be grateful.

6 With a view to building the ideal kingdom of heaven that is God's desire, I am promoting the world's most ambitious project, which is to build a tunnel under the Bering Strait. This will be part of the International Highway of Peace that is to connect all oceans and continents and allow people to travel freely around the globe. The United Nations, which began with the noble ideal of realizing world

peace, is now only a shadow of what it was meant to be. Unable to turn my back on this sad reality, I am promoting the renewal of the UN. In support of these efforts, I have founded the Universal Peace Federation (UPF) as the new Peace UN, or Abel-type UN, with the belief that we need to pour new wine into fresh wineskins. UPF will guide humanity into the revolutionary era in which a new and universal civilization of peace will begin. It is already active in more than 120 nations.

7 The Mongolian race makes up 74 percent of the world's population; it is the largest racial group in the world. We should inspire all five billion of them and generate a climate of true love on this planet. You and I were born on the Korean peninsula; we share the same cultural background. You are the peace ambassadors and envoys of Heaven who are conveying my teachings and educating others to establish exemplary families of true love, true life and true lineage. You, who have become ambassadors for peace, please go forward with conviction and dignity, as prophets who come with Heaven's truth and have no fear of death. Go out as Heaven's envoys, and God will certainly grant you eternal life.

8 The Mongolian birthmark, which we have in common, is not merely a physical mark of the Mongolian race. It is the mark Heaven gave the Dong- Yi tribes long ago, by which the True Parents would inspire and unite all humanity at the arrival of the revolutionary Era after the Coming of Heaven. Furthermore, the Korean race, standing at the center of the Mongolian peoples, is chosen to stand in the forefront of the world's 6.5 billion people. Its mission is to convey True Parents' tradition on their behalf.

9 You should join the proud ranks of the global peace kingdom police force and the peace kingdom corps in service to the lofty aims of the Universal Peace Federation, for the sake of God and humanity. The more than 280 family names of Korea should become one, transcending clan and location, uniting proudly as a people God has chosen in this era. Please bear in mind that this is the God-given mission that you have as leaders representing the Korean clans and race.

10 Ladies and gentlemen, you each stand in the position of a leader representing the 1.2 million ambassadors for peace around the world, spearheading the revolutionary Era after the Coming of Heaven. You are Heaven's emissary responsible for ensuring the peace and happiness of humankind in the future. You have the dual missions of the peace kingdom police force and peace kingdom corps. Therefore, Buddha, Confucius, Jesus and Muhammad, as well as hundreds of generations of your ancestors, have mobilized to watch your every move. Your mission is now as plain as can be. First and foremost, you should declare to every member of your clan and to all your acquaintances that the world has now entered the revolutionary Era after the Coming of Heaven, the era for the establishment of Cheon Il Guk. You are responsible to educate them about the providence God is carrying out on the global level in this era, led by the True Parents.

A project for peace

11 I am deeply moved by the hundreds of non-governmental organizations, national ambassadors, and religious leaders who stepped across the borders of race, nationality and religion, and gathered here in one place to fulfill the dream of one family under God.

12 I have dedicated my entire life to teaching the path of living for the sake of others through the practice of true love. This is a basic principle that surely applies not only to individuals but also to the family, the society and the nation.

13 Leaders from throughout the world, today we are marking the long sought conclusion of God's providential history. Let me take this opportunity to repeat the proposal I have made for a truly providential and revolutionary project. This project is for the sake of the kingdom of peace, which is the culmination of the providence for God and humankind, and also for the purpose of establishing God's homeland and original hometown.

14 Satan created the historical divisions of our world, into East and West, North and South. I propose that we build a passage across the Bering Strait that separates the North American and Russian landmasses. This passage, which I call the World Peace King Bridge and Tunnel, will link an International Highway of Peace that will allow people to travel on land from Africa's Cape of Good Hope to Santiago, Chile, and from London to New York, across the Bering Strait, connecting the world as a single community. God is warning us that He will no longer tolerate separation and division. By carrying out this project we will bind the world together as one village. It will tear down the man-made walls between races, cultures, religions and countries, and establish the kingdom of the peaceful, ideal world that has been God's cherished desire.

15 The United States and Russia can become as one. The European Union, China, India, Japan, Brazil and all nations, and also the world's religions, can combine their energies to make this project succeed. The success of this project will be decisive in establishing the kingdom of the peaceful, ideal world, where people no longer wage war against each other.

16 Ladies and gentlemen, some may doubt that such a project can be completed. But where there is a will, there is always a way—especially if it is the will of God. The science and technology of the twenty-first century render it possible to construct a tunnel under the Bering Strait. The construction costs are also not a problem. Think of how much money the world is wasting on war. Humanity needs to realize that we are committing fearful sins in front of history and our descendants.

17 Let us take one example: How much money has the United States spent on the war in Iraq during the past four years? It is already 400 billion dollars. That budget would be more than enough to complete the Bering Strait project. War is a most immature and destructive means of resolving conflict. It will never lead to lasting peace. Now is the time, as the prophet Isaiah taught, to beat our swords into ploughshares and spears into pruning hooks. We should end the perverse cycle of war, which only sacrifices the lives of our children and squanders enormous sums of money. The time has come for the countries of the world to pool their resources and advance toward the kingdom of the peaceful, ideal world desired by God, the Master of this great universe.

The fruits of God's providence are evident in history

18 On three occasions in 2009, once on January 15 and twice on January 31, we held the history-shaping "Coronation with the Authority of the Liberation of God, the King of Kings and Golden Anniversary Celebration." On January 31 we held this ceremony at the Cheon Jeong Peace Palace in Korea, representing the East, and again in New York City, representing the West. In this way, we set a record by offering to Heaven a historically unprecedented, never to be repeated providential event on the same day in both the eastern and western hemispheres.

19 In April of 2009, my wife and I celebrated the fiftieth commemoration of the day of our Holy Wedding. In 1960, students on the Korean peninsula were crying out in resistance to dictatorship. On the sixteenth day of the third month of the lunar calendar in that year, my wife and I received Heaven's seal and embarked on the arduous course in the providence of restoration that the True Parents, True Teachers and True King and Queen of humanity have to take. How can I even begin to explain the path of the providence of restoration through indemnity that my wife and I have had to follow for the past fifty years, in order to finally bring complete liberation and freedom to God and to attend Him as the King of kings? Many years from now, historians will verify and announce what I cannot explain at this time.

20 You are probably not aware of the profound providential significance in True Parents' coronation and golden wedding anniversary. Due to the sin of humanity's first ancestors, God's true lineage was lost and history fell under the dominion of Satan's false bloodline. I am sure you have learned about this reality through studying the Principle. This corrupted bloodline has been part and parcel of history. Isn't it because of this that the physical world, and even the spirit world, became completely mired in antagonistic, confrontational, good-versus-evil, Cain-Abel relationships? No one has found a resolution to this tragedy, and history's problems have gone unresolved to this day.

21 Times are now changing, however. On the occasions of True Parents' coronation and golden wedding anniversary, the doors to the realm of complete unity between

Cain and Abel are opened. We have entered the realm of grace where human beings can be restored to the level of completion and perfection. At this point we can inherit and share the original nature of God's heart. In other words, we can reach the human state as originally intended, without a trace of the Fall. Using "O" for correct, and "X" for incorrect, we have entered the new era when the good governance of God, who is "O," can completely embrace and digest the evil governance of Satan, who is "X," leaving virtually no trace. The new era is beginning in which the kingdom of heaven on earth and in heaven is expanding substantially before our eyes, and when there is no longer the need to distinguish between the True Parents, who work as the embodiment of God, and the incorporeal God Himself.

22 On this occasion, which has that unique significance, my wife and I celebrated our coronation and golden wedding anniversary and successfully held the Round Ball Peace Cup Cain- Abel Cosmic Harmony Tournament for thirteen days starting on April 21. Someday this will be a festival of peace for all humanity, surpassing even the Olympics. The Atletico Sorocaba football club from Brazil contributed greatly to this first tournament. They set aside everything else to come here at True Parents' invitation. Sorocaba won the 2008 FA Cup championship in Sao Paulo, Brazil. During this short visit to Asia, they played against four teams, representing North Korea, South Korea, Japan and China. They displayed an excellent standard of skill and demonstrated the soul of Latin American football. Would you please give a warm round of applause to encourage the Sorocaba team!

23 You are now living in the age of blessed marriage and its fruits. The kingdom of heaven on earth, God's ideal of creation, is being established before your eyes. I have dedicated my life of more than eighty years to Heaven alone. It has been a lonely path, stained with blood, sweat and tears. Yet now it is bearing mature fruit for the sake of the world's 6.5 billion people. From the spirit world, the founders of the world's religions, tens of thousands of saints and your own good ancestors are watching your every move. They will punish you a hundred-fold if you stray from the heavenly path.

The declaration of the Revolutionary Era after the Coming of Heaven

24 I have declared this year, 2007, a jubilee year in God's providence. God has greatly blessed this holy year. It is a jubilee year the likes of which God and humankind have never experienced in thousands of years of history. God's heart has been in pain throughout history because humanity has been imprisoned under Satan's dominion. Humanity endured oppression under the sovereignty of evil throughout the Era before the Coming of Heaven. That time finally has come to an end! Beginning this year, the gates to the revolutionary Era after the Coming of Heaven are open wide. We are ushering in the time of a new sovereignty of goodness, in which humanity can serve and attend God as the Central Being.

Without your being aware of it, Heaven's providence has expanded in extraordinary ways. Now ambassadors for peace in 185 nations, numbering in the tens of thousands, have received my teachings and are working day and night in response to a special decree of God.

25 Ladies and gentlemen, because I have spent my life discovering and disclosing the crimes of Satan, it was inevitable that I would face persecution. At times the intensity of my suffering was utterly beyond words. Now, however, I am victorious over all obstacles. I can therefore declare the Era after the Coming of Heaven, the age when the power of Heaven becomes manifest. On this foundation, I am building a worldwide Abel-realm that brings together religions and nations representing 78 percent of the world population. To create a corresponding worldwide Cain- realm, I am bringing together all those born with the Mongolian birthmark, which include some 74 percent of the world's population.

26 Now these two, the worldwide Abel-realm and the worldwide Cain- realm, have to become one and unite with the Universal Peace Federation, which has been initiated as the Abel sovereignty. To establish the kingdom of the peaceful, ideal world, we have to transcend religious affiliation and nationality and remove all blockages between entities such as nations. I would like to emphasize that this is the only way humankind will be able to achieve the original ideal of creation. It is our destiny to fulfill this responsibility. By doing so, we will establish the original right of ownership lost through the Fall of Adam and Eve.

27 Ladies and gentlemen, by virtue of Rev. Moon's devotion to the path of Heaven throughout the more than eighty years of his life, a new world is emerging. On this foundation of victory, I have proclaimed the Revolutionary Era after the Coming of Heaven. We are now living in the age of heavenly fortune, an age in which all people can be liberated and delivered from the quagmire of sin. It is the era in which we can establish the world of freedom and happiness, the ideal world as originally envisioned at the time of the Creation.

28 There are several clear reasons why Heaven designated the person standing before you, Rev. Moon, as the True Parent of humankind, and thereby opened up a new era. First, I have succeeded in practicing the way of living for the sake of others. That is, throughout my life I have practiced the values of true love, emerged triumphant, and offered that triumph to humanity. All people are born to live for the sake of others. However, because of the ignorance that resulted from the Fall, people practice the complete opposite—selfish individualism. I revealed this truth of Heaven and have imparted this knowledge to humankind for the first time in history. God is completely aware of the journey my life has taken, through thick and thin.

29 Second, I have dedicated my life to overcome all obstacles and lay a victorious foundation. Through the education provided by the actual practice of true love, I have fulfilled all the conditions necessary to recover and establish the parent-child relationship between God and humankind. I have opened the way for human beings, who became the children of the adulterer Satan, the enemy of love, and who have lived as slaves to false love, false life and false lineage, to be reborn and resurrected into the true lineage of God, the source of true love. In other words, I have opened wide the path for people to reach full spiritual maturity as individuals and to establish true families, tribes, peoples and nations, and a true world, through leading lives of true love.

Our mission in the Era after the Coming of Heaven

30 The Era after the Coming of Heaven that God and True Parents have begun is a time of dramatic change. You have the mission to make this era blossom and bear fruit in blessing and glory. I have said that in this age we have to recover the true lineage that was lost when Adam fell, by receiving the marriage Blessing through the True Parents. The providence of the marriage Blessing should be perfected in five stages, that of the individual, family, tribe, people and nation.

31 You are now advancing into the era of liberation and complete inner freedom, which is the providential era of the fourth Adam's realm of heart, that is, the Revolutionary Era after the Coming of Heaven. Through restoration through indemnity, we have passed through the Era before the Coming of Heaven, consisting of the Old, New and Completed Testament ages, and into a time when, metaphorically speaking, the sun is directly overhead and no shadow is cast. The present time corresponds to the era prior to Adam's Fall, the era of building the original ideal world. It refers to the era of true love that is all encompassing, all-powerful and of overall authority. It is the realm of heart in which the spirit world and the physical world are bound together as a unified realm centering on the True Parents, the King and Queen of Peace. In other words, it is the era of the kingdom of peace and unity in heaven and on earth.

32 I have explained that within the realm of God's grace through the True Parents, the way is prepared for all people to change their lineage through the holy wine ceremony, to receive the Holy Blessing, and to establish true families. The ultimate way to establish a peaceful, ideal world here on earth is to perfect a life that embraces absoluteness in the marriage relationship through the cross-cultural marriage Blessing. The cross-cultural Blessing is the grace by which you inherit Heaven's lineage. You have come to know clearly that God has called you to the mission of teaching these things without fail. As an heir and actual representative of the True Parents, you now have to move beyond your concepts and level of awareness to fulfill the responsibility to which you have been called.

33 It is truly regrettable that you cannot perceive with your eyes this precious Revolutionary Era after the Coming of Heaven. It has never been seen before and will never again be repeated. The reason for this is that you are relying only on your five physical senses. I hope that you will open your five spiritual senses as quickly as possible, so that you may clearly perceive how the providence of Heaven is unfolding in this era. You live in the era of heavenly fortune, which you have received without offering anything on your part. Yet please bear in mind that the providential opportunity proceeds according to an absolute timetable and will not be available to you indefinitely.

34 Now the time has come for you to unite into one as the representatives of the ambassadors for peace, who have preserved the spirit of the Korean people and our pride as the “white-clad people.” There is no time to waste. What does it matter whether your name is Kim or Pak? Is there any reason for Gyeongsang Province and Jeolla Province not to harmoniously unite? The pro-Seoul Korean Residents’ Union in Japan (Mindan) and the pro-Pyongyang General Association of Korean Residents in Japan (Chochongryon) each have their roots in the same Korean peninsula. What of South and North Korea? Aren’t we all brothers and sisters, sharing a common lineage? At this time, we should bear in mind that we are the descendants of the “white-clad people” and of Heaven. We have been raised to establish the lofty ideal of advancing the welfare of humanity. We are kinsfolk, a people God has called, selected and anointed to stand at the forefront, building the peace kingdom in this, the Revolutionary Era after the Coming of Heaven.

The advent of the era of the peaceful, ideal kingdom

35 You are now living in the most blessed and exalted time in history. We are in the Era after the Coming of Heaven! I proclaim the beginning of the long awaited new heaven and new earth, for which billions of your ancestors in the spirit world who came and went in history, yearned. This is the era of the kingdom of the peaceful, ideal world. The four great religious founders and billions of good ancestors have come to earth to guide you on the blessed path of heaven. The age when the fallen and corrupt world wreaks havoc on humanity, allowing evil people to live better than others, is passing away.

36 We should seek out and establish God’s kingdom and His righteousness, for it is everyone’s ultimate destination to live in a nation that serves and attends God as its center. What is meant by God’s kingdom? It signifies the kingdom of the peaceful, ideal world. It is a nation that resembles the form of a model true family with three generations living together in harmony, trusting, respecting and supporting one another, and becoming one in love. In short, it is the nation for which humanity has longed throughout the ages, the utopia where God is sovereign.

37 Then what is meant by “His righteousness”? It signifies the heavenly way and heavenly rule. Each of us on earth is commanded to pass judgment, with the heavenly authority of true love, upon this evil world that suffers under scheming, treacherous regimes. It is our duty to establish the ideal, peaceful world of true love, a liberated and free world based on justice and truth. After all, humanity is destined to become one family. The remarkable advances of modern science are contributing greatly toward making this world one global village. The time has come to establish the beautiful kingdom of the peaceful, ideal world, where whites and blacks, Eastern and Western live together in harmony as one great family.

38 This means that we need a movement to realize a society of interdependence, mutual prosperity and universally shared values. We need to make humanity one great family, by breaking down the walls in our hearts and eliminating the barriers between nations. This movement begins from each family. Therefore, each of us should bear in mind that it is our providential calling to establish a true family. This is the way to advance the establishment of the universal peace kingdom on earth.

39 Indeed, all this is coming to pass. In the Middle East, one of the world’s tinderboxes, Jews, Christians and Muslims have found the resources in my philosophy of peace to engage in a new dimension of dialogue. In past decades my Unification Thought played a decisive role in ending the Cold War. Now I am successfully leading behind-the-scenes efforts to bring about the reunification of my homeland of Korea. But I am not yet satisfied, because I began my life’s work at the command of Heaven. I have come as the True Parent of humankind with God’s anointing, and I am determined to keep my promise to Him. I am determined to obliterate all national divisions and barriers that have poisoned this earth, and to establish the kingdom of the peaceful, ideal world, where all people everywhere can join hand in hand.

40 Rev. Moon, who received the seal of Heaven, has come as the True Parent of humanity and the King of Peace. I will be true to my promise to God. I will bring to fruition the era of the kingdom of the peaceful, ideal world on this earth, without fail. Therefore, please bear in mind that all of you gathered here today are central figures in establishing the eternal kingdom of the peaceful, ideal world on this earth, in attendance to the King and Queen of Peace, the True Parents. Under the banner of the Abel-type UN, let us sweep away the absurdities and evils of this world through the power of God’s true love. Let us become the proud peace kingdom police and peace kingdom corps of the Universal Peace Federation, and protect the blessed families of the world. Let us fulfill our roles as the sentinels watching over this blessed land that is our planet. Please become true princes and princesses who can attend and live together with God, the eternal Peace King, the True Parent of humanity. In order to create the glorious kingdom of peace and prosperity, let us each live up to our family duties as children of filial piety, patriots, saints, and holy sons and daughters.

CHAPTER 4 The Settlement of the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind

Section 1. The Three Stages of Life

1 The Word I am proclaiming to you today is the ultimate conclusion and fulfillment of all aspects of the providence of restoration during the lifetime of the True Parents, and I need you to know that this speaking tour is to fulfill this course. The path that True Parents have walked is the exemplary historic tradition and, therefore, is a path upon which you should model your life. I am proclaiming that you should become families that practice and pledge to inherit and fulfill the Will of God, which True Parents have already accomplished.

2 On March 16, 2011 we celebrated our fifty-second Holy Wedding anniversary. On that occasion, I brought to a close the Era before the Coming of Heaven, which was characterized by sin and indemnity, and proclaimed the Era after the Coming of Heaven, through which a new heaven and a new earth will be realized by returning to true love. Please engrave in your heart that life in the Era after the Coming of Heaven will open up through this tour. All blessed children in heaven and on earth, who are the blood lineage of True Parents, have to know in their hearts that this is the entire, final proclamation in order to complete the ideal nation of the invisible God, the visible God, the God of Night, the God of Day, the ancestors of Jesus and the ancestors of True Parents.

3 My autobiography already has disclosed and conveyed to you the details of True Parents' life course. I pray that you will become the True Parents' representative heirs by the conclusion of the Cosmic Assembly for the Settlement of the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind Who, as God's Embodiment, Proclaim the Word. Please inherit the teachings I have bestowed to this world through my speeches, my achievements and my autobiography. These trace the path of my unfailingly victorious life, carved to secure victory for heaven while living upon the earth. By following this way, I pray that your life will be as triumphant as the True Parents' lives have been.

4 As the True Parents have done, you too should become heavenly bridges for the relatives and members of your clan who surround you. You should also become a God-centered leader who can guide your clan into God's kingdom. I ask that you take this proclamation of True Parents to heart and pledge to put it into practice. Aju. I will now share with you the hoondok words I read at the forty- fourth True God's Day and at the commemoration of the Enthronement Ceremony for the Kingship of God. This represents the textbooks and teaching materials that summarize what I have taught throughout my life course.

5 Respected leaders from around the world, distinguished guests from home and abroad, ladies and gentlemen! On behalf of True Parents, True Family, the Republic

of Korea, and Unification Church members who are blessed throughout the cosmos, the spirit world and physical world, I sincerely welcome and express my deepest appreciation to you for coming to participate in this “Cosmic Assembly for the Settlement of the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind Who, as God’s Embodiment, Proclaim the Word.” In the past year, thousands of representatives and eminent leaders from 120 nations honored us with their presence on several occasions. These occasions included our golden wedding anniversary and coronation, the Legacy of Peace memorial events held at the United Nations and in cities around the United States and the world, and many other significant occasions. Once again, I would like to express my appreciation on behalf of all the people of the Republic of Korea and all of humankind.

6 Ladies and gentlemen, this is an event- fill time in God’s providence. Last year I celebrated my ninetieth birthday and now, as I look toward the hundredth year of my life, I am very busy providentially. I have been blessed with a long life, beyond the average human lifespan. Last year my wife and I were also able to celebrate our golden wedding anniversary. From a providential point of view, last year was not simply the year of our golden anniversary; it was also a jubilee year. Throughout our lives, we have established many international organizations and institutions to promote world peace. We have invested unreservedly to create interreligious cooperation, humanitarian projects, and intercultural harmony through service, sports, education and the media. We founded all these initiatives with the aim of promoting peace and bringing salvation to humanity.

7 Some people commend us and say that, as we have worked hard, we deserve to rest on our laurels and enjoy the years that remain to us in comfort. They encourage us to forget the world situation, sit back, and enjoy the successes achieved during the past ninety years. However, my wife and I cannot look at our lives in such a worldly way. We must complete the mission of the actual True Parents, a responsibility given to us by God, the vertical True Parent of all humankind. As less than two years remain for us to realize God’s kingdom of Cheon Il Guk, we become more serious with each passing day.

8 Throughout my life, I have offered myself for the liberation of God, the one and only True Parent of heaven and earth. I have sought to restore Him to His rightful position as Parent, to save all human beings who suffer in the realm of death, and to return them to God’s bosom. For this purpose I have persevered and triumphed over countless tribulations while leading the world’s people, who are like lost and blind orphans searching for their Heavenly Parent, toward the goal of global salvation. Due to the Fall brought about by our first ancestors, people have been born into the false lineage. Everyone without exception wanders in darkness even now, unable to break free of Satan’s bondage. Under such circumstances, how could we be anything less than completely serious in our lives as we guide the 6.5

billion people of the world along the path toward the building of God's kingdom on earth?

9 Ladies and gentlemen, God created us as His children. As the original, absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal Being, God created human beings and endowed us with a soul by breathing His love into us. Were it not for the Fall, we would have been perfect as God is perfect, in spirit as well as body. We would have been able to fulfill the way of absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience, and would have attained eternal life. Unfortunately, however, human beings are living as descendants of the Fall. In order to live a perfect life, all people without exception must receive new life through the Blessing of True Parents and pass through three stages: rebirth, resurrection and eternal life. Rebirth, in this context, refers to an individual attaining new life. Resurrection takes place when a family and nation attain new life. Eternal life refers to all of humanity attending the True Parents, the King and Queen of Peace and, thereby, attaining perfection and living forever in God's homeland after establishing the kingdom of heaven on earth and in the spirit world.

10 Your ancestors in the spirit world will return to the earth at this time of the True Parents, who directly govern the creation as the substantial entity of God, who exists without form. They will go through the three-stage Blessing of rebirth, resurrection and eternal life and complete the Original Divine Principle education, the education about absolute sex, organized by True Parents. Authorized by their participation in the original authority for ascension and liberation granted by the Seonghwa, they will gain the qualification to be citizens of Cheon Il Guk, a qualification that must be bestowed on them by those still living on earth. We can clearly see that each person's life has three stages. Everyone is conceived as a new being through the grace of God and the love of true parents within a blessed family. The first stage of life is the ten months spent in the mother's womb. No one is exempt from this! Whether we are conscious of it at the time or not, each of us without exception spends ten months in our mother's womb. Even though a woman's womb is smaller than some rice cookers, from the perspective of the fetus, it is larger than the universe.

11 What about our birth into the second stage of life, which occurs on earth? What words are adequate to describe the struggle of a newborn baby as it faces a completely unfamiliar new world? A newborn's first lonely cry as it experiences the wide world upon exiting the womb also represents the promise of a one-hundred-year future, the blessing and celebration of entering this new time and space. We all received this blessing of birth that enabled us to live in the second stage of life. Although the one hundred years is much longer than the time we spend in the womb, please do not forget that there remains ahead of us a course to a higher attainment. We all have forgotten the standard of consciousness that we possessed in our mother's womb, so we may think that we are now enjoying our lives fully in

this big, wide world, with the fullest awareness. But there is yet one final stage of life, which is the way to eternal life.

12 This third stage occurs in the world of eternal life, the spirit world, which we enter upon ending our life on this earth. We originally were meant to enter the spirit world after having perfected our spirit during our life on earth. It is a world that people descended from the Fall cannot imagine. It is a world in which we transcend time and space. Just as the fetus in his or her mother's womb cannot imagine life on earth, we, as people living and breathing air in this earthly world, cannot easily understand the spirit world where we will be reborn in our spirit body, living and breathing true love. Ladies and gentlemen, as people face death, they may tremble in fear and terror if they do not understand the true meaning of passing on. Although human history has continued for more than six thousand years, no one, unfortunately, has been able to teach the clear truth regarding death. Now, in the Last Days of history, I, as the True Parents of humankind, am able to reveal this truth, this heavenly secret.

13 True Parents have created the term Seonghwa to teach the true significance of death. The moment we enter the spirit world should be a time of joy and victory, as we enter with the fruits borne of our life on earth. It is a time for those remaining on earth to send off the departed with joy. It should be a time for great celebration. We should be shedding tears of joy, not of sadness. That is the way of the sacred and noble Seonghwa Ceremony, the first step that the spirit of the departed takes toward enjoying eternal life in attendance of God, within His embrace. At the moment of death, our spirits should feel more excited and thrilled than a newlywed bride feels when she goes to her groom's home for the first time. In order to open the door to this way of precious eternal life, last year on March 18, 2010, I offered a Seonghwa Ceremony for world peace leaders at the UN headquarters in New York.

14 No matter how altruistic and philanthropic people may be, entry into the world of eternal life is not guaranteed except through the marriage Blessing and the Seonghwa Blessing of the True Parents, Reverend and Mrs. Moon. This is because the Fall of the first ancestors severed the parent-child relationship between God and humankind. Please take this point seriously.

15 Ladies and gentlemen, this era, in which God has introduced the heavenly calendar, is a serious one. It is now the time for all the world's people to understand the teachings of the True Parents, who brought the heavenly seal and who are responsible for the eternal life of 6.5 billion people. Now is the time to share the good news of the coming of the True Parents throughout the entire world. The time has come to honor and inherit the tradition and spirit of the Korean people, from which the True Parents emerged, establish the heavenly tradition, and bring about world peace by uniting the 6.5 billion people of the world through the United Nations. As we launch the heavenly calendar, please do not forget that the

Seonghwa Blessing ceremony is a sacred rite. Through it, you can inherit a holy citizen's worldview of the kingdom of heaven, and celebrate God's liberation and all humanity's salvation.

16 In this way, you can complete the ideal of a family based on true love. God and all people in the heavenly spirit world and the earthly physical world can unite completely to usher in a reign of peace across the world. Please take this time to express your gratitude to God and to True Parents, for they have given to all the world's nations the keys of the Blessing ceremony and Seonghwa ceremony, allowing the establishment of the traditions of God's kingdom, Cheon Il Guk, through the True Parents. Please join me in applauding our Heavenly Father and True Parents for their love, through which we can receive this treasured grace of life without being asked for anything in return.

Section 2. One Family under God

1 Ladies and gentlemen, what path should humanity take today? Even now tens of millions of innocent lives are being lost each year as a result of war, disease, starvation and natural disasters that arise in all parts of the world. In every field, from the individual to the collective level, in religion, politics, education, culture or ideology, we observe people deeply mired in the swamp of self-centered egoism, erecting walls around themselves. We now live in a world brought to ruin, where genuine communication has broken down. Ultimately, the ideology of one family under God, a teaching based upon true love, which my wife and I, the True Parents, received from Heaven and have championed and taught throughout our lives, is the only way to solve the problems afflicting humanity. It is the only way for humankind to find the path toward peace and happiness.

2 Ladies and gentlemen, we are living in a history-shaping time, a great cosmic transition. It is a time for a cosmic revolution to change history, to unite the spiritual and physical worlds and to create the ideal kingdom of heaven for which God has longed since the beginning of time. We can no longer postpone the fulfillment of His wish. I have proclaimed that January 13, 2013 will be Foundation Day. That day will be the actual beginning of God's kingdom of Cheon Il Guk. That day will be the origin. Less than two years remain until then.

3 Therefore, it is time for all people to be humbly obedient to Heaven's decree. The time when we have to invest ourselves completely, with a life or death commitment, has inexorably come upon us. For these remaining two years, let us follow the guidance of the True Parents, who carry out the providence on earth as the substantial representatives of God, the King of kings. They have mobilized the good spirits in the spirit world, who are moving forward a step ahead of you.

The mission of the Korean people

4 Ladies and gentlemen, do you have any idea of God's pain at the moment our first ancestors fell? He had invested into them His complete and unreserved devotion since time immemorial, and they disappeared into darkness, becoming part of Satan's lineage. Are you even remotely aware that our Heavenly Father endured tens of thousands of years of excruciating heartache so great that His bones wept and His flesh quivered? He had to crawl through an endless, shrouded tunnel indemnifying the Fall in order to save His lost children. How many of you have spent days and nights in tears, yearning to comfort our Father in Heaven?

5 Ladies and gentlemen, God quietly raised the Korean people, preparing them over a period of thousands of years. You know the history very well. Two thousand years ago, God sent His only begotten Son, Jesus Christ, to this earth and sought to save humanity through him. But the end result was tragic. Didn't the religious leaders and his countrymen, who should have received Jesus as the Messiah and walked the path of absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience, send him to the cross instead? Jesus left this earth quietly with the words, "It is finished," referring to spiritual salvation. The Second Coming of Jesus, sadly, required two thousand years of preparation. His labor has finally borne fruit now on the far distant Korean peninsula.

6 From long ago, the Korean people have served God with the sense that He is their original ancestor and that they are descended from Heaven. They have referred to Him as the Honored One, that is, Hananim, and attended Him as the One Lord, the Creator of night and day. Thus it is, for all numbers have one and two as their origin. Because Koreans attend such a God as their original ancestor, the spirit of interdependence, mutual prosperity and universally shared values is alive in the soul and tradition of the Korean people. They have maintained themselves over five thousand years of history without once invading and plundering another nation or people. The spirit that they are to be a blessing to humanity flows in the veins of the Korean people. The spirit of filial piety, fidelity and loyalty, which are the fundamental virtues of human life, are alive and breathing in Korean history. These values appear in the men and women of Korea and reflect the pride and spirit of the Korean people.

7 I have inherited traditional values such as the true filial piety exemplified in the folk tale Shimcheong, about a devoted daughter who offered her life so that her blind father could see, the profound love and fidelity displayed by Choonhyang, who overcame the fear of death in order to keep the promise she had made to her husband, and the unbreakable loyalty exhibited by Admiral Yi Soon-shin, who gave his life to save his nation and people despite his king and other leaders abandoning him. These lofty Korean values and traditions did not appear out of the clear blue sky. God's providential hand raised this people based on these values. It was the providence to build a foundation to send the returning Messiah. On the foundation

of such preparation, and riding on the spirit of this peninsula, I came, having received Heaven's seal as the True Parent of humankind and the King of kings.

The path humanity should take

8 Distinguished guests, your Excellencies, ladies and gentlemen: The path that humanity must now take is clear. What would cause you to hesitate on the eve of the D-Day that Heaven has revealed through us, the True Parents? There are now only six hundred days remaining. Heaven's blessings will be with you on your ambitious and busy course. If you examine the flow of history based on historical providence, you can classify three broad stages. First was the nature-centered era, a time of instinctual feelings, materialism and closeness to animals and the elements of the creation. The next stage was a human-centered era when knowledge, feelings and emotions took precedence and dominated the world. However, these eras were temporary. They were courses of preparation that were necessary in order to enter the era in which people could rid themselves of fallen nature, return to their original self and live as one united family attending God as their Father. As this realm of heart unfolds, we will enter a God-centered era, the final stage. Human beings will experience God's heart and Will as their own, and will follow the path of living for the sake of others. They will do this through establishing an absolute standard on the foundation of having renewed themselves, both inside and out, through the Holy Blessing ceremony. This is the time of opening the era of God's kingdom, Cheon Il Guk, a time in which we can return to the heart of the one true God. Please engrave this truth in your hearts.

9 Once the actual era of Cheon Il Guk begins, the spiritual and earthly worlds will connect and come into oneness, and the Association Connecting the Spirit World and Physical World, a new entity that we will establish on earth, will govern all creation. Moreover, we will carry out the providence according to heavenly law and the heavenly way. Elections conducted in a purely secular fashion will disappear from the face of the earth. All people will become one family through cross-cultural marriage Blessings. We will enjoy tranquility and true love in happiness amid the sacred reign of peace. Let me say it again: this day is drawing near.

10 On February 14, 2010, in preparation for that time, I proclaimed to all of heaven and earth the launch of the new heavenly calendar. The Gregorian and lunar calendars now stand in the positions of Cain and Abel, supporting the heavenly calendar, by which we will chart and record the progress of God's providence. Please now engrave True Parents' teachings into your bones and practice them in your life. We have no alternative. If we do not prepare now, we will surely lose everything. White-necked cranes fly across the Himalayas, which are more than seven thousand meters high, in preparation for winter. We should emulate their courage and endurance.

My final words for humanity

11 True Parents already have prepared the last words I will give to humanity. These have been prepared based on my triumphs over six or seven life-or-death episodes, which include six periods of unjust imprisonment. I am leaving behind eight textbooks and teaching materials for humanity to use for all eternity. Altogether, these are published in almost a thousand volumes. They are: The Sermons of the Rev. Sun Myung Moon, Exposition of the Divine Principle, Cheon Seong Gyeong, The Family Pledge, Pyeong Hwa Shin Gyeong [The Peace Messages], True Families: Gateway to Heaven, Owner of Peace and Owner of Lineage, and World Scripture. You will read and study these textbooks even after you go to the spirit world. They are not just teachings that come from one person's mind; they are textbooks and teaching materials for the heavenly way. God has granted these to His suffering children for their salvation.

12 You should now set up the hoondokhae study tradition in your family using the books I have mentioned. That is the tradition where three generations of a family start each day by reading Heaven's word, and lead a life practicing what they read with a new heart. Let's create a world where people in the spirit world and the earthly world attend True Parents at the same time, and read the words about the heavenly path together. Once this happens, no matter how hard Satan may try to worm his way in and infest your lineage, when he encounters the hoondokhae tradition he will have no room to move. If the blessing of God does not come to the family that is living the standard of high noon, where no shadow is cast, who then could possibly receive it? When such heavenly families fill the earth, the world automatically will become the heavenly kingdom on earth and in the eternal spirit world, fulfilling the vision of one family under God.

13 Ladies and gentlemen, two years ago, we published my memoir, As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen, an honest and candid account of my life. Through this book I share how I discovered God's Will for humankind, and the path that we, as God's children, should follow. My life has been a typical model of the saying, "If at first you don't succeed, try, try again." I have as much faith in this book as in the hoondok textbooks and teaching materials I have mentioned. For this reason, I recommend it to you, believing that it will show you how to lead your life according to true principles. Nothing was added or subtracted in the writing of the ninety years of my life, which I have led under Heaven's decree. I pray you will read this record of true love carefully and find in it great inspiration.

14 I have already mentioned that a life of vertical alignment is like the noontime sun that casts no shadow. If we can all shine as we live in the light, we will not cast the shadow of sin. Those who receive the light will be indebted to it. In order to pay back your debt, all of you should live a life dedicated to wiping away the tears of

people in misery and poverty, and lead an illuminated life of eternal true love that dissipates the darkness.

Section 3. Proclamation of the Era of the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind

1 Ladies and gentlemen, last year in Las Vegas, the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind made a special proclamation centered on God on two separate days. One part was given in the year 2010 at 2:20 a.m. on the eighth day of the fifth month of the heavenly calendar (June 19), and the other at 3:25 a.m., on the fifteenth day of the fifth month of the heavenly calendar (June 26 solar). The number three from 3:25 a.m. represents the saying, “third time’s the charm” applied to three eras. It also symbolizes the Old, New and Completed Testament ages. Twenty-five minutes, the number twenty-five, is a fourth of one hundred. The True Parents have achieved ultimate unity and offered and proclaimed the era of God’s full transcendence, full immanence, full authority and omnipotence upon the standard of perfection, completion and conclusion.

2 Furthermore, with the Seonghwa Ceremony for General Alexander Haig, former United States Secretary of State, the ceremony for the victory of the First, Second, and Third Israel, which completed the ceremonies for rebirth, resurrection and Seonghwa during my lifetime, was transferred to Korea. This I proclaimed. Korea will now become God’s homeland and hometown. Declaring that Korea is God’s homeland, I completed the Cosmic Assembly for the Settlement of the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind Who, as God’s Embodiment, Proclaim the Word, in Korea on July 8. Through these proclamation ceremonies, I have abolished all the barriers in the entire cosmos. Consequently, centering on God, heaven and earth shall exist forever, night and day, under God’s reign, with the support of the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind.

Heaven's message

3 Distinguished guests, at this serious and important time, you need to make a revolutionary and cosmic change in your life. In light of this, let us summarize the message Heaven has given to us today. First, all blessed families should attend God at the center of their family, and every day carry out hoondok education, which can completely unite parents and children. In other words, you should thoroughly teach the Divine Principle, the textbooks and teaching materials that True Parents bequeathed, True Father’s autobiography, and the Original Divine Principle content regarding absolute sex.

4 Second, Heaven has permitted me to bestow the grace of the authority of Seonghwa for rebirth and resurrection on the family unit. The complete unity between parents and children is the requisite condition. In other words, you have

to establish the standard for absolute parents and absolute children, and establish an absolute family as your normal course of events. Third, humanity has moved out of the authority of the era of restoration through indemnity, thanks to the grace of True Parents, who have suffered hardship through which they have had to sweat blood. Therefore, do not forget the fact that during True Parents' lifetime we are responsible to liberate families, tribes, peoples, nations and the world, from hell's authority to God's dwelling place. Now that the era of restoration through indemnity has ended, what era is dawning? It is the reign of peace in the victorious authority centered on God and True Parents. It will last for eternity.

5 Fourth, we are now entering the era of the authority of God's direct dominion. Ladies and gentlemen, I have said that less than two years remain until the Heaven-proclaimed D-Day. I beg you to inscribe in your heart the fact that we have entered the era of the cosmic Sabbath's authority, where your direct family members in the spirit world will return to the earth to receive the Original Divine Principle education, and eight generations will live together as a single family. Aju!

6 Ladies and gentlemen, these concluding remarks explain the broad outline of all my endeavors. They bring to a close this rally that is being held for the religious circles, the earth, the spirit world, physical world, and Cain and Abel-type worlds, in order to finalize what I, the Rev. Moon, have achieved through the course of my entire life with God, the Lord of the spirit world and physical world. This could not have appeared in history before now. We have come to today's assembly following the starting point of the Seoul Assembly and the Washington DC-New York Assembly. The first represented Korea, which will be God's homeland, and the second represented America, the central nation. We held these assemblies in order to establish the realm of victory and make headlines that convey my life course. This is a course that brings to a decisive conclusion the realm of victory, creating a world in which God, who is completely victorious in the providence, is liberated and completely freed through the life course of the True Parents. In addition, we have held these assemblies in order to bring perfection, completion and conclusion to the Era after the Coming of Heaven. True Parents' proclamation at the "Cosmic Assembly for the Settlement of the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind Who, as God's Embodiment, Proclaim the Word," including the Washington DC-New York Assembly, the Hoover Dam Assembly in Las Vegas, and the Seoul Assembly in Korea, which is becoming God's homeland and hometown, signifies the ultimate perfection, completion and finalization of the providence. We have to complete this mission in one year and eight months, by the D-Day designated by True Parents. In this way, Korea, which gave birth to the True Parents, will be perfected, completed and finalized as God's homeland and hometown.

Let us become victors bearing the fruit of the providence

7 Activities centered on the United Nations are on track and accelerating. In addition, the Women's Federation for World Peace, which my wife and I founded, has been recognized for initiating activities that are in line with the UN's founding purpose and goals. Thus, it is becoming one of the top tier organizations among the 3,400 plus NGOs registered with the UN. Furthermore, WFWP has achieved outstanding results in promoting women's rights and solving problems of poverty and education for children. As a result, WFWP has already been awarded for its work on a number of occasions. Recently, The Washington Times, which had left my hands through the trickery of communists, was restored to us again. If this isn't a miracle, I don't know what is. Top representatives of the Cain realm, both black and white, will cooperate centering on The Washington Times board of directors to create a federation that promotes the truth of God's Will for God's homeland and hometown and protects the nation of God's sovereignty.

8 Ladies and gentlemen, the world is now revolving around the True Parents. Historically, Korea and Japan, Japan and the United States, the United States and Russia and other such pairs have been enemy nations. People from these nations will also take part in the cross-cultural marriage Blessing on a nationwide scale in order to discard the fallen lineage, received from Lucifer, and inherit the new heavenly lineage. Religious leaders on a worldwide scale will spearhead the ongoing project to build undersea tunnels between Korea and Japan and across the Bering Strait, which I have proclaimed to the world, and complete it in attendance of our liberated God.

9 We will discard atheism and communism, which deny God's existence, and pave the way to the world that God originally envisioned, where all people can communicate freely in harmony. We are creating, right before your eyes, a world where all people are equal and all nations are as siblings in one family under God. I pray that you will participate as victors in this history-shaping, providential revolution. May the heavenly fortune that flows through the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind be with each of you. I pray in the name of True Parents that God's blessings will be with you, your family and your nation.

TRUE PARENTS' PRAYERS

Chapter 1. God1451

Chapter 2. True Parents 1465

Chapter 3. True Love..... 1481

Chapter 4. True Person..... 1498

Chapter 5. True Family..... 1513

Chapter 6. True Creation..... 1528**Chapter 7. Earthly Life and the Spirit World..... 1542****Chapter 8. Life of Faith and Training..... 1556****Chapter 9. Home Church and the Tribal Messiah..... 1568****Chapter 10. The Philosophy of Peace..... 1582****Chapter 11. Ceremonies and Holy..... 1594****Chapter 12. Cheon Il Guk..... 1608****Chapter 13. Peace Messages..... 1622****True Father's final prayer****TRUE PARENTS' PRAYERS****CHAPTER 1 God****1. . Let us live in service to You, our Father, carrying the banner of victory**

My Father! We know that in the beginning You created all things of creation with a Will of goodness, according to the standard of Your original nature and as an unchanging being. But because humankind could not become the object of goodness to such a Father, we could not realize Your ideal. As a result, we know that the place where we stand is far from the standard of goodness that accords with our conscience. Furthermore, we know that this has caused Heaven and all things of creation to lament.

O Father! For us there still remains the path of providential destiny, through which we need to reach Your standard of goodness, even if we have to give our lives. Since it is our mission to walk that path to the very end, please, with Your mighty omnipotence, nudge us and hasten us along this path.

Elements of evil invade us through our body and block our mind, even as it tends towards goodness. Father, please guide us so that in this battle our mind, which seeks the good, will not be restrained and defeated by our body.

We earnestly hope and pray, Father, that You will allow our mind to be led only by the power of goodness and the power of love. Please let us, as unchanging beings, find You and harmonize with You. Please let us resemble Your external form, as eternal embodiments who cannot be separated from You, and please hold onto us so we may attend You eternally, Father.

We are covered with scars from a long historical process of battling with sin, and yet the root of sin remains, deeply embedded in our bones and flesh. Though we have the responsibility to remove it from ourselves, we are inadequate to do so.

Therefore we implore You, our Father who has the authority of life, the authority of power and the authority of creation, to please extend Your almighty touch over our body and mind once again and eliminate from us all elements of evil that entrap us in the shadow of death. Please allow Your touch to stimulate the heart of victory within us, and let this moment serve as an opportunity for Heaven to directly fill us with life. Please raise the power of resurrection within us. We earnestly hope and desire, our loving Father, that You will allow us to become Your sons and daughters who are able to bring about the work of resurrection as Your representatives in these present circumstances.

Please lead us, so that we will not be among those who lament that their position is unsatisfactory. Please acknowledge our qualification as Your true children through our victory in battle against the evil spirits who are our enemies, and who block our way as we make haste on the course toward perfection. Furthermore, please guide us that we may become sons and daughters You can be proud of in front of countless evil spirits. Beloved Father, we sincerely hope and pray that You will allow us to carry the weapons that Your heavenly forces have always carried, so that we may fight on their behalf and be victorious over the myriads of evil spirits.

Father, this small group of people has gathered here at this time to kneel down, prostrate before You and tell You truthfully how unworthy we are. Therefore if we have any insufficiencies, please grant us penitent hearts so that we may repent of our own accord. Please give us minds of wisdom and understanding, and please allow us the eyes and hearts through which we can distinguish goodness from evil. We earnestly and sincerely hope and pray that at this time You will be with us and work directly through us so we may see and understand correctly.

Father, this is the time for us to present You with true gifts, but even if we have nothing to present, please allow us to offer You our original hearts in their entirety. We truly hope and pray, beloved Father, that You will remove all elements of evil from our bodies, stained with sin, and allow us to show ourselves candidly before You, our Father, with a body and mind that move according to Your command and befit Your desire and Will.

Please bestow Your promised grace equally upon Your many sons and daughters, scattered in all directions, who have set up their lonely altars this evening. Now that the Last Days are here, please allow Your works of inspiration, Your works of influence and Your works of power to be manifested wherever Your children reside, so the Will You have foretold can be accomplished. We know that many sons and

daughters are setting up altars of prayer on their lonely journey to find the true altar. Please command that they may swiftly gather in one place and grant that they may receive the Will You have approved. Our beloved Father, we also hope and pray with all our heart that You will guide them to be children who are worthy to go forth carrying aloft Your banner of victory for eternity.

We pray that, wherever people are gathered at this hour to worship before the altar of Heaven, the sacred work of the Holy Spirit may come upon them, that they may be filled with inspiration and moved to repentance, so this people may fulfill the mission You have given them in these Last Days. Please guide them. With the hope that You will continue to lead us according to

Your Will during the remaining time, we pray in the name of the Lord. Aju. (March 6, 1957)

2. Please allow us to achieve Your Will

Father of love! We have come to understand Your lament that there has been no one who could end the history of struggle, the sorrow of Heaven. Human beings have to pull out the original root of the Fall that our ancestors planted. Despite the long passage of history, we have been unable to pull out that original root of sin. We ask that You please allow us to uproot it.

All of us gathered here today earnestly hope and desire that You will allow us to share Your bitter sorrow and make it our own. Please allow us to share the sadness in Your heart and to feel once again the hope You have long harbored. Please allow us to become brave people who can take responsibility for the history of sorrow, combat the countless enemy evil spirits, and emerge going forth as representatives of heaven and earth.

On the field of battle that remains, please grant each of us the power to take responsibility and go forth to accomplish Your Will, until we attain the garden of joy where we can share with one another the heart of love of our eternal Father. We earnestly hope and desire, beloved Father, that You will allow us to become Your dauntless sons and daughters who fight Satan, each one of us representing Your Will in its entirety.

At this time allow us to comprehend the goal in heaven our heart is headed toward, and the goal in the universe our body is headed toward. We hope and pray that You, our Father, will permit us to become children who can resolve Your sorrow

and thereby bring You joy. As yet our body and mind are not embraced in Your bosom, so please look after us, work Your power through us and set our heart in the right direction. Please set straight the natural direction of our heart, and permit us to walk the path of hope You desire.

Please grant that we may profoundly experience the grace of Your joy within our mind and body, and please carry out Your work of re-creation through us. We earnestly hope and pray, beloved Father, that we may become children who, having taken hold of the root of sin and fought and won over it, can deeply experience Your love and return glory to You. Beloved Father, we sincerely hope You will not allow the countless evil spirits to accuse Your children gathered here at this hour; instead, allow us to be offered on Your altar as a sacrifice of glory.

Now, as we prostrate in front of You, Father, please grant that we may be aware of our shortcomings and able to confess them to You, truthfully and of our own accord. We earnestly hope and pray that You permit us to become children who submit as obedient and humble offerings before Your grace of atonement. Let us appear before You like the prodigal son who came back to his father. Please do not let this group shed tears of lamentation or take steps that will give Satan cause to ridicule us. Please be with us at least for this one hour. Let our mind and body be held captive before You, Father. We sincerely hope and pray that in this hour we may become an ideal offering in front of You, that we may joyfully receive Your grace of eternal life, grace of resurrection and grace of love.

Father, today is a sacred day. You have appointed it as a day to give blessings to all people. Therefore please bestow the grace of joy upon every chinch where people are gathered as representatives of humanity. Now that the Last Days are here, please drench us with the fire of the Holy Spirit, unite us as Your chosen children and enable us to victoriously combat the dark forces in this world. Father, we earnestly hope and desire that You allow us to go forth and conquer all evil, representing six thousand years of sorrow, and emerge as Your sons and daughters.

Father, we pray that You will first bless the altar that represents this people, then grant that Your sons and daughters, who strive to offer all their devotion, their heart, and their loyalty to You as representatives of that altar, may become eternal offerings before You. Now, on the remaining field of battle, please grant that we do not incur indebtedness to You but rather that we care for the grace of eternal victory. Moreover, Father, we earnestly ask and pray that You grant us the ability to go forth and accomplish Your Will with an invincible warrior's heart, until the ideal

garden, in which You can pour out all the blessings You hold in Your heart, is built on the earth.

Our loving Father! Many of Your children were unable to come and take part in this evening's gathering. Please work through them in the same way. Wherever they may be, allow them to proclaim in all directions the Will You desire to fulfill in the Last Days, and let them set up the altar of joy through which heaven and earth can come together in harmony. We earnestly hope and pray that You allow us to be Your children who will dedicate all our power, heart and energy solely to achieving Your Will.

I pray all these things in the name of the Lord. Aju! (October 7,1956)

3. Please teach us to take responsibility for the heart of Heaven

Father, on this day that You have granted us, we are gathered before You on our knees, concerned that we are unworthy. Please allow us to fathom where our hearts are right now. We know that the life course You have pioneered has been so very solemn and sanctified.

Father, please look with compassion upon Your sons and daughters gathered here. We earnestly hope and pray that You will show Your awesome free among us. Grant us the standard of victory You have set up, by which You can seek and recognize us as Your sanctified people. We know that if the remaining providential course is one of sorrow, it is our responsibility to resolve this sorrow. We also know that one who cannot feel Heaven's infinite sorrow cannot take responsibility to alleviate that sorrow.

Please let us become people who can take responsibility for the sorrowful heart of Heaven and the battles that remain. We are aware that, unless we profoundly experience sorrow to a greater extent than anyone else, and unless we become people who do not give up even when faced with great injustice on the battlefield, we will be incapable of handling this responsibility. Father, it is our earnest hope and prayer that You allow us to stand before You as people whose hearts are concerned over whether our bodies can be victorious sacrifices, worthy of being offered to Heaven.

Two thousand years of history have passed since Jesus came to the earth and left. Still, the altar of true victory that Jesus established on Mount Calvary, over which Heaven wept together with him, has not yet appeared on earth. We know

that the time has come when Heaven and all human beings cannot help but move, when heaven and earth connect, and when the summit of Gethsemane and of the world-level Golgotha appear.

There should be many believers who are equal to this responsibility. But the more we realize that there are no groups that Heaven can happily seek out, the more we cannot help but weep as we look at this earth as sons and daughters who are concerned about Your heart. Father, please let us understand that the more eagerly You anticipate the day You have long hoped for, the more eagerly You anticipate the appearance on earth of those who will be loyal to You, Father.

Please allow us to become people who can take on all the historical sorrows, sons and daughters who can find our place in Your innermost heart and hold Your hand, offering You our entire mind and body today. At this time, please resurrect our mind and body through Your personal touch. Please pardon us for not fulfilling completely the responsibilities given to us during the past week and for not offering You our complete devotion. Please forgive us that we did not live each day overflowing with tears as we clung to Your heart, and that we have forgotten how hard You willingly toiled to find each one of us.

Father, it is our earnest hope and prayer that on this day, at this time, we may make a new determination and resolution, realizing how lacking we were in the past. Please grant that, controlling our mind and centering on Your heart, we may step forth as Your sons and daughters. Father, this is a sanctified day. Please look with compassion upon the 30 million people who are in a pitiful state. Father, we earnestly hope and pray that You will be their friend, that You will be their leader and that You will be the Owner who resurrects their lives.

We pray that You will become the center of their hope. We hope and pray that You will let them become a group, let them become a people and let them become a faith body that cannot move apart from You.

We sincerely hope and pray that You may bestow the blessing You have prepared for this people at this time. Please grant Your sons and daughters, who are responsible for the day of victory, the ability to handle their responsibility and mission. We know it is this people's responsibility to fulfill Your Will and reveal Your glory. We know that the course to the fulfillment of this responsibility entails countless trials. Hence we sincerely hope and pray, Father, that You will allow us to become sons and daughters who can go forth on Your behalf, taking responsibility even for this course of trials.

Please also bless the many people who are ignorant of Your Will. At this time, as people are being swept along by the tides of life and death, please allow many groups to appear in the midst of humanity that can catch hold of You and become Your sons and daughters. We earnestly hope and pray, Father, that from among the people on earth many sons and daughters may rise and stand before You, capable of taking full responsibility and thereby allowing humanity to avoid the rod of judgment.

If there are people who are unaware of this mission, this age and this responsibility, please warn them through us.

Furthermore, Father, we earnestly hope that You will allow them to become sons and daughters who can handle the responsibility and mission of the Last Days. Father, we sincerely hope and pray that You will extend Your grace without restraint to those groups that are scattered throughout the countryside, appealing to You with lonely hearts. Please hold on to them so they will not fall behind in the course of battle to attain and claim the one day of victory You have permitted us.

We sincerely hope and pray that You will lead us personally from the first moment of this gathering to the last, Father, and that during this hour the powers of darkness may not be active. We surrender everything unto You. Please receive and take charge of our offering.

We pray in the name of the Lord. Aju! (March 15,1959)

4. Please grant us victory on our final, destined path

Father, Your children who have been fighting in the countryside have now gathered here in Seoul, the heart of the Republic of Korea. Father, please help them understand the nature of the heroic resolve they need to embody.

For whom have we gathered here today? Each one of us was victorious in battle and, based on this foundation, was able to stand erect as a living being. Nonetheless, we have selected first and foremost the solemn task of building the kingdom of heaven, and so we ought to examine ourselves objectively and assess our ability to fulfill this responsibility.

Father, we know that the issue lies not with our environment but with our attitude—whether we have the attitude of a person ready to take responsibility.

This is why, after completing his three-year course, Jesus prayed three times in the garden of Gethsemane and met his final destiny, having become one with You.

Father, we now have the responsibility of restoring the city of Seoul back to You. At this serious time, Father, please grant that we may feel Your sadness and wretchedness when, leading us, You see that we are unable to grasp even one ten-millionth of Your heart. As such, we each ought to criticize ourselves mercilessly, analyze our own thoughts and reflect on how our position relates to the whole.

By doing this, we must realize how lacking we each are. We must also hope that our brothers and sisters of faith around us are better than we are. We sincerely hope and pray that You can help us feel again that we need to have a hopeful heart that desires to accumulate hidden achievements, find the connecting point through which we can serve Your Will, and take action.

Father, now the time has come for us to restore Seoul. For some time now we have had this objective. However, due to the peoples lack of understanding, they erected a wall we could not overcome, and for some time we could not act freely. Therefore our position was wretched: as we suffered storms of hardships, we were intent only on overcoming exhaustion and living hand-to-mouth. However, the time has come to launch an offensive that we couldn't have conceived of.

By virtue of the toilsome trail You have blazed, the time has come to go on the offensive. Accordingly, we have to be victorious in the final battle and attain the position to sing Your praises, and pledge to bring You victorious results. We must not be people who have nothing to report to You. That is how it should be on the battleground. Furthermore, after being victorious, we must invest ourselves with a hundred times more youthful vigor so that when You look at us, Father, no matter what You ask us to do, You will be proud that we are people who do not fall short in any way. We must become such people.

Father, please protect Your children, who are spread all over South Korea. Father, I sincerely pray that the activities and organizations centering on us and focused on the final victory can be one with Your heart and the path You are walking, and that they thereby will help us become those who will gain victory in the final battleground.

Father, at this time, focusing on Seoul, please remember Your children all over South Korea as well as Your children all over the world. Father, please let us realize that You ceaselessly look down on our wretched selves with a heart of compassion and pity as we urge ourselves to go along this necessary final path of destiny.

Father, please grant that we may realize that when we are lonely, You share in our loneliness, and that when we face difficulties, You share in our difficulties and worry about us. Father, allow us to become people who keenly feel that our wretchedness does not end with us, but also becomes Your wretchedness.

Father, these days we often forget we are responsible for the solemn duty of achieving the liberation of three generations. Nevertheless, please grant that we, as those entrusted with the solemn responsibility of finding the path leading to the destiny of three generations, may feel like marathon runners in a stadium where all the saints and martyrs of history in the spirit world are watching us, where the people of this age are watching us and where even our future descendants will long for us to gain victory.

In this race, we have to overcome all obstacles, trials and suffering. Please help us realize that even though we may be sleepless, there is a final peak we need to overcome and go over. Father, we earnestly hope and pray that as we race toward the finish line beyond that peak, we may understand that, even if the adversity and difficulties on the track worsen, we must overcome and surmount all these aggravated difficulties, since that is the only way we can capture a victory whose brilliance will extend all over the world.

Father, please help us realize once again that when we go over the peak, the outcome will depend on the unity of the people responsible for this victory. Therefore, Father, I sincerely hope and pray that we may become those You can command without reserve and lead without worrying that they will fail to follow through. Please grant that we may become the people of unification who can go over the highest peak with no hesitation, bring down the final cross that Satan erects, and surmount the final mountain.

Loving Father, it is our sincere hope and prayer that You allow us to become sons and daughters whose concern is the final day. We will equip ourselves on our own with the things we need, invest ourselves with all our might for the day we will meet only once, and prepare ourselves to fight even one thousand times for Your Will.

I beseech You to be with us on this day, and I offer all these things in the name of True Parents. Aju! (July 27,1969)

5. Please enable us to march forward with new resolve

Father, on this earth there are many people who praise Your holy name and who claim they are Your beloved sons and daughters. But how few of them indeed are Your true sons and daughters in whom You can actually confide Your heart and share Your personal feelings. The more we think about this, the more we come to feel the wretchedness of this reality.

Father! Among the many peoples in various lands, You remembered this pitiful people who were driven out so many times. We would like to first thank You for Your holy Will that led You to select the lonely hills and mountains extending across this peninsula and to raise this nation as the center of Your providence. The more we realize the incredible value of the people who are totally loyal to this Will, the more we feel ashamed. However, when we meditate on Your loving heart that dwells more with a handicapped child than with a healthy one, we hope that You will forgive this people, whose historical background cannot but cause You concern.

Father! Unknown to others, Your children in the Unification Church have been shedding blood and tears until today as they fought for seven years to maintain a line of defense. At times they were driven out. Sometimes they beat their breasts as they wept or held their empty stomachs. At other times they shed endless tears as they contemplated Your situation, Father. All the past experiences began in this manner and with tears. However, instead of concluding with tears they ended in laughter. We have now ushered in a day when we can thank You for this. Furthermore, we cannot help but be even more grateful when we realize that we owe this conclusion to Your assistance and protection.

It is the united appeal of our hearts that the free heaven and earth where we can welcome You and fully sing Your praises may be realized quickly. Thus we bow and prostrate ourselves before You, with the earnest hope and prayer that You will welcome all our personal stories. Father, today is a sanctified day. Your lonely children scattered in all parts of South Korea are on their knees. They have directed their gaze this way and are making appeals with a sincere heart. Please receive their hearts. Just as You were our friend and just as You protected us whenever we told You of our sorrowful situations, we hope and pray that You will comfort them.

No matter what anyone says, we are lonely people who have nothing. Only You are on our side. You alone are all we have. We realize that the fact that we are living for You is a high and noble thing that money cannot buy, and we hope and pray that You will not let our hearts be disappointed.

The headquarters of the Unification Church connects to the world and is located in Seoul. Please remember Your children who have remained here. We know that this position can be a fearful position if we think it is fearful, a sorrowful position if we think it is sorrowful and a difficult position if we think it is difficult. However, if we are a group of people who are in You, Father, who are connected to Your heart and who live because of You, then we know You are eternally with us at the place where we stand and You personally guide and take charge of our lives. Therefore we offer our deepest gratitude to You, Father, for Your grace in allowing us to stand in this place.

Father! Please grant that we may be sincerely grateful that, even though we are so unworthy, we have been placed in this position today thanks to the merit accumulated by our ancestors throughout their lives as well as the merit of the age. Please allow us to be grateful not from our own personal position but rather from a historical position that extends through the past, present and future. Although we know You will recognize anyone who manifests such victory as worthier than any great figure in history, we earnestly hope and pray that You will raise us to stand in such a position.

Beloved Father! We are about to usher in a new year, and we hope and pray that You will allow it to be a year of joy, in which we can complete all heavenly programs planned for it and the kingdom of heaven You desire will be built on earth, so we can sing aloud a triumphal song of victory and return esteem, glory and praise to You. Father, please let all Your children, whose hearts are connected to one another's, become brothers and sisters who can fully manifest Your heart. We hope and pray that You will let us become Your sons and daughters, who can form the tribe of hope through the connection between parents and children of faith.

Please remember all Your children spread out in the world. There are many groups who are fighting even today from a lonely position centered on the connection to Your heart, so we hope and pray that You will remember them all. Please protect us personally until we meet again.

Furthermore, we earnestly hope and pray that You will allow us to become people who resolve and pledge for all of our lives to fulfill our duties of filial piety and loyalty before Your remaining Will, and to leave behind the record of loyalty You desire before Heaven.

With the coming of the new year, we will set out on the second seven-year course. Please grant that through the words we have heard at this moment we may

make a new resolution and swiftly march forward. Since Heaven prevails even where cruel and violent winds rage, we know that if we set out with a firm resolution to follow in Your footsteps, our path will be shortened and leveled. We hope and pray that You will allow us to become Your children, who can set out on our second seven-year course, stepping strongly with a new resolution for the new year. We sincerely ask You to extend the glory of Your victory and grace to all things, and we humbly pray all these things in the holy name of True Parents. Aju!
(December 24,1967)

6. Let us become a group that offers utmost devotion

Beloved Father, even though the path ahead may be rough, when my heart of love and loyalty toward You urges me forward, even though my legs drip with blood, I shall be grateful for and value, even in my exhaustion, this path upon which I can be filled with reverence and enter the presence of Heaven, knowing this is all because of Your amazing love.

When I hear someone comment that I am over sixty years old now and talk about my having a successor, I feel sorry because I have not completed the course I have to go or completely fulfilled the way of loyalty to You. Thinking of this, I pray that I may go to the very end of the course that remains, with all my strength and energy. Beloved Father, please guide me so that I may conclude everything beautifully, even if it means ending my life on the path of suffering where I began.

I have no need for authority, money or knowledge. I need only the path through which this people, centered on Your love, may seek You in tears. I am only in need of that path, Your path of love, that all the people of the world may follow, forgetting everything and shedding tears. Regarding this tradition, while I am alive, in the short course of my life, I must bequeath the components of this tradition and prepare a point of origin so the water of life may gush forth from the hearts of the young people of the Unification family, not only in this age but also in future generations. Our Father, who knows very well the path we need to follow as we go out to fulfill our duty at this time, please remember the Unification group that is scattered across the world today.

There are people praying in tears and wishing me a long life as they think about how I am, here in this lonely land of Korea. The faint sound of their appeal for great fortune to cover the path of their Teacher does not arise from their wish to be saved by me. It is only to obtain Your cooperation for the sake of the victory of Your Will. I am a pitiable person and they too are pitiable people. Please remember

them and extend Your blessings, so that instead of tasting the bitter cup of defeat in a cornered position, and becoming a group that betrays Heaven with lamentation, they may drink the cup of victory while glorious songs of welcome and praise for You are heard. Father, I ask that You render Your assistance so this may come to pass.

Father, please be with us in the battlefield now unfolding in the United States. This battle shall be one that can manifest Your glory and love, one that can display the dignified presence of the Unification Church, and one that can reveal the true image of the sons and daughters of Heaven as they go forth on their path. Because I know this, I am taking the lead without concerning myself with anything else. I do not wish to hear or see the prayers and tears of the pitiful, nor the sound of their prayers pleading in bitterness. I know You too do not wish for this. Please have pity on them and forgive the people of America so then- hopes can be fulfilled. I once again request that You bless the federal court and guide it so that it can distinguish that path of goodness.

Beloved Father, this time I stayed in Korea for twenty days. Many changes occurred and many circumstances arose during this time. But please ensure that this course does not end in a failure to bequeath Heaven's love or a failure to leave behind a victorious foundation upon which the people can stand. Even if people curse me and look at me with disdain, I shall go forward on this path if it is the one to which Heaven will come and bless the future of the people of this nation.

In so doing, I know that this will block the path leading the people of the world to misery. That is why I seek Your understanding of the circumstances that compel me to grasp and pray about this matter. If the people are at fault, please forgive them. If the politicians are at fault, please forgive them. I know they are taking that path due to ignorance. I pray that Heaven instruct them and enable them to take action. If they do not take action even then, the laws of Heaven will reproach them. If they do not listen even after knowing that what they have heard is true and knowing what they should do, they will be rebuked. Such is Your Will. Yet I fervently, fervently wish and pray, Father, that You see and understand my heart, which longs for Your Will to be applied to this people and this nation.

I earnestly wish and pray that tens of thousands of blessings will be upon those who hear the news about me, look forward to the day of victory, and pray with their hands pressed together. Father, may You know and protect this altar. The people whom I leave behind have pledged to engage in a fight that will be remembered in history as having been a fierce battle. Father, I sincerely wish and

pray that You allow this group of people to become individuals who hold on to a single person and struggle, shed tears and lament for that person. Let them invest their complete devotion to pioneer a trail over the peak of resentment on their own, and move beyond it with tears. I pray that You protect them until I meet them again. Please remember all the Unificationists in Korea and around the world. Please keep the future of this nation and its people in Your heart.

I pray that You protect the democratic world and blaze a trail of victory into the communist world. Thus I pray that Heaven's glorious day, a foundation pulsating with Your ideal of love, can be manifested on this planet Earth. I thank You for this time You have permitted. All this I pray in the name of the True Parents. Aju!
(November 22,1981)

7. Let this be a victorious year and turning point

Beloved Father, a new year has dawned. May Heaven's blessings be upon the earth on the morning of this New Year's Day. At this hour, as we receive the new year, let the historical and heavenly ties connect heaven to the earth. Please allow Heaven's blessings to be connected with all religions and all humanity centering on the Unification Church group. And may these blessings be expanded to one family, one tribe, one people, one nation and one world revolving around the single heart that serves as Your center.

Father, at this hour the democratic and communist worlds have climbed to their final summits but, unable to occupy those positions, are in a state of confusion. This is the case with both the United States, representing the democratic world, and the Soviet Union, representing the communist world. As for the Adam, Eve, Abel and Cain nations that You intended to establish within the democratic world, they also are placed at their summit points, just like the democratic United States and the communist Soviet Union, both of which are at the top of the world today.

I thank Heaven's grace for connecting the goals of the United States, Japan and Korea, centering on all the erudite scholars of the world in this age. You have thereby reinforced the new organization for victory over communism and thus enabled Korea to become a new global point of origin, empowering it to prepare a foundation from which it can leap toward a new world. Now that I know that the fate of the world is swayed by the activities of the Unification Church, I ask that You please bless it on its path. I sincerely pray that You permit us to reverse history and establish conditions so we can praise today's victory, obtained through the infusion

of all manner of blessings, and enable us to dissolve the bitter sorrow You held for six thousand years.

How much suffering have You endured since the time of the Fall, through Judaism and Christianity, until the advent of the Unification Church, offering Your helping hand for the sake of providential history? You paid so much indemnity. Such a bloody history remains, in which so many people who followed Heaven's Will without fully understanding it, offered their lives. All these achievements made in blood have come to fruition today, ushering in the year 1984 as a turning point when we are able to bring about a global and historic liberation of bitter sorrow centering on the Unification Church. Father, please let Your unique and full authority be manifested.

I know that the day approaches when those who have been trampled upon will stand up, and when those who revere Heaven but have been driven out will become exemplary and glorify Heaven. Continually until this day, Unificationists have been driven away. Numerous nations, peoples, families and individuals have chased them away. Now the path of the setting sun has come to an end and the shining morning sun has risen, focused on the Unification Church. I sincerely pray that You permit this to be the year in which the world gazes upon the light of the Unification Church and welcomes a new world amid the bright sunlight.

I sincerely pray that You allow us to welcome the age when those who have been pursued may come back, lick their wounds and offer You their thanks. At this point in time, there is a son who stands in the position of a sacrificial offering. I sincerely pray and hope that an opportunity may come about through this son, as a living offering, to create the victorious kingdom of heaven.

I sincerely pray and request, Father, that Your power descend from heaven to the earth with Your omnipotent and full authority, allowing all religions to become one and all nations to unite as one, in the realm of heart that revolves around You, the one and only God. Now, centered on the Unification Church and representing the nation, the time has come to be strong and to take courage. The final time has come to resolve to draw the line of justice and righteousness with blood. I sincerely pray and request Your permission for the Unificationists to take a strong stance toward these issues and be able to advance on a straight path toward Heaven and toward the blessed land of Canaan.

Father, may You bless anew this entire year and allow it to be a year of victory. Please allow us to make 1984 a year in which we establish a new starting point in

the battle against Satan, based on the legal sphere, and have a celebration with the Father. This year is also the thirtieth year since the founding of the Association. Therefore, Father, I sincerely pray and hope that You will grant Your blessing so that, based on the number thirty, the victorious nations may make a new beginning, and that a period corresponding to Jesus' three-year public course may come about.

Please grant that all the children gathered here with their heads bowed may greet the new year and be able to make this resolution of heart all in the same way. I sincerely pray and hope that You allow this to be the time when all here may strengthen their internal and external resolve to embark upon this expedition as the elite force of the heavenly nation for the creation of a new world. Please allow this to be a year in which all the sorrowful incidents and inadequacies of the past year may be harvested before You, Heavenly Father, as the fruits of victory.

I sincerely pray and hope that You guide this year to victory, so a decisive and epoch-making line may be drawn to mark a turning point for heaven and a turning point for the world and the universe.

All this I pray in the name of the True Parents. Aju! (January 1, 1984)

CHAPTER 2

True Parents

1. Please awaken humanity from its slumber

Father! We know that the only thing that remains for us to accomplish is to fulfill the Will of heavenly principles. And we know that the center of that Will is You, Father, and the True Parents. Furthermore, we know that the people living on the earth must become the true sons and daughters of the True Parents. And not only that, we also know that what You want of us is that we become one as brothers and sisters, and to have all people become Your true sons and daughters.

Father! We also know that the sin of blocking the way of and violating the people who want to stand in the position of the sons and daughters You are hoping for is a greater sin than any on this earth. Violating the true sincerity of another person is also a sin we cannot accept, but since we know that causing true sibling love to be lost is an even greater sin before heavenly law, we earnestly hope and desire that You will guide us and not let us forget this.

Father! We sons and daughters who are gathered here have been in a deep sleep, and the heavenly law is trying to wake us up. If someone says he is not able to get up because of another brother, how can he say that the Shepherd is leading him? Please do not let us remain in such a position. Let us take responsibility for our brothers as well, and please allow us to become sons and daughters who are able to prepare hidden altars as representatives of the heavenly principles.

Please establish the ideal of the eternal son and daughter that You desire, and please let us realize that Your gaze is always upon us. Please allow us to feel the touch of Your love, and please allow us to hear Your voice appealing to us. We also earnestly hope and desire, Father, that You will allow us to experience Your heart that is admonishing us even as it aches for us to resemble Your feelings, and to follow the example of Your inner nature, and to become the head disciples of Jesus Christ, who can be grateful, bowing down to You even if we die countless times for the Will.

At this time, we have heard words that made us feel in a new way about the many enemies that block our way to relieving the bitterness of heavenly ethics and to address Your Will anew. Please let us engrave these new facts we have learned in

our hearts, and know that today's words must not stop at changing our feelings on the individual level but have to go on to connect everything to the Will of heavenly law representing the nature of history and the nature of the universe, and that we have the mission to bring this about.

Beloved Father! Please let us fight with hearts of righteous indignation and hearts for the common good representing heavenly law, facing the many enemies who are blocking the way. Please let us go forward enduring again and again in order to offer You the day of victory. On greeting the day of victory, please allow us to be able to report to You the sorrows that we endured during that time, and please lead us so that we can go to the place where we can cling to Your precious hand and receive comfort.

Please allow us to awaken all people upon the earth, for they are sleeping. Since the entire world that You created is in the realm of lamentation, please mobilize us and let us restore this, and please grant all people the wisdom of heaven so that we may become citizens of the kingdom of heaven by each one fulfilling their responsibility. Please let us become sons and daughters who are able to go forward without hesitation no matter what course of struggle lies ahead. We earnestly hope and desire that You will allow us to become heaven's elite troops who are able to go forth for the Will alone even if we have to give up everything we have. We have humbly prayed all these things in the name of the Lord. Aju! (May 19,1957)

2. Please make us into the vessels You desire

Beloved Father! Together with all the things of creation that You made, we hope to offer before You, who oversees heaven and earth, praise of Your glory and majesty. Father! We know well that while passing through the eventful course of history, You have come through a history of re-creation that was extremely full of suffering in order to restore the mistake of our original ancestors. We realize how much misery and suffering filled the historical indemnity You paid in order to have each of us individually return to Your original position by passing over the path of the servant of servants, the path of the servant, the path of the adopted son, the path of the child, and even the relationship of true parents.

As people who deserve punishment because we sinned, we have walked a miserable course of sorrow-filled suffering, and though You had nothing to do with it, You took responsibility for everything, taking the lead and overcoming all sorts of

difficulties. We offer our sincere gratitude in view of the mighty accomplishments You attained while carrying out the work of re-creation.

Father! We have come to understand that there is not a single person who has not been touched by You, and we know that there is no country whatsoever that has not been led through Your hope. And furthermore, we know well that going beyond national borders, You are guiding all people to the present point in order to lead them into the original world of Your ideal.

When we think that in the world that must remain in the end, there will be only You and Your beloved sons and daughters and the heavenly forces of angels, we see that in this world the power of Satan and the people of Satan are far too great. We know that we Unification Church members are in a position where we cannot ask You to resolve this. We realize the fact that our Unification Church has the extremely precious responsibility to uphold the name of the True Parents and the name of the True Children and praise that family, and achieve on earth and in the spirit world the original state of the angelic world that is able to attend that family. When we think about this, we also remember that we are in the position where we have to inherit the great task of sons and daughters and, at the same time, inherit the great task of becoming parents, and then inherit Your original ideal of creation.

Therefore, we have to become children who are solely born of Your flesh and blood, and who are embraced in Your bosom, and who are loved as Your sons and daughters. Now that we are in a position where we can be embraced by You once again, we have to think about the fact that we need to go forward to the position of the heart of love, which is not inferior to the love You gave to Adam and Eve when You created them and raised them with hope. How can we possibly go forward to that standard of heart as descendants of the Fall. The only thing we can do is think about the wonderful fact that, the more we stand in the position of having made efforts in our yearning for the original attitude we should have, the worthier we will be when we appear before Your toiling heart, especially since You have overcome a path of suffering for our very selves. At such times, we can imagine, however little, Your heart, as our Father who is endeavoring to establish us before His original heart.

Father! Your young children, who have become hardened, must pass through Your touch and become the material for re-creation in Your presence. We have already understood that we must become like clay, surrendering ourselves to You to be molded as You wish, just like the time You first created us by mixing soil and water. We are not in a position to have our own opinions. Since we have

understood that the only kind of mind we can have is one that admires absolute faith and adores Your absolute love and a mind that seeks to become a faithful servant of Your absolute will, O Father, please accept us and take dominion over us.

Make us into the vessels You want. It is not up to us to demand that You make us into pottery or into valuable vessels or into earthenware, so we sincerely hope and pray that You will shape us so that we can become whatever objects You need. The Bible says that those who are not like children cannot enter the kingdom of heaven. We know that children are those whose lives depend on their parents. We know that a child relies on their parents for their livelihood. A child appears before You as an object partner who represents the whole, but that child does not know it. Similarly, people who live on the earth today are in a position where they do not know You. In this regard, we cannot but think that we stand in a position of ignorance even greater than that of a child.

When we look upon such a group of people, we see that the requisites of their original nature through which they can be connected to You are all defiled, and that they have become isolated beings who are in a most difficult position to communicate with the heart of Heaven. And You, Father, have the responsibility to move them with Your loving heart and thaw them, to disentangle any knots there may be, and to soften them if they have become hardened, thus guiding them to a position where they can know You. Taking this into consideration, we realize we didn't know the fact that the mistake committed in a day, the mistake of the Fall, has brought about this bottomless pit of sorrows that cannot be resolved even after passing through such a path of suffering.

As for the original position that You demanded, our limbs went on a path of opposition, and our eyes that see did the same, and our ears that hear did the same, and our mouth that talks did the same. When we realize that we have been such people, we cannot but sincerely hope that, for thousands of times, You will allow us to look in the direction You are looking in and listen to Your words, and that You will bless us to speak with a mouth through which we can whisper to You. In spite of the fact that we should follow You with our own limbs, wearing ragged clothes if need be, or crawling on our stomachs if there is no other way, we have instead become disloyal and unfilial people who are self-pitying and cannot be forgiven because we thrash and say we cannot go even when Heaven is guiding us. Since we know this, Father, please expand Your heart of mercy and Your heart of love.

The eternal ideal has been bequeathed because there still remains the originally created connection that cannot be forsaken, and since we know that the ideal desired by You cannot be forsaken as well, we cannot help but raise both our arms toward Heaven and clamor for You to save us. So, Father, we earnestly hope and pray that You will bear with us. Please hold on to our feeble hands and guide us to the originally intended world that You desire. We did not know until now that You have had to overcome hardships, whipped and scorned all the way, so please allow us to understand Your suffering, the suffering our Parent is going through. Allow us to feel it, allow us to be awakened to it, even if only in our hearts.

Please let there be many people who understand how much Heaven has had to endeavor for them, repent of such a history, struggle to take responsibility for this age and walk the suffering path of the cross instead. Since we know that all such people are members of the Unification Church, and there is no one else, and we are gathered here, Father, please look after us. You have already spread out members of the Unification Church, not only in Korea but also across the world, and we sincerely hope and pray that Your loving touch will be extended to wherever they are, as they give all their devotion and all their loyalty and all their adoration to You.

We have set the third seven-year course, and it has already been a month since we declared it after passing through the second seven-year course that You permitted by Your Will. When we look back on this morning of the first day of February, we see that the past month has been a busy one, and we hope that You will allow a bright victory to unfold in the land of Korea through that month, that You will allow a bright victory to unfold in Asia, and that You will let it ring out before all peoples. Not only that, but we also sincerely hope and pray, Father, that You will permit a history of joy, which has long been yearned for by the innumerable spirits in the spirit world, and through which they can be liberated, to be established as quickly as possible.

On February 8, we plan to hold a wedding ceremony of virtuous men and women from all over the world before

You, Father. That historical and global day is approaching, and yet there are groups of people who oppose us with all kinds of words and actions and who are trying to block that path and destroy it. However, this son of Yours has taken responsibility for this path and is guiding others with the knowledge that everything will be concluded as You see fit, so please take charge of this period of eight days and let that day be glorified. I, Your son, earnestly hope and pray that that day will be a day on which Your glory and prestige can be praised by all peoples and all nations.

Thank You for being with us during the forty or so days of my stay in Korea. Don't let anything that we do cloud Your glory in any way. We earnestly hope and pray that our work will become a foundation of victory on earth, where songs of welcome arise and sounds of joy arise on the path of Your personal coming and going that is escorted by heaven and earth and welcomed by all.

Father, when that event is concluded, the International One World Crusade, which is currently in Japan, will visit the land of Korea, and we have a huge amount of preparations to make before they come. We need to build up our international reputation, and think by ourselves how we can fulfill our mission as the homeland and the hometown and what we should bequeath to them. We have to examine ourselves. We, Your children in Korea, should show ourselves as having nothing to be ashamed of before

Heaven, thereby becoming a focal point of confidence and popularity as the clan of Heaven recognized in all parts of the world, and be aware of the danger of becoming a focal point of criticism instead. Since many people do not know this, we sincerely hope and pray that You will admonish them and educate them.

We have nothing and we possess nothing, but help us show that we love Heaven as we offer devotions to Heaven, and that, even if we are dressed in rags, Heaven is embedded deep in ourselves and deep in our hearts. We know that this alone is the responsibility of Your children living in Your homeland today and the mission they should fulfill. We have nothing else to show except this, and when we think about it, we sincerely and earnestly hope and pray that You will allow us to become a group of people who are upright and tenacious, hardened through perseverance by which we can overcome paths of severe suffering in our lives, knowing the preciousness of our internal value.

On this morning, please bestow blessings on Your children spread out across the world, and we request again and again that You will be with the young ones in East Garden and the youths of America who represent the world and who are getting ready to come here. Please protect them and guide them and personally lead them on every part of their course of visit so that they can experience the beauty of victory. Father, we hope that we can live this one month together in Your name. In Japan, our members are preparing for the rally that will be held on February 13, so please be with them. We earnestly ask that You will lead us, guarded by angels and the innumerable heavenly forces of the spirit world, so that we can raise high the new banner of unification in the world and adapt our minds and bodies to the new

echoes of Heaven. We have humbly prayed all these things in the name of the True Parents. Aju! (February 1,1975)

3. Please enable us to restore our subject nature

Father! Since spring indeed symbolizes liberation, we have to once again long for the joy of being held in the embrace of Your love. Since spring promises a new beginning, we need to make a new beginning while held in the embrace of Your love. Just as all things in nature are in harmony in spring, please allow us to be able to restore the nature of a subject partner that can harmonize with the entire universe while being held in the embrace of Your love, Father.

Spring evokes relationships of song and dance, and we yearn for the time when we can do that centered on Your love and in the bosom of Your love. As though this spring were a foundation for Sabbath, centered on Your Will, please allow us at this time to become people who can rest after being nestled in Your loving embrace, Father.

Father! By, inheriting all Your internal circumstances in this way, please let us long for the original human beings who could have made a new beginning with hope in the garden of Eden, and who could have been immersed in Your love, bursting with hope. We earnestly hope and desire that You will allow us to feel that kind of connection as we welcome this spring, and let us offer eternal thanks to You. Let the gardens of our minds be like that.

At this time, we are here to offer bows before You, Father, so please personally come to wherever Your name is praised and be with us. Please cause all the essential conditions of spring to appear once again in the gardens of our minds, and please allow our minds to be places where You personally dwell. It is not the liberation of humankind alone, it is not the beginning of humankind alone, and it is not the harmony of humankind alone. Rather, it is Your liberation, Father; it is Your beginning, and it is You who must become the central being of harmony.

Indeed, we must uphold You as our Father who can put aside His lofty prestige, extend His arms and dance and sing. Since we must become people who can prepare an eternal foundation for You where You can rest, please allow this to be a time when we can gain this wisdom through this spring. Though the time is short, let every moment of this meeting in which we offer bows before You be a time that can arouse the connections of the heart that we can never forget, and please

establish the one condition by which we can be deeply embraced in Your bosom of love. Aju! (April 21,1968)

4. Help us to put our resolve into practice

Our loving Father, You created Eden with the ideal You cherished from before the creation of the world, but the original ancestors, who were meant to become Your original object partner, fell instead and thus all beings on this earth could not live there, and we have come to realize that this became a sorrowful world that cannot form a connection to that place. This is truly sad, not only for You, our Father, but also for all created things. And we have come to know that the ringleaders who brought about this sad consequence were none other than the human beings You created, that is, the ancestors of humanity, Adam and Eve.

Though the sons and daughters born in Your direct line, Father, should have been good, they failed to fulfill their given responsibility and left nothing but bitter grief in human history. The more we contemplate this, the more we come to realize that, though great may have been the worries of human beings until now, they could in no way compare with the greatness of Your labors to save humanity. We earnestly hope and pray while we trace and measure those labors in our hearts, we will feel acutely once again what pitiful people we are before our Father.

Since the day that You lost Adam, how great have Your efforts been to find the one person in whom You could believe? And how much have You sought a person who would take responsibility and fight for You? How much have You longed for and sought one person who could inherit Your full authority? We cannot help but feel again, painfully, that it was Your anguish, Father, and the grief of human history, that there was no such person on the earth. Father, You have walked a path of constant tension and anxiety through a long six thousand years of history.

In sorrow, You endured from the position of taking responsibility for everything. You have continued doing so to this day without a moment of rest. Human beings have been struggling along a dark night path, but please let us bring to mind that You have been in anguish over the providence of human history in a darkness much deeper than that. And we are earnestly hoping and desiring that You will awaken us to the reality of our dishonorable and miserable selves. And please let us realize how full of grief Your way has been as You wandered and searched along the back alleys of history for six thousand years.

When we come to understand the fact that Your toiling footsteps trace a path of Your being driven out by so many nations and peoples, and Your wandering and searching in this country and that, in this city and that, and that You have arrived today here in the mountains and rivers of Korea, we feel once again that we are truly ashamed of ourselves in front of You. This people did not know the fact that centered on the Korean Peninsula and its 30 million people, You were reaching out through Your providence. Even our good ancestors who lived in this land and passed on did not know.

But now we have reached the time when we can understand the fact that You have reached out through Your providence centering on this people. When we think about this, we cannot help but confess that from the past until today this people stands in shame before You, Father. Even though we are unworthy to even dare to relate to You, You reached out to us in compassion and love, and You established us in the realm of the grace of Your love. Therefore, we sincerely request that You will let us become Your children who humbly bow to You representing this people, these mountains and rivers, and all human beings. In the course of history, the era You hoped for has passed, and now we are standing at a parting of the ways where we can usher in a new day of history, so please remember Your sons and daughters who are taking part in today's gathering.

Please have dominion over the minds of each and every one of us, and if You find any shortcomings there, please let us put an end to them here and now. Please allow us to examine our past, in which we failed to make efforts to bring about a substantial victory before the new Will, as we sincerely hope and pray that You will allow us to become Your sons and daughters who can usher in a new year when we can make a fresh beginning toward the promised world.

We know that those who are unworthy cannot stand before You, Father, but we have prostrated ourselves before Your knees through the grace of Your love, so please accept us at this time. We earnestly hope and pray that You will do so. If You don't acknowledge us, Father, who on earth would be more pitiful than we are? We endured even when we were cornered and chased around in this world. Even when we were persecuted, we revered You, Father, and appealed to You, so please look upon us with compassion once again at this time. We set the seven- year course, unknown to anyone else, and have undergone fierce struggles on this path. Father, there may even be some people who, during that period, could not endure the severe persecution and avoided this path, weeping tears. Such people could not but feel ashamed before You, Father, so please look upon them with compassion when they blame themselves in their heart. Even if they cannot hold up their heads high

before You because they do not have a clear conscience, we sincerely hope and pray that You will remember them as they call out for You, Father, with nothing but faith harbored deep in their hearts.

Though we are so unworthy and foolish, thanks to Your protection we have been able to come this far today. Therefore, Father, guide us to persevere and go forward until we reach the day You have promised us. We earnestly hope and pray that You will allow this hour to be one in which Your children, who have worked hard until now for this Will, can pool their hearts together and offer You their gratitude. Please supervise everything we have to do on this day, and we sincerely hope and pray that You will let this hour be one in which we can resolve and pledge to begin anew on our way toward the new promised world in this coming year.

Father! In that the twenty-one-year course we passed through was a very long time, when we think about Your long, sad historical course of six thousand years, we come to realize once again that there is no one who is more pitiful than You or who is lonelier than You, Father. We regret our past, in which we promised loyalty to You but failed to fulfill it and we promised filial piety to You but failed to fulfill that either, and we beg for Your forgiveness. We sincerely hope and pray that, from now on, You will allow us to become Your sons and daughters who can practice our resolution to be loyal and filial to You.

Father, Your sons and daughters, who remember and celebrate this day and who pray before You with all their hearts and will, are spread out across this nation, so please embrace them deep in Your heart. We hope and pray that You will embrace them with Your heart of love. Your sons and daughters are gathered here at this time, so please look after them. We also hope with all our hearts that You will, through Your words, personally look after those of Your sons and daughters who could not come today. Please let everything become one with Your Will, so that there will not be even the smallest little thing that is not suitable to Your Will, and please let us begin only from the Will and achieve results only through the Will, so that we can reveal only the glory of our Father.

Thus, we sincerely ask that You will let the glory of Your Will be revealed on this earth and be with us forevermore. We have humbly prayed all these things in the name of the True Parents. Aju! (December 31, 1967)

5. Please allow us to establish the tradition of the parents

Beloved Father, in the face of Your sacred Will to block the flow of history and raise the shield of victory, we once again go down on our knees and beg You to forgive the shame of our ancestors. The history of sin stemmed from Adam and Eve and has extended down to the innumerable human beings of the present, and when we think about the fact that You have continued a history of struggles in the total darkness amid vicissitudes unknown to anyone, harboring the sorrow of billions of generations, to save this situation, Father, we truly feel ashamed of ourselves before Your toils.

We come to think about the fact that, though You are more than justified in repeatedly abandoning such offspring of the Fall, You have continued to grope Your way through the course of restoration based on the Principle because You are the creative subject being who cannot abandon them. We have also come to realize that, though many people have come and gone in that process and many people have passed through this earth in the midst of the vicissitudes of grief and struggles, when they go to the spirit world they continue to stay in sadness where they cannot hide their shame before You.

There was no one who could comfort Your heart, which could not find joy on earth or in heaven, and there wasn't the one son or daughter who could become the companion of Your heart and hold on to You and share their stories with You. Moreover, there was no bridegroom or bride who could build a nest in the site of Your love. Moreover, beloved Father, there weren't the parents who could boast of knowing what Your love is like, and there weren't beloved children before those parents. In short, there was not one person on earth who could relieve the afflictions in Your heart, caused by the fact that the history of sadness coming from the failure to complete the four-position foundation could not be resolved.

No one knew the fact that the human beings living on this earth are the descendants of the Fall, who need to make their way back through all these atrocious environments and bring this matter under control. Beloved Father, we have come to know that, right before Your eyes, many people have died, and many, who tried to inherit the blood that flowed from the martyrs of old and block the path of historical crises and resentments, made everything worse.

Your sacred Will in establishing Judaism was the grounds of hope through which You desired to see the beginning of the end of this sorrowful history at the time when Jacob wrestled with an angel at the ford of the Jabbok and built the victorious base. However, when we trace back the ups and downs of the history of two thousand years, we can see that our ancestors failed to fulfill their

responsibility. Thus, through the process of two thousand years after Jacob, and at the center of Your Will, centering on the standard of the individual, family, tribe, people, and nation, You sent the Messiah on the external standard of the nation. Nonetheless, You had no choice but to watch the misfortune suffered by Jesus Christ.

Not one person knew the fact that Your Will to bring the brightly shining victorious realm of Rome under Your sovereignty and make a unified world for thousands of generations to come, was left only as wretched history due to the one day of Jesus' misfortune. Many Christians today praise his death on the cross as the basis of glory, that through it he paved the way for his resurrection, and that it is the banner of liberation. No one knew how great Your sorrow was as You tried to enlighten us about the sorrowful truth, and how deep were the vicissitudes of the bitterly regretful heart of Jesus Christ.

You have personally witnessed the sadness of history, in which Christianity was considered to be the enemy and driven into a corner by the Roman Empire and the chosen people of Israel, and the fact that they were unjustly brought down by the swords and guns of innumerable mounted soldiers; these and other sad events have left behind many twists and turns of grief. And even as You watched such scenes, You still had to lead them, so You retreated with an anguished heart and fell into despair thousands of times. Yet each time You had to stand up again in pursuit of that one day of the ideal, biting Your tongue and suppressing the pain in Your heart that choked You with tears, to find that position once again, with no one knowing Your circumstances.

Father, even though the historical eras flowing by have split up in the form of sovereign nations and many of the sovereigns of those nations have been replaced, the center of Your heart of love could not change and the Principle of Creation You established could not change. We come to realize that, the more the changeable environment expanded out in all directions, the greater was Your loneliness as You stood in Your unchangeable position. At this hour of this day, if it is Your wish to forget the woeful history and the many hardships that still remain before You, please look down upon us at this time, when this unworthy son is declaring the victory of the conclusion of the third seven-year course before You, our Father, on this morning of this day at the celebration of the twentieth anniversary of Parents' Day, and if You can be comforted by us, we hope and pray that You will be comforted.

However, we also know all the stories and the many complications that compose the sad historical eras in the face of Your Will, and the tragedy of how You had no choice but to lay down the foundation for victory while in the background, defending this son of Yours. The sad truths, that Christianity was made an enemy, that the free world was made an enemy, and the communist world was made an enemy, and that they were all driven into positions from which they pointed their guns and knives at us, all emerged because the Korean people failed to fulfill the responsibility of this age, and because of the ignorance of human beings, who do not know the course of indemnity according to the Will established by Heaven. We know that this was why we had to go through such twists and turns in history.

Father! Now is not the time to blame anyone. Instead, we think about the reality that, along this path of suffering, the world, which should have been newly established after making up for the sad reality in Adam's family, the sad reality in Jesus' family, the sad reality in our family, the sad facts about the people of Israel, the sad facts about America centered on Christianity, the sad facts about Korea, and the sad history that has emerged all over this world, became the base of sadness rather than the base of blessings before Your heart and Will, Father. We, the children who know Your Will, must become the Unification Church, and become the members of the Unification Church who can pledge repeatedly and make effort to do whatever it takes to wash away the ignominy of history, and bear this even if all of us need to be sacrificed. We sincerely hope and pray that You will allow us to realize this truth today.

Father, please bless this hour of this day. Now we have declared that the first three seven-year courses have ended. The second three seven-year courses have now been begun in heaven and on earth, so please let us establish the new tradition of son and daughter, the new tradition of husband and wife, and the new tradition of parents. By so doing, let us remember the fact that the historical tradition, the new tradition of grandfather and grandmother centered on the new tradition of parents, still remains for us to establish.

We have fought our way here until now in our yearning for that day, so the Unification Church should inherit all the traditional facts that others do not possess or even know about, and on this day and at this place, centering on Home Church, we should pray with joined hands and embark on the world historical course of indemnity and lay down the foundation on which we can assume the new form of son and daughter and, starting from there, complete the form of bridegroom and bride and of parents, and then perfect the four-position foundation through the form of grandfather and grandmother. This is the one central altar on the world

historical and cosmic level rather than the level of the people, and we are truly grateful for Your grace in allowing the Unification Church to have this external foundation on earth today.

Through it, all spirits in the spirit world will undergo returning resurrection, and the liberation of the sorrows of Jesus will be achieved through that family, and Your Will will be fulfilled as You desire through this base of the kingdom of heaven on earth. This fact is encompassed in the motto, "Home Church Is My Kingdom of Heaven," centered on which we began the 1980s. Father, we earnestly hope and pray that, centering on this foundation, You will resolve all the thousands of difficult circumstances in Your heart, that You will raise the heart to take an aggressive stance, through which all the sorrows and mortifications in Your heart can be restored through indemnity, and expand Your basis of victory; moreover that You will work through us so that the realm of liberation can be established from New York to all parts of America and the world, and furthermore, to the spirit world.

Including all those who are praying for this day, all the members of the Unification Church who are praying with clasped hands for this place, and all those who are praising the victory of this day before You, our Father, remembering the name of True Parents in their hearts, all the spirits who passed away as believers of the Unification Church, all the spirits who passed away as believers of Christianity, and all the spirits who passed away as believers of Judaism, should be brought together as one under a single system and, centering on their portion of responsibility henceforth, in the second set of three seven-year courses, should stand at the forefront and move and lead the blessed families of the Unification Church and Christianity on earth. Father, we are sincerely offering You these words today so that we can make this historical beginning at this hour, so please allow us to do so. Hoping that the love and grace of thousands of generations will be with You for all eternity, we have humbly prayed all this in the name of True Parents. Aju! (April 15, 1980)

6. Please watch over us until we become Your beloved sons and daughters

Beloved Father! Up to now we did not know that if there is a traveler headed toward a faraway country, that wayfarer is You, our original Heavenly Father, the eternal subject being of the cosmos and the original substance of the ideal of love. Father, You have cherished the relational bond toward the earth in Your heart without forgetting this for even a single day. No one could know of Your loneliness, not having anyone to share the stories of millions of people that were tangled and snarled within Your heart.

I myself, who have the name of True Parents, am really ashamed to stand before You, Father. In spite of the fact that there have been billions of times in the deep night when I could have comforted You, whose heart was being pierced with such stories, I instead passed or lost those times because I was overcome by my own tiredness, seized by sleep. When I think of the many times that happened, I cannot but think once again how extremely unfilial I have been.

We are so extremely unfilial. The more we come to know, the more we cannot hold up our faces, and the more time passes, the more we cannot but feel ashamed of ourselves. We are so extremely unfilial that we cannot escape from having the name of the successor burdened with the sins of our ancestors. We know only too well how accursed and scorned we are by the grievous fact that we cannot escape from the position of the successor burdened with the sins of our ancestors. If we are in such a situation, and still are often called close to the position of our Father's heart, how can the suffering people, who are living in this world as wanderers who do not know anything, possibly understand Your heart?

I had intended not to speak seriously to the Unification Church members gathered here, but I did in the end. Please let them engrave those words in their heart, and do not let them forget those words. Today is the first Sunday after the cosmic event. For this son of Yours, October 14, 1982 is the day on which I met liberation and cast off the day of sadness thirty-two years ago. We know that, on that day, the one moment was found in which heaven and earth could offer praises in joy.

We knew that there needs to be the day of heaven that You, our Father, have desired to see on the earth, and we know the wish of all people who pool their hearts together as they wait for the hopeful, explosive opening. If there is one place where the mind of Heaven, the minds of the good ancestors in the spirit world, and the minds of those who follow the way of righteousness and heavenly law while living on earth, can be brought together in one focal point and be celebrated and praised for the first time in history, we know that that place is where the historical foundation of victory has been prepared by bringing together the youths of some eighty nations at this time, through which the sorrow of Christ and the sorrow of Adam can be appeased before Your prominent Will.

Breaking away from the deplorable environment of the spirit world, where You could not communicate freely with human beings in Your incorporeal form, we have prepared an environment on the horizontal plane of earth on which we can have the name of True Parents in Your stead, our Heavenly Father. In such an

environment, where they can eat the same food and live in the same situation on the horizontal plane, the world humanity, that is, the many peoples divided as Cain and Abel, can come together through this period on the standard of the heart of the sons and daughters and stand in the position wherein they can inherit the foundation of resurrection. Thus, they can form a relationship of the heart with Heaven, and with a value greater than that of the environment of the marriage of the Lamb centered on the bridegroom and bride anticipated for six thousand years, they can form a connection of heart in the land of Korea and go out into the world. It is truly amazing that this historical beginning has been brought about

Father, please forget the grief of the Old Testament Age. Please forget the tragic cross of Jesus of the New Testament Age, and please forget all atrocious scenes from the history of Christianity, when believers were killed, vomiting blood, boiled in oil, or torn to pieces.

At this time in which we were born, after all such background circumstances had been put behind us, do not let us have anything to be ashamed of in the path of pilgrimage we are destined to follow before the heavenly law. I am in a position where I need to give out the command of full mobilization so that we can fulfill the responsibilities of individuals, the responsibilities of families, the responsibilities of the church and the responsibilities of this nation, in order to set right and fix the connection of tradition that could not be established, and then link it to a new tradition before all people in the world. Therefore, please look upon us with joy, and since we have pledged to become the members of the Unification Church who have resolved to march forward without resting and with cherished hope, we earnestly hope and pray that You will receive us with a joyful heart.

Please let the grace of all generations be with us, and allow us to keep true to what we have pledged and resolved of our own accord. Please watch over us until we become not only Your sons and daughters who felt Your heart, but also Your sons and daughters whom You can raise, be proud of, and love. Father, we request again and again that You will spur us on and guide us to walk that path. We offer all these words in the name of True Parents. Aju! (October 17, 1982)

7. Please permit True Parents' love to be present in great abundance

In the world until now, there could not be found a true religion, and because there were no true husband nor true wife, no true parents, no true people, no true nation, and no true world, there could be no true kingdom of heaven in heaven. To

restore through indemnity the responsibilities that all children on this earth failed to fulfill, True Parents came to earth and fulfilled all those responsibilities by themselves, and thus the victorious royal authority was instituted and at the same time the realm of liberation was established on this earth.

Until now, because of the defensive works of the devil, the good ancestors in the spirit world were unable to return to earth. Through the declaration of the name of True Parents, however, through the foundation of the mainstream religions, every person can inherit the privilege of becoming true children on a level plane. By so doing, the domain of victory could be established on the level plane through which the ancestors of our clans can be connected to the realm of mainstream religions, and inherit the basis of the meritorious deeds performed by all good people, thus becoming able to return to any place and cooperate.

Now that this time has come, True Parents made a declaration that only I could make on this earth. This was not done only to find and restore my own country; it is based on the sacrifices made by Heaven until now to find my world and connect it not only to the kingdom of heaven on earth but also to the eternal world. Therefore, we should know that it is the wish of the people who have sacrificed themselves in the course of the hardships of millions of generations, and that we have now ushered in the moment of the fulfillment of the wish that good people have cherished before Heaven as they followed the path of the cross.

Beloved Father, now centering on the motto of this year, “The Unification of My Country,” we should stand at the forefront in unifying my country with a sense of awareness that we are the leaders in unifying not only my country but also my world, and this hour should be one in which we can make this declaration before heaven and earth and go forth. To this end, I have spoken today on the theme, unification of my country and world peace.

Since we have clearly learned that it is only when the world is connected to this place that the liberation of the unified homeland can be carried out, please receive all of our resolve. We also earnestly request that You will accept these words spoken today, the words that mark this declaration made in heaven and on earth, as the condition for victory that can pass through the spirit world and the physical world and mobilize the people on earth and those in the spirit world, so that they can fulfill the standard of the perfection of the unified parents, resolve all that was caused by the invasion of the angelic realm, and accomplish the liberation of the universe. Please let the righteousness of True Parents and the realm of love of True Parents, which mark the victory of all eternity, be abundant in the entire cosmos.

We offer this prayer and this declaration in the name of True Parents. Aju! (July 8,1990)

CHAPTER 3

True Love

1. Please grant that we may proclaim Your heart

Father, many groups desire to know what Your Will is. Many people wish to know what Your holy work is. And many people are waiting impatiently to receive the one person You will send them.

Please bless this hour of this day. We know that the person who can inherit all of the unfinished work of Heaven is not necessarily one who has practiced his faith for a long time, nor the one who attained great results serving others. We have come to know that when we believe, we need to anchor our faith in a true heart, and that when we live for others, it will not be adequate unless we share our heart with them and by so doing bring great results. We also understand that You are looking for a true person from among the myriads of people, and that it is Your Will to establish one true person in the midst of the multitude and bequeath Your unfinished work to that person.

Today, as we unworthy people come before Your amazing Will, Father, we should first realize how clearly undeserving we are. We should feel deep in our flesh and bones that we are descendants of the Fall who dare not stand before Heaven. We have come to understand that, no matter how much we search within, we have nothing we can present with pride before Heaven. The blood lineage from our ancestors is the lineage that betrayed You.

You even could not embrace all of the prophets in Your heart of eternal and joyful love, because they inherited the flesh and blood of our ancestors and had within them the bitter root of sin. Likewise today, we too are aware that we are people unworthy of Heaven's approval. When we come to understand the injustice of the situation that, although You created us with exceptional goodness, we are living on earth with aspects and elements that You cannot help but dislike, we cannot but lament bitterly.

Now we pledge to push aside, trample underfoot, and mercilessly cut off our horrible evil nature and the elements of evil that lie latent in our flesh and blood and in each one of our cells. We cannot help but confess that we are grief-filled descendants who have been unable to form our destined relationship with Your

holy original nature and inherit original heart, original lineage, and original flesh and bones.

Among people such as us, where can You find sons and daughters whom You can raise and bless in the midst of the garden that You will leave as an eternal handiwork? Nevertheless, please allow us to become sons and daughters who know how to bow down, lower our heads, and shed tears in the presence of Your mighty grace. Allow us to raise our inadequate selves to a position without sin, by reducing it here and there through conditions of forgiveness and tolerance.

The more we come to know Heaven, the more we realize that we are shameful beings before You, and the further we go, the more we feel afraid of bowing our heads and revealing ourselves before You. However, we know that this is the path of following Heaven. We know that Your sons and daughters who have gathered here today are not worthy of being called Your sons and daughters. Nevertheless, since we know it is Your Will not to cast us away, please watch over us.

Father, please cover all the flaws of these people who have lived in perilous places and have been wounded. Even though Your destined relationship of flesh and blood with these children was cut, we know that through their original hearts they are in a position where You cannot deny knowing them, and that You seek to remember them as Your true children. Father, we earnestly hope and desire that You will bless this day and remember it.

We are establishing this day as a new historical day. Thus we earnestly hope and desire that You will allow us to offer our hearts, minds, and bodies to You, so that we may approach the justification and glory of being Your children.

Father, we have nothing we can dedicate to You. Of all the physical things that belong to us as insufficient people, what could be glorious before our Father? However, while recognizing our insufficiency, we cherish the concern for Heaven we harbor in our unworthy hearts. We are trying to form a connection with You, our Father, and to establish a condition together with You. Therefore please look upon us with compassion.

We are aware that You always have known only too well that this foundation of mind and heart cannot be exchanged for mountains of gold. For this reason, out of a vast populace, You chose and raised a group of people who harbor their bleeding heart in their bosom and persevere and shed tears for the Will and glory of the one day. We know that the people You choose are the Israelites, and that this path is

the one trod by the historical chosen people. These people are the traces of the chosen people, established through the lineage of blood during the two thousand years after Jesus came to earth and departed from it.

Father, please be with us at this hour. Though we have nothing to give You, please let us realize once again at this time that we need to become a people who can offer You our sorrowful tears first. We then need to go out into the remaining battlefield with a new resolve and offer our flesh and blood ungrudgingly before our Father.

Father, on this holy day, please bless all humanity. At this moment, countless human beings are roaming about, not knowing where to go. Even though the wave of death is approaching right before their eyes, they do not realize it and do not know that You, who have dominion and sovereignty over life and death, exist. We have the mission to enlighten these people and bring them into Your bosom and Your embrace. We sincerely hope that You will let us be sons and daughters who can proclaim Your heart in all directions with our hearts high, vast, broad and deep.

Although we have this responsibility, we have failed to fulfill it. Hence, at this time, we bow down before You with hearts afire with shame. Father, we earnestly and sincerely hope and pray that You will allow us to shed tears before Your sorrowful heart and sing songs praising our relationship with You while shedding tears and involving ourselves in Your circumstances. Then we can call You "Father," and we, the sons and daughters, can be called Your sons and daughters.

Father, please share more and more with Your new sons and daughters scattered in all corners of South Korea. We know that those who follow in the footsteps of the people who walk the path of persecution are also liable to be targets of the arrows of persecution, and those who follow in the footsteps of the people who shed lonely tears in places where they are trapped are also placed in the same position.

Father, until now, every time we were in such a position You comforted us, every time we fell down You looked after us, and every time we felt lonely You held on to us. As You did this, You showed us the garden of hope. Since we know that You are our living Father, we earnestly hope and pray that, if any of Your sons and daughters is facing persecution at this hour, please touch them with the same grace and embrace them.

Please personally receive the devotions they offer You, Father, as they remember this hour and this day, and please hold on to them and establish a living relationship

with them. We sincerely hope and pray that You may do so.

Since we know that these circumstances and this situation are not in accord with Your desired Will, we cannot even begin to fathom Your sorrowful heart. Please forgive us for being unable to fulfill our assigned responsibility and, as You take into account our hearts filled with concern, we earnestly hope and pray that You will cover everything.

Father! Please bless these pitiful people, the millions of believers in the spirit world, the millions of believers spread out on earth, and other innumerable people as well. We know that the one day of joy is coming, when the authority of life will shine like the bright rays of the sun, and heaven and earth will harmonize and sing. We are waiting eagerly for that day with joy and anticipation. Therefore, we sincerely hope and pray that You will allow us to become Your sons and daughters who can endure and struggle until that day comes and remain until the end.

Our loving Father, we stand at the altar at this permitted hour, so please be with us. Though I do not wish to say any words, I stand here because of Your Will, so please be with us. Please eliminate all human words and everything else from us. Please manifest Yourself before us and allow us to feel You in our hearts and resonate with You. We earnestly hope and pray that You will allow us to bow down and repent of our past while shedding tears before Heaven. Please allow us also to find new impetus in life and establish a relationship with the work of resurrection.

Eternal Father, please let the hearts of those who convey Your Word unite with the heart of Heaven that urges them to do so, so that they can understand the Will of Heaven and the Will to disseminate Your Word. Thus they can become Your sons and daughters, worthy of raising high the banner of victory and singing of Your glory in Your blessed garden.

Beloved Father, we sincerely hope and pray that You will bless us so that we may be worthy of being Your sons and daughters who uphold the teachings of the chosen people of Heaven, and who can live forevermore while attending You on the foundation of Your blessed grace. Hoping that You will be with us in everything, and that You will allow this hour to be one in which Satan cannot take advantage of us, we offer these words in the name of the Lord. Aju! (November 27,1960)

2. Please urge us on this path to achieve a world of unity

Father! Each time we bow down and pray before Your sacred majesty, we consider even more the fact that You are not joyful, and we feel more ashamed and remorseful. Father, in the vastness of heaven and earth, there is no group of people more unworthy than the Korean people. Nevertheless, You have chosen us. Among the many peoples of the earth there is no group less worthy, yet You have come to us.

When we consider that You have protected and kept us from harm hundreds and thousands of times, even though we were behaving so foolishly, we feel once again that You love this group of people, that You love us unconditionally. You have come to this immature and ignorant people and granted us the concept of the blessings of heaven and earth, which are so hard to fathom. We are grateful that You have allowed us to have this day when we can call You, "Father," with hearts that overflow like never-ending springs on a foundation of holy grace that others cannot even imagine. We feel all this as the caress of Your love.

When we consider how You have raised us up until now and what You have done to have us become standard-bearers who can carry out Your commands, and when we consider what Your path must have been like as You went forth to prepare the way of restoration, never complaining but enduring the sorrows of the past, we cannot help but repent once again for the past when we were unworthy children millions and millions of times.

Please establish in front of this nation and people a movement that, even as it is driven out, is able to go forward and overcome the obstacles that You have overcome to this day, and reach the standard of final victory that You have reached. Please let us become people who are able to feel ashamed before You and urge ourselves on. When we realize again that You have come bearing Your mighty Will, we earnestly hope and desire that You will allow us to feel on our own that there is no way for us other than to offer gratitude and more gratitude, along with hymns and more hymns thousands of times before You, our glorious Father.

We should henceforth march forward, ready to risk our lives for You, Father. We should know that this moment in time is precious. We should feel once again that our bodies are covered with all the filthy, ragged clothes of history and that our minds are enslaved by crudity that prohibits You from dwelling in us. In accordance with the teaching that we cannot enter the kingdom of heaven unless we are like children, we need to become children once again. We should find the position of the original children, the position from which we can yearn for You, our Father,

yearn for Your embrace, and yearn for Your water of life, just as a child yearns for its mother's embrace and yearns for its mother's milk.

Father! We were a people without a country. We were refugees who lost their nation. We were beggars who were starving, trying to find the nation we lost. Since we have come to understand the truth, Your Will to find and establish a new hometown, the land of the original homeland, we have to find that lost original homeland and the original family, and redress accounts with Satan.

We will not stop there; we have realized that we need to reverse and indemnify everything, no matter what kinds of difficulties or suffering there may be. We have to combine every authority we have inherited to facilitate heavenly blessings of which Satan cannot take advantage. We will face Satan, who is our historical enemy, our enemy in the present age, and our enemy of the future. Therefore, Father, please give us strength. We earnestly hope and pray that You will give us the ability to offer all of our loyalty and filial piety to You.

As You gaze with lamentation at Your children born in the midst of death, since we are Your children who are struggling to find the connection of life, we earnestly hope and pray that you will not allow us to be scattered. We that You will not let the work we are trying to do be in vain, and that You will allow all our accomplishments to be brought together before You as worthwhile results.

Father, we know that You are calling us thousands of times, and we know that even at this hour, You are urging us along the path we should walk. The direction we need to follow will lead us to all kinds of places. We will have to walk the path of cold frost, the rough path along the shore, and the path of hardships where our enemies will obstruct us. Please allow us to become people who can experience Your heart, even when You are forced to command us to follow a path of crises with vicissitudes we have never experienced in our lives.

Even if we have to bear the cross thousands of times, please grant that we may become those who struggle along that path gladly and with gratitude. We sincerely hope that You will allow us to become the representatives of Jesus, who called for his Father from the top of the hill of Golgotha, and be Your sons and daughters who can stand in Jesus' position as he staked his life in the garden at Gethsemane and offered his final prayer.

In so doing, beloved Father, we sincerely hope and pray that You will allow us to become Your true children who will plant the flag of victory at the summit of the hill of Golgotha and who will affirm that we will shoulder the responsibility to turn

the world around and launch it toward the new world You desire. As today is a sanctified day, please bestow blessings on this people and please bless the numerous religious denominations and religious believers. Please take special care to protect Your true children, who are working hard without others being aware of it to prepare a foundation on which You can dwell.

We earnestly hope and pray that, in the Last Days, You will call them all to gather at one place for a common purpose, and urge them on the path toward achieving the unified nation and unified world You are hoping for. Please let Your children gathered here today brace themselves once again before they usher in the new year, and let them become a ray of light in the new year and throughout the seven-year course. Father, we earnestly hope that You will allow us to become Your sons and daughters who can strive of our own accord. Let us make energetic effort to own the world of the Sabbath, to be children who know how to race toward Your presence, Father.

Father! Please remember the many brothers and sisters of the Unification Church who are praying for this place from all corners of the earth. Please allow them to establish the nation of hope they desire to build as quickly as possible and allow them to restore the world for which they are longing. Please allow us to punish Your historical enemy, Father, to punish the enemy of this age, to punish the enemy of the future, and to punish the enemy of all humanity, so that we can sing aloud a triumphal song before You and live in peace attending You.

Father, if the people who are trying to build this world are too weak, please add Your strength to them. If they are fatigued, please give them strong legs and knees energized by hearts that overflow with the desire to run toward the enemy camp in Your stead. Please allow us to become such children.

The remaining days are observing us and calling us. Therefore, however difficult the path we are traveling may be, please work through us so that we may endure and move forward, and please do not let us tire of fighting this battle. We earnestly pray that You will let us become Your sons and daughters who can march straight toward our goal.

At this point in time, when the seven-year course is about to end, we are truly grateful that You have called us to participate in Your work of establishing a new history for this people and the world. We earnestly hope that You will receive all that You have granted us with joy, and that You will bless us so that we can build a new, proper foundation for this people.

Beloved Father, please grant that each of us may make a new resolution in our heart through the words we heard during this hour. Father, we earnestly hope that You will let us be Your children who can newly resolve and pledge in our hearts to conclude all that we should conclude in our lives and know how to pioneer our lives of our own accord. Father, please take charge of and have dominion over all that comes after this hour. We humbly pray in the name of the True Parents. Aju! (December 18,1966)

3. Please enable us to express our resolve with a new mind and body

Father! During this time, please allow our minds and bodies to be permeated by Your heart. Please allow us to feel that we are being pulled into Your heart that is permeating our original minds. As we face Your joyful self, please grant that the heart that yearns to rim toward You and embrace You may blossom within our minds and bodies.

We have come to realize that You are a Father who appears faintly in a dim setting, and that You do not move until we fully expose our hearts. Although our minds may have been defiled, our true hearts head faithfully toward You. Therefore, Father, please come to us and command us through our hearts. Please allow earnest hearts to well up, hearts that can call You “my Father” while shedding uncontrollable tears, based on the realization that our past lives were disloyal.

We have come to know that Heaven does not hesitate to protect and befriend those who seek Heaven. Moreover, we have come to know that Heaven enjoys appearing as the friend of those who shed tears, wailing to Heaven. And as the Father who will live with us eternally, You take delight in appearing before us.

Father! We long for Your voice that counsels us quietly, and we long to feel the gentle embrace of Your amazing love. By virtue of this heart, we long for a moment when we can call You “Father.” Moreover, we want to raise our hands and proudly proclaim that You are our Father.

We thought You were a Father who was far, far away, but it was a joyful moment when we discovered that You are in our hearts. When we said You were far away, You were in our hearts, and when we were confident that You were in our hearts, You were the Father who had called to us from afar. However, humanity today does not know how to keep in rhythm with this. Please grant that we may repent at this time for not knowing in the past that the place where we thought You had

abandoned us was the place where You were close to us, and the place where we thought You were not with us was the place where You were together with us.

We did not know Your mind, which does not want to leave Your sons and daughters, whom You want to call “my beloved son” and “my beloved daughter” in places of suffering. As people who have not known the complexities of Your heart, we thought You were a hardhearted and cruel Father for sending us on the path of trials. During those times, we often complained before You and felt bitter. Since we did not know about the complications that block the way between You and us, Father, please bear with the fact that we have felt bitter toward You, have rejected You, have been coldhearted toward You, and have not had faith in You. We have come to know that it was because of the sin that our ancestors committed during the Fall, as well as the bloodstains of passed-away saints and sages, wrought by enmity. Today, are our minds at a higher level? Please purify those minds with fire. Are we waiting impatiently to parade our bodies, boast of our prestige and take Your place? We earnestly hope and desire that You will allow us to become sons and daughters who, realizing that You are in a miserable position, are able to call You “Father” and are able to strike our humiliated bodies in front of Your majesty.

Father, we have realized that many words are not necessary. We have seen that when those who heard Your Word did not practice it, it caused Heaven to look at them with sorrow. It made the one who conveyed the Word appear to be a liar, and Your sadness increased by the day. Heaven knows this sad situation, that the Word needs to be spoken again, but the people on earth are not aware of it. Father, we should understand once again that, although You know this truth, You couldn’t leave humankind in such a state. So You are in a position where You need to worry about us and look after us yet again. We earnestly hope and pray that You will bear with us.

We have gathered here on this holy day. Have we gathered here expecting to receive Your words, or have we gathered here anticipating the grace of Heaven? Since we know that we have all come here yearning for something, please allow us to become people who can yearn to find our true selves. Father, we sincerely hope and pray that You will guide us to become people who can obey the words and commands coming from our true selves.

Father, You know that, as I followed Your Will over the course of the forty years of my life, never have I plunged into despair when I came across sad situations, and never have I been defeated and forced to retreat when facing hardships. Father! When I realize that times of suffering will occur repeatedly along the remaining

path, I cannot help but report my disloyalty of today to You with my head bowed. I pray that You will allow this one being to bear the sorrow of history. Furthermore, please allow Heaven to tread upon and go over all the suffering that remains, having taken this being as a sacrifice.

I long for the moment when You can rest and cast aside all lamentations, Father, and we can have a moment of joy embracing each other, when I can call You my Father and You can call me Your son. As long as we are living on this earth, no matter how miserable we are, no matter how resolute we are or how much we sacrifice, please allow us to become Your sons and daughters who can at least establish sincere hearts of unbending loyalty on earth before we ascend. Since we have resolved to follow that path, Father, we earnestly hope and desire that You will drive us out and lead us until we have mastered that way. We earnestly request, Father, that this will be a time when we are able to pledge and determine ourselves with new minds and bodies.

Beloved Father, what should I say at this hour You have granted us? It is my intention to convey to others all that You are trying to manifest. Therefore, Father, please allow me to convey Your entire heart to others. Furthermore, we earnestly and sincerely ask that You allow this hour to be one in which I can harmonize with the hearts of those who receive my words so that we can become one in heart, be embraced in Your great bosom, and sing of Your glory. We humbly pray all these things in the name of the Lord. Aju! (March 29, 1959)

4. Please grant that we may enter the world of love

Beloved Father! Countless events occur in the flow of history, none of them without a relationship to Your providence. We did not know that in the course to overcome what was aligned with Satan within the history of sorrow, there was a destined path of restoration through which the walls of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world, and cosmos had to be torn down. Our Unification Church members have come to know that for restoration to come about and tear down these walls, we should develop a realm of heart such that ideal love can begin to flow through this world—a world in which the seeds of fallen love were sown and have taken root.

Jesus, who came with this heart, taught us that members of our own household would be our enemies. He also proclaimed that we are not his disciples unless we love him more than anyone else, and that anyone who does not deny himself, carry his cross, and follow Jesus is not one with him. He also said that if we do not love

our neighbors as ourselves, we cannot be saved. If we are in a position to attend the true Heaven, we know that it is the hope of Heaven and of the Parents that we love the world even more than we love the Parents, because the world is our neighbor.

We know that Heaven loves and desires to establish, as the representative of all the heirs, the filial child who, while attending his or her parents, loves all his or her siblings with a heart of even more love than their filial piety toward their parents. Therefore, with the foundation on which they can sever the root of Satan and put down new roots by loving the True Parents absolutely, all the children of the Unification Church who are here now need to take the position of filial sons and daughters who love humankind more than they love True Parents.

In that way, we will swiftly tear down all the walls that guard Satan's realm of heart in the spirit world and the earthly world. Furthermore, we now proclaim that we will become sons and daughters who are not ashamed to inherit the kingdom of heaven victoriously. Therefore, we earnestly request and desire that You assist us not to be lazy in training ourselves, so that we can deserve to receive Your blessing.

We have clearly understood that a person who does not love True Parents and the world cannot enter the kingdom of heaven. Therefore, for this endeavor, we need to take a position from which we can love and absorb everything, even if Satan's world opposes us. We know that our efforts will not be sufficient unless we accomplish that. Therefore, we earnestly request that, as You test and assess whether or not we have become such people, You enable us to fulfill, with an unchanging heart, the duties of heart, loyalty and filial piety through Home Church.

We clearly know that only the person who has accomplished this is the final victor who can participate in the final glory with the right of inheritance based on complete love. Such a person stands in a position to be blessed. Please bless us to be able to sacrifice everything and dash forward along that path.

Thank You for instituting this day. We earnestly hope and pray that our ancestors in the spirit world and people on earth may climb over the wall dividing them. We also pray that all spirits in the spirit world may receive the benefit of returning resurrection and thus be liberated from all their sorrows. In this manner, according to their spiritual status, may they directly descend to earth on the religious foundation of their descendants and fulfill their promises. To enable them to do so, Father, please enforce the merit of the age. Command them to act on their

promises, and bless them that they may follow the one way that leads to the world of love.

We thank You for this hour of grace You have granted us, and we humbly pray all these things in the name of True Parents. Aju! (February 1,1986)

5. Please enable us to become sons and daughters who remain loyal

Father! Through Your words, we have come to know that heaven and earth are like one body. When we recognize that heaven is the subject partner and we are like branches and leaves, we realize that we cannot live even one day or one moment without receiving heaven's sap of life and love. Furthermore, although we are meant to live as branches and leaves of heaven, we have not in fact sustained our existence by receiving the sap of love flowing from our eternal Father. We ask You to forgive us for not having lived like that.

Father! We are in the Last Days, the harbinger of the Day of Judgment, and we ask that You enable each of us to be grafted to Your love, with Jesus Christ, the perfect root, at the center. We know, Father, that You long to gather from each of us the fruits of love produced through the love of our eternal Father and through the love of Jesus and the Holy Spirit. However, we are too inadequate, imperfect, and immature to reach that point on our own, and we worry that we might be obstacles when You gather the harvest.

Since we now commit ourselves to You, Father, please raise us and take care of us. In the midst of trials and tribulations, place us in pulpits and allow us to become complete as mature fruits. Furthermore, please allow us to become people who bear fruit and who realize the eternal kingdom of heaven by holding onto Your love, our dear eternal Father. Please let us become workers who reap the harvest for You.

Father! We know that this work we are doing was not proclaimed for the first time at this hour, but it was foretold in the Old Testament Age and again at the time of Jesus two thousand years ago. Knowing this, each of us should bear fruit today, be the harvest that can be reaped before Heaven, and be people who can bring the Sabbath to Heaven. However, if we were to evaluate ourselves, some of us would feel that we are not yet fully mature. In that case, Father, we earnestly hope and pray that You will allow us to become children who lament for our deficiencies, repent before You, our Father, grieve about our shortcomings, and suffer the sorrows of Jesus Christ in his stead.

Father, since we have gathered here today, as the sole center of the entire providence, please take complete dominion over our hearts and govern us. In so doing, please do not tolerate any evil ideas, teachings, or opinions, for they are not in accord with Your Will. Father, we sincerely hope and pray that You will allow this hour to be one in which the people gathered here can be consecrated over and over again, so that Satan's work can be brought to an end and we can be Your fully consecrated children, through whom You alone can operate and intervene.

Please grant that we recognize that You are now pressing for the realization of the day of Christ through us. Please enable us to understand that this is the time when You want to manifest the love of Christ by raising us up. Furthermore, please allow us to realize that You have been raising us, and that You are waiting for us to embrace the sufferings of Christ and go forth. Father, please lead us, that our steps running toward the castle of heaven not be self-centered, and please do not let us focus our prayers on ourselves.

Please allow us to come forward and kick away all the elements that evil can invade. To fulfill the Will that You desire and pursue, we earnestly hope and pray that You take hold of us, Father. Help us endure and persevere even along paths on which we cannot help but despair, collapse, and struggle immensely.

We know that, since we are not people of this world, we cannot receive the glory of this world. We are also aware that, just as You foretold through Jesus Christ, no citizen of heaven or son or daughter of heaven during the last two thousand years of history was welcomed on earth, regardless of the century or age they lived in.

Father! Today, we stand as representatives of Jesus. When we, who are engaging in the work Jesus could not complete, are persecuted, please grant that we may endure the persecution. And when we live for the sake of Heaven, even if we are insulted by people on earth, have difficulties and experience anguish, please enable us to overcome everything capably and persevere to the end. Six thousand biblical years have passed and, as Jesus longs for this day of harvest, he is calling us. Therefore, please use us to wipe away the stains of blood and tears lingering from the cross and the historical anguish, and lead us, that we may become the shields of victory.

Please do not allow us to forget that Jesus, who was the incarnation of hope, is waiting for us to be qualified to take dominion over Satan. Accordingly, today we need to harbor the joyful Will of our Father in our hearts and fight on Heaven's behalf. We earnestly hope and pray that You allow us to become sons and

daughters who are determined to subjugate the enemy Satan. If we are unable to complete the mission even after having dedicated our lives to this work, then grant us the determination to complete it even through our descendants.

As we are about to usher in the new year, we should be preparing deep in our hearts to walk the path of the battle between life and death. Father, we sincerely hope and pray that we can be the sons and daughters who do not succumb, regardless of the enemies that oppose us, and instead maintain our loyalty to You. In so doing, Father, we earnestly hope and desire that You allow us to become Your sons and daughters, the ones who can appear before all things in the world as the sons and daughters who represent You and represent heaven and earth.

Please reveal to us the power of the words You have granted us today, and allow our hearts to connect with one another's. Furthermore, we beseech You to allow this gathering to be one in which spirits can move other spirits and we can be molded once again through the touch of Your power. I offer all these things in the name of the Lord. Aju! (December 30, 1956)

6. Please enable us to race forward with a heart of love

Beloved Father, we did not know that the path desired by the Will leads to such a high and precipitous mountain, with many ascents and descents. This son standing here set out on this path in silence. I dedicated my life to it, living through boyhood and manhood by passing through a complicated environment and an age in which I held onto the church as I struggled. However, as I walked this path, whenever I stumbled under the persecution of this nation and its people, You took hold of me, and therefore I did not collapse or fall to ruin. When I look back on how You protected me in the past, I am truly grateful to You.

I am now in the position of the spearhead of the democratic world, the position of the son of God, where all eyes are turned toward me. From this position, I am going forth, disregarding everything, to give proof of the appearance of Your exemplary son. I would like to thank You, Father, for protecting me and guiding me.

There were several times when we thought we would perish. However, we did not perish but survived. When we think about this fact, we should become members of the Unification Church family who firmly pledge that, since we now truly know how terrible the Fall is, in our generation we will never walk that sorrowful path of the Fall again.

Now that we understand how the sickness began, we have the responsibility to love Heaven with a strong conviction, more than we love anyone else. We now know what fallen nature is like. It began with a self-centered desire to possess. Then it proceeded to lies, to the path of defiling chastity, to the path of forcibly plundering everything that belonged to Heaven, and then, in the age of the sons, to the path of murder.

When we think about the fact that all dictators in history were people who lied, followed the path of illicit love, seized everything and killed good people, we cry out that we will never walk this path of historical stains. We hope to become sons and daughters who can inherit the tradition of Heaven, which absorbs all such things with love. We want to be people who fight to be victors and not victims, even if we have to go unaccompanied to fight battles that are more strenuous and intense than any ever fought in history, and thereby raise high the banner of the love of Heaven.

Bless us to become Your sons and daughters who, as principled parents, can build good fences that rebuff Satan's accusations. Let us have the conviction that such men and women should come together in union at the position where the ownership of love is decided according to Heaven's desire, so that their children will be born as the sons and daughters of

Heaven. The matter of deciding ownership is a really serious one.

As for ownership centering on love, we make the family the basis. After that, the right of ownership of all things passes through the original course of inheritance centering on the family of the new True Parents. The historical resentment over what decides our authority of ownership remains. You have come to understand all this.

As the time in which we can go beyond the levels of the people and nation and measure up to this task draws near, we arrive at this solemn hour when we stand on this stage. Father, we earnestly hope and pray that You will bless and guide us so that, even if we are in circumstances comparable to those of historical orphans who have appeared before this altar, we can become sons and daughters who can cling to Heaven and struggle with all our intellect and heart and cross this summit without sustaining any injuries.

We have pledged before You, our Father, to dedicate mind and body entirely to You. We sincerely hope that You will allow us to become people who do not hesitate to race forward with a mind burning with a heart of love on the path of

devotion to Heaven. In retrospect, we can see that there have been many sorrows and sad incidents in history, but we are grateful that there has also been a path of solace we could walk for the sake of Your love.

Please allow us to look back on history with gratitude, to engage in self-evaluation with gratitude, and to welcome with gratitude the day of victory that is approaching right before our eyes. We sincerely hope and pray that You will permit us to become the sacred people of Heaven and the royal family that can begin with gratitude, go through the process with gratitude, and arrive at our destination with gratitude. There, allow us to shed tears of gratitude, hold on to one another's hands, dedicate our spouse, children, and everything before Heaven, and be registered as victorious families before You, Father.

We sincerely hope and pray that even if there are many remaining issues, You will allow us to become bold and brave sons and daughters who can digest everything and race forward devotedly, focusing only on the purpose of the day of victory based on love. We may harbor resentment for having to walk a dimly lit path. Yet, if we resolve to take steps that leave behind traces of our tears of love, we know that the path will lead not to ruin but to a warm welcome.

We earnestly hope and pray that You will permit us to become a group of people who can unite completely as one flock and one body representing all families. We pray to become a group of families, a group of tribes and a church centered on love that can save this nation, go out into the world, and inherit the privilege of the blessed chosen people.

I sincerely request that You allow us to become husbands, wives, parents, and heads of tribes and peoples who have nothing to be ashamed of in the remaining days. I pray this in the name of True Parents. Aju! (October 27, 1982)

7. Please grant that we may become children who praise the love of our Father and our connection with Him

Father! Your noble, precious, and holy providential history has traced its path through the long history of humankind. Father, today once again You have raised us up. Please let us feel how pitiful and lonely Your situation is, as You seek to take responsibility for the world.

We know very well that You are our Father of love, who cannot sever Your connection with any of us but wishes to live with us forever. We realize that we

need to hear from You that You love us, more than we need to embrace You and tell You that we love You.

We have come to realize that, instead of repeating tens of thousands of times that we love You, we need to hear You say that You believe in us as Your children and we need to be given such a position. Therefore, please raise us that we may become such children. We are aware that, no matter who blocks our way and persecutes us, when we stand in the position where You acknowledge us, we are not pitiful or lonely people.

Father, working in advance through the world, You have been laying the foundation based on which You could comfort us before we shed tears of loneliness. When we think about the fact that You, concerned about our sad situation, expanded that foundation to comfort us on the world level, we pray that You will let us feel all the more that there is no way we can repay You for all You have done for us.

Father, please comfort Your children spread out around the world. We earnestly hope and pray that You will extend Your touch of boundless blessings to Your children who are offering devotions as they yearn for Your Will to be planted in every place through which You have passed.

Father, even at this moment there are people around the world who, out of concern for this Teacher, are earnestly appealing to You with tears, and are longing for this one distant corner of Korea. When we think about this fact, we come to realize clearly how fearful and awesome is the position of this headquarters.

Although outwardly we may look unworthy and shabby, our hearts, which yearn to hold on to Your heart and call You Father and serve You truly, are sincere and earnest. We know very well that our appearance, situation, and circumstances do not matter at all if we are Your sons and daughters who can sing praises of Your love, of our relationship with You, and of the fact that You raised us up.

Beloved Father! Please pour down Your blessings on Unification members who long for Korea. These children respect Korea as their homeland in their hearts and are shedding blood, sweat and tears for this land. When we think that countless people united through the Unification teachings wish that at least their bones can be buried for the sake of this land, we realize we have to unite them into one, establish the one nation that You desire, and achieve one worldwide ideology. Accordingly, until we realize that Will, we have to endure and endure and continue

enduring. Following Your example of silently enduring the wearisome six-thousand-year course of history, we too should go forward enduring in silence.

During the thousands of years we were separated from You, we yearned for You with our minds and bodies. Now, however, all those days of yearning for You and appealing to You are history. Now that we have met again, we stand in the position of embracing Your internal situation, discussing matters with You, bracing ourselves for the future, and facing Your situation in Your stead. Therefore, if we should have a teacher, You alone should be our teacher. If someone is to take charge of Your Will, we ourselves should take responsibility for the commands You give. Beloved Father, we sincerely hope and pray that You will allow us to become such people.

We can fathom the sadness of Your situation in the long course of history. When we look at the many nations of the world, we cannot help but think that there still remain vast stretches of land You need to recover, and a long, laborious path You need to walk. Therefore, we should feel in our hearts and bodies that we have the responsibility and mission to race toward the world without resting, heeding neither the blood nor the sweat we shed, and that we must fulfill our responsibility and mission.

Father, these people have been in situations that made it impossible for them to do otherwise than become a pitiful people. But we thank You for letting us know first that the Will of Your providence, which is worthy of praise across the globe, dwells in the midst of the Unification movement.

Father, please grant that we may understand the hardships You have had to overcome. Are any of Your children offering devotions in their hearts? Please bestow on them blessings that are thousands of times greater. Moved by their longing for You and feeling Your heart, members of this Unification movement are embracing the people. Please do not allow their earnest hope and struggle to be in vain. Please enable them to overcome this age and be liberated to leap forth toward the world. Furthermore, we earnestly hope and desire that You allow them to become the Third Israel that can build the kingdom of heaven throughout the world.

Please comfort Your children gathered here and please allow us the joy of meeting and forging a new relationship with You. Father, please watch over us when we return home. We earnestly and sincerely hope and pray that You can grant us Your hallowed touch in every task You entrust us with, and in every

moment of our every gathering hereafter. I earnestly pray all these things in the name of True Parents. Aju! (May 2,1969)

CHAPTER 4

True Person

1. Please enable us to resemble Your image

Beloved Father! Since You know the heart of Your children gathered here, please allow even the cells in their bodies to move toward their compassionate Father. Please permit all of their minds and bodies to be captivated by Your touch of love. Please allow them to appear collectively as elements in harmony, and at this time, please consecrate them as warriors of Heaven who can race forward, risking their lives to testify about Your Word.

Father, look upon Your children gathered here with compassion. Since in our destined course of restoration we still need to rise to a higher level by relying on the Word of life You have permitted us, O Father of love, please extend Your hand, hold the hands of Your inadequate children, and guide us. Since we have bowed down to You with united minds and bodies, Father, please embrace us, lead us and raise us up. Furthermore, we earnestly hope and desire that You will transform our minds to become heavenly minds.

Please bless the many people who are present here today, and please allow Your works of life, works of inspiration and works of resurrection to be manifested through them. Today we have placed all the ideas we have about the present age before You, and since we have come before Your majesty with the hearts of gentle, mild children, Father, please bring about Your work of re-creation through the touch of Your grace. Please reveal the fire of the Holy Spirit. Beloved Father, we earnestly hope and desire that You will show us Your love and, in these Last Days, allow us to open the door leading out of the realm of death, which has been blocked, and reveal the glory of our Father's victory.

We know that, henceforth, there is no need for many speeches. Even if the children gathered here have not received many words, please allow them to receive the grace which You have permitted them and befits them and grant that they may be equal to what they have been given. Heavenly Father, since we have promised and pledged before Heaven at this time to achieve the Will You have promised and granted, if there are empty vessels, please fill them all. Please accept us as children who, intoxicated by Your ample grace, are able to return glory to You and be grate-

fid. Furthermore, we earnestly hope and desire, Father, that You will allow us the grace of finding that we are children whom You, Father, can love.

Please bind together as one the hearts of those who give and those who receive. We earnestly hope and desire that You will allow our mind to be inclined where Heaven is inclined, our body to move in accordance with Heaven's movements, and our mind and body to follow the example of and resemble Your image, Father. We also hope and pray that in the remaining time You will touch us with Your words and compassionate commands. I pray in the name of our loving Lord Aju! (July 1, 1956)

2. Please carry out works of resurrection

We cannot help but feel that we found the path of life and were able to bow down before You only after having wandered aimlessly. How can we ever repay Your grace in giving us a position where we can call You "Abba, Father"? And how can we ever repay Your grace in enduring endless hardships that we did not even know about in order to protect us, purify us and lead us to this place? We have nothing with which to repay You. At this time we cannot help but feel that even if we gave You our body, we could not repay Your grace and that even if we all offered You our entire heart, we still would be lacking and could not raise our heads before what You have achieved through Your suffering.

Heavenly Father, we know that it is Your desire and it is Your situation that You who have led us to this point have the responsibility to save us and have the need and desire to see a day of glory through us. And when we think that, as You see us, You hope to find comfort through people like us, we cannot help but feel ashamed in Your presence, our Father, who have placed Your hope in our inadequate selves and have endured the peaks and valleys of the course of history.

If our flesh and blood could sympathize with Your heart, and if our bones could assume a form and constitute a personality, then we earnestly hope and desire, Father, that You would allow that being to become a substantial form capable of testifying to Your unchanging self. How much have You longed for a holy, glorious being who could be part of You and return glory to You even with each and every cell? In the course of history our ancestors could not attend You in that way. We know as historical fact that they followed Heaven and were proud of being in the realm of the chosen people, but then at times they felt resentment, at times broke their promises, and then gave up.

Father! Since we have inherited this spiritual lineage filled with grief, we confidently say today that we have faith in You. Nevertheless, we are people whose position is close to the evil world, capable of betraying Heaven tomorrow. Father, please have compassion on us although we are like this. Father, please hold on to us. We earnestly hope and desire that You will carry out Your work of resurrection, which will fill us with new life. Although many people have come to this earth and have gone, and even now many are coming and going, there have been no people who grasped Your situation, grasped Your heart and wept. Therefore please allow us to become people who are able to grasp Your situation and heart and weep.

We earnestly pray that You will allow there to be many sons and daughters on the earth whose minds are filled with a desire to live for You and attend You, and who feel indignant with heaven and earth, history, and our fallen ancestors. Whom did we come here to see? It was neither to see some well-dressed person nor to meet some beautiful person. We all have come here so that our bodies, with ugly stains and wounds, can come to resemble our venerable Father's external form. Therefore please do not abandon us, and instead please embrace us.

Since You know that our hearts and minds are lonely, with no place to depend upon, we earnestly hope and pray, Father, that You will comfort us at this hour. Please manifest Yourself with such a heart and guide us as the subject of eternal life, and please bestow on us the words of life that can saturate our bodies and minds. Father, we sincerely hope and pray that You will allow this hour to be one in which we can express our gratitude for Your grace and offer bows to You.

We wish to hear and receive the Word at this hour. Therefore please be here with us, Father. Please grant that we may understand that, if there is a gap between those who convey and those who receive, that gap may become a path for Satan. Furthermore, please allow us to realize that that very gap is the realm of death Satan is aiming at. Accordingly, we earnestly hope and pray that You will allow this time to be one in which the hearts of those who convey and those who receive can become one and be connected to, influenced by, and settled in Your heart.

Please look after Your sons and daughters spread out in all parts of South Korea who are on their knees appealing to You in loneliness and undergoing hardships. Since You said that salvation comes to those who endure to the end, Father, we earnestly and sincerely ask You to guide them, that they may exalt Your glory through their perseverance and be more than equal to testifying to You before this people as Your substantial embodiments. Please bestow blessings on all the

countless denominations at their gatherings as well as on the myriads of people. I humbly pray in the name of the Lord. Aju! (September 6,1959)

3. Allow us to yearn for the call for our re-creation

Beloved Father, in the course of history, there never was a truly responsible person who affirmed that he would accomplish Your Will even if the world came against him. We are also aware of how invaluable the Christian believers were who loved You even when they were targeted by the arrows of persecution, and who shared the deep Will rooted in Your heart.

The common course of human life is to be born into this world and then, inevitably, to leave it in the end. We earnestly hope and desire, Father, that You will not allow us to become pitiful people who are born as human beings but are unable to obtain goodness by ourselves, or are only able to receive vain honors when we come seeking You.

We know that in order to possess a treasure others cannot have, we need to go through a course of trials that others do not experience. We recognize from our relationship with the world of creation or our professional life that one cannot raise one's standard without going through trials and tears. Please allow us to obtain the name of holy devoted children who have fulfilled our filial duty before You. Please allow us to hold the treasured position of persevering representatives of heavenly value who represent the whole of history centered on Your heart.

Although this task is an extremely precious and worthy one, please grant that we do not forget that in order to fulfill this task, we need to have a resolute heart, go through bloody battles and expend effort. Just as the saying "Your efforts will be crowned with success" suggests, we understand that only through our effort can we offer something of value; without effort nothing of value is produced.

When we think about this, we are truly grateful that You love the people of the Unification Church.

Once we were targeted by the arrows of the thirty million Korean people and had to endure their vilification and attacks. They pointed a finger of scorn at us, calling us a group of people who defiled this world, and they spat on us and pressed us into the margins. However, we are neither resentful nor angry at what they have done to us. This people, instead of repaying You for all Your hard work, trampled on Your hallowed name, which represents heavenly law. They made You suffer, though

You were blameless. When we consider the abuses You have had to suffer, we can hardly bear the pain.

However, You have endured for many, many years, and You have commanded us today to light a new beacon before the people who betrayed us. Therefore we cannot help but offer You our gratitude for Your love in sending Your beloved messengers to those people who were wandering in the dark. Father, we know that You are looking for the true person who can soothe, with Your touch, the pain of those who were beaten and abused as well as feed, on Your behalf, the starving children of the enemy.

We thank You today that the people of the Unification Church were able to walk that way through the crises of the past, that they voluntarily set out on the path of tears unknown to anyone else and stepped into the back alleys of the cold age in accordance with Your Will. And since we are people who are moved by Your heart when You call for us, Father, and have the heart with which we can resurrect our relationship with You, please allow us to become children of the Unification Church who know how to be truly grateful for remaining in Your precious providence, a providence that cannot be exchanged for anything else.

In the center of our hearts there are no trees or grass. It is the most hollow among hollow places, the emptiest among empty places, the driest among dry places. However, in that place there is one thing we have, and that is the heart that calls out, "Father!" It is the heart that wants to meet You, and the heart that wants to attend You. This heart is so precious it cannot be exchanged even for heaven and earth. Therefore we earnestly hope and pray that You will allow us to have hearts that will assume and maintain the whole of that value until the very end.

Our Father of love, when You look upon these pitiful people, do not allow them to remain mere observers. Let the blood that flows in our veins move us so that we cannot help but embrace one another and weep bitterly. Furthermore, please have dominion over our feelings so that we can adopt an earnest attitude that compels us to watch closely over others. Since we know that You expect such things from us, Father, we sincerely ask that You will embrace us when we show ourselves to be such people.

We human beings are the ones yearning for our Owner, our Parent and our Leader, the One who can stop His hurried footsteps and embrace us as we stand on the path of ruin. Until now, the history of fallen human beings has been one of deploring their condition as they languished on the path of ruin. When we realize

that this has been the path taken by fallen humanity, please grant that we may become Your children who can repent for not befriending those in the back alleys and healing the feet of the injured, thereby leaving behind satisfactory results.

When we consider how we have lived in the past and up to the present, we reflect on for what purpose we have used our hands, for what purpose our hearts have suffered, and where our faces and bodies are heading. We know that, before we can assume our true selves, who are being called by this people, we need to become true sons and daughters of Heaven who can critique the past and lament the present. Knowing this, how many times have we resolved and pledged before our Father to become such sons and daughters? Since cold winds blow in our hearts, that which You desired disappeared, and we ended up as pitiful people, condemned to live in Satan's world. That being the case, how great is the sorrow of heaven and earth, and how Your heart must ache as You fight Your way forward, embracing heaven and earth! Father, we sincerely hope and pray that You will not allow us to become ignorant people who forget this.

Whenever we realize we are walking such a path, we want to repent deep in our hearts for failing to rise above it to comfort You in Your sorrowful historical course. When the people of the Unification Church realize that we have failed to become such children before our Father, we are too ashamed to call You "Father." Therefore, Father, we earnestly hope and pray that You will forgive us.

Have You sought us because You could not find those You were looking for anywhere in the sorrowful course of history? Have You sought this people because no other people remained? How often did this lonely and scattered people fall down before our Father, people who had been called to relieve His suffering! How great was Your grief when You watched them with tears because they failed to reach the standard You hoped for! We can hardly fathom the heart of our Father, who, with a heart of love for His young ones, gazed at this people in their pitiful state and had to endure this sight hundreds and thousands of times.

We are the sons and daughters who were born inheriting the blood and sweat of our Father, and we are the people who can resolve to make Your wish come true. That is why, when we look upon this people struggling on the brink of death, we must resolve to become Your children who can advocate the path this people should follow, even if it means staying up all night to the point of exhaustion.

Father, even though we may look shabby, please allow us to understand how precious we are because You remember us, and grant that we may not despair and

grieve on this path. We earnestly hope that You will allow us to share Your determination as You look upon the various parts of South Korea and agonize over this nation in Your concern for the Will.

Please allow us to proudly speak of the love we have received from You, Father, when You raised us and complimented us. However, if we should fail to serve and attend You, even when we know of Your endeavors, then do not show us Your love, Father. Having celebrated Children's Day, we now usher in the second Sunday of December. Since only twenty days remain in this year and this is the time when we need to let go of the past and welcome the new year, please, beloved Father, let us reflect once again on our past in anguish, express greater concern for our Father, and yearn for the call of re-creation that creates the future.

We sincerely hope and pray that You will permit us to become true children who can feel by ourselves that, even though our situation today is difficult, in the past this land endured the pain of childbirth and bloodstained movements in order to secure victory one day. When we usher in that one day of victory before our Father and say, "Father, receive this glory!" You shall weep loudly. Since we know that Your heart yearns for that day, we earnestly hope and pray that You will not let our resolve to race toward that day change in any way.

Since this people has shouldered the responsibility and mission to save all the peoples of the world, whereas in the past they only received from and depended on others, they should now give to and lead others. Therefore please grant that this people may assume that responsibility and spread out across the world in all directions. Moreover, we earnestly hope and pray, Father of love, that You will not permit us to forget that we have the responsibility to lead others in establishing the heavenly environment and daily life.

Father, please remember Your children who are holding service in the countryside in commemoration of this day, and please remember the many people spread out around the world. Though they know You, Father, they have not yet met the Teacher. We truly, truly hope and pray, beloved Father, that You will not leave them where they are, but permit them to come into the place in which life can sprout and heavenly relationships surround them, a place they can stay only if their hearts are loyal to You and they love You.

Please take charge and have dominion over everything about this day. We sincerely ask that You will allow us to become people who, feeling sorry that the time has come for us to part and to head out to face the remaining battles, can

make efforts to bring precious gifts before Heaven when we meet again. We hope that You will allow, through the remaining course of grace, the one day of victory to be chosen as the center of Your Will. I humbly pray all these things in the name of True Parents. Aju! (December 11,1966)

4. Please grant that we may become faithful children

Our Father, You chose the people of Israel and toiled to raise them. As we reflect on Your fervent heart as You commanded the Jewish people to accomplish Your Will after You had raised them, we come to realize today that we must fulfill the responsibility of the Christians to complete the next stage of Your Will.

Please allow us to know how to attend You, our Father, who have toiled throughout the long course of history, and please allow us to know Your situation, as You fought against Satan while worrying about us for such a long time. Please allow us to become people who know the heart of our Father, You who have been concerned about guiding us to the place of glory and about embracing Your sons and daughters who were chosen as the hope of tomorrow.

Please allow us to understand that our existence today is not due to our own will, that the glory of life that we enjoy does not come from ourselves, and that we are able to rejoice in the presence of our Father today not by virtue of our own efforts. Instead, may we understand that all these come from the grace mercifully bestowed by our Father, as You have toiled throughout the thousands of years of history.

Do we have anything for which we can stand before all people and boast? Are there any among us who feel they can command the universe with the truth? Please allow us to realize that such endeavors are not the responsibility given to us today. We earnestly hope and desire, Father, that You will allow us to become sons and daughters who can reveal the entire Will of Heaven by representing the people of the world and by simultaneously representing the power of Your grace.

Please do not allow us to focus on our own selves of today. Please allow us to become Your sons and daughters who are not ashamed before the Will of heavenly law, and who represent history, the entire universe, and the world of the future. Furthermore, we earnestly hope and desire, Father, that You will allow us the glorious joy of proudly speaking about having become such sons and daughters.

Father! Have Your sons and daughters who are gathered here today sincerely revealed themselves to You? Have they freely prostrated themselves before Your altar? Have they become living offerings that are able to indemnify historical sin by sacrificing themselves? Have they become new offerings that take responsibility for the sins of the present? And have they become children who follow the example of Christ, whose character led him to carry the cross and ascend Golgotha? Having fought with

Satan in Your stead for the glory of the future, do we have any victorious and glorious achievements? Father, please grant that we may become such sons and daughters and may sing songs of Your glory. Furthermore, we hope and pray that You will allow us to become faithful, upright children who can follow You for the sake of the one Will.

Now that You have permitted us this one day, please watch over us with compassion, and please do not abandon us who are gathered before Your Will. Father, please bless the many denominations that represent this pitiful people, who have lost their center, and please bestow blessings upon this altar and upon the people. Father, please allow the grace of Your compassion on the pitiful people and denominations that do not know where the fire of life is blazing, and please bless all of humanity. Please allow new blessings to be bestowed on this earth and on this people as quickly as possible. We earnestly hope and pray, Father, that You will allow a new flame to appear through this church.

Father, please eliminate the human tendency to focus only on reason, and please correct all ideologies that emphasize only humanism. Please let us become people of character who uphold Godism, through which heavenly law is established. Furthermore, we hope that You will allow us to rise in the place of this people as Your sons and daughters who can obey the Will of Heaven with reverence; who can receive Your love,

Father; who can carry out the duties of the high priest; and who can raise this people as representatives of Your Will. Beloved Father, we also earnestly hope and pray that You will allow us to represent the many churches.

Please permit us to rectify all the mistakes we have committed during the past week. We earnestly request that You allow this hour to be one in which we can be immersed in the new words of Your command and the new grace You have granted us. We request that You will allow us to plunge into Your Will, our Father, as You instruct us and bestow great love upon us, so that we can be proud of You, Father,

before all created things in the universe and offer bows of glory to You. Hoping that You will take dominion over everything, from the beginning to the end, I pray in the name of the Lord. Aju! (June 23,1957)

5. Please permit that we may go in a new direction

We keenly realize that, since human beings lost the land of Zion, they have needed to go through a history of hard work to find that land again. That land failed to become a place where the true people of original heart could live, and evidence of the original heart could not be established there. Therefore, Father, as You hold on to these people and continue to fight, dreaming about the original world, please grant that we may become sons and daughters who can comfort Your sorrowful heart at this time.

Father! When we recall Your sorrowful historical course, we cannot suppress our fearful mind, and each time we relate to the majestic self of our Father, You who have toiled so hard, we cannot suppress our awe-stricken mind. At this moment, please raise these people as sons and daughters who are able to take over Your toil by offering their minds and bodies as sacrifices.

You have eagerly awaited the coming day of victory when we can sing about liberation from a position of joy that You are able to enjoy. However, You are not the One to realize this Will of liberation. We know that we unworthy human beings, struggling in the realm of death, must be the ones to do it. Please bear with this people on earth, who, despite being in such an important position, are languishing along the course of death unaware of our own value. In order to recover our original heart, please awaken now within us an earnest mind that holds new values for restoration and is capable of singing the praises of Your heart of glory.

Please allow us to have an original internal nature and original external form, appear as true sons and daughters, and be able to sing of Your liberation, Father. We realize that You know that this has been the hope of Your children for thousands of years. Father, we know that there will be a day of victory. Therefore, we bow our heads before You and offer this prayer in the place of this people, who are moaning in their pitiful situation. We earnestly hope and desire that You will lead us to victory and guide us that we may become sacrifices before the great Will that You wish to entrust to us.

Now that we are gathered in Your presence, Father, grant that we may open our hearts and release all personal issues from our body. Please allow us to comfort You

with a sincerity that wells up from our true hearts, and permit that our hearts may be moved at this time so that we can bow down our heads with modesty when we face You, Father. Please raise within our hearts a sincere feeling so we can repent of our past, feel our way through the reality of our present, and revere Your sacred grace. Furthermore, please take dominion over that feeling in our hearts. Father, we earnestly hope and pray that You will allow us to realize in this hour that we must take a new direction by stirring up a new feeling and sensibility.

Father! Please allow us to prepare a living altar by bringing together our inadequate devotions. Since You urge us to become sacrifices for the victory, please eliminate from us all that does not please You. Furthermore, Father, please extend Your almighty hand and lift up a new authority of re-creation. Father, we earnestly hope and desire that You may grant us the original internal nature and external form of re-creation that allow us to eliminate from ourselves everything that is not Yours.

Father, please awaken now the thirty million Koreans in slumber and lead all people into the garden of Your original homeland, the garden of goodness of Your ideal, by gathering humanity, who have been wandering in misery, and bringing them together with Your own hands. Even if humankind goes through persecution and misfortune, we earnestly hope and desire that You will quickly lead them into the garden of Your desire.

In order to do this, Father, please command Your beloved sons and daughters so they may fulfill their portion of responsibility. They have the responsibility of finding and restoring sinful lands and people. Therefore, please raise them up and command them. We pray that, at this point in time, You will allow them to resolve to be commanded and to be sent to any place You desire, as diligent workers and chosen warriors of Heaven who are able to build the garden of victory.

Father, we sincerely hope that today You will extend Your glory and love to Your lonely sons and daughters, wherever they are gathered, so that, having felt Your touch of love and glory, they may offer their entire hearts, unite as one heart and one altar, and dedicate themselves to You as one being. Furthermore, we earnestly hope and pray that You will bless the many denominations gathered here today as representatives of innumerable people and that You will let this land be a place of joy where the day of victory has been realized and Your happiness has been restored.

At this moment, please take full charge of us. If anything goes against Your Will, we are concerned that it may become a condition through which Satan will try to take advantage. Therefore, Father, we sincerely hope and pray that You will eliminate all conditions advantageous to Satan, embrace everything with the power of Your grace, personally give commands, and hold everything in Your arms. We sincerely hope that You will have dominion over us so that we may belong to You and only You, from the first moment to the last. I pray in the name of the Lord. Aju! (June 28,1959)

6. Please grant that we may be able to fight on to the end

Beloved Father, when I reminisce about the past, my twenties, the springtime of my life, come to mind. That period in my youth, when I carefully braced my heart and prayed to connect Christianity to Heaven, remains one of cherished memories from the past.

Had this people become one before Your Will in the 1950s, today's Korea would have become a great nation and would have leaped forward, with the world within Korea instead of Korea within the world. It would have become an amazing country with a strong economy, abundant resources, and a high production capacity. However, because it failed to fulfill its responsibility in the midst of crises and hardships, it had to make many sacrifices and face a destiny of grievous misfortune.

Today this is occurring not only in the outside world. If I fail to fulfill my responsibility as the leader of the Unification Church today, then such problems will recur as even greater conditions of indemnity in our age. So please grant that all of us in the Unification Church may clearly understand this fearsome truth. We have learned about our portion of responsibility. We have come to know that this includes the mission of bringing an end to sorrow through indemnity. We now realize that we are called to pay the price of sacrifice by shedding our tears, sweat and blood to pass through the one intersection that allows what was below to go above and what was on the left to go to the right.

We know that, for these things to cross over, we must offer a price for the sacrifice of Satan's world as a condition greater than that of any historical age. Father, please look upon the young children of the Unification Church in this country with compassion. We thank You for remembering these immature children. All of the regional leaders, district leaders and church leaders are now gathered here. Once they go forth with burning hearts to fulfill their duties of loyalty and filial piety, this Korean peninsula will be too small for them.

Father, I cannot forget the seriousness of my heart as I received Your command to set out for America in 1971. When I set foot upon the plains of America, which were like a wasteland and a wilderness, I felt like a grain of sand flying in the air. Nevertheless, I invested myself, rushing from one place to another, knowing that Heaven was there and believing in its commands. I rushed along without considering whether it was day or night and forgot to eat or sleep. As a result, we are able today to look upon this amazing historical realm of victory in which, together with Your glorious blessings, the world can dwell right before our eyes. When we consider this fact, we come to understand that, even though we were sad, Heaven suffered so much more pain. We now realize that, while we wept, Heaven left behind stains of blood.

With historical events now taking place in America, the young people gathered here in Korea must establish the condition of taking at least five percent responsibility for the outcome of those events, and fulfill it with their whole mind and body. Because, beginning at this hour today, we have the historical mission and command to solemnly fulfill this historic destiny and the destiny of this nation, as well as to end the global battle between the democratic and communist worlds, we have made a pledge before our Father with raised arms and bended knees. Please do not forget this.

Please allow us to become a group of people who promptly greet the morning sun as it rises in the eastern sky, who pay attention to all that moves in nature and everything in our surroundings. Let us strive to attain the position of heavenly children who have nothing to be ashamed of, who can fulfill our task without a moment's delay, focusing on the promise of Heaven. And let us become children who, even if we stumble on our way, do not fall down.

Thus, Father, we earnestly hope and pray that You will let us become a group of people who feels anxious with each and every hour that passes as, with bloodstained hearts, we endeavor to make this victory Yours and this one day of glory Yours. I know only too well how hurtful has been the betrayal of Heaven by the free world. I know how many conditions of indemnity have been fulfilled by Korea. We know that if Korea is made to stand in the fateful position of having to pay more indemnity, it can only go to ruin. Accordingly, we sincerely hope that You will let us become sons and daughters who resolve to set ourselves straight, enter the final holy of holies before Heaven, and engage in the battle of judgment.

We sincerely hope and pray that at this time You will allow us to engrave deep in our hearts the fact that we must become Your glorious embodiments who go forth,

saying, “Let there be only victory, Aju!” and ready ourselves to go to war as warriors living for a bright tomorrow. Father, when we consider this nation and its people, we know that Your providence requires them to fight, in the not too distant future, against violent waves while buffeted by severe winds. Therefore I sincerely request and hope that You will let them become Your children who can remain steadfast even when their Teacher has gone away and can guard with them- lives the great enterprise You have left and fight their way to the end.

And if the day comes when the nation can rejoice and praise Your glory, and we can meet again, the day when those in higher and lower positions can become one before Heaven and all heaven and earth can return glory to our Father, celebrating Your victory with tears and boasting that that nation and sovereignty belong to our Father, that day will be at the end of the path we need to walk with tears, sweat and blood. We sincerely hope and pray that You will allow us to become a group of people who do not forget that such a historical destiny awaits us.

Since we all hope that the shining, global gates of blessing will open in the direction of Korea, we pray that all spirits in the spirit world will be forevermore with the young people who have inherited the spirits’ divinity and volunteered to become living sacrifices and substantial offerings. We also earnestly hope that, after passing through Korea, Your future blessings may convey the essence of Your glory and be bequeathed to all nations. Do not let the blessing You have granted leave us. In return, we have pledged to defend to the death the promise You made us. Furthermore, we beseech You to let the spirit world cooperate with us and to carefully protect and guide us so that we can become sons and daughters who do not make mistakes or fall, but rather prevail and receive Your love.

Please do not allow us to become people who hesitate in going forward toward the world of the future and before You, our Father. Bless us, that we may stand in the position in which You can say to us with pride and a loving touch, “My children, come!” We sincerely ask that You will allow us to become warriors who pledge to march forward, aware that our lifetime is the stage of our life’s activities. We are grateful for this hour You have given us, and we request that You will bless the whole of the remaining time as well. I pray all this in the name of True Parents. Aju! (November 10,1980)

7. Grant that we may understand Your circumstances

Father, please grant that this may be a time when we can frankly open our hearts before You and can ask and receive answers to our questions, one by one. You

raised us individually and loved us truly. Please forgive those who were unaware of this. At this time, Father, You are truly loving us. Therefore, before anything else, we want to become people who can receive Your love. This relationship of love cannot be exchanged for even heaven and earth, and please allow us to cherish it with our lives.

In doing so, permit us to know, as we live our lives hereafter, that You love us eternally with the unchanging love of a Father. Before such a Father, is there anything we could give that could possibly repay You for that love? Do we have anything from our past, from the current stage of our life, or even the heart that brought us to attend this gathering? Do we have anything that can show our love for You, be it even a note that expresses that love?

If we do not have such a thing, we should bear in mind once again that we are the ones who violated Your love, we are the treacherous sons and daughters who betrayed Your love, and we are the traitors who sold Your eternal love to Satan's world. Have our hands ever returned love to You, Father? Have our feet ever done so? When we come to realize on our own that our bodies cannot do this and that our minds have failed to become Your eternal resting place, we come to feel that we are not qualified to love You, Father, and to serve You as our Father.

Father, please allow us to feel once again that, because we are in such a position, we are afraid to tell You that we love You. Our eyes have tried to gaze at You, Father, centering on our own ideal; and with our own perception, faculty of knowledge, and standard of intellect, our mouths have told our stories and made entreaties before You. We have tried to pursue our own ideals before You, Father, but when we consider the fact that You cannot stand in the position of our ideals, Father, we earnestly pray that You will allow us to repent for our ignorance.

At this time, allow us to realize and feel on our own that, though we made our way here with complete devotion and a loyal heart, thinking that You were above us, the truth is, Father, that You are under our feet. Therefore, please allow us to realize once again that we must become people who experience, deep in the marrow of our bones, a faith that brings us to lament over the shame we feel and cannot hide. We know that You have become a pitiful Father who cannot stand before all people and guide them. We are also aware that there are many people who are calling out to You thoughtlessly, not knowing that You are walking with weary steps, immersed in despair, with nothing to lean on.

We must absolutely know that, even so, Father, You forget about Your pitiful and desperate situation and go forth, overcoming everything to save even one life. Please allow us to understand that Your many difficult trials, which cannot be fathomed or felt through our emotions or in our cells, are buried within this history. Furthermore, allow us to realize once again that we are undutiful children who cannot be easily forgiven, even after thousands of years, because we failed to reveal the stories of Your hardships. Please grant that we may become Your children, who can resonate with Your internal emotions deep in our hearts and, at the same time, grasp the many buried secrets of history.

Father, when we come to know about these circumstances related to You, we should become children who feel ourselves unworthy to handle Your situation; children who are eager to offer our entire selves before Your compassionate love, Father; and children who can call You “Father” with a sadness surpassing that of losing our parents, losing Heaven, and losing everything in the world. Otherwise we cannot enter the realm of Heaven’s restoration, and we sincerely and earnestly hope and pray that You will allow us to know this clearly.

Paul told the Ephesians, “Grace be with all who have an undying love for our Lord Jesus Christ.” Have we ever been unchanging? Though we spent the last decade within the gates of the Unification Church, crying for the heart of our Father, it was our habit to change constantly. In a single day, we changed tens of times and hundreds of times. Because we could not help but be so faithless, we could not sympathize with You on Your path. Therefore we sincerely hope and pray, Father, that You will allow this hour to be one in which we clearly realize that we need to become children who can lament our past, who can ask You to bind us again in heart with You, and who can raise ourselves toward You, Father, whenever we stumble.

Father, before we speak of Your love, allow us to understand what Your circumstances are like at this time. Before we speak of what Your present situation is like, allow us to become children who are aware that You faced countless situations in the past that were even more wretched. When we look at ourselves, permit us to know how shameful we are before You, our Father, and we sincerely hope and pray that You will grant us the understanding that we need to become people who can comfort You.

This has been a time when the members of the Unification Church have set out on their march under our new historical motto toward this city of Seoul and toward other parts of Korea. Therefore we earnestly ask and hope, beloved

Father, that You will form a new and strong historical bond of heart with them, and that You will allow them to newly determine deep in their hearts the direction they should follow and the guidelines they should live by from now on. We entrust all that remains after this hour to You, Father, and earnestly hope that You will take personal dominion over it. I offer all these words in the holy name of True Parents. Aju! (May 25,1969)

CHAPTER 5

True Family

1. Please allow us to become good ancestors who establish the order of love

Father! In light of this world-level holy wedding ceremony, we are making a new beginning to achieve the extensive and great Will that You have allowed and hoped for, and we pray that You will take charge of everything. Until now, in the course of history, there has never been the union of a man and a woman centered on You. We all know that it is because of Your hidden good works and Your meritorious hard work that such a thing, which has never happened until now, could be accomplished in the Unification Church.

When we think that the course of history up to the present existed in order to find one man, we come to understand that the ability to open the doors of a new history centered on families and the Unification ideology has been the blessing of Heaven. We sincerely appreciate the grace of being given this amazing blessing by virtue of Your efforts amid hardship, Father. Now please allow each of us to offer all we have before You.

When we think about marriage, we can't help but be reminded that it is an issue directly linked with the Fall of

Adam and Eve. When we who were born with the blood lineage of the fallen parents think about the amazing event called the Blessing, centered on our Father, we sincerely offer our gratitude for Your grace. Being as we are, we should know for a fact that we must become men and women who can first be offered substantially before You as sacrifices that are centered on true goodness.

However, we come to realize that we are people who can't reach that position as individuals. We know that we can't stand in that position as fallen descendants. Nevertheless, since we now have the name of children through our relationship with the True Parents, please lead us, Father. We earnestly hope and desire that You allow us to clearly understand that such grace comes only in the place where our work begins through a relationship with the True Parents.

Now every man and woman here has offered him or herself completely before You, Father. Please keep them as Yours forever. Please grant them authority and please allow them to become good ancestors by becoming good examples in

establishing the order of Your love in Satan's world. Father, please take charge of this special workshop, which was begun after we made a promise before

You and were entrusted with this great enterprise. We have set this period of nine days until next Tuesday as a special period and we dedicate it to You, Father. Therefore please do not let anything that takes place during this period be in any way contrary to Your law.

Father, we must fulfill our mission by uniting our minds and bodies and at the same time achieving oneness with You. We earnestly hope and pray that You allow these people to know that they may participate in this gathering only after having proven themselves as true children through a relationship with True Parents centered on You, and after having attained solid conviction. At this moment, as we start out on the date we have set, we sincerely hope that You will bestow Your boundless grace on this hour. Moreover, since we know that our responsibility and that of the headquarters are important in carrying out this work, Father, please supervise and watch over everything we do as we make all the necessary preparations.

Please grant that the final decisions of goodness be appropriate to Your Will. We hope and pray that You guide us so everything can bring about beneficial results. Please establish Your children on the public foundation that is separated from all private connections. By so doing, we sincerely hope and pray that You allow this hour to be one in which we can examine ourselves and dedicate ourselves so we can remain forevermore as public figures. Please grant that we may cherish the amazing grace of this Blessing that has been realized together with Heaven so we can become good ancestors to our descendants and future generations for thousands of years to come. Accordingly, we earnestly ask and desire that You help us do so, and not let us become pitiful children who lose the standard of good ancestors.

Please have personal dominion over all that takes place from now on. There are almost four hundred people gathered here. Please decide the fate of each one of them with Your own hands. We sincerely request and hope that You allow us to accept the one, ideal object partner each of us can respond to, then join our hearts and work as one to fulfill our mission and achieve Your Will. We humbly bow before You and ask that You may protect us with the heavenly forces and angels especially guarding this environment so we can make this period a time of joy for You and bring it to a successful conclusion. Therefore, Father, please take charge of us, have dominion over us, protect us and look upon us with compassion. Placing everything

here in Your hands, I offer this prayer in the name of the True Parents. Aju! (March 23,1970)

2. Please remember Your children

When we think about Your profound guidance, Father, in making the people of the Unification Church pass through a historical era of suffering because You loved us specially, we are truly grateful for all the days of our past. We earnestly hope You remember Your children who are still walking the path of suffering today, because they do not yet know Your Will.

Father, please allow us to make our way through this path, no matter what difficulties may come. We sincerely hope and pray, Father, that You connect the many spirits in the spirit world with the spiritual mediums of the present and that You bless the people who have come forth yearning for the true path and the true vision this nation should head toward. We know that, though we are so unworthy, You have called us and brought us together because it is Your divine Will to resolve such a historical relationship. Though we may not look like much on the outside, please grant that we may become Your children who know how to be grateful that You have called us especially to fulfill this historic and epic mission.

Father! In Your presence we are as naked children. Therefore You need to dress us, feed us and raise us in Your embrace. However, up to the present we have not been able to relate with You as sons and daughters. Please allow our minds and bodies to stand in that position, and please bless us, that we may become Your sons and daughters. We don't own anything in this world, we don't possess even one thing and we have nothing we can proudly show others; nevertheless, we do have this relationship with You as sons and daughters who can grow up in Your embrace, for which we are grateful.

We know that this kind of relationship is a privilege that represents the authority of victory, and we must know how to be grateful for it. We are not much to look at, but please allow us to become sons and daughters whom You can treasure and be proud of. Even if we go a difficult path, we go together with You, Father. Even if we have a sorrowful experience, we have it with You. Hence even if we stand in a difficult position, please lead us, Father, that we may be able to comfort You. Please allow us to embrace the day of hopes and dreams deeper and deeper in our hearts and allow us to become Your true sons and daughters who are able to fuel and lead the advance toward tomorrow.

However thorny our path, please allow us to resolve anew never to become a burden. We have come to know You, Father, and we know which direction You are going. Accordingly, when following Your path, even if we become injured and need to carry a heavier cross, we know that only in such times can we comfort You. Therefore we earnestly hope and pray that You will allow us to become Your children who go forth with all our devotion. Despite having endured numerous ordeals, this pitiful people, in this small corner of Asia, have not perished, because they have had Your special protection. We are truly grateful to You for this, Father.

Father, please enlighten this people about the path they need to follow henceforth. We are worried that a time of unrest surrounding this nation is approaching us from all directions and that a time of difficulty is approaching this people. Please extend Your guidance to us. We can't help but think about our solemn responsibility. We have to accomplish the mission of restoration for You, Father, by adopting the proper attitude, dressing in white, building an altar and offering bows before You. This is something we cannot entrust to others or commission others to do. We should wholeheartedly devote all our energies to it and must dedicate our entire minds, bodies and will to fulfill this responsibility. In so doing, we must manifest Your love and sympathy.

We should realize that it is only when they are centered on such a bond that this people can overcome the hardships of Golgotha, which they need to transcend. We know that now is the time to do so. The more we think about the fact that all the paths of suffering this people had to walk were related to Your Will, the more we must strive to become the people You desire us to be, since we have set forth after pledging to take responsibility for the historical mission You entrusted to us. Furthermore, we earnestly hope and pray, Father, that You will not allow us to become pitiful people who bring You sorrow, but rather people You can be proud of before the world.

In the course of history, no one has known You, Father. No one has known Your wish, Your Will, Your heart or Your situation; no one has known how Your ideology can flourish. Be that as it may, please allow us at this time to become true sons and daughters who can understand everything about You and who can yearn for You with a heart of compassion and mercy. We earnestly hope and pray for this.

Since we know that on this morning the lonely people of the Unification Church, spread out across the entire Korean Peninsula, are on their knees entreating You, please be with them and please connect them through Your profound love. Even if the ropes of hardship are tied together and strain against us, our relationship with

You must never be severed. Even if everything is eliminated, please leave us Your love, and even if everything is put aside, please leave us Your power. We pray that we may welcome the day of liberation that is approaching the people. Furthermore, allow us to become Your children who know that, however much we have cherished the hope of tomorrow in our hearts, we can never be accepted before Your Will.

We should not accept our present selves and how we have lived so far. When we think about the fact that, no matter how we look at it, our beginning stemmed from the Father, we must return the fruits of our life to You. We must move things for You, Father, with this kind of mindset, whether we live or die.

Accordingly, we should learn how to harmonize all relationships in front of You, and we should commit ourselves to the hope of tomorrow. We earnestly hope and pray You will allow us to know clearly that only when we stand in such a position can You be with us in a solid relationship. We also sincerely hope and desire that You grant us the awareness that we need to shed tears of remorse with all our heart and lament bitterly and endlessly when we realize our immaturity, and become filled with so much shame that we cannot show ourselves before You.

Father, we have called out to You endlessly. Now we should become mature children who can call You, knowing clearly whether You are a Father of joy or a Father of sadness. To this day, we have known You as the Father who gives us blessings, the Father who comforts us and the Father who delivers us from our difficult ordeals. However, allow us to know that we have the responsibility to comfort You, to rescue You and to take charge of the world. In doing so, Father, we should become children who can forget ourselves and shed tears of sympathy for You whenever we see that You are lonely, or in a difficult and pitiful state.

Please grant that we may become children who can go forward acknowledging that this is our life philosophy and life course. We sincerely hope and pray that, if there are any such sons and daughters, You will grant them more of Your profound and virtuous love, and please praise them for being sons and daughters with whom You can share the remaining circumstances of restoration. Up until the present, when we have felt sadness, we have often grieved for ourselves. However, we earnestly hope and desire that now, when our sorrows go to extremes, You allow us to become sons and daughters who grieve thinking of our sorrow as Your own.

Please allow us to know that, no matter how wonderful tomorrow's hope may be, if there is no solid bond between You and us we cannot pin our future hopes on

even the best wishes and ideologies. We sincerely hope and ask that You allow us to become Your sons and daughters who know that if You, the One who sought us out and with whom we have a bond, are in sad circumstances, we should shoulder the cross of Your sorrow.

Since we know that Your Will, which came before us, is noble and precious, please allow us to go forward again and again, knowing that the mission we have been commanded to carry out is the mission to destroy the camp of evil, dedicating every last bit of our energy and life while wholeheartedly endeavoring to overcome all hardships. Father, we earnestly hope and pray that You allow us to become children who spare nothing when we prepare ourselves for such a task. Please do not abandon Your sons and daughters who are praising Your name today, who are yearning for Your embrace and Your deep heart. Thus allow us to bring about the sacred day of glory, the one hour of glory, the one hour of grace and the one moment of resurrection.

Just as it is now springtime, please grant that the 1970s be the springtime of the Unification Church. Accordingly, allow us to march forward toward a summertime that overflows with glory. We sincerely hope and pray that You allow us to be children who can make a new resolution to that end. A small number of people have gathered here. They have not come here to go this path for the sake of a specific person; rather, they have gathered here because they wish to draw near to You and wish You to give them the remaining mission. Therefore we earnestly ask and hope that You bless them.

Please protect Your children who are working hard in all parts of the world. Please guide the Japanese church members as they follow their path while shouldering their historic and monumental responsibility. We humbly request that You extend Your divine protection over the various events scheduled to take place in Japan in the future as well as over all the events we are planning here. We humbly pray all this in the name of the True Parents. Aju! (April 19, 1970)

3. Please grant that we may become true filial sons and daughters

Father of love! We thought Jesus came to earth solely to find us, but that was not all he came for. We thought he came for the sake of our families, but that was not all he came for. And we thought he came for the sake of the chosen people of Israel, but that was not all he came for. Neither did he come for the sake of any one denomination.

We have come to understand that Jesus was simultaneously the hope of the created world and the representative of its entire value. Father, what is the state of our mind today in relation to Jesus, who had the mission to restore everything? Please do not allow any of us to become people who die clinging to their family. Please do not allow any of us to become people who die clinging to their people, their nation or their world.

We earnestly hope and pray, beloved Father, that You allow us rather to become people who can live risking our lives for the sake of the life and death of the cosmos, that is, people who represent heaven and earth in life and in death.

Please grant that no outcries of lamentation among the things of creation remain, due to the failure to accomplish the restoration through Jesus. If such laments remain, we earnestly hope and desire, Father, that You allow us to become true sons and daughters who are able to resolve this, to bring You and Jesus relief, and to penetrate Your heart through an eternal relationship with You.

And please work together with us, Father, that we may resolve all historical sorrow and that You may receive the comfort of that liberation. Furthermore, please grant that we may go forward together with You. We earnestly hope that You allow us to become true dutiful sons and daughters who are able to forget everything and praise Heaven. I pray all these things in the name of the Lord. Aju! (March 23,1958)

4. Please grant that we do not forget the love of our Father

We know that today is a day when all people should bring their hearts together, offer a bow before the Father and praise His boundless love, honor and glory. We also know that the time of hope You wanted to realize centered on the ideal of creation of heaven and earth has not yet appeared on earth. We know that Your joy was immense when You created all the things of creation and humankind. However, up to this point there has not been a single person who has understood the heart of the Father, who yearned for the family of goodness, realized through eternal life and eternal love centered on humankind, and there has been no one on this earth who has profoundly experienced this.

We should realize how grievous, frustrating and disappointing it has been that our first ancestors could not attend You, Father, and be embraced within Your Will. Father, we have prostrated ourselves before You on this morning. We must acutely feel in our mind and body that You are our deeply grieved Father, one who has

worked so hard to find His children throughout the course of history. Father, You have shouldered the responsibility of history while immersed in sorrow and have sought to find us. Therefore we must truly unite our mind and body and fulfill our duties of filial piety and loyalty to You to be able to call You Father and the central figure of goodness.

When we objectively examine whether there was ever one moment in the past when our joy could be remembered in Your heart for all eternity, we cannot help but censure ourselves for having failed to do so. We should realize that the place where You want to meet us and exchange life stories is not the current environment where we have lived till today. Rather, it is in on the higher level of Your world of heart. Please allow us to understand that this world of heart does not come about through the tangled circumstances of the Fall, but that it is realized centering on Your heart, Father, who long for the hour when You can move through the original relationship that transcends all circumstances.

We earnestly hope and desire, Father, that You grant us the ability to comprehend with our hearts, not only through words. We can't help but raise our heads and praise Your greatness, and we cannot enter the presence of Your grace without tears of gratitude. Guide us, that we do not forget Your great and precious love, Father. We earnestly hope and desire to become Your children, who can feel Your life in the blood flowing through our own veins, who can sense Your breath in the sound of our own breathing and who can feel Your touch of infinite mercy upon our own skin.

Father! Please allow us to realize what sorrowful people we are since we have not, even for a single hour, had the hearts of innocent children whom You can comfort and who are completely immersed within Your profound, high and merciful heart. Nursing the sorrow of the Fall, we walk the path of restoration destined by history.

Those presently living on this earth are pitiful people covered with scars. They are far away from You and cannot relate to You, Father. When we reflect that we must lift ourselves out of this tangled environment and sad circumstances and return to the world of our original nature, where we can receive official recognition and bring a new beginning to this earth, we come to feel once again that we are really a great distance away from You, Father.

We come to know that we are people who must make a deep internal connection of heart with You, build a new relationship with You as Your eternal sons

and daughters, and begin anew from this place under new commands and promises. Even though You are calling us, how many times have we found ourselves sad and pitiful people who cannot come to You because we are still in our lowly position and we still have a long way to go? Father of love, we earnestly hope and pray that You allow us to become sons and daughters who clearly realize this.

Please allow us to become Your sons and daughters whose anguish increases the more we feel that the place we live in today is not the place we were originally meant to be. We know You cannot dwell in such a place. Father, You have been wounded, rejected and abandoned by innumerable people as You have continued to take responsibility for this sad history, and we are worried that if You come to us where we are You may have to suffer new sorrows because of us. Therefore, Father, we sincerely hope and pray that You will allow us to become sons and daughters who can return to You after promising that we will all go the distance, and that You will wait for us.

We earnestly hope and desire, Father, that You allow us to become Your children who work tirelessly in our desire to make Your noble and precious Will remain forever, maintaining filial piety and loyalty even when our bodies are worn out and our minds are exhausted. We also sincerely hope and pray that You allow us to clearly realize that, even if we were to set right our disunited mind and body and walk the path of attendance, we would still be far from standing in our original position before You.

We have called out to You from this faraway place, and we have called out to You many times when faced with conditions to indemnify our inability to form a relationship with You, Father. However, before we call out to You, we must first make our way through the course of indemnity You have given to each of us. Since we need to follow this path bearing our cross, Father, we sincerely hope and pray that You allow us to clearly know we are people who have no alternative but to offer devotions and fight the battles we need to fight.

We earnestly hope and desire, beloved Father, that You allow us to become children who can feel the love hidden in Your holy Will. Please remember all Your children spread out in all parts of this nation, and if there are people who are kneeling, bowing their heads before You, prostrating themselves before You and calling out to You, please embrace them with love. Father, if there are people who are desperately crying out to You, yearning to become loyal subjects and filial sons and daughters of Heaven, and who are struggling so they may be embraced in the

deep and noble bosom of Your love, we sincerely hope and desire that You do not pass them by.

Father, we earnestly hope and pray that You halt Your footsteps and comfort them with Your profound and noble heart of mercy. Father, please allow us to know at this time the preciousness of the responsibility entrusted to us and allow us to realize that the time of Heaven will not always remain solely with us. Please grant us awareness of the fact that even though people, earthly relationships and material things may remain with us, the Will of Heaven and Your providence will not always remain with us.

Please allow us to know that if we miss the crucial time, we cannot help but lament for all eternity. Hence we earnestly hope and pray that You allow us to become Your children who fulfill our duties of loyalty and filial piety and are not lazy in preparing to usher in that one moment. We sincerely hope You bless those who adore this place and are calling You with all their hearts. Furthermore, we earnestly hope and pray that Your consolation and advice be with the people spread across the world who are waiting for the day they will meet You centering on Your Will.

We should go straight toward the Will of the Father, knowing clearly that the responsibility and mission to triumph on the final battlefield rests upon our shoulders. We sincerely hope and pray that You allow us to be sons and daughters who can stand at the vanguard, defeat the enemies and bring joy to You. Please be with everyone gathered today in Your name, and we earnestly hope and desire that You allow us to be Your children who can light the flames of life in this dark world, and fulfill our mission as a lighthouse and as the salt of the earth.

Please allow Your children to experience profoundly how many bloodstained paths had to be walked before the Unification Church emerged. Our path was found through unbearable pain, from among many paths of tears, paths of sorrow and paths of oppression and anger. Please grant that we may become Your children who fulfill the duties of loyalty and filial piety on this path, who embrace all the indemnity of the people and the world, who inherit this worthwhile path You have patiently walked, and who are able to fulfill all our responsibilities.

We will race forward toward the day when we bring innumerable people to be embraced in Your bosom; we earnestly hope that Your power be with us. The numerous spirits in the spirit world are awaiting the day they will be liberated from their sorrows through us. Accordingly, we sincerely pray that You personally be with

us. We earnestly request that You let us become Your children who can fulfill the duties of true filial piety and return praise, prestige and glory to You forevermore, by setting everything in the present in accord with Your Will as the starting point of glory. I pray all these things in the name of our True Parents. Aju! (November 17, 1968)

5. Please allow us to become proud parents

Beloved Father, we have learned through the Principle that the restoration of the four-position foundation is what You have been searching for. Beloved Father, we have come to realize that a four-position foundation is formed when that which was divided from a single, complete origin is once again united. We know through the Principle that the world of the ideal of creation that the Father envisioned can never be achieved through any other means if our efforts deviate from the realm of the four-position foundation. When asked what the completion of the purpose of creation desired by the Father is, we say it is the perfection of the four-position foundation.

Father, we now understand that only when the husband and wife are together in oneness can their sons and daughters become one. The Unification family has been entrusted with the mission to fulfill the responsibility that can be offered to You with devotion. Therefore, Father, please bestow Your love upon the people of this group. Dear Father, the families of the Unification movement must become families You can trust. Father, the reason You surmounted the path of tribulation over thousands of years was to bring forth these families and find Your decisive partner who could bring victory to the family. When we think about this, we are truly grateful to You for enabling us to welcome an age when all the families of the Unification movement today can be mobilized.

We clearly understand that only after the family surmounts the course of indemnity can the tribes be organized in the heaven and earth of freedom in which You can take delight. Father, we have to now find our place by ourselves and become a divine group of people that can remain eternally Your people. At this moment, when Satan's world and the heavenly world are in the midst of a decisive battle, I sincerely pray and hope that in this three-year period, we, as Your sons and daughters, can fulfill the way of devotion for the sake of victory, pay indemnity in Satan's world and go beyond this world with honor.

We joyfully welcome this time when we are able to conclude an era, a time that brings value and meaning to our lives, whether we are awake, asleep or in any

other situation. Countless patriots and martyrs have died while hopefully awaiting this time. We know that their greatest regret was to have died without being able to fight for the nation and the world in accordance with God's Will. Thus, allow us to become sons and daughters who know how to be deeply grateful for having become a family that stands in a position of potentially being blessed more than anybody else and having become a family bound for victory.

Your beloved children who are fighting on the front line should be thinking only of You, Father, and must be willing to dedicate everything solely for Your sake. The reason they leave behind then- husbands and children, take responsibility for the front line and pioneer a path each day is because they seek to accomplish Your Will. Thus, Father, You must without fail be with them in those places. They should understand that offering their dutiful love to You has even greater value than witnessing.

Father, as they go on the path toward the enemy world on behalf of humankind and the people of this nation, please grant that they may become divine daughters who know how to establish and sever ties. Due to the bitter sorrow of six thousand years, women had to endure a shameful history in which they could not find their authority. Father, I sincerely pray and hope that during this period of time You can allow them to realize that You will return to them the privileged authority that will allow them to rise above this history and welcome the day of victory.

Father, in the year 1971, please freely reveal to us all that is on Your mind. At this moment, please open the hearts of the people so they may establish Your Will and bring You joy. Please lead the group of people who are bound to this place. I sincerely pray and request Your permission to bestow upon them the authority of envoys so they may become a group that will surely glorify You in the divine era.

We should be aware of the fact that countless spirits in the spirit world recognize the importance of the current time and are anxiously gazing upon it. I sincerely pray and request that You allow these people to become sons and daughters who make great effort and invest their entire being in offering devotion and manifesting their own precious value, giving thanks to You, even if it means forgetting about themselves completely. May they manifest all expressions of loyalty within a limited period of time in the present day.

Father! Bless this day and shower Your blessings upon Your numerous children who celebrate this day. May all manner of blessings be evenly shared. On this day we are in the position of owner and have pledged once again to offer all manner of

devotion to Your Will, so we are not ashamed in front of our Parent. Thus, Father, I sincerely pray that You embrace us. Furthermore, I sincerely hope and pray that You will allow this hour to be one when we pledge to become one in heart and in purpose with Your daughters, to command heaven and earth, substantiate their devotion before the people and the world, and leap forward after having paid indemnity.

Beloved Father, I pray that, in addition to this three-year course, You may be with us for eternity and the glory of victory may spread throughout the 1970s, for all eternity. I sincerely pray that You may quickly bring the day of liberation for all people in the spirit world and on the earth. All this I pray in the sacred name of the True Parents. Aju! (February 1, 1971)

6. Please grant that we may uphold True Parents' teaching

Father! We know it is not because of anyone's power that the Unification Church has continued to exist until now. We know it is due to Your power, and it is also due to the many saints and sages' foundation of public accomplishments. They paid the price of blood throughout the historical ages.

We believe that such bonds were formed today because the foundation of loyalty and filial piety offered by Jesus Christ throughout his life still remains. Furthermore, we know how much You sacrificed Yourself for us on the path of suffering in the course of history. We know very well that before we were lonely, You were lonely first, and that before we faced sorrowful circumstances, You were the Father who first experienced sorrow.

Now we must realize how precious it is that we are able to experience the relationship of true families in accordance with Your Will today, and that You have gone through great adversity to form the Unification family, organize the Unification tribe and to recover bring many families. We must understand the preciousness of True Parents' name. We must always keep in mind that True Parents are the parent body that frees You from Your historical sorrow, the center where humankind's hope is realized, and the origin of the ideal world. Therefore we can't exchange the True Parents for all of history, for all ages, even for our own families, even for our children.

We must carry the ideology of True Parents in our bodies. The will of True Parents is to save the world. We have come to understand that the ideology of True Parents is to disregard reality, build the future and leave behind an eternal

tradition. We are here in the present to bear the fruit of the past, to become the center of the purpose of the present and to become the center of the purpose of the future. Thus we realize that we are standing in a holy position that can decisively influence the destiny of three ages, which has not been known to humankind.

However, we now know, Father. By realizing the True Family, the family You deeply longed for, a true people is formed. Furthermore, when the traditions of the True Family spread out, a true nation is formed. When traditions go beyond the nation and out to the world through true family relationships, a true world is formed. When we think about this amazing fact, we earnestly hope and desire, Father, that You allow us to realize that, in order to prepare a firm foundation of true families that You can remember and in whom You can find Your Sabbath, the wives must first tend a garden of the tradition of heart.

When we wonder about the value we will have when our bodies collapse, Father, please grant that we may understand that the position of blessed wives today is not limited to the giving of themselves for the three great liberations: the complete liberation of heaven, earth and True Parents. It is also the position where this people and the descendants of our descendants can be completely liberated. Furthermore, it is the position where the fulfillment of wishes in the multidimensional plane is determined.

We must now give our entire devotion, fulfill our moral obligation as good ancestors of millions of generations, and establish a tradition that will be worthy of eternal respect. This is why this year's motto is "Securing the Unification Foundation." We did not know the Parents who constitute this foundation. When were we filial children to our Parents? When did we attend our Parents in the spring when flowers bloom? Moreover, when did we fight beside You in summer, fall or winter? When did we determine to die together with You?

We would like to sincerely thank You for granting us this period when we can all share True Parents' destiny for three years, even though we should have already attended True Parents for three years but did not.

They are the True Parents during the day and night, in solitude, in joy and when gazing at heaven and earth. Thus when we go on the path of life where we shed desperate tears and pray, "I wish to live for tens of thousands of years attending our True Parents," and when that prayer flows into our living environment, countless people there will be moved and, more than that, countless people all over the

world will be moved. We must understand that a holy and tremendous happening lies beneath the surface here. Therefore we earnestly pray and request that Your daughters may go forth with greater strength and vigor.

In spite of the fact that we should have shared all our grief-filled stories with one another, sympathized with the difficulties of others and listened to one another, time did not permit us to do so. Therefore, Father, please empathize with all the difficult circumstances in all those stories. Everywhere people share with You their difficulties and inform You with earnest hearts of the hardships they have gone through. Please touch them with Your hallowed hand and be with them; please manifest Yourself to them and comfort them several times more than the comfort You gave me when I was in a similar position.

Thus we sincerely hope and pray that You allow Your fire of life to sweep across the entire Korean Peninsula through the supplications of the people gathered here, and their love of the Korean people. Please grant that a sacred group of people who are holy, pure and noble, who are watched over and praised by all of heaven and earth, can appear through the women of this peninsula. Please allow these women to become Your daughters who are worthy to receive Your love. Allow them to be Your daughters who will always bear in mind that a historical foundation of glory can be established through them and that an amazing global miracle can shine forth through their movement. Furthermore, please grant that they do not defile Your high, precious and sacred name and Your noble and exalted character.

We have entrusted everything to You, Father. Therefore please let the glory You have permitted us be with these people forevermore. We earnestly entreat You again and again to allow them to become true daughters who can be the glorious standard-bearers of victory on tomorrow's battlefield and who can serve their almighty Heavenly Parent and be worthy to receive Your love. I humbly pray all these things in the holy name of True Parents. Aju! (April 29,1971)

7. Grant that we may become descendants who receive blessings

Beloved Father, the blessed families do not number in the tens of thousands or in the hundreds of millions. In order to equalize the value lost by the single family with the realm of Blessing of hundreds of millions of couples, You, our God, had to pay the price in blood and had to carry and raise them to an equal position. When we think about this, we, the children, understand that this time of listening to the outline of the peace messages today is truly a terrifying and extreme position.

As descendants who must follow the path that lies before us, we must eliminate the remaining shadows of indemnity piled up in layers along the path we must take. Allow us to clear the path leading to an environment where we can live freely, and let us welcome the shining new morning of victory, the new morning of Cheon 11 Guk centering on our new selves. Please grant us the authority of sons and daughters who have been liberated and completely freed by this morning that shines upon the age of the individual, beyond the eight stages, and even upon the heavenly world.

This era was brought before You, who wanted to love the entire universe. At this hour, the foundation of victory based on the realm of the second generation achieved by the True Parents, who had inherited this era, shall be bequeathed to the people here who are centered on the realm of the third generation. Father, please lend Your ear to the sound of their solemn hearts. In order for each of them to take full responsibility for the path of life that they must pioneer by themselves, I sincerely pray and hope that Heaven mobilizes their ancestors to become these people's protective and nurturing enclosure, through the blessed families in the heavenly world.

Our calling to fulfill the responsibility to become the peace kingdom police force and peace kingdom corps is now at hand. I sincerely pray and hope that You bless us so we may assume the responsibilities of the police, the army, and even of the True Parents, and create the family with sons and daughters who inherit the mission of protecting Heaven and the True Parents, and establish the nation and the world consisting of such families.

The children residing in the Seoul area are participating here today. Please keep this historic day in Your thoughts and allow these people to once again discover in the depths of their hearts the calling, responsibility and authority of the ideal of creation that was lost. I sincerely pray that You take responsibility to guide them so they can become people who are completely free and who, standing on the standard of the Blessing, can leap forward, going beyond the reign of peace for all nations to reach the original ideal and shout "Eok-mansei"

I sincerely pray and request Your permission that these people become the blessed descendants who can secure victorious results in the substantial realm, in unity with these words that have now been entrusted to them. Please grant that these words and results may support and protect them, boldly blocking and overcoming the raging storm of chaos in the heavenly world and physical world. I sincerely request that You accept with joy the forthcoming hours and permit that,

beginning tomorrow, this year becomes a year to be proud of. All this I report and pray in the name of True Parents. Aju! (March 8,2007)

CHAPTER 6

True Creation

1. Raise us as children with dominion over all creation

Father! We didn't know we are living as debtors to all created things in the fallen world and that we are in a position where even husbands and wives are indebted to each other. We didn't know we are also indebted to our parents and that we owe an indescribably large debt as well to You, our eternal Father. Even if we look at our situation from the viewpoint of the fallen world, we are indebted. We are indebted to the things of creation and we are indebted also to Jesus Christ, who introduced the paradigm of the bride and the bridegroom.

We are a people that should repay our debts while representing the love of our eternal Father, but instead of repaying those debts we worry and lament focused on ourselves, and we curse the earth, the things of creation and Heaven. We cannot be excused in any way. Jesus battled to raise such people anew, willing to risk his life. Nevertheless, he was killed on the cross. Because of that, the two-thousand-year struggle to repay the debt incurred under heavenly law has not yet been resolved, and the word "judgment" still remains. Father! Please allow us to settle all the debts incurred throughout the muddled course of history so we may go over the summit of judgment. Please allow us to understand that we can stand before the eternal Father only if we become people who are more than able to repay all those debts. We earnestly hope and desire that You lead us to live lives through which we are able to repay the debts of life You gave us after having cast off the conditions of Satan. Please grant that we may live as people who have repaid our debts to True Parents, true couples and the true things of creation.

Father, please permit us to realize that Jesus has continued to invest himself completely until today on this path. Do not allow us to forget that Jesus and the Holy Spirit are praying endlessly in the spirit world for all people; this is because we have not yet indemnified our debts in relation to heavenly law and because we are so lacking and inadequate. We now know that for Jesus and the Holy Spirit to stand in the position of glory that can bring joy to the Father, we need to fulfill Jesus' responsibility in his stead. Therefore please allow us who are on earth to bring victory in the battle in heaven with Satan, and please let the works of Heaven be realized on earth.

We earnestly ask and desire that You allow us to become Your eternal children who feel Your love as our Father of joy and glory. Furthermore, we earnestly request that You raise us as Your true sons and daughters who are able to take dominion over all the things of creation with dignity and as Your beloved children who are not ashamed in front of You, Jesus, the Holy Spirit, the many saints and sages, all the people on earth and all things of creation. We hope and pray that You govern us and guide us, that we may repay all our debts. I pray all these things in the name of the Lord. Aju! (June 10,1956)

2. Let us be worthy to commemorate the Day of the Restoration of All Things

When we consider that we have ushered in the glorious day when the world of death is newly restored through the relationship with True Parents established by Heaven, we know all this is because of Your sacrificial endeavors, Father. Father, we are truly grateful. Please accept our sad hearts, which know You, though we can't find words to express how we feel. Since our bodies know You centering on our hearts, please accept our bodies as well. Since the husbands and wives who have been united in body know You as well, please accept them. Since the sons and daughters You have gifted to these couples also know You, please accept them. Unworthy as we are, we have followed with hearts concerned about Your Will and have tried to emulate the achievements and tradition You have fulfilled with blood, sweat and tears. This includes all the history of the First, Second and Third Israels. Accordingly, though we are deficient in achieving Your solemn Will to restore Your family, nation, world, land, sovereignty and people, please look upon us with approval for gaining a foothold of victory over our enemy and for standing on that foundation, through which we can fulfill these conditions.

We have already learned through the teachings we have received that all these given conditions will certainly be fulfilled, though it may take time to do so. Bearing this responsibility in our everyday lives, we stand more firmly than anyone else. Therefore, Father, please feel at ease and please accept everything we have. At today's dedication ceremony, we wish to offer the children of True Parents and the center of the heavenly family You have established, with Your sons and daughters of the third age serving as their shield. We would like to request in advance that, if there are any inadequacies or insufficiencies in this ceremony, they will not become conditions allowing Satan's accusation.

Since everything is brought about through Your compassion, please allow us in this gathering to avoid mistakes leading to indemnity like those of Noah, Abraham

or Moses. We sincerely hope that You alone have dominion.

Though this holy day is July 26,1963, we have already informed You it will be extended to the last day of the coming April. Furthermore we plan to declare the next day, the first day of May, as the day we dedicate all things. Please accept this day.

For the Day of All Things to be possible, there must be Parents' Day and Children's Day. Accordingly, we established the first day of March as Parents' Day in Your presence, we established the first day of October as Children's Day in Your presence, and we have now established the first day of May as the Day of All Things in Your presence. We have now set the horizontal conditions on earth to find the one day of restoration in the world You created. Therefore we understand that on the basis of all these holy days there remains one day we need to find and establish, which is God's Day.

When that day is instituted we will make a declaration together with the entire cosmos. Therefore we have instituted all these holy days to completely establish all the victorious conditions for that day. Accordingly, until we have extended that day and fully instituted God's Day, we will continue to fight, we will continue to endure and we will continue to march forward. Therefore, Father, please embrace us with Your direct divine protection. Please grant that heaven and earth become one, please grant that heaven and all citizens become one, and please grant that True Parents and the children become one for the sake of Heaven.

In doing so, we wish to set out from this foothold and conquer all twenty- five thousand miles of the distance around the planet Earth until all humanity has been bound together as one family, through relationships based on heart and blood kinship. Therefore please accept this as a foundation that has already been established, even though everything begins from this day. To offer You the sovereignty of our hearts, and for the sake of the sovereignty that we proudly demonstrate in our daily lives, we will continue to fight. We dedicate Your people to You with our hearts, and we dedicate with our hearts all created things that have welcomed their Father. Please accept our offering of devotion. Moreover, we pledge to dedicate the remaining people and things of creation through our lives. Therefore, Father, please grant us the time to do so.

We sincerely hope that Your glory will be with us throughout this ceremony. To commemorate the Day of All Things, the devoted followers and children of the Unification Church have collected an offering of money with blood and tears and

wish to dedicate this donation to You, Father, with all their heart and body. With such envelopes of money as we are offering, we have built the ship, the Cheon Seung Ho. Furthermore, since we know that You will also joyfully receive the factories and all other enterprises we are operating and that have been designated as belonging to Heaven on the basis of the material foundation we reported earlier as well as all expenditures, please accept everything as belonging to You. We pray that prestige, glory and praise be with You, Father, for all eternity, and offer this day in the name of True Parents. Aju! (July 26,1963)

3. Please grant that everything be realized according to Your Will

Father, we know that the sorrowful path of restoration is filled with complexities. Nevertheless, having trudged and fought along this path, with one hill left to go over before You can enjoy the Sabbath, we now feel that the time when we can sing the praises of the day of hope is drawing near.

We know that all this is not because of our hard work. Rather it is because of the hard work You invested so we could stand on the foundation of Your endless labors, unknown to anyone else.

In this age You have given us Parents' Day and Children's Day, and we thank You for accepting us within this wonderful realm of destiny in which, on the basis of one family and on the foundation of resonance in heart with You, Father, we can attend You as the Father who represents the one tribe, people, world and cosmos.

Beloved Father, please grant that we do not become people who complain when we are pulled by this destiny. We realize that we must take responsibility to cope with our destiny, take the lead and go forward. We also realize that the holy days were necessary to accomplish this purpose. Accordingly, we know it is our mission to shoulder the responsibility of sons and daughters, which is to exact retribution from the billions of enemies of God, the enemies of humanity, the enemies of all things of creation and the enemies of heaven, and to receive written declarations of surrender from them.

Now we realize that we must carry out responsible activities to restore by ourselves all the things of creation that were lost. We earnestly hope and desire that You allow us to usher in Your Sabbath from now on, to take responsibility for the entire history of sorrow in our age on a horizontal level, and return only glory to You on a vertical level.

At this point in time, when we are about to face the last crisis of the three- year course, please enable all the things of creation in heaven and on earth to become one. Furthermore, we earnestly hope and pray, Father, that wherever true hearts are found You may erect the foundation upon which we can stand in victory and glory, upholding Your wonderful and eternal standard. Since many of Your sons and daughters are fighting even today to achieve this, and are also appealing to You at this time, we earnestly hope and desire that You listen to each of these hearts and to all of their appeals, and please establish the day of victory in accordance with Your entire Will.

Within this same realm of grace, please protect all Your sons and daughters who are spread throughout the world for the sake of this work, and please grant that they do not become exhausted while facing this brutal battle. We earnestly hope and desire that You allow them to endure and remain to the end, until the final day of glory is established.

Loving Father, we thank You for being with us today. We earnestly hope and pray that You move us to make sincere efforts, that once again, through our minds and bodies and as we return home, we may find ourselves adequate to stand as victorious warriors of heaven who, with renewed resolution, embody glory on the newly laid foundation. Please accomplish everything according to Your Will and please allow only the glory of the victory You planned to be realized in the entire cosmos. We humbly pray in the name of the Lord. Aju! (May 15,1963)

4. Please grant that all creation be liberated

Father! We know that our first ancestors should have achieved oneness in Your love. We know that centered on the love through which You and our ancestors were supposed to become one, all the things of creation should have become one, based on the four-position foundation. But we also know that, because of the Fall of our ancestors, all creation entered the realm of lamentation, and that You are also lamenting.

When we look back on the course of the history of the providence of restoration, we see that the things of creation were always presented as offerings to restore humankind. Through these offerings, a God-centered relationship was established through which people could unite with You. Through such relationships, You have connected with different individuals. However, in today's Unification Church, the individual is not enough. Because the first ancestors fell before becoming a couple, a standard that can connect us with God as couples must be established. Please

allow us to know clearly that a task remains; that all things, centered on that couple, must absolutely pass through God and True Parents.

We must know that without undergoing such a process we could not have arrived where we are today. We know that, just as we were created through the things of goodness, the things that belong to You, Your grief and that of all creation, is resolved only when they leap the one hurdle. We earnestly hope and desire that You allow us to clearly realize that the origin of the world-level standard in today's horizontal world is realized centered on the family.

Today please enable us to repent that we have been unable to restore all created things, and that we have failed to live with the devotion by which we could offer all things to You completely, as people who consume, use, save and manage them. We know there must come a day of dedication when we are able to offer all created things to You by connecting them with the family, the nation, and finally the world.

We know that a day of celebration must come when all humanity can offer You our families and all our possessions, through the families, tribes, peoples, nations and the entire world. We know that the day we are registered as families of heaven must be established. On that day countless people will vie with one another to joyously sing its glory, and the actual stage where people compete with one another to dedicate the day to You, Father, will emerge. Therefore please grant us the clear understanding that, after all sorrowful conditions that have caused You to lament for the past six thousand years disappear, only the historical hope that brings You joy will remain.

Father! Please grant that we may completely offer You everything we have, including our entire selves and families, so we may usher in that day. Please allow us to know we must inherit Your eternal work through our relationship with You, the Heavenly Parent, the True Parent, to inherit and share the embrace of Your love. Moreover, please allow us to know that this amazing mission has been given to us.

We know that this has to happen on the individual level and also on the levels of the family, tribe, nation and world. We earnestly hope and pray that You allow us to become children who clearly know that every created thing should be linked to Heaven's ownership through a sanctification ceremony we must hold on the world level.

Beloved Father, the blessed families are present here as well. When have we ever presented objects qualified to belong to Heaven through a ceremony like this?

When have we ever had a chance to be registered before Heaven and thereby establish the original substantial condition centered on Your love? We have failed to set such a condition, so we earnestly hope and pray that You allow us to realize we are in a process of moving forward to lay down such a foundation on the national and world levels.

To accomplish such a goal, we must make a new resolve today. Furthermore, we earnestly hope and pray that You enable us to celebrate this day as a joyous time. Your children spread out across this nation are celebrating this day. By allowing them to work in unison with Your power, Your might and Your authority, Father of love, we earnestly hope that You allow the day of jubilation, the day in which all things can be liberated, to come as quickly as possible. At the same time, we beseech You to hasten the arrival of the day Your beloved children can create the second realm of liberation centering on a nation, and return this realm to You. We humbly pray all these things in the holy name of True Parents. Aju! (June 15,1969)

5. Please grant that we may know the meaning of the Day of All Things

Father! Every day throughout history has been filled with sorrow. Therefore we have shouldered the responsibility so future days will not be filled with sorrow. We are the people of the Unification Church, and at this time when misfortune roams this nation our mission is to brush aside this misfortune and sow the seeds of hopes and dreams.

As current trends of thought lead to despair, discouragement, pathos and grief, we have come to understand that the Unificationist ideology must be able to overcome this and offer new expectation and hope. We earnestly hope and pray that You allow us to become Your sons and daughters who know that to walk that path we must find the more public value and pursue it in our lives.

Father! Even to the present day, many sad occurrences have befallen us as the Unification Church followed Your Will. On more than one occasion, when backed into frustrating situations we could not share with anyone, we wanted to stamp our feet, curse You, Father, and claim You did not exist. Each time we remember such days, we feel once again how pitiable You are for having endured every moment in indescribable anxiety and impatience.

Your face is worn with care for our sake, and Your hands and feet are wounded for our sake. Furthermore, we know it was You who shed tears, sweat and blood

hundreds of thousands of times for our sake because of this troublesome relationship You have with us.

When we think of the fact that You live this way with us, an earnest desire to take Your hand and never let go wells up in our hearts. Our hearts desire to put our arms around Your neck and follow You on a mountain path or any other perilous way. Please enable us to know You, and to know that only when this yearning to carry You on our backs, even when lacking energy, dominates our hearts and overflows in our daily lives will we have fulfilled our duty of filial piety and loyalty.

Father! We find ourselves reminiscing once more about the 1960s. Until this Day of All Things was instituted, and as we found ourselves during the battle at a crossroads no one knew about, we had to decide whether to go left or right to determine the relationship of indemnity. Standing in a valley where we had lost everything, by attending You we found something of great value. In the midst of hope centered on You, the history of the families of the Unification Church began. Based on that, Parents' Day, Children's Day and the Day of All Things were established.

The day that was established on this foundation is God's Day. Even though God's Day should also have been the Day of All Things, Children's Day and Parents' Day, we have come to realize that instead of having one day of glory this day has been spread out in several intervals patched together. Whenever we celebrate days like these, we cannot help but repent in our heart for the mistake of our ancestors. Father, please bear with us.

A garment cut from a single piece of silk cloth is extremely valuable; yet instead of becoming such garments, we are ashamed that we became ragged garments covered with patches. Each time we celebrate this day, please grant that we may become people who kneel down, shed tears of sympathy for You, and pledge, while gritting our teeth and biting our tongues, that we will practice filial piety even if other people do not. We earnestly hope and pray that You allow us to become sons and daughters who realize that the main significance of celebrating this day lies in having as many people as possible make this pledge whenever we celebrate this day.

Are there any sons and daughters who have resolved never to let go of Your collar once they have grabbed hold of it, Father? Are there sons and daughters who, having taken hold of Your wrist, say they will not let go even if their hands fall off and their bodies are mangled, because it is the wrist of the Father they are

holding, and that they will even stake their lives to hold on to that wrist? Are there sons and daughters who, wrapping their arms around Your neck and embraced within Your bosom, assert they will never leave You, and who struggle along even if they have to go the way of ruin or the path of death because they are afraid of losing Your embrace?

Are there sons and daughters who possess a standard no one else has, even though from a secular viewpoint they may look like pitiful people who have lost everything? Are there sons and daughters who have completely captured the relationship of heaven and earth and can move everything within it, who know that this is the foundation of all value, who boast only of this, and who uphold and live only for this? We sincerely hope and pray that many sons and daughters may be clearly aware that, even if everything in the world flows by and social environments change, the heart does not change and will infallibly create history and the environment.

Father, please bless the path we, the Unification Church members, are following. Up to this point, we have been unprotected. Since we entered this vulnerable state for Your sake, we should feel grateful, even if we are destined to freeze to death in our weakness. Please enable us to become sons and daughters who, when imagining our frozen bodies being pierced by enemy spears and collapsing, are grateful that such a situation hasn't occurred.

Please grant that the understanding of the Day of All Things by the sons and daughters gathered here today not be limited to its literal meaning. Please enable us to realize that the things of creation are not the problem, but that the person whom the things of creation are meant to serve is the problem, and that whether that person can follow You is the problem. Please allow us to realize that the things of creation want to be taken care of and want to be governed by a true person. Please allow us to become Your sons and daughters who love the world and all the things of creation. We earnestly hope and pray that You allow us to become Your sons and daughters who are able to be more deeply aware than anyone else of the value of the things of creation and who are able to care for them.

Father, please bless Your sons and daughters gathered here today. Please remember Your sons and daughters who are engaged in missionary work in various parts of the world. We earnestly hope You reward the tears they shed a thousand-fold and ten thousand-fold, and that You protect them. Please enable us to find You when we are on the verge of starvation or in the face of violence. We earnestly hope and pray that You reach out to us with compassionate hands and remain with

us when we are in such circumstances. Though we are strangers whose emotions differ from Yours, please enable us to connect to You and to be Your children.

When we consider that we need to walk this lonely path of faith, please allow us to know our responsibility to bring about restoration, even when the guns and knives of the enemy are aimed at us. Furthermore, please guide us. We sincerely hope and desire that You allow this nation to be Your nation and people. We know there are many spirits who are suffering extreme pain because, even though they tried to find this day when in possession of a substantial self on earth, they failed and ascended to the spirit world with sorrowful hearts. Please forgive them so they can cooperate for the sake of goodness, and please grant them the glorious grace with which they can cooperate to establish traditions of goodness on earth.

Please allow all humanity on earth to become Your sons and daughters who can battle on the path of faith to establish the Will of goodness, with no regard for themselves. Please light their way, guide them and explain to them Your course. By doing so we sincerely hope and pray that You allow us to become sons and daughters who can receive You with overflowing ecstasy when we reach the Last Days. Please hold on to the sons and daughters who have grown fatigued or who have fallen behind while following this course. Please guide their footsteps so that, even if they have drunk from the bitter cup of defeat, they do not become people who look upon tomorrow with a vengeful heart. Instead, please allow them to be sons and daughters who go forward with hope and anticipation of a revival.

Numerous people living in Korea have committed many sins. All the disbelief and persecution they have poured on the Unification Church until the present day were due to their ignorance. We sincerely hope and pray that You forgive them. Since we know that we cannot celebrate this as a joyous day in the face of the enemy, we hope You allow this to be a sanctified day when the world can ask for forgiveness and offer obeisance to the Father.

We earnestly request that You save all humanity from perishing until the time when the remaining days and this world can be immersed in the realm of Your love and Your mercy, at the center of Your glory. And we ask that You enable those gathered here to become the victorious sons and daughters who can usher in that day. I humbly pray all these things in the holy name of True Parents. Aju! (June 4, 1970)

6. Please grant that we may fulfill the responsibilities of the high priest

Father! Today at this time we dare attempt to comprehend Your heart as You were creating all the things of creation. It is the original purpose and hope of creation that the bonds of one family be formed throughout the entire universe on the foundation of Your heart, which is the center of joy, happiness and all things. When we consider this, we realize that today this earth has not achieved harmony with Your wishes, Your circumstances and Your heart, thereby repeating the Fall. Please guide us to become people who can contemplate all this and repent again for all our historical inadequacies.

Please have compassion, Father, for the many people who must dash into battle for the sake of tomorrow's hope, having been unable to escape from the world of death. We earnestly hope for Your compassion toward the many believers who, transcending the present age, are rushing forward today in the direction of the original homeland, the land of the ideal of creation that You want to accomplish.

Father, as You have endured the responsibility for the past, present and future, You have withstood the greatest of hardships, and we know that Your heart is filled with sorrow. When we consider the sorrowful past in which people pounded nails into Your heart—when they should have been singing songs praising Your eternal truth and heart while standing in the presence of Your heart and ideal—we realize that we must bow our heads, kneel before You and raise an altar of atonement, while feeling the deep sorrow You have had to endure.

Father, as You look upon this reality, where no children have been able to raise the altar of victory before You, but are fulfilling the mission of high priest, we know You desire that at least we may become Your devoted envoys who can bear the cross of Heaven in Your stead. Father, though we have raised our hands and pledged to become Your true, filial sons and daughters and loyal subjects to appease Your sorrow and grief—even if it means giving up our lives after we have fulfilled our responsibility—we cannot help but lament that we have failed to practice filial piety and loyalty in a position that can bring You joy.

Nevertheless, Heavenly Father, please do not abandon us. We earnestly hope and pray that You work through us so we can become true children who can fulfill our mission and duties until the promised day of final victory.

Father! So many days have passed by during the long course of history, yet was there ever a single day when You could be happy? In spite of such a history, You found and instituted the Day of True Parents as well as the Day of All Things. Father, today is the Day of All Things You established after so much sacrifice. Father! We

cannot help being filled with deep emotion as we greet this day, while reflecting once again on the providence You have carried out so laboriously.

Today is a historic day that marks the fourth anniversary of the day You established the Day of All Things. Throughout Your long course, You have walked forward through miserable adversity filled with sorrow and anguish. Yet we come to feel once again that You have prepared these days while promising the one day of absolute victory in accordance with the Will of Your great providence. Father! We earnestly hope and desire that You awaken us to the reality that we must be grateful, thousands and hundreds of thousands of times, when we consider that the greater the adversity in the past, the more it appears as a condition for greater gratitude today.

Your sons and daughters who were scattered in all directions have now gathered here at Cheongpa-dong Church. Therefore please have dominion over them and allow them to remember this day. Furthermore, we earnestly hope and pray, Father, that through this day You allow them to establish the day of blessing You have prepared. Many members of the Unification Church spread out in all parts of South Korea are on their knees offering devotions and bows for this day. Therefore we sincerely hope Your touch of mercy will be with them wherever these children are gathered.

Moreover, there are many children all over the world who are upholding Your name and offering devotion. We earnestly hope and pray that You be with each of them. In addition, many of Your sons and daughters are struggling amidst the sorrow of pioneering a lonely path, unknown to others, with this amazing, cosmic, historic mission on their shoulders. Father, please remember them.

Father, we know only too well how exhausting is the path of adversity trod by a pioneer. Since You have also fought and advanced from such a position, You are fully aware of these circumstances. Therefore, Father, we earnestly hope and pray for Your efforts, that You may raise people who can resonate with Your circumstances and become laborers, lacking in nothing, who can fulfill the global and historical responsibility, realize the pledge to be victorious, and raise aloft the shield of victory in Your stead.

The time has now come for the first, second and third churches to take responsibility for the new mission locations and march in line toward the capital city of Seoul. Therefore please be with them and command them. By doing so, we earnestly hope and pray that You allow them to become Your children who, for the

one day of triumph, can more than fulfill the responsibility of the high priest while holding high the shield of eternal victory.

Father, the more that time passes, the more we come to feel that our astounding responsibility and mission are unavoidable. As we go forward while taking responsibility for the destiny of this people, we can see that the time when we must devote ourselves completely to repay You, and make the final decision for this people, is drawing near. We hope You allow us to make a new resolution and a new vow before the Father, with a grateful heart and an inspired mind. Father, we also hope and pray that You work through us so we can become Your children, who can realize this vow and share with everyone the accomplishments we have achieved.

We know that innumerable spirits in the spirit world are hoping for this day and are waiting for the time when they can be indemnified. Father, we are aware that You have chosen us and placed on our shoulders the great responsibility of forging the connection between the spirit world and the physical world, even if it costs our lives. We are truly grateful that You have allowed us this hour to gather here. Please embrace and protect the many children who, even at this hour, are calling You from near and far with hearts of adoration, and please understand all the circumstances of the children who are walking lonely paths. We pray that today, on this day of joy and glory, You fill everyone with abundant grace. I humbly pray all these things in the holy name of True Parents. Aju! (June 19,1966)

7. Please receive this ceremony for this dedication and transition point

Beloved Father! The time has come when the entire world must determine its direction and rush along the highway leading to the kingdom of heaven by finding one nation, the foremost state. Heretofore You have enabled us to usher in the age where hell, and all of humankind lamenting in the spirit world and the physical world, are liberated. Through Heaven's love for True Parents, the nation of the parents has now been established and the eldest son nation has been determined.

The Eve nation, which is the mother nation, failed to fulfill its responsibility. However, through the unity of twelve Koreans and thirty-six Japanese, the standard of the four-position foundation has been restored and for the first time the age has come when the United States, which was the archangelic realm, can be blessed. We sincerely thank You, Father, for having supported the devotional work of True Parents, who have been pioneering the way of the Blessing to form the family-level kingdom. This replaces the age of the unified kingdom that should have been established centering on True Parents right after the Second World War by all the

nations that participated in that war, including Korea, Japan, Taiwan, the Philippines, Canada and Britain.

I am aware of Your pioneering days, when You invested and sacrificed Yourself to bring Your vision into reality. How much persecution have Unification Church members received, and how many tears have they shed to do this work, crossing hills, mountains, seas and continents while walking this obscure path?

We have advanced to the world of liberation where we can establish the unified kingdom based on Christianity. This was made possible when You, who did not ignore our tears, sacrificed the parents' nation and even the children's nation, conditionally, all on the basis of Your love. Due to this and based on this standard, North and South Korea became one, Korea and Japan became one, and Taiwan, the Philippines and Canada transcended ethnicity and became one. Also, the family-level relationship of children was established in Adam's family centered on the United States. Furthermore, the realm of love where God's entire passion was to be received as love from above and below, right and left, and front and back, was accomplished.

True Parents have proclaimed the foundation on which everything that previously could not settle down can be brought to settlement, centering on the ideal standard of love in the family, and in all nations of heaven and earth. We dedicate the accomplishment of this foundation to You. Father, we hope and pray that You accept it.

True Mother stands in the position of uniting the twelve people of Korea and the thirty-six people from Taiwan, the Philippines and Canada, centered on the mother nation, Japan, and even the nation of the archangel. For the first time and on the foundation of the unity of these nations, the promised hour has come in which they can become one with the True Parents, and in which the parents and the children can become one in the presence of God. Through this condition they can go beyond all obstruction, to victory. Therefore we hope and pray that You accept this ceremony we are carrying out today with joy.

Father, we earnestly beseech You and pray that all past conditions may become a historic declaration and a realm of shields that protect historical and providential victories so God may freely move within the entire cosmos toward the perfected world of the sovereignty of love, remove all traces of Satan's world, and become the supreme King of love who rules with sovereignty endowed with the supremacy of love. Father, please receive this "ceremony for this dedication and transition

point” that I am proclaiming. I proclaim this again and again and again in the name of the True Parents. Aju! (May 23,1998)

CHAPTER 7

Earthly Life and the Spirit World

1. Let us move beyond the bitter anguish of Golgotha

The more we think about the many twists and turns in the course of restoration, we cannot help but think about the trials and tribulations of heart on the path that remains ahead of us. Today we have gathered together the young children to take this opportunity to reflect once again on the sad reality of history.

Among the many people who celebrated Christmas yesterday, how many of them embraced the heart of Jesus, shed tears and addressed You, Father, with a sorrowful heart, and how many of Your children worried about tomorrow's path to heaven? How many people know that You, our Heavenly Father, have labored more than we could possibly imagine? Please allow us to bear in mind once again that You have been a pitiful and wretched Father.

We know that the many twists and turns along Your course, and Your miserable situation, are the result of the sin of our ancestors. The time has come for us to move forward, beyond all the grief of Golgotha caused by the mistake of Adam and Eve.

Nonetheless, in order to greet the dawn of tomorrow, we must grope our way forward along the path of darkness. Because we know we can welcome the new dawn only once, the champions of the Unification Church have fought and plodded along the path of darkness, the early morning path despised by others.

When events have caused us to shed tears along this course, we have wished to be with You, who are also shedding tears. When we sweated and endured hunger as part of our struggle, we longed for the day when we could comfort You, who endured a course filled with such hardship.

Please enable us to consign the grief of the past to memory and to weep out of concern for You, Father. Furthermore, we earnestly hope and pray, Father, that You allow us to become Your sons and daughters who, having forgotten our miserable and pitiful selves, are able to struggle to fulfill the duty of filial children. We yearn to see a hopeful Father who, having washed away all the past days filled with tears and sorrowful memories, can smile at having found the goodness of tomorrow.

In following the path You walked, we have found it to be the path of the cross. However, as we have trudged along with the hearts of pioneers along this path, unknown to others, we have understood that this path does not lead to ruin. People have ridiculed us, but You have encouraged us. Many people have opposed us, but You have stood before us and comforted us. We are aware that on numerous occasions You have counseled us, saying, "I am here, and countless saints in the spirit world are protecting the path you are walking." You have comforted me when I was opposed and ridiculed, and the people who are following in my lonely footsteps are also lonely people. Therefore I earnestly hope and pray that Your love be with them as well.

Father! Do You have daughters who have resolved to firmly embrace and take responsibility for Your sorrowful heart and desperate situation? Please encourage them. Do You have any sons like that? Please hold them close. We earnestly hope and desire, Father, that You allow us to become true sons and daughters who can make You proud, who can praise Your glory and sing songs of triumph, having achieved a glorious victory on the final battlefield.

Father, please look upon the future of the Korean people with compassion. There is only one path this people should follow. In the fields of politics, economics and culture, there is nothing this people can contribute to the world. We know that besides aspects of heart, they have nothing to contribute.

We are also aware that the champions of the Unification Church who are following the way of heavenly law need to make a great contribution toward this people and fulfill a historic world mission. Therefore please grant us the awareness that we are people who cannot die even if we wish to die, and please allow us to realize on our own that we are pillars who have a responsibility and mission that prevent us from remaining idle even if we wish to. Thus we earnestly hope and pray that You enable us to secure tomorrow's victory and not grow tired in today's battle.

No matter what anyone says, no matter who opposes us and no matter who speaks ill of You, please allow us to follow You, and please prevent us from turning our backs on You and claiming not to know You, like the masses who betrayed You when You went to Mount Golgotha.

Since we need to tread the remaining critical path of the cross, please allow us to become people who, even when faced with Golgotha at the world level, are able to

form new ranks, go straight toward that path, cross that summit and sing a proud song of victory.

Father! How eagerly have You yearned for the appearance of families and brothers and sisters You could be happy about, for such a tribe, a people and a nation? If we become such people, then all those peaks of Golgotha will become flat land, Satan's forces will be swept away, and Heaven will take up the rod of Your Will and strike. We earnestly hope You allow us to know this truth and become Your children who can obediently go forth in the remaining seven-year course.

Since we are still filled with grief caused by our inability to love You, Father, this grief must be resolved. And since we are still filled with grief caused by our incapacity to fulfill our duty of filial piety to You, Father, that grief must also be resolved. Furthermore, since we are still filled with grief because we didn't fulfill our duty of loyalty to You, Father, that grief must be resolved as well. In order to do that, we must fulfill our duty of filial piety and our duty of loyalty through many coming battles.

We must hasten the realization of the peaceful kingdom of heaven where we can devotedly attend You by welcoming You, serving You and fulfilling our duties of loyalty and filial piety. For such a day to come, we must be proud of today and prepare for tomorrow. Furthermore, we earnestly request and desire that You save us from exhaustion, prevent us from betraying Heaven, and allow us to joyfully walk this path.

The year 1965, which was a year full of sorrow and historical difficulties, is now coming to a close. We sincerely hope and pray that You allow the champions of unification as well as the entire Unification Church to prepare our new selves during the week that remains before the coming new year, so we may fulfill our mission as representatives who can sincerely petition You, Father, on behalf of this people who are in deep sleep.

Please prevent us from entering any position opposed by Heaven. Please grant that the tears we shed become the source of life for all people, as well as an inspiration so that people will not hesitate to go this path of tears. Please grant that our path may set an example for others, of prostrating before You, fulfilling the duty of loyalty and showing gratitude. We earnestly hope and desire, Father, that You allow our path of adversity to become that kind of path and our life of sorrow to become that kind of life.

Father! Please bestow blessings upon this people and all the people of the world in the remaining days of this year. Please resolve the grief of the many spirits who are waiting in heaven for the day of the Second Advent. Please hasten the realization of a world You can govern, where the kingdom of peace can be built on the earth and where Your grief and Jesus' grief are resolved. This is our earnest hope and desire. We earnestly request that the day quickly come when we can return glory to You and be happy together with You, and when the earth can be filled with glory and victory for eternity. I pray all these things in the name of True Parents. Aju! (December 26, 1965)

2. Please grant that we may participate in victory under Your Will

Beloved Father, I have returned to my homeland, which has always been in my thoughts. Please take responsibility for the future of this nation, Father. I know that the inexperienced members of the Unification Church have shed tears day and night for this nation and its people. I know that their fervent prayers are connected to victory and are also connected to the final glory. I also know that fervent prayers follow intense difficulties and call for sacrificial blood and tears.

We know that our mission as a people still remains and this mission entails triumphing over ourselves, overcoming the cross of the family, going beyond the levels of the tribe and the people and overcoming the way of the cross centered on the nation. We also realize that after this the severe way of the cross awaits us, the way of marching toward the summit of the historical cross at the world level.

Moreover, we also understand the amazing fact that we need to pioneer the course of Your heart centering on the spirit world, and we need to open the way for future generations through our current path of the cross. We are well aware that, starting humbly from the position of individuals and going through the family, people, nation and world and even the spirit world, the path that leads to Your presence is not a welcoming path, but rather one we need to pioneer in an environment of persecution and misery.

In the past, countless people of faith were ignorant of this path; therefore they collapsed while going the way of the cross on the levels of the individual, family, society or nation. The Unification Church members gathered here have realized that they need to overcome this and forge the final way of the cross centered on Your heart. I know that, while working here in Korea, they have endured tremendous difficulties and sacrifices. Please bestow Your blessings on them. We hope You

enable them to become a glorified group of people who can participate in the victory of Your Will together with the hope of tomorrow.

Please be with us here and now. Please grant that all the words I have shared may be rooted in the hearts of all people as Your joyous words. We sincerely hope, Father of love, that You embrace with equal grace and love all Your children, the Unification Church members around the world who are looking toward this place, binding their hearts together and offering prayers. We thank You for granting us Your grace in this place, and we request that You receive all our offerings. I pray all these things in the name of True Parents. Aju! (September 26, 1982)

3. Please realize everything in accordance with Your Will for all eternity

Beloved Father, as I have gone on an odyssey of countless miles, along the lengthy path of restoration, I have had no choice but to speak like this, before immature young people, even though I

feel so awkward. Not a single person in this world has known this lamentable story. Also, it is a historical fact that up until now, not one person who could engage in the decisive battle to determine the matter of life and death based on this circumstance has ever appeared before Your eyes, even for a brief moment.

From the day I learned of Your Will, this son of Yours has been able to forget everything else and fight. The physical strength, the health and the conviction that have enabled me to invest myself completely and leap forward along this path did not come from me. When I think of how Your grace has prevented me from being branded a failure and has enabled me instead to be stamped with the seal of victory and to stand as a beacon of light for all eternity, I am truly grateful to You.

Even though my original heart wishes to bequeath freely, without any suffering, this amazing blessing of Heaven to the young members of the second generation gathered here, the nation has not yet reached that level, and the three-year course still remains to be completed before the world can reach that level. The final moment, when we need to shout and bring down the walls of Jericho, is right before us. Please allow them to be fully aware that I have walked a historical path in order to pave the way for victory so they will not be known as losers as they walk their own paths.

I also come to think of the virtuous acts of both Heung-jin from my family and the many other brothers and sisters who have become the first to ascend, and to fill

up the pit of indemnity as sacrificial offerings. Because all the works they accomplished out of their filial attitude toward True Parents still remain here on the earth, we know that, if those of the second generation of the blessed families determine to become a protective barrier that reaches in all directions, there is no way for them to fail. Therefore we sincerely hope and pray that You do not allow these heartfelt words we are speaking to become a condition for judgment. Instead please allow them to become a condition for praise and glory that will shine forevermore in the course of their lives.

We beseech You not to allow everything these young hearts have pledged with both hands raised to be buried in the ground. Instead please allow their pledges to light the course of their lives like beacons and guide them, even if they are not aware of it, to cross with gratitude the hills of hardship in this world of darkness. We request again and again that Your magnificent touch of love be with them, ever increasingly, for the remainder of their lives. Please bless them so they are able to stand with dignity as confident members of the second generation when they are faced with crises and ordeals, and encourage them to become people You can be proud of.

Since we have vowed to march forward toward such achievements so that this year does not end in shame for us, please allow everything to be realized according to Your will for all eternity. In the hope that everything will go well, I pray fervently in the name of True Parents. Aju! (January 3, 1986)

4. Please bless us such that everything can be made equal

Beloved Father! As we reflect once again about today, the sixth anniversary of the establishment of the Day of Victory of Love, we pray that You be with us with love and grace.

All the people in the world are afraid of dying and think of the wall of death as a wall of bitter resentment, but in the Unification Church, the wall of death has been declared to be a door to the creation of a second course of life. We are grateful for the Day of Victory of Love. This day bound together into new relationships all the spirits who crossed the hill of death during the sorrowful historical eras, broke down the wall of death that brought about the separation of the physical world and the spirit world, and connected the two worlds together. The victory of love means victory over the realm of death.

We thank You for allowing us to proclaim worldwide that, however strong and firm the realm of death may be, it cannot dominate the authority of God's love. Thank You as well for allowing us to institute the day of victory on this earth, the day when the crisis of death could be overcome centered on this son, on the heart of True Parents' love, and the heart of Your love, through the passing away of Heung-jin.

Beloved Father, True Parents made a promise centered on this son before he left the earth. We selected his wife and decided to establish the children of his lineage as one of the tribes of eternal history. Therefore please grant that Hoon-sook on earth and Heung-jin may bind together the destiny of heaven with the destiny of earth, thus vertically binding together heaven and earth.

To this end we pray that You bind Your beloved daughter Hoon-sook's heart of unity, which is offering devotions for heaven and earth, and her course as a living sacrifice for You and True Parents, together with Heung-jin, so the duties for the liberation of all peoples and the liberation of sorrow on the family level can be fulfilled.

Please bless this family so that when it ascends after having lived on earth, all the organization at the family level in the spirit world will be freely fulfilled and all internal spirit selves will receive benefits. Furthermore, please enable this family to determine a direction within the realm of victory at the family level as well as to select and follow all relationships in the spirit world and the physical world that will lead to hope in the future.

Centering on this family, please connect adopted children to the children of direct lineage from this time forward, and please guide and take responsibility for the future of this family as it paves the way for the blessing of the liberation from sorrow for all people.

I hope that in conjunction with being owners in the physical world, Heung-jin and his family may also fulfill the responsibility of pioneers who sort out everything in the spirit world, bind together family relationships and organize new families in the spirit world.

Since today we are celebrating the Day of Victory of Love, Father, please be right here with us. As I reminisce about the day when this day was instituted with joy five years ago, please sort out the wretched, lonely, sad and melancholy environment, Father, and please allow the Day of Victory of Love—the day You have remembered

and blessed as the day when this son could discern the path he should follow—to shine for all eternity.

Since this day is also Parents' Day, we are hosting this holy day with all the offerings, and we request that You receive this day of festivities we are celebrating, which You, Father, have granted and Heung-jin has granted.

As we usher in the year 1989, we reflect upon the many vertical battles we have fought in order to proclaim and establish our proud homeland of the Unification Church. However, we failed every time to improve the base for our vertical fights, and we ended up as wanderers. The history of our ancestors was lost. However, during the year 1988, True Parents expanded the vertical base at the summit and, centering on the foundation of proclamations made horizontally throughout the world, the vertical and horizontal foundations were connected to the land of Korea. We are grateful for Your grace, which enabled Korea to inherit this work.

Henceforth, however much Satan boasts of his history of evil opposition, we know he cannot step on the ideological realm of the nation, which has been established on this vertical foundation centered on the vertical and horizontal historical ground that is Korea. Furthermore, when the Unification Church members representing all nations, that is, the children scattered across the world, become one family transcending nationality and work for the sake of the liberation of the homeland, demonstrating loyalty greater than any people before, we know there can be no grounds for Satan to block this path.

Since Satan began from the completion stage of the growth period, now that Korea has been established to represent the homeland based on the completion stage of the completion period, centered on the love of True Parents and in unity with the love of God, the realm of the portion of responsibility can be set aside. All walls in heaven and on earth, as well as all walls between all peoples, can be torn down, and the destiny begun by the mistake committed by Adam and Eve can be abolished.

That destiny, which has spread everywhere, can be replaced with the fruit of historical victory, and the families—which are the foundation for love on the national level centered on the second generation of the Adam nation and the Eve nation—can be brought forth. Through these families, vertical and horizontal family-centered relationships can be expanded. We thank You for Your grace in allowing us to have this worldwide foundation.

When this takes place, Korea will become the basis of hope for all nations. Henceforth, the path Korea must follow is the one we must exemplify; the nation's path is the path we have walked, which has become a tradition that is spreading among all the citizens. When this expanded tradition generates the history of vertical descendants by receiving the horizontal foundation centered on one's descendants, the foundation for a new world of blessing can be brought about. We are profoundly thankful this time has come.

Since we are beginning this work from this year, we hope the entire spirit world and physical world—including Jesus, Heung-jin, the great religious leaders and all the filial children, loyal subjects and chaste spouses who lived on earth—can join the ranks and fulfill the responsibility of the archangelic realm, which is to keep pace with the course on earth. In doing so, we hope the realm of Adam on earth can be protected, and that we will be able to pioneer the environment on the substantial level, so that the free and advancing kingdom of heaven can emerge, eliminating the world of all evils that oppose it.

Father, please view with sympathy the fact that the wish desired by thousands of generations has now been established in Korea, and please allow this people to rid their hearts of all obstinacy. Furthermore, Father, please mobilize all spirits in the spirit world and command them to neutralize all the villains who cause turmoil among this people, by forcing the villains into separation and surrender.

Moreover, we sincerely hope You will defend the Unification Church against all external forces trying to assault us and that the progressive beginning of the spiritual angelic realm that can bring the fallen angelic realm of earth to submission be declared on this day before all people together with the blessings of this day, all the more because this is the Day of Victory of Love.

Your children are gathered here. They are the children of direct lineage who are centered on True Parents. The 36 couples, 72 couples, 124 couples, 430 couples and the blessed families representing all ancestors in the outside world are connected to twenty-one nations and are celebrating the expansion of connections to True Parents. Please accept this celebration as being held by representatives of 120 nations so the cyclical course that can freely move to the ends of the earth and return can advance into the realm of Your dominion, toward the victorious kingdom of heaven. We earnestly hope and pray that You allow this.

We who know of the victorious authority of this Day of Victory of Love are grateful we have been permitted the independent grace by which we can overcome

death when facing it in the way of Your Will, and that with the privileged authority of children of Heaven we could dedicate our lives as sacrificial offerings before the Father.

We earnestly hope and pray that You allow us to become people who, together with Your heaven of hope and the new celebration of resurrection, can integrate the entire universe by directly joining the ranks of the leaders of love as liberators who understand life and death and move into action. Accordingly, Father, we sincerely request that You protect us so the future of Korea can advance to the hill where there is no death.

We beseech You, Father, to receive this day as the commemorative day when You link eternal grace and love to this day and the relationships of all people to the foundation of Korea so You, Father of Heaven, can bind Yourself to countless spirits and to the family of True Parents on earth and resolve the realm of death.

I proclaim and pray all this in the name of True Parents. Aju! Aju! Aju! (January 2, 1989)

5. Please bless the original homeland where families can settle

Beloved Father, thank You for allowing us this hour when the members of the Unification Church, spread out all over Korea and around the world as well as in the spirit world, can unite as one and make a new resolution while facing this place. We sincerely hope, Father, that You bless the original homeland where all blessed families in heaven and earth, who are heading toward the fulfillment of Your Will, can unite as one in mind and body and settle down, centering on the Parents of Heaven and Earth.

As the spirit world and the physical world usher in the new millennium of a new dimension, we earnestly hope and pray that You build the nation and the world You desire and hope for, that You become the great King of love and that You lead the entire universe into the ideal world of peace.

Please allow all our family members in the spirit world, especially all those members of the Unification Church who have ascended, to stand in the position of leaders and become role models who inherit all the accomplishments of True Parents and fulfill their responsibility. Thereby, we hope and pray that You allow the spirit world to be newly reformed, so the kingdom of heaven on earth, the kingdom of heaven in heaven and everything here can move forward as a world of love

resulting from the ideal of creation willed by Heaven. Please allow the people on earth to unite and lead everything toward the liberation of Your sorrow, as our Heavenly Parent who has grieved throughout history. We sincerely hope and pray that You allow heaven and earth to unite and become a nation that serves and attends You as our Father.

Now that I have come to Korea and the tenth of this month is only days away, please grant that this be a day of global and historical blessing, when Your Will can be completed as heaven and earth cooperate and work together, and with the paths of all our members worldwide intersecting at this place. We earnestly ask and pray that You allow this day to be the historical origin through which families who have received the Blessing through true love can advance and leap forward toward the new realm of unity between the spirit world and the physical world.

We earnestly hope that the current leader of this nation and its people can become one and unite with True Parents so the standard of the unified realm of the physical world and the unifying standard of the heavenly world can become one, and thereby realize the world of the sovereignty of love where the victory of liberation can be praised.

We earnestly hope and pray that this nation of Korea, when the North and South achieve oneness, becomes humanity's homeland, territory and nation that can receive the blessing of liberation by completely scrubbing off and washing away all unfilial processes in history.

We earnestly request that You allow this land to become the blessed homeland that can return everything to Your presence, Father, with blessings, love, victory and praise. I pray all these words in the name of True Parents. Aju! (February 6, 2000)

6. Please bless us to be able to prepare a victorious foundation

Beloved Father! Present here at this pledge ceremony are the children who have received the Blessing to become families of filial piety, families of loyalty, families of saints and families of sages, serving the great Will of the Cosmic Parent in the spirit world and the True Parents on earth, achieving the ideal of oneness and coming to a place of settlement in front of the blessed families on this earth.

According to the ideal of creation, every being in the cosmos originates from love and all created things belong to and continue to exist for the realm of love of the

Parents of Heaven and Earth. From that position, they seek to maintain their existence and offer themselves to Heaven as substantial forms of victory and glory. We as blessed families have completed and fulfilled this ideal in its entirety, and we offer it before Heaven.

As a result, You proclaimed the establishment of the liberated realm of earth, the liberated realm of heaven and the liberated realm of the Parents of Heaven and Earth, and we are grateful for the grace that has enabled the Unification Church to pioneer the one way of victory by walking the course of indemnity on the levels of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation and cosmos. We are truly grateful that this victory is the result of Heaven working, as our subject partner, to train and guide us by protecting and nurturing our right to relate to You at the center of the principle of re-creation.

Centering on this Cheonseong Wanglim Palace at Cheongpyeong, we thank You for letting us prepare the grounds on which all humanity across the world can form connections and on which each nation can learn the Will of the heavenly kingdom and can inherit and proclaim it. In particular, this is a very important moment in time when all families need to be registered, starting from the central, elder families among the blessed families of the Unification Church, and including all blessed families up to the 440 million couples who were recently blessed. Therefore we thank You for letting the mothers take the lead in attending the registration workshop in the period of the great transition for the conclusion of the purpose desired by individual nations and individual families ever since the Fall.

These mothers are the pathfinders who are to find once again the lost heaven and earth. They are the representatives and the fruits of the Will who can take the place of the living sacrificial offering. As such they can bring a complete end to the sad history of the course of indemnity, the course that aims to implant the love of the mother in her children, to connect the love between the mother and children in front of You, Father, to connect it to the love of the Parents of Heaven and Earth, and to praise the grace and victory of liberation. We sincerely hope and pray that You will allow them to become the owners of re-creation who can lead their daily lives with the true authority of love.

We are also grateful for Your grace in allowing Daemonim, Choongmonim and Daehyeongnim, centering on Heung-jin in the spirit world, to unite with the four great saints there, thus establishing a unified church in the spirit world through these newly formed ties of brother and sister. And we thank You for expanding this

blessing on earth to enable Your followers to be embraced in Your bosom, thus forming ties of the one, unified kinship through the will of True Parents.

Please educate the mothers so they can carry out everything with a grateful heart, with one body and one idea, in order to dedicate the glorious victory and harvest to Heaven. We sincerely hope and pray, Father, that You will bless and nurture these children so the mothers and the sons and daughters can unite in serving the Father and, following the True Parent of the spirit world, be registered in the heavenly nation, becoming liberated people.

Please receive this pledge ceremony that we gladly dedicate to You today and, beloved Father, we sincerely hope and pray that You will remember the blessed families who are making a new start and facing new challenges. We pray that You will take dominion over their bodies and minds, allowing them to fulfill their responsibility to conclude world history, through which they can complete the preparations that can be dedicated to Heaven with one body and one idea of love.

By doing so, we earnestly hope and pray that You will allow rapid progress in our plans for the Blessing event, so it can be dedicated before our Father with three generations united as one. Please bless us to become representative children of filial piety and loyalty serving the Heavenly Parent, children who harbor this in their hearts and think of it and pray for it, yearning for heavenly nature in their hearts. We sincerely hope and pray that You will bless us so You can boast of Your glorious children before the entire cosmos, and that we can prepare the eternal foundation of victory in which Heaven can participate.

Beloved Father, please accomplish everything in accordance with Your Will. Hoping that victory, glory, praise and dignity will be forevermore with the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind and the blessed families for all eternity, we report and pray truthfully and sincerely in the name of True Parents. Aju!
(September 3,2000)

7. May the characteristics of Your children accrue to us

Beloved Father, please consecrate this place, Corrientes, which is watched closely by heaven and earth. It has been over a year since the work in South America was begun here, based on the Will of Heaven to use South America for the providence in the future. We hope that victory, glory, praise and dignity will be forevermore in this land of Your desire, under Your jurisdiction.

This year's motto is, "Let's be proud of True Parents and love True Parents." In other words, it means we should be proud of and love God. We understand how important is the mission that has been given to us, the mission to be proud of and to love God's family, nation and world. How long You have waited to be able to let us be proud of and to love the fact that we have become the children of Heaven, that we have become parents with children, and that we have our own families and can embrace our children!

Please bless us so that, just as Heaven is proud of us and loves us, we too can love Heaven and be proud of Heaven. Let this land become one in which all people and all things can come together to praise, be proud of and love Heaven, and grant that all created things and all people become like this. We know that it was Your sorrow that people failed to become families that could result in such a history. Therefore, with the Unification Church at the forefront, we need to do away with everything that brings sorrow and make this entire earth a place where all people, all of history, the world and the kingdom of heaven on earth can be raised up, and all will be proud of Your workmanship and love Your creation.

We have come to know that everything in the world desires this oneness. We sincerely hope and pray that You will bless us so we will have nothing to be ashamed of when we look upon nature, can become free and liberated selves who are unashamed before the history that extends from the past through the present to the future, and who are unashamed as objects of love before You, the Creator, thus becoming dignified people who can reveal the glory of heaven.

Thus, You as the Creator were supposed to live together with us on this earth, to love with us and to begin a new history with us. But this did not come to pass. Therefore we sincerely hope and pray that You will allow us to be the children who can realize the purpose desired by Heaven through this era, with the name of True Parents.

Beloved Father, in this era wherein the spirit world longs for the conclusion on the earth, we earnestly request and hope that You will let victory, glory and good fortune be with us in light of the mission of the Unification Church, which is to make everything of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos spring forth, starting from the family and expanding to the liberated cosmos.

Please be personally with all the children of the blessed families who are merging their hearts and offering devotions while facing the place where True Parents are, and let them show themselves to be people of Heaven by

demonstrating that Heaven is with them no matter where they are, what they do or where they go, in contrast to Satan's world. We sincerely hope and pray that You will bless them, Father, so they can honor You from a place where all people and all things can respect them, love them and be proud of them.

Please bless the people of the Unification Church who are offering all their devotion for the upcoming Blessing of 3.6 million couples, which we have yearned for. We earnestly hope and pray that You will allow the participants in the Blessing to form families that can be proud and unashamed as blessed families of Heaven, that will become the pride of Heaven and be loved by Heaven.

We earnestly hope and pray that You will allow us to continue with the work through which, together with Your words, re-creation can be carried out wherever You appear, even at the far corners of heaven, so we can substantially demonstrate that the living God is with us. We also sincerely hope and desire that You will embrace all the children of the entire blessed realm in more than 160 nations centered on Korea, Japan and America, and unveil them in the cosmos as the extended family in the one, unified realm of liberation.

Now that the first half of March has passed, please allow us all to fulfill our duties of filial piety and loyalty before Heaven with resolution and with a new determination in the days still to come. Centered on the unified ideal of love of the physical world and the spirit world, we sincerely hope and pray that You will let us live together with the love of God and True Parents, and that You will allow the entire cosmos to be embraced in ecstasy and glory. We pray all these words in the name of True Parents. Aju! (March 17,1996)

CHAPTER 8

Life of Faith and Training

1. Please allow us to understand our mission

Oh Father who has promised the resurrection of life! Father who has permitted the grace of love! Father who has given us eternal life! Our Father, who is not far away from us but in our hearts, in our bodies, and in our surroundings! We have hearts that adore our Father's love, hearts that desire to be immersed in our Father's love, and hearts that wish to sing our Father's glory.

Father who has come seeking us at this hour, please manifest Your joyous glory. We will not be satisfied unless You do so. Thus, set right the bodies and hearts of each of us at this time, in an atmosphere of glory in which we can rejoice and unite with You in harmony, harmonize within ourselves through our original mind and original nature, and also harmonize with all created things.

Our Father of promise, please move at this hour. Our Father of might, please appear at this hour. Though we are so unworthy, we know that, when we set out in obedience to Your commands, the power to pioneer the course of eternal life will well up within us. Our Father of love! Do not hesitate at this hour, but give commands through our hearts and give commands through our bodies.

Please find again the original external form that You created for us. Then, looking at that beauty, You will be able to feel joy, and You will be able to present us as respectable entities before all things of creation of heaven and earth. We earnestly hope and desire, beloved Father, that You will watch over us and establish us as sons and daughters of whom You can be proud.

Today is a holy day. It is a day when we must take responsibility for the lives of all people. We must lead back to God the minds and bodies of all the people who are in the realm of death, and held in the claws of the enemy. Jesus and the Holy Spirit are working and taking responsibility for this task, and the myriads of saints in heaven are cooperating with them. Therefore, we who are on earth today will equip ourselves for this task as well. So please let us understand the remaining mission that we must cooperate with for the sake of this Will.

Oh Father! If we are too weak to fulfill our remaining mission, please allow us to cherish in our minds Your Will in relation to the blessings that You have promised since the beginning of time. Please also settle us in the realm of heavenly ethics. Please do not let us become pitiable sons and daughters who open the way to sorrow. Please allow us to become Your sons and daughters who are saturated with Your mind and nature, so that we can realize the entire Will that You seek to establish through our minds and bodies. Please allow us to do so even before You have spoken, to act before You have asked us to act, and to put Your wishes into action even before You have wished it.

Father, please bless this people. Please bless this church that represents this people. Please bless Your sons and daughters gathered here. Please also speak of Your Will to each and every being in all directions, and please permit them the blessing of new life. We earnestly hope and desire, Father, that You will allow all people to be awakened to Your Will, and that You will raise up a foundation of life for all people, upon which peace can be brought about.

Please allow Your sons and daughters who are bowing down before You right here and now to become children who are able to receive Your love and blessings with new hearts. Please allow our bodies to possess the beauty of glory You have blessed us with and to possess the beauty of love. If there are sons or daughters that embrace the bitter roots of sin that create anguish, which makes them unacceptable to You, please appear before them, Father, and act at this time. Father, we earnestly, earnestly hope and pray that You will bring about the work of re-creation through Your personal touch.

Please manifest Your abundant grace over Your sons and daughters gathered at this horn. I earnestly hope and pray, my Father, that You will work through Your children who are scattered in the countryside, raising lonely altars. Please also work through Your other sons and daughters who are substantiating Your Word with the same grace during this time. Please become the original owner of the mind of each and every one of us, and please become the original owner of the body of each and every one of us. Please consecrate each of our bodies.

We earnestly hope and pray that You will completely fill each mind and body with the grace You have permitted us at this time, beloved Father, and that You will watch over us from above. We humbly pray all these things in the name of our beloved Lord. Aju! (November 25,1956)

2. Let us establish Your glory in the midst of battle

Father, we have gathered at Your knee on this day, after a week of fighting in the abode of evil, with the grace You have permitted us embraced in our bosom. So please bear with us even if You find us unworthy in any way. We have not been able to bring anything to give You, Father. Since we have come as objects of Your concern, Father of compassion, Father of omnipotence, Father of love, please do not leave us as we are now. Please take responsibility for us.

Since millions of evil spirits are surrounding us, seeking to take our lives, Father, please protect us. Please allow each of us to be submerged in the midst of Your deep love and to sing of Your glory with our hearts. Father, we earnestly hope and desire that You will allow us to bow down before You at this time.

Since we know that there were, during the course of our lives in the past week, actions You do not approve of, and many elements that cannot be displayed before Your Will, O Father of compassion and omnipotence, we earnestly hope and desire that You will appear with Your authority of victory, and grant us Your touch of re-creation.

Father, because this is a holy day, please bless the many religious groups that have gathered representing the people. I also know that at this time Your lonely sons and daughters, who have built hidden altars in order to realize Your Will, are bowing down before You. Therefore, please work by pouring sweeping grace over them as well, and please allow them to receive the final grace predicted for the Last Days. We earnestly hope and desire that You will work, Father, so that we can build the altar of the final victory and establish Your glory throughout the Korean Peninsula.

Since we, Your sons and daughters gathered here before You, entrust everything to You, Father, please receive us as living sacrifices, and please guide us so that not a single life will go astray from Your Will. We earnestly hope and desire that You will allow us to become true sons and daughters who are able, even if Satan attacks us, to say without wavering that You are our Father.

Lonely sons and daughters are fighting difficult battles today, scattered in the countryside, and so we earnestly hope and pray that You will infuse Your omnipotent power of re-creation wherever they are gathered, and allow them all to testify that they are Your sons and daughters. Hoping and requesting that You will receive and take charge of all that we have dedicated to You at this time, we offer these words in the name of the Lord. Aju! (September 15,1957)

3. Please allow us to understand everything You teach

Father! I am concerned that all the circumstances of the grief-filled six thousand years and the circumstances of Your innermost self during that time, have not been fully conveyed to these people, so please embrace them in Your bosom and allow them to become aware of these things. And if they are awakened to anything in their hearts, please allow them to take responsibility for that until the end.

Father, at the same time that we feel the preciousness of the responsibility of a person who gives, we have come to understand that the responsibility of a person who receives is just as precious. In fact, we have come to understand that the responsibility of a person who receives is more important than that of someone who gives. The time of giving is one time, but since we know that the time of receiving must continue forever, please allow us to become people who are able to hold in our hearts forever the truth, the life, and the love we received that one time from Heaven. We earnestly hope and desire that You will allow us to understand that only if we become like this can we be the true children of our Heavenly Father.

In the past we heard Your teachings many times, and received much grace of life and love, but our minds are empty at this time. So please fill our empty minds, and since we repent today for the scores of times we have betrayed Heaven until now, we earnestly hope and desire, Father, that You will be patient with us. Please allow us to become children who are able to find the key to the truth and the key to life and love, and open the door to the remaining universal truth, life and love, thereby relieving Your inner pain, You who are the center of the cosmos. And we earnestly hope and desire, Father, that You will allow us to go forth to take the position of true children whom You can trust.

We earnestly ask You to separate from us all the unprincipled things that remain, to make us complete where we are inadequate, and to please guide us until the eternal kingdom of heaven is fully realized. We humbly pray all these things in the name of the Lord. Aju! (March 17,1957)

4. Please allow us to race toward a new life

Father, I understand that the original, ideal world of creation that You envisioned is a place radiant with happiness, where true children and families resonating with Your love can share joy and be in harmony with all creation. Due to the Fall,

however, the original world, the land of the original hometown, remained a nebulous wish for humanity. When I think about this, I can only lament.

Due to the mistake of the first human ancestors, countless numbers of their descendants were abused during the long course of history and have stumbled along the path of restoration. That path compelled them to walk while being constantly tormented; it was a path of tears, a path of blood and a path of death. When we think about this, Father, we are once again poignantly reminded that history has been a wearisome and mournful odyssey.

Due to the Fall, we lost our Father, we lost our original homeland and we lost our True Parents. We lost the original, true, and ideal family, tribe, nation, world and cosmos. We lost everything. Centered on You, Father, the world under Your authority should have been realized within an environment of genuine freedom. However, because we collided with the sad misfortune we call the Fall, we have become children with no ties whatsoever to You or to the world of Your ideal.

Father, You are our Lord but were unable to become our Lord in substance. Instead, we bore the lineage of Satan, Your enemy, and were dragged downward into the realm of darkness controlled by the devil. When we think about this, we are once again reminded of how terrible it was for You. It was Your wish, Father, and the wish of all true people to be rid of Satan, who has been the enemy throughout the ages on this earth and in the spirit world where countless spirits reside. At this hour we should keep this in mind.

Father, we are unable to perceive how much of Satan's authority and power remains in our daily life. As we live each hour, as we live each day, even now we are unable to feel how much of Satan's influence and authority has infiltrated our life. Father, such has been our life of faith.

The principles of the heavenly way dictate that no one can advance before the Father's presence without eradicating that which has been corrupted. The more we think about this, the more we are reminded that we are in a wretched and pitiable position, where we can only cry out to You, Father, from a path of tears, longing for the caress of Your salvation. Father, You know very well the circumstances in which we are mired. Father, I sincerely pray and wish that You will take pity on us. Once again protect us on the path that we take, purify our surroundings, and separate us from Satan's realm.

Father, our mind and body cannot enter into a direct relationship with You. We know that the root of sin by which Satan can control us still remains within us. We

are unable to carry out the goodness that our mind desires and instead find ourselves enjoying the acts of evil that we do not desire. Father, I sincerely pray and hope that You will forgive us for being unable to extricate ourselves from that kind of life.

By having faith in the Father's love and His authority over life and resurrection, we have, until now, maintained the conditions to be connected to the realm of love, the realm of resurrection, and the realm of life of the Father who takes pity on us. I offer thanks when I think about how You, Father, have not abandoned us but have embraced, defended, and protected us to this day, nurturing us in order to spread Your Will for the providence of restoration. Now we know the battlefield of restoration and realize that we belong to the grace of life. Thus, Father, I sincerely pray that You will understand us, Your children, who are gathered here in this place.

During the course of our life and also the course of our resurrection, we should cut ourselves off from Satan. We clearly understand that we cannot become the citizens of heaven without uniting with You, Father, so that our daily life conforms to Your Will. Thus, please permit Your children gathered here to offer You their mind and body and race toward a new way of life. At this hour, Father, I sincerely pray and hope that You will permit us to become a group of people who can renew their determination in Your presence.

Father, I sincerely pray and hope that You will observe all the details of our circumstances, and permit this to be a time when we can say, "Please urge us on once again, so that from now on we can, of our own accord, clarify our position in front of Your Will. Please urge us to make a firm resolution regarding the direction we need to take, the responsibility we need to fulfill, and our mission."

Today is the Sabbath. I know that the lonely children who are scattered throughout South Korea are on their knees in prayer facing this location. I pray that this hour can be a sacred one in which You can personally be with each of them wherever they are gathered. I pray that all their cries and appeals will not fall to the earth but will move Your heart, Father, so that they can inherit the motivation behind Your works. Father, I sincerely pray and hope that You will permit them to become Your true sons and daughters who are capable of fulfilling their mission as people in charge of conquering Satan on the earth, by upholding Your Will.

I sincerely pray that You will permit us to become a group of people through whom You can bring an end to restoration through indemnity and realize the ideal world of Your desire. Please permit us to become children in whom You can take

pride. Beloved Father, I sincerely request that You personally oversee and take charge of everything at this time. All this I pray in the holy name of True Parents. Aju! (January 7,1968)

5. Please grant that we may become true sons and daughters of filial piety

Oh Father who created the universe! Please allow us to realize deeply at this time how earnestly You have longed for the day when You could share Your glory with all creation.

You created Adam and Eve and raised them in Your embrace. By having them begin a life of eternal love, You sought to establish a blessed land for all humanity. We realize once again that You are the Father who hoped to find joy through Adam and Eve as they grew up. We now also realize once again that You, who had such an earnest hope, lost Adam and Eve and have had to face a time of sorrow instead.

Father! On this earth there are many nations and peoples. They have had separate histories, and their living circumstances and hopes are different. When we consider again that this is contrary to Your original Will, we come to understand that the separation of these histories is Your grief, the separation in circumstances is Your grief, and the separation in hopes is also Your grief. When we think of the human reality, Father, we know that it is retribution for the Fall.

The past had to come from You, the present must come from You, and the future must form a connection with Your ideal. But today, people are living the tragic reality of not having a common base for relationships, nor a common living environment, nor a common worldview. Please allow us to hear once again in our minds the ghastly screams and groans of all human beings, who are living in a chaotic place where things are going in the wrong direction, where each person's position contradicts that of others. Please allow us to contemplate this together with Your heart, Father, to feel Your heart, and to become aware of the mistakes of the past.

Father! You need to have sons and daughters weeping tears of sincere repentance and pleading You to allow humanity to have hope that is blessed by You. But the more we feel we have been unable to do this, the more unable we are to raise our heads before You.

Today, there are many religions and churches moving toward a common goal, but we know there are not many humbly bowing down before You while weeping

over the mournful path You have had to go and over the sorrow of the ghastly judgment humankind must receive. The pitiable people who have gathered here today have continuously trodden a path of anguish. They are Your sons and daughters who have continued fighting up to the present while embracing the command You have given them, their tired footsteps having led them to this place today. Please remember them.

Please permit this hour to be one in which we can repent of our sins of the past that linger into the present. Let us do this before we desire to receive blessings during this year. Since this people was unable to do this, we earnestly hope and pray, beloved Father, that You will let this be a time for us to repent with tears before You as representatives of this pitiable thirty million people of Korea, as representatives of the many denominations, and as representatives of innumerable devout believers.

Now we want to become the sons and daughters who can hold onto Your care-worn hands, feeling concern about Your situation. We want to become the true sons and daughters who can look at Your anxious expression and Your grief-stricken appearance, rush toward You, calling "Father!" put our arms around Your neck and weep loudly. However, if we do not have the heart to do so, we sincerely hope and pray, our Father of love, that You will let this be a time for us to tell You truthfully of our own accord that we are sinners, and yet be embraced in Your compassionate bosom.

We know that this path of life is one that we need to walk while making atonement with tears. We know only too well that since You, our Father, have walked this path, we as Your sons and daughters also need to do so. This was our lot last year and the year before that. We have endured and remain to this day, so please remember us. Now that we have ushered in the new year, please guide us to become Your children who can tighten our belts once again, trim our hair short, equip ourselves with a new fighting spirit and heavenly armaments, and race out in obedience to Your commands.

Father! We do not want to be people who just follow. We earnestly hope and pray that You will let us become people who emerge as the vanguard in front of You, in front of this people, and in front of humanity. Since it is Your deep regret that You have had to labor for many years in sadness, and since it is Your deep regret that many people became traitors to Heaven, we know very well that it is up to us to shoulder the cross of Heaven that is burdened with all these years of sorrow and all these tales of grief. We sincerely hope and desire that You will let us

become Your sons and daughters who can now take responsibility for that burden, and feel joyful, of our own accord, in being offered as the heavenly sacrifice for all created things in this universe.

At this time, we will report to You honestly about everything in our past and hope that, on the basis of our pure and clear heart, only our yearning and our adoration for our Father will fill our being.

We earnestly hope and pray, Father, that You will permit us to become true filial sons and true filial daughters who can serve You with devotion, regardless of the condition and the circumstances You are in at this time, as we welcome this new year, we know there are many people in lonely places facing toward this Seoul headquarters and praying with tears. Please give them hope. Please, Father, do not defer the day of hope that they are wishing for. We earnestly desire and pray that You will let them feel the grief of this Korean people, that You will let them become those who can surmount and go beyond the sinful history of this people, and that You will guide them under Your direct dominion.

We know You are listening intently to the contents of the appeals we make as we continue to persevere, and we know very well that You protect us when we are lonely and miserable. We know that You reside there with us when we are persecuted and under duress. Since You do so, Father, please take control of each of our circumstances. We cannot express how sad we have made You. We sincerely hope and desire, Father, that You will enable us to avoid adding to Your sorrow this year.

We sincerely hope that, at this time, You will let each and every one of us have earnest hearts, gathering and dedicating our sincere devotion to You, prostrating ourselves with humility, calling out to You and weeping endlessly in Your embrace.

The Father we have been seeking has not been anyone else's Father. Since we know that You are our Father, we earnestly hope and pray that You will once again embrace in Your bosom these sorrowful children, who are standing on the destined road of restoration where they need to create a bond with You, Father.

I now stand before these people on this first Sabbath day of the new year, but what words should I speak to them? Please allow the heart of the one who conveys and the heart of the one who receives to unite. We hope that You will appear in our midst together with the power of creation. Please let this altar be one on which our hearts can be joined and offered as a single sacrifice, and please allow this hour to

be one during which we can make an offering of the incense of atonement as representatives of all people.

We beseech You, Father, to let us shed tears on behalf of all people and on Your behalf, and that You will make this a time when You can come and lay bare Your aching heart. Please let the glory and victory of all generations be with us during this year. Let them be with this people, with all humankind, and with all spirits. Earnestly requesting this, we humbly pray all these things in the name of the Lord. Aju! (January 2,1966)

6. We hope for You alone, our Father, to receive the glory

Father, today is the Sabbath. On this day, Your many children spread out across this nation are gathering in front of their altars, bowing their heads and offering full bows, pooling their hearts together and offering devotions. So we earnestly hope and pray that Your boundless love and compassion will be with them. Father, we know that it is Your holy Will to establish us in this position and to resolve all grief through us. We earnestly hope and desire that You will allow us to become children whom You cannot be without and who give their full devotion to the Will through which You seek to resolve all grief.

We know that our being here today is not because of ourselves. Since we know that You are the beginning and the end, and we have entrusted everything to You, please take dominion over us. Through us, please restore victorious individuals, families, nations and a victorious world. Furthermore, we earnestly hope and desire that by You realizing the victorious kingdom of heaven, You alone will receive the glory.

At this time, we pledge that we will become children who are able to resolve Your grief without fail, and return glory and joy to You by taking responsibility for all the unjust circumstances You have faced, in which You became a sacrifice and an offering. Father, we know that the relationships of three ages are connected with us as the center. Our many ancestors, who have come and gone in the past, are earnestly hoping that they can be relieved of their grief through us. The people of today who are spread throughout the world are longing for a day of liberation. Our future descendants are also longing for the day of liberation. So please let us become people who are able to liberate them. And we hope and pray that You will allow us to become sons and daughters who are able to find and establish the dutiful way for humankind by upholding Your Will for heaven and Your Will for earth.

Even as we speak, Your many children in the East and the West are waiting for the day of hope, longing for Korea, and offering devotions unceasingly for the Will. Please embrace them with Your deep love and protect them. We earnestly hope and pray, Father, that You will let them pioneer the one road of victory and become the unified, victorious living sacrifice that can bring all peoples around the world to prostrate themselves before Your Will.

We sincerely hope and pray that You will let us become the cornerstone of life for this people, and become glorious high priests. Please bless us so that we will not be lacking in any way to play a leading role in praising You. May Your love be with the blessed families gathered here, and especially with the Unification Church, and also with Korea. Father, please share Your love with Korea, with all of Asia, with Europe, and with the whole world.

Now, please embrace the entire cosmos in Your bosom, and allow it to be the stage for the activities of all Your children. Please thereby permit the glorious unified world You wish for to appear. We sincerely and earnestly hope and pray, our Father of love, that You will allow this to be a time in which we pledge to give all our loyalty and to persevere until that day, even if it means becoming a sacrificial offering. Earnestly hoping and praying that Your glory, mercy, and love will be with Your children going out to do Your Will, and with the world for all eternity, we pray all these things in the name of the True Parents. Aju! (October 19, 1969)

7. We pray that You will permit the world to become the kingdom of God on earth

Beloved Father, truly, truly, truly I offer my thanks to You for permitting this grace of allowing us to offer a full bow in celebration of welcoming a new month on this day, in attendance to the True Parents of Heaven, Earth, and Humankind, with all things in the cosmos united in heart and body, here under the watchful gaze of heaven and earth.

After the passing of a historic and great period of transition, we welcome the month of March when we can enter a new dimension in which national sovereignty can be established that fulfills the ideal of a new cosmos. Please grant that all the events that will be woven into this month shall work closely with the month of April to enable all rallies, which are planned in conjunction with the start of heaven and the new history, to be entwined within the core of the Father's heart. Now the era has come in which we can welcome a sovereignty of love, under which we can sing the praises of a tranquil reign of peace in the kingdom of heaven on earth and in

heaven, founded in Your love, together with the True Parents and all things of creation on this earth.

Father, I pray that You will be able to erase the memory of all the courses in history during which You, Father, were at the center, taking great pains to establish the standard of the eight stages, from the era of the individual to the cosmos, for the sake of fallen humankind on the earth. Let all the times of victory and the days of achieving the milestones through devotion in a realm of unity with the True Parents be connected in joy. Moreover, let all the courses and days of advancing toward the kingship of a peaceful, ideal world and a liberated world of peace centered on God's ideal family in the heavenly and physical worlds be connected in joy.

Please grant that the heavenly and earthly worlds form Your sovereignty of love, augmented with ardent hope spreading from Your victorious heart, erasing the memory of all the anguished moments, and passing and advancing toward the new, victorious month of April.

Now, I pray that You will allow us to fulfill the way of loyalty and filial piety and the way of the family of a saint and divine child in the presence of Heaven, while we raise high the torch in the new age that begins from March, and renew our mind and body with inner fire. I pray and wish that You will transform this world into one in which the entire cosmos, as a united entity, attends God. Moreover, I pray that You will transform this era into one in which all people sing Your praises, in order to establish a foothold on the earth and serve and attend Heaven as citizens of the heavenly kingdom. I pray You will permit a world of love to unfold under Your victorious authority.

I fervently pray and hope that You will permit us to take pride in the many victories, as seen from Your point of view, rooted in the ideal of creation, by having the blessed families in the heavenly world and blessed families in the earthly world now connect as one heart, one body, one mindset, and one nucleus. I sincerely pray that You will permit us to be proudly victorious from the viewpoint of Your original ideal of creation through connecting these families to the united realm of Your mind and body, and through attaining unity of heart even with all things of creation.

As we honor and adore this occasion and offer an invocation across all nations, I pray that You will be with us on the basis of all the emotions we are preparing in our hearts for the commemorative day that approaches. I pray that this can be connected to the ardent wish of the unfallen Adam's family—not fallen but gazing

upon the authority of victory—in place of the day marking the commencement of Your creation envisioned at the beginning of time. Please forget all traces of the Fall and let the era of high noon settlement make way for the era of a sovereignty founded on love. By doing so, I sincerely pray that You will permit this to become Your era, Father, during which we can sing praises and glorify Your victory for eternity, and be proud of heaven and earth under Your independent sovereignty of love.

I fervently pray that the True Parents of Heaven, Earth, and Humankind can now complete their responsibility of bridging the spirit world and physical world, and form a higher, broader, and deeper point of convergence with Your heart. I pray that the glory and all manner of joy that enraptures You in happiness can converge, with True Parents' heart, in this world through all spheres of human life, enabling the world to become a liberated kingdom of God on earth that is offered together with the entire universe, with joyous praise to the Father.

I sincerely pray, Father, that on this day, You will permit the heavenly citizens who have been blessed by Heaven, who face toward the new world, to become one in heart in connecting with the Korean Peninsula and the world, just as the Korean people commemorate the March First Movement. All this I fervently report and proclaim in the name of the True Parents. Aju! (March 1, 2006)

CHAPTER 9

Home Church and the Tribal Messiah

1, Let us realize the victorious day of Home Church

Not even one person knew of Your sorrow, Father, as You looked upon the circumstances of the history that had ended in failure. Father, long ago You called the family of Jacob and began the providence. You kept in mind the now ancient nation of Israel, and subsequently You persevered through the time of Moses to the time of Jesus, and then through the bloody history of countless Christian martyrs and the miserable course of the Unification Church. Yet, You have allowed us to come to the point where we stand today, and to remain here without collapsing or going to ruin. Again we thank You. Our relationship with You remains intact and makes it still possible for us to prevail.

I remember the time thirty years ago, when I struggled during my twenties to help Heaven. Memories of the smell of tears, blood and sweat from the ups and downs I experienced after having resolutely set out to establish the Will, in the face of ruthless winds and waves, appear in a panorama today. At that time I set the final conditions to establish this people and nation before Your Will, and I endured those who opposed Heaven, and who even trampled me underfoot as the lowliest person. Even when I was treated as the enemy of both the state and of the people alike, I endured, and preserved those experiences deep in my heart. Because You are alive, Father, whenever I was in a position where it was inevitable that I would perish, You extended Your hand to me, and saved me from ruin. For this, I can only be grateful.

I am walking this path of crisis after crisis, resolved in my heart to follow the course of unfailing victory. This is so that I can realize Your Will without fail, and dedicate that victory to You before evening comes. Father, when I think about such unforgettable historical situations, I know very well that You fully understand the true intention of Satan, who wishes in his heart to be rid of me. I also know only too well that I have to follow the path You are walking, that the path I am walking is the path True Parents have to walk. Humanity will perish unless I walk this path.

Father, even though people are taking steps towards Home Church in challenging personal circumstances, they are walking paths destined to intersect with crossroads of tears. There remain paths of tears on which they have to advance to

link the home churches so that all homes can share the same heart. We know that Your helping hand will continue to be with us as it has been until now. We are also aware that You will enable us to overcome whatever difficulties we encounter in our environment. Our Father of love, please be with us.

This morning, I gave an address entitled, “The Unification Church and I.” We and the Unification Church are on a path of destiny that will never be severed even if we wish it to be. We know very well that we will need to walk that path with sorrow in our hearts. No one knows the destiny of the fallen descendants, who need to go around by the long road, going through the course of indemnity to resolve over and over again the circumstances of restoration that remain from the sorrowful history of having lost the Parents. Therefore, Father, we earnestly hope and pray that You will give us Your blessings.

Thank You for allowing us to stay here for the past few days. Even today, there is a direction of heart that Your Will desires once again. Please let us and our future generations go forward on the path of the Unification Church, the path of the Father, marching forward to the very end with mind and body filled with gratitude, giving all our heart, all our energy and all our devotion. We sincerely hope and pray that You will allow us to become Your deep- hearted partners and Your proud sons and daughters who can receive Your love. Since we know that the Unification Church will manifest as the glorious victor of heaven and earth, do not let us die or collapse before that day. Take dominion over us, so that we will become the children who can fight and prevail.

Beloved Father, at this hour of the day all the sons and daughters of the Unification Church around the world are offering devotions for the sake of this place. Moreover, they also are praying for the situation of Korea and the situation of America. We hope and pray once again that You will find a way to accelerate our pace and shorten the path of those sons and daughters. Please let the glory of this day be with You, with the Teacher and with all of us, and bless us so that we can realize the victorious day of Home Church. We have prayed all this in the name of True Parents. Aju! (October 19,1980)

2. Let us all become one centering on Home Church

Our Father in heaven, center of the entire universe! You created the whole world to manifest Your ideal. Please bring about the completion of Your sacred Will to realize the home of love in this cosmos, the home desired both by You and by us—we who are the center of the entire universe through our connection to Your love.

In the presence of our Father, You who strove to accomplish the work of creation with that objective in mind, our first ancestors, who were meant to fulfill their responsibilities as parents on earth, fell and wove a history of bitter grief.

Your ideal was violated, and the world was nailed to the cross. Therefore, Father, we apologize on behalf of our ancestors in the face of Your historical endeavors. Not only did human beings perpetrate this, but they then spread out in this world. Today many people say You do not exist. They do not know You and so betray You. The expanding influence of communism, which claims that there is no God, is confusing the standard of goodness. It rages all about, claiming that everything is built upon falsity and injustice.

Still, You looked with compassion upon the human race as it suffered the consequences of all this sorrow, and allowed us to establish the Unification Church. Our Father, You have worked hard on earth until now to bring the individual, the family, into order. You worked to bring order to the confused human condition, to tribes, peoples, nations, the world and cosmos. We hope You will forgive us for the fact that all historical sages and even Jesus, who came to accomplish that, came and went without being able to finish the task. Thus the True Parents have had to walk the path of suffering in the era of the Second Advent.

Because we know and fear that the suffering of the present generation may be passed on to later generations as conditions of indemnity, we are making a resolution to go beyond the individual to the family, tribe, people and nation, and to march forward with full force centering on Home Church. We are truly grateful for Your grace that allows us to launch this initiative. We are celebrating God's Day this morning with a new dawn lighting up this world. We sincerely hope that You will allow Your glory to be revealed and Your Will of victory to be abundant throughout the cosmos, so that our shouts of praise will ring out on earth and reach heaven.

Please allow all these central families of the Unification Church, who have gathered here today from all around the world, to take on this mission and stand at the forefront to teach the heavenly traditions and practices to all the world. We sincerely hope You will permit them to race forward to be the vanguard. May they complete their responsibilities and fulfill their desire to create the environment through which the entire world can follow those traditions as well.

Please accept today's ceremony with gladness, Father. All religious leaders and believers within the spirit world, who pursue goodness on the basis of the four

major religions, are observing us closely here today. All spirits under Christianity and Jesus, Buddhism and Buddha, Confucianism and Confucius, and Islam and Muhammad, are watching us. Since they are wishing for the embrace of True Parents in the hope of realizing Your one true purpose, please bless them so that the spiritual and physical worlds can be joined together. We sincerely pray that You will bless us so that the Unification Church can become one in heart with them, so that Heaven can rejoice and earth can be harmonized as we continue to indemnify everything in history.

Father, please remember the members of the Unification Church scattered around the world. We sincerely hope and pray that You will bestow new historical blessings upon all the Unification communities who are observing this ceremony, praising the name of True Parents and venerating the family of Heaven, enabling them to reveal Your victorious glory. Please accept this occasion in Your holy way.

On this day, we have pledged the victory of Home Church in order to make it possible for You, our Father, to become one directly with the earth as well as with all the good elements of the spirit world. The world that Satan organized was built up on the basis of evil forces holding the physical world under their domain. With the Unification Church's Home Church activities as the starting point, we all wish to be united, transcending geography and nationality as we initiate the movement now destined to eliminate Satan's world.

Just as You, Father, are moving into the direction of the Home Church providence, please allow us to become one in heart on the basis of that providence on earth. Please allow us to fulfill our duties of filial piety before You so that we can bring joy to You and create an environment in which the spirit world can freely provide help. We earnestly hope that, because of our doing so, You will bless our efforts with the result that Satan's evil world and even the evil communist sovereignty will yield and begin accepting the guidance of the conscience, transcending all national boundaries. We also hope that they will subsequently become part of the nation and family of our Father. We earnestly hope and pray that in this way You will permit us to establish the moment in which all nations in the world, following the lead of Korea, Japan, America, and Germany, can unite in praising Your glory with one accord.

Please bless all that is accomplished on this day and please bestow Your blessings on the whole of this year. We sincerely hope and pray that You will allow this day, this month, this year, and the 1980s to be a time when we can sing in praise of Your victory. Please accept this ceremony with joy. Please permit Your eternal and

everlasting victory to expand from this day forward and forevermore. We have prayed all these words in the name of True Parents. Aju! (January 1,1982)

3. Please let us realize that daybreak is imminent

Beloved Heavenly Father, even in my dreams I was not aware that the sorrowful path of restoration was to be filled with so many trials and difficulties. You called an immature and uninformed young man, who now stands before You today reflecting on the hardships and struggles that You placed before me. I have come to understand that they all were expressions of Your love.

During this long course, Heaven was heartless and ruthless. However, I realize that in each instance an absolute condition was required for You to bequeath to me something of greater value. For this I am grateful, and as a result today, the Unification Church has achieved worldwide renown. The time has come when the name of the child sitting here can be known among all the races, in every corner of the world. That name has first manifested itself in infamy, but even to this day I have continued fighting, knowing that it will become a name of good repute. Since You have supported me and guaranteed such a day, I know that such a world will undoubtedly be realized.

Persecution has come and gone. The pitch-black world of darkness has passed and daybreak is imminent. Now when I raise my head high, I see that I stand at the focal point of the era, able to see how this world will come to an end.

Heavenly Father, through the Word, I have come to understand how precious the providence of Home Church is. I understand the truth that the liberation of all creation, our liberation as human beings, Your liberation, and the liberation of the angelic world are absolutely needed in order to restore the original world. I understand that this has always been Your heart.

We wish to love the creation and other people on Your behalf, based on our heart. Should we fail to become subject partners of heart representing You, when we stand in the subject position to instruct and command the angelic world, then we will be only object partners. In that case, the future realm of hope, and our complete oneness with You, will remain unrealized. Please grant that, even if we go effortlessly straight to that realm, we will not fall in the ensuing battle, but will remain victorious to the end, not only meriting Your praise but, as Your sons and daughters, inheriting Your love.

As we realize that the days remaining in this time period are urgent, we will seek to achieve outstanding results in the sixty days that remain, and to make short work in this period of what we have been unable to do until now. We will invest both our intelligence and best effort in the hope of presenting You at least with conditional results.

I have spoken long hours this morning. May the Word not just flow superficially but rather, let it take root in these hearts. Please shine Your light of life and love at the center of our efforts. Let a harvest spring forth in our midst and let us become sons and daughters who advance from this place to revere You. We earnestly ask for all these things.

I earnestly ask that You urge us along so that, when the day and time comes, we may stand tall and unashamed as heavenly princes and princesses. I pray all these things in the name of True Parents. Aju! (November 11, 1980)

4. Do not let the Unification Church forget its mission

Beloved Father, even if the smell is foul and the place is disorderly, when we sense the smell of the homeland penetrating the very marrow of our bones, we realize once again that our homeland is a good place.

Father, when we consider the situation of South and North Korea, we realize that the cause of the division does not reside with the people of Korea. Rather, this division is part of a thorny path of historical indemnity caused by the failure of Christianity to fulfill its responsibility. The division of Korea was the inevitable fortune connected with its historical mission, but this people did not cause it. The Korean people had the mission to pay the price, shedding so much blood throughout history until the present.

Now Koreans suffer in the turmoil of a complicated environment. We know from the Divine Principle that these maelstroms and ordeals will continue to rage on the path of our people until Cain and Abel can meet and stand together before Heaven. They cannot stand united based on fighting or trickery. Unity can be achieved only when we pave the way for a victory in which the Cain world voluntarily assumes the position of a debtor. Only in this way can we inherit the position of the eldest son.

The world of heavenly principles shows but one path provided to the fallen world, but this fallen world lacks a historical point of intersection. So we come to realize once again that the Unification Church members have no choice but to engage in solemn self-reflection on bended knees before our Father.

When I think of my former days in North Korea, and those days when I was persecuted in South Korea, I see once again how I have groped my way along a path unknown to anyone. I passed through moments of making appeals before Heaven with experiences of anguish seared in my heart, experiences that began in the Beomnaetgol Valley and expand beyond this nation. Everyone races forward according to their own desires but, unlike anyone else and unknown to anyone until now, Your son standing here has raced forward on the path to establish the Will centered on Your love.

Whenever I was in a situation where I could collapse or could despair on the course of my journey, You held on to me and looked after me. Yes, there have been heavy considerations and grievous crises in my past. Yet whenever I think that Your path of grief was far greater than mine, and when I recall that the internal, historical situations You have faced are more mortifying and vexing than mine, I feel so ashamed that I cannot even hold up my face to pray before Heaven. I come to think once again that it is because of Your boundless love that You allow me to come to this realization.

Throughout my sixty years of life, I thought it might all end up as a one-way street of persecution. But now I see that there was a path laid out within this global maelstrom, from the beginning to the end. When I wonder to myself once again, in front of Heaven, how and when You made preparations and created such an environment, I can only be grateful.

During the last year, there have been many changes in the state of affairs in Korea. We beseech You to take the lead, light the way for us to follow, and create an environment showing this nation and its people the way to go.

Please let all the citizens of this nation unite and discover their better selves, learning as they do so to distinguish between right and wrong, to repent, and to take upon themselves the struggle to avoid shame before Heaven. We know that if Korea overflows with such people, who in unity pioneer freely the position of sacrifice and become a bridge of love for all the people of the world, then the world will give birth to a new dream, and the day will surely come when hope will surge. The bright rays of the sun will reach out to the world. We also know that today the Unification Church has to be the group whose efforts bring about the realization of this vision.

Heaven is making effort in Korea in order to realize the hopes of this pitiful and wounded world, which is full of desert-like valleys of dry bones. Based on this, You

are seeking the realm of destiny where those dry bones can resurrect, don the clothes of love, and apply the balm of love. When we think about this, we sincerely hope and pray that You will allow the Unification Church to rise up to its mission to implement that destiny.

We have endured until now for the sake of the established churches, even though they have treated us as an enemy. Since they continue to oppose us, Father, please be a peacemaker between them and us. We think of how great Your distress must be, and realize with a solemn feeling that Your will is for us to endure as we cherish the hope of establishing these churches tomorrow as our elder brothers. We are connected to them as brothers, so please save them by Your authority. Please let us remember how You labored for six thousand years while suffocating with a heart of lamentation and tears.

Father, I came to Korea only to receive and experience Your love with this body of mine. Since I know that You are wishing for there to be an individual, family and tribe that can do so, I sincerely hope, Father, that You once again will reprimand me, as I am too ashamed to show myself. Also dear Father, please take pity once again on the Unification Church.

Father, there is still work for me to finish. The task of fighting in America still remains to be taken on over the next three or four years. Father, I earnestly hope and pray that during this time when You are in charge of Korea, You will let everyone, from the church leader to all members, awaken anew and understand clearly that Korea has to be the base from which we can build a bridge of love that opens the Will to all parts of the world.

I know that if this does not come to pass, there is no way for me to return here, even though this is my homeland. Father, because You know that Korea is the one place where this will truly come to pass, for five thousand years You deliberately had the Korean people weave the threads of a wretched history of blood as a people of indemnity and suffering. As we think about the fact that the purpose of this entire history was to make preparations for this time, Father, we sincerely hope and pray that You will not let us forget the enormity of the Unification Church's mission.

Please let the mothers stand as mothers before their husbands and children. Please let the fathers stand as fathers before their wives and children. Please let the children stand before their parents. Please let the church leaders stand before their members, and please let the church members stand before their leaders in this

movement where all accompany one another, showing Your love to one another. We request again dear Father that You will grant all the citizens to be united in heart through this group of pitiful people who have been chased and persecuted throughout this peninsula of Korea.

Allow us to brace our hearts and renew our devotion, so that today's words will be neither a condition for accusation nor a shameful appeal before that day to come, and so that the 36 couples, the 72 couples, and the 120 couples can take the lead in the second round of three seven- year courses. Please let them know that they have the responsibility of becoming the standard-bearers, marching forward before Your people.

These people should follow the path their teacher has walked. We know that no parent wishes to leave behind persecution for his or her children to suffer, and that no husband wishes to leave a path of hardships behind for his wife. But still, there remains the course of indemnity and the sorrowful path of restoration, in which the children need to be made to suffer in the stead of then- parents and the wives made to suffer in the stead of their husbands. When we think about this, and then still say we do not wish to walk this path, it will block our way forever. We sincerely hope and pray that You will allow us to know at this hour that it is our destiny to walk this path, grinding our teeth and biting our tongues.

We earnestly hope and pray that You will not let us leave behind a shameful history in relation to our Home Church activities. Please establish within us one historical standard of heart and standard of indemnity, so that when all other peoples are overtaken by storms or swallowed in floods, we can be the one vessel with an anchor of love so that all who hold fast to us will be saved. Father, we sincerely and earnestly ask and pray that You will allow us to become such people.

Please accept everything from today with joy. We pray all this in the name of True Parents. Aju! (October 16,1980)

5. Thank You for letting us usher in the age of Home Church

Loving Heavenly Father, throughout the many different historical courses, so many sorrowful days have passed in succession. During this period of sixty years from the 1920s, You sent this unworthy child to this earth and raised and educated me. I was under Your protection and guidance until I became mature and You let me understand the new view of history and my mission.

I remember once again how, after I came to know You and Jesus and to realize this, there could have been a day in Your history when You were welcomed and received glory. But because Christianity and the Korean people did not fulfill their responsibility, a history of sadness has been woven instead. But I am sincerely grateful to You, Father, for Your painful effort as You repeatedly walked the path of bloodstained struggle for so long,, in order to celebrate this victorious day without fail.

Furthermore, in the 1960s, the three seven-year courses were begun in order to indemnify again the two-thousand- year history left unfulfilled by twentieth-century Christianity, and the mission this nation did not fulfill. When I think of the day when Heaven set these three seven-year courses, it seems like only yesterday. I think back again to the time when no one could imagine that today we would have such a historic day of victory. Now these three seven-year courses have already passed, and in this year I announced the second set of three seven- year courses. I am so grateful for this day on which, in Your presence, I could announce this historical period openly before the world, during my own lifetime. For this I cannot express my appreciation in words.

From now on, we will assuredly transcend the national and the world levels and open the door to a new history. In this moment, we are bracing ourselves to begin with this year's motto: "Home Church is my kingdom of heaven." Father, please accept this motto, and please be with everyone in the Unification family, wherever they are praying under this motto. In this place in particular, eight- hundred forty-two couples of Your children, whom You allowed to form connections as new families of heaven last night, and many of the children from all over the world whom You remember have gathered together, so please be here with us.

I am thankful that we are ushering in the new period of Home Church. We all stand on the frontline as representatives of families in our determination to be faithful and devoted during the next decade. I desperately hope and pray that we can become Your children who, no matter how much we gaze upon the chaos of Satan's world, can still internally make a firm resolution before Heaven. And when we look out upon this world where evil is gradually disappearing, we can resolve to cherish a higher and greater hope as we march forward.

I sincerely pray You will bless Your young children who are spread out in various places. Please bless Your children who are far away in Korea and Japan, and those who are scattered throughout 127 countries. Even though they are in different environments and circumstances, they look toward this place thinking of True

Parents and Heaven. I know and believe, Father, that You will watch over them and protect them in such lonely places and circumstances, just as You protect my family and this church with Your benevolent love. I earnestly hope and pray that You will allow these people in such positions to become children without any shortcomings, who can make every effort and give all their loyalty to fulfill their given responsibilities to pioneer difficult environments, firmly believing that You are with them.

Heavenly Father, once again we make the resolution to dedicate before You these busy days of starting anew as we usher in 1981, a year of hope. Please bless us in this flow of history so that we can make 1981 a year of which we can be proud. Please open a path so this country can take charge of new global historical responsibilities, from the day its new leader is established. I pray also, dear Father, that You will unfold a shining world of new dimensions in which Asia can connect to the western world. We pledge that we will devote all our loyalty for all the days that have been entrusted to us. So please accept with joy everything we have offered this morning for the New Year. I offer these words in the name of True Parents. Aju! (January 1, 1981)

6. Please look upon Korea with compassion

Father, a sorrowful era has passed. As an individual, I reminisce about the old days that I can never forget. I reminisce again about the time You were worried as You faced the providence that had to run on the uphill path against the flow of our tragic history, the reverse path on which I had to establish the family.

Thanks to Your protection, we found that path and were not destroyed. In the course of twenty years, I established the foundation that can absorb America, the leading nation of the world. We knew that without doing so, it would be impossible to relieve You of Your sorrows and to liberate humanity. I dashed forward, struggling as I ran, to give everything with one heart. Now we can bring history to its final conclusion and go our way on this earth with a bold attitude, flying high the banner of hope and bringing all of providential history under Your protection. We are truly grateful for Your grace permitting us to walk this path.

Please allow the members of the Unification Church standing here at this moment to become one with the True Parents' family on the family level, so that they all can form a unity as strong as an impregnable fortress. Let us sing of Your love and of the liberation of all people. Let us rejoice, celebrating the realm of liberation in our garden. Please bless them to become a group of people who can

deal with any difficulty that comes their way with joy and gratitude, and flourish through their connection to inspiring environments. Please remember them and visit them. Extend Your hand, the hand that protected me each time I crossed the high and precipitous mountains. Please watch over the path these people will tread.

The destiny of tribal restoration centered on the Home Church providence remains a common requirement that all people, who are in the process of realizing the kingdom of heaven on earth, still need to fulfill. We have entered a time of jubilation rather than persecution. The time has come when the name of True Parents can be revealed with honor in heaven and on earth. We have come to know the path we will follow, together with the good name of the True Parents. This is not a path of suffering any longer, but a smooth and level road.

Since this is the case, we should become people who are grateful when we face the front, and who are grateful when we look left and right, up and down, or forward and back. We should struggle to build a home in our realm of daily life, the victorious haven where You can rejoice. We have clearly understood that, by assuming such a beautiful attitude, we can show ourselves to be the people who love our nation, love the world, and love our Parents. We sincerely hope and pray, Father, that You will allow this time to be one in which we can inherit these relationships in the center of our hearts.

Father, upon my return to Korea, I am advising these people to cultivate this mind and heart. Please connect this love to the forty million people living in South Korea as well as to the hearts of those living in North Korea. Since North Korea is ruled by the Communist Party, please let the good ancestors in the spirit world connect to earth through the base of South Korea. Please let these ancestors transcend time and space so they can touch the hearts of their descendants without suffering any obstruction from Satan's world.

As we enter the era when such a historical mission can be carried out, we know that the time will come soon when, through these ancestors, we can bring the second-generation members into unity so that they can direct their steps toward the Unification Church. Please let the benefits of Your grace reach them. We sincerely hope and pray that You will bless the second-generation members so that they can prepare the starting point from which South Korea and North Korea will achieve unity.

Please let the devotions we offer and the sound of our prayers become like words of a new broadcasting system of life in all of heaven and earth. Please let our words reach the original hearts of all people in heaven and on earth. We sincerely hope and pray, Father, that You will bless us so that we can listen to the words of the new gospel as the directions by which we can return to the original homeland. We pray we can follow these words to form bonds in our lives that help us find our path to the original homeland.

I know all too well that the path of destiny remains to be completed, which I must follow with my life no matter what anyone may say. So I have struggled to follow it throughout my life. We are grateful once again that, in Your grace, You have allowed this blessed position to be given to humanity, to this nation, and to our Unification Church. We should not become a pitiful group that violates the precious merit of the age. Since we should not become followers of the way of immorality, if there are any blessed families who have ever harbored wrongful thoughts, Father, please forgive them with a compassionate heart at this time. Please place Your hand of blessing on them, so that they can inherit the Your kingdom through their successors or through their children.

You do not take us on the path that leads to ruin. The path You provide is the path of truth and of Your providence. This son of Yours knows that the reason You worked through me to establish the Unification Church was not so we would perish, but rather so that we may actualize Your Will, which is Your earnest desire to liberate humanity and free even those who are in the pitiful realm of death. So please enshrine this prayer of Your son in Your heart and look upon Korea with pity. Please extend Your hand of blessing on the path of Your young children who are struggling and coming forward to take responsibility for the Korean people. Since I know that it is only then that You can be liberated before this nation and this people, I sincerely ask that You will receive my prayer and guide us to that path.

Father, during the remaining three days we should kneel down and repent in fight of history. Since we, as the families who were trained on earth with a connection of heart to our True Parents, pledged to become a qualified and worthwhile group of people unashamed to face You, our Heavenly Father, our True Parents, Jesus, Moses and Jacob, a people in whom You can take pride, we request again and again, our Father of love, that You will remember us and give us every encouragement, guidance and direction so that we can stand in this position. Please permit us to become people who are not ashamed before the era that has been given us. We offer all these words in the name of True Parents. Aju!
(December 29,1985)

7. Please grant that we may inherit faith, hope and love

Beloved Father, we thought that You were responsible for a world where the hidden heavenly Will was not realized, but we have learned that that responsibility lies also with us because of the Human Fall. We have come to know that as long as Your eternal hope remains, eternal hope also remains within us today. And as long as Your Will for eternal faith remains, the Will for eternal faith remains within us as well. We understand that as long as the practice of Your eternal love has not been realized, the responsibility for realizing the embodiment of eternal love also remains with us today.

In order to inherit the history of indemnity on this day, we need to inherit the hope of four thousand years and manifest it as the hope of six thousand years, we need to inherit the faith of four thousand years and manifest it as the faith of six thousand years, and we need to inherit the love of four thousand years and manifest it as the love of six thousand years. Since there still remains our responsibility to establish the love of six thousand years as eternal love, please forgive our present insufficiencies and inadequacies. Please forgive our present disloyalty and lack of filial piety. Please forgive us for having raised ourselves high.

Now the time has come to bring to fruition the hope of all people, and the faith of all people. It is the time when the love of all people must manifest in one incarnation. But where has that one substantial embodiment appeared? We are unworthy, but please awaken us to realize that we are to adorn ourselves anew as brides. We know that only at a time like this can the history and toil of Jesus Christ, who achieved spiritual perfection, be brought to external fruition substantially through us. Only at a time like this can the ideal of the Second Coming be made into reality and a tangible history unfold.

Today we know that the believers living at the time of the Second Advent in these Last Days must take charge, taking the central role in heaven and on earth. You want to entrust Your eternal hope to such people, but we are concerned about whether they are the people in whom Your hope should be entrusted. You want to entrust Your eternal faith to them, but we are concerned about whether they are the people in whom Your faith should be entrusted. You want to entrust Your eternal love to them, but we are concerned about whether they are the people in whom Your love should be entrusted.

Since we have been entrusted with all these things on the Lord's behalf, we now have to stand as the people who have become the tribe of eternal hope, the people

who belong to Your love, who are in an eternal, unchanging relationship with You. We have to stand as the people who have become the tribe of eternal faith, and we have to stand as the people who have become the tribe of eternal love. Please allow us to realize that such a responsibility has been allotted to us.

Today, each of us as individuals is to accomplish the purpose of Jesus Christ, who is the victorious central person of the chosen people of Israel. In other words, we have to prepare ourselves as the embodiments of hope, the embodiments of faith, and the embodiments of love that represent the whole. Now that the Second Advent has occurred, we need to embody and represent everything Jesus did after he came to earth. We must become the embodiments of the hope of Jesus Christ. We should become his successors in faith and his successors in love. Please allow us to understand this clearly.

Now, faced with the course of restoration through which we have to overcome the Fall, we need to say, "Father, we will take charge of Your hope, faith and love," and we should be able to do so, to return that hope, faith and love to You, our Father. Furthermore, we ought to be able to stand as the center of unchanging love in front of all people. We know that we will be qualified people, able to represent the final glory of the Last Days, only if we are able to receive love in Your presence. Therefore, please allow us to become the people about whom You can say, "You are the ones I have hoped for, the people I can trust, and the people I can love." Moreover, we earnestly hope that You will lead us to become victorious children who can receive the grace of the judgment, proclaimed before every created entity in heaven and on earth, and establish the condition of unity.

That is why Your joy should translate into the joy of this earth, Your love should translate into the love of this earth, and Your hope and faith should translate into the hope and faith of this earth. Please permit us to bring to You, our Father, this horizontal joy of upholding the ideal of the Second Coming, and please work through us so that the glory of achieving Your Will through us can focus on the earth and manifest throughout the world.

We should be able to sing the glory of Moses each day, and throughout our lifetime. We hope that You will allow us to unite through the love of Moses. Since we know that the achievement of Your Will, Father, is the only thing about which all 2.4 billion people of the world plus the millions of believers in the spirit world can boast, we beseech You to allow us to establish hope for that achievement, faith in that achievement, and love for that achievement at the center of heaven and earth.

Let this be the condition in which we can eternally take pride. We have humbly prayed all these things in the name of the Lord. Aju. (June 6,1956)

CHAPTER 10

The Philosophy of Peace

1. Please grant that we may attend You in the center of our hearts

Beloved Father! We know that if we keep ascending in search for You, we will surely arrive at the point where we can meet You personally, Father. If we consider the final, decisive words that You might speak and that we might affirm, they would be, “You are my sons and daughters,” and “We are Your sons and daughters.” We know that those are the words of hope humankind has pursued, as well as the conclusive words with which You will meet humankind whom You have sought.

This is not to end things by merely meeting with You as Your sons and daughters; rather, those sons and daughters, should be the bone of Your bone and the flesh of Your flesh, and should be able to stand representing the inner hope springing from within us. The individual desire that springs from within us should also emerge in a family, and the family’s desire should go beyond the society and nation, and beyond all the people of the world. It should become an emotion felt by profoundly experiencing Your innermost heart, and it must be able to overflow at a universal and global level. We know that such a world is the world of hope You are seeking and the unified world humankind is looking for.

From this viewpoint, we will need to check and see whether there is in reality a group of people who are looking for this path in today's historical era. We must reveal the origin of the truth taught by Jesus and all the saints, and we must analyze and critique how much our sense of self-worth acknowledges the value of Heaven and in what position we should stand in relation to Heaven. We must now understand that we need to stand in a decisive position that gives no other choice before all the people, the entire world and the new trends of thought, establishing a standard of truth that can settle all these.

Trueness is something that existed in the past, exists in the present, and will exist in the future. It is something that cannot be conquered or denied, and can transcend everything. Because of it, even fallen people yearn for the love of a parent, yearn to marry as husband and wife, and try to leave their wishes for the future through their children. We know that this family life system can be the original source that can bind together the hearts of people in the fallen world, and that it can be the foundation for human ethics and human emotion. Similarly, in

order to bind together heavenly ethics and human ethics, and bind together heavenly emotion and human emotion, the one victorious family system will need to be established on earth that can bind together the standard sought after by the saints with today's human ethics. In light of this fact, it is not acceptable for those men and women born in this time to be like the men and the women of the past.

Father, we must have faith that You are able to demonstrate that we are Your children, and we can vividly testify that we are Your sons and Your daughters. We should be able to demonstrate, both by faith and from a position of profound experience, the fact that You and we have a relationship of front and back, and of left and right. And we should convince ourselves completely that we have been eternally together, that we now are living eternally together, and that we will continue to live eternally together in such a position. We have realized that this is the true path we need to follow.

Father! Now we must attend You, who are more precious than anyone, in the center of our hearts. If we can attend You, the Absolute Being, in that place in our hearts that cannot be invaded by anyone, and if we can lead lives in which we can discuss together with You, discover and live the multidimensional nature of our own infinite value as an object partner together with You, our Father, as the subject partner, from a position of correspondence with You, then no matter how evil the world is, we will be able to discover something different that can lay a new foundation for the creative works that can double our infinite value, even within this evil world. When we think about this, we come to understand that the suffering such a person experiences is not suffering; rather, it can be understood as happiness, and a person living on this earth where the waves of death are overflowing is not an unfortunate person, but rather a person who is living in happiness, for the sake of happiness.

Because we members of the Unification Church knew that we needed to follow such a path, though the path we have walked until now was a path of suffering, persecution, and loneliness, each time we stood at the crossroads where persecution and loneliness intersected, it was clear to us which path we had to take. In order to plant the connection of value that people need and the connections of goodness that can flow, not only in their paths of life, but even to those intersecting paths that extend in all directions, the Unification Church has continued to struggle to make progress in every sphere. When we think about that historical reality, even though we were miserable during its course, we thank You that You have placed us in the position to have hearts of gratitude, which others do not know about.

From such a position we will put down our roots and train ourselves to prepare a worldwide foothold and, bursting with hope, we will have the hearts of national patriots, who are able to dream of one new world looking beyond Asia and the current world. Not only that, we will also go forward searching for a higher-level value, seeking to learn the duty of filial piety and loyalty, and we will live with patriotic hearts, centered on Your love, for Your kingdom and Your family which no one among the people of the world has embodied. Therefore, please personally reach out with Your blessings, and be together with us eternally on the path we are following. May Your compassion and love be even more present with our people, who are continuing in the knowledge that the value added in such a life is of such a high level that it cannot be compared with any other value of those people living centered on the two- dimensional world of today.

We know better than anyone else that we must not be weak. The good subject power that must lead this evil world should be stronger than any other, no matter how evil the world may be. We know that even when we feel lonely, as representatives of Your power and might we should not feel lonely. We earnestly hope that You will allow us to become people who can influence the world around us.

Through the words spoken this evening, please honor the value of these people highly, and please allow them to be determined as new men if they are men and new women if they are women, who possess truly principled value, established in accordance with the highest level that cannot be pursued by anyone. The people of the Unification Church of this age today are those who feel more strongly than anyone else that we must become families, peoples, nations, and the people of the world who can be connected together in a unified world that cannot be divided by anyone. There is a movement occurring where all family members of the many races of various colors can live together with brotherly and sisterly affection, which has never been found and cannot be found within any peoples. Even when Japanese people, who were the enemy of the Koreans in the past, come to be called "family members," they become our brothers and sisters.

That kind of movement is laying a foundation on the earth today and is rushing toward the stage of actual practice. Therefore, we earnestly hope that You will look on us with compassion and add Your infinite power and might. Moreover, while moving toward tomorrow's victory, permit us to become warriors of heaven who march straight forward bravely and courageously, emerging as victors rather than as petty cowards. We dedicate everything of today before You, our beloved Father, and we request again and again that You will govern us during the remaining time

in accordance with Your Will. We have prayed all these things in the name of True Parents. Aju! (February 11,1971)

2. Be with us with boundless mercy and love

Beloved Father, since we are descendants burdened with historical debts as we stand before Your high and noble Will, we realize that we should repay these debts. We should go forward, shouldering the responsibility of a high priest to indemnify the sins of the era, even if it means leaving bloodstains on our white clothes. Please let us be Your children who know all this, with boundless mercy and love for all eternity. In so doing, allow us to become the sons and daughters who remain unchanging before the hope of tomorrow.

We should become true people, we should become true families, and we should become a true church and a true nation. We should establish a true world. Please allow these people to understand this clearly. An evil environment, standing opposed to trueness, surrounds everything on this earth. Even in such an environment, Father, we sincerely hope that You will protect us so that we can become Your children who, with the passion of trueness, can continue to show our unchanging selves as pure and strong people.

Please let this hour be one in which we can pledge to fulfill our duties of filial piety and loyalty before You, with the resolution to fight and sacrifice ourselves to uphold You and to reveal Your glory as we carry out all the plans of Your Will henceforth. We pray that Your divine protection will eternally be with Your children. Sincerely requesting that You will embrace and protect, with Your vast and deep love, those of Your children who are in South Korea and scattered through various parts of the world, we have prayed all these words in the holy name of True Parents. Aju! (November 1,1970)

3. Let all people belong to the heavenly kingdom

As we look at this world of death that does not know that the passing age is summoning true people, we, who proudly possess the realm of liberation, know that even though the north and south are estranged from each other, they will be liberated without fail. We know that, though the east and west are divided and their cultural backgrounds clash, all such walls will break down and collapse on the foundation of unified blood ties rooted in true life and love.

However great the gap may be between the rich and poor in the south and north, because we know we are brothers, we know that it is only proper that the people who have more should share what they have with hearts of love. We have come to understand the amazing path that can assimilate, through Your love, Father, the good conditions set by this people who have their root in life, in building a world of peace through love. We know well that we should thank You sincerely that all this has arisen thanks to our connection with True Parents.

In this remarkable age, when we are seeking to create the world of a new culture now coming from You, God, and from True Parents, we know it is true that the time has come when all the standards of victory are seeing the light of morning. Since the age has come when we can see who is right or wrong, and who is evil, we ask and hope that You will lead all the people of the world to overcome and go beyond the standard of liberation by treading upon and going over the realm of life and death. And we earnestly hope and desire that You will bless all people, enabling them to belong to the heavenly kingdom as citizens under Your rule.

Since that time and hour is at hand, we ask again and again that You will guide and encourage us to become a group that will not be ashamed for having failed in the responsibility that we must fulfill as liberators. We pray all these things in the name of True Parents. Aju! (October 4, 1987)

4. Please hasten our footsteps as we move forward

Beloved Father, in coming to Korea and witnessing such an environment that would only elicit curses from the beholder, I am once again compelled to praise Your greatness, Heavenly Father. I have discovered that You had no choice but to forget this, turn around and advise us to love, and that You are truly a Father worthy of our sympathy.

Many years have passed since the day I declared the unification of the entire world, while departing the land of my hometown with resolute determination to uphold Heaven's decree, but it seems like yesterday. No matter how long and distant history is, the past affairs of those who roamed in search of the path of love can be felt within the realm of the moment. In the same way, I charged through the later years of my life, which was an era full of youthful vigor overflowing and charged with energy, continuing until I was well past seventy. However, I am often saddened when I reflect upon the road that is still ahead. Unable to take any rest, I am reminded of how much there is left to do before I am able to come to You, Father.

When I think about how I am filled with bitter sorrow for being unable to witness the reunification of North and South Korea even at this age, and when I think that You, as well as me, and all the blessed families of the Unification family have these thoughts, I know that everything You promised will surely come to pass. Yet still, we should heighten the level of our loyalty to shorten that period and liberate the land of North Korea, which is like hell on earth. Without embracing and uniting with these people, who are like our older and younger siblings, the base of the kingdom of heaven cannot be laid in this nation. We who know this serious fact have discovered the position where we need to take on a heart-rending struggle to digest the circumstances of a thousand years within the scope of a single day.

As unfortunate as it is, the position that each of us is placed in is something that we should regard with appreciation, because it is a position where, while investing for the sake of Your providence of restoration and of re-creation, we can comfort You, Father, in Your situation in which You console Yourself over the heart-wrenching circumstances. Father, I sincerely pray and hope that You will bestow blessings so that You do not forget the heart of Your children who pledge to live for tomorrow, for a month, and for a thousand years as they have lived on this day.

I am reminded of the historic calling that pushes us to fulfill a historic mission, and that its purpose awaits us at the end of this road. We renew our determination as we walk this life course. Though sorrowful this life course may be, we should sprint through joyfully with urgent heart, knowing that Your love, Father, is waiting for us. As we raise both our hands and swear at this hour to once again resolve ourselves to a busy life, please allow us, even though we must become a group worthy of sympathy, to struggle onward through this long, long course with such a heart.

I pray that the footsteps of those setting out on this day, together with the words spoken today in this historic time, do not end up becoming conditions for judgment. The people living in the land of South Korea should offer their utmost devotion and loyalty in loving the people in the land of North Korea in the same way that we learned to love Cain. Please enable them to resolve in their hearts to love the people of North Korea more than they love their own children, their own relatives or their clans.

The people gathered here understand that without doing so they cannot break down all the walls that block North and South Korea. Thus, we have received the order from Heaven to carry out the responsibility of mobilizing North and South Korea. Hence, we should not become a group of people who leave behind on the

path a trend of mutual distrust as a result of acting imprudently in carrying out that mission. While solemnly resolving to keep tomorrow's promise, I sincerely pray and hope that You will prepare a framework of love, like that of a sacrificial offering, which at this time can bequeath a condition that will assure a thousand- year history.

Beloved Father, almost a year has passed since proclaiming "The Unification of My Country." Now we have some forty days remaining in this present year. During this time, I sincerely pray and hope that You, Father, can carefully prepare these people, enabling them to become valiant soldiers who can quicken their footsteps with an urgent sense of resolve as they move to bring about the unification of our country, which in the future can connect to the starting point of global unity.

I pray that they may remain free of shame in those final days and that they remember the fact that they each stand on a competing course under a horizontal and common goal, based on their own families and tribes. These are variously positioned to lay the foundation for the kingdom of heaven, together with their blood relatives, in this way establishing a family in the original form. Father, I sincerely pray and hope that they become Your children who strive to follow their path, invigorated in the spirit of a filial child, patriot, saint and divine child for the sake of Heaven. Just as You protected, blessed and guided me on this path, I once again request that You accompany and walk together with these people. All these things I bless and pray in the name of True Parents. Aju! (November 18,1990)

5. May everything progress daily within Heaven's Will

Beloved Father, I know that by the work of Heaven a beginning, a process and a purpose of creation were established for the realization of an ideal. Due to the failure of our first ancestors to complete this Principle-based course, all things in Your created world were entrapped in the snare of bitter sorrow that was unwanted and unrelated to Your ideal for creation. I know numerous situations were left behind in the course of history that people should not have experienced. I know how sorrowful it is that Heaven could not avoid experiencing these incidents, and how this fallen reality has become the basis of resentment in relation to everything.

People have had to endure such a position because they could not be connected to True Parents' lineage that is based on True Parents' true love and true life, thereby establishing the foundation of conscience. I know very well that the sorrowful providence of restoration has aimed at reestablishing this, restoring this, and achieving the original standard.

I know You had to go through great troubles in order to achieve the original standard that was lost. Such a standard should have made possible the liberated realm of a true family, true people, true nation, true world, true cosmos and the True Parents of Heaven and Earth rooted in the chosen clan of True Parents. I know how great Your effort, Father, was in having the True Parent come to earth—through the history of restoring the right of the first son, and from the time of creation until now—to establish the right of the parent, liberate the position of Jesus from the position of the first son, connect the tribal foundation that Jesus needed for fulfilling the Will to the national foundation, and lay a bridge to connect the national foundation and worldwide church in order to prepare the standard of a nation as the soil in which Heaven's cosmic blessing can take root.

In order to prepare the family and church and in order to prepare a place for the nation to take root on this earth once more, the cultural sphere of Christianity should have inherited this foundation centering on the coming Lord. However, I am reminded that due to the failure to accomplish this, the True Parents alone went through a forty-year course of suffering in order to connect the family foundation, church foundation and national foundation. True Parents have come and broken down the wall of Heaven's bitter sorrow, True Parents' bitter sorrow, and the sorrow of all the spirit people in the heavenly world and the religious people belonging to religious circles in the earthly world. Heaven was with them during this process and now we have welcomed a time when we can go beyond all this and enable the true family, true church and true nation to take root.

If Korea is unable to fulfill Your Will, the True Parent is thinking of creating the form of a single nation founded in Brazil that connected to South America its Catholic and Protestant churches, its people of African and Asian descent, and everything that was divided, in order to connect Uruguay and Paraguay and empower these nations. To this day, I have been defusing the confrontation involving the people of Portugal and Spain in order to unite the Catholic and Protestant churches that constitute the cultural sphere of Christianity, and connecting Europe and the United States to Asia.

Father, You and the Parents of Heaven and Earth intend to prepare the standard for the nation of Korea, on which the heavenly world and physical world can be established, focusing on the goal of bringing liberation to the homeland. The North and South Korean summit will be held at this time when Your wish, Father, and that of the Parents of Heaven and Earth, could take root. I have assigned national messiahs for the purpose of settling all accounts for that unifying and new foundation based on True Parents' bloodstained course of suffering. May the

national messiahs accomplish the task of the liberation of the homeland centering on Korea and bring all this to conclusion in the United States, the eldest-son nation, thereby ending the conditions that divided the nations and the world.

In doing so, I sincerely pray that You bless us so that we may have the hope that, moving toward the foundation of liberation, a new world shall commence where we may be infinitely free in light of Your will, Father, and everything can break down the walls and go beyond them. I sincerely pray that You will permit Japan, the United States, China and

Russia to completely unite and settle as one and that they may attune themselves to the fortunes and footsteps of Heaven focusing on Korea. For this, a summit conference will take place today that can bind China with Russia in relation to the United States, bind the United States with Russia in relation to China, and bind China with the United States in relation to the Russia, under the bonds of brotherhood rather than as enemies.

May everything that is presented to the realm of the fortune for unifying North and South Korea be aligned before Your Will, Father; may it be united within the hearts of the True Parents and the Parents of Heaven and Earth, and may it become a protective shield of victory in the kingdom of God on earth and in heaven. I pray that You will allow us to establish a standard of victory, enabling victory to be determined unilaterally, founded upon that standard. In this way, knowing that it will not matter whether or not North Korea takes heed, I sincerely pray that You will allow us to welcome a great time of transition and change through which we can establish and enter into the unified, ideal homeland.

Now I ask Your permission that everything that is looking ahead and progressing toward an era in which it will be necessary to newly register a new nation engrafted to Korea, may make daily progress according to Heaven's will. Father, I pray that the conditions of a victorious and glorious shield be established in this place and that You receive with joy this time of establishing conditions to ensure that all things can be accomplished without turning back, according to Your Will, regardless of whether Satan's world responds or not. Father of love, I sincerely pray that You permit us to discover and return with the standards of Korea and this world that can be firmly established as a landmark of victory. I sincerely request that You permit this time to be one of establishing the conditions of victory throughout the history of the cosmos. I hereby proclaim the standard of victorious settlement in the name of True Parents. Aju! (June 12,2000)

6. Let us advance toward the era where harmony and unity can fully take root

Beloved Father, today is the first day of July in the fifth year of Cheon Il Guk. Half a year has already passed since we began this year to honor the motto "Let us complete the realm of the ideal family in the internal and external Cheon Il Guk." We have passed a climactic watershed and after fourteen years we are celebrating the fifteenth Chil Il Jeol (7.1 Day), which is connected to world history. In this age of being able to commemorate the era of God, we have welcomed a new morning in the new month, marking the fourth day after spending three days touring New York, Washington DC, Chicago and Los Angeles.

Going beyond the critical dividing lines that are national borders, stepping beyond the boundary lines marking each person's ownership, truly at this zero point we are commemorating Sam Chil (3.7) Jeol that newly represents the Old Testament Age and the New Testament Age. I offer thanks for Your grace of permitting us who are on earth to commemorate a great transition through Chil Il (7.1) Jeol, with the participation of our ancestors in the spirit world together with our descendants who will be born in the future, during this period of commemoration that is being held in attendance of True Parents.

For this purpose, please let our minds and bodies be united as we make a fresh start toward an open world of peace where we can live in any location within the realm of protection determined by the Abel UN that You designated centering on the World Peace King Bridge. A time of commemoration could be established by blessing again everything related to the unity of husband and wife, through which all members of the family are united, establishing a model for our future children. After proclaiming the present era as Your era, we have welcomed the time when all existing beings in the universe, who are in a joyful and glorious state, can advance toward Your ideal kingdom of heaven by going beyond the bitter course of restoration through indemnity, and be made equal in the eternal heavenly world.

Thus, I pray that You will permit us to invest our entire being in creating a broad highway that has eight or more lanes, a bridge and a tunnel that will enable us to make a circuit around the earth, allowing for a time when You, Father, can join in sharing with us at every point that our hobby-centered life resides within Your realm of dominion, including the spirit world. I sincerely pray that You will allow us to advance toward a world where we can welcome a new heaven and new earth in the Era after the Coming of Heaven, which is the liberated kingdom of God on earth and in heaven, and enjoy an unchanging tranquil reign of peace for eternity.

As our predecessors desired, I pray that You will give us special permission to fish and to seek a life of gratitude, while experiencing the deep realm of heart in the heavens and in all of nature, where the snow covers the summit, the trees and plants grow in mid-slope, and flowers blossom at the foot of the mountain. I sincerely pray that You will allow this day to become a day of commemoration through which a new culture and tradition can be established and advanced in the name of a family of filial children, loyal patriots, saints, and divine sons and daughters, who can bestow upon all things in the universe the right to participate with You and accompany You, and offer to You, our Father, the whole of creation as an existence with the value of liberation and complete freedom.

I sincerely pray that You will bless the blessed families and the blessed leaders, whom You love, who have gathered this morning from the six continents of the world so that they can advance toward the era that safely establishes victorious liberation, complete freedom, harmony and unity, centering on one heart, one mindset, one body and one nucleus. As we now commemorate this Chil Il Jeol (7.1 Day) anew, Father, I pray that You will accept this offering. All this I sincerely, sincerely, sincerely offer and proclaim in the name of True Parents. Aju! (July 1, 2005)

7. Please let this be the time when we can inherit the era of the kingship of love

Beloved Father, today is May 3, the first Ahn Shi Il we observe this month. This place, where heaven and earth can become one through the blessed families, shall become a focal point. As such, may the entire universe orient itself in a single direction, according to a single bond, originating from a single motive centering on this focal point, and firmly establish itself as one resultant world! Let all matters in providential history that attempt to establish one point of settlement for the ideal of creation be aligned with this single focal point. Your embodiments have become Your counterparts in heart, aligned with that point of origin, purpose and direction, and have grasped the sovereignty of Your victorious love. They have been established by being connected with the single sovereignty rooted in love that is the origin of life for all existing beings and eternal life. These substantial beings remain as Your counterparts that can become one with You at the center.

Please let all the points of origin be recovered through Your hard work. Please let flowers bloom and bear fruit upon that recovered foundation. And please let the era of the kingdom of peace be formed in which the entire universe can be ruled for

tens of thousands of years through a kingship that is unrelated to the Fall. Please permit us from now, in the capacity of an owner for all eternity, to embrace, love and appreciate all beings—from the smallest to the largest groups in the universe—as beings of value established through the ideal of creation, and to proclaim that everything is completed!

Now the blessed families and all the people of the nations connected to the United States on the earth are faced with the final goal of hope, which shall be fulfilled as a single goal through the United Nations. It is my desire during this year to focus on and connect to that hope, which is that You can take Your place on Your throne, based on the new Abel UN. Thus, I pray that the King and Queen of Peace, the peace kingdom corps and the peace kingdom police can be united under True Mother and be brought to ultimate fruition. In this way,

I sincerely pray and wish, Father, that You will bless us so that we can advance toward Your kingdom on earth and in heaven in which everything turns out as we wish and where we can freely assert ourselves while maintaining the beauty of a sovereignty rooted in love.

I pray that the content of all kinds of actions that we should present, focusing on Korea in connection with the world, and everything that has been proclaimed on this day, be integrated so that everything can become prosperous. I sincerely pray and wish that You will render Your guidance so that all of the angelic world will come down to the earth, enter the realm of eternal liberation and complete freedom, connect the family foundation centered on God with the tribe and nation, and realize a world that is the kingdom of God on earth and in heaven.

I entrust everything that will unfold after this time to You, Father. Please allow all people to pledge to fulfill these instructions, which True Parents are conveying to the world, in their clan and nation with one heart and as one body. I sincerely pray and wish that by advancing toward this goal You will permit this era to become one when we can inherit the era of the kingship of love.

These teachings, which shall now spread from this day to Korea and throughout the world, constitute Your Word, the Word of the living God. May they become the center of the entire spirit world, have the value of bringing the sphere of religion on earth into unity centered on the Unificationists, and may this be offered to the Father. I sincerely request that, according to the value of what is offered, You will permit this world to become Your liberated kingdom of God on earth and in heaven

under which we too can receive the protection of Heaven. All this I fervently report and proclaim in the name of True Parents. Aju! (May 3, 2006)

CHAPTER 11

Ceremonies and Holy Days

1. Please achieve everything through us

Before You came to this Korean peninsula, we know that You toiled throughout history on a course stained with tears, sweat and blood. Our Father, who loves the pitiful Korean people among all peoples, please let the day come quickly on which You can demonstrate to the world Your heart of love for this them.

We know that, unknown to others, You chose this people and drove them into a pitiful situation due to the Will of Your mighty providence. We also know well that, in front of all peoples, we must attend You as our Father. Please allow us to realize once again that each time this people walked a difficult course in history, You were the Father of sorrow. You are the Father, our Father, who has endured endless pain and suffering; and You are the Father, our Father, who held and wept over Your many children as they died shedding blood and tears.

You have personally reached out to us with Your own hands of life and love, in order to find Your sons and daughters. You are the pioneer of pioneers. You have personally carried out Your work as the King of pioneers, yet today the 30 million people of this nation do not know You. They should have become a people who looked forward to the day when they could attend You, but thus far they have not done so. Still, please bear with them. We know well that, from the past to the present, the people that You have called have left behind a flawed history, in every age. Please forgive this people. The more we repent for the course of history, the more we should be able to uphold Your heart. Yet that is not the case with this people. Hence, the more You toil for this people, the more we feel that we cannot even lift up our heads before You. This is because we know how great Your efforts have been to find this people.

Father! Now that You have formed a bond of life with this pitiful people, please work through them. Please grant them the ability to take pride in having been a pitiful and suffering people before all humanity. I earnestly hope and desire that You will let the day come quickly when this people, who had no one and nothing in the world to depend on, and so little to be proud of, can finally take pride in the fact that they are together with Heaven.

Now that Your sons and daughters gathered here have come to know the Will and their mission, please pioneer the course of restoration through them. We know that we are the people who must become living sacrifices to welcome that one day of the Sabbath and attend and comfort You, our Father who has endeavored until now to find this people, even if it means our blood is shed and our flesh is shredded. We know that this must be done within a generation. Since we represent this people, this world, heaven and earth, and the many spirits who have fallen down while following the path of righteousness, we earnestly hope and pray, Father, that You will guide us to make a new resolution and determination at this hour.

Even though all things in the world should have sung together within Your heart, and all created things should have harmonized together with Your heart, we know that they lost their original position and status due to the Fall, and thus have grieved and lamented for six thousand long years. We are also aware that, until this very hour, You have fought Your way out, You have continued to endure, and You have persevered to bring about the one day of the realization of Your hope, even when You were facing sadness, difficulty or even death, without losing the heart of restoration.

Henceforth, we, who are attending You, our Father, must build the garden of peace, love and joy from within our hearts. However, we know that the conditions of our environment do not permit us to do so because there are still many evil forces in our way. Nevertheless, we are aware that we have the responsibility to serve You with our whole hearts. We must create an environment connected to the entire cosmos, in which we can live our lives so as to return glory to You, Father, and bring joy to Your heart as our original ancestors should have done.

Please let those of us present here today reflect on ourselves and consider whether we have become the kind of people who are able to welcome You, Father, without hesitation whenever You personally appear before us, summon us or command us. How much have You yearned for such sons and daughters! How much have You waited for such sons and daughters to bow their heads before You and receive Your blessing! Please allow us to whole-heartedly attend You today as our Father. We sincerely hope and pray that You will be here with us at this time, and allow all heaven and earth to offer praise and glory to You.

We cannot fathom how hard You have toiled, Father. There have been numerous ancestors that have followed Your Will, but they were not able to resolve the sorrow of the Fall and they faded away in the chapters of history. When we come to

know that they are looking down upon this unworthy group on earth at this hour and waiting for the day of liberation from their sorrow, we cannot help but feel how important our responsibility is. Please let us realize once again today that we do not exist solely for our own selves. Enable us to understand that heaven and earth, our ancestors in the spirit world and our future descendants are all linked together through us.

We say that human history is the history of restoration through indemnity, and we know that we have the responsibility to set conditions of indemnity to alleviate the sorrow of history. Please let us know that any wrongdoing on our part will bring grief to Heaven, grief to this age, and grief to the future. Please let us realize that our current position is the same as that of Adam and Eve when they stood before God. Please allow us to become sons and daughters who can prove ourselves worthy offerings to You, our Father, as people who have embraced Your Will.

By doing so, please allow us in this hour to lay down sufficient foundation for our past ancestors to be liberated and the many peoples of this present age to be liberated, so that future generations of descendants can be embraced by our Father as His beloved sons and daughters. Please also allow us this morning to prepare the foundation and the way forward for a new promise that can light up this period in time. We sincerely hope and pray for all this.

Father, at this time, more than a thousand members are scattered in different places throughout South Korea. Father, we know that, in this age, many people put things aside to fight for their own happiness, but very few people will put everything aside to fight for the one day of Your Sabbath. However, Your young sons and daughters are spread out in various places and are fighting because they wish to stand close to Your heart of anguish, as You continue to unfold the ideal that can bring the global mission to a conclusion.

Even at this hour, are there any members who are lying face down on their beds, shedding tears? Father, please be with them. Since I know that You are the Father who guides these lonely people and stands with them, and the Father who looks after us when we are about to fall down, I believe, Father, that You will be with us at this hour. Please personally guide us and hold fast to us.

Father, I sincerely hope and pray that You will allow us to become pioneers who can fulfill the new mission and responsibility that we have been given. Please guide this people who do not know how to enter Your embrace, and permit us to

shoulder the responsibility of high priests as Your sons and daughters, in order to liberate even a small part of Your heart, which harbors excruciating pain.

Since You know that there are members, even in faraway places abroad, who are waiting for this hour and praying with tears, Father, I sincerely hope and pray that You will fulfill Your purposed Will so that the day may quickly come when all people may proudly proclaim that they are Your blood relatives, rooted in Your life, and may be embraced in Your bosom.

Let this be a time in which those of us gathered here today can promise to begin anew with fresh resolve and determination. I will endeavor to take responsibility for what remains to be done, and I ask that You will entrust us with Your Will. Please accomplish everything through us. I humbly pray these things in the name of the Lord. Aju! (January 1, 1961)

2. Please shine the light of Your love even in hell

Beloved Father! This son of Yours knows well that the history of restoration is a history that has been marked by tears. From the day I groped for and found the world of heart that no one knew, I have come to this position while longing for the day of hope, which I could not speak to anyone about.

We are at a new historical point where the tides that have flowed down must flow the opposite way. Father, at this hour I offer my gratitude to You for having worked so hard throughout the ages of history to recover the original standard according to which we can be proud of our right of inheritance centered on Your love, through the unity of Adam, Eve, and the angelic world based on Your ideal of creation.

I have come to think that You called and raised this young, unworthy child from among the Korean people and made him grope his way along a twisting path in hopes of finding the one day of glory. I look back on my personal history, over decades, which leaves nothing but a heart of sorrow because I was unable to comfort You during that time and I was unable to prepare the one day of glory for You. However, You have let me usher in this day without letting me die or come to ruin; I thank You for Your love.

Now, in unity with the spirit world under Your name and that of the True Parents, I am making a new proclamation that defends against accusation from Satan's

world. So, Father, we earnestly hope and desire that You will receive this day joyfully.

Since I have proclaimed that, among the people of the Unification movement, those who follow the way of the Divine Principle and who know this content and can clearly explain it, will be armed with the means of defending themselves against the accusations of Satan; please permit this to come about. Through that, please grant us a special pardon today, through which You can shine the light of Your bright love and the light of the love of the True Parents even in the dungeons of hell. We earnestly hope and desire that You will guide that world to also praise You.

Since we forgive with love and forget all the sorrows we experienced during our course of history, we ask that You, too, please embrace all people of the world, even the nation, the Christians and communists who opposed us. True Parents earnestly hope and desire that You will please bring them as one and let them remain in Your love; and especially, I ask You to forgive them.

I thank You for allowing us at this time to open the gates and enter the ideal kingdom of heaven which can be governed by the sovereignty of Your goodness through which to realize one extended family, one nation, and one world in human history. Hoping that You will willingly accept this historic hour, I proclaim this and thank You in the name of True Parents. Aju! (February 23, 1977)

3. Please allow us to establish the unified nation

Beloved Father! Today is the ninth anniversary of Children's Day. Please let Your love dwell with the children who are sincerely praying for this day throughout the nation, facing this place. As You look at the Unification Church members, please be patient with this nation and its people who have caused You to feel sad. Please command the members to carry out a new historic mission; may they become a people who are not inadequate to serve as the laborers for a new age.

We know that with us lies the responsibility to realize, without fail, a day of victory, a day on which You can gain direct dominion over all nations spread throughout the world, centering on Korea. Father! Please bless all the people by reaching out to them with Your holy, loving hands through this special opportunity today. And please bless not only humankind here on earth, but also the numerous people who followed Your Will and the countless people in the spirit world who have died for the Will in the course of history up until now.

I know that they are destined to go the unavoidable path that still remains ahead of them, the course of indemnity that must be walked through returning resurrection on earth, and please let them make connections with us from behind the scenes, based on the activities of the Unification Church and our own actions today. By so doing, we earnestly hope and desire that You will allow the many people in the spirit world to unite with us, and even their descendants to unite with us substantially, so that we may establish the unified nation that You desire.

All Your children scattered around the world are also commemorating this day. So, I earnestly hope and pray that, through them, You will carry out Your direct initiative and work in the nations where they reside, and thus establish the authority of resurrection and set the condition of victory through which to embrace all peoples in Your bosom.

As of today, please allow Your desired Will to spread out across the world in earnest, through the horizontal route based on Korea. We sincerely hope and pray that You will establish this day as the one day of glory, one day of pride, and one day of joy, and allow it to be a day on which Your children can receive Your Blessing and be embraced in the midst of Your grace.

There are some of Your children who cannot be present today, so we sincerely hope and pray that You will bless them as well. We earnestly hope and desire that You will personally lead the work of liberation for our numerous ancestors, who have lived and died while taking responsibility during the course of restoration, through which they sacrificed themselves for Your Will, Father, and thereby allow what is realized on earth to be realized in heaven as well.

I hope and pray that You will allow all Your children to become true children based on their relationship to True Parents, to build true families based on being true children, and based on those true families, to expand into true tribes, true peoples, true nations, a true world and a true cosmos. Please guide us, so that we can race forward more energetically on the course of indemnity that remains for the rest of this year.

In the 1970s, permit each and every one of us to fulfill the important mission we have been entrusted with, that is, our mission toward our people and our responsibility as Your children. I sincerely hope and pray that You will guide everything to go well according to Your Will.

I earnestly hope, Father, that on this day, You will place us at the center of Your Will and protect us. As we begin this first hour, please guide us in glory until the

last. I have sincerely prayed in the holy name of True Parents. Aju! (November 10,1969)

4. The time has come to declare the liberation of humankind

Beloved Father, I desire to offer, in front of You, this occasion where national messiahs and other leaders from around the world have gathered now, on this Day of All True Things, we are having this celebration to offer all creation as the living offering from the position where the whole world is equalized by Your full transcendence, full immanence, full authority and almighty power. Now, from this day, which marks its thirty-sixth occurrence, I shall unfold the standard of a historic paradigm shift of returning all things of creation to Your ownership in the names of the family messiah, tribal messiah, national messiah, global messiah, cosmic messiah, and in Your name.

At this gathering, forty people from Japan, twelve people from Taiwan, twelve people from the Philippines, twelve people from Canada, and forty people from the United States are participating, and they stand as a living sacrificial offering that settles all accounts.

Until now the sacrificial offering was divided into two. However, everything has been brought to order since we have now come to an era to establish Your kingdom on earth and in heaven, and to proclaim the advent of the king- ship of the heavenly nation with the authority of the family messiah, tribal messiah, national messiah, global messiah and cosmic True Parents. Thus, I will conduct a ceremony for this solemn and historic Day of All True Things, through which everything generated from the false parents in the earthly world, and all the falsity in the heavenly world, must be cleanly eradicated through True Parents. Please permit today's ceremony be the Day of All True Things that settles the accounts for the entire history of indemnity, just like the foundations established for True Children's Day, True Parents' Day and True God's Day.

All the attempts to create one unified world through the Christian cultural sphere, through which we were to attain the kingships of the family messiah, tribal messiah, national messiah, global messiah and cosmic messiah, were prolonged to this day. However, we have now come to a time when I can proclaim the liberation of humankind as the True Parents bless 360 million couples.

Up to the present time, the spirits representing the spirit world centering on Christianity were unable to receive the Blessing. Therefore, centered on the True

Parents, and with their Abel-like authority, I wish to establish one beginning point for a unified world by designating the United States, in the position of Cain, and blessing it with the right of the eldest son.

We are rushing busily toward the day when we can proclaim the establishment of the sovereignty of the heavenly nation through the path of uniting all of Christianity in the United States as well as in all other nations, bringing together all religions, and uniting all people. I pray that everything will be fulfilled according to Your desire, without any mistakes in the process in front of Heaven.

Now we are about to offer this solemn ceremony to You. Thus, on the occasion of the Day of All True Things, I pray that You can accept in joy everything in the position of the Owner, from whom emanates full transcendence, full immanence, full authority and almighty power, and who can make the global proclamation of the restoration of the kingdom of heaven, which was not realized due to the Fall of Adam in Eden, and that You can have the authority to rule within that liberated realm. This I pray and proclaim in the name of True Parents. Aju! (May 26,1998)

5. Let us be sons and daughters who are not ashamed

I know that so few people have ever traced Your footsteps through the flow of history. No one ever knew that, for You, when night came it was a night of sadness, when morning came it was a morning of sadness, when the shining rays of the bright sun reached Your heart they were a light of sadness, and when the full moon rose in the eastern sky at night, that round moon was the scar revealing the wounds in Your heart.

We are aware that countless people have remained at a standstill in the history of struggle and have tumbled into the valley of death. Many have disappeared without trace while crying out for justice at the crossroads of life and death, and have faded away into the back alleys of history, lamenting after failing to build the bridge to the world of Your heart.

It is an amazing fact that, from this place, like the valley of dry bones, the Unification Church today has thankfully taken hold of the historical connection to You after undergoing indescribable hardships to find the new way. Through this connection we have been able to resolve the origins of the bitter sorrow of the world throughout history, find the truth of Your heart, and build the bridge of heart from the bottommost pit of hell to the highest throne in heaven. We know that this

hour is an hour of joy for You, and that this hour is also the basis of hope for all people.

Long ago, when I was still immature, You called me. Ever since, while I have run around as if I were crazy, arrows from my enemies have flown at me from all directions, mercilessly. Yet I have realized only now that those arrows hit You before they reached me, and You have been covered with wounds.

After returning to Korea this time, reflecting upon the sixty years of my life which have been filled with many bitter pains and sorrows, I feel grateful for the fact that I can be remembered as Your son. When I had occasion to shed tears, You made me shed tears for Your beloved sons and daughters, and when I had occasion to receive blows, You saved me through Your many children. I am grateful for Your grace.

Members of the Unification Church, spread around the world in 127 nations connected to Korea, Japan and America, are thinking of this place with reverence and waiting for the day of my return as their teacher, longing with tears for that hour to quickly come. I know that, not only in this free world but even behind the iron curtain, pitiful groups of Your children are hovering on the brink between life and death for the sake of Your Will, being trampled upon in their underground existence, unable to live for even one day with ease in their hearts.

Since You know that I cannot forget them when I am comfortable and I cannot help but remember them even when I am resting, I hope that You will remember them on my behalf and protect their environment, Father, so they will be able to go to the kingdom of heaven as they desire. That is, by resurrecting their enemies, they can leave behind names they can be proud of, and

You can pin glorious nametags on them as Your sons and daughters. Sometimes they came to visit me but circumstances did not allow them to meet me; and even when they were able to meet me, they said that the next time they would meet me, it would not be on earth but in the spirit world. I saw them vividly as they were leaving.

I have made many appeals to You, suppressing my gasping heart. I am not dead yet and I still have energy left, so I hope You will not worry about the path I need to go. Instead, You will watch over their paths, both before and behind them, so that someday the day of glory will come in the communist world, and all peoples' shouts of liberation will spread, beginning from North Korea and overflowing across this entire planet. I pray that You will remember all those who have faded away as flowers of this long-cherished hope of bringing about that day.

Father, thus far, people who have knelt down or stood in Your presence did not know that You are the one who is in the most pitiful situation. Yet, as Your son, I learned that You are the Father of such great sorrow, who cannot stop weeping even after having shed tears for tens of thousands of years. You know that I wanted to forget all the personal matters I could have complained about, and even my entire suffering path.

That being the case, I am grateful for Your grace in that, even when I could have perished, I did not perish; and even when I was ridiculed, I did not collapse but remained steadfast. Now that I have returned here to Korea, Father, please love Korea and protect these people as they walk this path in the future.

I know only too well that the holy quest of realizing the unification of South and North Korea still remains to be achieved in Korea, through the Unification Church. Father, please encourage this entire nation. I know that You are wishing for the day when not only the Korean Peninsula and Asia but the entire world will open wide the gates of blessing and will serve and attend You, our Father, and Heaven, with cheers of gratitude.

We, the Unificationists who have gathered here today, are clean and well dressed, and have come to offer full bows before You. Because we know that the call from Heaven, Your summons, is still with us, Father, we sincerely hope and pray that You will push and spur us along that path, even if we end up being pitiful and miserable people who will have to resolve, again and again, to go forward. I know that if we do so, we will not perish. So please allow these people to become young men and women who can endure that path.

Even if all our flesh rots on that path, and even if our faces become wrinkled along the way, our rotted flesh and wrinkled faces do not represent sorrow. We know that blessings will remain with our future descendants, and that the right of inheritance to the global culture, which will be able to sing of the shining happiness of youth, will remain among our descendants. Hence, I earnestly hope that You will guide us to become people who can show reverence and gratitude while walking that path.

We have now come to know clearly what it is to be reborn, through Children's Day, Father, and I sincerely and earnestly request and pray that the more we understand how hard You have been toiling, the more You will allow us to realize how insufficient we are. Let us push ourselves to dream of becoming sons and daughters with hope for tomorrow, pressing ourselves again and again to march

forward so that we can influence our environment and become children whom You can bless as those who are worthy to be loved by You. Please bless us again and again so that we can be sons and daughters who are unashamed before the days to come, and before the world. I pray all this in the name of True Parents. Aju!
(November 8, 1980)

6. Thank You for this era of unity and liberation of the cosmos

Dear loving Father, this is the fifth anniversary of Chil Pal Jeol (7.8 Day). True Parents inaugurated this holiday on my seventy-seventh birthday, at seven minutes and seven seconds after seven o'clock on the seventh day of the seventh lunar month of 1997, and concluded the providence based on the number seven. In so doing, I broke down the barriers to this number, which was to be completed for the ideal of creation.

Due to the fact that humankind fell at the level of the number six and could not go up to the number seven, the realm of the Sabbath, True Parents overcame this and established a new boundary line. Through our life, centered on the conditions for the completion of the number seven representing Heaven and restoration through indemnity, You have been able to proclaim the Cosmic Sabbath for the Parents of Heaven and Earth, Chil Pal Jeol. We are truly grateful, Heavenly Father, for Your being able to do this in keeping with this age.

Throughout the history of suffering in which humankind has had to overcome so many hills and valleys of indemnity, the altars linking the bloodstains sustained by the many religions and people of goodness have been brought together beyond the level of individuals, through the levels of the family, tribe, people, nation and the world. As the offering, in the Old Testament Age all things were sacrificed; in the New Testament Age the children were sacrificed; and in the Completed Testament Age, Parents were sacrificed. By passing through this process, we were able to break through the blockade that besieged us on the hill of the sorrowful grievances caused by Satan, and set up the number eight, completing the number seven through Chil

Pal Jeol, a new day marking a boundary line in the providence. Thus, You have given us the grace of creating the era in which we can go on into a new world, a world of the completion of the providence, for which we are truly grateful.

Throughout history, many founders of religions and men and women of conscience sacrificed themselves for the righteous causes of loyalty and filial piety

in their nations. After paying our debts to those saints and sages, who made tremendous sacrifices even at the risk of their lives, we ushered in Chil Pal Jeol centered on the blessings of new liberation. Thereby, through establishing kingship on the levels of the family, people, nation, and world in the spirit world, You connected all humankind, beginning from the 3.6 million and 36 million couples to the 360 million couples and beyond, directly to the authority of liberation by which You can embrace us in Your bosom. For this, we are grateful to You, Father.

We are also grateful to You for bringing together all the saints, centered on the blessed families and the liberation of the heavenly world, and allowing them to pioneer the mainstream path based on Your new sovereignty in the spirit world. At the same time, we thank You for bringing about this cosmic age of grace, in which we can receive the benefits of the age through which the grace of the Blessing lost in Adam's family can be reestablished in the earthly world, the rights of the Blessing of all the Cain-side ancestors in the spirit world can be brought together to set the one mainstream direction in the spirit world, and the one mainstream direction on earth can lead to the completion of the realm of unity from the individual to the cosmos.

Now, all that is left is for us to bring to fruition all that we have been preparing, based on the establishment of Your kingship. We thank You for allowing us to declare the liberation and unity of the cosmos on January 13, 2001, through the Enthronement Ceremony for the Kingship of God.

Now, based on Your love and work of full transcendence, full immanence, full authority and almighty power, You, our Heavenly Father, can overcome all the obstacles in the evil world, and we can serve You as the Owner who reigns over the universe from a position of freedom and independence, and serve the Parents of Heaven and Earth as the King and Queen of the family, nation and world. We are truly grateful for this grace You have permitted in order to usher in this era, wherein we can create an environment for serving the Parents of Heaven and Earth.

I am especially grateful to You for allowing many young members of the Unification movement to celebrate this day together, by their attendance at the fourteen-day workshop on Jeju Island. Further, I am grateful that while walking the path of the Will, You have enabled us to overcome all difficulties that people have been unable to resolve to this day. Thereupon, You have allowed us to establish the family foundation on earth with authority as Your liberated sons and daughters, and thus we can inherit the realm of Your victory. I sincerely pray and ask that You will allow us to become heaven's citizens through our alignment with Your heart, and

establish the central tribes, central peoples, and central cosmos based on our families. At the same time, with Your blessing, we will become the families of heaven and earth who can inherit Your lineage and Your kingship.

As we are in the era of transition, in the position of liberated owners, please allow us to become owners of love who are worthy before the universe, by inheriting all things created through Your love. I beseech and wish for You to bestow the blessings of heaven upon this earth so that we can become individuals, families, tribes, peoples and nations who can follow Your path as central figures without shame.

We are even more grateful for this day of celebration. We will welcome everything that will occur from this day on with rejoicing hearts. I wish and pray that You will allow us to make the transition to the world of the era in which we can offer this progressive victory to You. On this day of celebration, I earnestly desire that Heaven's grand blessing will be evenly bestowed on all the people on earth as well as in the spirit world. Thereby, as the absolute individuals, families, nations and cosmos centered on love, all of us will march forward, forward and forward toward the world of absolute victory, victory and victory! I pray all this in True Parents' names. Aju! (August 25, 2001)

7. May we welcome a liberated and peaceful era of Your kingdom on earth

Beloved Father, on this day commemorating the enthronement and coronation of Your kingship, five years have already passed since January 13, 2001, although it seems like it was yesterday. It was the day when all of heaven and earth could coincide with the Will, and Your realm of victory could mark a new beginning. The complex and critical moments in history, up until the present, have been resolved on earth, and we have made a beginning enabling the expansion of a foundation on earth upon which You, God, on behalf of the Parents of Heaven and Earth, can freely act, centering on the original point of the vertical love based on the horizontal standard. During the past five years, I have settled the remaining indemnity conditions that Satan was demanding, and overhauled and expanded this foundation so that Satan could never again come near Heaven's sovereignty.

Thus, in this era I need to establish the Abel UN and connect it to Your arena of activity. Jesus came and attempted to resolve on a national level what Adam was unable to fulfill in Eden. Yet the people of Israel, who cooperated with Rome, failed to fulfill their responsibility as Abel, and Your Will, left unfulfilled, was prolonged until the time of the Second Advent. I beseech You that You forget the painful and

tedious era in history during which all the saints and sages who have gone to the spirit world, and who had centered on You and Jesus, have been looking to You and, more than was demanded, to the earth, and who have been so anxiously waiting until this day of True Parents' victory.

From this new year on, for the ideal world of peace and liberation in heaven and earth, may You stand in a position of autonomy, taking a step beyond the era of Adam, who failed in the family, and taking one more step beyond the level of Jesus, who was unable to reach the national level, and attain victory on the world level. We have spent the final hectic hours to connect the original standard of Your kingship not only to the United Nations on earth but also to the United Nations in heaven.

In 2005, we, True Parents, toured 120 nations, proclaiming a providential message entitled, "The Era of Settlement of the Providence as a Model for the Ideal of Peace in Heaven and on Earth," based on the standard of the model family, model nation and model world for the realization of the ideal of peace in heaven and on earth. As indicated in that speech, we have now ushered in a demanding era in history, when we must achieve the victory of the realm of the Abel UN based on Your ideal family. By passing through that path, we have come to the point where all the programs initiated by Heung-jin and Daemonim in Cheongpyeong can be united with True Parents and concluded.

Thus, by virtue of offering to You the victories True Parents have accrued by overcoming the course of indemnity on the levels of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos, based on the realm of the Abel UN, I pray that You may receive in joy the commemorative service for the coronation for Your kingship, which is being offered on this day that inherits the era in which Heaven can have dominion over everything.

I also reclaimed all the rights of ownership that had been taken by Satan until now. Consequently, we have entered an era of great reorganization where we can expand and overhaul horizontally and vertically from the focal point marked by the great victory of the Lord of the Second Advent. On that foundation, we have ushered in an era where the realm of the Abel UN can be proclaimed along with the coronation today.

You led the Israelites through the wilderness with a pillar of fire and a pillar of cloud, had them make the tablets of stone twice for the benefit of those who violated the law, and proclaimed the way for the Israelites to go based on the Ten

Commandments. In the same way, the returning Lord has now taken responsibility and proclaimed the triumphant entry into the blessed land of Canaan, which the Israelites failed to do.

All the good clans on the earth, the Cain and Abel clans, are united as one, and they are recognized as the realm of the chosen people. In this way, the returning Lord has paid indemnity for what Jesus was unable to complete in his lifetime, by breaking down all the fundamental barriers, including national borders, on earth as well as in heaven. On that foundation, a new Abel-realm UN was established, and an era in which You, the Father, can freely do as You desire is prepared and offered to You. Thus I sincerely request that You connect all this to the blessed families, so that everything that You lead can be fulfilled as You wish.

From the position of True Parents, we plan to make this time of commemorating and offering the Enthronement for God's Kingship a supreme condition of victory. I pray that in years to come, the entire cosmos will advance forever more into Your realm of love as a harmoniously united world, and usher in a peaceful era of liberation of Your kingdom on earth. I sincerely wish and pray that You receive this liberated authority founded upon the coronation with joy, and that everything can be united and fulfilled according to the wish of the True Parents. Aju! (January 3, 2006)

CHAPTER 12

Cheon Il Guk

1. Please grant that we may bring the ideal Adamic culture to completion

Beloved Father! Today, December 9, 2001, we are observing the second Sabbath in this month of December. Here, under the watchful gaze of heaven and earth, we are holding a new pledge service in attendance of the Parents of Heaven and Earth, who are the object of interest to all of Heaven and to all of Cheon Il Guk. The blessed families in the spiritual and physical worlds, and everything bound to them, in their attendance to the True Parents, have become one in heart and in body, fulfilling the way of the devoted child in the family, patriot in the nation, saint in the world and divine child in the cosmos. They are perfecting the realm of liberation for the Parents of Heaven and Earth in the kingdom of heaven on earth and in heaven, the entire universe and all people. Now we have ushered in an age in which we can bring everything that Adam lost to fruition, and have it protected and offered in victory by the True Parents on the earth. In light of this, I have proclaimed Cheon Il Guk to both earth and heaven. I dedicate this to Heaven in the name of a nation of an individual, in the name of a nation of a family, tribe, people and country, and in the name of the nation of the world and cosmos. Father, You blessed the glory of that day that brought order to the fallen world. Thus, this year, in which I concluded the Enthronement Ceremony for the Kingship of God centered on a family of love, I proclaimed the establishment of Your homeland centered on Korea, and even proclaimed Cheon Il Guk.

We are now in the process of giving the Blessing to the ambassadors for peace and proclaiming the start of the new nation of the world for the sake of a liberated world. Let all those who have come together amid the challenges and chaos, representatives of the religious circles representing all the blessed spirits in the spirit world, and blessed families of the Unification Church on earth, become one in heart and in body within Your Will and Your protection. I sincerely pray and request Your permission to allow them to fulfill the way of loyalty and piety attending Heaven, and to become faithful servants attending You, the Heavenly Parent.

In this way, please permit us to perfect the culture of a single tribe connected with the true love, true life and true lineage rooted in the heart of a completed individual, family and people centered on Your sovereignty and an ideal Adamic

culture. We have the victorious power of an individual who can complete the mainstream ideology of the ideal of creation as a tradition. From it may we form the authority of the Parent of Heaven and Earth, based on the liberation of the cosmos and the Enthronement Ceremony of the kingship of the heavenly nation. May we rectify all the false things on the earth and then connect them to a new world of peace on earth and in heaven that has no trace of Satan.

This is the age in which the Unification Church, centering on blessed families, can connect the realm of the third Adam to the world. It thereby expands the unfallen, original realm of unity throughout the world, and establishes one unified world together with Your kingship, centering on Cheon Il Guk. What remains now is a time for national and global victory, enabling us to offer to You, once again, this universe that was lost. In the name of the True Parents, we will bring to a conclusion in unity all advancing matters, and bring order and closure on Your providential path, Father. Thus, I sincerely pray and request that You will allow all matters that are advancing toward this purpose to attain the glory of victory with Heaven, so that we can offer the joyful liberation of all humankind to Heaven.

We have ushered in an age in which the Unification Church members in the spirit world, united in heart and in body, can educate the spirit world. This will enable all the saints and sages to rise up together and obtain a liberated nation that combines everything from the individual to the family and nations, for the sake of Your kingship. Thus we establish Your nation centering on the unified mainstream ideology, and offer it to You.

Please bless all the saints and sages centered on the four great saints in the spirit world, and have them return to the earth so that they can build Cheon Il Guk in the Abel position. I sincerely pray and request that You permit the spirit world and physical world to cooperate, enter into a bond of brother and sisterhood, and go beyond the standard that perfects the original ideal.

With the dawn of the Pacific Rim era, I have come once again to Hawaii. Now, before I depart for Korea, I sincerely pray that You will take the lead in uniting all paths, all matters and all relations that reside in this place with Your Will. May nothing be lacking in any way in bringing the joy and glory of victory.

I pray that You will receive with joy this morning's full bow, which You have permitted Father, I sincerely pray regarding everything that should be brought to order in December, that it will be completely and fully brought to order with Your permission. Please protect, nurture and guide everything so that a victorious Cheon

Il Guk can advance. All this I pray in the name of True Parents. Aju! (December 9,2001)

2. I desire to share with You the joys and sorrows on the path that lies ahead

Beloved Father, I announced this year's motto, "May the Absolute, Unique, Unchanging and Eternal Will, which is the Subject Nature of True Love, be Accomplished through the Liberated Parents of Heaven and Earth and Children Uniting in One Mind and One Body," and proclaimed that I would achieve Cheon Il Guk, the heavenly kingdom on earth and in heaven.

Your ideal of creation, centering on True Parents, maintains the authority of the liberated Owner in a position where the family, nation and cosmos takes root through the perfection of the children, centering on True Parents. In the original concept of the process of creation, this is the substantial realm of the purpose of creation. However, the first ancestors of humankind erred, leaving behind, in a single day, unending bitter sorrow. I have come to know the greatness of the wounds and scars inflicted upon Your heart.

While bearing these scars throughout the course of history, You desired people who could center on the king- ship rooted in the ideal of the kingdom of heaven and a world of love. When I think about what has come on the basis of that desire, I realize that human beings have been so unfilial to You. They were unfilial in the family, disloyal to the nation and unforgivable in their world-level actions. They even stoned the divine sons and daughters of heaven and earth.

They filled history with great and bitter sorrow. The religious circles on the earth failed to uphold the hope for the manifestation of the True Parents on the earth, which had lasted throughout the years of history. They did not resolve the mass of accumulated resentment that people had to endure as they waited for the time of the Second Coming.

The True Parents cleared the course of re-creation from the very bottom of hell on earth and to the heavens and, following Your lead, proclaimed the Enthronement Ceremony for God's Kingship on their victorious authority. I pray and hope that the Father can embrace the Korean Peninsula. It is from here that we can proclaim the establishment of Your homeland and also Cheon Il Guk in the Completed Testament Age, centering on the ideal of the kingdom of heaven on earth and in heaven.

My resolution was to look for the one day of victory and place it before Your Will. With it, I achieved everything that You intended in relation to true love's subject nature, and proclaimed Cheon Il Guk, the establishment of kingship, the homeland and the liberation of everything that You had desired on the earth. Now we hear humanity's cry of jubilation in the new year. The time has come when the people of heaven and all people on the earth who can re-enact the glory of the Parents of Heaven and Earth can become one in heart and in body and dedicate this offering to Heaven.

Though such a time has come, we are greatly sorry to You, Father, that these tired members of the Unification Church have not yet been able to complete preparations to serve and attend You, who worry about this world.

Father! I am the child who was unable to attend You peacefully. You have endured everything to this day. It is true that this family and clan failed their responsibility, and the moment passed for the Catholic and Protestant churches to unite. Such unity would have brought the unification of Korea, centering on Christianity, with the True Parents after World War II. Heaven and earth would have crossed paths. But, harboring the bitter sorrow of having lost that moment, I passed through my youthful years during my thirties and am now moving beyond my eightieth year. I was supposed to fulfill the Cheon Il Guk ideal with You in my forties, yet fifty-six years have passed since the liberation of Korea. At this time, the start of the fifty-seventh year, I have to proclaim a new Cheon Il Guk in this dedication ceremony.

Therefore, please forgive all the children who received the Blessing of the Unification family, all the children who received the Blessing of the heavenly world, and all the unfortunate souls whom Satan's world kicked around and prevented from following Your desired path. Heaven stood as a Parent who had to bless both murderers and saints in the same place. Heaven was in a position where it was forced to be such a Parent. That is why I sincerely pray and wish that You will erase from Your memory all the mistakes the blessed families committed. Please take pity on these people, for they are trying to attain an individual, family and nation that can cultivate the original heart and substantial entity centering on Cheon Il Guk, the kingdom of love. Please share their joys and sorrows with them on the path that lies ahead.

We are at an important time, welcoming the month of December that brings closure to the first year of the third millennium. Centering on Jesus, You ultimately had to decide the standards for Cheon Il Guk. With its proclamation, You

bequeathed to the spirit world and physical world the privileges and benefits of national and global affiliation. Despite all this, I realize the fact that as of tomorrow, we again will see the new Cheon Il Guk from the position of not having a nation. Please understand the bitter sorrow in the heart of Your unworthy child, who was unable to establish the things that should have been arranged in the name of the True Parents. Please suppress the indignation and exasperation in Your heart, and allow me to look for Your assistance along this child's path. With You, may I attain and move beyond the liberation of heaven and earth, which is the pinnacle of the ideal of Cheon Il Guk, and even beyond the ideal of the kingdom of heaven.

We have to dedicate and offer to Heaven a family that, united as one mind and one body, fulfills the will of true love's subject nature, which is absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal. On that foundation, we have to offer the nation centering on such families, a world centering on that nation, and the liberated kingdom of heaven on earth and in heaven.

In order to attain Your authority that enables this, I proclaimed the establishment of the kingship, the homeland, and Cheon Il Guk. May You embrace all these things in Your heart. I pray that You will exert Your sovereign power and, from the original position You cherished, draw all nations, all generations and all of heaven and earth into the realm of Your reign. Please allow the victorious kingdom, which I have announced to the entire world with a liberated and free heart, to be formed.

I pray that this nation can become Cheon Il Guk, Father. After the turn of this year, in the next couple of days, we will usher in the second year of the third millennium. During this time, may everything that You intend expand beyond the horizontal plane, beyond all nations, and take the form of a sphere that represents the directions of up and down, front and back and right and left.

I pray that, centering on the axis of Your love, the axis of the family, nation and world can recover all of heaven and earth and be used as the basis for Your ideal kingdom of heaven.

Today, marking the third day before welcoming the new year, I pray that with Your permission we can achieve everything that I have spoken before You. Doing so, we shall greet this day. Father, please have pity on us. I sincerely pray that You will have pity on us and, with a forgiving heart, bless us. May earth and heaven connect to hope and glory, which shall be the path we take from now, and be a foundation

of shining glory. All this I sincerely pray and report in the name of True Parents. Aju!
(December 30,2001)

3. We have proclaimed the settlement of Your homeland and Cheon Il Guk

Beloved Father, in accordance with Your desire, Your providence has triumphed and united the spirit world and the physical world as one in body, mind and ideology. Centering on the completed settlement of Cheon Il Guk on earth, we have come to an era when we can celebrate. We have arrived at the time of great transition, when You can manage and lead affairs here on earth through Your omnipresence, absoluteness and complete authority, with victorious supremacy. I offer thanks, Father, to You, who have labored for so long. My wife and I have taken responsibility for the goals of the providence and have borne the title of True Parents here on earth. Despite that, I cannot help but regret that we have been unable to fulfill the duties of loyalty and filial piety and the duties of the saints and the divine sons and daughters on a higher level in attending You, our Heavenly Parent.

Nevertheless, we now have arrived at an era of transition in the providence. Centering on Korea, we have proclaimed Cheon Il Guk, the settlement of Your homeland, and the completed establishment of Your kingship. We also see the beginning of a world of peace and the installation of ambassadors for peace, who can govern and lead the world of peace. Here on earth we have declared Cheon Il Guk, which can advance the common purpose of all nations and embrace all people.

I thank You, Father, that You have led us to pursue this goal and arrive at an age when we can proclaim the complete liberation of Your Will, for the sake of building the kingdom of heaven on earth and in heaven.

Moreover, here in Hawaii, the center of the Pacific Ocean, we declared the age of the Pacific Rim and, centering on this, returned the ocean to You, returned all the land to You, returned the ideal of creation to You, and returned the entire kingdom of heaven to You.

With this declaration as a foundation, all the things we have planned have brought us to this place, where You have prepared for the Will's transition into the origin of a new world. The time has come, as Your providence heads toward

Your ideal realm of Cheon Il Guk, when You can become one in mind and body. It comes as You establish the direction of the entire kingdom of heaven, transcending the nations of this world and investing all Your strength in that one mainstream direction.

Father, I thank You for Your grace that allows us to make this proclamation at this time. All the earth, from the individual to the family, tribe, people, nation—symbolically, the entire world—can become one in body, thought and heart as the object partner of the spirit world. It can perfect the duties of filial children, loyal patriots and divine sons and daughters in serving Heaven. Thereby it will transition into the world in which we can establish the kingship of the kingdom of heaven on earth and in heaven.

Father, we pray that You will liberate all the beings in the cosmos, from the tiniest microorganisms to all the beings You created in the spiritual realms. We pray for all of our ancestors, who did evil and did good, and who came and went on the earth, from the borderline of hell to paradise, to form a realm of liberation that enables them to go directly to Heaven.

By so doing, Father, we long to see You push away the barriers between the nations here on earth, and advance toward the world of sovereignty that Heaven can rule and guide with one heart, one body and one thought. The True Parents, representing all the people of the earth, support You. They declare that they, together with all our ancestors in the spirit world, will support You. Therefore, I ask that You guide us personally, from a free and self-sufficient position, in this age that advances toward the goals You have purposed and administered.

Now in Korea we have proclaimed the establishment of Your kingship, the settlement of Your homeland and, on that foundation, Cheon Il Guk. We made these proclamations centering on Korea, Japan and America and, together with the establishment of ambassadors for peace across the globe, we are opening and advancing the way through the ideology of Cheon Il Guk. At this point in time, centering on this day, we pray that You will become the Parent who can govern the entire universe from the position of King of kings, centered on the sovereignty that represents heaven and earth's united absolute authority and omnipotence, and guide us as our King.

I thank You that this day we could proclaim our new resolution to advance toward the world of peace of the kingdom of heaven on earth and in heaven. We will do so by following the way of Heaven and completing the way of filial children,

loyal patriots and divine sons and daughters. All peoples and all the created beings of the universe are united today in mind and body. We hope and pray that, centering on this joyous day, we can advance from the new age of the Pacific Rim to the liberated era when the kingship that can connect the land and the entire cosmos is established.

Representing all created beings, and standing in the center where heaven and earth are united, we declare in the name of True Parents that we all support the kingship of Heaven. So, Father, please become the center and rule over us with the sovereignty of love. By liberating heaven and earth, as You have desired, please become the King of kings centered on Your sovereignty, and the Parent of all peoples. Please advance toward the glorious kingdom of heaven on earth and in heaven, where You can reign over the entire universe. We dedicate and proclaim this in the name of True Parents, and may Your Will be done. In gratitude for these things, I report all this to You. Aju! (January 26,2002)

4. May this be the victorious nation in the reign of peace and prosperity for all eternity

Heavenly Father, as we welcome the new year of 2003 today, we have announced this year's motto: "Let our family perfect a true family of filial children, patriots, saints and divine sons and daughters in Cheon Il Guk, through true love." We begin this new year, in which all families on earth and in heaven can achieve the completion of settlement through this motto, and inherit the traditions of the unified True Parents of heaven and earth centered on the True Parent, True Teacher, True Owner and True King.

You, our Father and the source of all blessings, sent the True Parents to earth and had them indemnify numerous peaks of sorrows. Now heaven and earth can stand publicly on the same horizontal line, following the completion of the rallies for the Harmony and Unity of Heaven and Earth and the Holy Burning Ceremony of the Peace, Unity and Liberation of the Parents of Heaven and Earth. Now we herald the Age of Equalization in the Peace and Unity of Cheon Il Guk. Heaven and earth can march toward a common purpose centering upon the ideal of oneness, from the individual all the way out to the cosmos.

You created Adam and Eve upon the objective standard that was absolutely necessary to perfect the ideal of love. Achieving individual perfection through the unity of mind and body, and thereby becoming the substantiation of oneness in

harmony of heart, body and mindset, is required in order to perfect the ideal of reciprocity desired by Heaven. Unless You, the incorporeal Parent of the heavenly kingdom and the corporeal substantial parents are ideal partners of love, centering on the unified standard of oneness in heart, body, mindset and harmony, they cannot fulfill Your purpose to attain absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal love.

Therefore, please esteem the object partner of this love as having unsurpassed value, and cherish the highest and most treasured hopes for it. Base this on the standard of absolute faith, for it is Your absolute wish, absolute hope and absolute desire. At the same time, allow Your object partner to perfect those highest and most treasured hopes. You utterly and unreservedly invested Yourself entirely, over and over again, into the smallest and the greatest, in order to leave behind the sublime and vast realm of the ideal of love.

In the midst of this, You fashioned Adam and Eve in substantial form as the object partners of Your love so that, centering on them, Your incorporeal substance could achieve corporeal substantiation. You poured everything into Adam and created him, and then You created Eve in Adam's image, so that they could form a conjugal bond as the substantiation of Your internal nature and external form. Your ideal of creation thus is to achieve the three generations for which You have longed.

Yet the Fall of the first ancestors of the human race left no room to realize Your Will. Instead it left behind false parents, false love, false life and false lineage. They ended up being bound in blood ties to Satan in opposition to You, leaving You in solitary isolation without a foothold in this world. You passed through countless eons until You eventually could realize Your Will through re-creation. You then could emerge as the long and eagerly awaited Heavenly Parent, of whose existence humanity had been ignorant.

You revealed the secrets of the spiritual and physical worlds through the True Parents, who uncovered the origin of Satan. They declared Satan's identity as the enemy of God's love, the adulterer, and thereby blocked his path. And You, with oneness of mind and body, oneness of mindset, and oneness of harmony, restored the victorious standard of individual original nature.

As the God who invested completely into the substantial form of Adam, in order to establish the Parents in substantial external form, You made Adam and then You took out a part of him and created Eve. You placed them in the position of Your object partners. Centering on the external form and internal nature and dividing yin and yang, it was Your ideal to hope for a substantial destination, the formation of a

family of parents and children extending in all four directions. You could not find this ideal, however, until now.

Through the advent of the True Parents, who resolved and revealed everything, and thwarted the way of Satan on the levels of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation and cosmos, a new historic epoch was brought about. Through it, the realm of power that once had opposed Heaven could be undone. Together with the establishment of Your kingship, on the foundation centered on the Realm of Life of the Completed Settlement of the Parents of Heaven and Earth, we set the standard for the Holy Burning Ceremony of the Peace, Unity and Liberation of the Parents of Heaven and Earth and the Age of Equalization in the Peace and Unity of Cheon Il Guk.

In addition to everything the ancestors, loyal subjects, virtuous women and filial children born on this earth left, saints and divine sons and daughters appeared and became one. The founders of the great religions completely devoted themselves to Heaven centering on loyalty, filial piety and chastity. They mobilized the good ancestors to resurrect on earth and restore through indemnity the realm of the failures of the Cain side. On the restored foundation of the right of the eldest son centered on Abel, together with Your kingship, we now are able to bring about an era of tranquility. In it we can establish the reign of peace and prosperity on earth, from the level of the individual to the cosmos, without any Satanic interference. We are truly grateful for Your grace in allowing us to welcome this world of freedom and unity.

Father! Standing on this foundation, and through true love, our family should become the family of filial children, of loyal subjects, of saints, and of divine sons and daughters of Cheon Il Guk.

On this day, the day we have ushered in the third year of Cheon Il Guk, 2003, we gratefully proclaim a new beginning to establish the True Parents, True Teachers and True Owners, and True Kingship. With the coming of the new year and the declaration of this year's motto, we are truly grateful to You. You have allowed us to make a new resolution to advance to the liberated world of the unified kingdom of heaven on earth and in heaven, to bring glory to heaven and prosperity to earth, as well as glorious praise of unified victory in all nations and all generations. We will achieve the unity of the spiritual and physical worlds and attain this progression of victories and accomplishments. Please reign over us as the King of kings of eternal peace and prosperity. Please allow us to realize Your independent kingdom on earth and in heaven.

Please allow all blessed central families to become the owners who can take responsibility for everything. Permit them to appear as original families who can serve Your kingship. You have enabled us to reach the age when we can offer before You cheers of liberating victory in all of heaven and earth. In Your entire coming, going and abiding, may Your victory, prosperity and glory be bountiful and eternal. We also hope that You will allow this to be the victorious nation of the reign of peace and prosperity for all eternity. We pray with all our heart that the tradition of the victorious heavenly kingdom, where You can reign independently forevermore as the King of kings, will begin at this hour. With hearts filled with True Parents' earnest hopes and devotions, we hereby make this proclamation before heaven and earth. Aju! (January 1, 2003)

5. We are grateful to be able to proclaim the era of settlement

Loving Father, heaven and earth have formed one heart, one body, one mindset and one central core. They now are moving toward the era of synthesis, harmonization, unification and settlement. I thank You for the grace that allows us to greet this era of liberation and complete freedom, wherein we can begin our journey empowered by a nexus of unity, centering on the message of the Cheon Il Guk ideal.

This conference, focusing on the Mongolian People's Federation for World Peace, is beginning now, on December 1, 2004. Father, please bless this place, this land of Yongpyeong. The Cain-type sphere of brotherhood, spread across the entire world, is now looking toward Heaven.

Cain's violence against his younger brother arose when mind and body began to fight against each other. Starting with the mind and body of man and woman, beginning in the marriage conflict between man and woman, a history of division among children unfolded centering on their parents. Central families and peripheral families advanced this history of conflict, which has infected every level. It transcended the family era into the eras of tribal conflict, ethnic conflict, national conflict, global conflict and cosmic conflict.

The world of materialism opposes and denies You, God, without knowing or understanding anything that is rooted in Heaven's sons and daughters, Heaven's existence, and Heaven's forms of life.

Out of the mutually conflicting positions of materialism and spirituality arises a malaise. The materialistic world's opposition to the spiritually oriented world now has extended from the individual level. It has generated a world of hell both on earth and in the spirit world.

Father, You have taken responsibility for all that is caught in the environment that resulted from this conflict. You have organized the history of total indemnity and moved ahead through a history of re-creation. Establishing the standard of the principle of indemnity, You have brought unity to the confusion, chaos and contradiction that begins with the elements and passes into the mineral, plant, animal and human worlds, reaching the level of heaven and earth.

Furthermore, centering on the family framework, the individual, family, clan, people, national, global and cosmic standards within Cheon Il Guk have achieved one body, one mind, one determination and one central core. It stretches from the levels of the individual, family, clan, people, nation, world, up to the cosmic level, in the presence of Your original heart of creation, centering on families of filial children, loyal patriots, saints and divine sons and daughters. With everything advancing toward the new world of the ideal of love's supremacy, we are able to declare the era of settlement and move toward completion.

Dear Father, now that we have arrived in this era, please bless this global conference. Its focus is on the era of the Mongolian peoples. Also, Father, I sincerely entreat You to grant the peoples of the world and this entire creation the power to go over the pain-filled mountain pass that represents liberation and release. May we shout a thousand cheers for the reign of peace and frilly attend the sovereignty of love.

On this December morning, Father, please grant that everything can become one in heart, one in body and one in resolve. In awe of You, Father, may we establish the authority of absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience to Your Will in consonance with the original Father who stood on the ideal of creation. Please, loving Father, I most earnestly, earnestly, earnestly request that You permit everything to advance toward the unified world, centering on the kingship of love. I ask all this and earnestly entreat You, reporting in the name of the True Parents. Aju. (December 1, 2004)

6. Allow us to advance to the world of liberation, settlement and harmonious unity

Beloved Heavenly Father! This morning we are gathered here to offer our bows to You in commemoration of the forty-sixth True Parents' Day. Heaven and earth, and blessed families around the world observe this day with sincere attentiveness. In the painful course of restoration through indemnity that began at the loss of Your ideal of creation, You have passed through eras of global indemnity on the levels of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos. Forty-six years ago today, You established True Parents on earth. Based on True Parents- centered True Children's Day and the Day of All True Things, with the establishment of this commemorative day, You could concern Yourself directly with this world.

You prevailed by offering innumerable conditions of indemnity in the course of history, and put this immature son at the forefront on the path of pioneering. You also mobilized the saints, sages and angels of the spirit world in order to restore the foundation for the ideal of creation. After passing through such a process, Your providence would have been fulfilled by 1952 if this son of Yours had been successful immediately after World War II in beginning to establish Your blessed families centered on seven nations, Great Britain, the United States, France, Japan, Germany, Italy and Korea. If this had come to pass, You would have inaugurated right then and there the True Parents' Day, True Teacher's Day and True King's Day. We would have ushered in an era of liberation and complete freedom throughout the world. We would have fulfilled Your ideal of creation, to connect life and lineage centering on the love of the spirit world and the physical world. You thereby would have become the Lord of all nations in a liberated and completely free world. Heaven and earth would have completely united as we enthroned You, the King of love, the eternal King of kings.

We had to go beyond the age of salvation on the individual level and obtain salvation on the level of the family, tribe, people, nation and cosmos. To do so, You needed to establish in Adam's family a global realm of victory on the levels of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation and cosmos, and establish the supremacy of Your Blessing of all nations and all ages.

We have ushered in an era in which we can go beyond everything, where heaven and earth are united as one, where the vertical and the horizontal lines rotate clockwise at right angles. With the world of peace within our grasp, wherein we will tear down all walls in the cosmos and transcend national barriers, we are truly grateful for Your allowing us to celebrate this anniversary.

After transcending the peoples and cultures of the world, we have been able to overcome the suffering of the family by establishing the foundation for the

Messiah. We have achieved victory at the family level on behalf of the tribe, the people and the nation, even though the religious realm has opposed us.

We overcame the schemes of Satan who opposed the global realm transcending religions and nations. He tried to block and destroy the path the True Parents followed, but as we go into the supra-religious and supranational realms, the realm of transcendent liberation and unity is close at hand. Based on that, standing on the foundation of a family of love, in which separation between mind and body cannot be found, we established Your ideal of love, the love of the True Parent, True Owner and True King. Through practicing Your Will in the realm of liberation and complete freedom for all nations and all ages, we achieved the revolution of conscience and the revolution of heart. And now, transcending religion, nation, world, cosmos and unity itself, we are at the very summit. This is the center, where above and below have become one, right and left have become one, and front and back have become one. We have established firmly the original standard transcending the ideal of creation.

We will prepare once and for all the place of settlement in which Your hopes of all ages finally can be realized. To do so, representatives from the seven nations, Great Britain, the United States, France, Japan, Germany, Italy and Korea, are preparing a rally. We pray to draw together the realm transcending religions, peoples, nations and the world. We pray that we can be of one mind, one body, one ideology and one center, heading toward Your ideal purpose of creation and the peaceful kingdom of heaven. We pray that You will allow this assembly to be that final preparation, through which we will cross over to a new world of unified settlement and liberation centering on perfected personality.

Heavenly Father, help us make this rally a great success under Your dominion, so that this glorious victory will shine forever over the Parent, Teacher and King centered on love. All this I report and proclaim on this day, with all my heart, in the name of True Parents! Aju! (April 9,2005)

7. Please grant that the sovereignty of love may expand

Beloved Father, this place is under the watchful gaze of heaven and earth, and the attention of the children who received the blessing of the heavenly and earthly worlds. The families of the four children centering on Heung-jin, and all the families of the saints and sages, are one in heart, body and mindset. They advance toward a world of one harmony, unity and flourishing centering on the original palace. They have brought the first stage of the history of restoration through indemnity to an

end. During it they longed for the day when Your wish could be fulfilled and You could be released from bitter sorrow.

After concluding the Coronation of the King of Peace of the Unity of Heaven and Earth in Cheongpyeong, this is the first Pledge service, this morning of Ahn Shi Il, here in the Yeosu and Sooncheon area. In the nation where all things of the cosmos form a single core in serving and attending Heaven, individuals representing blessed families of each tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos have gathered. They offer this pledge service on this new morning as we serve You, centering on the kingship of the Parents of Heaven and Earth, the King of kings. I pray that You can accept this with joy.

Now people have begun to seek the land of the original hometown and to launch the liberated realm of the Blessing, centering on their relatives. Father, I pray that You will be with them in that place. I already have proclaimed the liberated and completely free era of the tranquil reign of peace. In it we can exercise, on Your behalf, Your full and omnipotent authority of love in a cosmic and unified family. This represents the form of one family that attends the Parents of Heaven and Earth. In it, all these blessed families become owners of Cheon Il Guk and all human beings become like siblings through true love.

On that foundation, everything is liberated and set completely free. Freedom goes from Your heart at the time of creation to all those beings whose aim was to restore the substantial realm that is Your object partner through absolute faith, love, and obedience. Those beings had to do this in place of Your creation at the beginning. We are now able to conduct the Enthronement of the King of Cosmic Unity and Peace upon this foundation, together with the foundation of the True Parents' advent on this earth, and the foundation of them welcoming, after the revolutions of indemnity, conscience, and heart, the world of liberation and complete freedom.

By acquiring the form of a renewed nation launched from each of their hometowns, let us stand in a position of uniting each clan of Korea and offer it to You, our Father. On that foundation of commencing on this earth a unified homeland in heaven and earth, we usher in an era of liberation and complete freedom by unifying the people with the Mongolian birthmark as the Mongolian birthmark blood kin. Now I sincerely pray and hope that, centered on the original Parents of cosmic unity, You will bless us further. Bless us so that the dominion centered on Your love can expand. Let it expand into the liberated and completely free world of the tranquil reign of peace, in which You can confidently grasp the

authority of the Owner for eternity. May You freely govern and claim the heavenly world and physical world as one lineage through true love, true life and true lineage.

I sincerely pray and hope that You will permit the world of all creation and all humanity to praise Your victorious and supreme center with glory and joy. May we place all of this under Your dominion. May we advance with the glory of the Owner's joy. May we stand for all eternity under Your authority as the Owner of love, centered on the heavenly way of one heart, one body and one mindset. All this I pray and report in the name of the True Parents. Aju! (February 25,2005)

CHAPTER 13

Peace Messages

1. Prayer at the Enthronement Ceremony for the Kingship of God

Today, on the thirteenth day after we welcomed the new millennium, we wish to conduct the Enthronement Ceremony for the Kingship of True Heavenly Parents. The ancestors in heaven have received the Blessing, and the descendants on earth have become one in heart and essence. Together they have welcomed the age of the heart in the realm of the fourth Adam by going beyond the sorrowful heart of the historical age of indemnity. Now all things and existing beings in heaven and on earth can welcome the age in which they can open the gate to the kingdom of heaven where the new heaven and earth are connected.

As the God of all, You toiled through a history of bitter sorrow, enduring the history of shame caused by the false parents who destroyed marriage and opposed true love, true life and true lineage. Yet even though You are the Lord of Hosts, Father, Teacher and King, You remained on the path of indemnity and suffering until this day.

The True Parents came to the earth, took responsibility for all these things, including all the wrongs committed by the false parents, and established their authority based on the victory of the eight stages while yearning for liberation as they went through the historical course of indemnity. By doing so, they transferred to heaven everything from the false parents' activity, bringing it under the grace of the Blessing of love and connecting it to all nations and the entire cosmos through the Blessing ceremony, which changes the lineage on the highest standard of True Parents' victorious authority, thereby laying a foundation for liberation.

We progressed through all realms of liberation—mind and body, husband and wife, father and son, the liberation of siblings, and the liberation of nations, demolishing all barriers and national borders, and unifying heaven and earth to create the kingdom of heaven, the liberated world of freedom that You envisioned at the origin of creation. We connected the true family, true tribe, true people, true nation, true world and the cosmos to the kingdom of heaven in heaven and on earth. We bound all this to the Owner, the great Creator who represents the authority of the victorious True Parents, the authority of the True Teacher, and the authority of the True King. Please freely accept this ceremony we offer to You.

All the angels in the heavenly army, all blessed families in the heavenly world, all blessed central families connected to the True Parents on earth, and the entire spirit world centered on the earth once again restored the right of the eldest son under the bond of brotherhood. Under these circumstances, the earth, standing in the position of eldest son, has welcomed the victorious realm of liberation, having overturned the entire fallen world from the individual level to the cosmos, centering on the privilege and authority of True Parents. The liberated True Parents, centering on the True Parents of Heaven and Earth, and the liberated True Children on earth, have united in heart and essence and are liberated through indemnity. You are the source, origin and essence of true love, and Your absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal will has the subject nature of love. Now we offer this joyful ceremony whereby True Parents enthrone You, Heavenly Father under the original standard.

On this liberated, victorious foundation where You can have a joyful heart forgetting all history, we hold this ceremony whereby You are enthroned and established in Your original position, celebrating and offering this all-transcendent, all-immanent, all-powerful and almighty ceremony of liberation. Now You can exercise Your sovereignty throughout the universe and in Your nation, centering on the realm of victory that enables us to be united with the ideal of love bound in the original heart of creation. Please accept this ceremony joyfully. We pray sincerely in the name of True Parents. Aju! Aju! Aju! (January 13, 2001)

2. Declaration of the Day of the Victory of the Number Ten Combining Two Halves (.Ssang Hab Shib Seung II)

Beloved Heavenly Father, this day, May 5, of the fourth year of Cheon Il Guk, has been designated as the Day of the Victory of the Number Ten Combining Two Halves. On this day, heaven and earth reverted, top and bottom reverted, left and right reverted and front and back reverted, enabling us to reclaim goodness from the origin of darkness. We now welcome the victorious time of the original ideal where we can attend the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind. The Parents of Heaven and Earth are heaven and earth's sun of high-noon settlement, whose brilliant rays of victory are never extinguished.

The motto of the Unification Church this year is "Proclamation of God's Fatherland and the Era of the Peace Kingdom." Due to the Fall, the evil age of Satan's kingship filled with conflict came about instead of a kingdom of peace. The day of the final battle to wipe away this evil age and convert it to the age of the kingdom of peace centered on true love has arrived.

Beloved Heavenly Father, today the Era before the Coming of Heaven has given way to the Era after the Coming of Heaven. Heaven and earth have become one centering on the number thirteen, and the authority of Your throne has become the center of the earth and heaven. As of today, we welcome an era of change, a day of great victory enabling us to proclaim Your kingdom of love in the unified world and proclaim Your homeland at a place where the clan is expanded to the world through its relationship to Your true love, true life and true lineage.

As everything is in pairs, above and below have become one centering on love as above, middle and below; left and right have become one centering on love as left, center and right; front and back have become one centering on love as front, middle and back; and the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind have become one centering on love. As everything has become one, I proclaim the liberation of all this and the realm of complete freedom, which will be marked on May 13, forty months after the Enthronement Ceremony for God's Kingship centering on the number thirteen. Due to this proclamation, we entered the age when we can be connected directly to Your throne, Father, and the day when the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind, as the True Parent of the Cosmos, the True Parents of Heaven and Earth and the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind, will finally be able to find rest after obtaining the ideal of the family wherein You, as the incorporeal and substantial God, can settle centering on love as the God of personality.

Due to this, we now welcome the time when we can observe Ahn Shi Il instead of the Sabbath. April and May have joined together centering on the Day of True Parents. Left and right hands have joined together to form ten and the day of the victory of the number ten, the hour and day of a free and liberated heaven and earth where all the days from day one to day ten can be controlled as Your days upon the foundation of a peaceful world, and the year when hour, day, month and year can be switched around. The two seasons of spring and summer have become paired in April and May of the fourth year of Cheon Il Guk. This joining corrected the world that has been following a clock whose hands turned in the wrong direction, now to follow the clock whose hands turn in the original direction. Moreover, after the ideal settlement centering on the rules and principles of the created universe, we have obtained the greatest realm of victory that creates in this world the original standard through which You, Father, the God of the family ideal can settle down. This allowed all pairs to be combined to bring about the day of the victory of the number ten.

Today we declare the end of the Sabbath and designate this day as Ahn Shi Il, establishing Your completed settlement and the day of obtaining righteousness through attendance. April and May have become united on this day, the first Ahn Shi Il, which we greet in May, leaving April behind. Now the seasons of spring and summer continue, centering on You, and we have traveled from spring to summer. We then traveled 180 degrees through the autumn and on to the winter region. This gives us the original standard of four seasons—the heavenly spring, summer, autumn and winter. The age has come when we can be received into Your embrace according to the entire principle of the cosmos, where days and years pass naturally.

By establishing the day of joint victory, the day of the victory of the number ten, after resolving conflict among all things, we can now welcome this day when all beings can be governed in pairs within the realm of Your ownership in Your peace kingdom, the homeland of love where You can settle down in peace and receive attendance.

Through this, we now witness the transition from the Era before the Coming of Heaven to the Era after the Coming of Heaven, the day when earth and heaven can be reversed and when the earth that was above can come down and heaven that was at the bottom can go up. We can now be completely liberated and released into the world of the Era after the Coming of Heaven. This is the day we can welcome Ahn Shi Il, where the family becomes united directly with Your throne and welcomes the liberated realm of righteousness through attendance and settlement centering on the God of personality and on the loving True Parent of the Cosmos, the True Parents of Heaven and Earth, and the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind. The throne of all people on earth can be united from the smallest place to the largest.

This is the day for You that all the other days could remember and commemorate, and it is the day in which all other days can praise Your total authority from the levels of individual, family, tribe, nation, world and cosmos. This day was established by designating the original numbers that can protect the victory of liberation a thousand-fold, the victory where the original standard can come about in the midst of the world that expands through ascending to the ten-fold level centering on the basic numbers of one through eight, and where the smaller numbers can become a bigger plus by being absorbed into the higher ones.

Everything that was divided now stands on the foundation of Hab Seung Shib Seung Il together with True Parents' four direct children in the spirit world, together

with the families of four great saints, together with all blessed families, together with twelve brothers and 120 brothers, and together with the 120 clans that Jesus had wished for. By this, all creation, in the presence of Heaven and under the name of True Parents, now welcomes Your homeland and peace kingdom, and everything exists inside Your realm of dominion on the occasion of this day of the victory of the number ten.

In the midst of all this, yesterday was the forty-fourth anniversary of True Parents' holy marriage, while April 19 was the forty-fifth True Parents' Day. On this occasion we tie everything together and offer You this day when everything is brought to a conclusion centering on the months of April and May and when all things that were divided are joined together to form one body so You can become the Owner of every day and hour and all the years in both heaven and earth, together with the beginning of the unified cosmos, centering on Your victorious number ten, the returning number.

In the unity of all blessed families and of the direct children both in heaven and on earth, we have attained this victorious day focusing on the returning number that's at the center of a thousand and ten thousand numbers. Through this, we go beyond the end of all providence and all restoration through indemnity centering on the individual, family and tribe. We wish for this world to harbor eternally the age of the peaceful kingdom while attending You and the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind in the environment of the family, nation and cosmos where we ourselves can welcome and stay in the realm of the Blessing and everlasting liberation. With this, we sincerely, sincerely and sincerely report, offering all this on this Ssang Hap Shib Seung Il (Day of the Victory of the Number Ten that Joins Two Fives) in the name of True Parents. Aju! Aju! Aju! (May 5, 2004)

3. Prayer at the Cheon Jeong Gung Entrance Ceremony and Coronation of True Parents, the King and Queen of Peace in Heaven and on Earth

Beloved Father in heaven, under whose watchful gaze over heaven and earth we bear witness to this time when the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind enter this holy Cheon Jeong Palace! While attending You, the Owner of heaven who went through great pains until now since the beginning of the construction of these facilities, heavenly soldiers were mobilized and together with the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind on earth they devoted themselves with utmost sincerity in order to firmly establish You as the Owner of this palace of peace and love, which shall remain forever. Now the construction of this Cheon Jeong Palace has been completed.

Dear Heavenly Father, this place has been established and created joyfully so You may become King of kings centering on eternal love—Owner of owners and King of kings who oversees all affairs with His sovereignty, allowing this place to become the original palace of the ideal realm of the heavenly kingdom, where all existing beings and all people throughout the ages can receive Your love and embrace and can coexist and live together for eternity.

Now true families in the name of True Parents have freed themselves from the fallen world. They have cemented a bond of heavenly love and life under Your Blessing, and designated this holy place as the focal point around which the blood lineage of the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind can take root on this earth. Please reside forever in this palace. Please return to the original heart You had at the start of the ideal world, envisioned at the time of creation, and establish an environment through which You alone can bring to natural subjugation everything that has been dominated by the bloodline rooted in the evil authority through the course of the sorrowful history that came about due to the Fall of the human ancestors, who in the realm of imperfection were oblivious to Your will, and during which time You pictured the original model of a perfected family of Adam unrelated to the Fall.

My Father, Owner of the cosmos, You had to endure the path of suffering through the eight stages of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos! In order to enlighten all of the fallen descendants who were oblivious that You are our Father, the Father of our families, the Father of our nation, of our world and of our heaven and earth, You sent the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind to this earth. You then developed, pioneered and awoke ten, a hundred and a thousand things, thereby laying the foundation for victorious sovereignty. Moreover, You sent the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind to this earth to solve everything that was fighting against You and aggravating the conflict of individual mind and body, the conflict of husband and wife, the conflict of father and son, the conflict of tribes, the conflict of nations and the conflict of the world. You pioneered all the uncharted environments in heaven and on earth, and fulfilled the realm of the liberation of individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos by going through the model standard and formula based on principle.

Upon this victorious foundation, and through this dedication ceremony of the Cheon Jeong Palace today, we offer this temple and palace to You Father. May the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind and the Parent of the Cosmos become united as one at this palace and guide us so the preparation to hold the coronation ceremony can be completed. At this place now, please allow the True

Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind to wash away all traces and flaws of history on behalf of all human beings and welcome the heaven and earth of high-noon settlement and of release and liberation where no shadow is cast under the bright liberated sun of love, life and lineage. Please allow the grace of serving Heaven for eternity in the Cheon Jeong Palace on earth, and allow this Cheon Jeong Palace that we are offering to You to be bound to You eternally. Please allow everything that unfolds after all the events held in this place to march forward, advance and move onward to a glorious and prosperous kingdom of heaven and world of liberation and complete freedom.

On behalf of all humankind, and representing all the saints and faithful ancestors in heaven, we lay before You and offer You on a foundation of perfection the groundwork for the kingship of the Savior, Messiah, returning Lord and True Parents who wish to fulfill everything and clear everything away in the last hour. We pray that You attain the eternal authority of Owner, and become the Owner of all things with the joy of being liberated and completely free, and we pray that this will be more than enough to do away completely with the sorrowful history that began in Eden. We now sincerely, sincerely and sincerely present and offer all this to You, Father, so that True Parents can blossom as a flower and bear fruit in the realm of life of all things in the universe. It is our sincere hope that You may joyfully accept our offering and report. Aju! Aju! Aju! (June 13,2006)

4. True God's Day 2001 Midnight Prayer

Beloved Heavenly Father! We have just welcomed the New Year of 2001, which concludes the two thousand years of Christian history and begins the third millennium. Father, here under the watchful gaze of heaven and earth, the two-thousand-year history of Your Will has gone by, during which all things in the cosmos yearned for the creation of Your victorious kingdom of heaven on earth and in heaven according to their relationship with Your love, Heavenly Father. Now we have gone through the age of indemnity and bitter sorrow, which has taken us beyond the First Israel, Second Israel and Third Israel. You promised the Messiah to the realm of the First Israel in order to open the path of attaining liberation and open the path of Your Will to establish True Parents on the earth. From the very day the Messiah was crucified because the people failed to serve the Messiah as the True Parents, Christianity formed the lost realm of Israel on the world level and fulfilled the founding of the Second Israel, centering on United States, a Christian nation, which can connect the center of the nation to the center of the world.

Heaven and earth, East and West, every people, every nation and every individual in every family were all divided in history. You worked to separate Cain and Abel on this earth in order to fulfill Your promise to bring the True Parents. You sought to fulfill Your Will of liberation through the works of unification, which were brought about by the victory of the Christian cultural realm after the Second World War. The bitter and sorrowful way of the cross materialized on earth due to the failure of Zechariah's and Joseph's families to fulfill their tribal messiah mission to become one with one another, which was the goal of Jesus' thirty-three years of life. Because of this, Heaven was unable to obtain the foundation of a family that would have been the starting point for the ideal of a liberated heaven, which would not only have leapt but even soared, achieving victory over Rome. We know this historical event and failure that led Jesus to walk the sorrowful course of the cross.

Ever since that day, there was no way to liberate completely Your sorrowful heart as it meandered for two thousand years through the countless bloody incidents of history. No one understood Your anguished heart as the Father who endured for a thousand years, even two thousand years. No one understood Your heart as You witnessed the changes of a sorrowful history, watching Your children on earth nail their parent to the cross. No one knew Your Will to prepare new spring water of liberation in the midst of a world engulfed in a raging ocean of death. We were oblivious to the existence of Your Will and Your completely sorrowful heart, burdened under historical circumstances, having to restore through indemnity what was lost through one man. In this world where people waited for the Lord to return on the clouds, Christianity and all religions persisted in conflict and, having forgotten the unifying standard, drove each other toward the path of death.

The history of Cain and Abel that had been leading this history of conflict became the division of the physical and spiritual realms centering on the Second World War. Jesus went to the spirit world to fulfill his parental responsibility spiritually while forming a unified world centering on the Parent on the earth. Due to all this, True Parents were established as a foothold of substantial victory that can represent the perfection of the physical world through the standard created by the perfection of the spirit world. If Catholicism and Protestantism had united after the First World War, which had prepared the coming of True Parents, then united with the spiritual standard centering on Jesus and the Holy Spirit, inheriting it after erecting True Parents on the earth, we could have created a victorious foothold on the earth within seven years after the end of the Second World War. We would have restored You as the central being on earth and brought about Your liberation, which we yearn for today.

We could have marched beyond the peak of sorrow that came about because human beings failed to become perfect. Then together with the free authority of True Parents and their right to liberate You upon the foundation of having liberated the history of the individual, family, tribe, people and cosmos, True Parents could have restored all of Your lost sovereignty, the basis of love's authority, everything that was lost due to the false parent, and welcomed the age of having perfected their mission. All this could have been completed fifty years ago.

In this year we conclude the last two thousand years. This is now forty years since the beginning of the wilderness course that started with a sorrowful family that, after losing that opportunity, has now achieved liberation of the family, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos in the year 2000, centering on the True Parent who has reached the age of eighty. We have achieved the liberation of Your homeland centering on the ideal of the cosmic liberation of heaven and earth, just as Moses did when he set out on his course to build the nation of Israel.

We have abolished paradise and hell in the spirit world, demolished all the barriers in the heavenly world and demolished all the barriers between heaven and hell centering on the realm of the eight stages of freedom—from the individual, family, tribe, people, nation to the world—thus paving the highway of liberation. We then indemnified the conditions to fulfill the wishes of all spirits who eagerly awaited and yearned for that day of Blessing from the Parents, Parents who came into the midst of the sorrowful spirits who reside everywhere from hell to paradise in the spirit world. By doing so, the liberated realm of the Blessing of both the spiritual and physical worlds was attained and established at the same time.

Now both worlds rooted in a single heart can subjugate Satan. They can cross over to the liberated world of freedom sitting atop the victorious authority of Your absolute love, absolute life and absolute faith bound in Your lineage. Beginning from March 21, 1999, when Satan surrendered, we hastened the reorganization of the spirit world and spent many busy days until the last day of the year 2000.

No one knew of Your sorrow until the liberated realm of heart of the fourth Adam was declared. This came after the sorrows of the Old Testament, the sorrows of the New Testament and the sorrows of the Completed Testament, sorrows that are finally relieved on this new day of the new year, 2001, this occasion of welcoming a liberated world at the start of the third millennium. Through this all, this busy child has hastened his steps in accordance with the Your command. This child has not fulfilled the way of a devoted son, loyal subject, saint and divine child

enough. Even so please personally guide him, even though, as Heaven stands before him, he knows he risks being unworthy in Heaven's eyes.

On this glorious new beginning of the third millennium, please allow the Parents of Heaven and Earth and their children to become one in heart and essence together, not only with Your liberated realm that came about with the glorious victory opening the gate of the Completed Testament Age, but also with the liberated realm of True Parents. We are truly grateful for Your hard work of fulfilling and going beyond the conditions for perfection, the hard work of the calling, and of the responsibility to perfect Your Will that is in the subject position, the hard work that realizes Your desire for the world—Your Will that is absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal, and the hard work that has pioneered this path that could connect the realm of liberation both on earth and in heaven.

Father, Your children, the blessed families gathered here today, should know how fearsome this Blessing is they have received. No one knew that You became the God of a sorrowful heart who was utterly alone, with no one with whom to share Your circumstances while embracing a history of bitter sorrow for tens of millions of years after losing Your original Will of erecting the family of True Parents, the family envisioned and wished for as Your ideal for creation.

After having discovered Your Will at a young age, however, I followed a one-way path, regardless of whether people recognized me for it or not, overcoming hurdles to find myself today as having gone beyond the world's highest peak. By doing so, the earth now is connected to the spirit world, enabling us to transcend all nations and reach directly the liberation of earth. This day of family allows for the privileged blessing of liberation on a unified standard beyond the people, nations, religions and all denominations in the spirit world. This victorious position of authority cannot be opposed. It is complete both in heaven and on earth. We are truly grateful You have allowed us to welcome this new year and begin the third millennium on a day like this.

We proclaimed already that the day You can fulfill the liberation and perfection of Your wish and goal will come only twelve days after today. Please accept this heart that prays that all blessed families of the Unification family and the blessed families in the spirit world who are offering devotion for this purpose can become one in heart and essence, breaking down all barriers and going beyond the final one that brings down all the walls in this hell on earth, and that in this way can usher in the realization of a world under the liberated realm and victorious autonomy that spreads in all directions without anything blocking its path. We sincerely wish for

You to allow this day to become the day on which we can commemorate a new beginning that will go down in history for a thousand years, the new beginning that starts the journey to the year 3000.

We brought everything to an end on the last day of the year 2000, which is December 31, and also a Sunday. May Heaven clearly draw the line so we can make a new beginning from Monday, this day in this new week in the new millennium. You have allowed us to welcome the age of blessing when we can establish victorious glory, victorious dignity and heaven's authority at the outset of this liberated millennium. We are truly, truly grateful for the grace You have bestowed upon us.

Father! There are still many incomplete tasks left for the new millennium, and we now enter the age where Heaven must take responsibility for these tasks. Your beloved True Parents, these children, have not been able to accomplish their responsibility. Please forgive Your son, who is ashamed for everything left unfinished, for it must be accomplished while relying on and yearning for Heaven's authority again.

My sincere heart has never changed— and it will never change in the future. I offer my pledge to You, together with the oath that we will humbly accept this path and that our heart of love to You as devoted children will never change. Please lead us to the way You want us to go. We have decided to dedicate the next ten years to offer all our devotion for that day of victory when we can praise the liberation of Your homeland and praise heaven on earth and in heaven through erecting the victorious authority of Your sovereignty on the earth. As the blessed families from all nations who are gathered here today make this determination, we sincerely, sincerely wish for You to accept it.

During the rest of this millennium, Father, we will prepare the realm of unification from the deepest part of hell on earth that began when heaven's glory was despoiled, to the highest place, including in the spirit world. Then we will march, march and march forward to establish heaven on earth and in heaven, the heaven of the liberated realm of freedom where You, Father, can stand in the highest, most glorious position, reigning over all nations and the entire universe. We promise this to You in the name of True Parents, and we sincerely report this to You here from the position central to all families and the Will. We proclaim in the name of True Parents that this Will shall be fill- filled! Aju! Aju! Aju! (January 1,2001)

5. Prayer at the dedication of the Cheongshim Peace World Center

Loving Father, heaven and earth have solemnly erected the banner of one heart to blossom by focusing their heart on this place. In this hour, we must achieve oneness with You, the Creator of the universe in both essence and heart centered on the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind. In order to recover the state of mind when You told Adam and Eve in the garden of Eden that they would die for eternity if they ate the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, True Parents have prepared for this moment while offering devotion in order to see the standard of one mind, one ideology and one purity blossom.

Ninety-three years have passed, and on this fifty-third True Parents' Day, we have brought complete fruition in this grand place. You, the Heavenly Parent, cherished the ideal garden that was to be Eden's standard and ideal of creation centering on You, the absolute God before mind and body were divided. However, even before You could embark on the path toward this ideal, division occurred due to an unforeseen, impure and wrongful idea. The realm of a single generation has been completed through one heart. The great plaza that was originally planned together with the name of True Parents has been established in the original place where there was no false parent. Countless citizens of heaven and earth have come here where the flowers of their hearts have blossomed, and now we offer a full bow before You, who bears the authority of the supreme Creator together with the guardian of that authority, the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind.

You have desired the one land of miracle that would serve as the symbol of victorious sovereignty. However, due to Eve's mistake, an unforeseen night of sadness and sorrow resulted. From that day on, You withdrew the realm of day, and, like the new light of a firefly, You brightened the dark path in the realm of night, engulfed in darkness. True Parents completed and perfected the Will in the very place where the false parents posed as parents until the original light could shine as the central light in this vast world. You have stepped through and gone beyond the time of sorrowful heart, the thousands of years during which You yearned for and long dreamed of the original Eden but were unable to bequeath a single day of blessing. You now stand in the highest position of focusing on the mark of new victory, where Your blueprint, the Creator's original blueprint can now be realized. Now we stand on a new mark of victory, on the focal point, at the highest position after having walked through and overcome the hours of bitter sorrow during which time You could not bequeath that blessed day of jubilation in

the original garden of Eden that You gazed upon, the dream of history that spanned thousands of years.

In this place where the entire universe is watching, we have prepared and completed the formation of the dutiful son's realm of oneness by erecting the model standard, allowing all our descendants to stay within that standard. This is the steppingstone upon which we can commemorate the day of True Parents' victory budding like a flower rooted in the single-mindedness of hope. As we march toward the world of freedom and liberation, a liberated heaven and earth free from restraints, so all humankind can offer You praise of joy and happiness in front of this palace You designed at this new plaza today, we present to You today the Cheongshim Peace World Center as a plaza of joy and glory. We are gathered here today as people who will never forget the singular focal point of commemorating this completion and conclusion.

Let the sunlight shine on this bright, liberated central position of freedom and this bright heaven and earth where the numerous blessed families in the spirit world and their descendants on earth have the unified focus of serving their parents. Please let this place be loved by all people as the new plaza of education through which You can directly educate this world of darkness by the authority of light—from east, west, south and north, everywhere You go. We are now preparing for the days to celebrate completing the liberation of the Blessing and holy love while tying together our once divided mind and body. We are engrafted onto the beginning of the history that True Parents initiated. On this straight path that we take in accordance with this time, we should attend and unite toward the center of all four directions with one heart and one essence in the mind and body of our couple.

If we are to welcome within one year the day when the third Holy Wedding of True Parents will be completed, and then spend time with faithful children who can be raised in such a position, there must be one nation, one people and one king. We will have a liberated heart with which we can receive the cause of children while in the embrace of the absolute authority of the Creator and with which we can stand with the heart of a lofty warrior modeled after True Parents, even though we are lacking. With this, we will forget about all the sorrowful history that unfolded in front of You, Father. It is our earnest hope and prayer that the Holy Wedding that will be held in the future may be the period when we can light the incense inside the burner of Your ideal family, and sing songs of praise and glory, thankfully embraced in a single clan.

Father, please overlook the inadequacy of the devotions that were offered to bring us to this point, as we yearned for the name of True Parents. Father, the fruit of Heaven's blood-red heart shall never fall to the earth but shall be remembered as ineradicable footprints. We are preparing to receive the Blessing on the glorious throne in the substantial realm, the throne of unity, completion and perfection where all our descendants can be united with Your heart by following these footprints. Father, please protect, guide and lead us until that day.

Gathered here are Your blessed children. Please shed the bright sunlight of peace on their hearts that long for the original homeland of their desire, the homeland that will come in the future. On that privileged day of victory, all living beings without exception can enter the fourth, original homeland of freedom and happiness in the heavenly world. We ask You that You harvest that day as the fruit of the flowers that blossom upon the substantial harmonization of hearts. Please protect and guide us until that day. We believe that You will accept us as we eternally align with that ideal.

I pray that the wish of the child who believes in You, the great Father, will be fulfilled. Please allow sunlight to shine on the bright heaven and earth of glory and protection, which is our final destination. Allow one pillar to rise from the center to eternity, so nothing is lacking in the perfection and completion of the educational ideology achieved through all existing things in the world and through the heart of a parent who loves heaven and loves people and loves all things. With this request, we offer this solemn occasion in front of You, the Father with the heart of True Parents. Please accept all this with a joyful heart.

Please let this become the eternal, unchanging occasion of protection when the Parents, like You, the Father, can hear the shouts of joy ring in their heart together with the sound of joyful cries from heaven and earth. Beloved Father, as we sincerely and honestly report and offer our wish for this place to become the holy kingdom of peace through the name of True Parents, please accept this. Thank You. Aju! (March 22,2012)

6. True God's Day 2005 Midnight Prayer

Beloved Heavenly Father, we have passed through the fourth year of Cheon 11 Guk and entered the fifth year. As Your history of restoration through indemnity moves toward its final destination, I know how difficult, arduous and full of pain and tears Your path has been as You sought the holy ground of Cheong- pyeong in Korea. Now this path is behind us and we have proclaimed the era of the cosmic peace

kingdom, centering on the Interreligious and International Federation for World Peace.

By attending You as the Parent and True Parents as the earthly Parents, a new point of the origin has been established that can unite the internal and external parents. This child knows well of Your lonely life course as You, Father, pioneered the environment and longed for the re-created garden based on ideal love while You deeply buried in Your heart the unending hope that stems from traversing the course of history required to go beyond the new point of origin.

Father, we are awestruck when we come to know about how You sent this unworthy child to the land of Korea and how, unknown to any regarding the relationships and the conditions surrounding them, in the background of thousands of years of history, You, the incorporeal owner in the subject partner position, walked a difficult path behind the scenes of history, suffering in order to start anew. From a position of having no form, You could finally acquire a form through incorporeal and corporeal counterparts.

Even though there have been many peoples, nations and families, countless men and women, only this child knows deeply of Your bitter anguish. There has been no one of this earth who could relate to You as Your partner with the deep heart of a son or daughter, expressing respect and affection to You. No one could relate with Your deep, wide and precious heart of love.

Your son did not know of Your sorrowful heart with which You had to seek both a man and woman. Satan also did not know of such things, which were beyond his limits. Only You knew of this one confusing borderline. In order to go beyond this line, You had to always continue on with the same heart on this endless path of bitter pain and anguish, passing through this infinite history and through every age as You sought Your son. This child knows well the path of tribulations You walked until You finally found the one path through which You could take rest in this land of Korea. You traversed vast lands and continents behind the scenes of a history that lasted seven thousand years, during which not a single person in heaven or on earth could recognize Your heavenly countenance.

The child who stands before You today may look shabby in appearance, but he knows all too well the path of sorrow of the defeated ones who lost their kingship as they lived in the shadow of the history of bitter anguish. I know too well how great was Your bitter anguish in not being able to pass on Your kingship to Your child, and ultimately in losing the king- ship itself.

When we look upon the vast populations that make up humankind—countless nations, individuals and families—we know that these all should have become lamps that blossom like the flowers of Your hope of love. That nation and world should have shone like the sun and moon and become a subject partner with a driving power that could move all the life forms of creation. As You lost these things, Father, and as You searched for Your son, You were alone, imprisoned in the shadow of a dark heart. You crossed long distances alone, longing for the son whom You would find in the Last Days that lay in the distance. That history of yearning was not merely a day or two; it has lasted for tens of thousands of years. And You have worked to lift up religions for four thousand years.

On this path, struggling to surmount this peak, we must pioneer all the difficult paths in front of the road Satan is taking, even as we wander through life- or-death situations that nobody on this earth would desire. We have to move beyond the appearance that is shameful in front of the original things of creation. We must cross the borderline to freedom and assume our own appearance. Now in this hour of bidding farewell to year four of Cheon Il Guk, and welcoming year five, we can't simply be awestruck by Your heart, our Father, that so yearned for a son who could become the daylight and moonlight of the future, while reflecting on the history that was required to establish You as the Owner of all creation.

After achieving the coronation for the establishment of the kingship of peace, centering on the Interreligious and International Federation for World Peace on the earth, we must now go beyond the realm of the people of the Mongolian birthmark to unite all human beings under the realm of the Mongolian people's lineage. Without doing so, Adam's ideal family, Adam's ideal nation and Adam's ideal heaven will be blanketed by the dark shadow of ruin, cast by those who are related to Satan's lineage of Cain, the one who committed murder in Adam's family.

We must welcome that world with the new, bright and clear morning light and have a loving heart, together with You, the Owner of heaven and earth.

This child once again must ask forgiveness at this time on behalf of our ancestors from the countless generations that inflicted wounds upon Your heart, which has longed for the liberated realm of Your Sabbath, where heaven and earth—from the extremely small mineral world to the plant, animal and human worlds and all the creation belonging to the pair system—can be harmonized within a realm of unity of love, and where our ancestors can labor, rejoice and live together with You.

There are no words to describe the suffering and tribulation on the path that came to You, Father, before You raised this child in a position responsible for heaven and earth, the suffering that happened because of the failure of religions and nations on earth to fulfill their responsibilities. I cannot forget about the earlier times when I had to struggle and worry about Your cross becoming heavier. In all those instances I had to shoulder these failures, as ever-greater weight was heaped on my shoulders.

Father! I knew at these times that behind Your deep heart there were circumstances deeper, higher and wider than this child could realize, but I know it brings unhappiness to try to know that world and that it would be sinful to know it. Thus I have endured quietly even though I was in the position to run to Your loving embrace, and call You Father. As such, I cannot forget the days when You helped me as I walked the path of perseverance, patience, suffering and persecution, the path laid out through the realm of life and death, the path that led to the day when Your deep, innermost shadow could be lifted.

Father! I can't forget the joy of that day of the Enthronement Ceremony for the Kingship of God, which took place on January 13 in the first year of Cheon Il Guk, prior to marking the fourth year of Cheon Il Guk. This child who stood in shame in front of Heaven for not being able to bring a nation to offer that day, came to this land, the homeland, and spoke to these young and immature children about how great is the responsibility I was called to take on and that needs to be fulfilled within the next four years. I stand in a position where, even though I might not be able to believe in them, I must do so nevertheless. I had not reached the point, Father, where I could see them as sons and daughters who can stand with both hands raised before You, and pledge to take responsibility to complete and fulfill their given responsibility during the next four years.

This child who failed to transcend the source of the evil parent who planted the seed of sin has established a foundation. These children have to attend the Parents who shall raise a nation and reveal the great way of the heavenly principles, so that the sun and moon can unite, and heaven and earth can come together in the bright cosmos, and a family can emerge from the nest of love. My heart contorts as I experience how lonely, vexing, upsetting and bitter is the history of the ordeals that have arisen due to the failure to establish the position of an ideal loving couple that can carry on true love, true life and true lineage. Feeling this, I know how heart wrenching it has been for Heaven.

We have gone beyond the fourth year of Cheon Il Guk and arrived at this position after establishing occasional conditional foundations because we were unable to find a solution to offer a nation, a religion from this earth, to liberate Your heart. We sincerely hope that You, Father, can forgive our shame of having struggled to this point. We come to You with a heart of concern as we look toward the path upon which we must begin our journey and contemplate the bridges we must cross, the tunnels we must pass through, and the world of oceans we must sail, even though we are a nation only in name. We have a locomotive, but have been unable connect the passenger cars.

Since we were born with an inevitable and special connection to Heaven, we need to make the impossible possible. We must turn hopeless situations into hopeful ones. We could not do this until now. Even so, You came to us as we sorrowfully struggled in that impossible situation, a situation that required You to enhance Your omnipotence further in order to resurrect the children who originally were in the position of death. We should have absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience in the face of the path You take. But we are unable to talk in a loud voice. We only can whisper and worry, fearing that we, as unfilial children, might bring shame upon You before Satan.

We must liberate the bright heaven and earth so we can bring all the ancestors who were disobedient to You throughout history to this place. After moving beyond the fourth millennium, they greeted the fifth millennium, the millennium in which they could welcome the Messiah. This is due to Your wish to send Your son and daughter as the Messiah into the age of the New Testament, which represented the Old Testament at the time of seeking the number five after losing the number four. The blood of countless Christians was spilled for two thousand years because Jesus came to the earth but left more work to be done for organizing heaven and earth. I know very well that while crying and suffering You pushed the heart of this son again and again for him to go this way. You endured the sorrowful sight of him being compelled to stand outside Your path of righteousness, bearing individual sacrifices along with tears of defeat shed at the family, tribal and national levels.

There has never been a devoted son on this earth who could fulfill the path of loyalty and filial piety. There has never been a patriot or a family of divine sons and daughters. These things that even You could not do, I had to fulfill. I had to follow this path, with this responsibility, into the sea of tears shed due to indescribable suffering, all the while regarding it as a wading pool where children swim every day. I had to walk these paths forgetting my struggles and strive to reach this point while

focusing only on Your goals and desires, and on the sunlight You revealed. Now at this moment we surmount the peak, and welcome the fifth year.

We have to invite all the unfortunate people in the spirit world, all the ancestors in the spirit world, and even You to the earth on the foundation of the blessed families on earth, whom I proudly call my direct descendants. And then we should attend all of those who dwell in the spirit world. There was no family on earth that had become a family of filial piety, of patriots, saints or divine sons and daughters, and I have spent my entire life educating families. With this old body, yet young at heart, I still face the course of fulfilling my given responsibility to open the new gates to the heavenly world, along with the task of arranging all things in the earthly world. I will do this until the moment I collapse, in order to accomplish what they should have done.

Father! While I traversed such a course, I knew that Your heart that worried for me was a hundred, a thousand fold greater, but still I could not comfort Your sorrowful heart. Because of the wandering of Your heart, You could not rest even when rest was needed. You had to endure alone all the indignities inflicted upon You while at the forefront of pioneering efforts. You had to spend so much effort in order to fill this child with what he lacks. In front of this, Father, I make this report to You now, being united in mind and body and united with my wife, who is standing here with me.

I know very well that the very being who brought about the seemingly impossible conflict between Your mind and body was the same being who stained the name of True Parents. Therefore let our two bodies be transformed into one, let us become the bright Parents of the new morning that rises explosively before Your deep heart, as the sun and moon that shine beyond the darkness to bring the tide of the bright heaven and earth beginning this year. I proclaim these supremely important levels of responsibility so all the good and bad things in the spirit world can come to earth and bear fruit as good things. I am making a new determination to offer this before You.

Let the people from all over the world gathered here today attain one heart, one body and one essence with True Parents' heart. On the foundation of liberation, freedom, tranquility and rest, let the Parents of Heaven and Earth be attended by families numbering from one to the tens of millions. Let these become families of sons and daughters of filial piety, families of patriots that go beyond the nation, families of saints that go beyond the world, and families of divine sons and daughters that go beyond the cosmos, consistently fulfilling the way of loyalty and

filial piety. During this four-year period, bless us so that, with all our hearts, we can take a giant leap for the sake of a joyful occasion, as the world can freely guide and digest all things, and bring unfettered liberty and liberation to the realm of the Sabbath centered on Ahn Shi Il, which Heaven can embrace.

In the ninth year of Cheon Il Guk, following the year 2008, please become the Owner, Parent and Teacher for eternity, who, with their being no boundaries between the heavenly world and the earthly world, may freely travel to heaven from the earthly world along with those who came to earth. Please reign over these worlds while firmly commanding the throne of the world of the original palace, the free, liberated heaven and earth void of questions and doubt. We pray You will enjoy Your reign of peace for all eternity.

As I lay the foundation, let me invest my sincerity, even through this old and worn body, without fear for those days to come, without fear for the passing of the moons and suns. I pray for Your cooperation as long as I have strength to move on. Please have pity on the heart of this child who depends only on You. Please be with me throughout and guide me as I walk the path I must take.

Father, please bestow Your love on True Mother, who is standing here. She truly has gone through many hardships to this day. I know too well how great the power of Your call to Mother has been, as she prepared her standard as a filial daughter before You and as she made the preparations to attend our family. Still a responsibility remains for me that prevents me from giving guidance to her. Hence let me be able to help Mother to go beyond her 5 percent responsibility during the four remaining years. With my heart of gratitude before Heaven, and with Mother offering her thanks to Heaven, let us be like two burning incense sticks, like two candles lighting the darkness. Please protect us and guide us so we can perfect the way of the True Parents.

On this first day of a new beginning, and as we designate the motto for this year, please unite our couple as one body, and let us go forth with hope and joy on this path even though our bodies maybe pulled apart and wounded as we travel between the internal world of heaven and the external world of heaven. Bless us and guide us so we may reach the position of Your victory without collapsing on the way. On behalf of these two humble hearts of such unworthy people, this I sincerely, sincerely report and proclaim in the name of the True Parents. Aju! (January 1,2005)

7. True God's Day 2007 Midnight Prayer

Beloved Father, Lord of glory, everlasting Owner, source of the cosmos and of heaven and earth! The sixth year of Cheon Il Guk, in which You exercised Your authority as the subject partner and as the victorious and glorious King, has passed. On this morning of January 1, the first day of the seventh year of Cheon Il Guk, we usher in an era through which Your blessings can spread throughout all of heaven and earth and You, our God, can relate with the earth as You would have originally, and with the authority of the original Owner.

All the numbers of Ssang Hap Shib Seung that were under Satan's influence have been returned and restored to Heaven by designating Ssang Hap Shib Seung II, the Day of the Victory of the Number Ten that Joins Two Fives. You, the Absolute Being, now can occupy the center and relate with everything. You are the Absolute Being, who once was alone in a world without partnership. In the presence of all creation, You enjoyed absolute freedom and had a heart of love that was absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal, expressing Your main attributes. Still, as You did not have a world that could be Your object partner of love, You were by Yourself and lonely. Father, we learned about these things through the Divine Principle.

You are an incorporeal being in whom the dual characteristics of inner nature and external form are in harmony. In order for You to stand in the position of the Owner who can represent Adam and be more than just the center of the physical world, You need to have within Yourself a reciprocal relationship that represents both male and female. Without this relationship, You could not initiate, exist and be in motion as the source of life in the present world and the entire universe. Harmony cannot be created on a straight line; inevitably the end-points will end up far apart. Yet, after centering on four points, five points, eight points and ten points after the three points, You could bring into existence a physical world and relationships of new created beings. We are aware that this was the great universe that was the hope of Your creation. In the meantime, there was a providential course of raising the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind as the true subject partner, as the owner and object partner on the earth.

In the garden of Eden, Heaven did not leave behind instructions for arranging the preservation of public security, for uniting the red blood cells with the white blood cells, and thereby creating a secured realm that could have protected the entire course of Adam and Eve until they were blessed and perfected. Adam and Eve were given the commandment to not eat of the fruit from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, but a security measure ensuring the outcome was never imposed and thus they fell, through an unthinkable process. Beginning from the day of the Fall, Heaven and the entire universe were disconnected.

The harmonious, united realm of Your dual characteristics was to manifest through the substantiation of origin-division-union action. In that substantial form, You were to have become the core of relationships and affinities in the realm

of the subject and object partners within and among all existing beings of creation, centering on the main attribute of true love exercised during creation. Through the unity of subject-object, above-below and front-back relationships that are absolute as well as unique, unique as well as unchanging and eternal, You assumed a physical form, centering on Your incorporeal dual characteristics, for the sake of adjusting the ecological environment for all created beings, centering on that single central core. Through this, the separated substantial realms of the father and mother could become as one, centering on Your new, ideal love.

Through the course of the history of recreation, whenever a generation among the countless generations since the first one passed, history would return to a single standard that could be united with Heaven. By developing and completely settling itself at that core that can be connected as far as the boundary line, the ideal starting point could emerge, bringing harmony and unity to the entire created world within the realm of Your love, life and lineage. After the completion of the Blessing of the first ancestors, the original individual entities of truth could have functioned in harmony and in partnership, representing the historical elements You have cultivated, representing the entire world to which You relate, representing all these things. It is the historical source, from You to the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind— Your manifestation in the flesh—and to every being of creation at that point of emergence.

The great universe moves like one living entity and is like the shoot from a single branch or tree springing from the true love root and origin. In this universe You can reside in the position of the great King who has dominion over the self determining heaven and earth of one mind and one body, and You are in the position of the Lord of glory.

The fact is we lost that Father. Within history and within the realm of Your heart, You who had to pass through the course of bitter pain called restoration through indemnity, You could embrace and forgive the world You relate to based on the standard of absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience of our ancestors, as the subject partner and center representing all things. From the day when everything that longed for that ideal realm failed to become as one, the history of re-creation was repeated until now.

Your great endeavors for re-creation, from one to tens of billions of such efforts, had to be connected together. Ten should have led to eleven, to twenty- one, to a hundred and one, to a thousand and one, and to a hundred million and one. By doing so, we could become one with the unified realm, the entirety and all the details, along with the original, formative Origin of creation. We thank You for Your grace that persevered until now when the history of these endeavors allows the unity to arise and be restored through indemnity, perfecting the unified realm that returns to Heaven through the True Parents. We thank You for this grace.

Your heart has been filled with grief. A history of bitter sorrow ensued as You had to deal with an environment in which Satan was independently asserting his authority by separating, dividing and severing all ties between You and humanity, parent and child, husband and wife, older brother and younger brother and all realms of the ancestors, present and future. The age has come when this history of Your bitter sorrow must come to an end through True Parents. You experienced completely a history of failure spanning thousands of years from the first family, to the failure to restore the nation through Moses, to the repeated failures in Jesus' time. You experienced this from the source of these mistakes to the end result of these mistakes. You sent the True Parents in the truest form to earth so the grace of liberation and complete freedom could prevail, allowing us to aim for a world of one heart, one body, one mindset, and one center with You, and to settle at Your center in unity and harmony. Then the light of life from You, our God of glory, could cover everything from beginning to end, thereby allowing us to enter a time of welcoming a new realm of resurrection for all living beings. We thank You for this grace.

There has never been a hometown, a homeland, a parent, a husband and wife, siblings, a true nation or a true people on this earth. Indemnity was paid for all this to be restored and established. All situations of sorrow greater than that of Adam were resolved by blessing numerous families representing hundreds of millions of families in the world, thus moving beyond the individual family that fell in the past. By doing so, You bequeathed to us the realm of family resurrection in an independent and individual realm of truth, so the beginning with new ancestors could be designated. Through this, we inherited the authority of Heaven's glory and, at the same time, ushered in anew the seventh year of Cheon Il Guk, in which Your authority as the Owner could be exercised over the center of heaven and earth and above the realm of unity that covers and makes use of everything. We inherited the force and authority over the universe, the world, and everything included in the acts by which we create again, produce again and complete again.

Your sovereignty now has been established on the earth. Cheon Il Guk, which can become the peace kingdom of heaven, earth and the cosmos, has manifested itself. This standard that manifested itself is based on the standard of absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience, upon which all existence was created from beginning to end. Everything that was distorted by the false parents will be swept away and, with the authority of life of True Parents' true love, resurrected anew. Each and every layer will be stripped away, each and every kernel and core coming from that inner single point, and the focus of the pulse that can breathe in and out the deep pulse of the universe, will expand from the source of the rotational movement to the great motions of the universe. We have entered a time when all of heaven and earth can move independently and still remain together, synchronized with the pulse of love.

In the meantime, You worked through Your providence to establish the lineage of Your life. On that foundation, You planted and nurtured the seed. The entire life of the True Parents was set according to the standard of indemnity through five stages—indemnity from the era of the individual to the era of the family, tribe, people and nation. In this way everything planted by the false parents throughout the historical eras until now could be indemnified. Everything planted by Satan's lineage bore fruit on the national level and began from an imperfect state. This is similar to what happens with an imperfect egg that cannot become a fertilized egg. Therefore, the introduction of the sperm that was nurtured from the core of love that resides in You and encompasses tens of billions of years, which could have become the seed of the fertilized egg, began but did not reach an egg into which it could completely settle and produce the fruits that would allow True Parents' lineage to be established.

The True Parent of the Cosmos and the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind have perfected the authority of the substantial True Parents in this world. On the foundation of their blessing and love, they have many children and can hand over to them the twelve tribes, rallying all these together by the ideal authority that connects each group, clan and nation in the blessed world of 72 people and on to the 120 people in the third generation. In that position representing the world, the protected authority of Your victory has been received, as we say farewell to the sixth year of Cheon Il Guk under that realm of liberation and complete freedom, making a new beginning under privileged rights that allow heaven and earth to be revived anew and grow, and to stand in a position that encompasses the realm of the object partner that is above and below, capable of bringing together the numbers 7, 8, 9, 10 and 11, which can perfect Cheon Il Guk.

In Your position as the Owner, everything within the realm of heaven and earth, with their rights of existence established in their original form, has been repatriated before that single standard, even if their number goes beyond ten to eleven, 100 million to 100 million and 1, and on to infinity. All the senses that breathed within the united realm of one mind, one body and one mindset are established and follow the circuit of the original standard, flowing like the blood pulsing in our veins and arteries so that we may be mobilized toward the liberated kingdom of heaven on earth.

There is something that must remain in the universe. In the reciprocal relationships centered on true love—in the left-right and front-back relationships—harmony and unity are created through giving and receiving with one's partner. Through this, a world of one harmony, completely settled in Your original ideal, will be created on the earth and carried beyond the realm of liberation and complete freedom. As the nation at the center and core of the cosmic federation of Cheon Il Guk, this will lead to the liberation of the homeland that will enable us to declare the complete liberation of all nations and the complete release of the entire universe. Furthermore, we can now designate and proclaim the day of declaration enabling the liberation of the cosmos and the center of the global realm of heart of the fourth Adam, to be brought together from this point and mobilized again.

The ancestors who were blessed should from this day on become as one, in harmony with their ancestors above them, with the world around them horizontally, and with their descendants vertically. The spirits in the spirit world should become one in harmony with the blessed families centering on the substantial Adam on earth. Through this, the positions of the elder brother and younger brother, child and father, and grandfather and grandson shall be reversed. On the foundation allowing for this new 360-degree transition, a new history, rotating clockwise from the right to the left, shall begin from the first day of the first month on behalf of all things. Through the link connecting the core of the world to the core of the cosmos, all this has been presented to this age, in which all blessings can be governed, and where You can exercise and assert Your autonomous authority based on one mind, one body, one mindset and one core. In True Parents' name I grant the restoration of this new heaven and earth, enabling this transfer so that history can make a new beginning centering on the united realm based on the solidarity of all things.

Let the Parents of Heaven and Earth and the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind become one. Let everything, from the beginning of creation, which has been the desire of the mind and body, to the finally restored world, be turned

around. The kingdom of the peaceful reign and liberation can begin and advance within the countless days of eternity returned to heaven and to the entire world from this single day, this beginning of eternity, which is beyond morning and evening, month after month, and year after year. In the new morning of the new year, today, we proclaim this to the entire universe and to all the realms of earth and heaven in the presence of the Parents of Heaven and Earth who have made this possible.

All existing beings of creation could manifest as a single being, a single, united entity of absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience according to True Parents' desire. Let all this be returned and brought in, including everything that was taken away from Heaven, by January 13, 2013. Until that day, let us pour out all our effort and devotion to urge and press for the liberation arising from the fulfillment of the goals proclaimed on this day. Let us advance into the time of the autonomous realm of freedom in which the fulfillment of the goals is fully realized. This I report fervently and earnestly in True Parents' name! Aju! Aju! Aju!

Let the owner of the warm hearth where father and son can live together emerge! In gratitude, I pray that Heaven's blessings may be with us forever. All this I pray in the name of the True Parents. Let everything be freed! Aju! (January 1, 2007)

8. True Father's final prayer:

I have completed everything

Today, as I have returned the conclusion of the final perfection to You, Father, I know that up to this moment, I have offered my whole life to You. I am spending this time now to bring my life to its conclusion, to bring it to a close with utmost devotion, in accordance with Your Will. In order that we may return to the original garden of Eden, the garden with no trace of the Fall, and surmount everything that came to be connected to Adam's portion of responsibility following the error committed by his betrothed, I, who have the authority to grant liberation and complete freedom to everything, declare that anyone who follows True Parents, be it someone in the fourth dimension, or be it someone who would otherwise go even to the fourteenth dimension of hell, will be adopted into the kingdom of heaven and registered in the fourth dimension. I declare that if, centering on the fourteen sons and daughters, the tribal messiahs are able to fulfill the calling of national representatives and restore the 387 nations [of the Abel UN and Cain UN], everything will be brought to a conclusion. I have accomplished everything for this. I have completed everything. Aju! (August 13, 2012)

Go Home to [True Love](#)
Go back to [Volume Index](#)
Go back to the [Top of the Book](#)